

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF

**POLYMER SCIENCE
AND TECHNOLOGY**

Fourth Edition

VOLUME 15

COPYRIGHTED MATERIAL

EDITORIAL STAFF

Executive Editor: **Arza Seidel**

Development Editor: **Mihai Peterca**

Production Manager: **Shirley Thomas**

Production Editor: **Kristen Parrish**

ENCYCLOPEDIA OF

**POLYMER SCIENCE
AND TECHNOLOGY**

Fourth Edition

VOLUME 15

WILEY

Copyright © 2014 by John Wiley & Sons, Inc. All rights reserved.

Published by John Wiley & Sons, Inc., Hoboken, New Jersey.
Published simultaneously in Canada.

No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, scanning, or otherwise, except as permitted under Section 107 or 108 of the 1976 United States Copyright Act, without either the prior written permission of the Publisher, or authorization through payment of the appropriate per-copy fee to the Copyright Clearance Center, Inc., 222 Rosewood Drive, Danvers, MA 01923, 978-750-8400, fax 978-646-8600, or on the web at www.copyright.com. Requests to the Publisher for permission should be addressed to the Permissions Department, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 111 River Street, Hoboken, NJ 07030, (201) 748-6011, fax (201) 748-6008.

Limit of Liability/Disclaimer of Warranty: While the publisher and author have used their best efforts in preparing this book, they make no representations or warranties with respect to the accuracy or completeness of the contents of this book and specifically disclaim any implied warranties of merchantability or fitness for a particular purpose. No warranty may be created or extended by sales representatives or written sales materials. The advice and strategies contained herein may not be suitable for your situation. You should consult with a professional where appropriate. Neither the publisher nor author shall be liable for any loss of profit or any other commercial damages, including but not limited to special, incidental, consequential, or other damages.

For general information on our other products and services please contact our Customer Care Department within the U.S. at 877-762-2974, outside the U.S. at 317-572-3993 or fax 317-572-4002.

Wiley also publishes its books in a variety of electronic formats. Some content that appears in print, however, may not be available in electronic format.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data:

Encyclopedia of polymer science and technology. – Fourth edition.

pages cm

An earlier edition was published under the title: Encyclopedia of polymer science and engineering.

Includes bibliographical references and index.

ISBN 978-1-118-63389-2 (volume 1: cloth)

1. Plastics—Encyclopedias.
2. Polymers—Encyclopedias.
3. Polymerization—Encyclopedias.

TP1110.E53 2014

668.903—dc23

2013037237

Printed in the United States of America.

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

CONTENTS

VINYLDENE CHLORIDE POLYMERS
(PVDC), 1

VINYLDENE FLUORIDE POLYMERS
(PVDF), 54

VISCOELASTICITY, 77

WATER-SOLUBLE POLYMERS, 173

WEATHERING OF POLYMERIC
MATERIALS, 243

WOOD COMPOSITES, 281

WOOL, 306

XANTHAN, 348

X-RAY MICROSCOPY, 367

XYLYLENE POLYMERS, 409

YIELD AND CRAZING IN POLYMERS, 449

ZIEGLER–NATTA CATALYSTS, 504

ZWITTERIONIC POLYMERIZATION, 524

Contents of Volumes 1–15 of the Encyclopedia, 547

Contributors to Volumes 1–15 of the Encyclopedia, 555

Cumulative Index, Volumes 1–15, 569

CONTRIBUTORS TO VOLUME 15

- H. Ade**, *North Carolina State University, Raleigh, North Carolina*, X-Ray Microscopy
- R. Amin-Sanayei**, *Atofina Chemicals Inc., King of Prussia, Pennsylvania*, Vinylidene Fluoride Polymers (PVDF)
- Neil Ayres**, *Department of Polymer Science, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Mississippi*, Water-Soluble Polymers
- John K. Baird**, *Kelco Division of Merck & Co., Inc., Xanthan*
- W. F. Beach**, *Alpha Metals, Bridgewater, New Jersey*, Xylylene Polymers
- D. E. Beyer**, *The Dow Chemical Company*, Vinylidene Chloride Polymers (PVDC)
- John C. Chadwick**, *Dutch Polymer Institute, Eindhoven University of Technology, The Netherlands*, Ziegler-Natta Catalysts
- John R. Christoe**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Ron J. Denning**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- David J. Evans**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Patricia A. Heiden**, *Michigan Technological University, Houghton, Michigan*, Wood Composites
- B. A. Howell**, *Central Michigan University*, Vinylidene Chloride Polymers (PVDC)
- J. S. Humphrey**, *Atofina Chemicals Inc., King of Prussia, Pennsylvania*, Vinylidene Fluoride Polymers (PVDF)
- Mickey G. Huson**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Leslie N. Jones**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Peter R. Lamb**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Andrew B. Lowe**, *Department of Chemistry and Biochemistry, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Mississippi*, Water-Soluble Polymers
- Laurent M. Matuana**, *Michigan State University, East Lansing, Michigan*, Wood Composites
- Charles L. McCormick**, *Department of Polymer Science, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Mississippi*, Water-Soluble Polymers
- Matthew McGreer**, *Atlas Material Testing Technology, LLC, Chicago, Illinois*, Weathering of Polymeric Materials
- Gregory B. McKenna**, *Texas Tech University, Lubbock, Texas*, Viscoelasticity; Yield and Crazing in Polymers
- Keith R. Millington**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Paul A. O'Connell**, *Texas Tech University, Lubbock, Texas*, Yield and Crazing in Polymers

viii **CONTRIBUTORS**

David G. Phillips, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool

Anthony P. Pierlot, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool

John A. Rippon, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool

Ian M. Russell, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool

Norma D. Searle, *Consultant in Weathering of Materials*, Weathering of Polymeric Materials

Masato Suzuki, *Nagoya Institute of Technology, Nagoya, Japan*, Zwitterionic Polymerization

Allen Zielnik, *Atlas Material Testing Technology, LLC, Chicago, Illinois*, Weathering of Polymeric Materials

V

VINYLLIDENE CHLORIDE POLYMERS (PVDC)

Introduction

Vinylidene chloride (VDC) copolymers were among the first synthetic polymers to be commercialized. Their most valuable property is low permeability to a wide range of gases and vapors (see BARRIER POLYMERS). From the beginning in 1939, the word Saran has been used for copolymers with high VDC content, and it is still a trademark of The Dow Chemical Co. in some countries. Sometimes the names Saran and poly(vinylidene chloride) (PVDC) are used interchangeably. This can lead to confusion because, although Saran includes the homopolymer, only copolymers have commercial importance. The homopolymer, ie, PVDC, is not commercially used because it lacks the thermal stability required for processing.

The principal solution to fabrication difficulties is copolymerization. Three types of comonomers are commercially important: vinyl chloride; acrylates, including alkyl acrylates and alkyl methacrylates; and acrylonitrile. When extrusion is the method of fabrication, other solutions include formulation with plasticizers, stabilizers, and extrusion aids plus applying improved extrusion techniques.

Monomer

Properties. Pure vinylidene chloride [75-35-4] (1,1-dichloroethylene) is a colorless, mobile liquid with a characteristic sweet odor. Its properties are summarized in Table 1. Vinylidene chloride is soluble in most polar and nonpolar organic solvents. Its solubility in water (0.25 wt%) is nearly independent of temperature at 16-90 °C (5).

Manufacture. Vinylidene chloride monomer can be conveniently prepared in the laboratory by the reaction of 1,1,2-trichloroethane [79-00-5] with aqueous alkali:

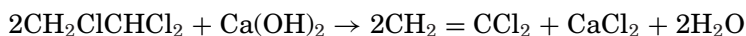


Table 1. Properties of VDC Monomer^{a, b}

Property	Value
Molecular weight	96.944
Odor	Pleasant, sweet
Appearance	Clear, liquid
Color (APHA)	0–10
Solubility of monomer in water at 25 °C, wt%	0.25
Solubility of water in monomer at 25 °C, wt%	0.035
Normal boiling point, °C	31.56
Freezing point, °C	– 122.56
Flash point, °C	
Tag closed cup	–28
Tag open cup	–16
Flammable limits in air (ambient conditions), vol%	6.5–15.5
Autoignition temperature, °C	513 ^b
Latent heat of vaporization, ΔH_v° , kJ/mol ^c	
At 25° C	26.48 ± 0.08
At normal boiling point	26.14 ± 0.08
Latent heat of fusion at freezing point, ΔH_m , J/mol ^c	6514 ± 8
Heat of polymerization at 25 °C, ΔH_p , kJ/mol ^c	–75.3 ± 3.8
Heat of combustion, liquid monomer	1095.9
at 25 °C, ΔH_c , kJ/mol ^c	
Heat of formation	
Liquid monomer at 25 °C, ΔH_f , kJ/mol ^c	–25.1 ± 1.3
Gaseous monomer at 25 °C, ΔH_f , kJ/mol ^c	1.26 ± 1.26
Heat capacity	
Liquid monomer at 25 °C, C_p , J/(mol·K) ^c	111.27
Gaseous monomer at 25 °C, C_p , J/(mol·K) ^c	67.03
Critical temperature, T_c , °C	220.8
Critical pressure, P_c , MPa ^d	5.21
Critical volume, V_c , cm ³ /mol	218
Liquid density, g/cm ³	
–20 °C	1.2852
0 °C	1.2499
20 °C	1.2137
Index of refraction, n_D	
10 °C	1.43062
15 °C	1.42777
20 °C	1.42468
Absolute viscosity, mPa·s (= cP)	
–20 °C	0.4478
0 °C	0.3939
x20 ° C	0.3302
Vapor pressure, ^e at $T^\circ\text{C}$	$\log P_{\text{kPa}} = 6.1070 - 1104.29/T$ ($T = -237.697$)

^aRefs. (2) and (3).

^bInhibited with methyl ether of hydroquinone.

^cTo convert J to cal, divide by 4.184.

^dTo convert MPa to atm, divide by 0.101.

^e P measured from 6.7 to 104.7 kPa. To convert kPa to mm Hg, multiply by 7.5 (add 0.875 to the constant to convert \log_{kPa} to \log_{mmHg}).

Other methods are based on bromochloroethane [25620-54-6], trichloroethyl acetate [625-24-1], tetrachloroethane [79-34-5], and catalytic cracking of trichloroethane (4). Catalytic processes produce hydrogen chloride as by-product, rather than less valuable salts, but yields of VDC have been too low for commercial use of these processes. However, good results have been reported with metal-salt catalysts ((5)–7).

Vinylidene chloride is prepared commercially by the dehydrochlorination of 1,1,2-trichloroethane with lime or caustic in slight excess (2–10%) (1,8). A continuous liquid-phase reaction at 98–99 °C yields ~90% VDC. Caustic gives better results than lime. Vinylidene chloride is purified by washing with water, drying, and fractional distillation. It forms an azeotrope with 6 wt% methanol (9). Purification can be achieved by distillation of the azeotrope, followed by extraction of the methanol with water. An inhibitor is usually added at this point. Commercial grades contain 200 ppm of the monomethyl ether of hydroquinone (MEHQ). Many other inhibitors for the polymerization of VDC have been described in patents, but MEHQ is the one most often used. The inhibitor can be removed by distillation or by washing with 25 wt% aqueous caustic under an inert atmosphere at low temperatures.

For many polymerizations, MEHQ need not be removed; instead, polymerization initiators are added. Vinylidene chloride from which the inhibitor has been removed should be refrigerated in the dark at –10 °C, under a nitrogen atmosphere, and in a nickel-lined or baked phenolic-lined storage tank. If not used within 1 day, more inhibitor should be added.

Health and Safety Factors. Vinylidene chloride is highly volatile and, when free of decomposition products, has a mild, sweet odor. Its warning properties are ordinarily inadequate to prevent excessive exposure. Inhalation of vapor presents a hazard, which is readily controlled by observance of precautions commonly taken in the chemical industry (3). A single, brief exposure to a high concentration of VDC vapor, eg, 2000 ppm, rapidly causes intoxication, which may progress to unconsciousness on prolonged exposure. The LC50/4 h in rats is 6350 ppm. However, prompt and complete recovery from the anesthetic effects occurs when the exposure is for short duration. A single, prolonged exposure and repeated short-term exposures can be dangerous, even when the concentration of the vapor is too low to cause an anesthetic effect. Such exposure may produce organic injury to the kidneys and liver. For repeated exposures, the vapor concentration of VDC should be much lower. The American Conference of Governmental Industrial Hygienists threshold limit value of 5 ppm has been established to provide an adequate margin of safety.

Vinylidene chloride is hepatotoxic, but does not appear to be a carcinogen (10–15). Pharmacokinetic studies indicate that the behavior of vinyl chloride and vinylidene chloride in rats and mice is substantially different (16). No unusual health problems have been observed in workers exposed to VDC monomer over varying periods (17). Because VDC degrades rapidly in the atmosphere, air pollution is not likely to be a problem (18). Worker exposure is the main concern. As such, personal monitoring can be done using passive dosimeters. Refer to the dosimeter supplier for collection and analysis details.

The liquid is irritating to the skin after only a few minutes of contact. The inhibitor MEHQ may be partly responsible for this irritation. Inhibited VDC is

moderately irritating to the eyes. Contact causes pain and conjunctival irritation, and possibly some transient corneal injury and iritis. Permanent damage, however, is not likely.

Peroxide Formation. In the presence of air or oxygen, uninhibited VDC forms a violently explosive complex peroxide at temperatures as low as 40° C. Decomposition products of VDC products are formaldehyde, phosgene, and hydrochloric acid. A sharp, acrid odor indicates oxygen exposure and probable presence of peroxides. This is confirmed by the liberation of iodine from a slightly acidified dilute potassium iodide solution. Formation of insoluble polymer may also indicate peroxide formation. The peroxide adsorbs on the precipitated polymer, and separation of the polymer may result in an explosive composition. Any dry composition containing more than ~15 wt% peroxide detonates from a slight mechanical shock or from heat. Vinylidene chloride that contains peroxides may be purified by being washed several times, either with 10 wt% aqueous sodium hydroxide solution at 25 °C or with a fresh aqueous solution of 5 wt% sodium bisulfite. Residues in vessels containing VDC should be handled with great care, and the peroxides should be destroyed with water at room temperature.

Copper, aluminum, and their alloys should not be used in handling VDC. Copper can react with acetylenic impurities to form copper acetylides, whereas aluminum can react with VDC to form aluminum chloralkyls. Both compounds are extremely reactive and potentially hazardous.

Polymerization

Vinylidene chloride polymerizes by both ionic and radical reactions. Processes based on the latter are far more common (19). Vinylidene chloride is of average reactivity when compared with other unsaturated monomers. The chlorine substituents stabilize radicals in the intermediate for an addition reaction. Because they are also strongly electron-withdrawing, they polarize the double bond, making it susceptible to anionic attack. For the same reason, a carbocation intermediate is not favored.

The 1,1-disubstitution of chlorine atoms causes steric interactions in the polymer, as is evident from the heat of polymerization (see Table 1) (20). When corrected for the heat of fusion, the heat of polymerization is significantly less than the theoretical value of -83.7 kJ/mol (-20 kcal/mol) for the process of converting a double bond to two single bonds. The steric strain apparently is neither important in the addition step because VDC polymerizes easily, nor is it sufficient to favor depolymerization. The estimated ceiling temperature for PVDC is about 400 °C.

Homopolymerization. The radical polymerization of VDC has been carried out by solution, slurry, suspension, and emulsion methods. Solution polymerization in a medium that dissolves both monomer and polymer has been investigated (21). Kinetic measurements lead to activation energies and frequency factors in the normal range for radical polymerizations of olefinic monomers. The kinetic behavior of VDC is abnormal when the polymerization is heterogeneous (22). Slurry polymerizations are usually used only in the laboratory. They can be carried out in bulk or in common solvents, eg, benzene. Poly(vinylidene chloride) is insoluble in these media and separates from the liquid phase as a crystalline

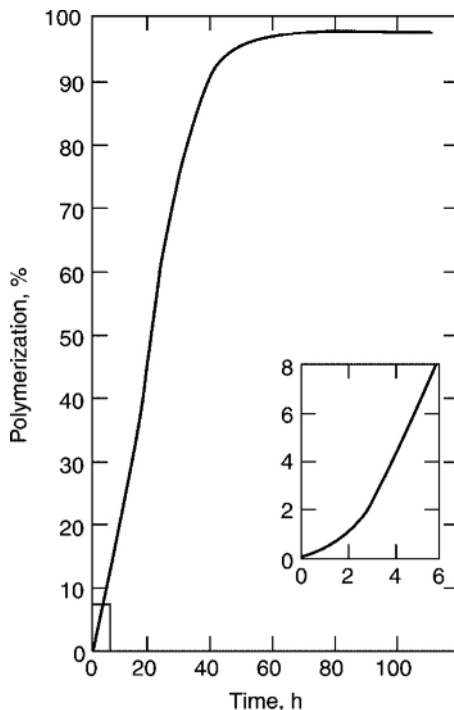


Fig. 1. Bulk polymerization of VDC at 45 °C, with 0.5 wt% benzoyl peroxide as initiator (25).

powder. The heterogeneity of the reaction makes stirring and heat transfer difficult; consequently, these reactions cannot be easily controlled on a large scale. Aqueous emulsion or suspension reactions are preferred for large-scale operations. Slurry reactions are usually initiated by the thermal decomposition of organic peroxides or azo compounds. Purely thermal initiation can occur, but rates are very low (23).

Bulk Polymerization. The spontaneous polymerization of VDC, so often observed when the monomer is stored at room temperature, is caused by peroxides formed from the reaction of VDC with oxygen. Very pure monomer does not polymerize under these conditions. Irradiation by either uv or γ rays (22,24) also induces polymerization of VDC.

The heterogeneous nature of the bulk polymerization of VDC is apparent from the rapid development of turbidity in the reaction medium following initiation. The turbidity results from the presence of minute PVDC crystals. As the reaction progresses, the crystalline phase grows and the liquid phase diminishes. Eventually, a point is reached where the liquid slurry solidifies into a solid mass. A typical conversion–time curve is shown in Figure 1 for a mass polymerization initiated by benzoyl peroxide. The first stage of the reaction is characterized by rapidly increasing rate, which levels off in the second stage to a fairly constant value. This is often called the steady-state region. Throughout the first two stages, monomer concentration remains constant because the polymer separates into another phase. In the third stage, there is a gradual decrease in rate to zero

as the monomer supply is depleted. Because the mass solidifies while monomer is still present (usually at conversions below 20%), further polymerization generates void space. The final solid, therefore, is opaque and quite porous. A similar pattern of behavior is observed when VDC is polymerized in solvents, eg, benzene, that do not dissolve or swell the polymer. In this case, however, the reaction mixture may not solidify if the monomer concentration is low.

Heterogeneous polymerization is characteristic of a number of monomers, including vinyl chloride and acrylonitrile. A completely satisfactory mechanism for these reactions has not been determined. This is true for VDC also. Early studies were not broad enough to elucidate the mechanism (22,26,27). Morphologies of as-polymerized poly(vinyl chloride) (PVC) and poly(acrylonitrile) (PAN) are similar, suggesting a similar mode of polymerization.

The morphology of as-polymerized PVDC is quite different (27). Nearly spherical aggregates form in the PVC and PAN systems, whereas anisotropic growth takes place in the PVDC case. The difference in morphology may be a consequence of the relative rates of polymerization and crystallization. Poly(vinylidene chloride) is unique because polymerization and crystallization probably occur nearly simultaneously. It has been reported that the average lifetime of a growing radical (τ_s) is between 0.1 and 10 s (28). The half-time (t_{y2}) for crystallization of PVDC copolymers in monomer was measured to be about 1 s at 60 °C and about 0.01 s at 90 °C (29). This information is important for developing an understanding of a mechanism that includes a contribution from a surface reaction which has the potential for autoacceleration.

Emulsion Polymerization. Emulsion and suspension reactions are doubly heterogeneous; the polymer is insoluble in the monomer and both are insoluble in water. Suspension reactions are similar in behavior to slurry reactions. Oil-soluble initiators are used, and so the monomer-polymer droplet is like a small mass reaction. Emulsion polymerizations are more complex. Because the monomer is insoluble in the polymer particle, the simple Smith-Ewart theory does not apply (30).

A kinetic model for the particle growth stage for continuous-addition emulsion polymerization has been proposed (31). Below the monomer saturation point, the steady-state rate of polymerization, R_p , depends on the rate of monomer addition, R_a , according to the following reciprocal relationship:

$$\frac{1}{R_p} = \frac{1}{K} + \frac{1}{R_a}$$

where K depends on the number of particles and the propagation rate constant. The kinetics of emulsion polymerization of nonswelling and swellable latex particles to define the locus of polymerization (33) have been examined. There are no significant differences between the behavior of swelling and nonswelling emulsion particles and neither polymerization follows Smith-Ewart kinetics. The results indicate strongly that polymerization takes place at the particle-water interface or in a surface layer on the polymer particle.

Redox initiator systems are normally used in the emulsion polymerization of VDC to develop high rates at low temperatures. Reactions must be carried out below ~80 °C to prevent degradation of the polymer. Poly(vinylidene chloride) in

Table 2. Reactivity of VDC (r_1) with Important Monomers (r_2)^a

Monomer	r_1	r_2
Styrene	0.14	2.0
Vinyl chloride	3.2	0.3
Acrylonitrile	0.37	0.91
Methyl acrylate	1.0	1.0
Methyl methacrylate	0.24	2.53
Vinyl acetate	6	0.1

^aRef. (40).

emulsion is also attacked by aqueous base. Therefore, reactions should be carried out at low pH.

Ionic Mechanisms. The instability of PVDC is one of the reasons why ionic initiation of VDC polymerization has not been used extensively. Many of the common initiators are sufficiently basic so as to promote E2 elimination of hydrogen chloride as the polymer is being formed. For example, butyllithium polymerizes VDC by an anionic mechanism, but the product is a low molecular weight, discolored polymer having a low chlorine content (33). Cationic polymerization of VDC seems unlikely in view of its structure (34). Some available data, however, suggest the possibility. In the low temperature, radiation-induced copolymerization of VDC with isobutylene, reactivity ratios vary markedly with temperature, indicating a change from a radical reaction (35). Coordination complex catalysts may also induce polymerization of VDC by a nonradical mechanism. Again, this speculation is based on copolymerization studies. Poly(vinylidene chloride) telomers can be prepared by using chlorine as the initiator and chain-transfer agent (36,37). Plasma polymerization of VDC in a radio-frequency glow discharge yields cross-linked polymer, which is partially degraded (38).

Copolymerization. The importance of VDC as a monomer results from its ability to copolymerize with other vinyl monomers. The Q value for VDC is 0.22 and the e value is 0.36. It most easily copolymerizes with acrylates, but it also reacts, more slowly, with other monomers, eg, styrene, that form highly resonance-stabilized radicals. Reactivity ratios (r_1 and r_2) with various monomers are listed in Table 2. Many other copolymers have been prepared from monomers for which the reactivity ratios are not known. The commercially important copolymers include those with vinyl chloride (VC), acrylonitrile (AN), or various alkyl acrylates, but many commercial polymers contain three or more components, of which VDC is the principal one. Usually one component is introduced to improve the processibility or solubility of the polymer; the others are added to modify specific use properties. Most of these compositions have been described in the patent literature, and a list of various combinations has been compiled (39). A typical terpolymer might contain 90 wt% VDC, with the remainder made up of AN and an acrylate or methacrylate monomer.

Bulk copolymerizations yielding high VDC-content copolymers are normally heterogeneous. Two of the most important pairs, VDC-VC and VDC-AN, are heterogeneous over most of the composition range. In both cases and at either composition extreme, the product separates initially in a powdery form; however, for

intermediate compositions, the reaction mixture may only gel. Copolymers in this composition range are swollen but not completely dissolved by the monomer mixture at normal polymerization temperatures. Copolymers containing more than 15 mol% acrylate are normally soluble in the monomers. These reactions are therefore homogeneous and, if carried to completion, yield clear, solid castings of the copolymer. Most copolymerizations can be carried out in solution because of the greater solubility of the copolymers in common solvents.

During copolymerization, one monomer may add to the copolymer more rapidly than the other. Except for the unusual case of equal reactivity ratios, batch reactions carried to completion yield polymers of broad composition distribution. More often than not, this is an undesirable result.

Vinylidene chloride copolymerizes randomly with methyl acrylate and nearly so with other acrylates. Very severe composition drift occurs, however, in copolymerizations with vinyl chloride or methacrylates. Several methods have been developed to produce homogeneous copolymers regardless of the reactivity ratio (40). These methods are applicable mainly to emulsion and suspension processes where adequate stirring can be maintained. Copolymerization rates of VDC with small amounts of a second monomer are normally lower than its rate of homopolymerization. The kinetics of the copolymerization of VDC and VC has been studied (41–44).

Studies of the copolymerization of VDC with methyl acrylate (MA) over a composition range of 0–16 wt% showed that near the intermediate composition (8 wt%), the polymerization rates nearly followed normal solution polymerization kinetics (45). However, at the two extremes (0 and 16 wt% MA), copolymerization showed significant autoacceleration. The observations are important because they show the significant complexities in these copolymerizations. The autoacceleration for the homopolymerization, ie, 0 wt% MA, is probably the result of a surface polymerization phenomenon. On the other hand, the autoacceleration for the 16 wt% MA copolymerization could be the result of Trommsdorff and Norrish-Smith effects.

Copolymers of VDC can also be prepared by methods other than conventional radical polymerization. Copolymers have been formed by irradiation and with various organometallic and coordination complex catalysts (24,39,46–49). Graft copolymers have also been described (50–54).

Polymer Structure and Properties

Chain Structure. The chemical composition of PVDC has been confirmed by various techniques, including elemental analysis, x-ray diffraction analysis, degradation studies, and infrared (ir), Raman, and nuclear magnetic resonance (nmr) spectroscopy. The polymer chain is made up of VDC units added head-to-tail:



Because the repeat unit is symmetrical, no possibility exists for stereoisomerism. Variations in structure can occur only by head-to-head addition, branching, or degradation reactions that do not cause chain scission, including such

reactions as thermal dehydrochlorination, which creates double bonds in the structure to give, for example, $\text{CH}_2\text{CCl}_2\text{CH} = \text{CClCH}_2\text{CCl}_2$ and a variety of ill-defined oxidation and hydrolysis reactions that generate carbonyl groups.

The ir spectra of PVDC often show traces of unsaturation and carbonyl groups. The slightly yellow tinge of many of these polymers comes from the same source; the pure polymer is colorless. Elemental analyses for chlorine are normally slightly lower than the theoretical value of 73.2%.

The high crystallinity of PVDC indicates that no significant amounts of head-to-head addition or branching can be present. This has been confirmed by nmr spectroscopy (55). Studies of well-characterized oligomers having degrees of polymerization (DP) of 2–10 offer further nmr evidence (36), ie, a single peak from the methylene hydrogens. Either branching or another mode of addition would produce nonequivalent hydrogens and a more complicated spectrum. However, nmr cannot detect small amounts of such structures. The ir and Raman spectra can also be interpreted in terms of the simple head-to-tail structure (56,57).

Molecular weights of PVDC can be determined directly by dilute solution measurements in good solvents (58). Viscosity studies indicate that polymers having DP from 100 to more than 10000 are easily obtained. Dimers and polymers having $\text{DP} < 100$ can be prepared by special procedures (36,37). Copolymers can be more easily studied because of their solubility in common solvents. Gel-permeation chromatography studies indicate that molecular weight distributions are typical of vinyl copolymers.

Crystal Structure. The crystal structure of PVDC is fairly well established. Several unit cells have been proposed (59). The unit cell contains four monomer units with two monomer units per repeat distance. The calculated density, 1.96 g/cm^3 , is higher than the experimental values, which are $1.80\text{--}1.94 \text{ g/cm}^3$ at 25°C , depending on the sample. This is typically the case with crystalline polymers because samples of 100% crystallinity usually cannot be obtained. A direct calculation of the polymer density from volume changes during polymerization yields a value of 1.97 g/cm^3 (60). If this value is correct, the unit cell densities may be low.

The repeat distance along the chain axis (0.468 nm) is significantly less than that calculated for a planar zigzag structure. Therefore, the polymer must be in some other conformation (61–63). Based on ir and Raman studies of PVDC single crystals and normal vibration analysis, the best conformation appears to be $\theta_\phi\theta_\phi'$, where the skeletal angle θ is 120° , and the torsional angle $\phi(\phi'$ of opposite sign) is 32.5° . This conformation is in agreement with theoretical predictions (64).

The melting temperature T_m of PVDC is independent of molecular weight above $\text{DP} = 100$. However, as shown in Figure 2, it drops sharply at lower molecular weights. Below the hexamer, the products are noncrystalline liquids.

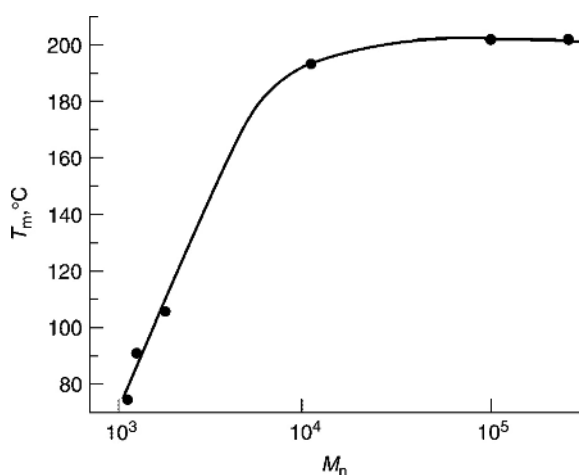
The properties of PVDC (Table 3) are usually modified by copolymerization. Copolymers of high VDC content have lower melting temperatures than PVDC. Copolymers containing more than $\sim 15 \text{ mol\%}$ acrylate or methacrylate are amorphous. Substantially more AN (25%) or VC (45%) is required to destroy crystallinity completely.

The effect of different types of comonomers on T_m varies. VDC–MA copolymers more closely obey Flory's melting-point depression theory than do copolymers with VC or AN. Studies have shown that for the copolymers of VDC with

Table 3. Properties of VDC Homopolymer

Property	Best value	Reported values
$T_m, ^\circ\text{C}$	202	198–205
$T_g, ^\circ\text{C}$	-17	-19 to -11
Transition between T_m and $T_g, ^\circ\text{C}$	80	
Density at 25 $^\circ\text{C}$, g/cm^3		
Amorphous	1.775	1.67–1.775
Unit cell	1.96	1.949–1.96
Crystalline		1.80–1.97
Refractive index (crystalline), n_D	1.63	
Heat of fusion, $\Delta H_m, \text{J}/\text{mol}^a$	6275	4600–7950

^aTo convert J to cal, divide by 4.184.

**Fig. 2.** Crystalline melting temperatures of PVDC (36).

MA, Flory's theory needs modification to include both lamellar thickness and surface free energy (65). The VDC-VC and VDC-AN copolymers typically display severe composition drift; therefore most of the comonomer units do not belong to crystallizing chains. Hence, they neither enter the crystal as defects nor cause lamellar thickness to decrease, and so the depression of the melting temperature is less than expected.

The glass-transition temperature T_g , of VDC copolymers has been studied extensively (66,67). The effect of various comonomers on the T_g is shown in Figure 3. In every case, T_g increases with the comonomer content at low comonomer levels, even in cases where the T_g of the other homopolymer is lower. The phenomenon has been observed in several other copolymer systems as well (68). In these cases, a maximum T_g is observed at intermediate compositions. In others, where the T_g of the other homopolymer is much higher than the T_g of PVDC, the glass-transition temperatures of the copolymers increase over the entire composition range. The T_g increases most rapidly at low AN levels but changes the slowest at low VC levels. This suggests that polar interactions affect the former, but the increase in T_g in the VDC-VC copolymers may simply

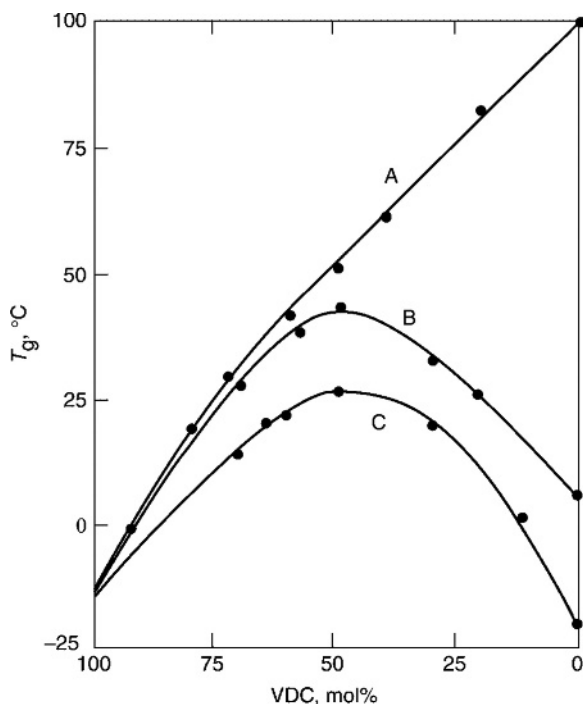


Fig. 3. Effect of comonomer structure on the glass-transition temperature of VDC copolymers (70), where A represents AN; B, MA; and C, EA.

result from loss of chain symmetry. Because of these effects, the temperature range in which copolymers can crystallize is drastically narrowed. Crystallization induction times are prolonged, and subsequent crystallization takes place at a low rate over a long period of time. Plasticization, which lowers T_g , decreases crystallization induction times significantly. Copolymers having lower glass-transition temperatures also tend to crystallize more rapidly (69).

Crystallization curves have been determined for 10 mol% acrylate copolymers of varying side-chain length. Among the acrylate copolymers, the butyl acrylate copolymer has a T_g of 8 °C; the octyl acrylate, -3 °C; and the octadecyl acrylate, -16 °C. The rates of crystallization of these copolymers are inversely related to the glass-transition temperatures. Apparently, the long alkyl side chains act as internal plasticizers, lowering the melt viscosity of the copolymer even though the acrylate group acts to stiffen the mainchain.

The maximum rates of crystallization of the more common crystalline copolymers occur at 80–120 °C. In many cases, these copolymers have broad composition distributions containing both fractions of high VDC content that crystallize rapidly and other fractions that do not crystallize at all. Poly(vinylidene chloride) probably crystallizes at a maximum rate at 140–150 °C, but the process is difficult to follow because of severe polymer degradation. The copolymers may remain amorphous for a considerable period of time if quenched to room temperature. The induction time before the onset of crystallization depends on

both the type and amount of comonomer; PVDC crystallizes within minutes at 25 °C.

Recrystallization of a copolymer having 15 wt% VC has been found to be nucleated by material that survives the melting process plus new nuclei (69). The maximum crystallization rate occurred at 100 °C; the maximum nucleation rate at 10 °C. Attempts to melt all the polymer led to degradation that interfered with recrystallization.

Orientation or mechanical working which accelerates crystallization has a pronounced effect on morphology. Crystals of uniaxially oriented filaments are oriented along the fiber axis (59). The long period (lamellar thickness), as determined by small-angle x-ray scattering, is 7.6 nm and decreases with comonomer content. The fiber is 43% crystalline and has a melting temperature of 195 °C and an average crystal thickness of 4.5 nm. The crystal size is not greatly affected by comonomer content, but both crystallinity and melting temperature decrease with increasing levels of comonomer.

Copolymerization also affects morphology under other crystallization conditions. Copolymers in the form of cast or molded sheets are much more transparent because of the small size of spherulites present. In extreme cases, crystallinity cannot be detected optically, but its effect on mechanical properties is pronounced. Before crystallization, films are soft and rubbery, with low modulus and high elongation. After crystallization, they are leathery and tough, with higher modulus and lower elongation.

Copolymers of VDC and MA have been studied by x-ray techniques (71). For example, the long period (lamellar thickness) for an 8.5 wt% MA copolymer was found to be 9.2 nm by small-angle x-ray scattering. The unit cell is monoclinic, with $a = 0.686$ and $c = 1.247$ nm by wide-angle x-ray scattering.

Significant amounts of comonomer also reduce the ability of the polymer to form lamellar crystals from solution. In some cases, the polymer merely gels the solution as it precipitates rather than forming distinct crystals. At somewhat higher VDC content, it may precipitate in the form of aggregated, ill-defined particles and clusters.

Morphology and Transitions. The highly crystalline particles of PVDC precipitated during polymerization are aggregates of thin lamellar crystals (72). The substructures are 5–10 nm thick and 100 or more times larger in other dimensions. In some respects, they resemble the lamellar crystals grown from dilute solution (73–75). The single crystals are better characterized than the as-polymerized particles. They are highly branched, with branching angles of 65–70°; the angle appears to be associated with a twin plane in the crystal (76).

Melting temperatures of as-polymerized powders are high, ie, 198–205 °C as measured by differential thermal analysis (dta) or hot-stage microscopy (72). Two peaks are usually observed in dta curves: a small lower temperature peak and the main melting peak. The small peak seems to be related to polymer crystallized by precipitation rather than during polymerization.

As-polymerized PVDC does not have a well-defined T_g because of its high crystallinity. However, a sample can be melted at 210 °C and quenched rapidly to an amorphous state at < -20 °C. The amorphous polymer has a glass-transition temperature of -17 °C as shown by dilatometry (66). Glass-transition

temperature values of -19 to -11 °C, depending on both method of measurement and sample preparation, have been determined.

Once melted, PVDC does not regain its as-polymerized morphology when subsequently crystallized. The polymer recrystallizes in a spherulitic habit. Spherulites between crossed polarizing plates show the usual Maltese cross and are positively birefringent. The size and number of spherulites can be controlled. Quenching and low-temperature annealing generate many small nuclei that, on heating, grow rapidly into small spherulites. Slow crystallization at higher temperatures produces fewer but much larger spherulites. The melting temperature and degree of crystallinity of recrystallized PVDC is also dependent on crystallization conditions. The melting temperature increases with crystallization temperature, but the as-polymerized value cannot be achieved. There is no reason to believe that even these values indicate the true melting point of PVDC; it may be as high as 220 °C. Slow, high temperature recrystallization and annealing experiments are not feasible because of the thermal instability of the polymer (77). Other transitions in PVDC have been observed by dynamic mechanical methods.

Solubility and Solution Properties. Poly(vinylidene chloride), like many high melting polymers, does not dissolve in most common solvents at ambient temperatures. Copolymers, particularly those of low crystallinity, are much more soluble. However, one of the outstanding characteristics of VDC polymers is resistance to a wide range of solvents and chemical reagents. The insolubility of PVDC results less from its polarity than from its high melting temperature. It dissolves readily in a wide variety of solvents above 130 °C (77). However, it should be noted that significant degradation accompanies dissolution of the polymer in polar, aprotic solvents at these temperatures.

The polarity of the polymer is important only in mixtures having specific polar aprotic solvents. Many solvents of this general class solvate PVDC strongly enough to depress the melting temperature by more than 100 °C. Solubility is normally correlated with cohesive energy densities or solubility parameters. For PVDC, a value of 20 ± 0.6 (J/cm^3)^{1/2} [10 ± 0.3 (cal/cm^3)^{1/2}] has been estimated from solubility studies in nonpolar solvents. The value calculated from Small's relationship is 20.96 (J/cm^3)^{1/2} [10.25 (cal/cm^3)^{1/2}]. The use of the solubility parameter scheme for polar crystalline polymers such as PVDC has limited value. A typical nonpolar solvent of matching solubility parameter is tetrahydronaphthalene. The lowest temperature at which PVDC dissolves in this solvent is 140 °C. Specific solvents, however, dissolve PVDC at much lower temperatures. A list of good solvents is given in Table 4. The relative solvent activity is characterized by the temperature at which a 1 wt% mixture of polymer in solvent becomes homogeneous when heated rapidly.

Poly(vinylidene chloride) also dissolves readily in certain solvent mixtures (78). One component must be a sulfoxide or *N,N*-dialkylamide. Effective cosolvents are less polar and have cyclic structures. They include aliphatic and aromatic hydrocarbons, ethers, sulfides, and ketones. Acidic or hydrogen-bonding solvents have an opposite effect, rendering the polar aprotic component less effective. Both hydrocarbons and strong hydrogen-bonding solvents are nonsolvents for PVDC.

As-polymerized PVDC is not in its most stable state; annealing and recrystallization can raise the temperature at which it dissolves (74). Low crystallinity

Table 4. Solvents for VDC Homopolymer^a

Solvents	$T, ^b \text{ } ^\circ\text{C}$
<i>Nonpolar</i>	
1,3-Dibromopropane	126
Bromobenzene	129
1-Chloronaphthalene	134
2-Methylnaphthalene	134
<i>o</i> -Dichlorobenzene	135
<i>Polar aprotic</i>	
Hexamethylphosphoramide	-7.2
Tetramethylene sulfoxide	28
<i>N</i> -Acetylpiperidine	34
<i>N</i> -Methylpyrrolidinone	42
<i>N</i> -Formylhexamethyleneimine	44
Trimethylene sulfide	74
<i>N-n</i> -Butylpyrrolidinone	75
Diisopropyl sulfoxide	79
<i>N</i> -Formylpiperidine	80
<i>N</i> -Acetylpyrrolidinone	86
Tetrahydrothiophene	87
<i>N, N</i> -Dimethylacetamide	87
Cyclooctanone	90
Cycloheptanone	96
Di- <i>n</i> -butyl sulfoxide	98

^aRef. (77).^bTemperature at which a 1 wt% mixture of polymer in solvent becomes homogeneous.

polymers dissolve at a lower temperature, forming metastable solutions. However, on standing at the dissolving temperature, they gel or become turbid, indicating recrystallization into a more stable form.

Copolymers having enough VDC content to be quite crystalline behave much like PVDC. They are more soluble, however, because of their lower melting temperatures. The solubility of amorphous copolymers is much higher. The selection of solvents in either case varies somewhat with the type of comonomer. Some of the more common types are listed in Table 5. Solvents that dissolve PVDC also dissolve the copolymers at lower temperatures. The identification of solvents that dissolve PVDC at low temperatures makes possible the study of dilute solution properties. Both light-scattering and intrinsic-viscosity studies have been reported (58). Intrinsic viscosity–molecular weight relationships for the three solvents investigated ($[\eta]$ in dL/g) are

$$[\eta] = 1.31 \times 10^{-4} M_w^{0.69} \text{ } N\text{-Methylpyrrolidinone (MP)} \quad (1)$$

$$[\eta] = 1.39 \times 10^{-4} M_w^{0.69} \text{ Tetramethylene sulfoxide (TMSO)} \quad (2)$$

$$[\eta] = 2.58 \times 10^{-4} M_w^{0.65} \text{ Hexamethylphosphoramide (HMPA)} \quad (3)$$

Table 5. Common Solvents for VDC Copolymers

Solvents	Copolymer type	Temperature, °C
Tetrahydrofuran	All	<60
2-Butanone	Low crystallinity	<80
1,4-Dioxane	All	50–100
Cyclohexanone	All	50–100
Cyclopentanone	All	50–100
Ethyl acetate	Low crystallinity	<80
Chlorobenzene	All	100–130
Dichlorobenzene	All	100–140
Dimethylformamide	High acrylonitrile	<100

The relative solvent power (HMPA > TMSO > NMP) agrees with solution-temperature measurements. The characteristic ratio C_∞ is about 8 ± 1 , which is slightly larger than that of a similar polymer, poly(isobutylene).

The dilute solution properties of copolymers are similar to those of the homopolymer. The intrinsic viscosity–molecular weight relationship for a VDC–AN copolymer (9 wt% AN) is $[\eta] = 1.06 \times 10^{-4} M_\omega^{0.72}$ (79). The characteristic ratio is 8.8 for this copolymer.

An extensive investigation of the dilute solution properties of several acrylate copolymers has been reported (76). The behavior is typical of flexible-backbone vinyl polymers. The length of the acrylate ester side chain has little effect on properties.

Intrinsic viscosity–molecular weight relationships have been obtained for copolymers in methyl ethyl ketone. The value for a 15 wt% ethyl acrylate (EA) copolymer is $[\eta] = 2.88 \times 10^{-4} M_\omega^{0.6}$.

The molecular weights of PVDC and VDC copolymers have been characterized by using the absolute viscosity of a 2 wt% solution in *o*-dichlorobenzene at 140° C. The exact correlation between this viscosity value and molecular weight is not known. Gel-permeation chromatography is the preferred method for characterizing molecular weight; studies of copolymers have been reported (80,81).

Mechanical Properties. Because PVDC is difficult to fabricate into suitable test specimens, very few direct measurements of its mechanical properties have been made. In many cases, however, the properties of copolymers have been studied as functions of composition, and the properties of PVDC can be estimated by extrapolation. Some characteristic properties of high VDC content, unplasticized copolymers are listed in Table 6. The performance of a given specimen is sensitive to morphology, including the amount and kind of crystallinity, as well as orientation. Tensile strength increases with crystallinity, whereas toughness and elongation decrease. Orientation, however, improves all three properties. The effect of stretch ratio applied during orientation on properties of VDC–VC monofilaments is shown in Table 7.

The dynamic mechanical properties of VDC–VC copolymers have been studied in detail. The incorporation of VC units in the polymer results in a drop in dynamic modulus because of the reduction in crystallinity. However, the

Table 6. Mechanical Properties of High VDC Content Copolymers

Property	Range
Tensile strength, MPa ^a	
Unoriented	34.5–69.0
Oriented	207–414
Elongation, %	
Unoriented	10–20
Oriented	15–40
Softening range (heat distortion), °C	100–150
Flow temperature, °C	>185
Brittle temperature, °C	–10 to 10
Impact strength, J/m ^b	26.7–53.4

^aTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^bTo convert J/m to ft.-lbf/in., divide by 53.38 (see ASTM D256).

Table 7. Effect of Stretch Ratio on Tensile Strength and Elongation of a VDC–VC Copolymer^{a, b}

Stretch ratio	Tensile strength, MPa ^c	Elongation, %
2.50:1	235	23.2
2.75:1	234	21.7
3.00:1	303	26.3
3.25:1	268	33.1
3.50:1	316	19.2
3.75:1	330	21.8
4.00:1	320	19.7
4.19:1	314	16.2

^aRef. (82).

^bAverage of five determinations, using the Instron test at 5 cm/min.

^cTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

glass-transition temperature is raised; therefore, the softening effect observed at room temperature is accompanied by increased brittleness at lower temperatures. These copolymers are normally plasticized in order to avoid this. Small amounts of plasticizer (2–10 wt%) depress T_g significantly without loss of strength at room temperature. At higher levels of VC, the T_g of the copolymer is above room temperature and the modulus rises again. A minimum in modulus or maximum in softness is usually observed in copolymers in which T_g is above room temperature. A thermomechanical analysis of VDC–AN and VDC–MMA (methyl methacrylate) copolymer systems shows a minimum in softening point at 79.4 and 68.1 mol% VDC, respectively (82).

In cases where the copolymers have substantially lower glass-transition temperatures, the modulus decreases with increasing comonomer content. This results from a drop in crystallinity and glass-transition temperature. The loss in modulus in these systems is therefore accompanied by an improvement in low temperature performance. However, at low acrylate levels (<10 wt%), T_g increases with comonomer content. The brittle points in this range may therefore be higher than that of PVDC.

Table 8. Comparison of the Permeabilities of Various Polymers to Water Vapor^a

Polymer	Density, g/mL		Permeability ^b	
	Amorphous	Crystalline	Amorphous	Crystalline
Ethylene	0.85	1.00	200–220	10–40
Propylene	0.85	0.94	420	
Isobutylene	0.915	0.94	90	
Vinyl chloride	1.41	1.52	300	90–115
Vinylidene chloride	1.77	1.96	30	4–6

^aRefs. (40),(84) and (85).

^bIn g/(h·100 m²) at 7.1 kPa (53 mm Hg) pressure differential and 39.5 °C for a film 25.4 μm (1 mil) thick.

The long side chains of the acrylate ester group can apparently act as internal plasticizers. Substitution of a carboxyl group on the polymer chain increases brittleness. A more polar substituent, eg, an *N*-alkylamide group, is even less desirable. Copolymers of VDC with *N*-alkylacrylamides are more brittle than the corresponding acrylates even when the side chains are long (83). Side-chain crystallization may be a contributing factor.

Barrier Properties. Vinylidene chloride copolymers are unique in that they have low permeability to a wider range of gases and liquids than other polymers. VDC copolymers are “barrier polymers” in a broad sense. Historically, the operating definition of a barrier polymer meant having an oxygen permeability less than 1.0 (cm³(STP)·mil)/(100 in.²·day·atm) [2.0 nmol/(m·s·GPa)]. A more useful descriptor for a barrier polymer is related to the application. A barrier polymer would have a set of permeabilities for important molecules sufficiently low to satisfy the containment needs. Some polymers have low permeability to gases. Others have low permeability to water. Still other polymers have low permeability to flavor/aroma/solvent (F/A/S) molecules. However, only rarely does a single polymer have low permeability in more than one category. VDC copolymers have low permeability in all three categories (see BARRIER POLYMERS).

The good barrier properties of VDC copolymers are a consequence of crystallinity and low free volume in the amorphous phase. The symmetric nature of the VDC unit in the polymer leads to nested packing that is adequate for crystallization and that leaves very little “dead” volume in the amorphous phase. Both polyisobutylene and PVDC have unusually low permeability to water compared to their monosubstituted counterparts, polypropylene and PVC (84). The values listed in Table 8 include estimates for the completely amorphous polymers. The estimated value for highly crystalline PVDC was obtained by extrapolating data for copolymers.

The effect of copolymer composition on gas permeability is shown in Table 9. The inherent barrier in VDC copolymers can best be exploited by using films containing little or no plasticizers and as much VDC as possible. However, the permeabilities of even completely amorphous copolymers, eg, 60 wt% VDC–40 wt% AN or 50 wt% VDC–50 wt% VC, are low compared to that of other polymers. The primary reason is that the diffusion coefficients for molecules in VDC copolymers are very low. This factor, together with the high crystallinity and the low solubility coefficients for many gases in VDC copolymers, results in very low

Table 9. Effect of Composition on the Permeability of Various Gases through VDC Copolymers^a

Polymer	Gas	$T, ^\circ\text{C}$	$P, \text{nmol}/(\text{m}\cdot\text{s}\cdot\text{GPa})^b$
PVDC	O ₂	25	<0.04
	N ₂	25	<0.02
	CO ₂	25	<0.10
90/10 VC	He	25	2.23
	H ₂	25	2.54
	O ₂	25	0.14
	N ₂	25	0.03
	CO ₂	25	0.98
	H ₂ S	30	0.10
	85/15 VC	He	34
	O ₂	25	0.40
	CO ₂	20	2.0
	70/30 VC	O ₂	25
50/50 VC	O ₂	25	1.2
80/20 AN	O ₂	25	0.14
	N ₂	25	0.02
	CO ₂	25	0.35
60/40 AN	O ₂	25	0.71
	N ₂	25	0.09
	CO ₂	25	1.6

^aRef. (86).^bTo convert nmol/(m·s·GPa) to (cm²·cm)/(cm²·s·kPa), divide by 4.46 × 10².

permeabilities. A change from PVDC to a copolymer containing 40 wt% AN or 50 wt% VC increases the permeability 10-fold but has little effect on the solubility coefficient.

The addition of a more polar comonomer, eg, AN, increases the water vapor transmission rate more than the addition of a less polar comonomer, eg, VC, when other factors are constant. For the same reason, AN copolymers are more resistant to penetrants of low cohesive energy density. All VDC copolymers, however, are very impermeable to aliphatic hydrocarbons. Comonomers that lower T_g and increase the free volume in the amorphous phase increase permeabilities more than other comonomers. Higher acrylates are examples of this phenomenon. Plasticizers increase permeabilities for similar reasons.

The effects of plasticizers and temperature on the permeabilities of small molecules in a typical VDC copolymer have been studied thoroughly. Data for oxygen permeability are contained in Figure 4. The oxygen permeability doubles with the addition of about 1.7 phr (parts per hundred of resin) of common plasticizers or a temperature increase of about 8 °C (87). The moisture (water) vapor transmission rate (MVTR or WVTR) doubles with the addition of about 3.5 phr of common plasticizers (88). The dependence of the WVTR on temperature is a little more complicated. Water vapor transmission rate is commonly reported at a constant difference in relative humidity and not at a constant partial pressure difference. Hence, WVTR is a mixed term that increases with increasing temperature because both the permeability and the partial pressure at constant

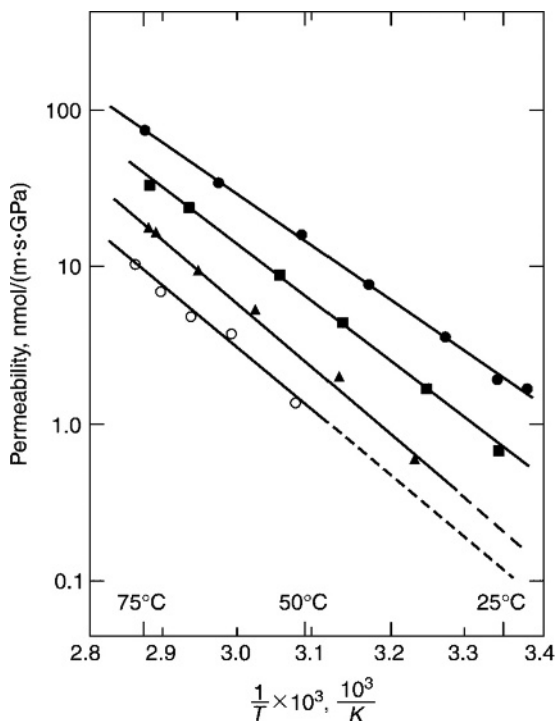


Fig. 4. Oxygen permeability in a VDC copolymer film at selected levels of plasticizer (Citroflex A-4). Plasticizer level in parts per hundred of resin (phr); ●, 7.2 phr; ■, 4.9 phr; ▲, 2.7 phr; and ○, 0.5 phr. To convert nmol/(m·s·GPa) to (cm³-mil)/(100 in.²-d-atm), divide by 2.

relative humidity increase. Carbon dioxide permeability doubles with the addition of about 1.8 phr of common plasticizers, or a temperature increase of 7 °C (89).

A comparison of the permeabilities of small molecules for several common polymers is presented in Table 10. The oxygen permeability is an important property for food packaging. In some cases the relative humidity is an important environmental variable. The oxygen permeability is not affected by humidity for VDC copolymers, nitrile barrier resins, poly(vinyl chloride), polystyrene, and polyolefins. The oxygen permeabilities of most nylons are increased modestly by increasing humidity, and the oxygen permeability of poly(ethylene terephthalate) is decreased modestly by increasing humidity. In contrast, the ethylene-vinyl alcohol copolymers (EVOH) are very sensitive to humidity. At low humidity, the oxygen permeabilities of EVOH are quite low. However, at the high humidity encountered in food packaging, the oxygen permeabilities of EVOH are much higher. Small changes in humidity can cause large changes in the oxygen permeabilities. Hence the data in tables need to be used carefully.

The data in Tables 11, 12, 13, describe VDC copolymers as good barriers for both gases and water. They are also good barriers to F/A/S molecules. This property for polymers has become more important since more sophisticated foods are

Table 10. Barrier Properties of Polymers^a

Polymer	Gas permeability at 23 °C, nmol/(m·s·GPa) ^b			WVTR ^c , nmol/(m·s) ^d
	O ₂	N ₂	CO ₂	
High barrier vinylidene chloride copolymers	0.04–0.3	0.01–0.1	0.1–0.5	0.02–0.1
Nitrile barrier resin	1.6	—	6	1.0–1.2
Nylon-6,6; nylon-6	2–5	—	3–9	1.5–5.5
Polypropylene	300	60	1200	0.06–0.2
Poly(ethylene terephthalate)	10–18	2–4	30–50	0.4–0.7
Poly lactide	90	—	375	5.1
Rigid poly(vinyl chloride)	10–40	—	40–100	0.2–1.3
High density polyethylene	300	—	1200	0.1
Low density polyethylene	500–700	200–400	2000–4000	0.2–0.4
Polystyrene	500–800	80–120	1400–3000	0.5–3.0
Ethylene vinyl alcohol				
32 mol% ethylene				
0% RH	0.02	0.002	0.09	0.9 ^e
100% RH	2.3	—	—	—
44 mol% ethylene				
0% RH	0.18	0.015	0.8	0.3 ^e
100% RH	1.3	—	—	—

^a Refs. (90–92).

^b To convert nmol/(m·s·GPa) to (cm·mil)/(100 in.·d·atm), divide by 2.

^c WVTR = water vapor transmission rate at 90% RH and 38° C.

^d To convert nmol/(m·s) to (g·mil)/(100 in.·d), multiply by 4.

^e 40 °C.

being packaged in plastics. The permeation of F/A/S molecules differs from the permeation of small molecules in some important ways. The diffusion coefficient D for F/A/S molecules is typically 10^2 – 10^5 times smaller. These molecules move slower because they need to find larger openings in the polymer. The solubility coefficient S is typically 10^2 – 10^6 times larger. This is related to higher boiling temperatures. Table 11 compares the D and S of large and small molecules in several polymers. A low D and a high S may mean that the principal mechanism for flavor loss is its being lost into the package wall (also known as scalping).

Humidity does not affect the permeability, diffusion coefficient, or solubility coefficient of F/A/S molecules in VDC copolymers. Results from studies using *trans*-2-hexenal and *d*-limonene are compared in Table 12. The transport in an EVOH copolymer is strongly enhanced by humidity plasticization.

Table 13 contains some representative data for the permeation of F/A/S molecules. VDC copolymers are good barriers to the migration of F/A/S molecules. Dry EVOH copolymers are also good barriers to the migration of F/A/S molecules. However, polyolefins are not good barriers to F/A/S molecules. The fact that most glassy polymers are good barriers to the migration of F/A/S molecules is not apparent from the data presented in this table.

Degradation Chemistry. Vinylidene chloride polymers are highly resistant to oxidation, permeation of small molecules, and biodegradation, which

Table 11. Diffusion Coefficients and Solubility Coefficients of Selected Penetrants in Polymers at 75°C^a

Penetrant	Polymer	D , m ² /s	S , kg/(m ³ -Pa)
Oxygen	Poly(ethylene terephthalate)	3×10^{-13}	9.8×10^{-7}
Oxygen	High density polyethylene	1.7×10^{-11}	6.6×10^{-7}
Oxygen	VDC copolymer	1.5×10^{-14}	3.5×10^{-7}
Carbon dioxide	Acrylonitrile copolymer	1.0×10^{-13}	1.6×10^{-6}
Carbon dioxide	Poly(vinyl chloride)	8.9×10^{-13}	3.4×10^{-6}
Carbon dioxide	VDC copolymer	1.4×10^{-14}	1.1×10^{-6}
<i>d</i> -Limonene	High density polyethylene	7.0×10^{-14}	0.3
<i>d</i> -Limonene	VDC copolymer	3.0×10^{-18}	0.6
Methyl salicylate	Nylon-6	2.1×10^{-17}	0.9
Methyl salicylate	VDC copolymer	5.8×10^{-16}	0.3

^aRef. (93).**Table 12. Transport of *trans*-2-Hexenal in Barrier Films at 75 °C**

Film	Condition	Permeability P , MZU ^a	Diffusivity D , m ² /s
VDC copolymer ^b	Dry	4500	4.4×10^{-15}
VDC copolymer	90/0 ^c	4100	3.9×10^{-15}
EVOH ^d	dry	2300	1.6×10^{-14}
EVOH	90/0 ^c	98,000	7.2×10^{-13}

^aTo convert MZU (10⁻²⁰ kg·m)/(m²·s·Pa) to nmol/(m·s·GPa), divide by 9.8.^bDow experimental resin XU32024.13.^c90% RH on the upstream side, 0% RH on the downstream side.^d44 mol% ethylene.

makes them extremely durable under most use conditions. However, these materials are thermally unstable and, when heated above about 120 °C, undergo degradative dehydrochlorination. Furthermore, the homopolymer degrades with rapid evolution of hydrogen chloride within a few degrees of its melting temperature (200 °C). For this reason, the superior characteristics of the homopolymer cannot be exploited. As a consequence, the copolymers of VDC with vinyl chloride, alkyl acrylates or methacrylates, acrylonitrile or methacrylonitrile, rather than the homopolymer, have come to commercial prominence. Such copolymers have often served as substrates for a study of the degradation reaction (99–102).

The thermal degradation of VDC copolymers occurs in two distinct steps. The first involves degradative dehydrochlorination via a chain process to generate poly(chloroacetylene) sequences (101,103). Subsequent Diels–Alder-type condensation between conjugated sequences affords a highly cross-linked network, which, upon further dehydrochlorination, leads to the formation of a large-surface-area, highly absorptive carbon (104). The initial dehydrochlorination occurs at moderate temperatures and is a typical chain process involving distinct initiation, propagation, and termination phases (103,105,106). Initiation is thought to occur via carbon–chlorine bond scission promoted by a defect structure within the polymer. An effective defect site in these polymers is unsaturation (103). Introduction of a random double bond produces an allylic dichloromethylene unit activated for carbon–chlorine bond scission. Initiation by the thermally

Table 13. Examples of Permeation of Flavor and Aroma Compounds in Selected Polymers^a at 25°C^b, Dry^c

Flavor/aroma compound	Permeability <i>P</i> , MZU ^d	Diffusivity <i>D</i> , m ² /s	Solubility <i>S</i> , kg/(m ³ -Pa)
<i>Vinylidene chloride copolymer</i>			
Ethyl hexanoate [123–66-0] (C ₈ H ₁₆ O ₂)	570	8.0×10^{-18}	0.71
Ethyl 2-methylbutyrate [7452–79-1] (C ₇ H ₁₄ O ₂)	3.2	1.9×10^{-17}	1.7×10^{-3}
<i>d</i> -Limonene [5989–27-5] (C ₁₀ H ₁₆)	32	3.3×10^{-17}	9.7×10^{-2}
<i>Ethylene-vinyl alcohol copolymer</i>			
Ethyl hexanoate	0.41	3.2×10^{-18}	1.3×10^{-3}
Ethyl 2-methylbutyrate	0.30	6.7×10^{-18}	4.7×10^{-4}
<i>d</i> -Limonene	0.5	1.1×10^{-17}	4.5×10^{-4}
<i>Low density polyethylene</i>			
Ethyl hexanoate	4.1×10^6	5.2×10^{-13}	7.8×10^{-2}
Ethyl 2-methylbutyrate	4.9×10^5	2.4×10^{-13}	2.3×10^{-2}
<i>d</i> -Limonene	4.3×10^6	—	—
<i>High density polyethylene</i>			
<i>d</i> -Limonene	3.5×10^6	1.7×10^{-13}	2.5×10^{-1}
<i>Polypropylene</i>			
Ethyl hexanoate	8.7×10^4	3.1×10^{-15}	2.8×10^{-1}
<i>d</i> -Limonene	1.6×10^4	7.4×10^{-16}	2.1×10^{-1}

^aRefs. (94–98).^bValues for VDC copolymer and EVOH copolymer are extrapolated from higher temperatures.^cPermeation in the VDC copolymer and the polyolefins is not affected by humidity; the permeability and diffusion coefficient in the EVOH copolymer can be as much as 1000 times greater with high humidity.^dTo convert MZU (10 kg·m)/(m·s·Pa) to nmol/(m·s·GPa), divide by molecular weight of permeant/10.

induced cleavage of this bond, followed by propagation by successive dehydrochlorination along the chain, ie, the so-called unzipping reaction, can then proceed readily (Fig. 5).

The thermal stability of these polymers is decreased by pretreatment with uv irradiation (107), electron-beam irradiation (108), and basic solvents or reagents (109,110); by an atmosphere of oxygen (107,111–114) or nitric oxide (107); and by the presence of peroxide linkages within the polymer (111,115), residues of emulsifying agents (111), organometallic initiator residues (111), ash from a previous decomposition (111), peroxide initiator residues (109)—(111,115–118), or metal ions (119). All the foregoing are sufficient to introduce random double bonds into the polymer structure. This can be demonstrated by examination of the treated sample by uv and ir spectroscopic methods (108). Prolonged treatment of the polymer with basic reagents leads to more extensive dehydrohalogenation (119–124). In fact, electrolysis of a solution of tetra(*n*-butyl)ammonium perchlorate in *N,N*-dimethylformamide generates a basic medium, presumably containing the formamide radical anion, capable of degrading the polymer (125). High energy radiation from a variety of sources may induce damage of several kinds, including carbon–carbon bond cleavage (107). A prominent radiation-induced process is carbon–chlorine bond scission followed by elimination of hydrogen

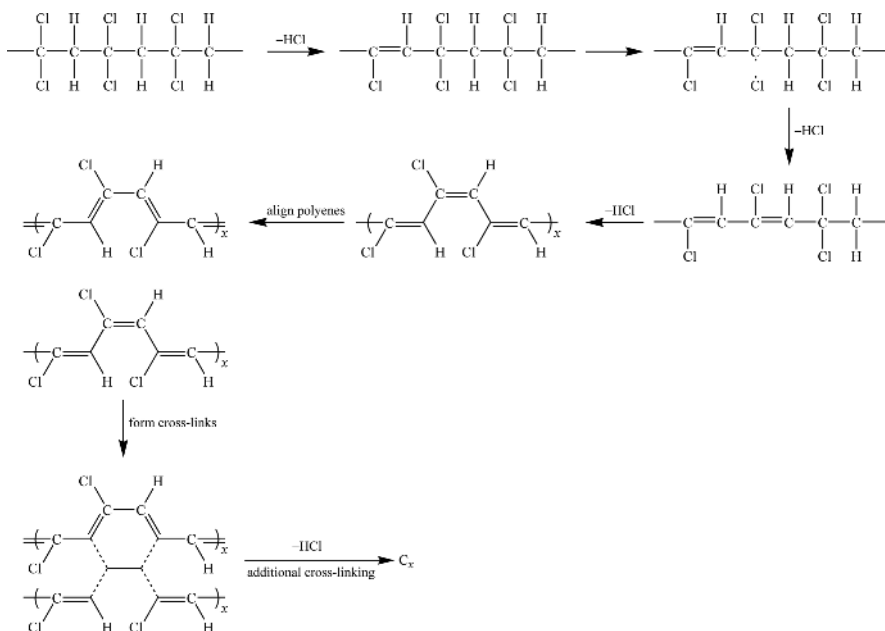
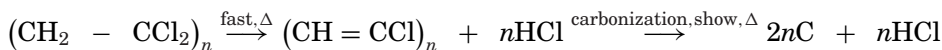


Fig. 5. Schematic of the degradation of PVDC to form carbon.

chloride (126,127). Property changes other than a decrease in thermal stability may arise as a consequence of high energy irradiation (128,129).

The principal steps in the thermal degradation of VDC polymers are formation of a conjugated polyene sequence followed by carbonization.



On being heated, the polymer gradually changes color from yellow to brown and finally to black. Early in the reaction, the polymer becomes insoluble, which indicates that cross-linking has occurred. The temperature of melting decreases, and the presence of unsaturation may be detected by spectroscopic (uv, ir, nmr) methods. The polymer eventually becomes infusible, and the crystal structure as detected by x-ray diffraction disappears even though the gross morphology is retained (130). The presence of carbon radicals can be detected by electron spin resonance (esr) measurements. If the temperature is raised substantially above 200 °C, aromatic structures are formed. Finally, at very high temperatures (>700 °C), complete carbonization occurs.

The first of these reactions, ie, the loss of the first mole of hydrogen chloride, has had the greatest impact on the end use of VDC polymers and has been the most studied and well characterized. The propensity of these polymers to undergo degradation is influenced by a wide variety of factors, including physical changes in the solid (annealing effects) and the method of preparation and purity of the polymer. The most stable polymers are those produced by bulk polymerization at low temperature with the use of a nonoxygyn initiator. In general, the stability

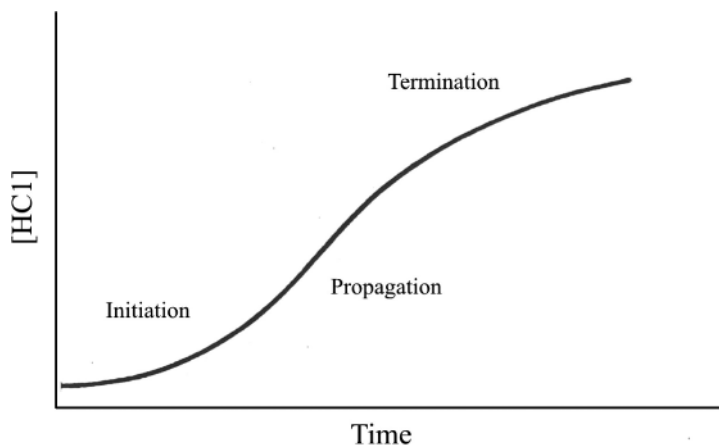


Fig. 6. Hydrogen chloride evolution for the thermal degradation of a typical VDC polymer.

of the polymer reflects the method of preparation, with bulk > solution > suspension >> emulsion (131). In the absence of elevated temperatures, suspending agents, polar solvents, redox initiators, etc, a more perfect polymer structure is formed, ie, one containing a minimum level of unsaturation.

The impact of a less defective structure may be seen in Figure 6, which depicts hydrogen chloride evolution for the thermal degradation of a typical VDC polymer. Initiation of degradation occurs at activated allylic sites within the polymer, but initiation does not occur simultaneously at all sites. Therefore, early in the reaction, hydrogen chloride evolution increases as a function of time as initiation occurs at more and more sites. In other words, unzipping is started in an increasing number of chain segments. This gives rise to the acceleratory induction period characteristic of VDC copolymer degradation. When a greater number of initiation sites are present within the polymer, ie, at higher levels of unsaturation, the rate of hydrogen chloride evolution during the initiation phase of the degradation is greater. After unzipping has begun in all chains containing defect structures, hydrogen chloride production is essentially first order until termination by completion or other means becomes a prominent reaction. Undoubtedly, some random double-bond initiation continues to occur during propagation. However, during this period termination is roughly in balance with initiation. As the rate of termination significantly exceeds that of initiation, deceleration of degradation is observed (103,106,107). An accurate representation of the dehydrochlorination reaction over the entire range of degradation may be achieved using a kinetic expression containing two constants (105,132).

Since the low temperature degradation, ie, that which occurs at process temperatures, involves only dehydrochlorination of VDC sequences, mass loss reflecting evolution of hydrogen chloride provides a convenient means of monitoring polymer decomposition. Thus, thermogravimetry analysis (TGA) is an appropriate method for assessing the degradation characteristics of VDC polymers (133,134). Rate constants may be obtained as the slopes of the appropriate linear portions of a plot of $\ln [\omega_\infty - \omega_0] / (\omega_\infty - \omega_t)$ versus time. The variable ω_∞ is the

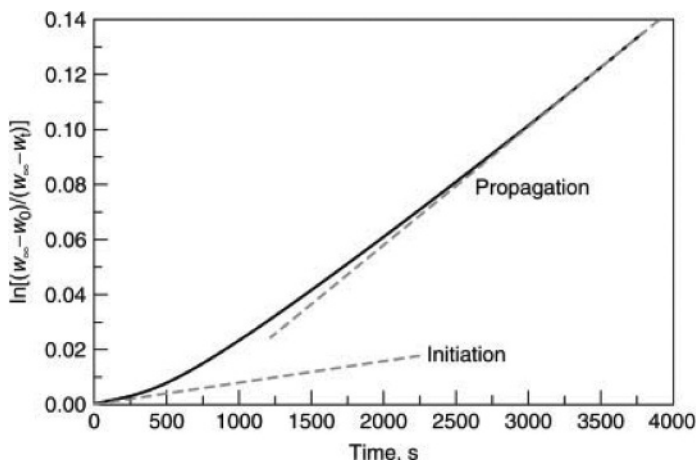


Fig. 7. Thermal degradation of a typical VDC polymer.

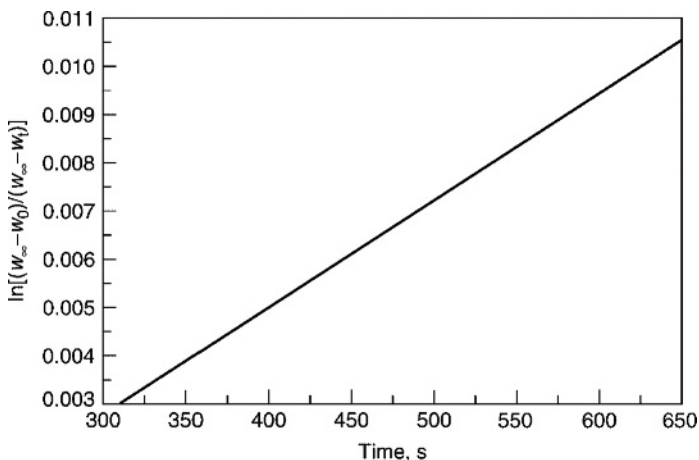


Fig. 8. Initiation rate constant (k_i) for the thermal degradation of a typical VDC polymer.

weight of the sample at infinite time (t_∞) taken as that weight which would remain after 37.62% of the initial VDC component weight (corresponding to the complete loss of 1 mole of hydrogen chloride per VDC unit in the copolymer). The variable w_0 is the weight at time zero (t_0), ie, the time at which the first point was recorded, and w_t is the weight at any time t during the run. This is illustrated for a typical VDC polymer in Figure 7. (135)

Initiation rate constants (k_i) for the degradation may be obtained by least-squares analysis of the linear segment of the early portion of this plot. Propagation rate constants (k_p) may be obtained in a similar manner from data obtained later in the run when propagation has become the dominant reaction. This is illustrated in Figures 8 and 9. Table 14 shows the rate constants obtained in this manner for the degradation of VDC/butyl acrylate copolymers.

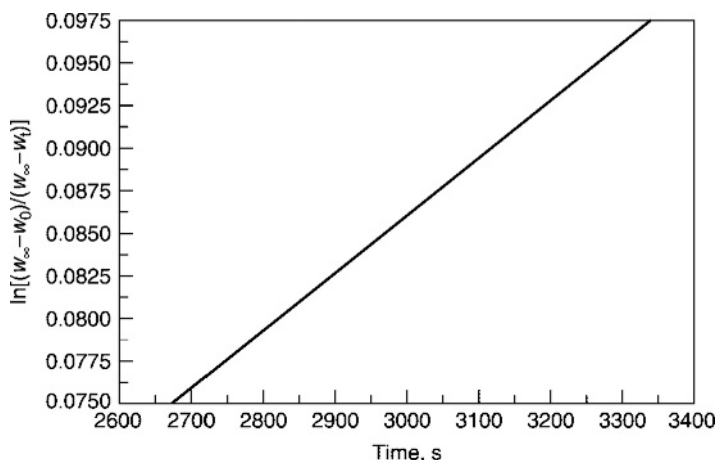


Fig. 9. Propagation rate constant (k_p) for the thermal degradation of a typical VDC polymer.

Table 14. Rate Constants for the Thermal Degradation of Vinylidene Chloride/Butyl Acrylate Copolymers at 180 °C

Butyl acrylate, wt% ^a	$k_i, 10^{-5} \text{ s}^{-1b}$	$k_p, 10^{-5} \text{ s}^{-1b}$
0	3.02 ± 0.09	8.75 ± 0.14
4	4.48 ± 0.004	8.34 ± 0.28
8	2.83 ± 0.25	6.73 ± 0.01
12	2.76 ± 0.03	5.35 ± 0.18
18	2.45 ± 0.25	4.08 ± 0.05
20	2.21 ± 0.005	3.74 ± 0.33

^aWeight percent of monomer loaded.

^bAverages of at least two determinations.

Much evidence has been accumulated to establish the radical nature of the degradation reaction. Prominent components of this include slight inhibition of the reaction by certain radical scavengers and changes in the esr spectrum of a sample undergoing degradation (136,137). Both suggest that radical intermediates are generated during the degradation. The exact nature of the chain-carrying species is made more apparent from the results of degradation in bibenzyl solution (101,103). Bibenzyl is an efficient radical scavenger that is converted to stilbene on interaction with a radical. Stilbene can be readily quantitated by gas-liquid partition chromatography. For the degradation of typical VDC polymers, the ratio of hydrogen chloride evolved to stilbene produced is approximately 35:1 (101,103). This is in sharp contrast to the 2:1 ratio expected for trapping of chlorine atoms with perfect efficiency and suggests that the propagating species is a radical pair that does not dissociate appreciably. Thus propagation most probably occurs by a radical chain process in which the chain-carrying species is a radical pair that decomposes to alkene and hydrogen chloride without dissociation.

To some extent, the stability of VDC polymers is dependent on the nature of the comonomer present. Copolymers with acrylates degrade slowly (138,139).

Apparent degradation propagation rates decrease somewhat as the acrylate content of the copolymer increases (138). The polyene sequences generated by dehydrochlorination are limited in size by the level of acrylate incorporation; that is, the acrylate molecules act as stopper units for the unzipping reaction. The impact of this chain-stopping is that the termination rate for higher acrylate content polymers is greater than for those containing smaller amounts of acrylate. Therefore, initiation and termination rates are in balance for a shorter portion of the overall reaction period. Despite the suggestion that the presence of a hydrogen-rich pendant might serve as a source of hydrogen atoms to disrupt degradation propagation (111), there is no apparent relationship between the degradation rate and the size of the alkyl portion of the acrylate comonomer (139,140).

Copolymers with AN or MA undergo degradation more readily. In addition, the degradation is more complex than that observed for acrylate copolymers. Acrylonitrile copolymers release hydrogen cyanide as well as hydrogen chloride; products of thermal degradation of MA copolymers contain methyl chloride in addition to hydrogen chloride (100,102,141,142). In both cases, degradation apparently begins in VDC units adjacent to comonomer units (141,142).

The degradation of VDC polymers in nonpolar solvents is comparable to degradation in the solid state (101,137,143,144). However, these polymers are unstable in many polar solvents (145). The rate of dehydrochlorination increases markedly with solvent polarity. In strongly polar aprotic solvents, eg, hexamethylphosphoramide, dehydrochlorination proceeds readily (143,146). This reaction is clearly unlike thermal degradation and may well involve the generation of ionic species as intermediates.

Polymers of high VDC content are reactive toward strong bases to yield elimination products and toward nucleophiles to yield substitution products. Agents capable of functioning as both a base and a nucleophile react with these polymers to generate a mixture of products (122,147–150). Weakly basic agents such as ammonia, amines, or polar aprotic solvents accelerate the decomposition of VDC copolymers. Amines function as bases to remove hydrogen chloride and introduce unsaturation along the polymer mainchain which may serve as initiation sites for thermal degradation. The overall effectiveness of a particular amine for dehydrohalogenation may be dependent on several factors, including inherent basicity, degree of steric hindrance at nitrogen, and compatibility with the polymer (152–155). Phosphines are more nucleophilic but less basic than amines. However, phosphines also promote dehydrohalogenation rather than displacement of allylic chlorine (156).

Amines can also swell the polymer, leading to very rapid reactions. Pyridine, for example, would be a fairly good solvent for a VDC copolymer if it did not attack the polymer chemically. However, when pyridine is part of a solvent mixture that does not dissolve the polymer, pyridine does not penetrate into the polymer phase (109). Studies of single crystals indicate that pyridine removes hydrogen chloride only from the surface. Kinetic studies and product characterizations suggest that the reaction of two units in each chain-fold can easily take place; further reaction is greatly retarded either by the inability of pyridine to diffuse into the crystal or by steric factors.

Aqueous bases or nucleophiles have little impact on VDC polymers, primarily because the polymer is not wetted or swollen by water. However, these

polymers do slowly degrade in hot concentrated aqueous sodium hydroxide solution (119).

Lewis acids, particularly transition-metal salts, strongly promote the thermal degradation of VDC polymers (119,137,157–168). The rate of initiation of degradation is greatly enhanced in the presence of metal ions (160). The metal ion (or other Lewis acid) coordinates chlorine atoms, making them much better leaving groups. This facilitates the introduction of initial double bonds, which act as defect sites from which degradative dehydrohalogenation may propagate. Care must be taken to avoid metal ions, particularly precursors of iron chloride, during the preparation and processing of VDC polymers.

Copolymers of VDC that are free of impurities do not degrade at an appreciable rate in the absence of light below 100 °C. However, when exposed to uv light, these polymers discolor (169). Again, the primary reaction seems to be dehydrochlorination. Hydrogen chloride is evolved and cross-linking occurs (107). Polyene sequences of narrow sequence length distribution are often formed (169–171). These function as initiation sites for subsequent thermal degradation (107). Laser-induced photochemistry may be used for the generation of polyene structures uncomplicated by cross-linking and graphitization (172,173). Laser-promoted dehydrohalogenation has some characteristics in common with the corresponding thermal process. Long-lived carbon radicals are formed, and the propagation of the dehydrochlorination reaction apparently proceeds via an allylic carbon radical, chlorine atom pair (173). Similar structures may be generated by chemical means (149,150,175). Other photodegradation processes, eg, hydroperoxide formation at the methylene groups, probably also occur but are less important for these polymers than is polyene formation (159).

Stabilization. The stabilization of VDC polymers toward degradation is a highly developed art and is responsible for the widespread commercial use of these materials. Although the mode of action is often not understood, some general principles of effective stabilization have been established (176). The ideal stabilizer system should

- (1) absorb or combine with evolved hydrogen chloride irreversibly under conditions of use, but not strip hydrogen chloride from the polymer chain;
- (2) act as a selective uv absorber;
- (3) contain a reactive dienophilic moiety capable of preventing discoloration by reacting with and disrupting the color-producing conjugated polymer sequences;
- (4) possess nucleophilicity sufficient for reaction with allylic dichloromethylene units;
- (5) possess antioxidant activity so as to prevent the formation of carbonyl groups and other chlorine-labilizing structures;
- (6) be able to scavenge chlorine atoms and other free radicals efficiently;
- (7) chelate metals, eg, iron, to prevent chlorine coordination and the formation of metal chlorides.

Acid acceptors are of two general types: alkaline-earth oxides and hydroxides (177) or salts of weak acids, such as barium or calcium fatty acid

salts; and epoxy compounds, such as epoxidized soybean oil or glycidyl ethers and esters. Epoxidized oils are less effective for the stabilization of VDC polymers than for other halogenated polymers (161). The function of these materials as plasticizers and processing lubricants is probably responsible for modest improvements in processing stability. Effective light stabilizers have a chemical structure which imparts exceptional conjugative stability and very good uv absorption properties. The principal compounds of commercial interest are derivatives of salicylic acid, resorcylic acid, benzophenone, and benzotriazole. The typical hindered amine light stabilizers cannot be used in this application since they are sufficiently basic so as to promote dehydrohalogenation. This introduces allylic dichloromethylene units into the polymer mainchain, which act as initiation sites for thermal degradation. Consequently, satisfactory processing of the polymer in the presence of these additives is not possible. Examples of dienophiles that have been used are maleic anhydride and N-substituted maleimides (178,179).

Antioxidants are generally of two types: those that react with a radical to stop a radical chain, that is, to scavenge chlorine atoms or peroxy radicals; and those that reduce hydroperoxides to alcohols. Phenolic antioxidants, eg, 2,6-di-*tert*-butyl-4-methylphenol and substituted bisphenols, are of the first type. Because the chain-carrying species for the degradative dehydrochlorination is a tight chlorine atom, carbon radical pair that does not dissociate appreciably during the reaction, the effectiveness of these agents is limited (162). The second type is exemplified by organic sulfur compounds and organic phosphites. The phosphites, ethylene-diaminetetraacetic acid [60-00-4] (EDTA), citric acid [77-92-9], and citrates, can chelate metals. The ability of organic phosphites to function as antioxidants and as chelating agents illustrates the dual role of many stabilizer compounds. It is common practice to use a combination of stabilizing compounds to achieve optimum results (169). In addition, stabilization packages usually contain lubricants and other processing aids that enhance the effectiveness of the stabilizing compounds. The presence of these agents is particularly important to minimize the shearing component of degradation during extrusion and other processing steps (162).

Metal carboxylates have been considered as nucleophilic agents capable of removing allylic chlorine and thereby affording stabilization (163). Typical PVC stabilizers, eg, tin, lead, cadmium, or zinc esters, actually promote the degradation of VDC polymers. The metal cations in these compounds are much too acidic to be used with VDC polymers. An effective carboxylate stabilizer must contain a metal cation sufficiently acidic to interact with allylic chlorine and to facilitate its displacement by the carboxylate anion, but at the same time not acidic enough to strip chlorine from the polymer mainchain (164,168). Copper(II) carboxylates may have the balance of cation acidity and anion reactivity required to function as effective stabilizers for VDC polymers. This is reflected in Figure 10, which illustrates increasing stability of a typical VDC copolymer as it is aged at 150 °C in the presence of copper(II) formate.

Vinylidene chloride polymers containing stabilizing features have been prepared. More generally, these have been polymers containing comonomer units with functionality that can consume evolved hydrogen chloride such that good radical scavenging sites are exposed (165,166,180,181).

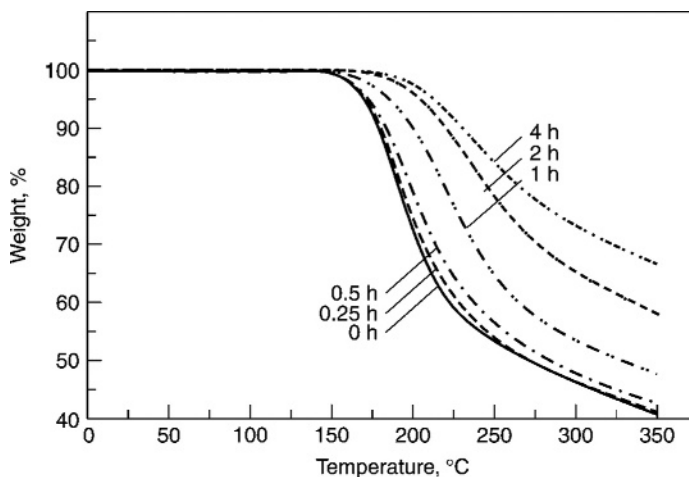


Fig. 10. Thermal degradation of a VDC/MPA (5 mol%) copolymer aged at 150 °C in the presence of 5 wt% copper(II) formate for 0.25, 0.50, 1.0, 2.0, and 4.0 h.

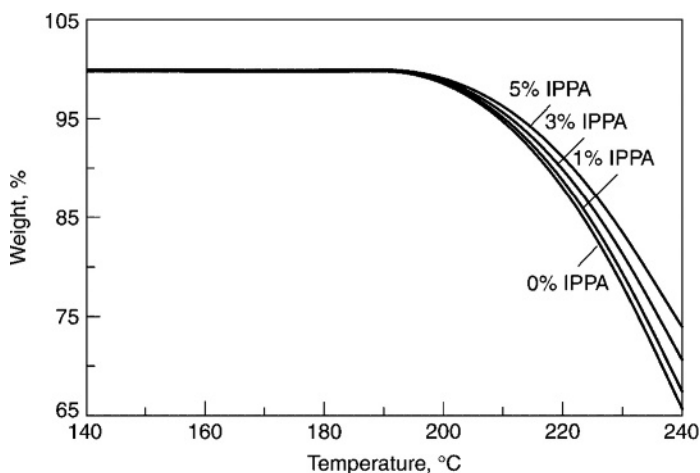


Fig. 11. Thermal degradation of vinylidene chloride/4-isopropylphenyl acrylate copolymers.

For example, copolymers containing 4-isopropylphenyl acrylate display greater thermal stability than do the corresponding polymers containing simple alkyl acrylates as comonomer (165). This is illustrated in Figure 11. Stability of the copolymer increases as the level of the comonomer containing the *t*-cumyl group, capable of scavenging chlorine atoms, increases. A more quantitative reflection of this effect is provided by the rate constants displayed in Table 15. It may be noted that the magnitude of the initiation rate constant k_i decreases by a factor of 2 as the isopropylphenyl acrylate content of the polymer is increased from 0 to 5 mol%.

Table 15. Rate Constants for the Degradation of Vinylidene Chloride/4-Isopropylphenyl Acrylate Copolymers at 140 °C

IPPA, mol%	$k_i, 10^{-7} \text{ s}^{-1} \text{ }^b$	$k_p, 10^{-7} \text{ s}^{-1} \text{ }^a$
0.0	3.02 ± 0.09	8.75 ± 0.14
1.0	4.48 ± 0.004	8.34 ± 0.28
3.0	2.83 ± 0.25	6.73 ± 0.01
5.0	2.76 ± 0.03	5.35 ± 0.18

^aAverages of at least two determinations; average deviation $\leq \pm 0.10$.

Commercial Methods of Polymerization and Processing

Processes that are essentially modifications of laboratory methods and that allow operation on a larger scale are used for commercial preparation of VDC polymers. The intended use dictates the polymer characteristics and, to some extent, the method of manufacture. Emulsion polymerization and suspension polymerization are the preferred industrial processes. Either process is carried out in a closed, stirred reactor, which should be glass-lined and jacketed for heating and cooling. The reactor must be purged of oxygen, and the water and monomer must be free of metallic impurities to prevent an adverse effect on the thermal stability of the polymer.

Emulsion Polymerization. Emulsion polymerization is used commercially to make VDC copolymers. In some applications, the resulting latex is used directly, usually with additional stabilizing ingredients, as a coating vehicle to apply the polymer to various substrates. In other applications, the polymer is first isolated from the latex before use. When the polymer is not used in latex form, the emulsion/coagulation process is chosen over alternative methods. The polymer is recovered in dry powder form, usually by coagulating the latex with an electrolyte, followed by washing and drying. The principal advantages of emulsion polymerization are twofold. First, high molecular weight polymers can be produced in reasonable reaction times, especially copolymers with VC. The initiation and propagation steps can be controlled more independently than in the suspension process. Second, monomer can be added during the polymerization to maintain copolymer composition control.

The disadvantages of emulsion polymerization result from the relatively high concentration of additives in the recipe. The water-soluble initiators, activators, and surface-active agents generally cause the polymer to have greater water sensitivity, poorer electrical properties, and poorer heat and light stability. These agents promote degradative dehydrochlorination during polymerization.

A typical recipe for batch emulsion polymerization is shown in Table 16. A reaction time of 7–8 h at 30 °C is required for 95–98% conversion. A latex is produced with an average particle diameter of 100–150 nm. Other modifying ingredients may be present, eg, other colloidal protective agents such as gelatin or carboxymethylcellulose, initiator activators such as redox types, chelates, plasticizers, and stabilizers; and chain-transfer agents.

Commercial surfactants are generally anionic emulsifiers, alone or in combination with nonionic types. Representative anionic emulsifiers are the sodium

Table 16. Recipe for Batch Emulsion Polymerization^a

Ingredient	Parts by weight
Vinylidene chloride	78
Vinyl chloride	22
Water	180
Potassium peroxy sulfate	0.22
Sodium bisulfite	0.11
Aerosol MA, ^b 80 wt%	3.58
Nitric acid, 60 wt%	0.07

^aRef. (182).^bAerosol MA (American Cyanamid Co.) = dihexyl sodium sulfosuccinate.

alkylaryl sulfonates, the alkyl esters of sodium sulfosuccinic acid, and the sodium salts of fatty alcohol sulfates. Nonionic emulsifiers are of the ethoxylated alkylphenol type. Radical sources other than peroxy sulfates may be used, eg, hydrogen peroxide, organic hydroperoxides, peroxyborates, and peroxy carbonates. Many of these are used in redox pairs, in which an activator promotes the decomposition of the peroxy compound. Examples are peroxy sulfate or perchlorate activated with bisulfite, hydrogen peroxide with metallic ions, and organic hydroperoxides with sodium formaldehyde sulfoxylate. The use of activators causes the decomposition of the initiator to occur at lower reaction temperatures, which allows the preparation of a higher molecular weight polymer within reasonable reaction times. This is an advantage, particularly for copolymers of VDC with VC. Oil-soluble initiators are usually effective only when activated by water-soluble activators or reducing agents.

To ensure constant composition, the method of emulsion polymerization by continuous addition is employed. One or more components are metered continuously into the reaction. If the system is properly balanced, a steady state is reached in which a copolymer of uniform composition is produced (183). A process of this type can be used for the copolymerization of VDC with a variety of monomers. A flow diagram of the apparatus is shown in Figure 12; a typical recipe is shown in Table 17. The monomers are charged to the weigh tank A, which is kept under a nitrogen blanket. The emulsifiers, initiator, and part of the water are charged to tank B; the reducing agent and some water to tank C. The remaining water is charged to the reactor D, and the system is sealed and purged. The temperature is raised to 40 °C and one tenth of the monomer and initiator charges is added, and then one tenth of the activator is pumped in. Once the reaction begins, as indicated by an exotherm and pressure drop, feeds of A, B, and C are started at programmed rates that begin slowly and gradually increase. The emulsion is maintained at a constant temperature during the run by cooling water that is pumped through the jacket. When all components are in the reactor and the exotherm begins to subside, a final addition of initiator and reducing agent completes the reaction.

Suspension Polymerization. Suspension polymerization of VDC is used commercially to make molding and extrusion resins. The principal advantage of the suspension process over the emulsion process is the use of fewer ingredients

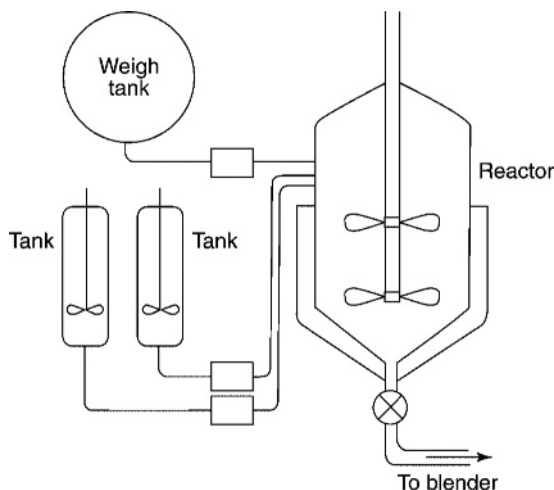


Fig. 12. Apparatus for continuous-addition emulsion polymerization of a VDC–acrylate mixture (183).

Table 17. Recipe for Emulsion Polymerization by Continuous Addition^a

Ingredient	Parts by weight
Vinylidene chloride	468
Comonomer	52
Emulsifiers	
Tergitol ^b NP35	12
Sodium lauryl sulfate, 25 wt%	12
Initiator ammonium peroxy sulfate	10
Sodium metabisulfite (Na ₂ S ₂ O ₅), 5 wt%	10
Water	436

^aRef. (183).

^bNonionic wetting agent produced by Union Carbide.

that might detract from the polymer properties. Stability is improved and water sensitivity is decreased. Extended reaction times and the difficult preparation of higher molecular weight polymers are disadvantages of the suspension process compared to the emulsion process, particularly for copolymers containing VC.

A typical recipe for suspension polymerization is shown in Table 18. At a reaction temperature of 60 °C, the polymerization proceeds to 85–90% conversion in 30–60 h. Unchanged monomer is removed by vacuum stripping; then it is condensed and reused after processing. The polymer is obtained in the form of small [150– 600 μm (30)–100 mesh] beads, which are dewatered by filtration or centrifugation and then dried in a flash dryer or fluidbed dryer. Suspension polymerization involves monomer-soluble initiators, and polymerization occurs inside suspended monomer droplets, which form by the shearing action of the agitator and are prevented from coalescence by a protective surfactant. It is important

Table 18. Recipe for Suspension Polymerization^a

Ingredient	Parts by weight
Vinylidene chloride	85
Vinyl chloride	15
Deionized water	200
400 mPa·s (= cP) methyl hydroxypropylcellulose	0.05
Lauroyl peroxide	0.3

^aRef. (184).

that the initiator be uniformly dissolved in the monomer before droplet formation. Unequal distribution of initiator causes some droplets to polymerize faster than others, leading to monomer diffusion from slow-polymerizing to fast-polymerizing droplets. The fast-polymerizing droplets form polymer beads that are dense, hard, glassy, and extremely difficult to fabricate because of their inability to accept stabilizers and plasticizers. Common protective surfactants that prevent droplet coalescence and control particle size are PVC, gelatin, and methylcellulose. Organic peroxides, peroxy carbonates, and azo compounds are used as initiators for VDC suspension polymerization.

The batch-suspension process does not compensate for composition drift, whereas constant-composition processes have been designed for emulsion or suspension reactions. It is more difficult to design controlled-composition processes by suspension methods. In one approach (185), the less reactive component is removed continuously from the reaction to keep the unreacted monomer composition constant. This method has been used effectively in VDC-VC copolymerization, where the slower reacting component is volatile and can be released during the reaction to maintain constant pressure. In many other cases, no practical way is known for removing the slower reacting component.

Economic Aspects

Vinylidene chloride monomer is produced commercially in the United States by The Dow Chemical Co. and PPG Industries. The monomer is produced in Europe by Imperial Chemical Industries, Ltd. and Solvin. The monomer is produced in Japan by the Asahi Chemical Co., Kureha Chemical Industries, and Kanto Denka Kogyo Co. Commercial suppliers of VDC copolymers include The Dow Chemical Co. in the United States and Solvin in Europe. Asahi Chemical Co. and Kureha Chemical Industries are suppliers of VDC resins in Japan. Additional manufacturers of exclusively VDC latexes include W. R. Grace in the United States and Scott-Bader in Europe. Local suppliers of VDC resins have also been reported in Russia and the People's Republic of China.

Trademarks for VDC copolymers include SARAN and SERFENE (Dow Chemical) and DARAN (Owensboro Specialty Polymers) in the United States; DIOFAN and IXAN (Solvin) and POLIDENE (Scott-Bader) in Europe; and KUREHALON (Kureha) in Japan. In addition, The Geon Company (GEON) and Avecia (HALOFLEX) supply non-barrier VDC copolymers.

Applications

Melt Processing. Vinylidene chloride copolymers are melt processed via a variety of fabrication techniques. These include molding, monofilament fiber extrusion, monolayer blown film extrusion, multilayer cast- and blown-film extrusion, and multilayer sheet extrusion. There are a number of elements of melt processing and meltprocessing equipment that are common to all of these fabrication techniques (185–189). These include proper equipment design and materials of construction, proper and accurately controlled operating conditions, and a properly formulated resin.

Because of their high crystalline melting point, VDC copolymers are generally melt fabricated near their thermal stability limits. Products of degradation are corrosive to equipment and given sufficient time will generate a char or carbon. Also, at temperatures of about 130 °C and above, a number of metals, including iron, zinc, copper, and aluminum, catalyze the degradation of VDC resins. As a consequence the correct materials of construction are essential for melt processing VDC resins. High nickel alloys that are both corrosion resistant and do not catalyze resin degradation are preferred for all surfaces that are in direct contact with the polymer melt. For example, the extruder barrel liner may be made from Xaloy 306 or other high nickel, low iron containing alloy. Extruder screws may be made from Duranickel 301 with Colmonoy 56 flight lands. Other parts in direct contact with polymer melt should also be made out of Duranickel or similar material. Instruments such as melt thermocouples or pressure transducers could be Hastelloy C.

Degradation of VDC resins is a product of time at temperature. Both of these aspects should be controlled to optimize melt processing performance. Extruders in the range of 18:1 to 24:1 length-to-diameter ratio are commonly used. Melt channels should be designed with a smooth flow pattern to minimize dead spots where polymer may degrade excessively or permit carbon buildup. The clearance between the screw tip and the extruder nosepiece should be minimized. Screen packs are also not recommended for melt-processing VDC resins. Proper instrumentation, including multiple melt thermocouples and pressure transducers, amperage or torque measurement for the extruder, and accurate screw speed measurement, is also critical.

Heat management is an important factor in melt-processing VDC resins. Screw design (190) and resin formulation combine to affect the amount of heat generated during melting and the eventual melt temperature. Vinylidene chloride polymer powders exhibit a relatively high level of frictional heating and also contain a large amount of entrained air (191). Screws are typically designed to be low work to minimize frictional and viscous heating. They must also be designed to eliminate air entrapment. Screws greater than 6.35-cm (2.5-in.) diameter for VDC resin processing also generally have two-zone cooling capability for further heat management.

Vinylidene chloride resins for melt processing are generally supplied formulated or unformulated. Formulated resins may be melt processed as supplied or with some additional additives. Unformulated resins require additives prior to melt processing. Processing additives for VDC resins include plasticizers, lubricants, and other process aids designed to control heat generation and residence

time in melt processing. Patent literature cites a wide variety of lubricants and processing aids, including acids, esters, amides, and metal salts of fatty acids; polyolefins or polyolefin waxes; and inorganic stabilizers such as magnesium hydroxide or tetrasodium pyrophosphate (192). Some of these processing aids are common to PVC melt processing as well. However, it should also be noted that some PVC melt-processing additives are incompatible with VDC resins and will actually degrade melt-processing performance.

Molding. Molded articles were among the earliest applications for VDC copolymers (186,193). Vinylidene chloride–vinyl chloride copolymers were originally developed for thermoplastic molding applications, and small amounts are still used for this purpose. When properly formulated with plasticizers and heat stabilizers, the resins can be fabricated by common methods, eg, injection, compression, or transfer molding. Conventional or dielectric heating can be used to melt the polymers. Rapid hardening is achieved by forming in heated molds to induce rapid crystallization. Cold molds result in supercooling of the polymer. Because the interior of the molded part remains soft and amorphous, the part cannot be easily removed from the mold without distortion. Mold temperatures of up to 100 °C allow rapid removal of dimensionally stable parts. The range of molding temperatures is rather narrow because of the crystalline nature of the resin and thermal sensitivity. All crystallites must be melted to obtain low polymer melt viscosity, but prolonged or excessive heating must be avoided to prevent dehydrochlorination.

The metal parts of the injection molder, ie, the liner, torpedo, and nozzle, that contact the hot molten resin must be of the noncatalytic, corrosion-resistant type previously described. The injection mold need not be made of noncatalytic metals; any high grade tool steel may be used because the plastic cools in the mold and undergoes little decomposition. However, the mold requires good venting to allow the passage of small amounts of acid gas as well as air. Vents tend to become clogged by corrosion and must be cleaned periodically.

Molded parts of VDC copolymers are used to satisfy the industrial requirements of chemical resistance and extended service life. They are used in such items as gasoline filters, valves, pipe fittings, containers, and chemical process equipment. Complex articles are constructed from molded parts by welding; hot-air welding at 200–260 °C is a suitable method. Molded parts have good physical properties but lower tensile strength than films or fibers, because crystallization is random in molded parts. Higher strength is developed by orientation in films and fibers. Physical properties of a typical molded VDC copolymer plastic are listed in Table 19.

Monofilament Fiber Extrusion. Monofilament fiber extrusion was another early application for VDC resins (186,193,195). Monofilament applications have included automotive seat covers, window screens, and upholstery fabrics, where the durability and ease of cleaning were important. Fabrics made from VDC copolymer monofilaments are still used today in applications such as filter fabrics, light screens, greenhouse covers, pool or bath fabrics, and shoe insoles (196). Such fabrics claim excellent resistance to flame, chemicals, uv light, moisture, and microbial attack.

Vinylidene chloride copolymer monofilaments typically range from 0.15- to 1.5-mm (0.006- to 0.06-in.) diameter. To produce these monofilaments, a molten

Table 19. Properties of Resin for Injection-Molding Applications^a

Typical resin properties	Test method	Value
Ultimate tensile strength, MPa ^b	ASTM D638	24.1–34.5
Yield tensile strength, MPa ^b	ASTM D638	19.3–26.2
Ultimate elongation, %	ASTM D638	160–240
Modulus of elasticity in tension, MPa ^b		345–552
Izod impact strength, J/m ^c of notch	ASTM D256	21.35–53.38
Density, g/cm ³	ASTM D792	1.65–1.72
Hardness, Rockwell M	ASTM D785	50–65
Water absorption, % in 24 h	ASTM D570	0.1
Mold shrinkage, cm/cm (injection-molded)	ASTM D955	0.005–0.025
Limiting oxygen index, %	ASTM D2863	60.0 ^d
UL-94	UL-94 Test	V–O ^d

^aRef. (194).

^bTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^cTo convert J/m to ft.lbf/in. of notch, divide by 53.38.

^dThe results of small-scale flammability tests are not intended to reflect the hazards of this or any other material under actual fire conditions.

VDC copolymer extrudate is quenched to about room temperature in a supercooling tank to produce an amorphous polymer strand (186,193,195). This strand is then wrapped several times around smooth take-off rolls, and then wrapped several times around orienting rolls, which operate at a higher speed than the take-off rolls. The difference in roll speeds produces mechanical stretching, orienting the filament along the longitudinal axis while the polymer is crystallizing. A typical stretch ratio for this process is about 400%. The orientation process increases the fiber strength from about 55 MPa (8000 psi) to as high as 414 MPa (60000 psi). Much of the increased tensile strength is obtained as the stretch ratio approaches 400%. Heat treatment may be used during or after stretching to affect the degree of crystallization and control the physical properties of the oriented filaments.

Monolayer Blown-Film Extrusion. One of the major applications for VDC resins is monolayer film produced via a blown-film extrusion process. Previously, VDC copolymer film extrusion was limited to just a few experts in the field. However, production of VDC-containing films has greatly expanded (197,198). Monolayer VDC copolymer blown-film lines are now commercially available from a number of manufacturers and a considerable number of lines have been installed around the world, particularly in the People's Republic of China.

A monolayer blown-film process for VDC resin is illustrated in Figure 13. In this process (187,199–202) a tube of molten VDC resin is extruded downward and is immediately quenched in a cold-water supercooling bath. This bath cools the polymer melt to create a leathery polymer tube which is essentially amorphous VDC copolymer. The low temperature of the bath also controls nucleation of the crystallites and thus impacts the subsequent film-formation processes. After the supercooling bath, the amorphous tube is passed through a warming or reheat bath. This bath increases the resin temperature, which in turn will make the film more pliable and increase the rate of crystallization propagation during the subsequent film-blowing process. Exiting the warming bath, the tube passes

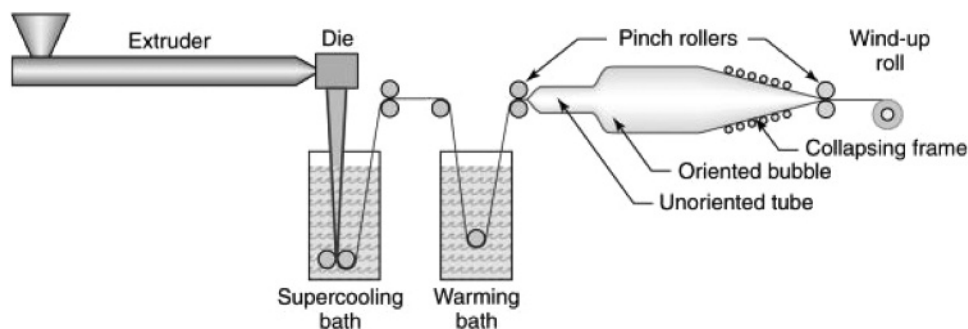


Fig. 13. Monolayer blown-film process for VDC resins (198).

through two sets of pinch rolls, which are arranged so that the second set of rolls travels faster than the first set. Between the two sets, air is injected into the tube to create a bubble that is entrapped by the pinch rolls. The entrapped air bubble remains stationary while the extruded tube is oriented as it passes around the bubble. In this manner, orientation is produced simultaneously in both the transverse and the longitudinal directions.

As the tube expands and orients, the amorphous polymer begins to crystallize rapidly, eventually limiting the diameter of the bubble. Adding additional air to the bubble at this point will only lengthen the bubble but will not change its overall diameter. Crystallization rate and thus bubble diameter or “blow up ratio” is controlled by a number of factors, including temperatures of the supercooling and warming baths, room temperature, polymer composition, and amount and type of plasticizer additives. These parameters as well as variables such as extrusion rate, die diameter, die gap, and drawdown ratio are combined to make a wide variety of film types and sizes. Films produced via this process generally have some shrink properties, which in many cases are advantageous. Where shrink is not desirable, films can be preshrunk via controlled heat application prior to the winding process.

Monolayer blown-film processes generally use a VDC–VC copolymer. Such resins have the combination of performance properties and optimum crystallization rate necessary for this process. Resins are generally formulated with plasticizers, lubricants, and other additives to affect performance during the extrusion process as well as in the final film applications.

Applications for VDC copolymer monolayer films fall into three major categories: household wrap, food and medical packaging, and industrial films. Food packaging includes packaging of processed meats, cheese and other dairy products, and bakery goods. Packaging types include film overwraps, shrinkable films, chub packaging, and unit packaging. Performance attributes of VDC copolymer films that are important to these applications include high barrier to oxygen, water, and other permeating molecules; clarity; resistance to fats and oils; dimensional stability; ability to be sealed and printed; and ability to withstand retort and microwave oven temperatures. Typical film properties are shown in Table 20.

Multilayer Cast- and Blown-Film Extrusion. A significant application for VDC copolymer resins is in the construction of multilayer film and sheet

Table 20. Physical Properties of PVDC Copolymer Films^a

Properties ^b	Overwrap film	Chub film A	Chub packaging film B	Unit film A	Unit packaging film B	High barrier packaging film methods	Test methods
Average thickness, μm^c	15	25	25	51	152	25	—
Yield, m^2 film/kg resin ^d	38	23	23	12	4	23	Calculated
Water vapor transmission rate at 90% RH and 38 °C, $\text{nmol}/(\text{m}\cdot\text{s})^e$	0.09	0.09	0.1	0.06	0.06	0.01	Permatran W
Oxygen transmission at 100% RH and 23 °C, $\text{nmol}/(\text{m}\cdot\text{s}\cdot\text{GPa})^f$	2.6	2.6	3.8	2.9	2.9	0.16	ASTM D3985–81
Ultimate tensile strength, MPa^g							
MD	76	97	83	111	111	83	ASTM D882–81
TD	124	138	117	133	95	128	
Ultimate elongation, %							
MD	75	90	90	95	80	100	ASTM D882–81
TD	55	60	75	80	70	50	
2% secant modulus, MPa^g							
MD	690	690	607	690	655	1103	ASTM D882–81
TD	621	593	530	615	615	965	
Unrestrained shrink, 10 min at 100 °C in air, %							
MD	16	16	20	8	12	6	ASTM D1204
TD	9	9	11	4	7	4	
Haze, %	1	5	5	3	3	2.5	ASTM D1003–61 (77)
45° gloss	115	92	90	105	105	110	ASTM D2457–60 (77)
Clarity, %	86	65	52	73	73	80	ASTM D1746–70 (78)
Film block, unconditioned, g	114	—	—	—	—	—	ASTM D3354–89
Film cling, unstretched, g	65	—	—	—	—	—	ASTM D4649–87
Kinetic coefficient of friction, film-to-metal	—	0.29	0.30	0.30	0.30	—	ASTMD1894

^aRef. (203).

^bMD is machine direction; TD is transverse direction.

^cTo convert μm to mil, divide by 25.6.

^dTo convert m^2 film/kg resin to in^2 film/lb resin, multiply by 704.

^eTo convert $\text{nmol}/(\text{m}\cdot\text{s})$ to $(\text{g}\cdot\text{mil})/(\text{100 in}^2\cdot\text{d})$, multiply by 4.

^fTo convert $\text{nmol}/(\text{m}\cdot\text{s}\cdot\text{GPa})$ to $(\text{cc}\cdot\text{mil})/(\text{100 in}^2\cdot\text{d}\cdot\text{atm})$, divide by 2.

^gTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

Table 21. Physical Properties^a of a Multilayer Barrier Film^b and a Polyethylene Film^c

Property ^d	Multilayer film	Polyethylene film	Test method
Yield tensile strength, MPa ^e			ASTM D882-61 T
MD	14	12.1	
TD	13	9.7	
Ultimate tensile strength, MPa ^e			ASTM D882-61 T
MD	24	20.0	
TD	17	17	
Tensile modulus, MPa ^e			ASTM D882-61 T
MD	170	180	
TD	150	180	
Elongation, %			ASTM D882-61 T
MD	400	325	
TD	400	550	
Elmendorf tear strength, g			ASTM D1922
MD	800	325	
TD	650	250	
Gas transmission at 24 °C, nmol/(m ² ·s·GPa) ^f			ASTM D1434-63
Oxygen	6.6 × 10 ⁴	1.6 × 10 ⁷	
Carbon dioxide	11.1 × 10 ⁴	10.0 × 10 ⁷	
Nitrogen	0.8 × 10 ⁴	0.8 × 10 ⁷	
Water vapor transmission at 95% RH and 38 °C, nmol/(m·s) ^g	2000	6400	ASTM E96-63 T

^aRefs. (204) and (206).

^b0.05-mm total thickness with layers of polyethylene, adhesive, and vinylidene chloride copolymer.

^c0.05-mm polyethylene, 0.921 g/cm³ density.

^dMD is machine direction; TD is transverse direction.

^eTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^fTo convert nmol/(m²·s·GPa) to cm²/(100 in.² d·atm), divide by 7.9 × 10⁴.

^gTo convert nmol/(m·s) to g/(100 in.²·d), divide by 1 × 10⁴.

(204,205). This permits the design of a packaging material with a combination of properties not obtainable in any single material. A VDC copolymer layer is incorporated into multilayer film for perishable food packaging because it provides a barrier to oxygen. A special high barrier resin is supplied specifically for this application. Typically, multilayer packaging films contain outer layers of a tough, low cost polymer such as high density or linear low density polyethylene with VDC copolymer as the core layer. Cast and blown films are produced on conventional film lines with one extruder and die designed to handle the heat-sensitive nature of VDC resin. The properties of a 0.05-mm (2-mil) multilayer cast film are listed in Table 21. Example properties of multilayer blown films are listed in Table 22. Films A to D in Table 22 illustrate the effects of thickness variation and variation of the specific grade of VDC copolymer used.

Multilayer films are produced by both cast- and blown-film coextrusion. One of the key enabling technologies in the manufacture of these multilayer films has been preencapsulation of the VDC resin (207). Preencapsulation means that the VDC resin extrudate is completely encapsulated with a more thermally stable

Table 22. Physical Properties of Multilayer Blown Coextruded Barrier Films

Property ^a	Film A	Film B	Film C	Film D	Test method
Thickness, mm	0.05	0.10	0.15	0.10	
Yield tensile strength, MPa ^b					ASTM D882-61 T
MD	12	12	16	15	
TD	12	13	16	14	
Ultimate tensile strength, MPa ^b					ASTM D882-61 T
MD	25	20	16	18	
TD	24	17	13	15	
Tensile modulus, MPa ^b					ASTM D882-61 T
MD	230	240	330	310	
TD	240	230	330	310	
Elongation, %					ASTM D882-61 T
MD	450	460	360	360	
TD	590	490	390	390	
Elmendorf tear strength, g					ASTM D1922
MD	480	950	270	60	
TD	210	610	320	190	
Oxygen transmission at 100% RH and 23 °C, nmol/(m·s·GPa) ^c	3.3×10^4	1.7×10^4	0.6×10^4	0.8×10^4	ASTM D3985-81
Water vapor transmission at 100% RH and 38 °C, nmol/(m·s) ^d	2900	1400	500	600	ASTM F1249

^aMD is machine direction; TD is transverse direction.

^bTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^cTo convert nmol/(m²·s·GPa) to cm³/(100 in.² d·atm), divide by 7.9×10^4 .

^dTo convert nmol/(m·s) to g/(100 in.²·d), divide by 1×10^2 .

polymer, such as an ethylene–vinyl acetate copolymer, prior to entering the co-extrusion die. Using this technique, the VDC resin is not directly exposed to the large surface area of the multilayer extrusion die, eliminating a greater potential for carbon formation and subsequent problems. Upon entering the die the encapsulated VDC resin is combined with other polymer layers, including tie and skin layers, to create the multilayer film.

The application of encapsulation technology to flat dies and cast film co-extrusion is fairly easy to envision. As shown in Figure 14, the encapsulating material completely surrounds the VDC resin. When the edges are trimmed, a flat film with a continuous barrier layer is produced.

Blown-film coextrusion presents the added difficulty of obtaining a continuous barrier layer. A die with a crosshead mandrel is preferred over a die with a spiral mandrel, because the spiral mandrel tends to lead to long residence time in the spirals. A standard crosshead mandrel, however, results in a weld line where the barrier layer is not continuous. As shown in Figure 15, this problem is solved by providing an overlap of the barrier layer at the weld line (208). Although the barrier layer is not continuous across the weld line, sufficient overlap will

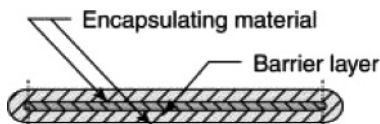


Fig. 14. Multilayer cast film showing a VDC copolymer barrier layer surrounded by a less thermally sensitive encapsulating material, such as ethylene–vinyl acetate (207). The edges are trimmed.

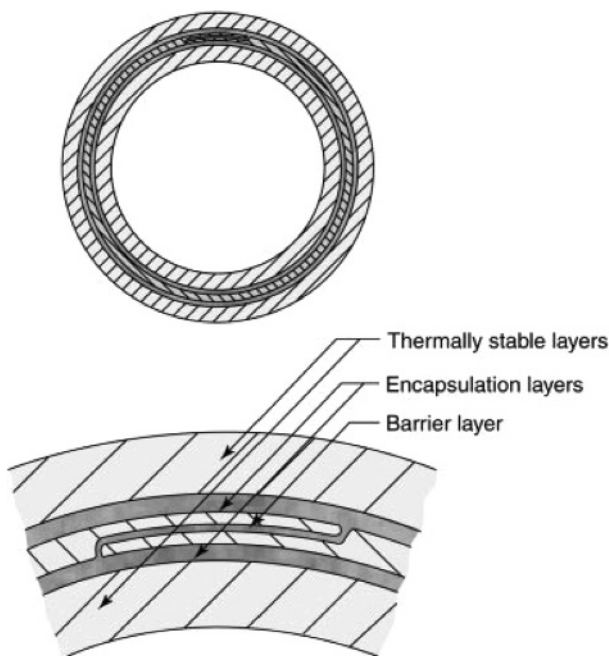


Fig. 15. Multilayer blown film with enlarged view showing overlap of barrier layer (208).

create a tortuous path for permeation, and the barrier properties will be maintained across the weld. This technology has only been recently applied to large blown-film dies. Five- to seven-layer blown-film dies up to 51-cm (20-in.) diameter have been demonstrated using this technology (209–212). These blown-film dies also incorporate temperature isolation techniques that allow VDC resins to be co-extruded with resins such as nylon that require much higher melt temperatures. Similar to the monolayer films, multilayer films are used predominately in food packaging and medical applications.

Multilayer Sheet Extrusion. Rigid containers for food packaging can be made from coextruded sheet that contains a layer of a barrier polymer (213–215). A simple example is a sheet with five layers that has a total thickness of about 1.3 mm (50 mil). The outermost layers might be polypropylene, polyethylene, polystyrene, high impact polystyrene (HIPS), or other nonbarrier polymer having good mechanical properties. The innermost barrier layer is about 125 μm (5 mil) of a VDC copolymer. Adhesive layers connect the outer layers and the

barrier layer. This coextruded sheet can be formed into containers by any of several techniques, including solid-phase pressure forming and melt-phase forming. The final container has a total wall thickness of about 500 μm (20 mil) and a barrier layer that is about 50 μm (2 mil) thick. Such a container is capable of protecting oxygen-sensitive foods at ambient temperatures for a year or more. These containers are lightweight, microwavable, nonbreakable, and attractive. More sophisticated containers may have more than five layers and improved economics by including a layer of scrap or recycled polymers in the structure.

Lacquer Resins. Vinylidene chloride copolymers have several properties that are valuable in the coatings industry: excellent resistance to gas and moisture vapor transmission, good resistance to attack by solvents and by fats and oils, high strength, and the ability to be heat-sealed (216,217). These characteristics result from the highly crystalline nature of the very high VDC content of the polymer, which ranges from ~ 80 to 90 wt%. Minor constituents in these copolymers generally are vinyl chloride, alkyl acrylates, alkyl methacrylates, acrylonitrile, methacrylonitrile, and vinyl acetate. Small concentrations of vinyl carboxylic acids, eg, acrylic acid, methacrylic acid, or itaconic acid, are sometimes included to enhance adhesion of the polymer to the substrate. The ability to crystallize and the extent of crystallization are reduced with increasing concentration of the comonomers; some commercial polymers do not crystallize. The most common lacquer resins are terpolymers of VDC–MMA–AN (218,219). The VDC level and the MMA–AN ratio are adjusted for the best balance of solubility and permeability. These polymers exhibit a unique combination of high solubility, low permeability, and rapid crystallization (220).

Acetone, methyl ethyl ketone, methyl isobutyl ketone, dimethylformamide, ethyl acetate, and tetrahydrofuran are solvents for VDC polymers used in lacquer coatings; methyl ethyl ketone and tetrahydrofuran are most extensively employed. Toluene is used as a diluent for either. Lacquers prepared at 10–20 wt% polymer solids in a solvent blend of two parts ketone and one part toluene have a viscosity of 20–1000 mPa-s (= cP). Lacquers can be prepared from polymers of very high VDC content in tetrahydrofuran–toluene mixtures and can be stored at room temperature. Methyl ethyl ketone lacquers must be prepared and maintained at 60–70 °C or the lacquer forms a solid gel. It is critical in the manufacture of polymers for a lacquer application to maintain a fairly narrow compositional distribution in the polymer to achieve good dissolution properties.

The lacquers are applied commercially by roller coating, doctor and dip coating, knife coating, and spraying. Spraying is useful only with lower viscosity lacquers, and solvent balance is important to avoid webbing from the spray gun. Solvent removal is difficult from heavy coatings, and multiple coatings are recommended where a heavy film is desired. Sufficient time must be allowed between coats to avoid lifting of the previous coat by the solvent. In the machine coating of flexible substrates, eg, paper and plastic films, the solvent is removed by ir heating or forced-air drying at 90–140 °C. Temperatures of 60–95 °C promote the recrystallization of the polymer after the solvent has been removed. Failure to recrystallize the polymer leaves a soft, amorphous coating that blocks or adheres between concentric layers in a rewind roll. A recrystallized coating can be re-wound without blocking. Handling properties of the coated film are improved with small additions of wax as a slip agent and of talc or silica as an antiblock

agent to the lacquer system. The concentration of additives is kept low to prevent any serious detracting from the vapor transmission properties of the VDC copolymer coating. For this reason, plasticizers are seldom, if ever, used.

A primary use of VDC copolymer lacquers is the coating of films made from regenerated cellulose or of board or paper coated with polyamide, polyester, polypropylene, poly(vinyl chloride), and polyethylene. The lacquer imparts resistance to fats, oils, oxygen, and water vapor (221). These coated products are used mainly in the packaging of foodstuffs, where the additional features of inertness, lack of odor or taste, and nontoxicity are required. Vinylidene chloride copolymers have been used extensively as interior coatings for ship tanks, railroad tank cars, and fuel storage tanks, and for coating of steel piles and structures (222,223). The excellent chemical resistance and good adhesion result in excellent long-term performance of the coating. Brushing and spraying are suitable methods of application.

The excellent adhesion to primed films of polyester combined with good dielectric properties and good surface properties makes VDC copolymers very suitable as binders for iron oxide pigmented coatings for magnetic tapes (224–226). They perform very well in audio, video, and computer tapes.

Vinylidene Chloride Copolymer Latex. Vinylidene chloride copolymers can be made in emulsion, and then isolated, dried, and used as coating or extrusion resins. Stable latices have been prepared and can be used directly for coatings (227–232). The principal applications for these materials areas barrier coatings on paper products and, more recently, on plasticfilms. The heat-seal characteristics of VDC copolymer coatings are equally valuable in many applications. They are also used for paints and as binders for nonwoven fabrics (233). Special VDC copolymer latices are used for barrier laminating adhesives, and the use of VDC copolymers in flame-resistant carpet backing is well known (234–237). VDC latices can also be used to coat poly(ethylene terephthalate) bottles to retain carbon dioxide (238).

Poly(vinylidene chloride) latices can be easily prepared by the same methods but have few uses because they do not form films. Copolymers of high VDC content are film-forming when freshly prepared but soon crystallize and lose this desirable characteristic. Because crystallinity in the final product is very often desirable, eg, in barrier coatings, a significant developmental problem has been to prevent crystallization in the latex during storage and to induce rapid crystallization of the polymer after coating. This has been accomplished by using the proper combination of comonomers with VDC.

Most VDC copolymer latices are made with varying amounts of acrylates, methacrylates, and acrylonitrile, as well as minor amounts of vinylcarboxylic acids, eg, itaconic and acrylic acids. Low foam latices having high surface tension are prepared with copolymerizable sulfonate monomers (235,237–239). The total amount of comonomer ranges from about 8 wt% for barrier latices to as high as 60 wt% for binder and paint latices. The properties of a typical barrier latex used for paper coating are listed in Table 23. Barrier latices are usually formulated with antiblock, slip, and wetting agents. They can be deposited by conventional coating processes, eg, with an air knife (240,241).

Coating speeds in excess of 305 m/min can be attained. The latex coating can be dried in forced-air or radiant-heat ovens (242,243). Multiple coats are applied,

Table 23. Properties of a Typical Barrier Latex

Properties	Value
Total solids, wt%	54–56
Viscosity at 25 °C, mPa-s (= cP)	25
pH	2
Color	Creamy white
Particle size, nmv	ca 250
Density, g/cm ³	1.30
Mechanical stability	Excellent
Storage stability	Excellent
Chemical stability	Not stable to di- or trivalent ions

Table 24. Film Properties of VDC Copolymer Latex

Property	Value
Water vapor transmission at 38 °C and 95% RH, nmol/(m·s) ^a	0.012 ^b
Grease resistance	Excellent
Scorability and fold resistance	Moderate
Oxygen permeability at 25 °C, nmol/(m·s·GPa) ^c	0.07
Heat sealability ^d	Good
Light stability	Fair
Density, g/cm ³	1.60
Color	Watery white
Clarity	Excellent
Gloss	Excellent
Odor	None

^aTo convert nmol/(m·s) to (g·mil)/(100 in.²·d), multiply by 4.

^bValues 0.37 g/(24 h·100 in.²) for 0.5 mil.

^cTo convert nmol/(m·s·GPa) to (cm³·mil)/(100 in.²·d·atm), divide by 2.

^dFace-to-face.

particularly in paper coating, to reduce pinholing (244). A precoat is often used on porous substances to reduce the quantity of the more expensive VDC copolymer latex needed for covering (245). The properties of a typical coating are listed in Table 24.

Vinylidene Chloride Copolymer Foams. Low density, fine-celled VDC copolymer foams can be made by extrusion of a mixture of VDC copolymer and a blowing agent at 120–150 °C (246). The formulation must contain heat stabilizers, and the extrusion equipment must be made of noncatalytic metal to prevent accelerated decomposition of the polymer. The low melt viscosity of the VDC copolymer formulation limits the size of the foam sheet that can be extruded.

Expandable VDC copolymer microspheres are prepared by a micro-suspension process (247). The expanded microspheres are used in reinforced polyesters, blocking multipair cable, and in composites for furniture, marble, and marine applications (248–251). Vinylidene chloride copolymer microspheres are also used in printing inks and paper manufacture (252).

Vinylidene Chloride Copolymer Ignition-Resistant Applications.

The role of halogen-containing compounds in ignition and flame suppression has been studied for many years (253–258). Vinylidene chloride copolymers are an abundant source of organic chlorine, eg, often above 70 wt%. Vinylidene chloride emulsion copolymers are used in a variety of ignition-resistant binding applications (259,260). Powders dispersible in nonsolvent organic polymer intermediates, eg, polyols, are used for both reinforcement and ignition resistance in polyurethane foams. Vinylidene chloride copolymer powder is also used as an ignition-resistant binder for cotton batt (261–263).

The halogenated polymers generate significantly more smoke than polymers that have aliphatic backbones, even though the presence of the halogen does increase the limiting oxygen index. Heavy-metal salts retard smoke generation in halogenated polymers (263,264). A VDC emulsion copolymer having a high AN graft can be used to make ignition-resistant acrylic fibers (265). A rubber-modified VDC copolymer combines good ignition resistance with good low temperature flexibility (266,267). The rubber-modified VDC copolymer has been evaluated in wire coating where better ignition resistance and lower smoke generation are needed.

Materials are also blended with VDC copolymers to improve toughness (267–270). Vinylidene chloride copolymer blended with ethylene–vinyl acetate copolymers improves toughness and lowers heat-seal temperatures (271,272). Adhesion of a VDC copolymer coating to polyester can be achieved by blending the copolymer with a linear polyester resin (273).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Vinylidene Chloride Polymers” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 14, pp. 540–579, by R. A. Wessling and F. G. Edwards, The Dow Chemical Company; in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 492–531, by R. A. Wessling, D. S. Gibbs, P. T. DeLassus, The Dow Chemical Company; B. A. Howell, Central Michigan University; in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 4, pp. 458–510, by R. A. Wessling, D. S. Gibbs, B. E. Obi, D. E. Beyer, The Dow Chemical Company; P. T. DeLassus, Valparaiso University; B. A. Howell, Central Michigan University.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. P. T. DeLassus and D. D. Schmidt, *J. Chem. Eng. Data* **26**, 274 (1981).
2. *Vinylidene Chloride Monomer Safe Handling Guide*, No. 00–6339-88-SAI, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1988.
3. L. G. Shelton, D. E. Hamilton, and R. H. Fisackerly, in E. C. Leonard, ed., *Vinyl and Diene Monomers, High Polymers*, Vol. **24**, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1971, pp. 1205–1282.
4. U. S. Pat. 2238020 (Apr. 8, 1947), A. W. Hanson and W. C. Goggin (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
5. U. S. Pat. 3760015 (Sept. 18, 1973), S. Berkowitz (to FMC Corp.).
6. U. S. Pat. 3870762 (Mar. 11, 1975), M. H. Stacey and T. D. Tribbeck (to Imperial Chemical Industries, Ltd.).
7. U. S. Pat. 4225519 (Sept. 30, 1980), A. E. Reinhardt III (to PPG Industries).
8. P. W. Sherwood, *Ind. Eng. Chem.* **54**, 29 (1962).

9. U. S. Pat. 2293317 (Aug. 18, 1942), F. L. Taylor and L. H. Horsley (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
10. P. L. Viola and A. Caputo, *Environ. Health Perspect.* **21**, 45 (1977).
11. C. C. Lee and co-workers, *J. Toxicol. Environ. Health* **4**, 15 (1978).
12. V. Ponomarev and L. Tomatis, *Oncology* **37**, 136 (1980).
13. R. D. Short and co-workers, EPA Report, No. PB281713, Environmental Protection Agency, Washington, D. C., 1977.
14. T. R. Blackwood, D. R. Tierney, and M. R. Piana, EPA Report, No. PB80-146442, Environmental Protection Agency, Washington, D. C., 1979.
15. J. M. Norris, *personal communication*, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1982.
16. M. J. McKenna, P. G. Watanabe, and P. J. Gehring, *Environ. Health Perspect.* **21**, 99 (1977).
17. M. G. Ott and co-workers, *J. Occup. Med.* **18**, 735 (1976).
18. J. Hushon and M. Kornreich, EPA Report, No. PB280624, Environmental Protection Agency, Washington, D. C., 1978.
19. G. Talamini and E. Peggion, in G. E. Ham, ed., *Vinyl Polymerization*, Vol. **1**, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1967, Part 1, Chapt. "5".
20. P. J. Flory, *Principles of Polymer Chemistry*, Cornell University Press, Ithaca, N.Y., 1953, Chapt. "6".
21. W. H. Stockmayer, K. Matsuo, and G. W. Nelb, *Macromolecules* **10**, 654 (1977).
22. J. D. Burnett and H. W. Melville, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **46**, 976 (1950).
23. C. E. Bawn, T. P. Hobin, and W. J. McGarry, *J. Chem. Phys.* **56**, 791 (1959).
24. W. J. Burlant and D. H. Green, *J. Polym. Sci.* **31**, 227 (1958).
25. R. C. Reinhardt, *Ind. Eng. Chem.* **35**, 422 (1943).
26. W. I. Bengough and R. G. W. Norrish, *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **218**, 149 (1953).
27. R. A. Wessling and I. R. Harrison, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-1*, **9**, 3471 (1971).
28. G. Odian, *Principles of Polymerization*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1981, Chapt. "3".
29. B. E. Obi and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **33**, 2019-2032 (1995).
30. J. L. Gardon, in C. E. Schildknecht, ed., *Polymerization Processes*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1977, Chapt. "6".
31. R. A. Wessling, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **12**, 309 (1968).
32. R. A. Wessling and D. S. Gibbs, *J. Macromol. Sci., A: Chem.* **7**, 647 (1973).
33. A. Konishi, *Bull. Chem. Soc. Jpn.* **35**, 197 (1962).
34. A. Konishi, *Bull. Chem. Soc. Jpn.* **35**, 193 (1962).
35. A. P. Sheniker and co-workers, *Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR* **124**, 632 (1959).
36. D. R. Roberts and R. H. Beaver, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Lett. Ed.* **17** (3), 155 (1979).
37. B. A. Howell, A. M. Kelly-Rowley, and P. B. Smith, *J. Vinyl. Tech.* **11**, 159 (1989).
38. A. R. Westwood, *Eur. Polym. J.* **7**, 377 (1971).
39. J. F. Gabbett and W. Mayo Smith, in G. E. Ham, ed., *Copolymerization*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1964, Chapt. "10".
40. J. Brandrup and E. H. Immergut, eds., *Polymer Handbook*, 2nd ed., John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1975.
41. K. Matsuo and W. H. Stockmayer, *Macromolecules* **10**, 658 (1977).
42. W. I. Bengough and R. G. W. Norrish, *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **218**, 155 (1953).
43. C. Pichot, Q. T. Pham, and J. Guillot, *J. Macromol. Sci., Chem.* **12**, 1211 (1978).
44. C. Pichot and Q. T. Pham, *Eur. Polym. J.* **15**, 833 (1979).
45. B. E. Obi, *Technical data*, The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, MI, 1995.
46. N. Yamazaki and co-workers, *Polym. Prepr. (Am. Chem. Soc., Div. Polym. Chem.)* **5**, 667 (1964).

47. A. Konishi, *Bull. Chem. Soc. Jpn.* **35**, 395 (1962).
48. B. L. Erusalimskii and co-workers, *Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR* **169**, 114 (1966).
49. Brit. Pat. 1119746 (July 10, 1968) (to Chisso Corp.).
50. Can. Pat. 798905 (Nov. 12, 1968), R. Buning and W. Pungs (to Dynamit Nobel Corp.).xs
51. U. S. Pat. 3366709 (Jan. 30, 1968), M. Baer (to Monsanto Co.).
52. U. S. Pat. 3509236 (Apr. 28, 1970), H. G. Siegler, R. B. Oberlar, and W. Pungs (to Dynamit Nobel Aktiengesellschaft Co.).
53. U. S. Pat. 3655553 (Apr. 11, 1972), R. C. DeWald (to Firestone Tire and Rubber Co.).
54. M. Pegoraro, E. Beati, and J. Bilalov, *Chim. Ind. Milan* **54**, 18 (1972).
55. T. Fisher, J. B. Kinsinger, and C. W. Wilson, *Polym. Lett.* **5**, 285 (1967).
56. M. Meeks and J. L. Koenig, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-1* **9**, 717 (1971).
57. S. Krimm, *Fortschr. Hochpolym. Forsch.* **2**, 51 (1960).
58. K. Matsuo and W. H. Stockmayer, *Macromolecules* **8**, 660 (1975).
59. K. Okuda, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **2**, 1749 (1964).
60. E. J. Arlman and W. M. Wagner, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **49**, 832 (1953).
61. M. M. Coleman and co-workers, *J. Macromol. Sci., Phys.* **15**, 463 (1987).
62. M. S. Wu and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **18**, 95 (1980).
63. M. S. Wu and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **18**, 111 (1980).
64. R. H. Boyd and L. Kesner, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **19**, 393 (1981).
65. B. E. Obi, P. T. DeLassus, and E. A. Grulke, *Macromolecules* **27**, 5491–5497 (1994).
66. R. F. Boyer and R. S. Spencer, *J. Appl. Phys.* **15**, 398 (1944).
67. K. H. Illers, *Kolloid Z.* **190**, 16 (1963).
68. R. A. Wessling and co-workers, *Appl. Polym. Symp.* **25**, 83 (1974).
69. G. R. Riser and L. P. Witnauer, *Polym. Prepr.* **2**, 218 (1961).
70. N. W. Johnston, *Rev. Macromol. Chem. C* **14**, 215 (1976).
71. B. G. Landes, P. T. DeLassus, and I. R. Harrison, *J. Macromol. Sci. B* **22**, 735 (1984).
72. R. A. Wessling, J. H. Oswald, and I. R. Harrison, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **11**, 875 (1973).
73. I. R. Harrison and E. Baer, *J. Colloid Interface Sci.* **31**, 176 (1969).
74. R. A. Wessling, D. R. Carter, and D. L. Ahr, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **17**, 737 (1973).
75. A. F. Burmester and R. A. Wessling, *Bull. Am. Phys. Soc.* **18**, 317 (1973).
76. M. Asahina, M. Sato, and T. Kobayashi, *Bull. Chem. Soc. Jpn.* **35**, 630 (1962).
77. R. A. Wessling, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **14**, 1531 (1970).
78. R. A. Wessling, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **14**, 2263 (1970).
79. M. L. Wallach, *Polym. Prepr.* **10**, 1248 (1969).
80. A. Revillion, B. Dumont, and A. Guyot, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **14**, 2263 (1976).
81. A. Revillion, *J. Liq. Chromatogr.* **3**, 1137 (1980).
82. G. S. Kolesnikov and co-workers, *Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR Otd. Khim. Nauk* 731 (1959).
83. E. F. Jordan and co-workers, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **13**, 1777 (1969).
84. S. W. Lasoski, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **4**, 118 (1960).
85. S. W. Lasoski and W. H. Cobbs, *J. Polym. Sci.* **36**, 21 (1959).
86. H. J. Bixler and O. S. Sweeting, in O. J. Sweeting, ed., *The Science and Technology of Polymer Films*, Vol. **2**, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1971, Chapt. "1".
87. P. T. DeLassus, *J. Vinyl Technol.* **1**, 14 (1979).
88. P. T. DeLassus and D. J. Grieser, *J. Vinyl Technol.* **2**, 195 (1980).
89. P. T. DeLassus, *J. Vinyl Technol.* **3**, 240 (1981).
90. *Introduction to Barrier Polymer Performance*, No. 190–333-1084, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1984.
91. *Permeability of Polymers to Gases and Vapors*, No. P302–336-79, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1979.

92. Kuraray EVAL Resin, No. 6-1000-605, Kuraray Co., Ltd., Osaka, Japan, 1986.
93. P. T. DeLassus, in Proceedings of COEX America, Scotland, 1986, p. 187.
94. P. T. DeLassus, in J. I. Kroschwitz, ed., *Kirk-Othmer: Encyclopedia of Chemical Technology*, 4th ed., Vol. 3, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1992, pp. 931-962.
95. G. Strandburg, P. T. DeLassus, and B. A. Howell, in S. A. Risch and J. H. Hotchkiss, eds., *Food and Packaging Interactions II* (ACS Symposium Series No. 473), American Chemical Society, Washington, D. C., 1991, pp. 133-148.
96. P. T. DeLassus and co-workers, in J. H. Hotchkiss, ed., *Food and Packaging Interactions* (ACS Symposium Series No. 365), American Chemical Society, Washington, D. C., 1988, Chapt. "2", pp. 11-27.
97. P. T. DeLassus, G. Strandburg, and B. A. Howell, *TAPPI J.* **71** (11), 177-181 (1988).
98. G. Strandburg, P. T. DeLassus, and B. A. Howell, in W. J. Karos, ed., *Barrier Polymers and Structures* (ACS Symposium Series No. 423), American Chemical Society, Washington, D. C., 1990, pp. 333-350.
99. R. F. Boyer, *J. Phys. Colloid Chem.* **51**, 80 (1947).
100. G. M. Burnett, R. A. Haldon, and J. N. Hay, *Eur. Polym. J.* **4**, 83 (1968).
101. B. A. Howell and P. T. DeLassus, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **25**, 1967 (1987).
102. U. S. Pat. 3321417 (May 23, 1967) (to Union Carbide Corp.); N. L. Zutty and F. J. Welch, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **1**, 2289 (1963).
103. B. A. Howell, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **25**, 1981 (1987), and references cited therein.
104. R. R. Lagasse and J. L. Schroeder, *Mater. Res. Soc. Symp. Proc.* **371**, 432 (1995).
105. J. D. Danforth, *Polym. Prepr.* **21**, 140 (1980).
106. J. D. Danforth, in P. O. Klemchuk, ed., *Polymer Stabilization and Degradation*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D. C., 1985, Chapt. 20, and references cited therein.
107. D. H. Everett and D. J. Taylor, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **67**, 402 (1971).
108. D. Vesely, *Ultramicroscopy* **14**, 279 (1984).
109. I. R. Harrison and E. Baer, *J. Colloid Interface Sci.* **31**, 176 (1969).
110. D. R. Roberts and A. L. Gatzke, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **16**, 1211 (1978).
111. B. Dolezel, M. Pegoraro, and E. Beati, *Eur. Polym. J.* **6**, 1411 (1970).
112. T.-H. Hsieh, *Polym. J.* **31**, 948 (1999).
113. T.-H. Hsieh and K.-S. Ho, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A: Polym. Chem.* **37**, 2035 (1999).
114. R. J. Pasek, D. P. Y. Chang, and A. D. Jones, *Hazard. Waste Hazard. Mater.* **13** 23 (1996).
115. P. Pendleton, B. Vincent, and M. L. Hair, *J. Colloid Interface Sci.* **80**, 512 (1981).
116. R. D. Bohme and R. A. Wessling, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **16**, 1961 (1972).
117. A. Crovato-Arnaldi and co-workers, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **8**, 747 (1964).
118. G. M. Burnett, R. A. Haldon, and J. N. Hay, *Eur. Polym. J.* **3**, 449 (1967).
119. R. A. Wessling, *Am. Chem. Soc. Div. Org. Coat. Plast. Chem. Pap.* **34**, 380 (1976).
120. F. F. He and H. Kise, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **21**, 1972 (1983).
121. D. H. Davies, *J. Chem. Soc. Faraday Trans. 1* **72**, 2390 (1976).
122. E. Tsuchido and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **2**, 3347 (1964).
123. S. S. Barton and co-workers, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **67**, 3534 (1971).
124. S. S. Barton, J. R. Dacey, and B. H. Harrison, *Am. Chem. Soc. Div. Org. Coat. Plast. Chem. Pap.* **31**, 768 (1971).
125. Y. V. Konotsur, G. S. Shapoval, and A. A. Pud, *Theor. Exp. Chem.* **33**, 150 (1997).
126. B. A. Howell, S. I. Ahmed, and D. E. Beyer, *Polym. Prepr.* **42**, 868 (2001).
127. A. L. Evelyn and co-workers, in J. L. Duggan and I. L. Morgan, eds., *Application of Accelerators in Research and Industry*, AIP Press, New York, 1997, pp. 933-936.
128. A. K. Srivastava and H. S. Virk, *Indian J. Pure Appl. Phys.* **37**, 713 (1999).

129. A. M. Shaban, *Mater. Lett.* **22**, 309 (1995).
130. A. Bailey and D. H. Everett, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-2* **7**, 87 (1969).
131. B. A. Howell and co-workers, in Proceedings of 28th North American Thermal Analysis Society Meeting, 2000, p. 283–286.
132. R. Simon, *Polym. Degr. Stab.* **43**, 125 (1994).
133. B. A. Howell, *Thermochim. Acta* **148**, 375 (1989).
134. B. A. Howell, *Thermochim. Acta* **134**, 207 (1988).
135. B. A. Howell, *J. Therm. Anal. Cal.* **83**, 53 (2006).
136. G. M. Burnett, R. A. Haldon, and J. N. Hay, *Eur. Polym. J.* **3**, 449 (1967).
137. D. E. Agostini and A. L. Gatzke, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **11**, 649 (1973).
138. B. A. Howell, P. T. DeLassus, and C. Gerig, *Polym. Prepr.* **28**, 278 (1987).
139. S. Collins and co-workers, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **66**, 87 (1999).
140. B. A. Howell, Z. Ahmed, and S. I. Ahmed, *Thermochim. Acta* **357**, 103 (2000).
141. P. L. Kumler and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **22**, 2994 (1989).
142. V. Roszbach and co-workers, *Angew. Makromol. Chem.* **40/41**, 291 (1974).
143. D. H. Grant, *Polymer* **11**, 581 (1970).
144. D. L. C. Jackson and W. S. Reid, *Nature* **162**, 29 (1948).
145. B. A. Howell and P. B. Smith, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **26**, 1287 (1988).
146. D. H. Davies and P. M. Henheffer, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **66**, 2329 (1970).
147. E. Tsuchida and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **2**, 3347 (1964).
148. S. S. Barton and co-workers, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **67**, 3534 (1971).
149. S. E. Evsyukov, S. Paasch, and B. Thomas, *Ber. Bunsen-Ges.* **101**, 837 (1997).
150. T. Danno, K. Murakami, and R. Ishikawa, in *AIP Conf. Proc.*, 1999, p. 486.
151. B. A. Howell and H. Liu, *Thermochim. Acta* **212**, 1 (1992).
152. B. A. Howell and F. M. Uhl, *Thermochim. Acta* **357**, 113 (2000).
153. B. A. Howell and F. M. Uhl, *Polym. Prepr.* **39**, 663 (1998).
154. B. A. Howell and P. B. Smith, *J. Therm. Anal. Cal.*, **83**, 71 (2006).
155. B. A. Howell and A. O. Odelana, *J. Therm. Anal. Cal.*, **89**, 373 (2007).
156. B. A. Howell and B. B. S. Sastry, in Proceedings of 22 nd North American Thermal Analysis Society Meeting, 1993, pp. 122–127.
157. U. S. Pat. 3852223 (Dec. 3, 1974), R. D. Bohme and R. A. Wessling (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
158. A. Ballistreri and co-workers, *Polymer* **22**, 131 (1981).
159. S. Gopalkrishnan and W. H. Starnes Jr., *Polym. Prepr.* **30**, 201 (1989).
160. B. A. Howell and J. R. Keeley, *Thermochim. Acta* **272**, 131 (1996).
161. B. A. Howell and co-workers, *Thermochim. Acta* **166**, 207 (1990).
162. B. A. Howell, M. F. Debney, and C. V. Rajaram, *Thermochim. Acta* **212**, 115 (1992).
163. S. R. Betso and co-workers, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **51**, 781 (1994).
164. B. A. Howell and C. V. Rajaram, *J. Vinyl Tech.* **15**, 202 (1993).
165. B. A. Howell and co-workers, *Polym. Adv. Tech.* **5**, 485 (1994).
166. B. A. Howell and co-workers, *Thermochim. Acta* **272**, 139 (1996).
167. J. Ozaki, T. Watanabe, and Y. Nishiyama, *J. Phys. Chem.* **97**, 1400 (1983).
168. B. A. Howell and A. Q. Campbell, *Thermochim. Acta* **340**, 231 (1999).
169. L. A. Matheson and R. F. Boyer, *Ind. Eng. Chem.* **44**, 867 (1952).
170. G. Oster, G. K. Oster, and M. Kryszewski, *J. Polym. Sci.* **57**, 937 (1962).
171. M. Kryszewski and M. Mucha, *Bull. Acad. Pol. Sci. Ser. Sci. Chim. Geol. Geogr.* **13**, 53 (1965).
172. Y. Izumi, S. Kawanishi, N. Takagi, S. Honda, and T. Yamamoto, *Bull. Chem. Soc. Jpn.* **71**, 2459 (1998).
173. H. Niino and A. Yabe, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A: Polym. Chem.* **36**, 2483 (1998).
174. A. Yabe, *Phys. Chem. Mater. Low-Dimens. Struct.* **21**, 75 (1999).
175. R. R. Lagasse and J. L. Schroeder, *Mater. Res. Soc. Symp. Proc.* **371** 431 (1995).

176. U. S. Pat. 4418168 (Nov. 29, 1983), E. H. Johnson (to the Dow Chemical Co.).
177. B. A. Howell, F. M. Uhl, and D. Townsend, *Thermochim. Acta* **357**, 127 (2000).
178. B. A. Howell and J. Zhang, *Polym. Prepr.* **42**, 880 (2001).
179. B. A. Howell and J. Zhang., *J. Vinyl Addit. Technol.*, **12**, 88 (2006).
180. B. A. Howell, D. A. Spears, and P. B. Smith, *J. Therm. Anal. Cal.*, **85**, 115 (2006).
181. B. A. Howell and B. Pan, *Thermochim. Acta* **357**, 119 (2000).
182. U. S. Pat. 3033812 (May 8, 1962), P. K. Isacs and A. Trofimow (to W. R. Grace & Co.).
183. D. M. Woodford, *Chem. Ind. (London)* **8**, 316 (1966).
184. U. S. Pat. 2968651 (Jan. 17, 1961), L. C. Friedrich Jr., J. W. Peters, and M. R. Rector (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
185. U. S. Pat. 2482771 (Sept. 27, 1944), J. Heerema (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
186. W. C. Goggin and R. D. Lowrey, *Ind. Eng. Chem.* **34**, 327 (1942).
187. A. T. Widiger and R. L. Butler, in O. J. Sweeting, ed., *The Science and Technology of Polymer Films*, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1971, pp. 333–339.
188. *Saran Polymers for Barrier Packaging*, Form No. 190–00445-992, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1996.
189. Z. Li and Y. Peng, *Suliao* **27** (2), 40–43 (1998).
190. S. R. Jenkins and co-workers, in 1998 Polymers, Laminations and Coating Conference, Book 2, TAPPI Press, Atlanta, 1989, p. 501.
191. M. A. Spalding and co-workers, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **35**, 1907 (1995).
192. U. S. Pat. 5006368 (Apr. 9, 1991), P. T. Louks (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
193. C. E. Schildknecht, *Vinyl and Related Polymers*, John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York (1952).
194. *Saran Resins*, No. 190–289-79, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1979.
195. E. D. Serdinsky, in H. F. Mark, S. M. Atlas, and E. Cernia, eds., *Man-Made Fibers: Science and Technology*, Vol. **3**, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1968, pp. 317–322.
196. *Product Literature*, Fugafil-saran GmbH & Co., 2001.
197. S. Jenkins and J. Naumovitz, *Packed with Performance*, Vol. **3**, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., May 1999.
198. D. Zuo, *Shanghai Chem. Ind.* **22** (6), 40–43 (1997).
199. W. R. R. Park, *Plastics Film Technology*, Van Nostrand Reinhold Company, New York, 1969.
200. J. H. Briston, *Plastics Films*, 3rd ed., Longman Scientific & Technical, Essex, England, 1988.
201. C. J. Benning, *Plastics Films for Packaging*, Technomic Publishing Co., Lancaster, Pa., 1989, p. 31.
202. H. Tamber, in PVDC Films, Plast-Ex '98 Technical Conference, 1998.
203. *Technical Datasheets*, Form No. 190-(00481 through 00487)-01, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 2001.
204. D. L. Roodvoets, in P. F. Bruin, ed., *Packaging with Plastics*, Gordon & Breach, New York, 1974, p. 85.
205. *SARANEX Barrier Medical Films*, Form No. 500–01814-1199, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1999.
206. *SARANEX Coextruded Barrier Film*, Form No. 500–01923-0401, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 2001.
207. U. S. Pat. 4643927, (Feb. 17, 1987), R. A. Luecke (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
208. U. S. Pat. 4842791, (Jun. 27, 1989), G. E. Gould and R. A. Luecke (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
209. H. Tamber, in *Advanced Technology Seminar, Macro Engineering & Technology Inc.*, Mississauga, Ontario, Canada, Sept. 1999.
210. *Can. Plast.* **59** (9), 17 (2000).

211. H. Tamber, "Barrier Films Containing PVDC/EVOH in Food & Medical Packaging Applications," in *Specialty Plastics Films 2000, 16th Annual World Congress, on Global Film Resins, Markets, Applications, Zurich, Macro Engineering & Technology Inc.*, 2000.
212. *Plast. Technol.* **47** (1), 13 (2001).
213. *Rigid Coextruded Plastic Barrier Containers for Unrefrigerated Foods*, Form No. 190-337-1084, The Dow Chemical Co., Midland, Mich., 1984.
214. W. J. Schrenk and S. A. Marcus, in K. M. Finlayson, ed., *Plastic Film Technology*, Vol. 1, Technomic Publishing Co., Lancaster, Pa., 1989, pp. 1-11.
215. R. J. Macy, in Ref. (211), pp. 220-226.
216. S. F. Roth, in *American Chemical Society Chemical Marketing Economic Division Symposium (N.Y.)*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D. C., 1976, p. 29.
217. *Saran F Resin*, Technical Bulletin, The Dow Chemical Co., Horgen, Switzerland, 1969.
218. U. S. Pat. 3817780 (June 18, 1974), P. E. Hinkamp and D. F. Foye (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
219. U. S. Pat. 3879359 (Apr. 22, 1975), P. E. Hinkamp and D. F. Foye (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
220. U. S. Pat. 4097433 (June 27, 1978), W. P. Kane (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc.).
221. U. S. Pat. 2462185 (Feb. 22, 1949), P. M. Hauser (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc.).
222. W. W. Cranmer, *Corros. Houston* **8** (6), 195 (1952).
223. R. L. Alumbaugh, *Mater. Prot.* **3** (7), **34**, 39 (1964).
224. U. S. Pat. 3144352 (Aug. 11, 1964), J. P. Talley (to Ampex Corp.).
225. U. S. Pat. 3865741 (Feb. 11, 1975), F. J. Sischka (to Memorex Corp.).
226. U. S. Pat. 3894306 (July 1, 1975), F. J. Sischka (to Memorex Corp.).
227. L. J. Wood, *Mod. Packag.* **33**, 125 (1960).
228. R. F. Avery, *Tappi J.* **45**, 356 (1962).
229. A. D. Jordan, *Tappi J.* **45**, 865 (1962).
230. B. J. Sauntson and G. Brown, *Rep. Prog. Appl. Chem.* **56**, 55 (1972).
231. P. S. Bryant, in *European Flexographic Technical Association Barrier Coatings and Laminations Seminar*, Vol. 1, Manchester, U. K., 1977, p. 7.
232. G. H. Elschmig and co-workers, *Pop. Plast.* **17** (2), 19 (1972).
233. U. S. Pat. 3787232 (Jan. 22, 1974), B. K. Mikofalvy and D. P. Knechtges (to B. F. Goodrich Co.).
234. R. G. Jahn, *Adhes. Age* **20** (6), 37 (1977).
235. U. S. Pat. 3946139 (Mar. 23, 1976), M. Bleyle and co-workers (to W. R. Grace & Co.).
236. U. S. Pat. 3850726 (Nov. 26, 1974), D. R. Smith and H. Peterson (to A. E. Staley Co.).
237. U. S. Pat. 3617368 (Nov. 2, 1971), D. S. Gibbs and R. A. Wessling (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
238. P. T. DeLassus, D. L. Clarke, and T. Cosse, *Mod. Plast.* **60**, 86 (Jan. 1983).
239. Brit. Pat. 1233078 (May 26, 1971), H. Gould and J. A. Zaslowsky (to Alcolac Chemical Co.).
240. G. H. Elschmig and A. F. Schmid, *Pop. Plast.* **17** (3), 36 (1972).
241. G. H. Elschmig and A. F. Schmid, *Pop. Plast.* **17** (4), 17 (1972).
242. G. H. Elschmig and A. F. Schmid, *Pop. Plast.* **17** (6), 17 (1972).
243. G. H. Elschmig and A. F. Schmid, *Paintindia* **22** (6), 22 (1972).
244. F. C. Caruso, in *Proceedings of Test. Pap. Synth. Conf.*, TAPPI, Atlanta, Ga., 1974, p. 167.

245. E. A. Chirokas, *Tappi J.* **50**, 59 A (1967).
246. U. S. Pat. 3983080 (Sept. 28, 1976), K. S. Suh, R. E. Skochdopole, and M. E. Luduc (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
247. U. S. Pat. 3615972 (Oct. 26, 1971), D. S. Morehouse and R. J. Tetreault (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
248. D. S. Morehouse and H. A. Walters, *SPE J.* **25**, 45 (1969).
249. T. E. Cravens, *Am. Chem. Soc. Div. Org. Coat. Plast. Chem. Pap.* **33**, 74 (1973).
250. R. C. Mildner and co-workers, *Mod. Plast.* **47** (5), 98 (1970).
251. T. F. Anderson, H. A. Walters, and C. W. Glesner, *J. Cell. Plast.* **6** (4), 171 (1970).
252. *Mater. Plast. Elastomer* **10**, 468 (Oct. 1980).
253. D. L. Chamberlain, in W. C. Kuryla and A. J. Papa, eds., *Flame Retardancy of Polymeric Materials*, Vol. **2**, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1973, pp. 109–168.
254. D. W. Van Krevelen, *Polymer* **16**, 615 (1975).
255. L. G. Imhoff and K. C. Stueben, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **13**, 146 (1973).
256. E. R. Larsen, *J. Fire Flamm. Fire Ret. Chem.* **1**, 4 (1974).
257. E. R. Larsen, *J. Fire Flamm. Fire Ret. Chem.* **1**, 2, 5 (1974).
258. R. C. Kidder, in *Proceedings of Fire Retardant Chemicals Association Semiannual Meeting*, 1977, pp. 45–51.
259. J. Knightly and J. C. Bax, in *Proceedings of the European Conference on Flammability Fire Retardance*, 1979, pp. 75–83.
260. J. R. Goots and D. P. Knechtges, *Polym. Plast. Technol. Eng.* **5**, 131 (1975).
261. C. V. Neywick, R. E. Yoerger, and R. F. Peterson, *J. Cell. Plast.* **16**, 171 (1980).
262. U. S. Pat. 4232129 (Nov. 4, 1980), D. S. Gibbs, J. H. Benson, and R. T. Fernandez (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
263. U. S. Pat. 4002597 (Jan. 11, 1977), E. D. Dickens (to B. F. Goodrich Co.).
264. U. S. Pat. 4055538 (Oct. 25, 1977), W. J. Kronke (to B. F. Goodrich Co.).
265. U. S. Pat. 4186156 (Jan. 29, 1980), D. S. Gibbs (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
266. *Plast. Technol.* **26** (1), 13 (1980).
267. U. S. Pat. 4206105 (June 3, 1980), O. L. Stafford (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
268. U. S. Pat. 4239799 (Dec. 16, 1980), A. S. Weinberg (to W. R. Grace & Co.).
269. U. S. Pat. 3840620 (Oct. 8, 1974), R. Gallagher (to Stauffer Chemical Co.).
270. U. S. Pat. 3513226 (May 19, 1970), T. Hotta (to Kureha Kagaku Kogyo Kabushiki Kalsha Co.).
271. U. S. Pat. 3565975 (Feb. 23, 1971), F. V. Goff, F. Stevenson, and W. H. Wineland (to The Dow Chemical Co.).
272. U. S. Pat. 3558542 (Jan. 26, 1971), J. W. McDonald (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc.).
273. U. S. Pat. 3896066 (July 22, 1975), R. O. Ranck (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc.).

B. A. HOWELL
Central Michigan University
D. E. BEYER
The Dow Chemical Company

VINYLIDENE FLUORIDE POLYMERS (PVDF)

Introduction

Poly(vinylidene fluoride) [24937-79-9] is the addition polymer of 1,1-difluoroethene [75-38-7], commonly known as vinylidene fluoride and abbreviated VDF or VF_2 . The formula of the repeat unit in the polymer is $-\text{[CH}_2\text{-CF}_2\text{]}_n-$. The preferred acronym for the polymer is PVDF, but the abbreviation PVF_2 also is used frequently. (Note: PVF is the accepted acronym for poly(vinyl fluoride), $-\text{[CH}_2\text{-CHF]}_n-$.) The history and development of PVDF technology has been reviewed (1). This article deals only with *thermoplastic* VDF-based polymers having greater than 50 wt% VDF, and not *fluoroelastomeric* copolymer versions, which have significant levels of fluoro-comonomers to impart rubber-like properties and usually less than 50 wt% VDF. (see FLUOROCARBON ELASTOMERS).

Since the commercialization of this linear fluoropolymer in the mid-1960s, the applications have expanded until the production of the monomer VDF and polymer PVDF reached significant tonnages at the end of the twentieth century, albeit with essentially the same producers during the last decade. The worldwide PVDF market in 2000 was about 21,000 t according to several industry sources. PVDF usage is expected to grow at an average of about 6% for all fluoropolymers during the first decade of the twenty-first century (2). Several manufacturers (see Table 1) have announced that there would be significant capacity increases between 2000 and 2005. Applications are increasing rapidly in China and South-east Asia as well as Japan and Korea with a high growth projection for the next few years in these areas.

The production of VDF and PVDF requires significant investment in corrosion-resistant pyrolysis reactors and low temperature distillation columns for the monomer; high pressure polymerization reactors and associated finishing equipment; and special environmental and waste handling processes. Raw material costs for the overall process of feedstock to monomer and polymer are high, depending upon the processes, but reflect to a large extent the pricing of anhydrous hydrogen fluoride, which is involved in the various manufacturing processes for VDF. Also the processes for the monomer and polymer are energy intensive. It is for these reasons that several manufacturers of PVDF have extra production capacity for VDF monomer to supply not only their internal PVDF polymer needs but also to provide the large quantities needed by the manufacturers of VDF-based fluoroelastomers.

The demand for PVDF has been driven by a number of factors: (1) a unique set of properties, (2) the ease and versatility in processing and fabricating, (3) over 30 years of proven performance under various and severe thermal, chemical, radiation, weathering environments and (4) the need for special attributes. For example, PVDF parts are subjected to superheated steam temperatures in some chemical processes. It is used also in strong acid, chlorine, bromine, and ultrapure water systems as well as in special applications where fire resistance is required. And PVDF has been used extensively during the last 30 years in nuclear radiation environments because unlike most plastics it cross-links, retaining mechanical integrity, rather than degrades. In one of the major applications

Table 1. Manufacturers of VDF and PVDF^a

Producers and country of production	Trademarks
Alventia LLC–USA Joint venture – Solvay and Dyneon; VDF monomer only, starting 2000	
Atofina ^b –France, USA www.atofina.com (Paris) www.atofinachemicals.com (USA) Largest capacity VDF and PVDF producer; expansion underway 2002	KYNAR, KYNAR 500, KYNAR FLEX, KYNAR Superflex, KYNAR Powerflex, HYLAR
Ausimont–USA www.ausimont.com Large capacity VDF and PVDF	
Daikin–Japan Minimal production PVDF resins; VDF-based coating resins use trademark	NEOFLON
Dyneon–USA, Germany www.dyneon.com Not currently a PVDF producer; produces TFE-based polymers with VDF as comonomer at low content	DYNEON, HOSTAFILON
Creanova ^c –Germany www.creanovainc.com Very small amounts PVDF available	DYFLOR
Kirova–CHEPETSKY Khimichesky Kombinat–Russia Small capacity PVDF	FLUOROPLAST
Kureha Chemical Company–Japan www.kureha.co.jp Moderate PVDF capacity—expansion underway for 2001	KF POLYMER
Solvay–Belgium, USA www.solvay.com Large capacity Europe; USA production 2000	SOLEF VIDAR

^aLocations and capacities of production sites may be found in the following reference: K.-L. Ring, A. Leder, M. Ishikawa- Yamaki, SRI International Chemical Economics Handbook Marketing Report, Dec. 1998; <http://ceh.sric.sri.com/Reports/580.0700/index.html>.

^bFormerly Elf Atochem.

^cSubsidiary of Degussa-Hüls, formerly Hüls America.

worldwide, there is now over 30 years exposure of thin PVDF-based paint coatings on monumental structures and skyscrapers documenting the durability of these coatings to protect metal from corrosion, retaining essentially the original appearance features.

During the 1990s, there has been much activity in polymerization, scientific studies, and application development related to PVDF. Many copolymer variations and compounds of PVDF have been introduced by the polymer

manufacturers and their immediate resin customers. This article will reference selected recent scientific and technology advances and focus upon property profiles and uses of the various PVDF grades available. A prior encyclopedia article (3) provides extensive references to the earlier studies. Detailed information on the properties and applications is given by the PVDF manufacturers at their websites. When the term *pdf* is used to search the *Chemical Abstracts* databases from 1992, there are approximately 500 citations per year, about half of which are patents. Hence, the freedom to operate or utilize PVDF in any application by a new user should be verified by a careful check of the patent literature. In addition, producers of PVDF should be consulted regarding proposed medical applications, especially related to body invasive or implant technology.

PVDF is a partially crystalline, linear hydrofluorocarbon polymer that contains 59.4 wt% fluorine and 3 weight percent hydrogen. The high level of intrinsic crystallinity, typically near 60%, confers stiffness and tough, creep resistant properties. Incorporation of various fluorinated comonomers at low levels, typically about 5–10 wt% but as much as 20 wt% in some cases, enhances the flexibility of PVDF by reducing the crystallinity, which, in general, also reduces the end use temperature ratings. Commercial processes involve polymerization in emulsion or suspension using free-radical initiators. The spatial arrangement of the alternating CH₂ and CF₂ groups along the polymer chain and the strong dipole moment of the CF₂ accounts for the unique polarity, unusually high dielectric constant, complex polymorphism, and high piezoelectric and pyroelectric activity of the polymer when processed appropriately (4–6).

PVDF has the characteristic resistance of fluoropolymers to harsh chemical, thermal, ultraviolet, weathering, and oxidizing or high energy, ionizing radiation environments. The chemical resistance of this hydrofluorocarbon polymer is not as broad as exhibited by perfluoropolymers because the somewhat acidic hydrogen atoms along the chain are reactive in strongly basic media, leading to the formation of fluoride salt by-products (7,8). This chemical susceptibility has, in fact, been turned to advantage in preparing PVDF samples for adherence to a variety of substrates as well as introducing reactive functionality for chemical grafting; the mechanism of the surface chemistry has been studied (9).

PVDF homopolymers and copolymers with various fluoroolefins have a wide range of applications including wire and cable products, electronic devices, chemical process equipment, use as a weather-resistant binder for exterior architectural finishes, and many specialized uses such as a stable binder for electroactive constituents in electrochemical cells. The polymer is readily melt-processed without processing aids or stabilizers using conventional molding or extrusion equipment; porous membranes are cast from solutions; and coatings are deposited from dispersions of PVDF using latent solvents, which solubilize the polymer at elevated temperatures, along with other additives to enhance the appearance, properties, and function. Certain grades of PVDF are used extensively for fluid handling components which convey high purity chemicals and ultrapure water because the resins may be fabricated easily into parts that have very low levels of extractable ionic or organic species and also very smooth surfaces that inhibit microbial fouling.

PVDF exhibits an unusual compatibility with other polymers having strong polar groups or carbonyl groups. This miscibility aspect has led to the

Table 2. Physical Properties of VDF, CH₂=CF₂

	Units/conditions	Value
Molecular weight	Da	64.038
Boiling point	°C	-84
Freezing point	°C	-144
Vapor pressure	kPa @ 21°C	3683
Critical pressure	kPa	4434
Critical temperature	°C	30.1
Critical density	kg/m ³	417
Explosive limits	vol% in air	5.8–20.3
Heat of formation	kJ/mol @ 25°C	-345.2
Heat of polymerization	kJ/mol @ 25°C	-474.21
Water solubility	cm ³ /100 g @ 25°C/10 kPa	6.3

development of many alloys and mixed systems for coatings, membranes, and extruded products.

In summary, PVDF fulfills special requirements in a variety of niche applications because of its unique characteristics. Hence, the broad and growing usage of this polymer is understandable. VDF usage also is increasing in other fluoropolymer and fluoroelastomer applications.

Monomer

Preparation. The principal industrial route to VDF involves dehydrochlorination of 1-chloro-1,1-difluoroethane (HCFC-142b) [75-68-3]. The principal producers are ATOFINA and Solvay in Europe and the United States and Ausimont and Alventia in the United States. Many patents exist for this and other similar preparative routes based upon dehydrohalogenation of various chlorofluorohydrocarbons or related compounds. Research efforts have escalated because the HCFC production will be curtailed in the mid-2000 period as a result of environmental concerns. Kureha (Japan) announced that their expansion would involve production of VDF from 1,1-difluoroethane (HFC-152a).

Properties. VDF is a colorless, flammable, and nearly odorless gas that has a very low boiling point like other small molecules with fluorine bonds. The physical properties are listed in Table 2. It is usually polymerized above its critical temperature and pressure, typically at pressures well above 3 MPa (30 atm), and approaching 10 MPa (100 atm) in some commercial processes; the polymerization is highly exothermic. Considering the flammability limits, caution must be exercised in any handling system.

Storage and Shipment. VDF (HFC-1132a) can be stored or shipped in gas cylinders or high-pressure tube trailers without polymerization inhibitors. Terpene and quinone inhibitors, however, may be used as a safety element where there might be uncertain environmental storage conditions. Liquid VDF can cause frostbite upon contact with the skin.

Health and Safety Factors. The combustion products are toxic. The OSHA website www.osha-slc.gov/ChemSamp.data/CH.275620.html provides the following information and full definitions of each classification code for environmental exposure and health factors as of year-end 2000.

Classification	Ratings	Comment
ACGIH TLV	500-ppm TWA	Not classifiable as a human carcinogen
NIOSH REL	1-ppm TWA; 5-ppm ceiling (15 min)	
IARC	Group 3	Not classifiable as to its carcinogenicity to humans

Uses. The variety of fluoropolymers and fluoroelastomers incorporating VDF in the main chain is extensive. The commercially important thermoplastic copolymers are based upon hexafluoropropylene HFP (10,11) chlorotrifluoroethylene (CTFE) (12,13) and co- or ter-polymers with tetrafluoroethylene (14). Telomerization of VDF to form fluorinated oligomers by radical addition has been reviewed (15).

Polymerization

VDF and other fluoromonomers are polymerized usually in aqueous medium in either emulsion or suspension. VDF polymerization in nonaqueous media is an active research area. VDF can copolymerize with fluorinated and some nonfluorinated monomers. Several aspects of VDF copolymerization with an array of fluorinated and nonfluorinated monomers have been reviewed (16,17); the reactivity ratios along with the Q and e parameters, which are measures of reactivity and polarity, respectively, have also been compiled. The interest in these copolymers centers upon introducing functionality in the PVDF chain for subsequent reactions.

Only emulsion and suspension polymerization of VDF are commercially practiced because water provides a sufficient heat sink for the large heat release associated with VDF polymerization. Only one VDF-copolymer with nonfluorinated comonomers, maleic monoesters, and allyl glycidal ethers has been commercialized for battery applications (18); all other reported VDF-copolymers with nonfluorinated olefins have been laboratory or patent examples (3).

Polymerization procedures, temperature, pressure, recipe ingredients, monomer feeding strategy, and post-polymerization processing are variables that influence product characteristics and quality (19–26). The variety of commercial VDF-copolymers has been reviewed (27). VDF–HFP copolymers having decreased extractable oligomers and improved solution clarity and processability, especially important to lithium ion battery applications, have been claimed (28).

The degree of polymerization of commercial PVDF ranges from 1000 to 2500 VDF units. During radical-initiated polymerization, the “head-to-tail” addition of monomer units predominates where the “head” is $-\text{CF}_2\cdot$ and the “tail” is $-\text{CH}_2\cdot$.

Reversed monomeric addition leading to “head-to-head” ($-\text{CF}_2-\text{CF}_2-$) and “tail-to-tail” ($-\text{CH}_2-\text{CH}_2-$) or so-called defect structures occurs. Commercial grades exhibit a wide range of 3–7 mol% defect structures as determined usually by nmr (29). The level increases with increasing polymerization temperature (30). The defect linkages affect significantly the crystallization processes and ultimate morphology (31,32).

In the emulsion process, a water-soluble *perfluorinated*-emulsifying agent is used to avoid radical scavenging reactions during polymerization and produce stable latex with a desired solid content. Typically, perfluoroalkylcarboxylate salts are cited in many VDF polymerization process patents. VDF can be polymerized without surfactant similar to conventional monomers (33,34), but only at low solid contents. Both inorganic peroxy compounds [eg, persulfates] and organic peroxides [eg, percarbonates (21)] may be employed as initiators. Other initiator systems such as a redox system (35) or a combination of fluoroaliphatic sulfinate and bromate (36) can also initiate VDF polymerization. Operating pressures can range from 1 to 20 MPa (10–200 atm) and temperature from 10 to 130°C. In a typical recipe, the polymer particles are solid and partial crystalline with diameters ranging from 100 to 250 nm depending upon the surfactant level. Particles are formed in the early stage by a homogeneous nucleation mechanism since VDF is in the vapor state. Various chain-transfer agents can be used such as chlorofluorohydrocarbons, fluorohydrocarbons, esters, and mercaptans.

VDF and suitable comonomers can be polymerized as a microemulsion where fluorinated oil-in-water microemulsion and fluorinated surfactant are present (37–39). The core-shell structure of these self-assembling systems and their distinctive polymerization features along with the range of particle size distribution have been reported (40).

Colloidal dispersants such as cellulose derivatives or vinyl alcohol are generally used in suspension polymerization of VDF to prevent coalescence and agglomeration of particles during polymerization. The polymerization pressure is similar to that of emulsion polymerization. Organic oil-soluble initiators such as peroxides, peroxy carbonates, or peroxy pivalates are used depending upon polymerization temperature, which ranges from 20 to 110°C (41–46). The molecular weight is regulated using oil-soluble chain-transfer agents such as dialkyl ethers and dialkyl carbonates. The reactor product is a slurry of suspended particles, usually spheres 15 to 120- μm diameter (41,43).

A suspension polymerization can be carried out using a radical photoinitiator with uv-visible light. Thus, photogeneration of radicals allows a lowering of the polymerization temperature (40). Lowering the polymerization temperature reduces the number of defect structures in PVDF.

Alloys of PVDF and PVDF copolymers with acrylic polymers are produced by a multistage aqueous dispersion polymerization. These intimately mixed polymer particles have found various industrial applications; particularly, in the waterborne high performance coating application. In the early stages of the polymerization, the fluoropolymer portion is produced under standard condition with 50- to 150-nm particles. In a later stage, acrylic monomers are added to the reactor in the presence of persulfates under atmospheric pressure. The final morphology of the alloy, which ranges from a core-shell to an inter-penetrated

structure to an intimate blend morphology, depends upon the composition of the fluoropolymer particles, the acrylic type, and the feed schedule (47–53).

The nonaqueous media used for VDF polymerization is either fluorocarbons or carbon dioxide under high pressure conditions. Fluorocarbons (54,55) and partially fluorinated hydrocarbons with no significant chain-transfer activities (56) are reported to be a suitable media for VDF polymerization.

VDF polymerization technology based upon super critical or liquid carbon dioxide as polymerization media has been reported (57–62). This technology offers an advantage in the polymer isolation step where a clean dry polymer is produced simply by depressurization. The residual monomer(s) and CO₂ can be recycled back to the reactor. PVDF is not soluble in CO₂ (58–60) and as a result, additional polymeric stabilizers are required to produce stable particles. Adequate CO₂ density for polymerization requires pressure significantly higher (typically >100 bar) than a conventional emulsion polymerization.

Telomerization of VDF in methanol with *tert*-butyl peroxide as the initiator is reported; polymerization kinetics along with telomer characterization are discussed (63). Microwave-stimulated, low pressure plasma polymerization of VDF gives a polymer film that is less than 10 μm thick (64). Highly regular PVDF polymer with minimized head-to-head addition was synthesized (65). Perdeuterated PVDF has also been prepared and described (66). The effectiveness of 1,1,1-trifluoro-2,2-dichloroethane (HCFC-123) as a chain transfer agent producing thermally stable PVDF in emulsion polymerization has been claimed (67).

Polymer Properties

Compared to the softer and mechanically less robust perfluorocarbon polymers, PVDF has high mechanical strength, abrasion resistance, and excellent resistance to both creep under long-term stress and fatigue upon cyclic loading (68,69). It also has excellent thermal stability and resists damage from most chemicals and solvents as well as from ultraviolet and high energy radiation. Typical design properties are shown in Table 3 for the homopolymers. The resin form is not hygroscopic and adsorption pickup is less than 0.05 wt% of surface water under ambient room conditions.

The properties of PVDF homopolymers and copolymers are sensitive to the chemical composition, molecular mass characteristics, and molecular architecture. These attributes are dictated by the polymerization method and ingredients, the method of isolation, and the thermal/mechanical history during isolation and subsequent processing.

From a composition viewpoint, the choice of initiator and chain-transfer agent determines end groups that affect thermal stability. These ingredients also dictate molecular mass characteristics involving the distribution of chain lengths and the molecular weight affecting processing and, ultimately, those properties related to the morphology of the solid polymer. The processing, morphology, properties, and end use performance are affected by the branching, cross-linking, differences in the content of defect structures, and other chain irregularities which exist in the PVDF polymers prepared under different conditions and ingredients. A 1999 study contrasts two commercial PVDF polymers based upon different

Table 3. Design Properties of PVDF Homopolymers^a

Properties	Value or description
Appearance in film form	Transparent to translucent
Melting transitions, crystalline, °C	155–192
Specific gravity	1.75–1.80
Refractive index, n_D at 25°C	1.42
Mold shrinkage, average %	2–3
Flammability	Self extinguishing, no dripping
Tensile strength, MPa ^b	
25°C	42–58.5
100°C	34.5
Elongation at break, %	
25°C	50–100
100°C	200–500
Yield point, MPa ^b	
25°C	38–52
100°C	17
Creep % 25°C / 13.79 MPa ^b , 10,000 h	2–4
Compressive strength, 25°C, MPa ^b	55–90
Modulus of elasticity, 25°C, GPa ^c	
In tension	1.0–2.3 (145–334 E3)
In flexure	1.1–2.5 (160–362 E3)
In compression	1.0–2.3 (145–334 E3)
Izod impact, 25°C, J/m ^d	
Notched	75–235
Unnotched	700–2300
Durometer hardness, Shore D scale	77–80
Heat distortion temperature, °C	
@ 0.455 MPa (psi)	140–168 (20.3–24.4 E3)
@ 1.82 MPa (psi)	80–128 (11.6–18.6 E3)
Abrasion resistance, Tabor CS-17 @ 0.5 kg load, mg/1000 cycles	17.6
Coefficient of sliding friction to steel	0.14–0.17
Thermal coefficient of linear expansion, °C	0.7–1.5 E –4
Thermal conductivity, 25–160°C, W/(m·K)	0.17–0.19
Specific heat, J/(kg·K)	1255–1425
Water absorption, %	0.04
Moisture vapor permeability @ 1 mm thickness, g/(24 h)(m ²)	2.2 E –2
Radiation resistance to Co ⁶⁰ , MGy	10–12
Speed of sound, m/s	
Longitudinal	1930
Shear	775
Dielectric constant, 23°C	
1 kHz	12.2
1 MHz	8.9
1 GHz	4.7

^aValues are ranges for the variety of *commercially* available grades or representative single point values. The values for any given test reflect the specific polymerization process and subsequent thermal/mechanical history of the sample. To assure consistent results in some tests, it is essential to anneal the samples in order to approach a thermodynamically stable morphology. See Ref. 27 for a compilation of VDF-copolymer properties.

^bTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^cTo convert GPa to psi, multiply by 145,000.

^dTo convert J/m to ft·lbf/in., divide by 53.38.

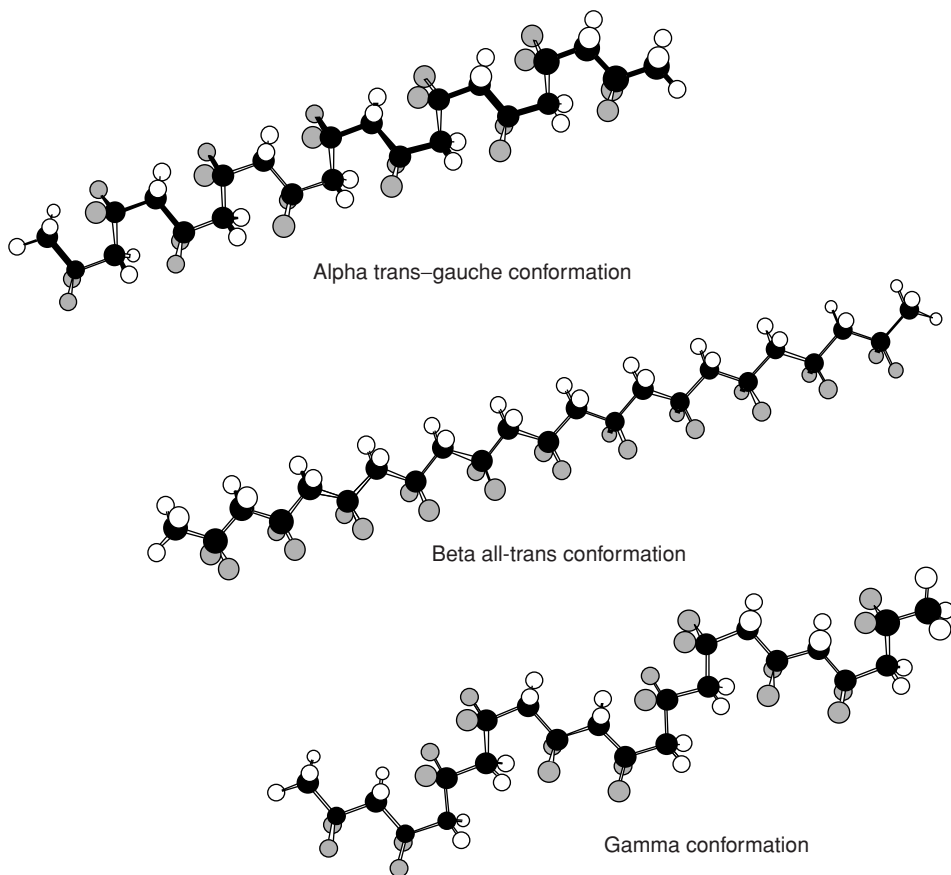


Fig. 1. Main polymorphs of PVDF.

polymerization chemistries (70), revealing differences in end groups and other properties related to composition.

Several of the key properties of PVDF homopolymers and copolymers depend upon the crystalline content and type of crystalline structure. The polymer chains involve long sequences of VDF units and can exist in several conformations. Figure 1 shows the alpha, beta, and gamma forms. The thermodynamically more stable alpha form involves a crankshaft configuration of the chain, which minimizes the steric interference between fluorine atoms along the chain. The beta form places the fluorines along one face of the chain, which is in a zigzag conformation. The gamma form is essentially a distortion of the alpha, where periodically one of the “cranks” is twisted out of the main chain geometry. Two other forms have been identified under very special conditions (71), but these so-called delta and epsilon forms are not typical of the structures existing in normal production or fabrication of parts. The effect of molecular weight and chain end groups on crystal forms of PVDF oligomers has been studied by several techniques (72) with interesting conclusions about the effect of the size of end groups

upon conformational disorder in the crystals. A complex morphology involving the alpha and gamma forms occurs and dominates the spherulitic characteristics of the PVDF when the melted polymer is allowed to solidify at temperatures near the melting point (73). The reorganization rate of metastable crystals in PVDF and HFP-copolymers is dependent upon molecular weight (74).

Amorphous PVDF regions have a density of 1.68 (75), the alpha and gamma polymorphs 1.92 and 1.93, respectively, and the beta polymorphs 1.97 g/cm³ (76). The density of the homopolymer PVDF cooled quickly from the melt is 1.76–1.78 g/cm³. The melt density of PVDF homopolymers and VDF/HFP-copolymers is approximately 1.45–1.48 g/cm³ at 230°C and 1 bar (77), ie a volumetric shrinkage factor of almost 20% occurs in cooling from the melt to the solid.

Depending upon the conditions, the linear PVDF chain configurations crystallize into spherulites that are lamellae of polymer chain segments. The alpha configuration is the thermodynamically stable form and predominates in the solid when molten PVDF is cooled. The beta configuration occurs in mixtures with carbonyl functional polymers or when a PVDF film sample is stretched. The gamma form will develop when solid PVDF is exposed to certain chemicals. The heat of crystallization is high ranging from 50 to 58 J/g. The rates of crystallization are not only dependent upon backbone chain conformation dynamics, but also reflect the polymerization technique, which determines defect structures and end groups as well as molecular mass characteristics. PVDF crystallization may be nucleated by a variety of agents. In the absence of nucleating agents, emulsion PVDF samples show small crystallites developing slowly from the molten state compared to suspension polymer samples, which will show rapid development of very large crystallites under the same thermal conditions (rate of cooling and hold times at temperatures).

Many of the performance related properties (Table 3) in a given application (Table 4) depend upon the crystalline characteristics of the part. Interestingly, the content of defect structures determines the crystalline form; in the range of 11–14% levels, the beta form develops, whereas the alpha predominates at either extreme of this range (71,73,106). A detailed review of the effects of crystallization conditions upon the phases and morphology includes a summary of crystallographic, infrared, and thermal studies as well as related scanning electron microscopic evidence (5). The crystallization behavior of a mixture of PVDF samples, one with a low and the other a high content of defect structures, led to the interesting observation that the blended mixture crystallized faster than crystals formed in the individual samples (107), again emphasizing the importance of defect structures in affecting the properties of PVDF.

The complicated PVDF chain dynamics and the strong thermodynamic driving force to crystallize confer a complex set of intrinsic transitions as a function of temperature, which ultimately are reflected in the physical properties and behavior under various test conditions. The heat of fusion is approximately 100 J/g and depends upon the level of defects in the sample. Thermodynamic data for the amorphous and crystalline PVDF are tabulated at the website web.utk.edu/~athas/databank/vinyl/pvf2

The glass transition (T_g) of the amorphous PVDF regions is in the range of –40 to –30°C, depending upon the sample and test method. Other sub- T_g transitions have been studied recently by dielectric relaxation spectroscopy (108).

Table 4. Applications Profile for PVDF Homopolymers and Copolymers in Key Markets

Market applications	PVDF attributes	Comments
<i>Coatings and paints</i>	<p>Solution characteristics are related to chemical composition and method of polymerization. Some processes utilize dispersions of PVDF particles with latent solvents to solubilize the PVDF at temperatures above ambient room conditions</p> <p>Photostability and resistance to radical attack. Film forming at reasonable temperatures. Long term weathering protection achieved at 25-μm film thickness.</p>	<p>Differences in solution behavior are exhibited by the various PVDF grades because of intrinsic chain composition (defect structures, end groups, comonomers, etc) and molecular mass characteristics</p>
<p>Binder for long lasting, weather resistant finishes for metals (primed galvanized steel, aluminum) used on sidings, roofing tiles, and other building components (78,79)</p>	<p>Photostability and resistance to radical attack. Film forming at reasonable temperatures. Long term weathering protection achieved at 25-μm film thickness.</p>	<p>These organosol paint formulations utilize inorganic pigments and < 30 wt% acrylic polymers, which enhance adhesion and confer other important attributes for a successful product. Major application worldwide. Thirty years of demonstrated weathering resistance (81). Often referenced as “architectural coatings” Powder coating versions have been developed (82,83)</p>
<p>Decorative films for lamination to surfaces; automotive trim applications; aircraft interior surfaces in-mold lining processes (84)</p>	<p>Formability of coated metal dependent upon coating application and storage conditions. (80)</p> <p>Resistance to weather and chemicals; thermoformable; stain resistance; cleanability. Ability to solvent cast very thin, pigmented formulations onto carrier films, creating extremely smooth surfaces. Extruded films also</p>	<p>Becoming a major U.S. application. Two major film manufacturers. Both homopolymers and copolymer grades utilized to make films (85)</p>
<p>Corrosion resistant coatings tank liners (86)</p>	<p>Chemical resistant and ease of forming relatively thick coatings from liquid systems. Extruded PVDF tubing and sheet; easily thermoformed. Bead welding with PVDF rod to form seamless joints in liners</p>	<p>Primer coating and several applications of liquid system necessary to build to 1–2 mm thickness; drying temperatures around 250°C. Copolymer grades usually used for extruded tank lining sheets for lining tanks</p>

Chemical processing equipment (25)

Flexible tubing for deep sea oil transport, (88)

Note that PVDF may be adequate for high pH environments in applications where the surface degradation and fluoride leaching is not problematic, eg, alkaline waste streams (87)

Special PVDF grades are available (ATOFINA) having cold temperature flexibility important to installation conditions, high temperature chemical resistance

Differences in chemical stress resistance are related to the different crystal structure of suspension and emulsion PVDF, the latter usually showing better performance

Major application. Hot, sulfurous oil at high pressure is a harsh chemical environment. Long service life requirement. Worldwide application

Packing for distillation towers

Chemical resistance, ease of molding complex shapes

Preferred over metal in many chemical processes because of corrosion issues with metals

High purity water systems; semiconductor facilities; pharmaceutical systems

Very low ionic and organic extractables; smooth surfaces inhibit microbial fouling. Operations at 90°C and in ozonated water (89)

Major application for special grades processed in special equipment to achieve low contamination resin

Piping for chemicals

Chemical resistance to strong acids and oxidizers; relatively high temperature stability

Pipe linings and solid pipe products. In one process, a solid PVDF tube with a wall thickness of several mm is hammered to a slightly smaller diameter than original, inserted into steel pipe, and allowed to relax to a tight fit, exemplifying the toughness of PVDF.

Pumps and instrument parts (90)

Chemical resistance at high temperatures

Nonporous nature compared to PTFE parts
High modulus reinforced compounds available from compounders

Ease of molding complex shapes

(Continued)

Table 4. (Continued)

Market applications	PVDF attributes	Comments
Fuel handling systems including underground storage tank systems and automotive fuel lines (91,92)	Very low permeation by hydrocarbons and oxygen containing additives achieved as a very thin barrier layer, typically about 50–250 μm Note: High dielectric constant and dielectric loss factor are factors to be considered in any application	In general, these products are composites of less expensive polymers with the PVDF layer incorporated as an inner liner or embedded barrier PVDF is not suitable as a primary insulation on AC power wiring because of absorption of the electromagnetic field and heating
<i>Electrical and Electronic</i>	Flexible PVDF grades with additives as jackets on plenum cables have passed the severe UL910 modified Steiner tunnel test to qualify the products as low smoke and flame propagating assemblies meeting strict specifications Radiation cross-linking improves toughness and abrasion resistance in these applications. PVDF copolymer responds readily to electron beam irradiation (93,94)	Another major application area for flexible PVDF copolymers only in the United State at this time. European and rest of the world specifications based upon fire testing may lead to further markets worldwide based upon this technology The compounds usually are mixtures of polymers and additives with PVDF being the major portion. It is the PVDF susceptibility to efficient cross-linking that allows economical processing rates
Jacketing of cables for plenum areas including signaling, communication, and power lines		
Insulating compounds for jacketing wire and cable assemblies, cathodic protection, industrial power control systems, high temperature wiring		
<i>Specialty Applications</i>		
Microporous membranes	PVDF is one of the few fluoropolymers that can be processed in solution. See Ref. 95 for a typical process and references to past technology	The technology involves casting a PVDF solution onto a surface covered with a nonsolvent, followed by special processing of the paper-like sheet. Extensive literature and patents PVDF is an essential ingredient at low levels in almost all commercial toners for photocopiers and many laser printers
Toners	Triboelectric characteristics allowing charging of the carbonaceous powder. Thermoplastic nature important to fusion process. See Ref. 96 for a leading reference	

Fishing lines and nets, Musical strings (97)	No water absorption; invisible in water; high knot strength; high specific gravity	Japanese application almost exclusively. Nylon monofilaments blended with PVDF have high knot strength and improved surface smoothness (98). Blends with polyethylene fibers (99)
Processing aid for polyolefins	PVDF copolymers at <1000 ppm in typical blown film applications is effective in reducing melt fracture and allowing increased extrusion rates	Developing market for PVDF in competition with established fluoroclastomer products
Monofilament for fabrics used in filtering wood pulp during bleaching	Chemical resistance to bleaching agents and other paper mill process chemicals	PVDF fabric replaced perforated stainless steel 25 years ago because of operational issues with metal corrosion
Lithium ion batteries; separators; electrode binder, (100–102)	Electrochemical stability at over 4 V is key property; high purity; solution casting; ability to cast thin electrodes from very high (>80%) carbon formulations	Relatively new application developing during late 1990s. Several hundred tons market in 2000, mainly in Japan
Piezo- and pyroelectric transducers for motion sensors, hydrophones, audio devices, etc; supercapacitors (103); electrolytic capacitors (104); aircraft interior sound control	Orientation under high electrical fields of the beta crystallites in thin films achieves high sensitivity to changes in shape because of pressure (piezo) or temperature (pyro). Considered a ferroelectric material because the remnant polarization is stable. Piezo film for active cancellation of noise in sound absorbing foam laminate	Very small volume application with significant impact over the years in the development of sensitive devices for military as well as security applications. Major research efforts since 1970s for this reason. Russian facilities had significant PVDF development efforts during the cold war “Foam-smart skin” concept (105)

These studies also indicate correlations with other techniques and identify a 50°C molecular chain transition as probably related to the amorphous region at the surfaces of crystals (109). Permeation characteristics are very sensitive to these transitions as well as the usual environmental parameters (110). Water molecules trapped in the amorphous regions are monomeric, not associated and clustered as in the liquid state (111).

The crystalline content in homopolymer PVDF samples that solidify quickly from the molten state is typically near 50%, increasing with time to higher levels approaching as a maximum 70%, again dependent upon the method of preparation and finishing. Because of the high crystallinity, the hardness or resistance to indentation of solid PVDF samples is retained up to within 10–15°C of the softening and melting transition region. Copolymers of VDF show lower levels of crystallinity (25–40%) depending upon the level of the comonomer and the method of preparation.

Unlike most crystalline polymers, PVDF exhibits thermodynamic compatibility with other polymers (112). Blends of PVDF and poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA), are miscible over a wide range of compositions (113–115). A variety of analytical techniques indicates specific hydrogen bonding between the oxygen of the carbonyl group and the acidic hydrogens along the PVDF chain (116). The same phenomenon explains the types of effective solvents for PVDF: cyclohexanone, dimethylsulfoxide, dimethylacetamide, phosphate esters, and other liquids with carbonyl functionality. Generally, the morphology of the polymer blends becomes even more complex than for the homopolymer PVDF because the polar or hydrogen-bonding interactions are not strong enough to overcome the strong thermodynamic driving force for PVDF crystallization. Studies indicate that the beta PVDF chain conformation develops in blends with acrylic polymers (116,117). Recently, blends with polymers containing imide moieties have been claimed (118). Ternary blends of PMMA, poly(vinyl acetate), and PVDF have been studied as a completely miscible system (119). Addition of 10–30 wt% PMMA improves the transparency of the PVDF films or coatings in the uv–visible spectrum. The relationship between the optical transmission and compatibility of PVDF/PMMA blends is reported (120); in general, films of the blends with at least 15 wt% PMMA are very transparent (>90% transmissivity).

Fabrication and Processing

PVDF is available commercially in a wide range of melt flow rates and with various additives to enhance processing or end use properties. A variety of forms are available—latex and fine powders from emulsion processes and granules from either suspension or emulsion processes.

In melting processes, it is essential to consider the full range of shear rate characteristics of the polymer. Moreover, polymerization techniques have been developed which make different versions of the same composition and polymerization ingredients behave rheologically differently. The rheological characteristics specified for a given commercial PVDF grade should be a consideration in developing a melt-based process to produce parts. Figure 2 shows the different shear

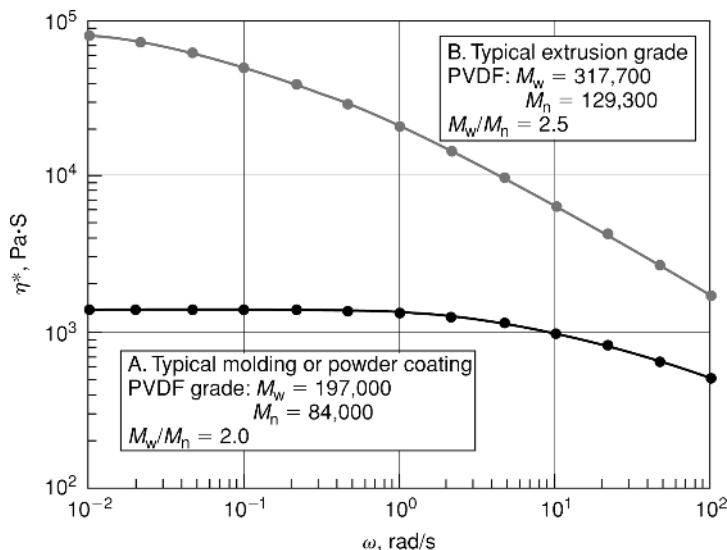


Fig. 2. Rheological profiles for two commercial PVDF grades. The melt rheology converges at high shear rates above 100 rad/s.

behavior of two homopolymer PVDF samples prepared by polymerization with different recipes. Hence, a process such as fusion of powders to a contiguous film requires Newtonian flow at zero shear conditions (curve A), which is achieved by a narrow molecular weight distribution and low molecular weight mass. A high speed extrusion generally would proceed with less surface fracture or melt instabilities given a broad molecular weight distribution or shear-thinning melt, which is sample B, having a high molecular weight mass.

Both homopolymers and copolymers may be shaped from the molten state without extrusion aids or thermal stabilizers. A broad operating window exists for melt processing between the points when crystallites begin to melt and the onset of thermal decomposition. Figure 3 superimposes the thermal gravimetric analysis (tga) curve and the differential scanning calorimeter (dsc) graph for the melting phenomenon. Conventional equipment is used in processing molten PVDF. Longevity of equipment can be extended with special alloys on surfaces that contact the melt, but usually are not necessary.

All the common extrusion and molding techniques can be used to process PVDF into shapes. Typical molding temperatures in the cylinder and nozzle are 180–240°C for injection types, and for molds are 50–90°C. As a crystalline polymer, it shows relatively high mold shrinkage of about 3%, reflecting the high degree of crystallization and the difference between the solid and molten densities as mentioned earlier. In most cases, it is prudent to develop appropriate post-forming annealing cycles, typically 15°C or more above the crystallization temperature (Table 3), to stabilize the parts. Hence, the design of molds requires careful considerations of final part tolerances before cutting metal.

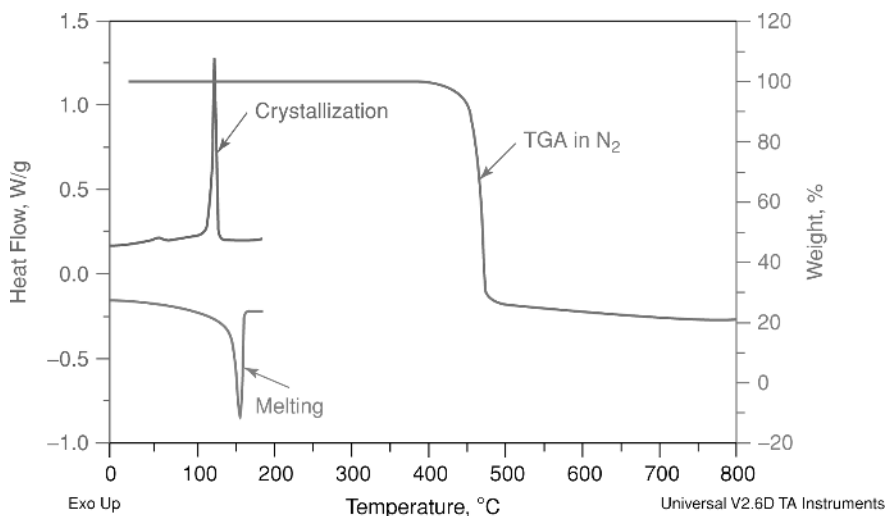


Fig. 3. Thermal gravimetric analysis and differential scanning calorimetry of a PVDF homopolymer.

PVDF is not hazardous under typical melt processing conditions. At temperatures approaching 300°C, the onset of a thermal degradation will be evident as a darkening of the resin. This discoloration arises from the dehydrofluorination reaction forming the conjugated polyene structures that absorb strongly in the visible spectrum. It is helpful, in fact, as a very sensitive indicator of overheating. Immediate remedial action should be taken to reduce the heat. At temperatures well above 300°C and approaching 350°C, thermal decomposition accelerates, leading to release of hydrogen fluoride. The tga curve (Fig. 3) shows that the decomposition is essentially quantitative with respect to carbonaceous residue and hydrogen fluoride evolution at about 400°C.

Before ingredients are added to PVDF to make compounds, a thorough laboratory study should be conducted in properly vented ovens at temperatures that might be encountered in the range of operating conditions. Certain additives such as titanates and silicates catalyze the thermal decomposition of molten PVDF at temperatures lower than typical for the natural resin, leading to dangerously high pressures in the equipment because of by-product gases. Generally, metal oxides catalyze degradation at high processing temperatures, eg, the oxides of titanium, manganese, and iron. Resin producers should be consulted for melt processing recommendations whenever additives are utilized in compounds. Frequently, the compounds include an acid-scavenging agent like zinc or calcium oxide to react with any hydrogen fluoride that might form during processing.

Coextrusion and lamination processes have been described extensively in the patent literature. The technology usually involves multilayer structures utilizing, as an adhesive layer, a compound of PVDF with another material, which provides the bonding to the substrate. In this way, the full benefits of a thin film of PVDF may be realized (121). Another approach using acrylic alloys with PVDF

sometimes achieves adherence to various substrates without the “tie layer” necessary for the pure PVDF film (122). The full breadth of options available by these technologies to protect surfaces with weatherable PVDF surfaces has been reviewed (123). Surface PVDF layers on polyolefins has been a particular technology of interest with respect to suitable finishes in cost effective parts for exterior automotive and agricultural equipment applications (124).

Powder grades usually are used whenever compounds are prepared in order to achieve homogeneity of the blends. Latex grades are utilized in some applications where it is possible to dry and fuse the material under conditions producing a coating upon the substrate, typically fabrics.

Solid PVDF parts may be joined by various fusion methods; the manufacturers should be consulted for recommendations. Fusion methods are preferred over solvent joints because the strength is much greater and for the ease in preparation. Vibration welding has been practiced. Because of the high dielectric loss, ie absorption of microwave electromagnetic radiation, rf-induction heating methods have been used to soften or melt PVDF parts. Welds may be particularly susceptible to stress cracking in strongly basic solutions where discoloration develops as a result of dehydrofluorination (7,8).

Economic Aspects

The extensive use of PVDF has developed in spite of the relatively high price and specific gravity compared to the commodity nonfluoroplastic polymers and the widely known thermoplastic engineering resins. Compared to all other common fluoropolymers, PVDF is the least expensive on a volume basis. Over the last decade the market pricing of standard PVDF grades has remained remarkably constant around \$14–15/kg. See www.plasticstechnology.com for updated pricing comparisons.

Health and Safety Factors

PVDF is nontoxic, odorless, and has no taste. Extraction testing has led to a listing with the FDA as being suited to single use contact with food (125); this applies to both homopolymer and copolymers with low content of HFP (<20 wt%). Various manufacturers have qualified specific grades with appropriate agencies and standards organizations for a variety of applications including potable water systems, home construction, medical applications, food contact, and packaging. Some of the agencies or standards involved are the U.S. Department of Agriculture, 3A Sanitary Standards, Food & Drug Administration, National Sanitation Foundation, U.S. *Pharmacopeia* USP Class 6, and others. See the producers websites for specific applications having the appropriate approvals.

PVDF powders are not explosive, but the MSDS guidelines for personal protective equipment should be followed. The powder is not removed readily by dry cleaning; it should be brushed from dark clothing. Storage of large quantities of PVDF should adhere to local regulations regarding possible hazards in fire environments.

Uses

The major applications of PVDF are summarized in Table 4. Since the 1996 version of this encyclopedia series (3), an increasing interest has developed in the use of PVDF as a binder and polymeric separator in lithium ion batteries. The literature since 1998 also has numerous references to the use of PVDF in fuel cells, eg, in membranes (102) and electrodes (126); it is a technology anticipated to become a significant factor in electrical vehicles before 2010. These two technology areas, both of which reflect the electrochemical stability and chemical resistance attributes of PVDF, may lead to major applications for PVDF. In a related application area, the use of PVDF films for electrostatic capacitors is being investigated because it has a very high DC current breakdown voltage (770 MV/m) and a large maximum energy density capability (28.9 J/cm). Both attributes are related to the very high dielectric constant (Table 3) (103). Note that some PVDF grades are more suited to this application by virtue of purity than others are because ionic impurities lead to dielectric breakdown at relatively low voltages.

Several Japanese patent applications since 1992 discuss the processing technology necessary to manufacture monofilaments for fishing lines and nets or other monofilament applications, which must have extremely high tensile strength and knot strength (127). It is claimed that PVDF monofilaments are not visible to the fish in seawater (refractive index ≈ 1.31 compared to 1.42 for homopolymer PVDF).

Since the original Timmerman patent in 1964 (128) on the radiation response of PVDF, the use of PVDF in wire and cable applications has increased dramatically with electron beam irradiation as the key process step to cross-link the PVDF compounds for higher temperature capability (93,94). In general, the copolymers cross-link more efficiently than homopolymer grades. A certain PVDF homopolymer, which is polymerized at high temperatures with organic peroxides, seems to be an exception among the various homopolymer grades. Presumably, because of the particular polymerization process, this resin has been used as insulation on signal wiring since the late 1970s; it can be extruded at very high rates and cross-links more readily under ebeam irradiation than other homopolymer grades. PVDF polymers cannot be considered a generic grouping like polyethylene, which according to density or polymerization catalyst have essentially the same properties. PVDF properties and suitability for any given application are a sensitive function of the polymerization and isolation methods of the polymer, which differ for each producer.

Table 3 indicates the excellent radiation resistance to 61 Mev beta emissions from cobalt-60. A process to etch "tracks" of high energy, heavy nuclei in PVDF films has been developed in order to make nuclear track microfilters (129).

Another recent advance in PVDF technology involves coating applications using the acrylic-fluoropolymer lattices which are produced by sequential polymerizations (see as given earlier). Initial reports indicate improved paint properties than heretofore produced by mixing and blending techniques (130).

As space exploration, development of speciality military and oceanic equipment, and advances in telecommunication equipment and connection systems

evolve during the next millennium, the use of PVDF will expand because of its unique set of properties and useful functions in various designs. In addition, the ease of processing by a variety of techniques into complex shapes and relatively simple and straightforward fabrication methods will be significant factors in choosing PVDF for these future applications.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Vinylidene Fluoride Polymers” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 14, pp. 600–610, by J. Dohany, A. A. Dukert, and S. S. Preston II, Pennwalt Corp.; in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 532–548, by J. E. Dohany and J. S. Humphrey, Pennwalt Corp.; in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 4, pp. 510–533, by J. S. Humphrey and R. Amin-Sanayei, Atofina Chemicals Inc.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. J. E. Dohany in R. B. Seymour and G. S. Kirshenbaum, eds., *High Performance Polymers: Their Origin and Development*, Elsevier Science Publishing Co., New York, 1986, p. 287.
2. C. K. Brennen, in *Fluoropolymer 2000, Conference Sponsored by the ACS Division of Polymer Chemistry, Oct. 15–18, 2000*.
3. J. E. Dohany, in J. I. Kroschwitz, ed., *Encyclopedia of Chemical Technology*, 4th ed., Vol. 11, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1994 p. 694.
4. B.-J. Jungnickel, *Polymeric Materials Encyclopedia*, CRC Press, New York, Vol. 11, 1996 pp. 7115–7127.
5. R. Gregório Jr. and co-workers, Ref. 4, pp. 7128–7138.
6. H. A. Nalwa, Inc., *Ferroelectric Polymers (Chemistry, Physics, and Applications)*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1995.
7. P. Hinksman, D. H. Isaac, and P. Morrissey, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **68**(2), 299–305 (2000).
8. P. Maccone, G. Brianti, and V. Arcella, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **40**(3), 761–767 (2000).
9. G. J. Ross and co-workers, *Polymer* **41**(5), 1685–1696 (2000).
10. U.S. Pat. 3178399 (Apr. 13, 1965), E. S. Lo (to 3M Co.).
11. Eur. Pat. Appl. 456019 (Nov. 13, 1991), L. A. Barber (to Elf Atochem North America, Inc.).
12. U.S. Pat. 4851479 (July 25, 1989), J. Blaise and P. Kappler (to Elf Atochem SA).
13. U.S. Pat. 4472557 (Sept. 18, 1984), C. Kawashima and T. Yasumura (to Central Glass Co., Ltd.).
14. Brit. Pat. 827308 (Feb. 3, 1960) (to 3M Co.).
15. B. Ameduri and B. Boutevin, *Organofluorine Chemistry: Fluorinated Alkenes and Reactive Intermediates*, Springer, Berlin, 1997, pp. 165–233; *Top. Curr. Chem.* Vol. **192**,
16. B. Ameduri and B. Boutevin, *J. Fluorine Chem.* **104**, P53–62 (2000)
17. B. Ameduri and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **32**, 4544–4550 (1999).
18. Eur. Pat. Appl. EP 751157 B1 (July 14, 1999), H. Ikashio, K. Horie, and F. Suzuki (to Kureha KKKK).
19. U.S. Pat. 4076929 (Feb. 29, 1978), J. Dohany (to Pennwalt Corp.).
20. U.S. Pat. 4128517 (Dec. 5, 1978), N. Kydonieus (to Pennwalt Corp.).
21. U.S. Pat. 4360652 (Nov. 23, 1982), J. Dohany (to Pennwalt Corp.).
22. U.S. Pat. 4569978 (Feb. 11, 1986), L. Barber (to Pennwalt Corp.).

23. World Pat. 9838242 (Aug. 3, 1998), R. Wille and M. Burchill (to Elf Atochem North America, Inc.).
24. Eur. Pat. Appl. 456019 (Nov. 13, 1991), L. Barber (to Atochem North America, Inc.).
25. D. A. Seiler, in J. Scheirs, ed., *Modern Fluoropolymers*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1997, p. 487.
26. G. Hougham, K. Johns, P. E. Cassidy, and T. Davidson, *Fluoropolymers: Synthesis and Properties*, Plenum Press, New York, 1999.
27. C. Tournut, in J. Scheirs, ed., *Modern Fluoropolymers*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1997, p. 577.
28. World Pat. WO 9838687 (Sept. 3, 1998), R. A. Wille and M. T. Burchill (to Elf Atochem North America, Inc.).
29. S. Russo and co-workers, *Polymer* **34**, 4777 (1993).
30. M. Gorklitz and co-workers, *Angew. Makromol. Chem.* **29/30**, 137 (1973).
31. K. Tashiro, in H. Nalwa, ed., *Ferroelectric Polymers (Chemistry, Physics, and Applications)*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1995, pp. 97–99.
32. P. Maccone, G. Brinati, and V. Arcella, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **40**, 761–767 (2000).
33. T. F. McCarthy and co-workers, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **70**, 2211–2225 (1998).
34. P. Bonardelli, G. Moggi, and S. Russo, *Makromol. Chem. Suppl.* **1011**, 11–23 (1985).
35. World Pat. 9717381 (June 15, 1997), T. F. McCarthy, Y. Chen, and E. J. Raional (to Allied Signal Inc.).
36. World Pat. 9702300 (July 23, 1997), W. B. Farnham and co-workers (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours and Co., Inc.).
37. Eur. Pat. 722882 (May 22, 1996), J. Abusleme and A. Chittofrati (to Ausimont S.P.A., Italy).
38. Eur. Pat. Appl. 816397 (Jan. 7, 1998), G. Brinati, P. Lazzari, and V. Arcella (to Ausimont S.P.A.).
39. Eur. Pat. 570762 (Nov. 24, 1993), V. Arcella and co-workers (to Ausimont S.P.A.).
40. E. Giannetti, A. Chittofrati, and A. Sanguineti, *Chim. Ind. (Milan)* **79**, 611–618 (1997).
41. Eur. Pat. 526216 (Feb. 3, 1993), H. Wakamori, F. Suzuki, and K. Horie (to Kureha Chemical Industry Co., Ltd.).
42. Eur. Pat. 423097 (April 17, 1991), Lasson (to Solvay et Cie.).
43. Eur. Pat. 417585 (Oct. 20, 1991), Lasson (to Solvay et Cie.).
44. Jpn. Pat. 87286707 (Nov. 12, 1987), K. Ihara, Y. Noda, and T. Amano (to Daikin Industries, Ltd.).
45. Eur. Pat. 215710 (Mar. 25, 1987), J. Blaise (to ATO CHEM SA).
46. Fr. Pat. 2542319 (Apr. 14, 1984), J. Dumoulin (to Solvay et Cie.).
47. Eur. Pat. 695766 (June 7, 1996), J. Abusleme, P.A. Guarda, and P.R. De (to Ausimont S.P.A.).
48. World Pat. 9921921 (May 6, 1999), N. Tsuda, and co-workers (to Daikin Industries, Ltd.).
49. World Pat. 9903900 (Jan. 28, 1999), S. Gaboury and X. F. Drujon (to Elf Atochem North America, Inc.).
50. Jpn. Pat. 08170045 (July 2, 1996), K. Nishiwaki, T. Shimizu, and M. Kato (to Japan Synthetic Rubber Co. Ltd.).
51. Eur. Pat. 360575 (Mar. 28, 1990), M. Kato and co-workers (to Japan Synthetic Rubber Co., Ltd.).
52. Ger. Pat. 2952457 (July 3, 1980), K. Kido, F. Suzuki, and K. Kushida (to Kureha Chemical Industry Co., Ltd.).
53. U.S Pat. 4141873 (Feb. 27, 1982), J. Dohany (to Pennwalt Corp.).

54. World Pat. 0047641 (Aug. 17, 2000), H. Saito and co-workers (to Daikin Industries, Ltd.).
55. Ger. Pat. 1806427 (May 16, 1969), D. P. Carlson (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc.).
56. World Pat. 9948937 (Sept. 30, 1999), R. Kruger, G. Heilig, and C. Sommerfeld (to Bayer Aktiengesellschaft).
57. Eur. Pat. 964009 (Dec. 15, 1999), P. D. Brothers (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co. Inc.).
58. P. A. Charpentier and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **32**, 5973–5975 (1999).
59. B. J. Briscoe and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **36**, 2435–2447 (1998).
60. C. A. Mertdogan, T. P. DiNoia, and M. A. McHugh, *Macromolecules* **30**, 7511–7515 (1997).
61. World Pat. 9628477 (Sept. 19, 1996), J. M. DeSimone and T. Romack (to University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill).
62. U.S. Pat. 5674957 (Oct. 7, 1997), J. M. Desimone and T. Romack, (to University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill).
63. B. Ameduri and co-workers, *Polym. Prepr. (Am. Chem. Soc., Div. Polym. Chem.)* **39**, 816–817 (1998).
64. Eur. Pat. 403915 (Dec. 27, 1990), J. Kammermaier and G. Rittmayer (to Siemens AG).
65. U.S. Pat. 4438247 (Mar. 20, 1984), R. E. Cais (to AT&T Technology).
66. R. E. Cais and J. M. Kometani, *Macromolecules* **17**, 1887 (1984).
67. Eur. Pat. Appl. EP 655468 (May 31, 1995), V. Arcella and co-workers (to Ausimont S.P.A.).
68. P. E. Bretz, R. W. Hertzberg, and J. A. Manson, *Polymer* **22**, 1272–1278 (1981).
69. S. Castagnet, J.-L. Gacougnolle and P. Dang, *Mater. Sci. Eng. A* **276**(1/2), 152–159 (2000).
70. S. M. Jo and co-workers *Polymer (Korea)* **23**, 800–808 (1999)
71. A. J. Lovinger, *Macromolecules* **15**, 40 (1982).
72. P. Herman and co-workers, *Polymer* **38**(7), 1677–1683 (1997).
73. R. Gregorio and R. C. Capitaio, *J. Mater. Sci.* **35**, 299–306 (2000).
74. L. Judovits and S. M. Dounce, in *57th Annu. Tech. Conf.—Soc. Plast. Eng.*, Vol. 2, 1999, pp. 2334–2339.
75. K. Nakagawa and Y. Ishida, *Kolloid Z. Z. Polym.* **251**, 103 (1973).
76. R. Hasagawa and co-workers, *Polym. J.* **3**, 600 (1972).
77. N. Mekhilef, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **80**, 230–241 (2001).
78. R. A. Iezzi, *Modern Fluoropolymers*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1997, 271–299.
79. J. Scheirs, S. Burks, and A. Locaspi, *Trends Polym. Sci.* **3**(3), 74–81 (1995).
80. K. Kawanishi, *Hyomen Gijutsu* **48**(8), 811–814 (1997).
81. J. L. Perillion and E. J. Bartoszek, *Eur. Coatings J.* 277–283 (Apr. 1995).
82. U.S. Pat. 5739202 (Apr. 14, 1998), R. L. Pecsok (to Pennwalt Corp.).
83. U.S. Pat. 6063855 (May 16, 2000), R. L. Pecsok and J. E. Dohany (to Pennwalt Corp.).
84. Jpn. Pat. 09193237 A2 (July 29, 1997), M. Hattori, H. Yamada, and I. Ishii (to Mitsubishi Chemical Ind. Ltd.).
85. World Pat. WO 9640449 (Dec. 19, 1996), M. D. Flynn and K. Truog (to Avery Dennison Corp.).
86. G. A. Glein, in *Semicond. Pure Water Chem. Conf., 15th (UPW & Chemical Proceedings), Balazs Analytical Laboratory, 1996*, pp. 125–136.
87. P. Hinksman, D. H. Isaac, and P. Morrissey, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **68**, 299–305 (2000).
88. F. Dawans, J. Jarrin, T. Lefevre, and M. Pelisson, in *Proceedings of 1986 Off-shore Technology Conference, Paper No.: OTC-5231, Houston, Tex. May 1986; API*

Recommended Practice 17B: Recommended Practice for Flexible Pipe, 2nd ed., Section 6.2.2, "Polymer Materials," American Petroleum Institute, Washington, D.C., 1998.

89. T. H. Meltzer, *Pharm. Technol.* **21**(3), 90–98 (1997).
90. D. Knight, *Chem. Eng.* **104**(4), 151 (1997).
91. Eur. Pat. Appl. EP 673762 A2 (Sept. 27, 1995), S. Roeber, H. Jadamus, and H. Ries (to Hüls Aktiengesellschaft).
92. EP 729830 (Sept. 4 1996), S. Roeber and H. Ries (to Hüls Aktiengesellschaft).
93. B. J. Lyons, in J. Scheirs, ed., *Modern Fluoropolymers*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1997, p. 335.
94. WO 2000017889 A1 (Mar. 30, 2000), G. H. Rodway (to Raychem Ltd.).
95. U.S. Pat. 6013688 (Jan. 11, 2000), M. M. Pacheco and J. F. Pacheco (to Corning Costar Corp.).
96. J. M. Crowley, C. Snelling, and D. Mashtare, *J. Imaging Sci. Technol.* **40**, 285–290 (1996).
97. JP 09146541 A2 (June 6, 1997), H. Ueba (to Kureha Gosen).
98. JP 10331033 (Dec. 15, 1998), Y. Yamamoto (to Furukawa Electric Co., Ltd.).
99. JP 2000017518 A2 (Jan. 18, 2000), T. Soga (to Mitsubishi Chemical Ind.).
100. U.S. Pat. 5540741 (July 30, 1996), A. Godz and co-workers (to Bell Communications Research, Inc.).
101. T. Nagatomo, C. Ichikawa, and O. Omoto, *J. Electrochem. Soc.* **134**, 305 (1987).
102. PSSA/PVDF Polymer Electrolyte Membranes for CH₃OH Fuel Cells, NASA Tech Briefs, June 1999, p. 54.
103. B. E. Conway, *Electrochemical Supercapacitors*, Kluwer Academic/Plenum Publishers, New York, 1999, p. 669.
104. M. Ishikawa, M. Morita, and Y. Matsuda, in *Proc.—Electrochem. Soc. 96-25 (Electrochemical Capacitors II)* 1997, pp. 325–335.
105. C. Guigou and C. R. Fuller, in *Proc. SPIE-Int. Soc. Opt. Eng. (Industrial and Commercial Applications of Smart Structures Technologies) 3044*, pp. 68–78 (1997).
106. K. E. Cais and N. J. Sloane, *Polymer* **24**, 179 (1983).
107. J. Datta and A. K. Nandi, *Polymer* **39**, 1921–1927 (1998).
108. A. Korzhenko, F. Beaume, and B. Ernst, in *Proceedings of the 28th North American Thermal Analysis Society*, Oct. 2000, pp. 184–191.
109. Z. Liu, P. Marechal, and R. Jerome, *Polymer* **38**(19), 4925–4929 (1997).
110. S. Lee and K. S. Knaebel, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **64**(3), 455–492 (1997).
111. H. Kusanagi, *Chem. Lett.* (7), 683–684 (1997).
112. D. R. Paul and J. W. Barlow, *J. Macromol. Sci., C: Rev. Macromol. Chem.* **18**, 109 (1980).
113. J. S. Noland and co-workers, *Adv. Chem. Ser.* **99**, 15 (1971).
114. J. Mijovic, H.-L. Luo, and C. D. Han, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **22**, 234 (1982).
115. H. Yoshida, *J. Therm. Anal.* **49**(1), 101–105 (1997).
116. K. J. Kim, Y. J. Cho, and Y. H. Ho, *Vib. Spectrosc.* **9**(2), 147–59 (1995).
117. N. Tsutsumi, M. Terao, and T. Kiyotsukuri, *Polymer* **34**(1), 90–4 (1993).
118. U.S. Pat. 5959022 (Sept. 9, 1999), S.-C. Lin and S. J. Burks (to Ausimont Inc.).
119. Q. Guo, *Eur. Polym. J.* **32**, 1409–1413 (1996).
120. H. Horibe and F. Baba, *Nippon Kagaku Kaishi* **2**, 115–120 (2000).
121. U.S. Pat. 4317860 (Mar. 2, 1982), A. Strassel (to Atochem).
122. J. S. Humphrey and B. Simkin, in *Society of Plastics Engineers Vinyl RETEC 97*, Oct. 15, 1997.
123. D. Silagy, P. Bussi, and G. Marot, *J. Fluorine Chem.* **104**(1), 79–86 (2000).
124. Jpn. Pat. 08336937 A2 (Dec. 24, 1996), T. Ogura and co-workers (to Japan Synthetic Rubber Co. Ltd.).

125. *PVDF homopolymer*: "Articles or component of articles intended for repeated use in contact with food", 21 CFR 177.2510; *VDF copolymers*: "Rubber articles intended for repeated use in food contact applications," 21 CFR 177.2600.
126. U.S. Pat. 5783325 (July 21, 1998), I. Cabasso, Y. Yuan, and X. Xu (to The Research Foundation of New York).
127. Jpn. Pat. 9291215 (Mar. 24, 1990), Nishikawa, H. Nakada, and T. Sato (to Toray K.K.); Jpn. Pat. 10052199 (Feb. 24 1998), Y. Nakano, S. Ohira, and T. Mizuno (to Kureha Chem. Co.); Jpn. Pat. 11012850 (Jan. 19, 1999), K. Amano and M. Okano (to Toray Monofilament Co.); Jpn. Pat. 2000192327 (July 11, 2000), K. Amano and co-workers (to Toray Monofilament Co.).
128. U.S. Pat. 3142629 (July 28, 1964), R. Timmerman (to Radiation Dynamics).
129. C. D. Zhao, P. Vater, and R. Brandt, *Nucl. Tracks Radiat. Meas.* **19**, 829–832 (1991).
130. R. Iezzi, S. Gaboury, and K. Wood, *Acrylic—Fluoropolymer Mixtures and Their Use in Coatings*, Elsevier Science S. A., Ireland, 2000, pp. 1–4, 53–58. *Progress in Organic Coatings*, Vol. **40**.

J. S. HUMPHREY
R. AMIN-SANAYEI
Atofina Chemicals Inc.

VISCOELASTICITY

Introduction: Perspectives on the Fundamentals of Polymer Viscoelasticity

Viscoelasticity is a phenomenon that has been known since the middle of the nineteenth century when workers such as Weber (1), the Kohlrausches (2), and others were interested in using natural fibers, such as silk, to hold needles in measuring devices such as ammeters. They found hysteretic and time-dependent effects that were difficult to explain fully and to characterize. Later, Boltzmann (3) developed his superposition principle and linear viscoelasticity began to have a formal framework for understanding the phenomenology of the inelastic effects observed earlier (4). While other early pioneers such as Andrade (5) and Zener (6) observed anelasticity or viscoelasticity in metals, the real impetus for understanding viscoelasticity came with the commercial development in the middle of the twentieth century of high molecular weight polymers. One reason for this is that polymers exhibit non-Newtonian behavior in the melt state, which is attributable to both elastic effects and shear-rate-dependent viscosity. This leads to important time and rate effects during the processing of polymers. In addition, once processed, polymers are generally used at less than 200 K from the glass-transition temperature. Hence, even in the "solid-like" state, polymeric materials exhibit time- and frequency-dependent mechanical (and other) properties that have been categorized as viscoelastic. In the current work, the linear and nonlinear viscoelastic responses of polymers from both phenomenological and molecular

views are surveyed. An overview of the viscoelastic behavior of polymers in solution, melt, glassy, and semicrystalline states is provided.

Material Functions—Linear Viscoelasticity. One of the most important aspects of both the phenomenological and the molecular theories of viscoelasticity is the ability to characterize the *material functions*. The material functions are the properties that allow one to relate the stress response to a strain (deformation) history and vice versa through a *constitutive* equation. In linear viscoelasticity theory, generally isotropic descriptions are dealt with; that is, the properties are the same in all directions. However, a material may be anisotropic and still have properties that vary with the direction of the test (7). Here only the isotropic case is considered and it is recognized that straight forward extensions can be made to the anisotropic case. In addition, only homogeneous materials, for which the properties are the same at all points within the material, only are discussed.

Stress and Strain Definitions. As remarked, the material functions relate the stress and strain responses of the material through a constitutive equation. For the elastic material, there is no time dependence and the relationships are relatively simple. In the case of linear viscoelasticity, equations that take into account the time history of the stresses or strains are required. First, stress and strain are defined.

The infinitesimal strain tensor is defined in various ways; here the notation of Timoshenko and Goodier (8) is adopted in terms of the displacements u_i of a material element and as depicted in Figure 1a.

$$\varepsilon_{ij} = \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j} + \frac{\partial u_j}{\partial x_i} \right) \quad (1)$$

and the full strain matrix in terms of the ε_{ij} is written as

$$\varepsilon_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} \varepsilon_{11} & \varepsilon_{12} & \varepsilon_{13} \\ \varepsilon_{21} & \varepsilon_{22} & \varepsilon_{23} \\ \varepsilon_{13} & \varepsilon_{23} & \varepsilon_{33} \end{bmatrix} \quad (2)$$

Similarly, the stress tensor can be defined in terms of the forces acting on the faces of an element and these are given by the following expression (see Fig. 1b):

$$\sigma_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12} & \sigma_{13} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_{22} & \sigma_{23} \\ \sigma_{13} & \sigma_{23} & \sigma_{33} \end{bmatrix} \quad (3)$$

Note that when $i \neq j$, it is common to write the shear strain $\gamma_{ij} = 2\varepsilon_{ij}$ and shear stress $\tau_{ij} = \sigma_{ij}$. In addition, $\gamma_{ij} = \gamma_{ji}$ and $\tau_{ij} = \tau_{ji}$.

Elastic Material Functions. The material functions that are used here for an isotropic, elastic material are the shear modulus G , the extensional modulus E , the bulk modulus K , and the Poisson's ratio ν . However, any two of these provides the full set of information needed to describe such a material, as they are

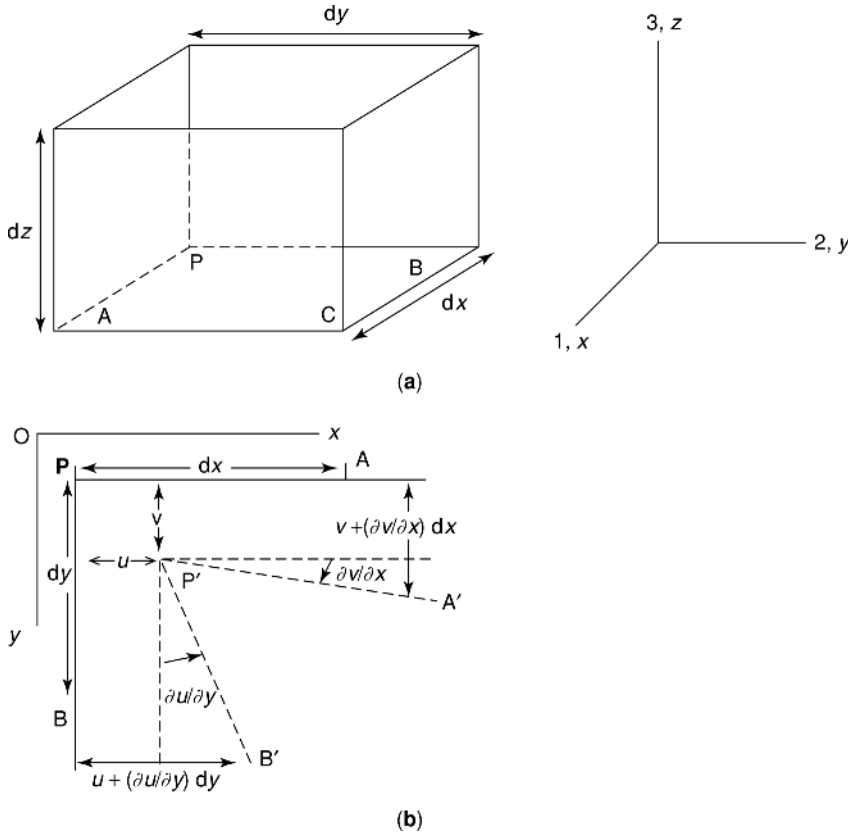


Fig. 1. (a) Three-dimensional depiction of elementary material point (dx, dy, dz) and the two-dimensional sketch of the displacements in the x and y directions of the cube that define the strains. The displacement of the point P has components u, v, w , and the displacement in the x direction of a nearby point A is $u + \partial u/\partial x$; and the increase in length of PA due to a deformation would be $(\partial u/\partial x) dx$, making the unit elongation in the x direction $\partial u/\partial x$. Similarly, unit elongations in the y and z directions would be given by $\partial v/\partial y$ and $\partial w/\partial z$. After Timoshenko (8). (b) Considering the distortions of the angular elements PA and PB in this two-dimensional depiction, the displacements of the point A in the y direction and of B in the x direction are given by $v + (\partial v/\partial x) dx$ and $u + (\partial u/\partial y) dy$, respectively. The small angles in the figure (distortion of the $P'B'$ and $P'A'$ relative to PB and PA) are given by $\partial v/\partial x$ and $\partial u/\partial y$. Hence, it is seen that the original right angle APB distorts to $A'P'B'$ by an amount $(\partial v/\partial x + \partial u/\partial y)$, which is the shearing strain between the planes xz and yz . After Timoshenko (8). (c) Representation of the components of stress acting on an elementary cube. After Timoshenko (8).

not all independent. For simple deformations, the definitions of these moduli are

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Extensional modulus: } E &= \frac{\sigma_{11}}{\epsilon_{11}} \\ \text{Bulk modulus: } K &= \frac{P}{\epsilon_v} \quad \text{where } P = \frac{\sigma_{11} + \sigma_{22} + \sigma_{33}}{3} \quad \text{and } \epsilon_v = \epsilon_{11} + \epsilon_{22} + \epsilon_{33} \\ \text{Poisson's ratio: } \nu &= \frac{\epsilon_{11}}{\epsilon_{22}} \end{aligned} \tag{4}$$

And the relations between the moduli are

$$\begin{aligned} G &= \frac{E}{2(1 + \nu)} \\ K &= \frac{E}{(1 - 2\nu)} \\ E &= \frac{9KG}{3K + G} \end{aligned} \quad (5)$$

and one more constant referred to as the Lamé constant λ is defined as

$$\lambda = \frac{\nu E}{(1 + \nu)(1 - 2\nu)} \quad (6)$$

The ways in which the moduli are obtained through experimental measurements are discussed subsequently. Still working with an elastic material, one can now define the relationships between the stresses and the strains. In this case, this is the linear elastic constitutive relation:

$$\sigma_{ij} = \lambda \delta_{ij} \varepsilon_{kk} + 2G \varepsilon_{ij} \quad (7)$$

where δ_{ij} is the Kronecker delta. For simple geometries of deformation, such as those used in experiments, equation 7 can be simplified as

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Simple extension: } \sigma_{11} &= \lambda \varepsilon_{kk} + 2G \varepsilon_{11} = E \varepsilon_{11} \\ \text{Simple shear: } \sigma_{12} = \tau_{12} &= \lambda \varepsilon_{kk}(0) + 2G \varepsilon_{12} = G \gamma_{12} \end{aligned} \quad (8)$$

Hence, one can relate the stresses to any applied state of strain. Furthermore, the strains can be determined as functions of the applied stresses. Note that, in general, the theory of elasticity does not demand the development of compliance functions, which relate strains to stresses, as they are the inverse of the moduli. In the case of viscoelasticity, this is not so, and both modulus and compliance functions are developed in the next section.

The Viscoelastic Material Functions. In linear viscoelasticity, the moduli discussed for the elastic case can be recast as time- or frequency-dependent functions. The same is true for the compliance functions that are discussed here. For simplicity, consider the shear modulus G which becomes $G(t)$ or $G^*(\omega)$ in the case of the viscoelastic material. An important point here is that the viscoelastic modulus functions all exhibit time (frequency) dependence. Hence, one will have functions for $K(t)$ and $E(t)$ [or, eg, $G(t)$ and $\nu(t)$] and these are required in the case of a three-dimensional strain or stress field.

The general approach to discussing linear viscoelasticity comes from the Boltzmann superposition principle represented as a *convolution* integral. For the shear stress as a function of shear strain, one obtains

$$\tau_{12}(t) = \int_0^t G(t - t') \frac{d\gamma_{12}}{dt'} dt' \quad (9)$$

and for the strain as a function of the stress,

$$\gamma_{12}(t) = \int_0^t J(t-t') \frac{d\tau_{12}}{dt'} dt' \quad (10)$$

Here it is emphasized that the definition of the elastic compliance $J = 1/G$ is not valid for the viscoelastic compliance $J(t)$ used in equation 10. Rather it is the complex compliance $J^*(\omega) = 1/G^*(\omega)$. In addition, all the linear viscoelastic functions can be related one to the other. Full discussion of these relationships can be found in Ferry (9) and Tschoegl. (10).

As shown above, the material functions and the constitutive equation determine the relationships between the stresses and the applied deformations or vice versa. Hence, understandings of both the material functions and the form of the constitutive law are important to successful use of our current knowledge of the viscoelastic behavior of polymers. The material functions alone can give much insight into molecular viscoelasticity and the general time-dependent behavior of the material. Combined with the constitutive laws (eqs. 9 and 10), the material functions give a predictive capability of material performance in arbitrary loading histories. The next section first discusses these aspects of the material functions, using simple mechanical analogues that give some sense of viscoelastic behavior. This is followed by examples of the Boltzmann superposition represented in equations 9 and 10. Finally, the meaning of linear viscoelastic behavior is discussed as a potential means to gain insight into molecular behavior in polymers.

Mechanical Analogues.

The Maxwell Model. In the above development, discussion moves from elastic behavior to viscoelastic descriptions of material behavior. In a simple sense, viscoelasticity is the behavior exhibited by a material that has both viscous and elastic elements in its response to a deformation or load. In early days, this was often represented by elastic or viscous mechanical elements combined in different ways (9–12). The simplest models are two element models that contain a viscous element (dashpot) and an elastic element (spring). The dashpot is assumed to follow a Newtonian fluid constitutive law in which the stress is related directly to the strain rate by the following expression:

$$\tau_{12} = \eta_0 \dot{\gamma}_{12} \quad (11)$$

and the spring is assumed to be linearly elastic:

$$\tau_{12} = G\gamma_{12} \quad (12)$$

and when they are combined in series to form a *Maxwell* model the response is the combined response of the two elements. The Maxwell model is represented in the insert in Figure 2.

Now, imagine deforming the Maxwell model by applying a constant strain to it at a time $t = 0$. The deformation is held constant and the stress is monitored. Figure 2 shows the mechanical response of the Maxwell model to an applied deformation. The first (early time) response is that the “material” responds only elastically because the viscous damper initially behaves rigidly (at infinite rate

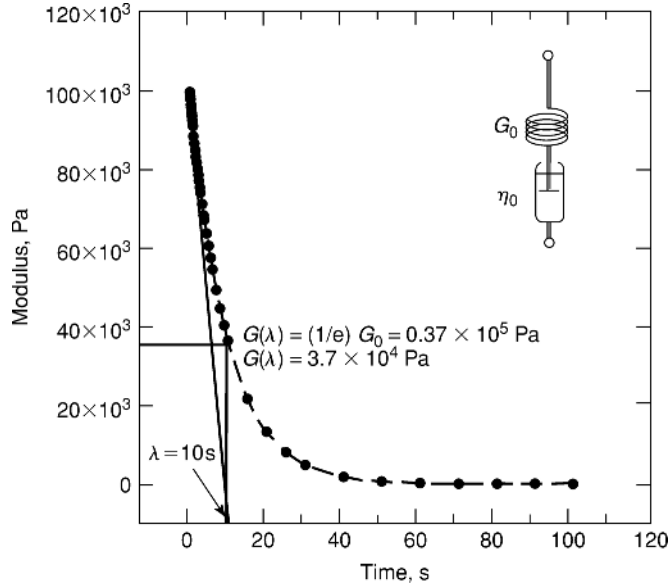


Fig. 2. Relaxation of the modulus in a stress relaxation experiment for a Maxwell element (insert). The construction shows two ways in which the relaxation time λ can be determined.

of strain). The total deformation of the element remains constant, but it redistributes itself between the spring and the dashpot. This results in *stress relaxation* that occurs exponentially with time:

$$G(t) = \frac{\tau_{12}(t)}{\gamma_{12}} = G e^{-t/\lambda} \quad (13)$$

And the reader is reminded that the stress is relaxing at constant strain. Furthermore, equation 13 allows one to introduce the concept of a relaxation time

$$\lambda = \frac{\eta_0}{G} \quad (14)$$

that is, the characteristic time for the stress in the Maxwell element to decay to $1/e$ of its initial value (see Fig. 2). (Note the use of the symbol λ as the relaxation time and not the Lamé constant given previously. Also, τ is often used as the symbol to represent the relaxation time, but τ is used here for the shear stress.)

The Kelvin–Voigt Model. The other two-element mechanical model for viscoelasticity is the Kelvin–Voigt model in which the spring and dashpot are in parallel. In this model, the deformation or *creep* response to the imposition of a constant load is illustrated. In this instance a constant load is applied at $t = 0$ and the deformation is monitored. The Kelvin–Voigt model and its response are illustrated in Figure 3. The material property of interest in this case is the *creep compliance* $J(t)$ and it is written as

$$J(t) = \frac{\gamma_{12}(t)}{\tau_{12}} = \frac{1}{G} (1 - e^{-t/\lambda}) \quad (15)$$

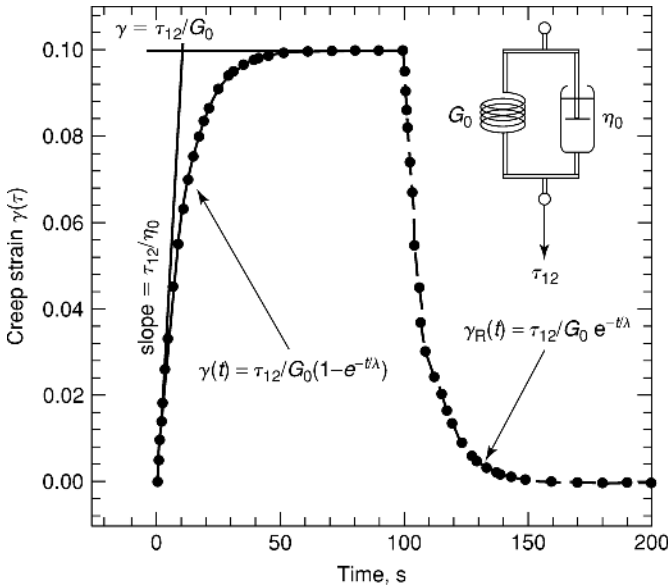


Fig. 3. Creep and recovery response for a Kelvin–Voigt model (insert).

And, now, the characteristic time λ is referred to as the *retardation time* because of the retarded elasticity of the material. That is, initially the load is carried by the viscous dashpot and then redistributes until, at long times, the load is carried fully by the elastic spring. Figure 3 shows the response to a loading history in which the load is applied for 100 s and then reduced to zero. Both the creep strain $\gamma(t)$ and the recoverable strain are depicted in the figure. The recoverable compliance would be obtained from the recoverable strain and the applied stress as $J_R(t) = \gamma_R(t)/\tau_{12}$, but only when the material has reached its equilibrium response is this a material property.

The Burgers Model. As a preview to the viscoelastic behavior of polymers, we next consider the four-element Burgers model that captures a “minimum” set of behaviors that is seen in polymeric materials and as discussed here (13). The insert in Figure 4 shows the Burgers model as a Maxwell model in series with a Kelvin–Voigt model. As shown in Figure 4, upon application of a constant stress τ_{12} for a time t_1 followed by its removal, the model captures the following aspects of polymer viscoelasticity:

- (1) “Instantaneous” elasticity or elastic recovery (spring element G_1)
- (2) Molecular “slip” (viscous element η_1)
- (3) “Entropic” or rubbery elasticity (spring G_2)
- (4) “Retarded” elasticity (Kelvin–Voigt element G_2 is retarded by η_2)

Polymers, as seen later, show more complex viscoelastic behaviors than does the Burgers model, but the essentials are in the Burgers model. The “instantaneous” elasticity can be thought of as the “glass-like” response; the molecular “slip” is the terminal response, as the long polymer molecules slide past each

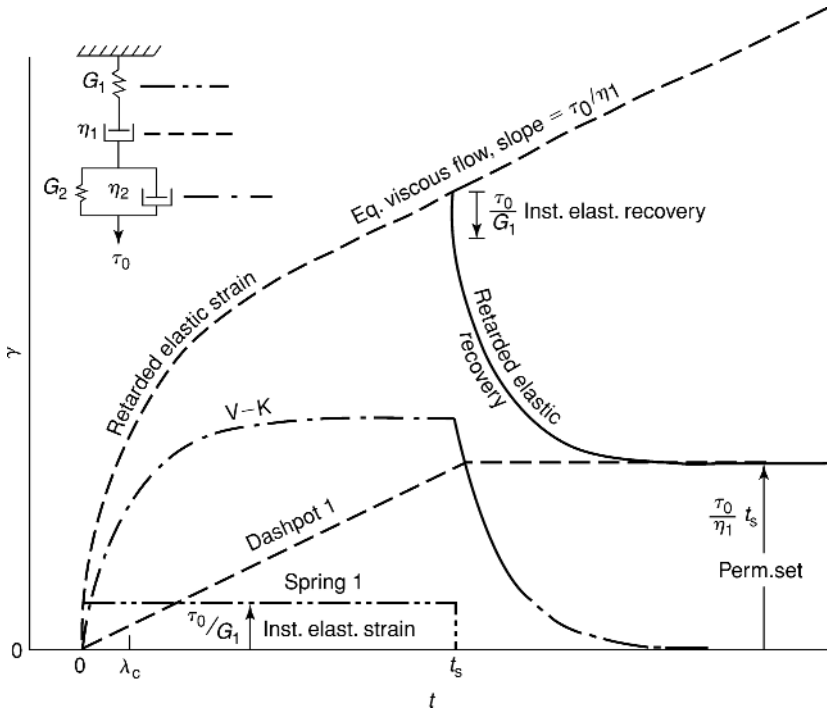


Fig. 4. Creep and recovery response for a Burgers model (insert), showing the four regions of “polymer-like” viscoelastic response as discussed in text. After Rosen (13), with permission.

other and disentangle; the entropic elasticity occurs because of the long chains being entangled like a three-dimensional network of “entropic springs”; and the retarded elasticity occurs because of the resistance of the polymer melt to the forces applied by the spring. The equation for the creep compliance of the Burgers model is

$$J(t) = \frac{1}{G_1} + \frac{1}{G_2}(1 - e^{-t/\lambda}) + \frac{t}{\eta_1} \tag{16}$$

where $\lambda = \eta_2/G_2$. Upon unloading, the *recoverable compliance* $J_R(t)$ is

$$J_R(t) = J(t) - \frac{t}{\eta} \tag{17}$$

Note that equation 17 is the general equation for the recoverable compliance regardless of the model. Figure 4 gives a simplified sense of what the various aspects of polymer viscoelastic behavior are, although the actual behavior is more complex.

General Models. Clearly, one can add up springs and dashpots in a great number of ways. It is common practice to use either a generalized Maxwell model or a generalized Kelvin–Voigt model. The generalized Maxwell model, which is

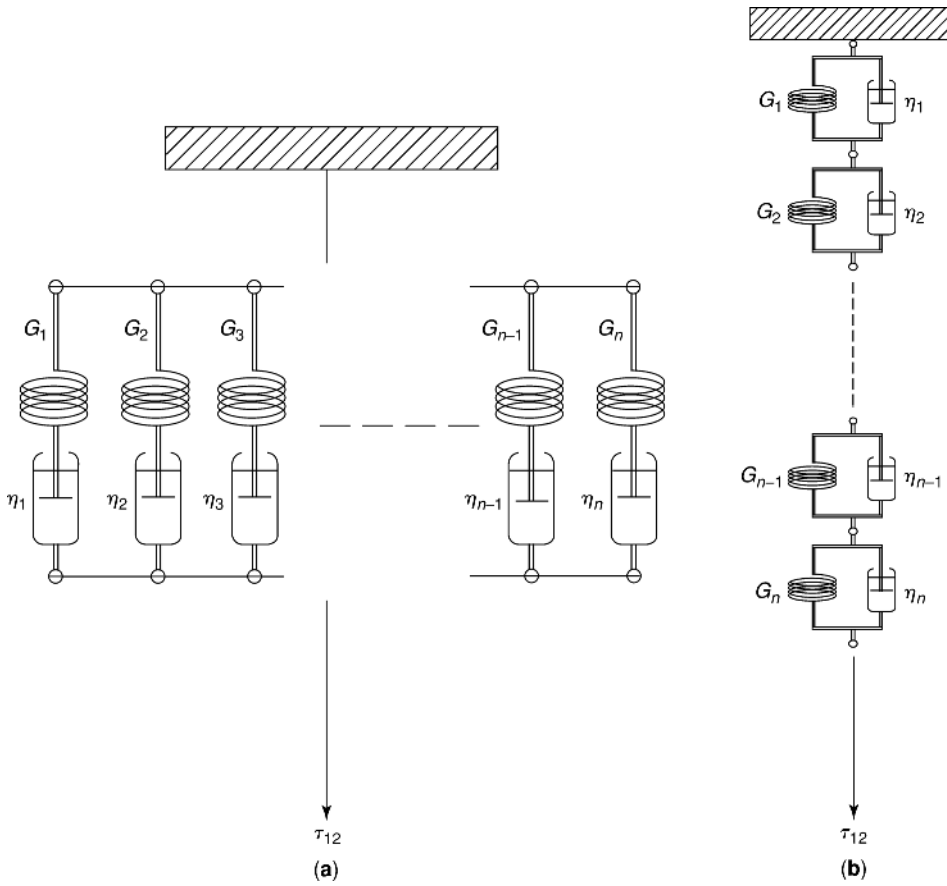


Fig. 5. (a) The generalized Maxwell model. (b) The generalized Kelvin–Voigt model.

simply a set of Maxwell elements in parallel, is shown in Figure 5a. The generalized Kelvin–Voigt model, which is a set of Kelvin–Voigt elements in series, is shown in Figure 5b. The choice of model is primarily a matter of convenience because it is possible to find a *conjugate* Maxwell model to any Kelvin–Voigt model and vice versa (10). However, the moduli are most easily described with the Maxwell model and the equations for these are

$$\begin{aligned}
 G(t) &= G_0 + \sum_{i=1}^N G_i e^{-t/\lambda_i} \\
 G'(\omega) &= G_0 + \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{G_i \omega^2 \lambda_i^2}{1 + \omega^2 \lambda_i^2} \\
 G''(\omega) &= \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{G_i \omega \lambda_i}{1 + \omega^2 \lambda_i^2}
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{18}$$

and the compliances are most easily described using the generalized Kelvin–Voigt model:

$$\begin{aligned}
 J(t) &= J_g + \sum_{i=1}^N J_i (1 - e^{-t/\lambda_i}) + \frac{t}{\eta_0} \\
 J'(\omega) &= J_g + \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{J_i \omega^2 \lambda_i^2}{1 + \omega^2 \lambda_i^2} \\
 J''(\omega) &= \sum_{i=1}^N \frac{J_i \omega \lambda_i}{1 + \omega^2 \lambda_i^2} + \frac{\eta_0}{\omega}
 \end{aligned} \tag{19}$$

The equation sets 18 and 19 provide a means of fitting experimental data to an arbitrary accuracy. It is important to remark, however, that the problem of actual fitting of data, while easier today than in the past because of the prevalence of high speed personal computers and commercial software, is nontrivial, and the reader who is interested in details of the treatments should refer to the appropriate literature (14–19).

Interrelationships among the Viscoelastic Material Functions. There is a continuing disagreement within the molecular viscoelasticity community about which of the above methods should be used to characterize a material (20). In fact, if one can obtain the zero shear rate viscosity and any of the other functions, these methods are all equivalent. The issue, however, revolves around the fact that some features that appear in the dynamic modulus disappear if the compliance is used as the function to represent the data and vice versa. Also, some measurements are more or less dominated by the viscosity contribution. As a result, some problems of misinterpretation of data could be averted if workers who prefer modulus representations would calculate the compliances. In addition, those who measure the compliance should calculate the moduli in order to provide the data in the format that is more common in the field because of the large number of commercial instruments that obtain dynamic moduli. The advent of modern software packages that make the interrelationships easily calculated makes this dispute seem to go away. The pathways to determine the different material functions, one from the other, are shown in Figure 6.

Boltzmann Superposition and Linear Behavior.

The Phenomenology of the Linear Theory of Viscoelasticity. One of the powers of the linear viscoelasticity theory is that it is predictive. The constitutive law that comes from Boltzmann superposition theory requires simply that the material functions discussed above be known for a given material. Then, for an arbitrary stress or deformation history, the material response can be obtained. In addition, the *elastic–viscoelastic correspondence principle* can be used so that boundary value problems such as beam bending, for which an elastic solution exists, can be solved for linear viscoelastic materials as well. Both of these subjects are treated in this section.

Boltzmann Superposition and the Constitutive Law for Linear Viscoelasticity. The underlying assumption of the Boltzmann superposition principle is

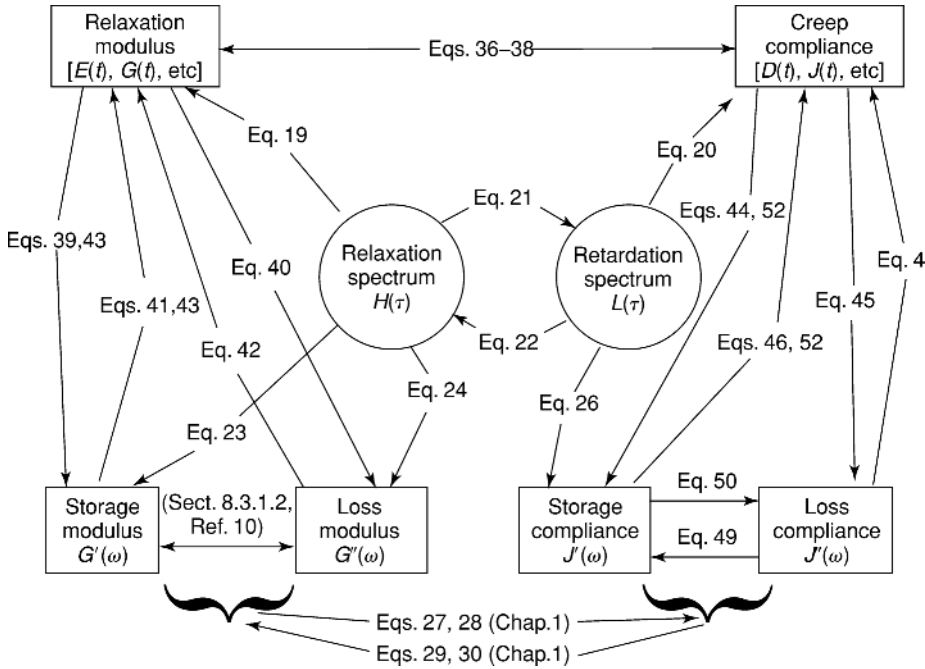


Fig. 6. Chart showing the paths to interrelate the linear viscoelastic material functions. Equation numbers refer to Chapter 3 of Ferry’s book (9) unless otherwise indicated. Determination of $G'(\omega)$ from $G''(\omega)$ and $J'(\omega)$ from $J''(\omega)$ and vice versa comes from the Kramer–Kronig relation and is discussed in Tschoegl (10).

that responses to loads or deformations applied to a material at different times are linearly additive. This set of assumptions leads to the constitutive laws of linear viscoelasticity theory which can be considered as a linear response theory. For discussion purposes, consider a Maxwell material that is subjected to a two-step deformation history. The history is such that a deformation $\gamma_1 = \Delta\gamma_1$ is applied at a time $t = 0$ and an additional deformation $\Delta\gamma_2$ is applied at a time t_1 so that $\gamma_2 = \gamma_1 + \Delta\gamma_2$. This can be carried on for as many steps as desired, as depicted in Figure 7a. The stress response to this deformation history is written as

$$\tau(t) = \sum_{i=1}^N \Delta\sigma_i(t - t'_i) = \sum_{i=1}^N \Delta\gamma_i G(t - t'_i) \tag{20a}$$

For $N = 2$

$$\tau(t) = \Delta\sigma_1(t - t'_1) + \Delta\sigma_2(t - t'_2) \tag{20b}$$

but $t'_1 = 0$ and $t'_2 = t_1$; therefore

$$\begin{aligned} \tau(t) &= \Delta\sigma_1(t) + \Delta\sigma_2(t - t_1) = \Delta\gamma_1 G(t) + \Delta\gamma_2 G(t - t_1) \\ &= \gamma_1 G(t) + (\gamma_2 - \gamma_1)G(t - t_1) \end{aligned} \tag{20c}$$

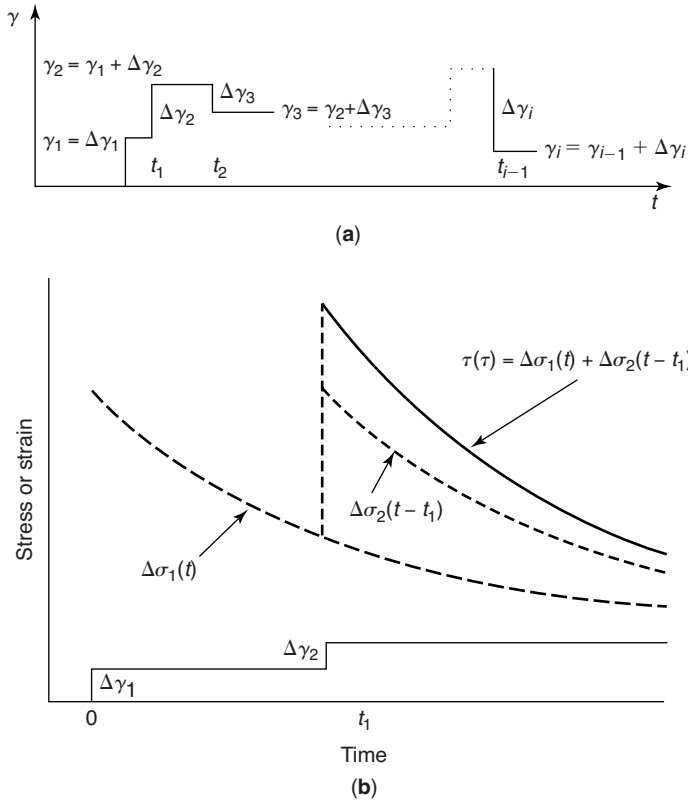


Fig. 7. (a) General step-strain deformation history relevant to Boltzmann-type linear superposition. (b) Schematic of stress additivity of responses for a Maxwell model in a two-step strain history (see text for discussion).

Figure 7b illustrates the way in which the responses add for a two-step history in which each step has the same magnitude. Equation 20a is the general form and is the discrete form of the linear superposition principle cast as a simple shear. It shows the simple linear additivity of the responses. A similar equation could be written for the strain response in terms of the stresses for a creep history. The equations can easily be generalized to include the full range of strains and stresses discussed in the next section. Furthermore, the responses can be written in terms of *convolution integrals*:

$$\tau(t) = \int_0^t G(t-t') \frac{d\gamma}{dt'} dt' \tag{9}$$

$$\gamma(t) = \int_0^t J(t-t') \frac{d\tau}{dt'} dt' \tag{10}$$

Equations 9 and 10 can be solved for arbitrary strain (stress) histories to obtain the material stress (strain) response. Solution for the step-deformations requires use of the “unit Heaviside function” and is discussed in detail by

Tschoegl (10) and by Findley, Onaran and co-workers. (21) Wineman and Rajagopal (22) deal with the step-strains, using Riemann–Stieltjes integrals. Other histories are more directly solvable. Also, in the linear theory the limits on the integral can be written from 0 to t rather than from $-\infty$ to t (9,10,21,22).

The final point of the current section is to illustrate that linear viscoelasticity can give rise to what looks like a “nonlinear” response. The typical example comes for a constant rate of deformation experiment. If a generalized Maxwell model is assumed, the material can be subjected to a constant rate of strain and a stress–strain curve can be plotted. As shown in Figure 8a, even though the theory behind equations 20a (or eqs. 9 and 10) is completely linear, one observes that the stress–strain response appears to be nonlinear. This is an illustration of the practicality of understanding viscoelasticity and of understanding the complex time-dependent behavior of polymeric materials. In addition, the linearity of the responses is illustrated in Figure 8b, where all the curves from Figure 8a collapse to a single curve when $\tau/(d\gamma/dt)$ vs $\gamma/(d\gamma/dt)$, (22) is plotted.

Elastic–Viscoelastic Correspondence Principle. One of the difficulties in working with time-dependent materials is solving for their response in actual conditions. For example, a composite aircraft wing might be considered as a viscoelastic beam subjected to bending moments (see Fig. 9). The problem can be solved by applying the viscoelastic constitutive equations to the problem, but in many instances this approach is tedious. Fortunately, it was shown that many classes of viscoelastic boundary-value problems can be solved if the elastic solution is known (23). This is referred to as the *elastic–viscoelastic correspondence principle*. One substitutes the Laplace transform of the viscoelastic material functions for their elastic counterparts into the elastic solution. Inversion of the Laplace transform gives the time-dependent response of the material. In the case of the pure bending of the beam just mentioned, the elastic solution for the displacements, stresses, and deflection can be written as follows (21):

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Strain: } \quad \varepsilon(t) &= -\frac{M(t)y}{E_e I} \\ \text{Stress: } \quad \sigma(t) &= -\frac{M(t)y}{I} \\ \text{Deflection: } \quad \frac{d^2 w(x,t)}{dx^2} &= \frac{M(t)}{E_e I} \end{aligned} \quad (21)$$

where $M(t)$ is the applied moment, y is the beam half thickness, I is the moment of inertia of the beam, and E_e is the elastic modulus. In the case of the viscoelastic beam, we first take the Laplace transform for the time-varying parameters and then substitute $s\hat{E}(s)$ for E_e . Then (see Ref. 21)

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Strain: } \quad \hat{\varepsilon}(s) &= -\frac{\hat{M}(s)y}{s\hat{E}(s)I} = -\frac{y}{I}\hat{J}(s)s\hat{M}(s) \\ \text{Stress: } \quad \hat{\sigma}(s) &= -\frac{\hat{M}(s)y}{I} \\ \text{Deflection: } \quad \frac{d^2 w(x,s)}{dx^2} &= \frac{\hat{M}(s)}{s\hat{E}(s)I} = \frac{\hat{J}(s)s\hat{M}(s)}{I} \end{aligned} \quad (22)$$

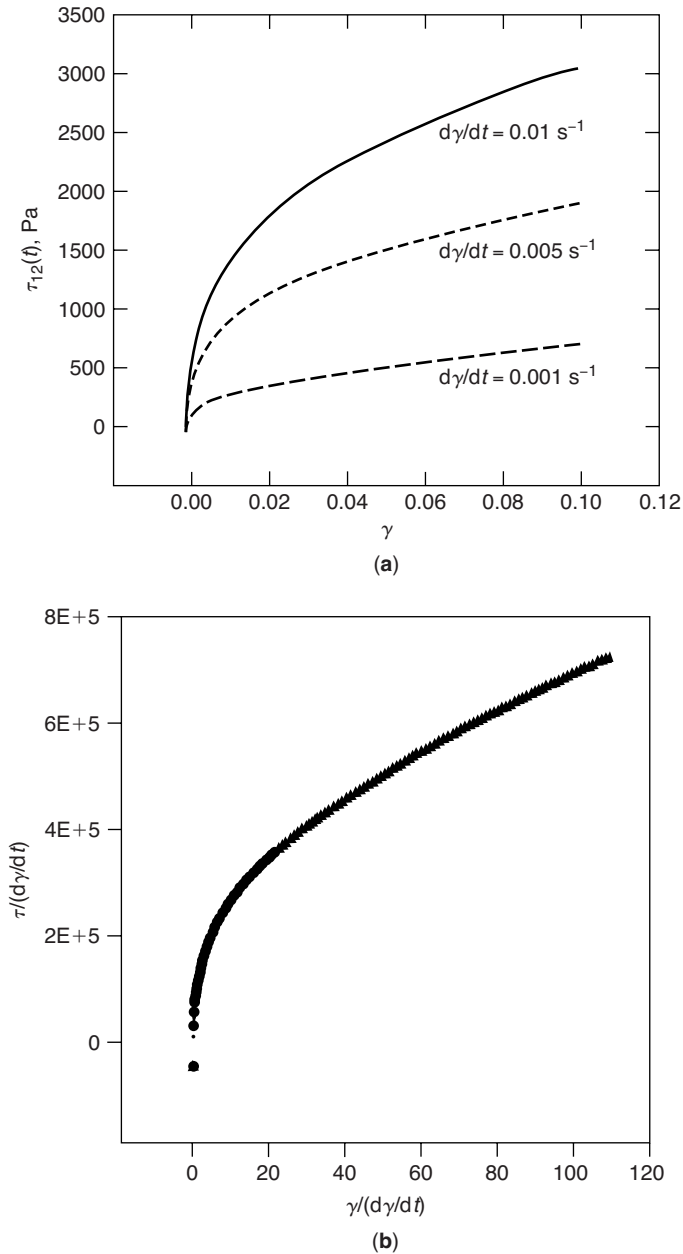


Fig. 8. (a) Stress–strain plot for a generalized Maxwell model to different strain rates, as depicted in figure. Plot shows “nonlinear” stress–strain behavior in spite of material model (Maxwell) following laws of linear viscoelasticity (see text). (b) Stress and strain data from different strain rates given in (a) divided by strain rate $d\gamma/dt$, demonstrating that material model follows linear viscoelasticity (see text).

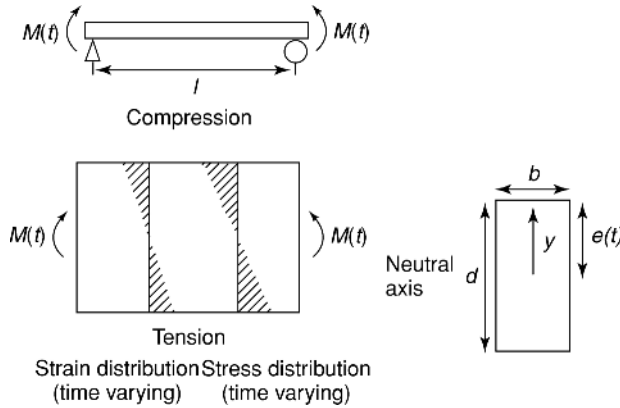


Fig. 9. Schematic of the beam-bending problem. After Findley et al. (21).

Note that the relationships between the viscoelastic compliance and the relaxation modulus are given by

$$s\hat{E}(s) = \frac{1}{s\hat{J}(s)} \tag{23}$$

Inversion of equation 22, using the convolution transform, gives

$$\begin{aligned} \varepsilon(t) &= -\frac{y}{I} \int_0^t J(t-t') \frac{dM(t')}{dt'} dt' \\ \sigma(t) &= -\frac{M(t)}{I} \\ \frac{d^2 w(x,t)}{dx^2} &= \frac{1}{I} \int_0^t J(t-t') \frac{dM(t')}{dt'} dt' \end{aligned} \tag{24}$$

And integration of the hereditary integrals for strain and deflection gives the solution to any applied history of the moment $M(t)$. A note of caution, however, arises for mixed conditions in which the interface between the stress and the displacement boundaries is not constant. In such cases the elastic-viscoelastic correspondence principle is not applicable and the solutions become more difficult (21).

Finally, this section concludes by noting that Schapery (7,24) has shown that when the material properties are changing very slowly, an approximate solution can be obtained by substituting the viscoelastic moduli for their elastic counterparts. This will be justified in some instances. The reader should examine the literature for further consideration of the limitations of these approaches. Also, the advent of commercial finite element codes that have linear viscoelastic material elements makes the solution of such problems more routine.

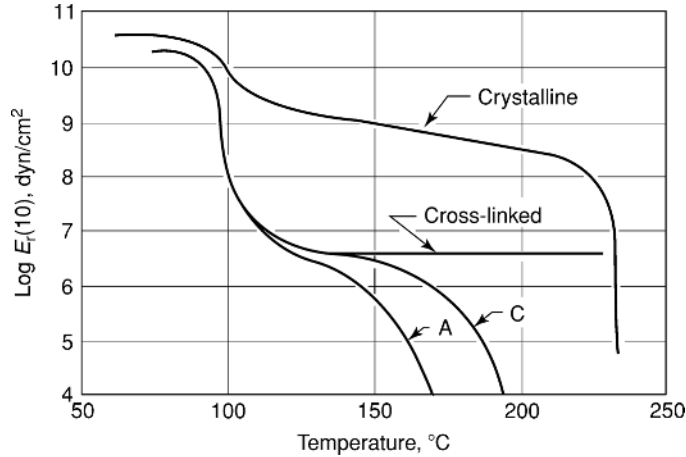


Fig. 10. The relaxation modulus (at 10 s) for a polymer measured as a function of temperature. Curves labeled A and C depict amorphous, linear polymers with the molecular weight of A being less than that of C. The cross-linked polymer is also amorphous, but cannot flow. The crystalline polymer behaves differently because it is “reinforced” by crystalline domains. After Tobolsky (25).

Linear Viscoelastic Behavior of Polymeric Materials

General Regimes of Response. Polymeric materials exhibit a very rich set of viscoelastic responses. The responses observed depend upon the state of the polymer and on its structure. The material can be in an amorphous state if it is a glass, a rubber, a melt, or a solution. In addition, the material can be semicrystalline in that crystallites partially fill or reinforce the otherwise amorphous material. Figure 10 illustrates a plot of the relaxation modulus vs T ; it indicates schematically the sort of responses that are observed for an amorphous polymer as a function of temperature. Also shown is the sort of response to be obtained in a semicrystalline polymer over the same temperature range. At low temperatures, one observes a behavior that for both structures is the same as that of a high modulus material. As the glass temperature T_g is approached the amorphous material undergoes a dramatic drop in modulus by several orders of magnitude. The modulus of the semicrystalline material changes significantly, but not nearly as much. Following the modulus drop associated with the glass temperature, the amorphous polymer can exhibit a rubbery plateau due to the *entanglement network* formed by the long-chain molecules. If the molecules are not long enough the entanglement plateau will be weak or nonexistent. In the same temperature regime the semicrystalline polymer exhibits a long and slow reduction of modulus. As temperature increases, the amorphous polymer undergoes terminal flow due to the disentanglement of the molecules while the semicrystalline polymer continues changing slowly. Above the melting point of the semicrystalline polymer its modulus drops dramatically because the material has become an amorphous polymer at a temperature well above the terminal flow region. In the next sections these behaviors are discussed in more detail.

Behavior in the Amorphous State. Polymer behavior in the amorphous state can be divided into two categories: the glassy state and the fluid state. The former applies to polymers below the glass transition and is generally dominated by the segmental or local movements of the polymer chains. The fluid state of the amorphous polymer is dominated by long-range motions of the polymer chains and the eventual onset of entanglements that give rise to very interesting viscoelastic properties. This section first describes the viscoelastic behavior of the polymer in the glassy state and through the glass temperature. This is followed by a section on the fluid-state properties that are dominated by the long-chain nature of the polymer.

Time–Temperature Superposition. In Figure 10 one observes that the viscoelastic relaxation modulus at a single time or frequency (*isochrones*) shows dramatic changes as temperature increases (25). It turns out that such behavior can be described within the context of a model which is referred to as *time–temperature superposition* or *thermo-rheological simplicity* (9,10,25). The fundamental concept here is that the relaxation times introduced above for, eg, a generalized Maxwell model, all exhibit the same temperature dependence. When thermo-rheological simplicity is valid, one can replace each λ_i in equations 18 and 19 by $a_T \lambda_i$ where the *shift factor* a_T represents the amount that the relaxation time λ_i is changed in going from some reference temperature T_R to the current temperature T . That is

$$a_T = \frac{\lambda_i(T)}{\lambda_i(T_R)} \quad (25)$$

When equation 25 is valid, it is possible to make measurements of the viscoelastic functions over a range of, say four logarithmic decades of time (frequency), at multiple temperatures and use the data to create *reduced* or *master* curves that span many more decades in time (frequency). This is useful for determining the polymer's behavior at longer or shorter times (lower or higher frequencies or rates) that would be extremely difficult to do otherwise. This can be important in both processing applications where rates can be very high and in long-term durability applications where unreasonably long times might otherwise be required to obtain test data. Figure 11 shows the actual data that were obtained for a polymeric material over a limited time range, but at multiple temperatures (25). Figure 12 shows the data reduced to a master curve using time–temperature superposition. As discussed below, the reduced curve in Figure 12 can also be related to the observed temperature dependence of the modulus depicted schematically in Figure 10.

Figure 13 shows the data for the shift factors as $\log a_T$ vs T (26). The description of the shift factors as a function of temperature is very important both for ease of application of the method to actual material behavior and because it has implications for the physical understanding of the behavior of polymeric materials. In the next three sections, the temperature dependence of the viscoelastic properties is discussed by examining the temperature dependence of the shift factors.

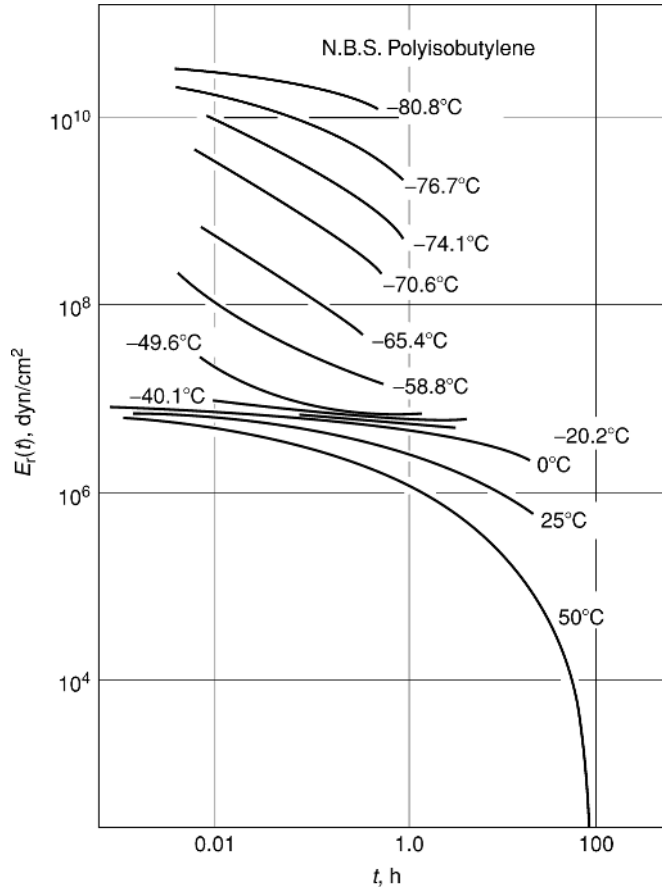


Fig. 11. Stress relaxation isotherms for a polyisobutylene amorphous polymer. After Tobolsky (25).

Properties near the Glass Temperature. In Figure 10 the curve for the amorphous polymer exhibits a behavior in which the modulus at low temperatures changes slowly as temperature increases. As the temperature approaches the glass temperature T_g , however, the modulus begins to change rapidly, dropping by up to 3 orders of magnitude, as the T_g is traversed. This is related to the changing relaxation times. Figure 12 shows a similar behavior, but now with time. At short times, the material response changes slowly and as a glass “transition” time is approached begins to drop rapidly by the same 3 orders of magnitude. In fact, the time–temperature superposition principle allows one to go from curves in temperature space to curves in time (or frequency) space and vice versa.

When the shift factors for the relaxation times are plotted as in Figure 13, an important type of behavior is seen. Here it is observed that the shift factors increase dramatically as the temperature decreases. In fact, if one extrapolates the behavior, there is a singularity point that is reached that is about 50 K below the nominal glass temperature determined from other test methods (such as dsc). This rapid increase of the material shift factor also corresponds (eq. 25) to

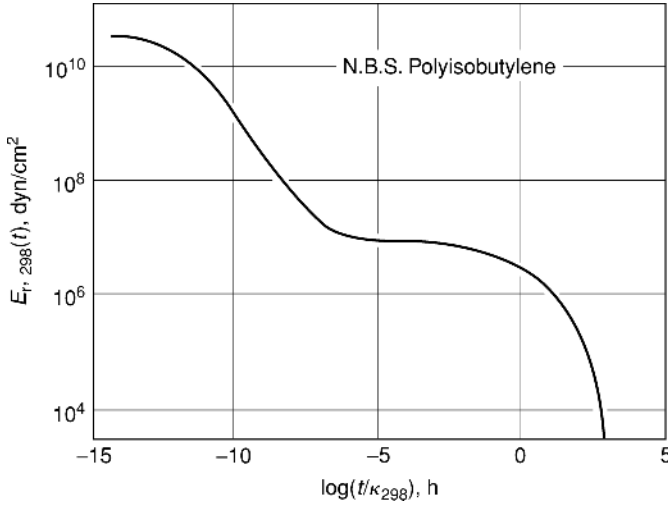


Fig. 12. Master curve generated by applying time–temperature shifting to the data given in Figure 11. (Note that $\kappa_{298} = 1/a_T$.) After Tobolsky (25).

a rapid increase in the relaxation times as the temperature is decreased. Hence, the glass temperature is approached because the mobility in the polymer becomes so slow that, in normal experimental time scales, the molecules cannot respond to the mechanical sollicitation and the material exhibits nearly solid-like properties [imagine the glassy poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA) that makes up aircraft windows. The T_g of PMMA is about 110°C]. There are two equations that are commonly used to describe the shift factor behavior and these are discussed later. First the relationship between the viscosity and the shift factor is discussed.

The viscosity is related to the relaxation modulus through the following equation (9):

$$\eta_0 = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} tG(t)dlnt \tag{26}$$

(for a Maxwell element, this would translate into $\eta_0 = G\lambda$). When the modulus is proportional to temperature T and density ρ (as in the case of rubber elasticity) the shift factor can be determined from viscosity measurements:

$$a_T = \frac{\eta_{0,T} \rho_{T_R} T_R}{\eta_{0,T_R} \rho_T T} \tag{27}$$

Hence, when the shift factor is increasing rapidly, this implies that the viscosity is also increasing rapidly.

One equation used to describe the rapid increase of the viscosity with decreasing temperature is the Vogel–Fulcher equation (27,28):

$$\eta_0 = Ae^{B/(T - T_\infty)} \tag{28}$$

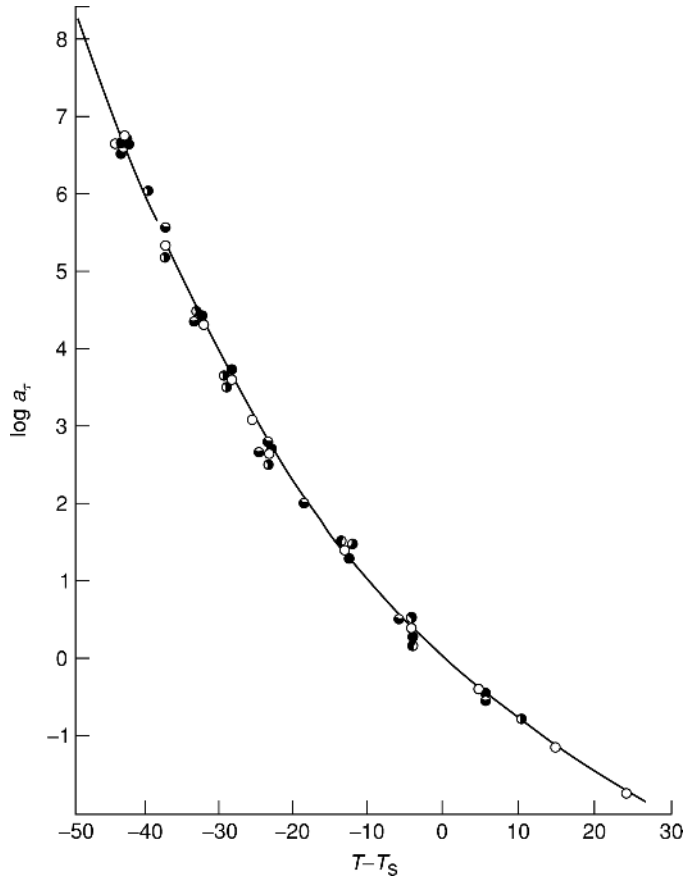


Fig. 13. Time-temperature shift factors for poly(α -methyl styrene). $T_{\text{ref}} = 204^\circ\text{C}$. After Fujimoto et al. (26), with permission.

where A is a prefactor and T_∞ is the temperature at which the viscosity extrapolates to an infinite value. Note that when $T_\infty = 0$ K, equation 28 reverts to an Arrhenius form and B would have the meaning of an activation energy (E_a/R). Equations 28 and 27 can be used together to obtain the shift factor a_T . Also, a similar form to equation 28 can be used to represent the temperature dependence of the relaxation times.

The other equation that is often used to describe the dependence of the shift factors on temperature is the Williams, Landel, and Ferry (WLF) equation (29):

$$\log a_T = \frac{C_1(T - T_R)}{C_2 + T - T_R} \quad (29)$$

where C_1 and C_2 are constants. The singularity in the shift factor occurs when $C_2 = -(T - T_R)$, and when $T_R = T_g$ this value is approximately 50 K, ie, the singularity occurs some 50 K below the nominal glass temperature. When

$T_R = T_g$, the Vogel–Fulcher and WLF equations are related by the following expressions (9):

$$C_1 = \frac{B}{T_g - T_\infty}$$

$$C_2 = T_g - T_\infty \tag{30}$$

$$2.303C_1C_2 = B$$

Note that for many polymers the values of the WLF parameters are close to the so-called universal values, which are $C_1 = 17.44$ and $C_2 = 51.6$ K when $T_R = T_g$. (When no other information is available, the “universal” values for C_1 and C_2 can make useful approximations to actual behavior.)

In discussing the temperature dependence of the shift factors in polymers, it is essential that a distinction be made between the segmental relaxations and the terminal relaxations. The reason for this can be seen in Figure 10 where there are two regions of rapid change in properties. The first occurs in the vicinity of the glass temperature and is due to increasing segmental or local mobility. The second occurs after the rubbery plateau and is related to the terminal relaxations that occur because of chain disentanglement in the fluid state. These two processes are now known to generally show different temperature dependences and one should be clear which relaxations are relevant in any particular situation (30–32).

Figure 13 shows the rapid increase of the shift factors (or viscosity) as T_g is approached from above. As noted previously, the point of singularity is approximately 50 K below the T_g . However, as the glass temperature is traversed, the material response does not continue to follow the WLF curve, rather it falls away from it, as shown in Figure 14 (33–35). The reasons for this are involved with the nature of the glass-transition event and the fact that the molecular mobility has become extremely low in the vicinity of the glass temperature (9,25,28,36,37). As a result, as the temperature changes, the molecules do not have enough time to relax into their equilibrium state and a glass is formed. Glasses are nonequilibrium materials and the sub- T_g behaviors are determined very much by this (36–40). Regardless of this fact, the response below T_g does not follow the WLF behavior. It can, however, follow time–temperature superposition, but with a less dramatic dependence of the shift factors on the temperature, as is seen in Figure 14. In Figure 14 there are three lines for the shift factors below T_g . In this instance, it is due to the physical aging (40) that accompanies the evolution of the nonequilibrium glass toward its equilibrium state.

Viscoelastic Relaxation Properties far below the Glass Temperature. As one moves below the glass-transition temperature, the relaxation behavior of the amorphous polymer becomes more and more sluggish as the thermal energy available to stimulate molecular motion becomes smaller. This behavior is seen in the schematic of Figure 10. However, below the glass temperature, polymers often exhibit other relaxation responses that are referred to as sub- T_g relaxations (9,41–44). A typical example is shown in Figure 15 where the dynamic responses of a series of poly(*n*-alkyl methyl methacrylates) as a function of temperature are

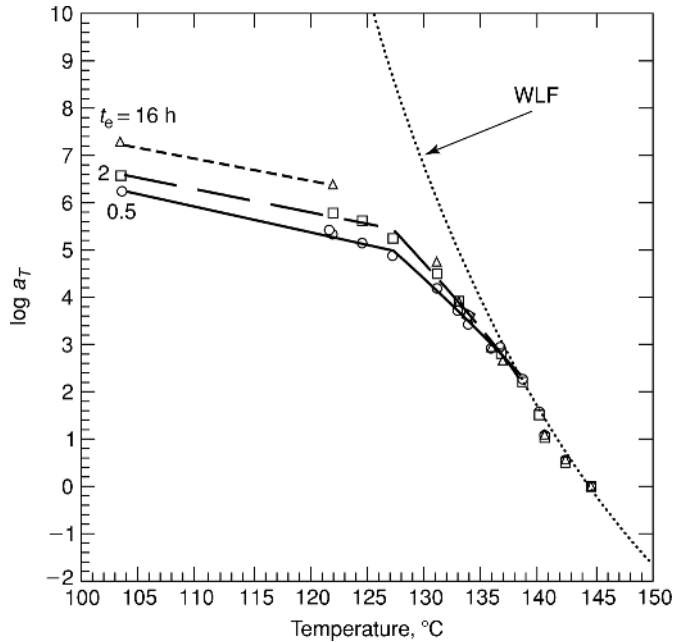


Fig. 14. Plot of shift factor (logarithm) vs T for polycarbonate, illustrating the change in behavior away from the WLF-type of temperature dependence as T_g is traversed. Also, because the glassy state is a nonequilibrium state, the material “ages.” The curves at 0.5, 2, and 16 h represent the results at these aging times. After Pesce et al (33).

shown. The reader can see that G' ($\omega = 1$ Hz) shows a smeared out “step” in response at low temperatures (approximately 0°C in the PMMA). The PMMA shows a broad peak at the same temperature in $\tan \delta$. This relaxation is referred to as the β -relaxation (relative to the α -relaxation of the glass temperature). Some materials exhibit a γ -relaxation at even lower temperatures, as seen for the poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate) and poly(*n*-propyl methacrylate). The sub- T_g relaxations can affect other material properties, although the relationship between linear viscoelastic properties and, eg, failure is complicated and simple relationships not generally universal.

One important aspect of the sub- T_g relaxations is that they generally exhibit different temperature dependences than does the main glassy relaxation. The result is that time–temperature superposition is not usually valid when there is a strong sub- T_g relaxation in the polymer. An example of this is the behavior shown for poly(ethylene naphthalate) in Figure 16, where one can see that time–temperature shifting of creep data does not collapse the data to a single curve because this material has a strong β -relaxation that is not far from the glass temperature (45).

Finally, it is worth noting that the sub- T_g relaxations are often attributed to side-group motions on the polymer chain. A good example is the changing relaxation strength and position in the series of *n*-alkyl methacrylates that was presented in Figure 15 (44). There it is shown that both the α and the β

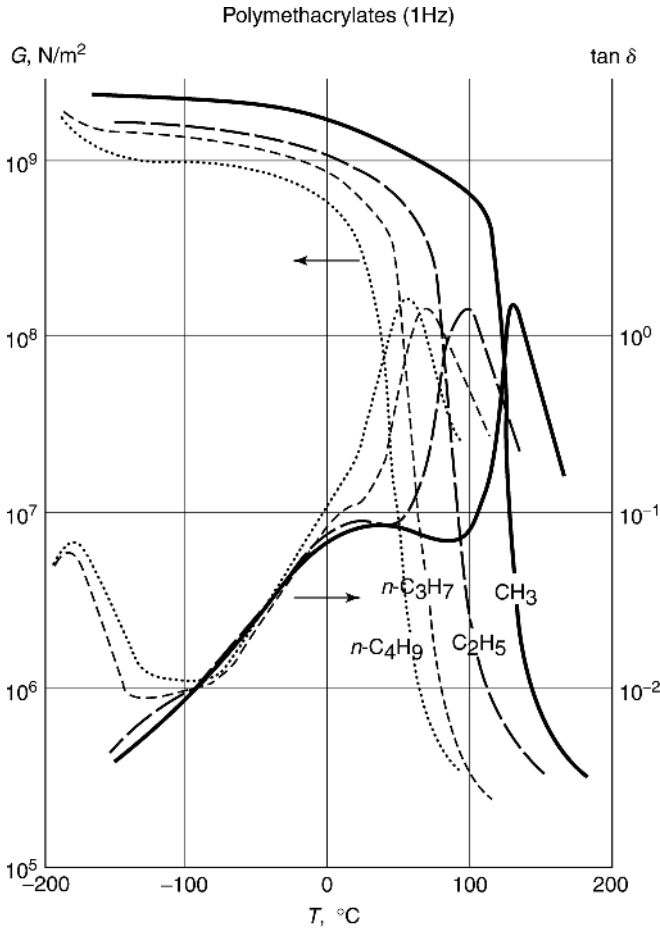


Fig. 15. Dynamic modulus and loss tangent (at 1 Hz) of a series of *n*-alkyl methacrylates showing how side groups change the α and β transitions. After Heijboer (44).

relaxations shift systematically as the side-chain length increases from $n = 1$ (methyl) to $n = 4$ (butyl). Note, however, that the α -relaxation shifts more strongly than does the β -relaxation with increasing side-group length.

Viscoelastic Response far above the Glass Temperature: T_g The Fluid State. From Figure 10 or Figure 12 one can see the fluid state response of the polymer. This is the portion of the curve at long times or high temperatures from the rubbery plateau to the end of relaxation where the polymer would take the shape of whatever container held it, ie, it is a liquid. There are several fundamental aspects to polymer behavior in this region. On the rubbery plateau, the polymer chains behave as if they were part of a three-dimensional network and their response can be described from modern rubber elasticity theories. This behavior is beyond the scope of the current review and the reader is referred to the literature for further information (46–50). At long enough times, however,

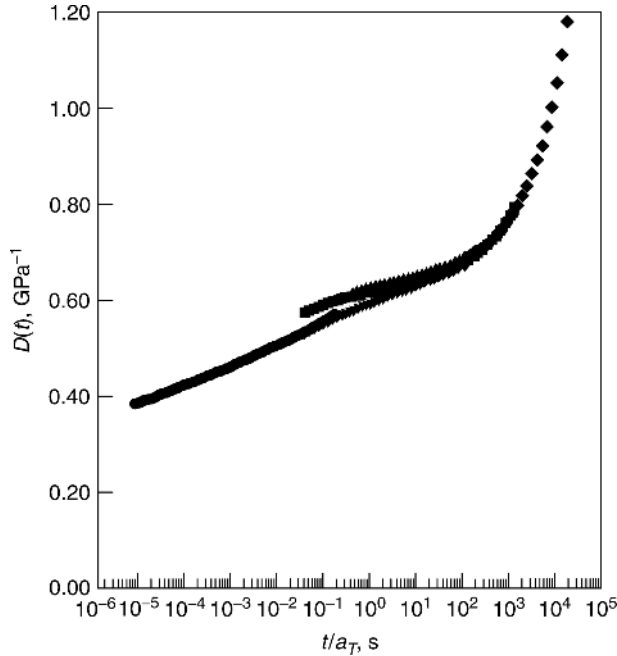


Fig. 16. Reduced curve of creep compliance vs time for PEN showing lack of time-temperature superposition (see text for discussion). • 30°C; ▼ 50°C; ■ 80°C; ◇ 100°C. After Cerrada and McKenna (45).

the polymer chains have the opportunity to slip out of the entanglement points and the relaxation behavior seen in the terminal response regime results. The current paradigm for the viscoelastic response of polymers in this terminal flow regime is the reptation theory given by de Gennes (51) and Doi and Edwards (52–56). According to this model, the entanglement field can be represented by a tube through which the chain “reptates” along the chain direction. This is schematized in Figure 17, where one can see (a) the topology of a chain in a fixed network and (b) the primitive path defined by the tube.

Before describing the reptation theory quantitatively, we first examine part of the rich set of behaviors that any theory of polymer chain dynamics in the melt state needs to be able to describe. One of the most interesting aspects of polymer melt and solution behavior is that once the material is well entangled, the viscoelastic behavior is quasi-universal. First, the zero shear rate viscosity η_0 is observed to vary with the molecular weight to a very strong power (9,57):

$$\eta_0 = AM^\alpha \quad (31)$$

where A is an empirical prefactor and M is the molecular weight. In fact, the observed power law dependence seems to follow very well the weight average molecular weight. This power law exponent α is generally found to be approximately 3.4. The variation of viscosity with molecular weight is shown in Figure 18

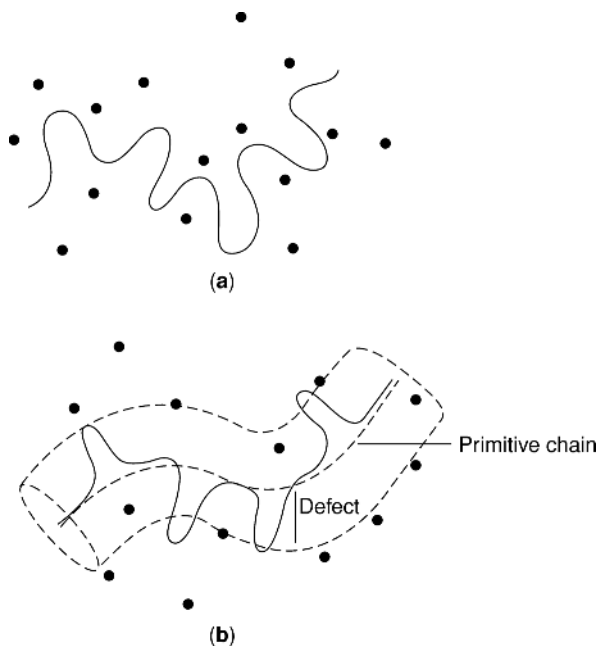


Fig. 17. Schematic of a polymer chain confined in (a) a fixed network of obstacles and (b) the primitive path representation of the same constraints as a tube. After Doi and Edwards (56), with permission.

for a number of polymers from the classic work of Berry and Fox (57). The molecular weight axis also includes the concentration effect discussed shortly. The very strong molecular weight dependence of the viscosity is still not fully understood, although reptation theory has provided a very large step toward understanding.

According to the reptation theory, the dramatic slowing down of the motion of long polymer chains can be considered as similar to the motion of a chain through a network, as represented by the tube in the Doi–Edwards (DE) model. The network chains of the tube walls prevent the polymer chain from lateral motion (or at least reduce lateral motion) with the result that the chain is forced to move along the contour of the tube. The chain’s Brownian movement causes it to slide back and forth within the tube until it eventually disengages. Quantitative analysis of the chain’s diffusive properties leads to the estimation that the viscosity-molecular weight exponent $\alpha = 3.0$ rather than the observed 3.4. The reasons for this have been variously attributed to different mechanisms such as “primitive path” fluctuations (58), “constraint release (59),” tube fluctuations (60), and others that provide a means for the viscosity to crossover from a 3.4 power law dependence on molecular weight to a purely reptative behavior at extremely high molecular weights (61–64). There is only one set of data currently available that really bears relevance to the question of such crossover behavior and that is based on a single data point that falls well off of the 3.4 line for a polybutadiene of 1.65×10^7 g/mol molecular weight (65).



Fig. 18. Double logarithmic representation of the viscosity vs scaled molecular weight for a series of polymers, showing the change from a weak (nearly linear) dependence of viscosity on molecular weight to the entangled regime where $\eta_0 \propto M^{3.4}$. After Berry and Fox (57), with permission.

In addition to the large molecular weight dependence of the viscosity, another aspect of the chain dynamics of polymers in the terminal region is the observation that the relaxation spectrum is very broad. One measure of the breadth of the relaxation spectrum is the product of the rubbery plateau value G_N^0 and the steady-state recoverable compliance J_e^0 . The predicted and observed values for polymer melts are

$$\begin{aligned} J_e^0 G_N^0 &\approx 2.0(\text{observed}) \\ J_e^0 G_N^0 &= 1.2(\text{reptation}) \end{aligned} \quad (32)$$

Hence, the reptation theory does not predict a broad enough relaxation spectrum and current modifications of the theory seem insufficient to describe the full range of observed viscoelastic behavior of polymer melts. Reptation theory is still the paradigm for polymer chain dynamics and provides tremendous insight into material behavior. However, as described, there are still pieces of the puzzle of polymer molecular viscoelasticity that remain to be elucidated.

Behavior of Concentrated Solutions. Another aspect of polymer chain dynamics that is important to their understanding is their behavior in entangled solution. This is particularly so because the reptation theory does not explicitly deal with the effects of concentration on the tube diameter and resulting chain dynamics. However, there are several aspects to the effects of the interactions between small molecule “solvents” or “plasticizers” that are important. The first effect is the observation that the glass-transition temperature of the material is changed, generally to lower temperatures (9,37). For the segmental relaxation, this can be reasonably well accounted for by a time–concentration superposition principle (9,66) similar to the time–temperature superposition discussed above. In the event that one is dealing with the plasticization and the segmental relaxation, the major effect is that the T_g is decreased. The other parameters in the WLF or Vogel–Fulcher equations are less impacted. The reader is directed to the extensive treatment of the problem by Ferry (9) in terms of the free-volume model of dynamics for further information.

On the other hand, the impact of the solvent as one moves into the entanglement regime is different from the simple shift in T_g , although this change is also important for understanding the behavior. The other factor that occurs is that the entanglement density decreases (perhaps the tube diameter gets larger) and the plateau modulus and steady-state recoverable compliance both change dramatically with concentration. When we work with the polymer concentration ϕ , we find that G_N^0 and J_e^0 vary as

$$G_N^0 \propto \phi^{2-2.25} \quad \text{and} \quad J_e^0 \propto \phi^{-(2-2.25)} \quad (33)$$

In Figure 18 the viscosities were found to scale as approximately $\phi^{3.4}$ —the same as the molecular weight. At the same time, it has been reported (67) that the viscosity can vary by as much as ϕ^5 . This difference in apparent behavior depends somewhat on the polymer–solvent system, the temperature of test relative to T_g , and whether or not the data are corrected to a constant “distance” from the glass temperature. The reason stems from the simple relation between viscosity and

the relaxation modulus given in equation 26, which for a simple Maxwell model would be

$$\eta_0 = G_N^0 \lambda \quad (34)$$

Because the characteristic relaxation times λ_i vary in a way that is determined by the concentration dependence of the glass temperature, equation 34 combined with equation 33 indicates that the method of data analysis will determine the scaling behavior observed for the viscosity as a function of concentration. When one is well above the glass transition, the λ_i can follow a dependence as strong as ϕ^3 , then equation 34 with equation 33 would give (68)

$$\begin{aligned} \eta_0 &\propto G_N^0 \lambda \propto \phi^2 \phi^x \\ \text{For } x = 3: \eta_0 &\propto \phi^5 \\ \text{For } x = 1.4: \eta_0 &\propto \phi^{3.4} \end{aligned} \quad (35)$$

Hence, description of the dynamics of the polymer–solvent system demands complete specification of both the complex T_g –concentration relationship and the temperature(s) of test. Importantly, unlike the case of time–temperature superposition, the shift factors for the relaxation times and the viscosity will not be the same. The latter will scale, as does the viscosity, as in equation 35. However, the relaxation times themselves will scale with a much weaker concentration dependence.

Viscoelastic Response of Semicrystalline Polymers. Figure 10 illustrated the general response of the semicrystalline polymer as a function of temperature. For the amorphous polymer it was possible to show the response as a function of time (or frequency) as in Figure 12 because of time–temperature superposition principles. Unlike the amorphous polymer, the viscoelastic response of the semicrystalline polymers cannot generally be treated using time–temperature superposition. There are several reasons for this. First, the crystallites in the material may exhibit relaxations that have different temperature dependences than the amorphous phase. This would clearly lead to a breakdown of thermo-rheological simplicity. In addition, the amorphous phase in the semicrystalline polymer may be changed by the presence of the crystallites. This has been referred to as a rigid amorphous phase or a constrained phase. The impact of the constraint is to change the temperature dependence of the relaxation response of the constrained amorphous material relative to that of the unconstrained material. The result is that, again, time–temperature superposition does not describe the material. Figure 19 shows the viscoelastic behavior of a semicrystalline material at several temperatures (25). Tobolsky (25) made the important observation that these curves are not superimposable by simple shifting procedures. The result is that for the semicrystalline polymers, determination of the full thermo-viscoelastic response of the material can be a very time-consuming task because the ability to extrapolate outside the testing range of times or frequency is limited.

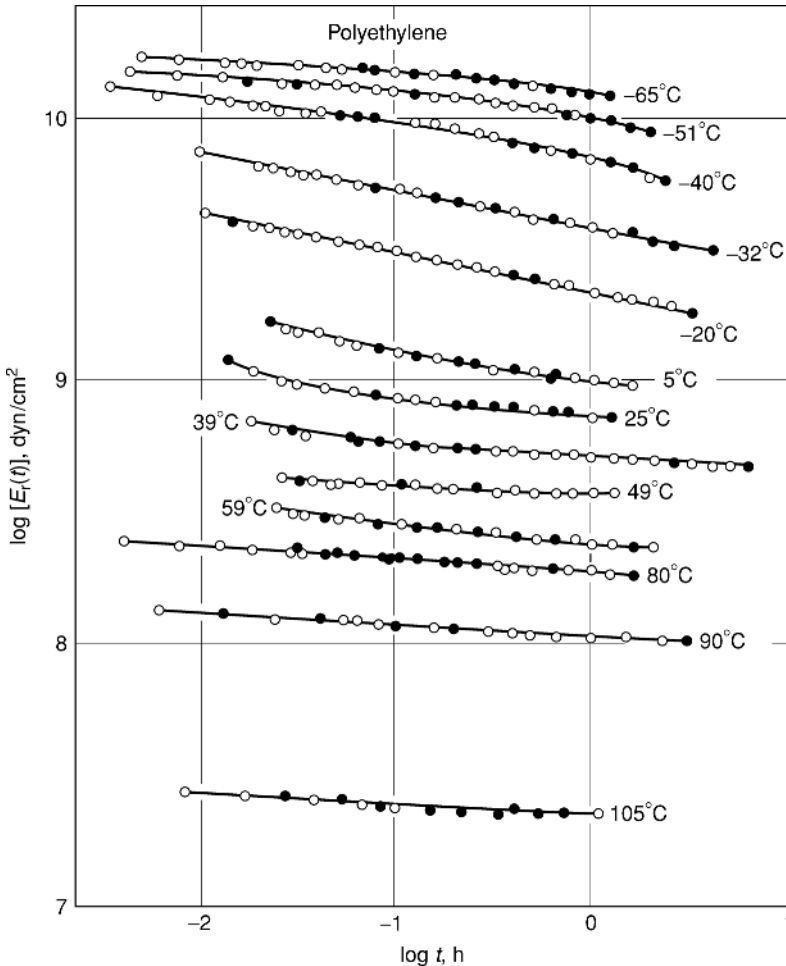


Fig. 19. Relaxation response of polyethylene in isothermal conditions, illustrating that time-temperature superposition does not generally describe the behavior of semi-crystalline polymers. After Tobolsky (25).

Nonlinear Viscoelastic Behavior of Polymeric Materials

General Regimes of Response. The nonlinear viscoelastic response of polymers, of course, follows some of the same classifications as does the linear response. Hence, the behavior above the glass temperature and into the terminal zone is fluid behavior, and often follows time-temperature superposition. The phenomenology of polymer melts and solutions is commonly described by *constitutive laws* that relate the stress and strain histories to each other (59,69). A brief description of the K-BKZ model (70-72) is provided as it seems to capture most of the behaviors of polymer melts and solutions subjected to large deformations or high deformation rates. At the same time the nonlinear form of the reptation

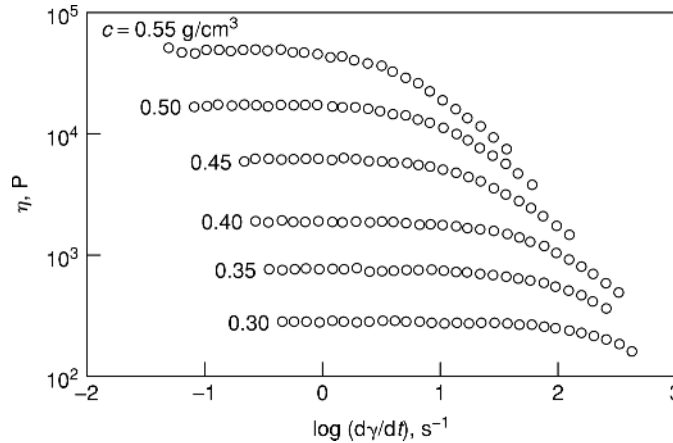


Fig. 20. Double logarithmic representation of viscosity vs. shear rate for polymer solutions having indicated concentrations. Plot illustrates shear thinning of entangled polymers as shear rate increases. After Graessley et al. (73), with permission. To convert Pa·s to P, multiply by 10.

model is introduced, which in early versions reduced to the K-BKZ constitutive law.

Below the glass temperature, the nonlinear viscoelastic response of polymeric materials has been much less widely studied than has the behavior of melts and solutions. One reason for this is the lack of an adequate theory of behavior. Therefore the discussion about amorphous materials below the glass temperature focuses on recent measurements of the nonlinear response as well as attempts to apply some of the formalisms that have been applied in the melt and solution states to the behavior of glassy polymers. Finally, the behavior of semicrystalline polymers can be even more complicated and this is discussed briefly.

Behavior of Entangled Polymer Melts and Solutions: Steady-State Behavior. Before discussing the constitutive law given by the K-BKZ theory, it is important to discuss the nonlinear behavior of polymers that is observed. One such behavior is that in steady state, ie, when the material response has quit changing after the application of a stress or deformation rate. For such a situation and recalling that a Newtonian fluid follows a viscosity law in which the stress is proportional to the strain rate

$$\tau = \eta_0 \dot{\gamma} \quad (36)$$

where η_0 is the viscosity coefficient. While many small molecule fluids follow expression 36 extremely well, polymeric liquids exhibit *shear thinning* behavior and the viscosity is a function of the shear rate. Typical behavior is exhibited in Figure 20, where viscosity is a function of the shear rate (73). At low shear rates, one observes a Newtonian plateau, followed by a powerlaw region. After the power law region, there is some evidence that at very high shear rates there is a second Newtonian plateau where the viscosity again becomes independent of the shear

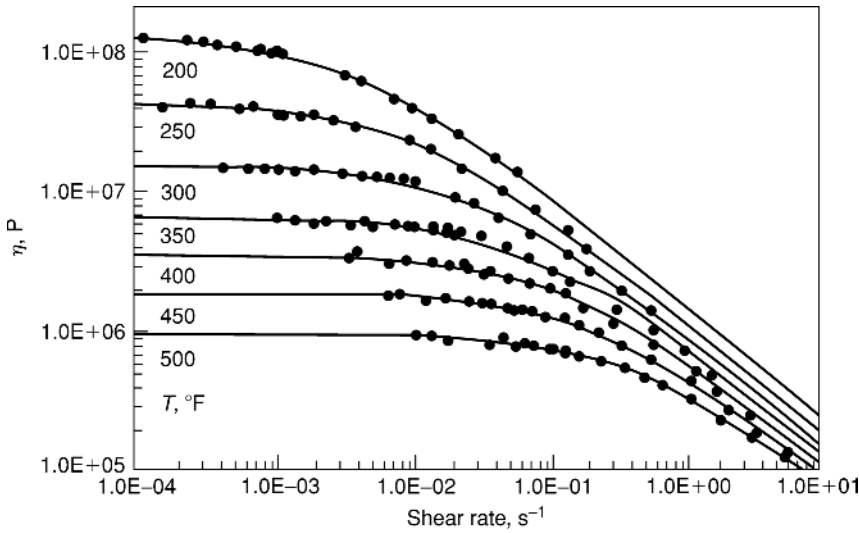


Fig. 21. Shear-rate dependence of the viscosity of a polyisobutylene material, illustrating the fit provided by equation 38. After Rosen (74), with permission. To convert Pa·s to P, multiply by 10.

rate. The power law regime can be described by an empirical equation (74):

$$\begin{aligned}\tau &= K(\dot{\gamma})^n \\ \eta &= \frac{\tau}{\dot{\gamma}} = K(\dot{\gamma})^{n-1}\end{aligned}\quad (37)$$

A possibly better description of the behavior comes from the modified Cross equation (75), particularly if there is a second Newtonian plateau:

$$\eta(T, \dot{\gamma}) = \frac{\eta_0(T)}{1 + [C\eta_0(T)\dot{\gamma}]^{1-n}} \quad (38)$$

This equation has the advantage of having the temperature dependence in it explicitly. When the shear-rate-dependent viscosity follows the same temperature dependence, such as WLF, as does the zero shear rate viscosity, then equation 38 is a reasonable approximation to the observed behavior. Otherwise, this is just an estimate. Figure 21 illustrates the fitting of equation 38 to some typical shear-rate-dependent data (74,76).

In addition to the observations in shear that have just been discussed, there is considerable interest in the elongational response in polymeric fluids. The elongational or Trouton viscosity η_E is three times the zero shear rate viscosity in the linear viscoelastic range. However, its behavior is more complex and, as shear rates get higher, the viscosity can even go through a maximum with increasing shear rate as illustrated in Figure 22 (77).

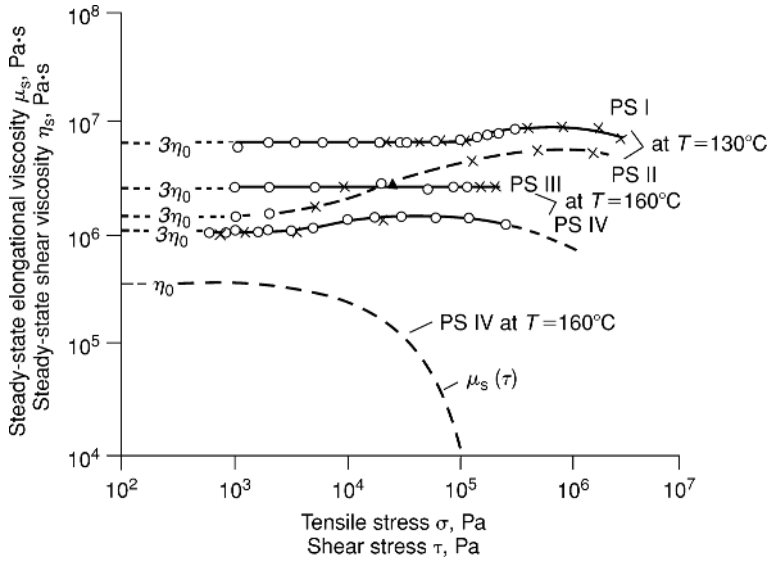


Fig. 22. Elongational viscosity as a function of shear rate for several polystyrene samples. O $\sigma_0 = \text{constant}$; X $\dot{\epsilon}_0 = \text{constant}$ After Münstedt (77), with permission.

Behavior of Entangled Polymer Melts and Solutions: Transient Response.

While the steady-state response of polymers in shear and elongational flows is of much interest, there are also many instances in which the transient response is important because not all processes attain steady state. There are two important transient responses in the nonlinear regime of behavior. These are the stress relaxation response in which the deformation is held constant and the stress evolution with time is followed. This was discussed above for the linear viscoelastic case. In addition, the response to a constant rate of deformation can be an important transient response to study. Also note that creep experiments are sometimes used to characterize the nonlinear response of polymeric fluids and these will also be discussed briefly.

Transient Response: Stress Relaxation. In single-step stress relaxation experiments, the observation is that the response of a polymeric fluid becomes very deformation dependent, ie, it becomes nonlinear. Unlike the case of a linear viscoelastic response, the stress required to maintain a constant deformation is no longer simply proportional to the applied strain. Figure 23 shows the nonlinear response as $\log G(\gamma, t)$ vs $\log t$ (78). As can be seen, when the strain is larger than about 0.50, the modulus begins falling onto different lines depending on the strain. In Figure 24 *isochronal* data are shown for a polymer solution as $\log \tau_{12}$ vs $\log \gamma$ (79). If the material were linear, the plots at the different times (isochrones) would be straight with a slope of unity. This is the behavior that one observes in the limit of small strains, as indicated in the figure by the lines of slope unity at the lower deformation levels. Deviations from unity arise when the response is nonlinear; that is, the value of the modulus is a function of the strain. Finally, another way in which to consider the nonlinear behavior is to look at a plot of the relaxation modulus at different times vs the strain. A normalized form of such a

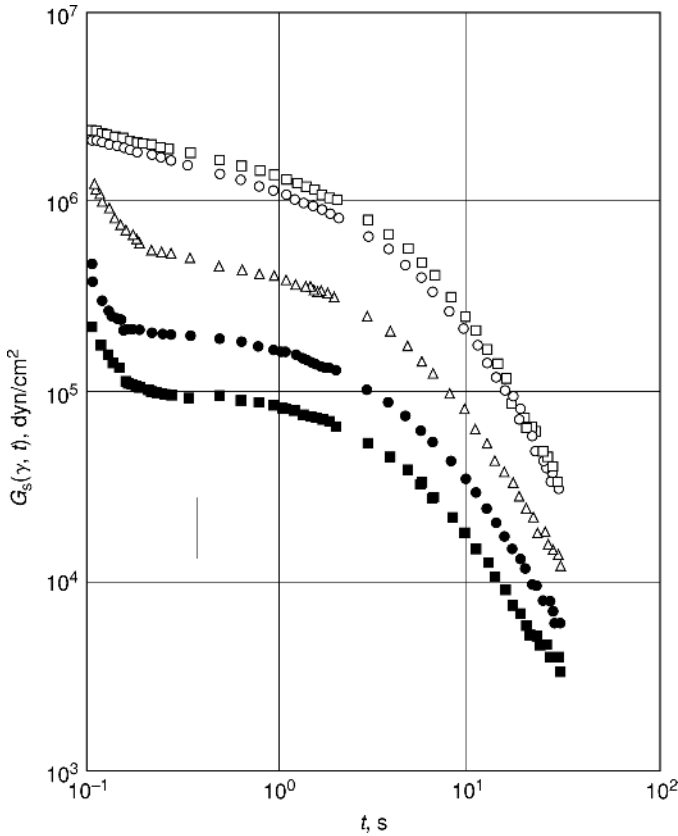


Fig. 23. Stress relaxation modulus of a concentrated polybutadiene solution subjected to increasing shear strains. From top to bottom: $\gamma = 0.333, 0.667, 1.33, 2.00,$ and 2.67 . After Vrentas and Graessley (78), with permission.

plot is shown for a polymer solution in Figure 25 (80). Here, were the material response linear, the data would collapse to a line that was a constant, independent of the strain magnitude. The actual nonlinear behavior that is observed is commonly described in terms of the damping function in the Doi–Edwards model and is described subsequently.

Transient Response: Constant Rate of Deformation. The constant rate of deformation response of the linear viscoelastic material was discussed above. From that discussion, the stress–deformation response looks nonlinear even when the material is linear viscoelastic. For the nonlinear material the response will not be simply described by the linear viscoelastic laws. However, the curves will look similar at low strain rates. At higher strain rates, a stress overshoot is observed, which cannot occur for the linear viscoelastic material. Figure 26 shows the effect of increasing the strain rate on the transient stress–time response (which is related to the strain) for a polymer solution (81). As seen, the stress overshoot becomes weaker with decreasing strain rates (when the material response may be linearly viscoelastic); however, as strain rate increases, there is an onset of

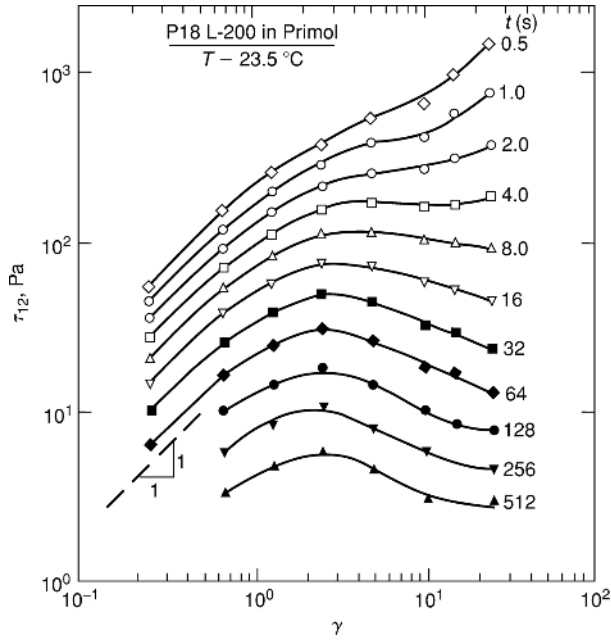


Fig. 24. Double logarithmic representation of the shear stress vs the shear strain for a polymer solution and for different isochrones, as indicated. After McKenna and Zapas (79).

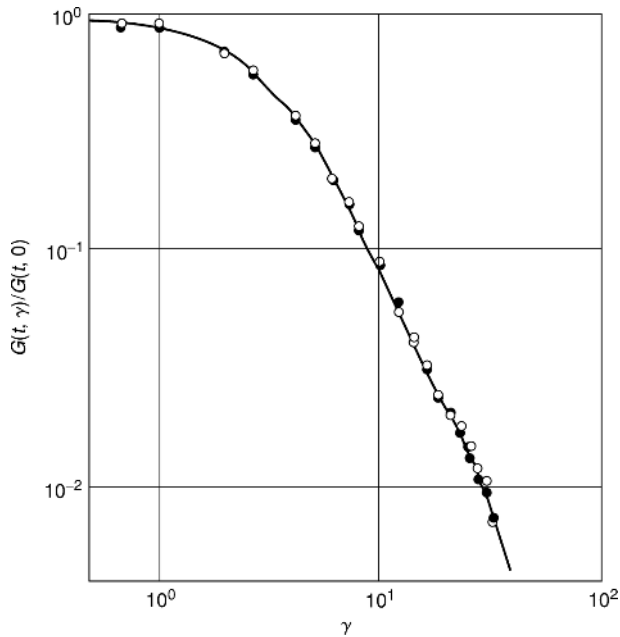


Fig. 25. Reduced nonlinear stress relaxation modulus as a function of strain for a polymer solution. This plot illustrates the strongly nonlinear or strain-dependent behavior of entangled polymers. After Osaki et al. (80), with permission.

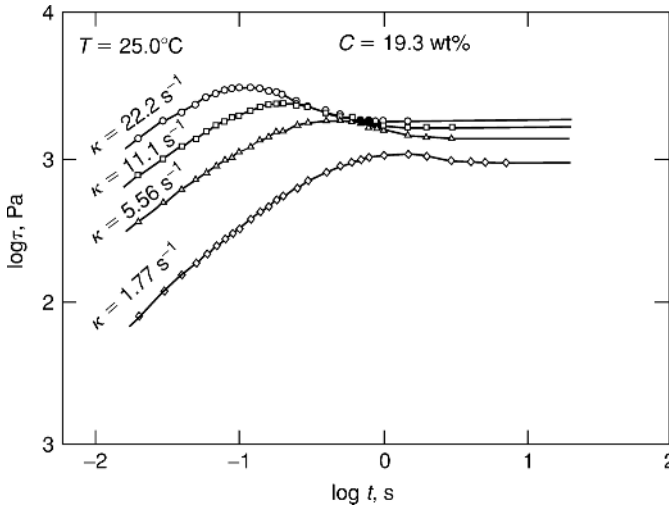


Fig. 26. Effect of strain rate on the stress-time (double logarithmic plot) behavior for a concentrated polymer solution, showing the increasing strength of the stress overshoot phenomenon with increasing strain rate. After Zapas and Phillips (81), with permission.

a stress overshoot where the early time stress goes through a maximum before settling down to its steady-state value (from which the strain-rate-dependent viscosity would be obtained).

Transient Response: Creep. The creep behavior of the polymeric fluid in the nonlinear viscoelastic regime has some different features from what were found with the linear response regime. First, there are no ready means of relating the creep compliance to the relaxation modulus as was done in the linear viscoelastic case. In fact, the relationship between the relaxation properties and the creep properties depends entirely on the exact constitutive relationship chosen for the response of the material, and numerical inversion of the specific constitutive law is ordinarily necessary to predict creep response from the relaxation behavior (or vice versa). For most cases, the material properties that appear in the constitutive equations are written in terms of the relaxation response. We discuss this subsequently in the context of the K-BKZ model.

Constitutive Description of Polymer Melt Behavior: K-BKZ and DE Descriptions. Although there are many nonlinear constitutive models that have been proposed, the focus here is on the K-BKZ model because it is relatively simple in structure, can be related conceptually to finite elasticity descriptions of elastic behavior, and because, in the mind of the current author and others (82), the model captures the major features of nonlinear viscoelastic behavior of polymeric fluids. In addition, the reptation model as proposed by Doi and Edwards provides a molecular basis for understanding the K-BKZ model. The following sections first describe the K-BKZ model, followed by a description of the DE model.

The K-BKZ Constitutive Model.

Finite Elasticity Theory: Classical Theory. The finite elasticity theories available today are very powerful and well developed from a phenomenological

perspective. Because the K-BKZ (70–72) has the form of a time-dependent finite elasticity (it was developed as a “perfect elastic fluid”) it is useful to briefly outline the basics of finite elasticity theory here. In the initial sections of this article, the stress and strain tensors were discussed, and it was noted that the constitutive relationships that arise between the stress and the strain include material parameters called moduli. When a material is classified as *hyperelastic* then the moduli are related to derivatives of the free energy function (often the Helmholtz free energy) with respect to appropriate measures of the strains or deformations (83). Because here large deformations are discussed, there may be multiple possible choices for the actual deformation measurement used. In the discussion that follows, one uses the formalism developed in which the deformations are treated in the context of the Left Cauchy–Green deformation tensor B_{ij} and the free energy function $W(I_1, I_2, I_3)$ is treated as a function of the invariants of the deformation tensor. The material parameters are, then, written as derivatives of the free energy function (or strain energy density function) with respect to the invariants I_i of B_{ij} . The constitutive relationship between the stresses and deformations is then written in terms of these functions (83–86):

$$\sigma_{ij} = \frac{2}{I_3^{1/2}} \left[\left(\frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} I_2 + \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_3} I_3 \right) / + \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} B_{ij} - \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} I_3 B_{ij}^{-1} \right] \quad (39)$$

where I is the identity tensor. The invariants of B_{ij} are written in terms of the principal stretches $\lambda_i = 1 + \varepsilon_{ii}$ as

$$\begin{aligned} I_1 &= \lambda_1^2 + \lambda_2^2 + \lambda_3^2 \\ I_2 &= \frac{1}{\lambda_1^2} + \frac{1}{\lambda_2^2} + \frac{1}{\lambda_3^2} \\ I_3 &= \lambda_1^2 \lambda_2^2 \lambda_3^2 \end{aligned} \quad (40)$$

Note here that the λ_i 's are stretches and not relaxation times as used previously. Also note that for polymer melts and solutions, the shear response function (shear modulus) is several orders of magnitude smaller than is the bulk modulus. Therefore, these materials can be treated as *incompressible*. For the linear case, the incompressibility assumption has $K \rightarrow \infty$ or $\nu \rightarrow 0.5$. Here, $I_3 = 1$ and the constitutive law for the incompressible material becomes

$$\sigma_{ij} = -p\delta_{ij} + \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} B_{ij} - \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} B_{ij}^{-1} \quad (41)$$

where p is an indeterminate hydrostatic pressure that arises because of the incompressibility condition and δ_{ij} is the Kronecker delta.

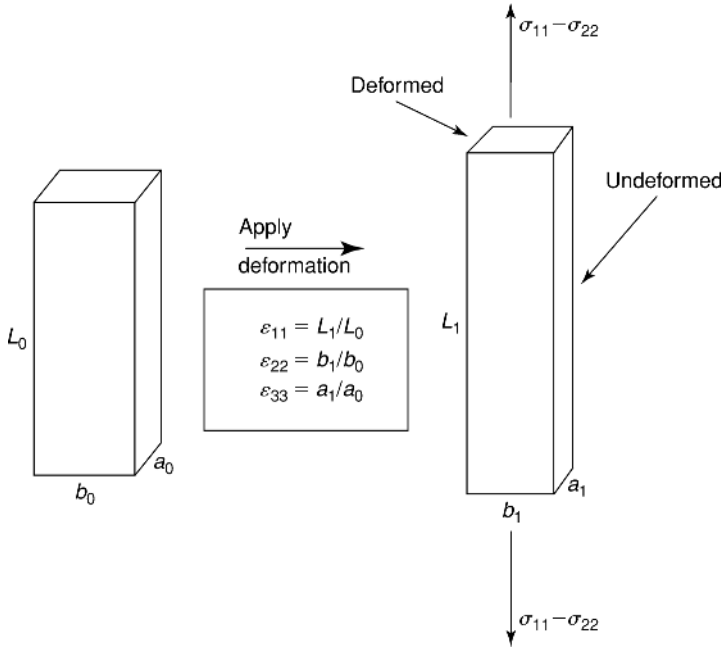


Fig. 27. Schematic of the simple extension geometry.

Referring to Figure 27, one can solve for the stresses in simple extension. First, the stretches are given by

$$\begin{aligned}
 \lambda_1 &= 1 + \epsilon_{11} \\
 \lambda_2 = \lambda_3 &= 1 + \epsilon_{22} \\
 \lambda_2 = \lambda_3 &= \frac{1}{\lambda_1^{1/2}} \text{ (because of incompressibility)}
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{42}$$

Because the material is incompressible, the stresses are only determined within an indeterminate pressure. Therefore, to represent the actual experimental conditions, it is recognized that the *principal stress difference* $\sigma_{11} - \sigma_{22}$ is being measured, and this is given as

$$\begin{aligned}
 \sigma_{11} - \sigma_{22} &= \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} (B_{11} - B_{22}) - \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} (B_{11}^{-1} - B_{22}^{-1}) \\
 &= \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} (\lambda_1^2 - \lambda_2^2) - \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} (\lambda_1^{-2} - \lambda_2^{-2}) \\
 &= \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} (\lambda_1^2 - \lambda_1^{-1}) - \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} (\lambda_1^{-2} - \lambda_1) \\
 &= (\lambda_1^2 - \lambda_1^{-1}) \left(\frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} + \frac{1}{\lambda_1} \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} \right)
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{43}$$

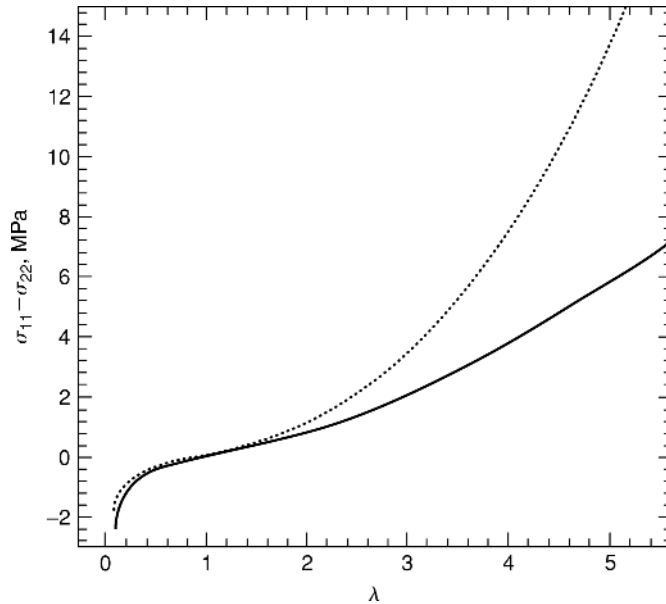


Fig. 28. Stress-stretch response for a Neo-Hookean rubber compared with that of a Mooney-Rivlin material. (—) Neo-Hookean: $C_1 = 0.24$ MPa; (----). Mooney-Rivlin: $C_1 = 0.16$ MPa, $C_2 = 0.08$ MPa.

The simple stress-deformation response given by equation 43 shows the strong nonlinearity that arises when the stress-strain curve for a typical rubber is plotted, even when the material is *Neo-Hookean* or *Mooney-Rivlin*, meaning that the values of $\partial W/\partial I_1 = W_1 = C_1$ and $\partial W/\partial I_2 = W_2 = C_2$ are constants. For the Neo-Hookean material, $W_1 = C_1$ and $W_2 = 0$. For the Mooney-Rivlin material (87,88), $W_1 = C_1$ and $W_2 = C_2$. Figure 28 shows plots of the stress-deformation behavior for a Neo-Hookean rubber and for a Mooney-Rivlin rubber. The figure shows that in spite of the fact that the material parameters are constants, there is a strong nonlinear response due to the geometry of deformation, ie, the $[\lambda^2 - \lambda^{-1}]$ and $1/\lambda$ terms in equation 43. Also, from equation 43 one can readily see from where the concept of the Mooney-Rivlin material arose. Dividing the equation by $[\lambda^2 - \lambda^{-1}]$, one obtains

$$\sigma_R = \frac{\sigma_{11} - \sigma_{22}}{\lambda_1^2 - \lambda_1^{-1}} = \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_1} + \frac{1}{\lambda_1} \frac{\partial W}{\partial I_2} \quad (44)$$

where σ_R is referred to as the reduced stress. For Mooney-Rivlin behavior, a plot of σ_R vs $1/\lambda_1$ gives a straight line of slope C_2 and intercept C_1 . Real rubber often shows near to Mooney-Rivlin behavior in extension, but deviates in compression. For the Neo-Hookean material, the reduced stress is a constant. Figure 29a shows the calculations for the general behavior of σ_R vs $1/\lambda_1$ for the Neo-Hookean and Mooney-Rivlin materials. Figure 29b shows experimental results for two typical cross-linked rubbers, and it is seen that neither the Neo-Hookean nor the

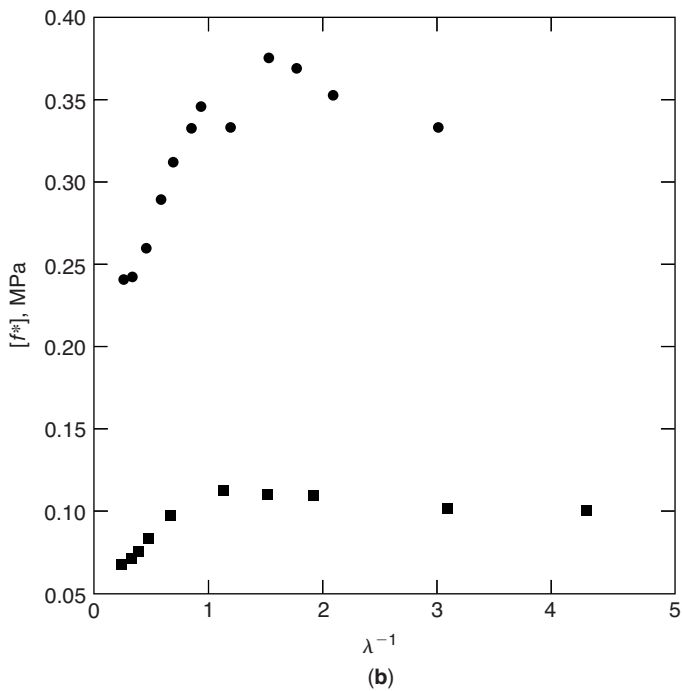
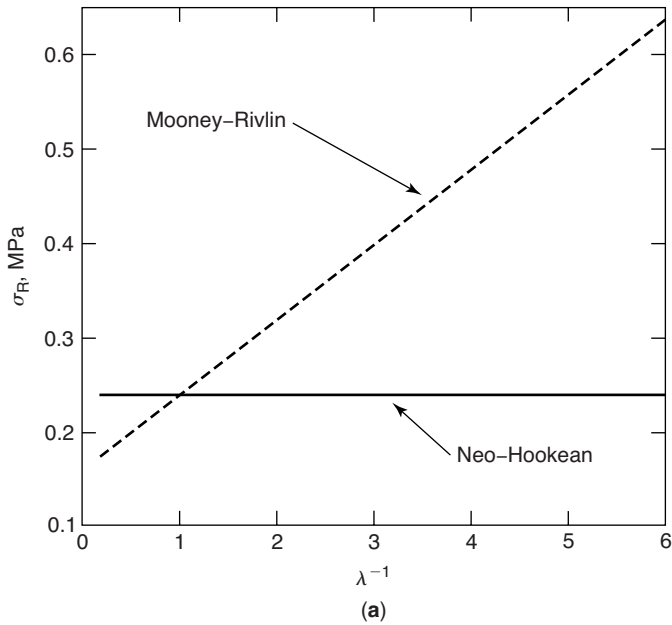


Fig. 29. (a) Reduced stress plot for the Neo-Hookean and Mooney–Rivlin materials of Figure 28. (b) Reduced stress plot for natural rubber and a polydimethylsiloxane (PDMS) rubber as indicated. Plot illustrates that actual rubber behavior may be Mooney–Rivlin-like in tension ($\lambda^{-1} < 1$), but not in compression. • Natural rubber; ■ PDMS. Plot from Han et al. (89), natural rubber data from Ref. 90, and PDMS data from reference 91.

Mooney–Rivlin model would describe the behaviors exhibited (89–91). The reader is referred to reviews of various proposed strain energy functions (89,92,93) for further information.

Another important aspect of finite elasticity theory is the ability to measure the strain energy function derivatives $W_1 = \partial W/\partial I_1$ and $W_2 = \partial W/\partial I_2$. Penn and Kearsley (94) showed how this is done using data from torsional experiments. An interesting aspect about torsion in finite deformations is that in order to maintain the cylinder at a constant length, it is necessary to apply normal forces at the ends of the cylinder. If the cylinder is left unrestrained, it will lengthen in an effect referred to as the Poynting (95) effect, first observed early in the last century in experiments with metal wires. When a cylinder of length L is twisted by an amount ψ per unit length ($\psi = \theta/L$, where θ is the angle of twist) the magnitude of the torque (moment) M and the normal force N are given by the following expressions:

$$T = 4\pi\psi \int_0^R (W_1 + W_2)r^3 dr \quad (45)$$

$$N = -2\pi\psi^2 \int_0^R (W_1 + 2W_2)r^3 dr \quad (46)$$

where R is the cylinder radius. By differentiating each expression with respect to the limits of integration after an appropriate variable change, Penn and Kearsley (90) showed that W_1 and W_2 can be expressed as simple algebraic expressions in the torques and normal forces measured at different angles of twist, ie, deformations:

$$W_1 + W_2 = \frac{1}{4\pi\psi R^4} \left(3T + \psi \frac{dT}{d\psi} \right) \quad (47)$$

$$W_1 + 2W_2 = \frac{-1}{\pi\psi^2 R^4} \left(N + \psi^2 \frac{dN}{d\psi^2} \right) \quad (48)$$

Figure 30 shows typical torque and normal force measurements for a natural rubber sample as functions of the deformation (as ψR) in a double logarithmic plot (96). The data for T , N , and their derivatives can then be obtained and used in equations 47 and 48 to solve for W_1 and W_2 . Figure 31 shows typical data for the values of W_1 and W_2 as functions of deformation for a cross-linked natural rubber obtained from such measurements (94,97). Importantly, these values are related to the *damping function* of the DE model discussed subsequently. They represent the deformation dependence of the shear modulus in this instance.

Finite Elasticity Theory: The VL Representation. While the above description of the finite deformation behavior of elastic materials is very powerful, the limitation on it is that the material parameters W_1 and W_2 need to be determined in each geometry of deformation of interest. Hence, the torsional measurements described above only give values of $W_1(I_1, I_2)$ and $W_2(I_1, I_2)$ for the condition of

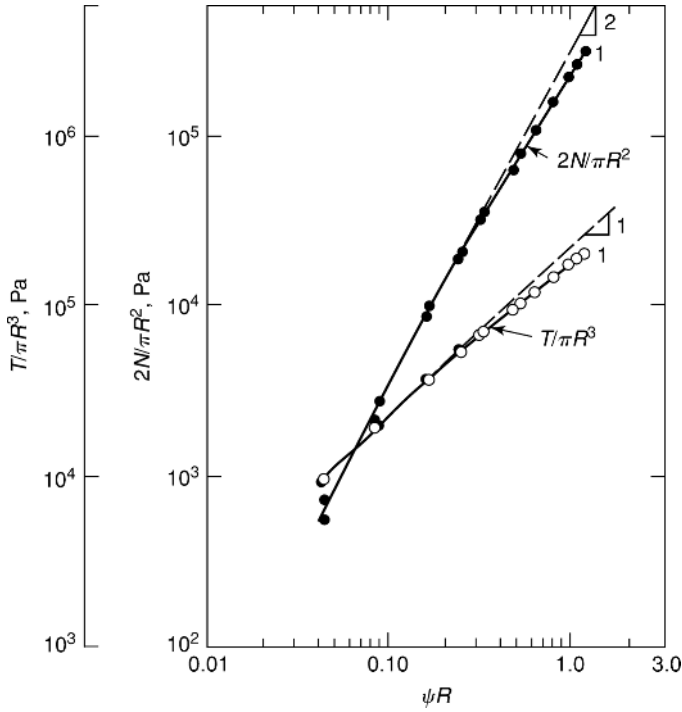


Fig. 30. Torque and normal forces (scaled by sample geometry) vs strain at outer edges of cylinder for a natural rubber sample subjected to torsional deformations. After McKenna and Zapas (96).

shear (torsion is a nonhomogeneous shear) and that condition is $I_1 = I_2 = 3 + \gamma^2$. More measurements need to be made to obtain the parameters in extension, compression, etc. However, in 1967, Valanis and Landel (98) proposed a strain energy function that, rather than being a function of the invariants, is a function of the stretches λ_i . The function was assumed to be separable in the stretches as

$$\hat{w}(\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3) = w(\lambda_1) + w(\lambda_2) + w(\lambda_3) \tag{49}$$

Then, for example, in simple extension, the stress–deformation relationship becomes

$$\sigma_{11} - \sigma_{22} = \lambda_1 w'(\lambda_1) - \lambda_2 w'(\lambda_2) \tag{50}$$

and it becomes a matter, for any deformation to determine the values of $w'(\lambda_i)$ and these can be obtained in any geometry of deformation. Thus, the inconvenience of performing large numbers of experiments in multiple geometries of deformation is avoided. There has been a considerable effort to establish the validity of the Valanis–Landel (VL) form of strain energy function (98–102) and it is generally found to be a very good representation of the material behavior, although some discrepancies have been observed. Some special forms of the VL function, such as

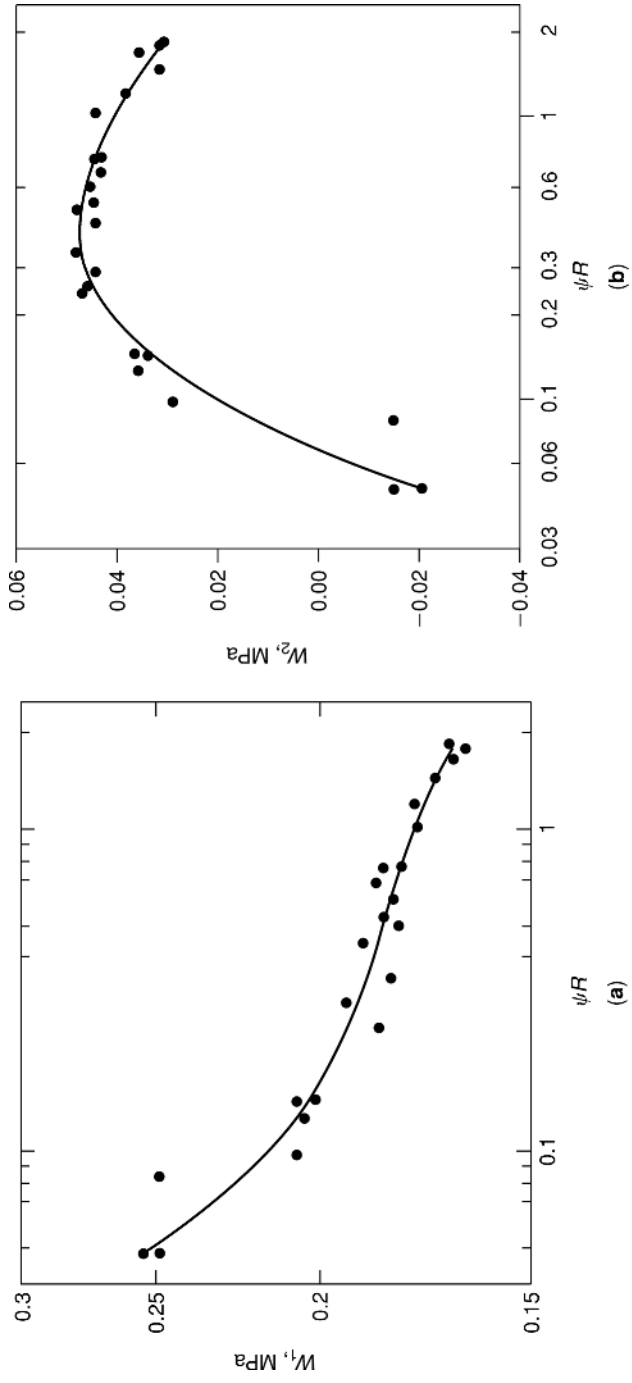


Fig. 31. (a) W_1 vs strain for a natural rubber material. (b) W_2 vs strain for a natural rubber material. Data of Penn and Kearsley (94) given in Kearsley and Zapas (97).

the Ogden model (103,104), have been found to be very useful and are commonly used in commercial finite element modeling of rubber behavior.

Because of this usefulness it is important to have relatively simple experiments available to obtain the VL function. Kearsley and Zapas (97) have shown that either simple extension combined with simple compression or torsion with normal force measurements can be used to obtain the VL function. Valanis and Landel (98) used pure shear measurements. The equations for the torsional measurements arise from the relationship between $w'(\lambda)$ and W_1 and W_2 given by

$$w'(\lambda) - \frac{w'(1)}{\lambda} = \frac{2}{\lambda}(\lambda^2 - 1) \left(W_1 + \frac{1}{\lambda^2} W_2 \right) \quad (51)$$

and the values of λ are determined from the twists of the cylinder by

$$\text{For } \lambda > 1 : \lambda_{\max} = \frac{1}{2} [(\psi^2 R^2 + 4)^{1/2} + \psi R] \quad (52)$$

Thus, from torque and normal forces in torsional experiments, the VL function derivative can be obtained. Typical data for natural rubber are presented in Figures 30, 31, 32. The figures illustrate the sequence that would be used to obtain the VL function. First, obtain torque and normal force data (Fig. 30) and use equations 47 and 48 to obtain the strain energy function derivatives W_1 and W_2 (some typical results shown in Fig. 31). Finally, data of the sort shown in Figure 31 are used to obtain the VL function derivative $w'(\lambda)$. Figure 32 shows such data obtained from torsional measurements on natural rubber samples cross-linked to different extents (102).

In the case of extension and compression data, Kearsley and Zapas (97) developed a recursive method to determine the VL function from stress-strain data similar to those presented in Figure 28. The advantage in using extension and compression data rather than torsional data is that higher values of λ can be reached.

Finally, the power of finite elasticity theory is that once the material properties [W_1 and W_2 or $w'(\lambda)$] are known, the stresses in any deformation field can be calculated. There is an extensive literature on ways to represent the material functions and, in fact, commercial finite element codes use finite elasticity theory in calculations that can be important in applications that range from the stresses in automobile tires (105) to those in earthquake bearings for large buildings (106). One feature of the K-BKZ theory to be discussed next is that it retains the structure of finite elasticity theory and includes time-dependent properties of the viscoelastic materials that were discussed in the earlier sections of this article.

The K-BKZ Theory: Model. The K-BKZ model was developed in the early 1960s by two independent groups. Bernstein, Kearsley, and Zapas (70) of the National Bureau of Standards (now the National Institute of Standards and Technology) first presented the model in 1962 and published it in 1963. Kaye (71), in Cranfield, U.K., published the model in 1962, without the extensive derivations and background thermodynamics associated with the BKZ papers (82,107). Regardless of this, only the final form of the constitutive equation is of concern here.

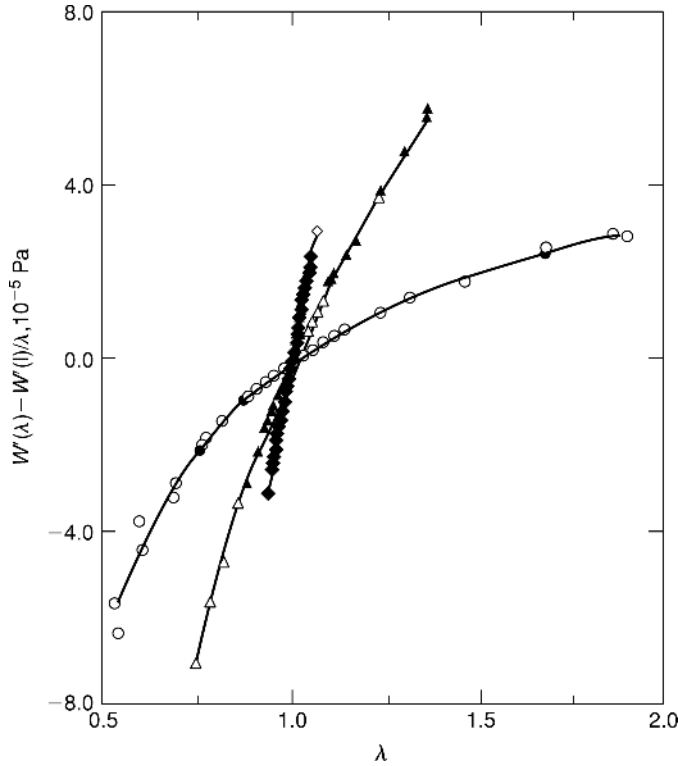


Fig. 32. The VL function (98) derivative vs stretch for natural rubber samples cured with 1, 5, and 15 parts per hundred dicumyl peroxide, as indicated. The VL function was obtained from torque and normal force measurements. \circ APHR1; Δ APHR5; \diamond APHR15. After McKenna et al. (102).

Similar to the idea of finite elasticity theory, the K-BKZ model postulates the existence of a strain potential function $U(I_1, I_2, t)$. This is similar to the strain energy density function, but it depends on time and, now, the invariants are those of the *relative* left Cauchy–Green deformation tensor $\mathbf{B}_{t,ij}$. The relevant constitutive equation is

$$\sigma_{ij}(I_1, I_2, t) = -p\delta_{ij} + \int_{-\infty}^t \{U_1(I_1, I_2, t - t')\mathbf{B}_{t,ij}(t, t') - U_2(I_1, I_2, t - t')\mathbf{B}_{t,ij}^{-1}(t, t')\} dt' \tag{53}$$

Also note that the hydrostatic pressure is indeterminate because the K-BKZ is an incompressible material model. As in finite elasticity theory, the material parameters need to be obtained and, in principle, the stress response to any deformation history can be obtained. Unlike linear viscoelasticity, the integration must be carried out from $-\infty$ to t , which can lead to difficulties in numerical computer codes. This aspect of the K-BKZ theory has been discussed by (62) Larson, among others.

The relative deformation tensor $\mathbf{B}_{t,ij}$ assumes that the current material *configuration* (the configuration at time t) is the reference configuration. This idea is important as it is common in fluid models because fluids have no natural

reference configuration while solids do. Hence, for example, the relative deformations in simple extension become

$$\lambda_{t,1} = \frac{\lambda_1(t)}{\lambda_1(t')}; \quad \lambda_{t,2} = \frac{\lambda_2(t)}{\lambda_2(t')}; \quad \lambda_{t,3} = \frac{\lambda_3(t)}{\lambda_3(t')} \quad (54)$$

and the invariants of $\mathbf{B}_{t,ij}$ are similar to those for the elastic material, but in terms of the relative deformations

$$\begin{aligned} I_1(t,t') &= \left[\frac{\lambda_1(t)}{\lambda_1(t')} \right]^2 + \left[\frac{\lambda_2(t)}{\lambda_2(t')} \right]^2 + \left[\frac{\lambda_3(t)}{\lambda_3(t')} \right]^2 \\ I_2(t,t') &= \left[\frac{\lambda_1(t')}{\lambda_1(t)} \right]^2 + \left[\frac{\lambda_2(t')}{\lambda_2(t)} \right]^2 + \left[\frac{\lambda_3(t')}{\lambda_3(t)} \right]^2 \\ I_3(t,t') &= 1 = \left\{ \left[\frac{\lambda_1(t)}{\lambda_1(t')} \right] \left[\frac{\lambda_2(t)}{\lambda_2(t')} \right] \left[\frac{\lambda_3(t)}{\lambda_3(t')} \right] \right\}^2 \end{aligned} \quad (55)$$

The utility of the K-BKZ theory arises from several aspects of the model. First, it does capture many of the features, described below, of the behavior of polymeric melts and fluids subjected to large deformations or high shear rates. That is, it captures many of the nonlinear behaviors described above for steady flows as well as behaviors in transient conditions. In addition, unlike the more general *multiple integral* constitutive models (108,109), the experimental data required to determine the material properties are not overly burdensome. In fact, the information required is the single-step stress relaxation response in the mode of deformation of interest (72). If one is only interested in, eg, simple shear, then experiments need only be performed in simple shear and the exact form for $U(I_1, I_2, t)$ need not be obtained. Furthermore, because the structure of the K-BKZ model is similar to that of finite elasticity theory, if a full three-dimensional characterization of the material is needed, some of the simplifying aspects of finite elasticity theories that have been developed over the years can be applied to the behavior of the viscoelastic fluid description provided by the K-BKZ model. One such example is the use of the VL form (98) of the strain energy function discussed above (110). The next section shows some comparisons of the material response predicted by the K-BKZ theory with actual experimental data.

The K-BKZ Theory: Comparison with Experiment. The first data required to test the K-BKZ model is single-step stress relaxation data to determine the material parameters of interest. This is best seen from the following example for a simple shearing history. From equation 49, the shear stress for a simple shear deformation can be expressed as (see Ref. 72)

$$\sigma_{i,j}(t) = \int_{-\infty}^t -K_*[\gamma(t) - \gamma(t'), t - t'] dt' \quad (56)$$

where $\gamma(t) - \gamma(t')$ is the relative strain and K_* is the partial derivative of the relaxation function $K[\gamma(t) - \gamma(t'), t - t']$ with respect to the second (time) argument. For the single-step stress relaxation history in which $\gamma(t) = 0$ for $t < 0$ and $\gamma(t) = \gamma$

for $t > 0$, equation 52 reduces to

$$\sigma_{ij}(t) = \int_{-\infty}^0 -K_*[\gamma, t-t'] dt' \quad (57)$$

Defining $\xi = t - t'$ and performing a change of variables, equation 57 can be evaluated as

$$\sigma_{ij}(t) = \int_{\infty}^t K_*(\gamma, \xi) d\xi = K(\gamma, t) - K(\gamma, \infty) \quad (58)$$

and because the material is a fluid, $K(\gamma, \infty) = 0$. Therefore, the shear stress is simply equal to its relaxation function $K(\gamma, t)$ for an applied shear strain of γ . As suggested by equations 56, 57, 58, one need not actually determine the values of $U_i(I_1, I_2, t)$ when the experiments of interest are always of the same geometry.

Also, because of the structure of the K-BKZ theory, torsional measurements can also be analyzed in a fashion similar to equation 58. Recall Figure 24, which depicts the single-step stress relaxation responses for a concentrated polymer solution in a torsional (parallel plate) experiment as isochronal plots of stress vs strain on double-logarithmic axes. It is worth noting that in the moderate strain regime, these data look similar to the elastic data of Figure 30. But, at large strains the curves go through a maximum. This is undoubtedly because the solutions can be deformed to a much greater magnitude than can the cross-linked rubber.

Once the single-step data are known, then integration of equation 56 (or eq. 53) for different strain histories leads to predictions for the material response in any deformation history of interest. A very powerful method of evaluating constitutive equations is the double-step strain history in which the second-step response should be able to be predicted by the model in question. Figure 33 shows the set of two-step histories that is dealt with here and subsequently. Figures 34, 35, 36, 37, 38 show comparisons between K-BKZ predictions and the experimental data for two-step stress relaxation experiments (111), constant rate of loading and unloading experiments, creep and recovery experiments, relaxation after steady shearing flow at different shear rates, and superposition of small deformations on large ones; this last being a multiple-step experiment that could be treated as a three-step case (79) As seen, these experiments show excellent agreement between the theory and the experiment, indicating the power of the model. Another interesting aspect of the K-BKZ theory is the predictions it makes for the normal stress responses in the so-called *half-step deformation history* in which the second step is $\frac{1}{2}$ the magnitude of the first, as depicted in Figure 33c. For any two-step history, the shear and normal stress difference responses (or torque and normal force responses) can be written as (72,112–117)

$$\begin{aligned} \sigma_{12}(t-t_1) &= K(\gamma_2, t) + K(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t-t_1) - K(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \\ \sigma_{22}(t-t_1) - \sigma_{22}(t-t_1) &= H_1(\gamma_2, t) + H_1(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t-t_1) - H_1(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \\ \sigma_{22}(t-t_1) - \sigma_{33}(t-t_1) &= H_2(\gamma_2, t) + H_2(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t-t_1) - H_2(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \end{aligned} \quad (59)$$

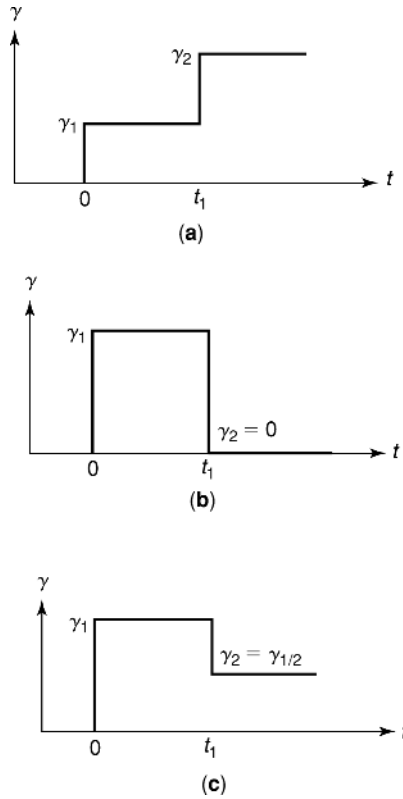


Fig. 33. Two-step strain histories. (a) Step-up, (b) step to zero deformation, and (c) half-step deformation histories.

where $K(\gamma, t)$ is the single-step stress relaxation response of the shear (or torque) and $H_i(\gamma, t)$ is that of the i^{th} principal stress difference (or normal force). On substituting torque T and normal force N for a torsional experiment into equations 59, one would see that the torque response is an odd function of the strain [$T(-\gamma) = -T(\gamma)$] and the normal force is an even function of strain [$N(-\gamma) = N(\gamma)$]. Then, for the special $\frac{1}{2}$ -step history where $\gamma_1 = 2\gamma$, the torque and normal force responses become

$$\begin{aligned}
 T(\psi_2, t - t_1) &= 2K(\psi_2, t) - K(\psi_2, t - t_1) \\
 N(\psi_2, t - t_1) &= H(\psi_2, t - t_1)
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{60}$$

which means that the torque response depends upon the full deformation history. On the other hand, the normal force response depends only upon the time after the first step ($t - t_1$), ie, is independent of the duration of the first step and would be equal to the magnitude of the response to a single-step deformation to a torsion magnitude of ψ_2 . Figure 39 provides the experimental evidence that this is, indeed, the behavior followed by a polyisobutylene solution. Subsequent

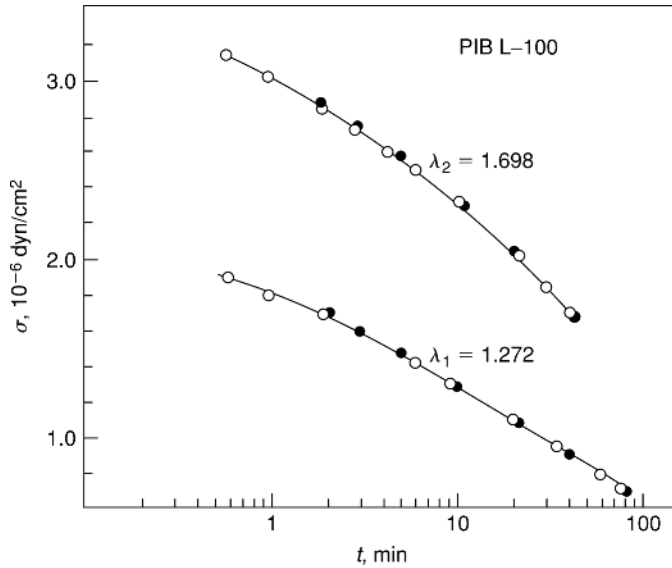


Fig. 34. Comparison of K-BKZ predictions (filled circles) with experimental data (open circles) for step-up experiment in uniaxial extension for a polyisobutylene material. After Zapas and Craft (111), with permission.

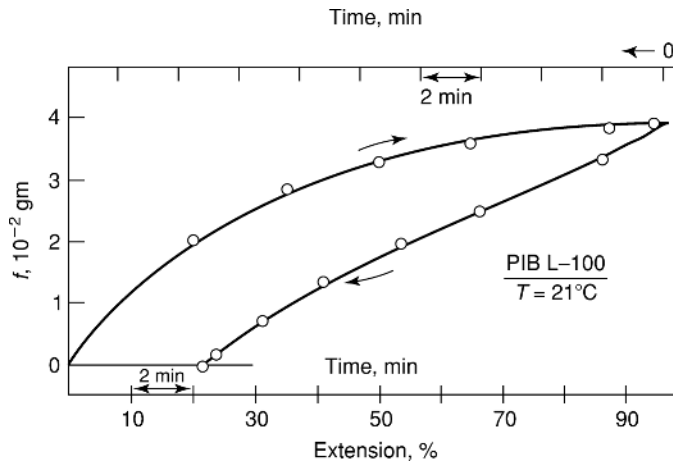


Fig. 35. Comparison of K-BKZ predictions (open circles) with experimental data (solid line) for a constant rate of strain (load-unload) history for a polyisobutylene material. After Zapas and Craft (111), with permission.

data, however, indicate that this may not be universally true (115–117). This is discussed subsequently.

The data shown thus far describing the success of the K-BKZ theory were, generally, such that the stress never changed sign. However, it turns out that in *stress-reversing* flows, the K-BKZ theory seems not to work as well (62,82,107,

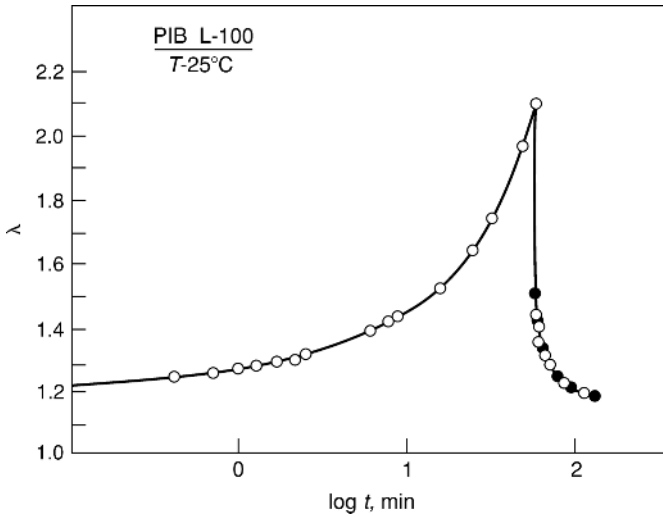


Fig. 36. Comparison of K-BKZ predictions (filled circles) with experimental data (open circles) for creep and recovery for a polyisobutylene material. After Zapas and Craft (111), with permission.

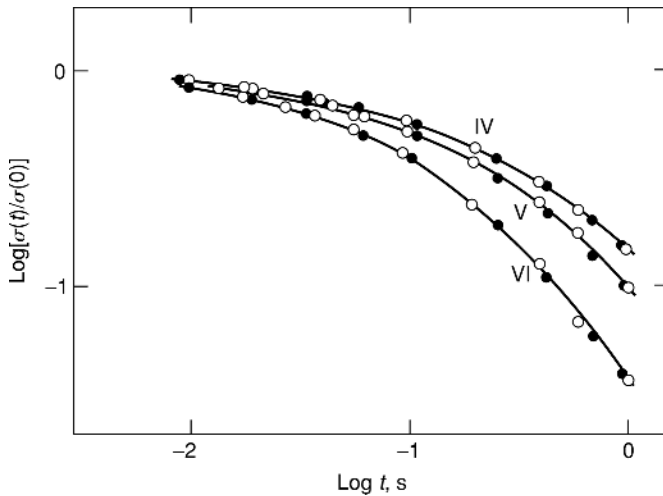


Fig. 37. Comparison of K-BKZ predictions (filled circles) with experimental data (open circles) for relaxation after a steady shearing flow. (IV) 0.177 s^{-1} ; (V) 1.11 s^{-1} ; (VI) 5.56 s^{-1} . After Zapas and Craft (111), with permission.

112,114,116,118). Figure 40 shows the shear stress response for a polyisobutylene solution in the half-step history just discussed. The response is clearly not in agreement with the K-BKZ theory prediction. Also, in some flows, predicting the pure shear behavior, which has an extensional component to it, is not consistent with the simple shear predictions (119).

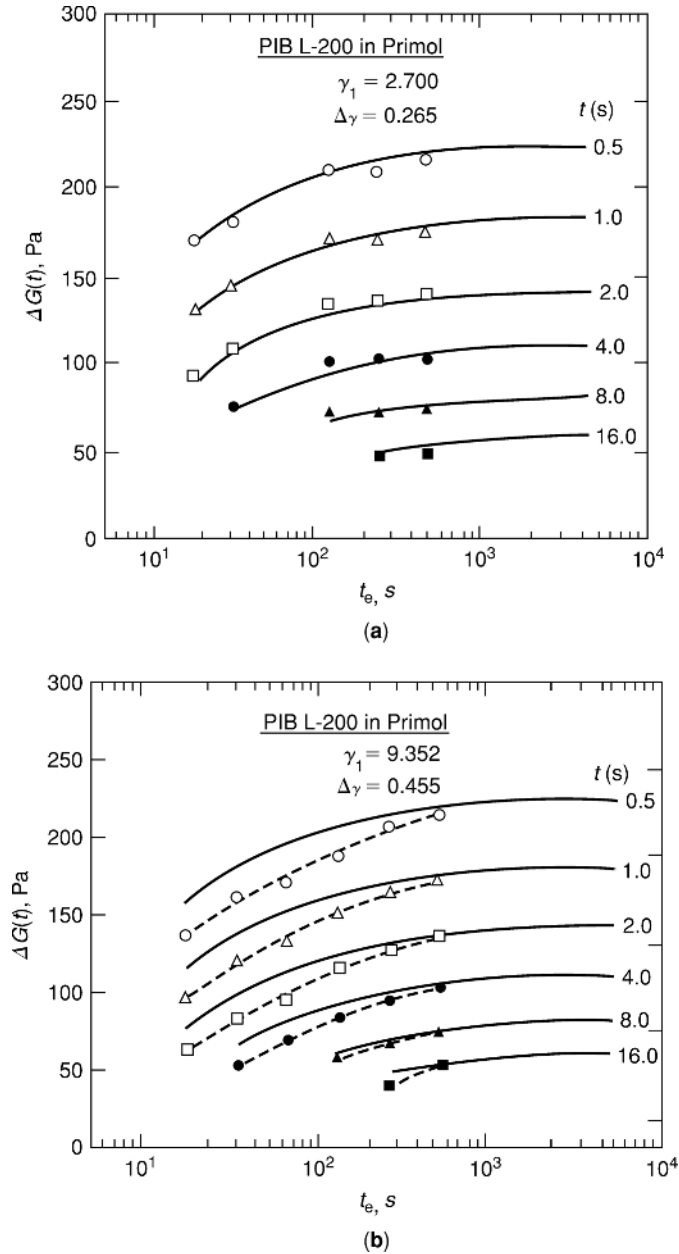


Fig. 38. Comparison of the K-BKZ predictions (lines) with data for the incremental modulus response to a small strain $\Delta\gamma$ superimposed on a large strain γ as a function of time t_e elapsed after the imposition of the large strain. Part (a) shows excellent agreement between the theory and experiment for $\gamma = 2.7$, while part (b) shows moderate deviations at small t_e values when $\gamma_1 = 9.4$. After McKenna and Zapas (79).

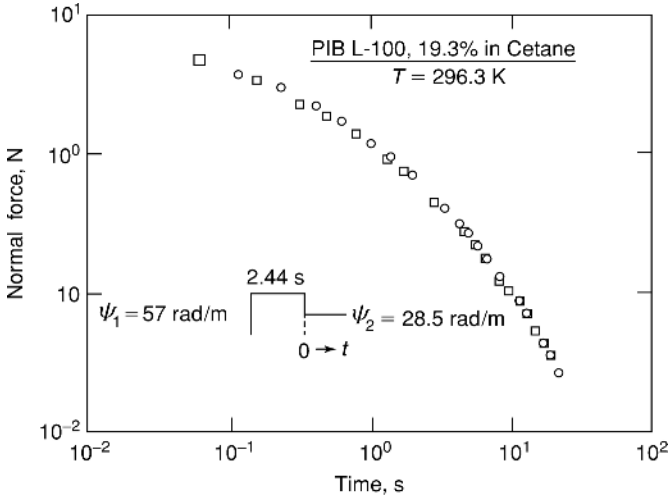


Fig. 39. Comparison of the K-BKZ prediction (squares) for the “half-step” normal stress response with the experimental behavior (open circles) for a polyisobutylene solution. After McKenna and Zapas (113).

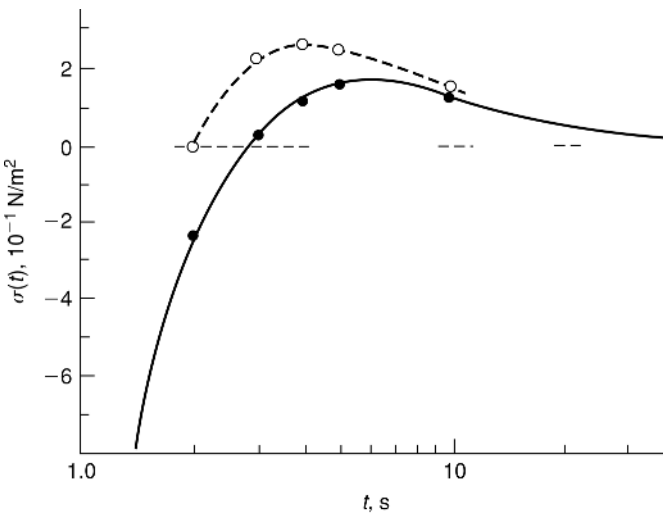


Fig. 40. Comparison of the “half-step” shear stress response predicted by the K-BKZ theory (open circles) with the experimental data (filled circles) for a polyisobutylene solution. After Zapas (118), with permission.

The Doi–Edwards Theory. Much of the excitement that came during the early years of the Doi–Edwards (DE) tube model (52–56) for reptation of polymer chains revolved about the fact that the use of the *independent alignment* assumption resulted in a special form of the K-BKZ model. Hence, much of the machinery that was developed in the 1960s and early 1970s to test the K-BKZ model could be implemented to test the DE model. The next sections discuss the

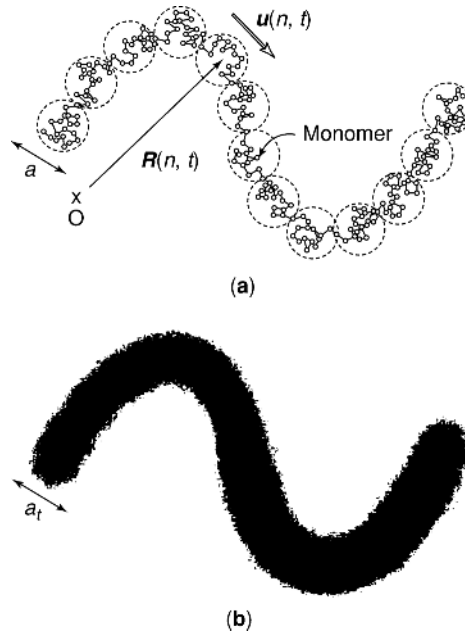


Fig. 41. Schematic representation of a real chain (a) and a coarse-grained chain (b). In the real chain depiction the small beads connected by rods are the monomeric segments and the circles represent the submolecules of the coarse-grained chain. Part (b) represents the hypothetical time-exposure photograph. After Watanabe (63), with permission.

molecular basis of the DE model, the independent alignment assumption, and how well monodisperse polymers follow the DE version of the K-BKZ model.

The Molecular Description. The fundamentals of reptation theory are best understood with the general *coarse-grained* models of a single polymer chain. If one considers the linear polymer chain to be composed of m monomers and also considers the *Rouse* approximation (120) that there are no hydrodynamic interactions [in concentrated solutions and melts this is a very good approximation (9,63)] and that the chain assumes a *Gaussian* conformation, the chain can be divided into N submolecules, each containing g monomers. The average size a of the submolecule in the Gaussian conformation is related to the step length b of the monomer (63):

$$a^2 = gb^2 \quad (61)$$

The real chain is coarse-grained in both time and space, by dividing it into submolecules. Figure 41a shows the Rouse chain and Figure 41b illustrates a hypothetical experiment (63) in which the molecule is photographed with an exposure time t_0 . When the time t_0 is large, the chain looks like a fuzzy thread with a width a_t because of the chain motion in the time interval of the “photograph.” The dynamics of this Rouse chain are considered as the motion of a string of Gaussian submolecules in a viscous medium. The friction coefficient ζ on the submolecule

or bead is given by

$$\zeta = g\zeta_0 \quad (62)$$

where ζ_0 is the monomeric friction coefficient. It is assumed that the force acting on a bead is represented by a Gaussian spring with a spring constant κ given by

$$\kappa = \frac{3k_B T}{a^2} \quad (63)$$

where k_B is the Boltzmann constant and T is the absolute temperature. The time-evolution of the position $\mathbf{R}(n,t)$ of the n th submolecule (bead) can be obtained by considering the forces acting on the the bead: frictional \mathbf{F}_f , elastic (entropic) \mathbf{F}_e , and Brownian \mathbf{F}_B . For large N (long chains) the equation can be written as (121)

$$-\zeta \left[\frac{\partial \mathbf{R}(n,t)}{\partial t} \right] + \kappa \frac{\partial^2 \mathbf{R}(n,t)}{\partial n^2} + \mathbf{F}_B(n,t) = 0 \quad (64)$$

The first and second terms represent the frictional force $\mathbf{F}_f(n, t)$ and the elastic force $\mathbf{F}_e(n, t)$, respectively. The Brownian force \mathbf{F}_B is modeled as white noise (56, 63).

Solution of equation 64 permits the determination of the dynamic properties of the chain (56,63). For this paper, the results are given for the polymer melt or concentrated solution, not for the single chain contributions to a dilute solution. The reader is referred to References 56 and 63 for more details. The properties of interest are

$$\text{Relaxation modulus: } G(t) = \frac{vk_B T}{N} \sum_{p=1}^N \exp\left(\frac{-2tp^2}{\lambda_{R,G}}\right) \quad (65)$$

where $\lambda_{R,G}$ is the longest relaxation time for the Rouse chain, given by

$$\lambda_{R,G} = \frac{\zeta a^2 N^2}{3\pi^2 k_B T} \quad (66)$$

Note that v is the number density of Rouse segments in chains of N segments in length and that are monodisperse. The index p is the eigenmode from the solution to the equation of motion. Furthermore, equation 65 is the equation for a special form of the generalized Maxwell model having constant coefficients $G_i = vk_B T$ (see eq. 18). The relaxation times are given by $\lambda_{R,G}/2p^2$.

The *zero shear rate viscosity* is calculated from (56)

$$\eta_0 = \frac{v\zeta a^2 N}{36} \quad (67)$$

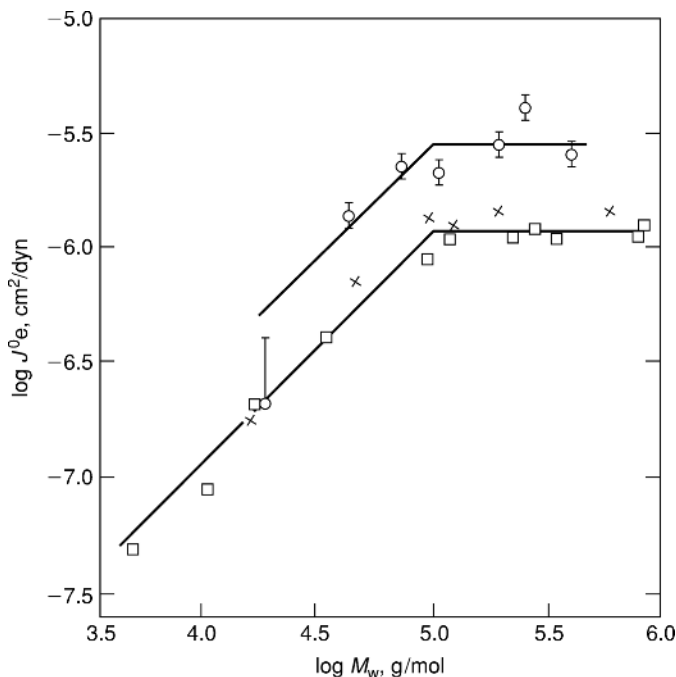


Fig. 42. Double logarithmic representation of the steady-state (recoverable) compliance as a function of molecular weight for linear (squares and crosses) and cyclic (circles) polystyrenes melts. After McKenna et al. (122).

and the *steady-state (recoverable) compliance* is calculated from

$$J_s = \frac{1}{\eta_0^2} \int_0^\infty tG(t)dt = \frac{2}{5\nu k_B T} = \frac{2M}{5\rho RT} \quad (68)$$

where ρ is the density and M is the molecular weight. Although the Rouse model was derived for dilute solutions in which there is no hydrodynamic interaction, it seems to best describe the behavior of concentrated solutions and melts that are disentangled. This is particularly so for the viscosity, which at low molecular weights seems to follow the first power prediction given by equation 67 (recall Fig. 18 at low molecular weights). Also, the equilibrium recoverable compliance of short-chain melts (both linear and cyclic) seems to follow the correct scaling with molecular weight, as shown in Figure 42. However, once the chains get long enough to be entangled, the Rouse-like behavior no longer holds. After entanglement begins, the viscosity follows the very strong $M^{3.4}$ behavior seen in Figure 18 and the steady-state (recoverable) compliance becomes constant as seen in Figure 42 (122). It is here that a model is needed that goes beyond the Rouse model and includes entanglement effects. As noted above, the reptation model of de Gennes (51) and Doi and Edwards (52–56) is the current paradigm for polymer dynamics in the entangled state. Essentially, the DE tube model of reptation is a Rouse chain that moves through a tube that acts as a mean field of constraint. Figure 43 illustrates the movement of the chain in a tube, where the Brownian dynamics

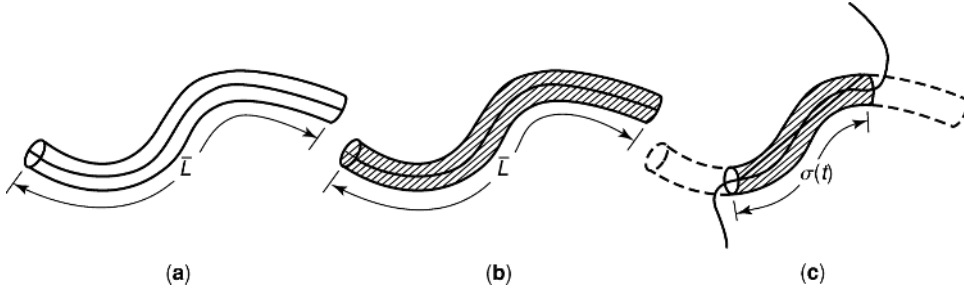


Fig. 43. Schematic of stress relaxation of a chain in the tube in the DE model for small deformations. (a) Prior to deformation, the tube has its equilibrium conformation. (b) Immediately after the deformation, the entire tube is deformed. At small strains, the contour length of the tube is unchanged. (c) At a later time t , the chain has partially escaped from the tube and remains partially confined by the deformed tube. The average of the contour length $\sigma(t)$ of this part of the tube is equal to $L\mu_{\text{rep}}(t)$. After Doi and Edwards (56), with permission.

of the chain causes it to move about in the original tube until it completely disengages and the new surroundings form a new tube. Here we consider the model at length scales greater than the tube diameter a , which has been identified (57) with the (mean) distance between entanglements or a Rouse submolecule of the size of the entanglement spacing. The important parameters are the number of monomers m_e in the *entanglement segment*, the tube diameter, the friction coefficient ζ for the entanglement segment, and the number of segments in the chain N . The trajectory of bond vectors of the entanglement segments coincides with the tube axis that is referred to as the *primitive path*. These are related to the physical chain by (63)

$$\text{Tube diameter: } a = m_e^{1/2} b$$

$$\text{Friction factor: } \zeta = m_e \zeta_0 \quad (69)$$

$$\text{Number of segments: } N = \frac{m}{m_e}$$

where b is the effective step length of the monomer, m is the number of monomers in the chain or the degree of polymerization, and ζ_0 is the monomeric friction factor. Note that, with the exception of N , the parameters in equation 69 are independent of chain length.

In the equilibrium conformation the centerline of the tube represents a random walk with a step length that corresponds to the tube diameter. If the tube is treated as a system of slip links through which the chain can pass, the mean field of the surrounding chains results in an equivalent tensile force F_{eq} that acts on the chain ends (63,121):

$$F_{\text{eq}} = \frac{3k_B T}{a} \quad (70)$$

This force acts to constrain the lateral motion of the chains (tube constraints) and the average contour length of the tube coincides with the equilibrium tube length L_{eq} :

$$L_{\text{eq}} = Na = \frac{R_e^2}{a} \quad (71)$$

where R_e^2 is the mean-square end-to-end distance of the unperturbed chain.

According to the DE model, the tube is fixed in space and, at equilibrium, the contour length is constant $L = L_{\text{eq}}$. This results in all entanglement segments moving together back and forth within the tube and along the tube axis. Hence, the motion is equivalent to one-dimensional diffusion within the tube along the tube axis. If one defines the position along the tube as a segment number (given by s/a , where s is the segment position), one can write an equation for the evolution of the position $\mathbf{R}(n, t)$ and the unit bond vector of the n th entanglement segment $\mathbf{u}(n, t)$:

$$\mathbf{R}(n, t + \Delta t) = \mathbf{R}(n + \Delta n, t), \mathbf{u}(n, t + \Delta t) = \mathbf{u}(n + \Delta n, t) \quad (72)$$

where Δn is a normalized (by a) stochastic sliding distance and Δt is the time for the chain to slide this distance. Then, the Rouse chain in the tube has a curvilinear motion with a diffusion coefficient D_c that is obtained from the stochastic sliding process (61):

$$\langle \Delta n \rangle = 0, \langle \Delta n^2 \rangle = \frac{2D_c}{a^2} \Delta t, \text{ and } D_c = \frac{k_B T}{N\zeta} \quad (73)$$

The rapid motion of the entanglement segments at the chain (and tube) ends allows these to have their equilibrated configuration:

$$\mathbf{u} = a\tilde{\mathbf{u}}_{\text{eq}} \text{ (at the chain ends)} \quad (74)$$

where $\tilde{\mathbf{u}}_{\text{eq}}$ is an isotropically distributed unit vector.

The coarse-grained chain just discussed can be used to describe reptation dynamics at spatial scales $> a$ and time scales greater than the time $\Delta t^*(a)$ for the chain to move (reptate) a distance a (63):

$$\Delta t^*(a) = \frac{Na^2\zeta}{2k_B T} \quad (75)$$

The dynamic properties for the reptation model just described are obtained by solving the equations 71, 72, 73, 74 and the linear viscoelastic properties are solved from the relationship between the stress and the chain orientation function (63). Without going into detail, the results for times longer than the tube equilibration time but shorter than the reptation time are

$$G(t) = G_N \mu_{\text{rep}}(t) \quad (76a)$$

where

$$G_N = \frac{4}{5} v N k_B T \quad (76b)$$

and

$$\mu_{\text{rep}} = \sum_{p=\text{odd}} \frac{8}{p^2 \pi^2} \exp\left(-\frac{tp^2}{\lambda_{\text{rep}}}\right) \quad (76c)$$

with

$$\lambda_{\text{rep}} = \frac{\zeta N^3 a^2}{\pi^2 k_B T} \quad (76d)$$

In equation 76a the reptation time λ_{rep} is the time for the chain to escape from the tube (orientation relaxation occurs from the end to the center of the chain). G_N is the entanglement plateau modulus (this value is slightly different from that implied from rubber elasticity of an entangled network) and $\mu_{\text{rep}}(t)$ is a normalized relaxation modulus for the reptation process. In this time regime, equation 76a implies that the modulus is separable into a time function and a modulus function. This becomes important in discussing the nonlinear response, which is done, in more detail, below. Some other viscoelastic functions from the DE tube model of reptation are

$$\eta_0 = \frac{\pi^2 G_N \lambda_{\text{rep}}}{12} \quad (77)$$

$$J_s = \frac{6}{5 G_N} = \frac{6}{5} J_N \quad (78)$$

At this point the reptation theory makes some strong predictions about the viscoelastic response in the linear regime, viz, the viscosity varies as N^3 and the ratio of $J_s^0/G_N = 6/5 = 1.2$. Note that the molecular weight dependence of the viscosity has already been discussed above, and recall that, experimentally, the viscosity varies as $N^{3.4}$. In addition, the ratio J_s^0/G_N is observed experimentally to be in the range of 2–2.5. In spite of these failings, the reptation model is very powerful. The next section examines the stress response to deformation histories in the nonlinear range.

The DE Constitutive Equations. The DE model (52–56) made a major breakthrough in polymer viscoelasticity in that it provided an important new molecular physics based constitutive relation (between the stress and the applied deformation history). This section outlines the DE approach that built on the reptation-tube model developed above and gave a nonlinear constitutive equation, which in one simplified form gives the K-BKZ equation (70,71). The model also inspired a significant amount of experimental work. One should begin by

looking at the calculation of the stresses for a material at times longer than the time it takes for the tube to equilibrate, ie, times in the reptation regime.

Doi and Edwards (56) calculate the stress considering how the conformation of the primitive chain $\mathbf{R}(s, t)$ is changed by the macroscopic deformation. First, one needs to know the stress equation in terms of the chain conformation, and then how the chain conformation (orientations) changes with the macroscopic deformation field. The stress equation is developed as follows:

$$\sigma_{\alpha\beta}(t) = \frac{v}{N} \left\langle \int_0^L F(t) u_{\alpha}(s, t) u_{\beta}(s, t) ds \right\rangle \quad (79)$$

where $\mathbf{u}(s, t) = \partial \mathbf{R}(s, t) / \partial s$ is the unit vector tangent to the primitive chain and $F(t)$ is the tensile force acting on the primitive chain. In the equilibrium state

$$F_{\text{eq}} = \frac{3k_{\text{B}}T}{Na^2} L \quad (80)$$

and in the nonequilibrium state

$$F(t) = \frac{3k_{\text{B}}T}{Na^2} L(t) \quad (81)$$

where $L(t)$ is the tube contour at time t and L is its equilibrium value. From equations 79, 80, 81 the relationship between the stress, the contour length, and the changing chain orientation is obtained as

$$\sigma_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{3vk_{\text{B}}T}{N^2a^2} \left\langle \int_0^{L(t)} L(t) \left[u_{\alpha}(s, t) u_{\beta}(s, t) - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{\alpha\beta} \right] ds \right\rangle \quad (82)$$

It is now necessary to develop the equations for the relationship between the macroscopic deformations and the chain orientations. Doi and Edwards assume that the deformation is affine, ie, the primitive chain deforms in the same way as the macroscopic deformation field. Thus, a point $\mathbf{R}(s, -0)$ on the primitive chain is displaced as

$$\mathbf{R}(s, -0) \rightarrow \mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{R}(s, -0) \quad (83)$$

where \mathbf{E} is the deformation gradient tensor and its components are written as

$$E_{\alpha\beta} = \frac{\partial r'_{\alpha}}{\partial r_{\beta}} \quad (84)$$

where r' is the coordinate in the deformed state and r is the coordinate in the undeformed state. (Note that this is similar to the definitions used earlier in defining the strains and relative deformations.)

Doi and Edwards then derive expressions for the changing contour length and change in the orientation of the primitive path. The development is beyond the scope of the current article. The important expression is that for the chain

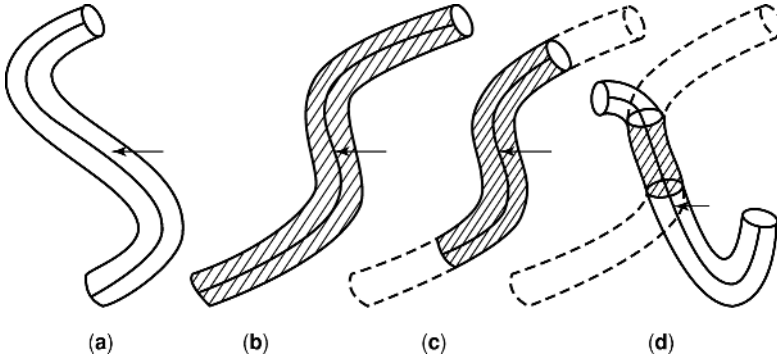


Fig. 44. Schematic of the stress relaxation process after a large step in deformation. (a) Equilibrium conformation of the tube prior to deformation. (b) Immediately after deformation, the primitive chain has been affinely deformed. (c) After the time λ_R , the primitive chain retracts along the tube and recovers its equilibrium contour length ($t \cong \lambda_R$). (d) After the time λ_d the primitive chain leaves the deformed tube by reptation ($t \cong \lambda_d$). After Doi and Edwards (56), with permission.

orientation tensor \mathbf{Q} as a function of the macroscopic deformation gradient tensor:

$$\mathbf{Q}_{\alpha\beta}(\mathbf{E}) = \frac{\left\langle \frac{(E \cdot u)_\alpha (E \cdot u)_\beta}{|E \cdot u|} \right\rangle_0}{\langle |E \cdot u| \rangle_0} - \frac{1}{3} \delta_{\alpha\beta} \quad (85)$$

Then it is possible to determine the response of the “reptation” material to single-step stress relaxation strain histories at large deformations. The relaxation of the tube contour length $L(t)$ takes place on the time scale of the longest Rouse time of the chain in the tube and reorientation takes place over the reptation time scale λ_{rep} as the chain disengages from the tube. This is shown schematically in Figure 44. Therefore, the relaxation for times greater than the equilibration time (the Rouse time for a free chain) takes place in two steps. In the time scale during which the tube recovers its original contour length (contour length relaxation),

$$\begin{aligned} \sigma_{\alpha\beta}(t) &= G_e \{1 + [\alpha(\mathbf{E}) - 1] \exp(-t/\lambda_R)\}^2 \mathbf{Q}_{\alpha\beta}(\mathbf{E}), \quad \lambda_e \leq t \leq \lambda_R \\ \text{where } G_e &= \frac{15}{4} G_N \text{ and } \alpha(\mathbf{E}) = \langle |E \cdot u| \rangle_0 \end{aligned} \quad (86)$$

For the time after the tube has regained its original contour length, the chain begins to disengage from the tube via the reptation mechanism. The relaxation response during this time is

$$\sigma_{\alpha\beta}(t) = G_e \mathbf{Q}_{\alpha\beta}(\mathbf{E}) \mu_{\text{rep}}(t), \quad t > \lambda_R \quad (87)$$

where $\mu_{\text{rep}}(t)$ is given as the relaxation function for reptation in equation 76a. Combining equations 86 and 87 one obtains the relaxation function for the

two-step process:

$$\sigma_{\alpha\beta}(t) = G_e \mathbf{Q}_{\alpha\beta}(\mathbf{E}) \{1 + [\alpha(\mathbf{E}) - 1] \exp(-t/\lambda_R)\}^2 \mu_{\text{rep}}(t), \quad t > \lambda_e \quad (88)$$

For a simple shearing deformation, $\alpha(\mathbf{E}) = \alpha(\gamma)$ and $\mathbf{Q}_{\alpha\beta}(\mathbf{E}) = \mathbf{Q}_{\alpha\beta}(\gamma)$. In the linear (small deformation) regime one finds

$$\begin{aligned} \sigma(\gamma) &= \langle (1 + 2\gamma u_x u_y + \gamma^2 u_y^2)^{1/2} \rangle_0 = 1 + \frac{2}{15} \gamma^2 + O(\gamma^4) \\ \mathbf{Q}_{xy}(\gamma) &= \frac{1}{\alpha(\gamma)} \left\langle \frac{(u_x + \gamma u_y) u_y}{(1 + 2\gamma u_x u_y + \gamma^2 u_y^2)^{1/2}} \right\rangle = \frac{4}{15} \gamma + O(\gamma^3) \end{aligned} \quad (89)$$

and the stress response (eq. 88) becomes

$$\sigma_{xy}(t) = \frac{4}{15} \gamma G_e \mu_{\text{rep}}(t) + O(\gamma^3) \quad (90)$$

which is the linear viscoelastic response to a single-step stress relaxation history.

For larger deformations, equation 88 is used. For convenience the nonlinear relaxation modulus is defined as

$$G(\gamma, t) = \frac{1}{\gamma} \sigma_{xy}(t, \gamma) \quad (91)$$

Then, equations 88 and 91 give the following expression for the nonlinear modulus:

$$\begin{aligned} G(\gamma, t) &= G_e \frac{\mathbf{Q}_{xy}(\gamma)}{\gamma} \{1 + [\alpha(\gamma) - 1] \exp(-t/\lambda_R)\}^2 \mu_{\text{rep}}(t) \\ &= h(\gamma) G(t) \{1 + [\alpha(\gamma) - 1] \exp(-t/\lambda_R)\}^2 \end{aligned} \quad (92)$$

Here $G(t)$ is the linear viscoelastic modulus and $h(\gamma)$, the *damping function* in shear is introduced. For small γ , the linear response is recovered. As γ increases, we see another relaxation in $G(\gamma, t)$ at short times that corresponds to the relaxation of the contour length. Figures 45 and 46 show the expected relaxation behavior and that obtained experimentally for a high molecular weight polymer in solution. The theoretical curves show more nearly exponential decays for both mechanisms than is seen in the actual data, which has a broader relaxational behavior. This is a well-known weakness of the DE model that is related to the relaxation function being nearly exponential in nature (the longest relaxation time is widely separated from the next time which also has a lower intensity).

In examining the single-step stress relaxation behavior of the DE model, one can also look at the normal stress responses in shearing experiments. The first and second normal stress differences are $N_1(\gamma, t)$ and $N_2(\gamma, t)$ respectively.

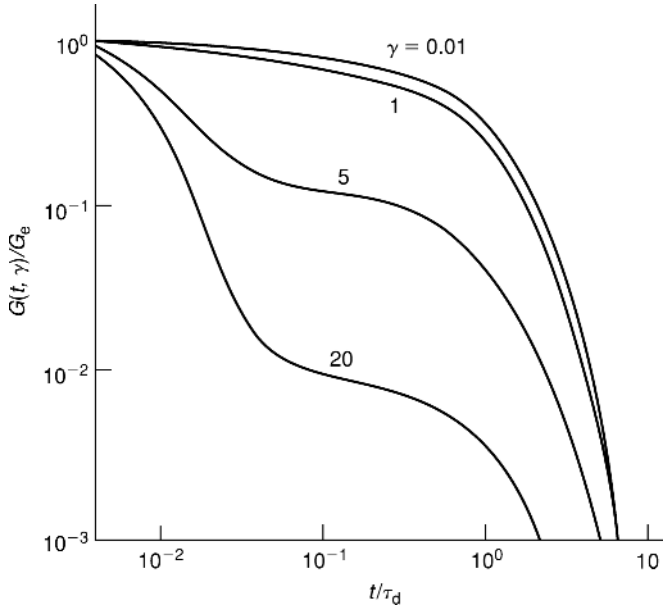


Fig. 45. Theoretical curve for the nonlinear relaxation modulus $G(t, \gamma)$ [= $G(\gamma, t)$] at different values of γ as indicated in the figure. The plot is for the case of $\lambda_d/\lambda_R = 100$. After Doi and Edwards (56), with permission.

The relevant equations are (56)

$$N_1(\gamma, t) = \frac{Q_{xx}(\gamma) - Q_{yy}(\gamma)}{Q_{xy}(\gamma)} \sigma_{xy}(\gamma, t) \tag{93}$$

$$N_2(\gamma, t) = \frac{Q_{yy}(\gamma) - Q_{zz}(\gamma)}{Q_{xy}(\gamma)} \sigma_{xy}(\gamma, t)$$

and since

$$Q_{xx}(\gamma) - Q_{yy}(\gamma) = \gamma Q_{xy}(\gamma) \tag{94}$$

$N_1(\gamma, t)$ can be written as

$$N_1(\gamma, t) = \gamma \sigma_{xy}(\gamma, t) \tag{95}$$

This relation, which also results from the K-BKZ model, is referred to as the Lodge–Meissner relationship (124) and results for materials with a finite elastic modulus at zero time.

The framework for examining arbitrary deformation histories for the “reptation” fluid has now been established and one can obtain a constitutive law for the stress response to arbitrary deformation histories. While the DE model can provide a more general constitutive equation than that to be developed now, the

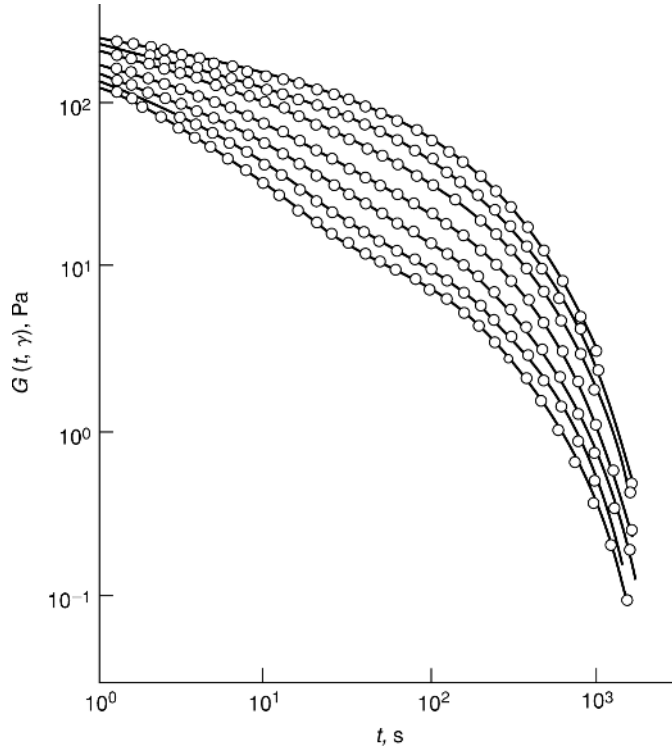


Fig. 46. Nonlinear relaxation modulus $G(t, \gamma)$ [= $G(\gamma, t)$] for a solution of polystyrene in chlorinated biphenyl ($\phi = 0.06 \text{ g/cm}^3$) at 30°C . From top to bottom, shear strains γ are 0.57, 1.25, 2.06, 3.04, 4.0, 5.3, and 6.1. After Osaki et al. (123), with permission.

more general form requires numerical solution. The approximation known as the *independent alignment assumption* (IA) results in a closed form solution that gives a special case of the K-BKZ theory developed previously.

First, consider a simplification in which it is assumed that the contour length of the primitive chain remains at the equilibrium length L under the imposed deformation. This assumes an inextensible primitive chain and is seen as a reasonable approximation for slow flows or long times. Then, the deformation of the primitive chain is given by considering that the segment in the middle of the chain changes position affinely as

$$R'(0) = E \cdot R(0) \quad (96)$$

where $R(s)$ is the primitive chain conformation before deformation and $R'(s)$ is that after deformation. The primitive chain segments go from $-L/2$ to $L/2$; hence the middle is at 0.

Then the segment s' lies on the curve $E \cdot R(s)$ so that

$$R'(s') = E \cdot R(s) \quad (97)$$

s' is the contour length along the curve $E \cdot R(s'')$ from $s'' = 0$ to $s'' = s$:

$$s' = \int_0^s |\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{u}(s'')| ds'' \quad (98)$$

Combination of equations 96, 97, 98 gives the transformation

$$u'(s') = \frac{\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{u}(s)}{|\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{u}(s)|} \quad (99)$$

Because s and s' are not equal to each other, the general constitutive equation becomes very complicated and requires numerical solution. The independent alignment approximation allows us to ignore this difference. Then, with $s' = s$ the transformation equation 99 becomes

$$u'(s) = \frac{\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{u}(s)}{|\mathbf{E} \cdot \mathbf{u}(s)|} \quad (100)$$

The consequences of this approximation have been extensively investigated and the results are outlined here. In terms of the orientation tensor, the IA approximation in a single-step stress relaxation experiment in simple shear is given by

$$\begin{aligned} Q_{xy}^{\text{IA}}(\gamma) &= \frac{1}{5} \gamma (\gamma \ll 1) \\ Q_{yy}^{\text{IA}}(\gamma) - Q_{zz}^{\text{IA}}(\gamma) &= -\frac{2}{35} \gamma^2 (\gamma \ll 1) \end{aligned} \quad (101)$$

and the damping function is then given by

$$h^{\text{IA}}(\gamma) = \frac{Q_{xy}^{\text{IA}}(\gamma)}{\gamma/5} \quad (102)$$

which is not very different from the more general $h(\gamma)$ introduced earlier (eq. 91) over a wide range of γ (56).

Without derivation, note that Doi and Edwards developed expressions for the probability distribution function for the chain as well as the relationship between the stress and the chain orientations to arrive at an evolution equation for the stress to the chain orientation process, which is a function of the macroscopic deformations. The resulting constitutive equation is

$$\sigma_{\alpha\beta}(t) = G_e \int_{-\infty}^t \left(\frac{\partial \psi(t-t')}{\partial t'} \right) Q_{\alpha\beta}^{\text{IA}}[\mathbf{E}(t, t')] dt' \quad (103)$$

where $\psi(t) = \mu_{\text{rep}}(t)$ is the DE relaxation function given previously. This equation is equivalent to a special form of the K-BKZ model discussed above. Note, however, that the deformation measure is somewhat different. [The reader should see Wagner and Schaeffer (125) for further discussion of the DE strain measures

relative to classic strain measures.] A relaxation function $\phi_{\alpha\beta}(t, E)$ can be defined as

$$\begin{aligned}\phi_{\alpha\beta}(E, t) &= G_e \int_{-\infty}^0 \left(\frac{\partial \psi(t-t')}{\partial t'} \right) Q_{\alpha\beta}^{\text{IA}}(E) dt' \\ &= G_e \psi(t) Q_{\alpha\beta}^{\text{IA}}(E)\end{aligned}\quad (104)$$

which is the single-step stress relaxation response to the deformation represented by $Q_{\alpha\beta}^{\text{IA}}(E)$. Then, the stress response to an arbitrary flow history is given by

$$\sigma_{\alpha\beta}(t) = \int_{-\infty}^t \left(\frac{\partial \phi(E, t-t')}{\partial t'} \right)_{E=E(t,t')} dt' \quad (105)$$

This has the same form as the K-BKZ model described above and where the function $\phi(E, t)$ has the meaning of $K(I_1, I_2, t)$ for any given deformation (see eqs. 56, 57, 58, 59, 60). This result was a very important aspect of the DE model's success because of the broad success of the K-BKZ continuum model that had already been established. The next sections examines some of the data that were specifically generated to test the validity of the DE model constitutive equation.

Comparison with Experiment. Of particular importance in comparing the DE model with nonlinear rheological experiments is the fact, already noted above, that the relaxation function in the linear viscoelastic regime is not broad enough to capture the actual behavior of polymers. This resulted in two important trends in the experimental tests of the DE work. First, because the K-BKZ work, eg, in two-step deformation histories, had been mostly performed on commercial polymers of broad molecular weight distribution, the tests of DE focused primarily on monodisperse polymers that were anionically polymerized. (Later developments (15,18,126–128) lead to use of broader molecular weight distributions but these will not be treated here.) Hence, much work was done, particularly by Osaki (123,129–133) and co-workers, in different two-step deformation histories where both the shear and normal stress differences could be obtained. Also, more recent work by the Venerus and Burghardt groups (115–117,134,135) has further expanded on the Osaki work. The second development was that much effort was expended to compare the form of the damping function that was measured with that given by the DE model, part of which was discussed above.

Single-Step Stress Relaxation Experiments. The damping function of the DE equation has already been compared with some of the Osaki data (Figs. 45 and 46). Here two other aspects of the Osaki work are emphasized. At long times, when the material response is dominated by the chain disengaging from the tube, the DE model gives a response that is referred to as *time-strain separable*. The possibility of time-strain separability in the response of polymer relaxation behavior was originally used by Zapas and Craft (111). Empirically, time-strain separability can be expressed by the following (see also eqs. 76a and 90):

$$G(\gamma, t) = h(\gamma)g(t) \quad (106)$$

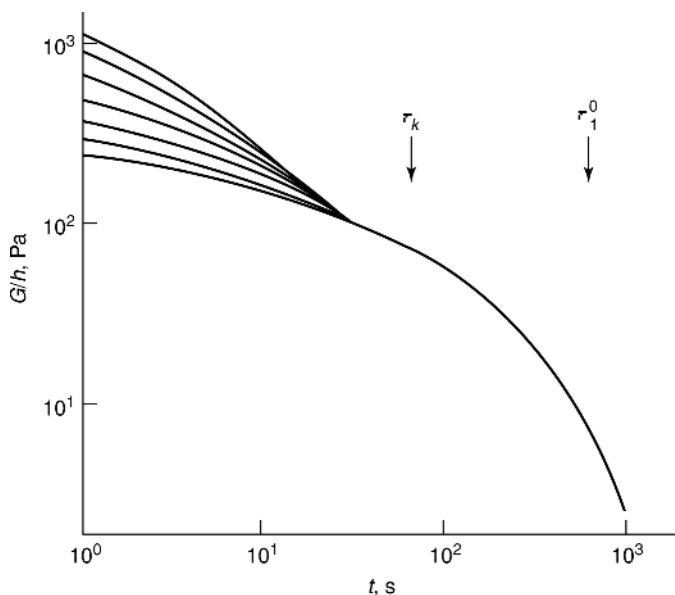


Fig. 47. Reduced relaxation modulus $G(t, \gamma)/h(\gamma)$ [$= G(\gamma, t)/h(\gamma)$] derived from data of Figure 46. The curves for $\gamma > 1.25$ shift vertically by an amount $-\log h(\gamma)$ so that they superpose in the long time regime. τ_1^0 represents the longest relaxation time and τ_k represents the time below which superposition is not possible. After Osaki et al. (123), with permission.

where $h(\gamma)$ is referred to as the *shear damping function* discussed above and $g(t)$ would be a linear viscoelastic relaxation response. Osaki (123) showed that the time-strain separability appears to be valid after some characteristic time the called τ_k (now time and not stress). This is shown in Figure 47, which is a plot of $G(\gamma, t)/h(\gamma)$. If time-strain separability were valid over all times, the curves at different strains would have collapsed onto a single curve. In Figure 47 it is observed that the curves do not collapse until after the time τ_k . Unfortunately, it is not currently possible to uniquely attribute τ_k to any of the times discussed above for the tube model. It is, however, common to attribute τ_k to the finite time required for the molecule to retract along its contour length.

Another interesting aspect of the work done by Osaki was the demonstration that $h(\gamma)$ is not a universal function. Rather, it seems to depend on the number of entanglements M/M_e . The reptation theory expectation for the actual behavior in concentrated solution has been variously interpreted and there is not general agreement on the expected behavior. However, the data shown in Figure 48 are important for the understanding of polymer molecular viscoelasticity and were obtained within the important framework provided by the DE theory. From Figure 48 it is seen that the damping function depends on M/M_e and on concentration. Subsequently Osaki and co-workers (123) stated that “the quantity $h(\gamma)$ scarcely varies with molecular weight or concentration.” A still later work by Osaki (136), however, again shows a disagreement between experimental data and the universal $h(\gamma)$ for polystyrene solutions. In addition, Wagner and Schaeffer

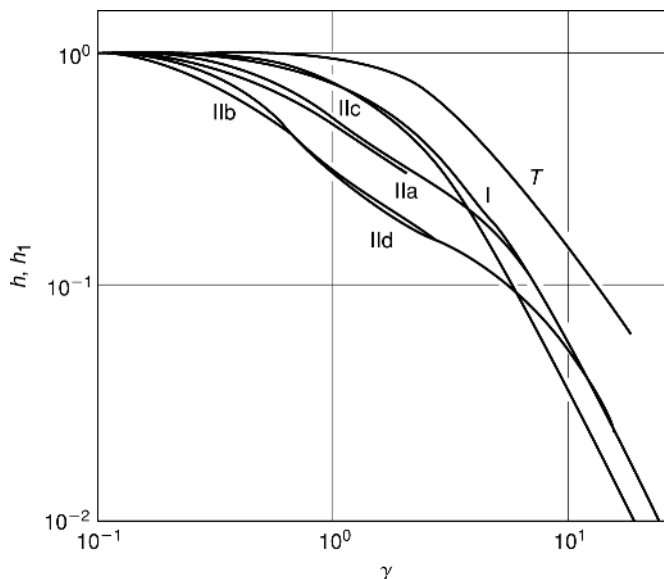


Fig. 48. Strain-dependent functions $h(\gamma)$ and $h_1(\gamma)$. The heavy line represents the DE damping function and the light lines represent experimental results $[h_1(\gamma)]$ for polystyrene solutions. For type I sample, $\phi M < 10^6$ (g·Da)/cm³ and for type II samples $\phi M > 10^6$ (g·Da)/cm³. For IIa, $M = 3.10 \times 10^6$ Da and $\phi = 0.329$ g/cm³. For IIb, $M = 5.53 \times 10^6$ Da and $\phi = 0.221$ g/cm³. For IIc and IIc, $M = 7.62 \times 10^6$ Da and $\phi = 0.176$ and 0.221 g/cm³, respectively. T is for a broad molecular weight distribution sample in which $M_w = 1.10 \times 10^6$ Da and $M_w/M_n = 4$ and $\phi = 0.21$ g/cm³. After Osaki and Kurata (130), with permission.

(119,125,137) have extensively studied the form of the universal damping function and found that it is inadequate for the description of polydisperse polymer melts.

Two-Step Stress Relaxation Experiments. As discussed above in the context of the K-BKZ model, the two-step stress relaxation experiment is a very important tool in the assessment of constitutive relations. The same has been true in the use of the two-step experiment to assess the DE model. Here, the tests in the context of the independent alignment assumption are first examined. The important aspect of the experiments performed by Osaki and co-workers is that (123,129–133) the work was performed on monodisperse polymers. The work of Venerus and Burghardt, which is further built on the work of Osaki, will also be discussed. Finally, a proposed form of constitutive model that goes beyond the independent alignment assumption and gives a tractable set of predictions for the double-step experiments is examined.

Here three types of two-step experiment are viewed and the reader is asked to recall Figure 33. The figure shows the step-up (a), the step to zero (b), and the half-step (c) histories. Both the torque and normal force responses are examined. In addition, because much of the data in the literature include comparisons with the DE model both with and without independent alignment, the equations for the form of the DE model that Doi proposed by suppressing the independent alignment assumption are presented. Here the results are referred to as DE-NIA.

In this case for two-step stress relaxation histories recall equations 59 (DE-IA or K-BKZ)

$$\begin{aligned}\sigma_{12}(t) &= K(\gamma_2, t) + K(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t - t_1) - K(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \\ \sigma_{22}(t) - \sigma_{22}(t) &= H_1(\gamma_2, t) + H_1(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t - t_1) - H_1(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \\ \sigma_{22}(t) - \sigma_{33}(t) &= H_2(\gamma_2, t) + H_2(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t - t_1) - H_2(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t)\end{aligned}\quad (59)$$

and compare these with the DE-NIA equations:

$$\begin{aligned}\sigma_{12}(t) &= A(\beta)K(\gamma_2, t) + K(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t - t_1) - [A(\beta) + B(\alpha_2, \beta)]K(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \\ \sigma_{22}(t) - \sigma_{22}(t) &= A(\beta)H_1(\gamma_2, t) + H_1(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t - t_1) - [A(\beta) + B(\alpha_2, \beta)]H_1(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t) \\ \sigma_{22}(t) - \sigma_{33}(t) &= A(\beta)H_2(\gamma_2, t) + H_2(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t - t_1) - [A(\beta) + B(\alpha_2, \beta)]H_2(\gamma_2 - \gamma_1, t)\end{aligned}\quad (107)$$

where

$$\begin{aligned}A(\beta) &= \frac{4\beta \cos(\frac{\pi\beta}{2})}{\pi(1 - \beta^2)}, \quad B(\alpha_2, \beta) = \frac{\pi^2(1 - \beta)^3}{12(\alpha_2 - \beta)} \text{ for } \beta < 1 \\ A(\beta) &= \frac{4\cos(\frac{\pi}{2\beta})}{\pi(1 - \beta^{-2})}, \quad B(\alpha_2, \beta) = 0 \text{ for } \beta \geq 1 \\ \beta &= \left(\frac{3 + \gamma_2^2}{3 + \gamma_1^2} \right)^{1/2}, \quad \alpha_2 = [1 + (\gamma_1 - \gamma_2)^2]^{1/2}\end{aligned}\quad (108)$$

As seen in the next paragraphs, the DE-NIA equations sometimes do better and sometimes worse than the DE-IA or K-BKZ equations. Also note that in all instances the measured single-step relaxation function is used rather than the theoretical DE function, which as already discussed is too narrow to capture the full breadth of the relaxation response of entangled polymers.

Step-Up. Figure 49 shows the response for a two-step history in which the second step is approximately the same magnitude as the first step, ie, $\gamma_2 = 2\gamma_1$. The results are from Osaki's work (138) on polystyrene solutions and illustrate that both the shear stress response and the normal stress response are well represented with the DE independent alignment approximation (ie, the K-BKZ equations). This result is similar to what was found previously for the K-BKZ model (Fig. 34) (138).

Step to Zero Deformation. Figures 50 and 51 show the response for a two-step history in which one first applies a step strain γ_1 for some time t_1 and then returns the material to zero deformation, $\gamma_2 = 0$. The results are, again, from Osaki (138). Figure 50 shows the results when the first step duration $t_1 = 20$ s, and it is seen that both the shear and normal stress responses are poorly represented by either the DE model with independent alignment (solid lines) or the predictions without the independent alignment assumption (dashed lines). Figure 51

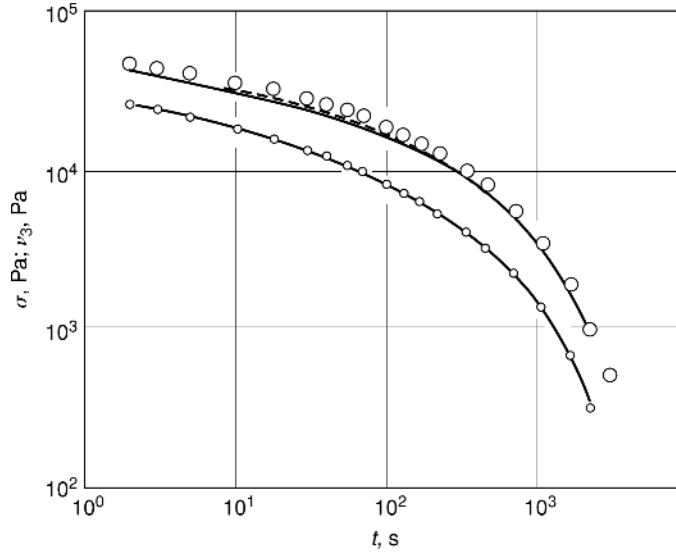


Fig. 49. Shear stress σ (\circ) and normal stress ν_3 (\circ) responses to a two-step “step-up” type of deformation history with $\gamma_1 = 1.47$ and $\gamma_2 = 2.90$ for a concentrated polystyrene solution. The solid lines are the predictions for the K-BKZ or DE-IA equations and the dashed lines are for the DE-NIA equations. After Osaki and et al. (138), with permission.

shows that when t_1 gets longer ($t_1 = 200$ s) the agreement between theory and experiment improves. Also, note that both theoretical curves also begin to approach each other, as might be expected because the models are fading memory models and at very long times, the step back to zero should become equivalent to the single-step response.

Half-Step Deformation. In the discussion of the K-BKZ model, the half-step deformation was covered. Here two sets of data that go beyond what was described above are discussed. First, in the Osaki data shown in Figure 52, it is seen that the DE model with independent alignment fits the shear stress response, but not the normal stress response. Also, the theory without the independent alignment assumption does not fit the shear data. The normal stress deviation from the model prediction is interesting, as this was a “special” history for which the K-BKZ and DE-IA models both predicted that the normal stress response is independent of the duration of the first step (and equal to a single-step experiment with magnitude $\gamma_2 = \gamma_1/2$). Figure 52 shows that for the polystyrene solution, the single-step response for the normal stress is only in agreement with the single-step response at long times. Interestingly, Osaki’s data (138) showed that the normal stress response was independent of the duration of the first step, although not equal to the single-step response. Figures 53 and 54 show a set of half-step data from Burghardt and Brown (111). The shear stress theory is not shown for comparison, but it is seen that the shear stresses go negative and then become positive, going through a maximum before joining what would be the single-step relaxation at very long times. On the other hand the normal force responses for the different values of t_1 are very interesting because they seem to become

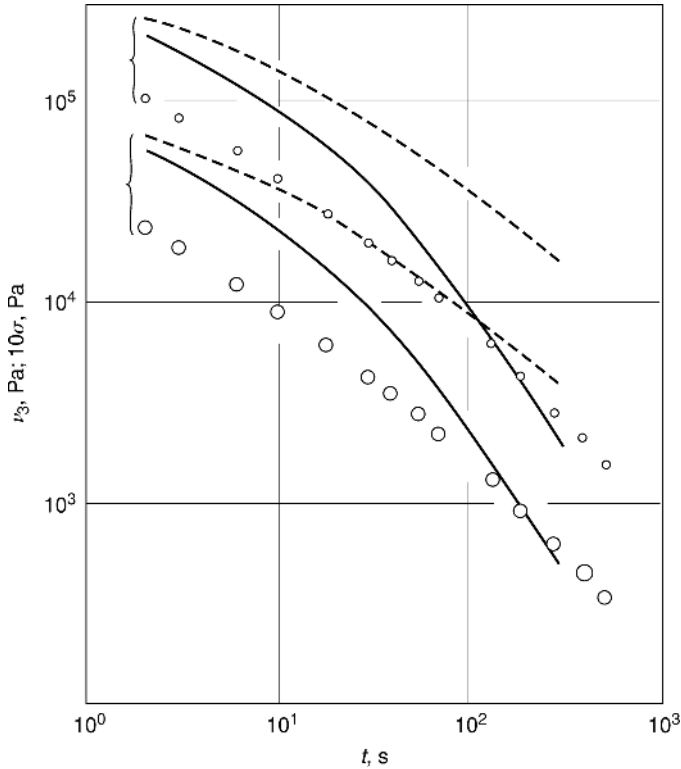


Fig. 50. Shear stress σ (\circ) and normal stress ν_3 (\circ) responses to a two-step “step to zero” type of deformation history with $\gamma_1 = 2.89$ and $\gamma_2 = 0$ for a concentrated polystyrene solution. Duration of the first step was $t_1 = 20$ s. The solid lines are the predictions for the K-BKZ or DE-IA equations and the dashed lines are for the DE-NIA equations. After Osaki et al. (138), with permission.

independent of the duration of the first step at a characteristic time. At short times, deviations occur. Hence, the original findings of McKenna and Zapas that the normal force response is independent of the duration of the first step, seems to only be confirmed for long times. Osaki associated this time with the value of τ_k discussed previously and where time-strain separability is applicable. An interesting aspect of this is that the observation that the normal stresses in the half-step history can independent of the duration of the first step is also observed for some polymer glasses (112–114), as discussed subsequently.

Nonlinear Viscoelastic Response of Solid-like Polymers. The study of the nonlinear viscoelastic response of solid or solid-like polymers is one that has been relatively neglected. One reason is that there is no real molecular framework for the description of these materials, particularly when they are amorphous. The other reason is that many workers in the field have adopted the framework of metal plasticity and then made modifications to try to adapt it to, for example, the fact that amorphous polymers do not readily admit to treatment with the physics of dislocations. In the case of semicrystalline polymers, the

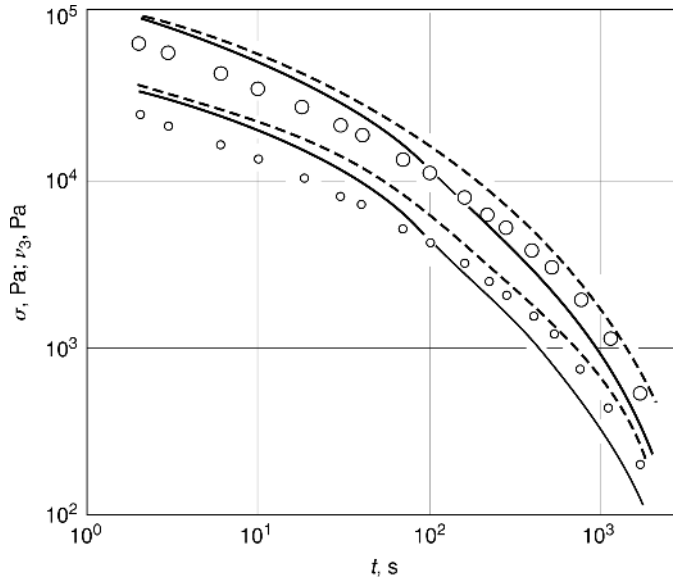


Fig. 51. Shear stress σ (\circ) and normal stress ν_3 (\square) responses to a two-step “step-to zero” type of deformation history with $\gamma_1 = 2.89$ and $\gamma_2 = 0$ for a concentrated polystyrene solution. Duration of the first step was $t_1 = 200$ s. The solid lines are the predictions for the K-BKZ or DE-IA equations and the dashed lines are for the DE-NIA equations. After Osaki et al. (138), with permission.

crystalline phase may, in some instances, succumb to a plasticity treatment, (139) but the full description of the nonlinear response requires treatment of a two-phase system. The following sections treat the problem of nonlinear behavior of solid or solid-like polymers as a problem in viscoelasticity. Primarily amorphous, glassy polymers are chosen. There are several reasons for these choices. First, the semicrystalline polymers are very complicated, as discussed briefly above, and our physical understanding of their linear viscoelastic response is still somewhat limited because of the complex interactions between amorphous and crystalline phases. Hence, while some progress has been made in dealing with the yield response of polyethylene (140,141) it is unclear how general the models are to other materials. This leaves one with the amorphous, glassy polymers. Here, because the materials seem to follow time-temperature superposition in many instances, (9,33–35,40,142) there is a reasonable likelihood that a viscoelasticity framework is a good one with which to treat them. In addition, most work has focused on *post-yield* behavior, a regime to which plasticity in metals seems (inappropriately in this author’s mind) applicable. With this in mind, therefore, it becomes important to investigate the *sub-yield* behavior of amorphous materials because it is the sub-yield behavior that is the precursor to yielding behavior. The latter cannot be understood until the former is. The following section deals with the K-BKZ framework and adapts it to the present investigations of the viscoelastic response of glassy polymers. Several other viscoelastic frameworks that have been, or are being, used in the study of amorphous polymers are also discussed.

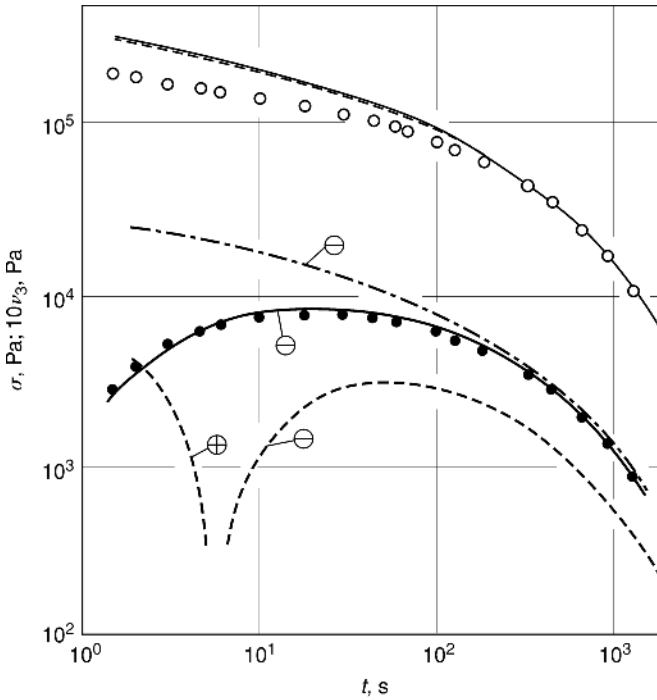


Fig. 52. Shear stress σ (\circ) and normal stress ν_3 (\circ) responses to a two-step “half-step” type of deformation history with $\gamma_1 = 2.89$ and $\gamma_2 = 1.45$ for a concentrated polystyrene solution. Duration of the first step was $t_1 = 20$ s. The solid lines are the predictions for the K-BKZ or DE-IA equations and the dashed lines are for the DE-NIA equations. Dashed-dotted line is the single-step shear stress response for $\gamma = 1.45$. After Osaki et al. (138), with permission.

The K-BKZ Framework. The above sections dealt with the K-BKZ framework for describing the nonlinear constitutive response of polymeric fluids. While the K-BKZ theory was developed for incompressible fluids, polymeric glasses are compressible in that the bulk modulus and the shear modulus are of the same order of magnitude. However, in the first work described here only torsional behavior is examined, which is nearly volume conserving (143–145). Hence, there may be reason to think that the incompressible framework is justifiable. Some aspects of compressibility are also examined and these are adapted to one instance of extension and compression behavior. Other constitutive models are also analyzed.

Torsional Experiments. The geometry and equations for torsion of an elastic cylinder are presented above. For the viscoelastic K-BKZ material, the equations look similar. For isochronal values of the strain potential function, one can define what looks like a time-dependent strain-energy function $W_i(I_1, I_2, t)$:

$$W_i(I_1, I_2, t) = \frac{\partial W(I_1, I_2, t)}{\partial I_i} = \int_{-\infty}^t \frac{\partial U(I_1, I_2, t - t')}{\partial I_i} dt' \tag{109}$$

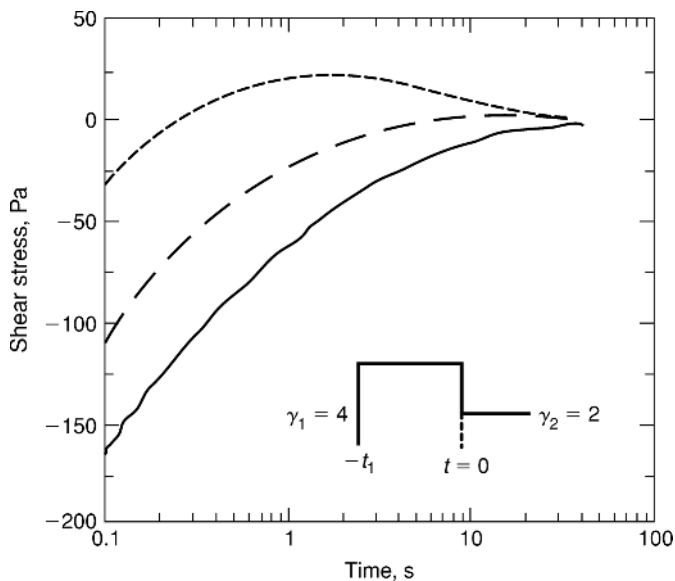


Fig. 53. Shear stress response to “half-step” type of deformation history for a concentrated polystyrene solution and for different values of the first step duration t_1 . Dotted line; $t_1 = 1$ s; dashed line; $t_1 = 4$ s; solid line; $t_1 = 16$ s. After Brown and Burghardt (134), with permission.

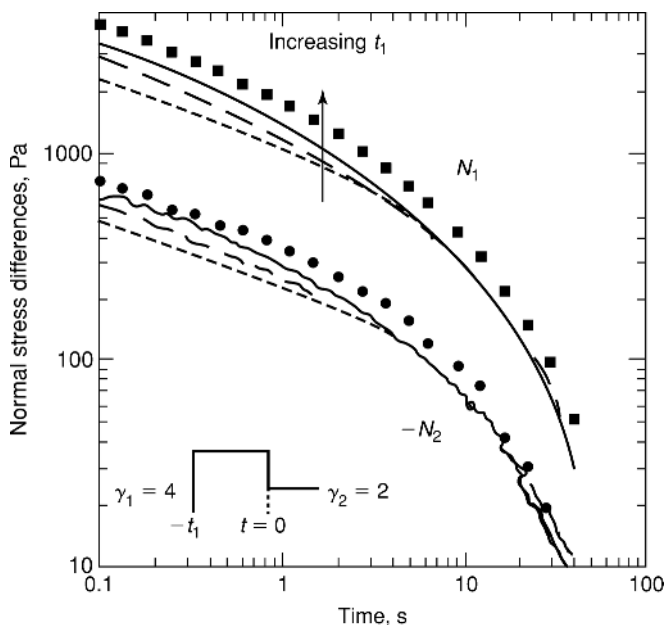


Fig. 54. Normal stress response to “half-step” type of deformation history for a concentrated polystyrene solution and for different values for the first step duration t_1 . Dotted line; $t_1 = 1$ s; dashed line; $t_1 = 4$ s; solid line; $t_1 = 16$ s. Symbols represent single-step response for $\gamma = 2.0$. After Brown and Burghardt (134), with permission.

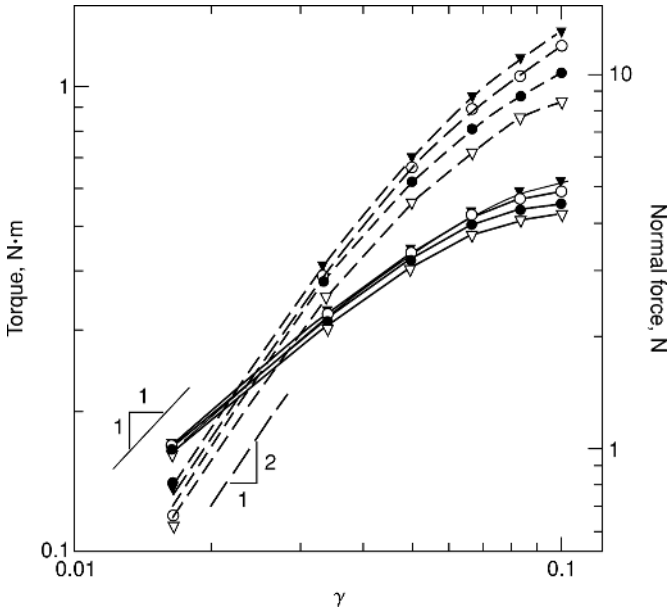


Fig. 55. Torque and normal force responses for a glassy polycarbonate material in stress relaxation conditions. *Isochrones*: \blacktriangledown 1 s; \circ 10 s; \bullet 100 s; ∇ 1000 s. After Pesce and McKenna (146).

Then, isochronal values $W_i(I_1, I_2, t)$ can be used to characterize the stress relaxation behavior of solid cylinders and, similar to the behavior found for rubber, the strain energy function derivatives can be determined for different materials. There is relatively little work in this area, but the results are intriguing. Figure 55 shows the isochronal torque and normal force responses for a polycarbonate material subjected to maximum strains of approximately 0.10 at the outside radius of the cylinder. This strain is just below the yield point of the polycarbonate in torsion. These data have a similar appearance to the rubber data shown in Figure 31 at small strains (the torque follows ψR and the normal force follows $\psi^2 R^2$), but as the strain increases toward $\psi R = 0.1$, there is a strong softening in the responses as yield is approached. In the case of the rubber samples, such softening does not occur even for strains as high as $\psi R = 2.0$. The time-dependent equivalent of equations 47 and 48 can be used to analyze the torque and normal forces so as to determine the values of $W_1(I_1, I_2, t)$ and $W_2(I_1, I_2, t)$. Such data are shown for a PMMA material in Figure 56 and for the polycarbonate in Figure 57. Figure 58 shows the isochronal VL function behavior for the polycarbonate as a function of the stretch λ . Clearly, the behavior is very different for the material below the glass transition, that is the solid-like or glassy polycarbonate, than it is for the rubbery material in Figure 32.

Although this approach seems useful, unlike the rubbery polymers, the glassy polymers are compressible materials in the sense that the ratio of the bulk and shear moduli is near unity, rather than being in the neighborhood of

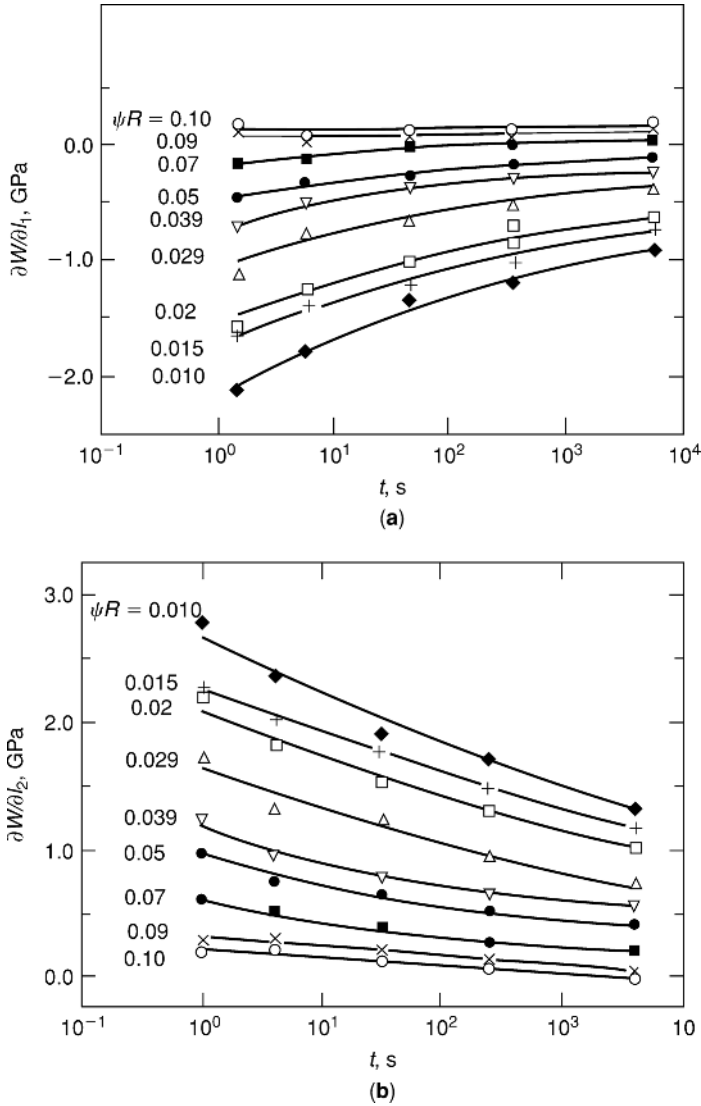


Fig. 56. Values of the time and strain-dependent strain energy function derivatives $\partial W/\partial I_1$ and $\partial W/\partial I_2$ for a glassy PMMA determined from torque and normal force measurements in single-step stress relaxation torsional experiments. After McKenna (114).

100–1000 for the rubber. This means that the forces to cause shape changes (distortions or shears) in the rubber are much smaller than those required to cause volume changes, while these forces are of approximately the same magnitudes in the glassy polymer. Hence, incompressible theory describes very well the behavior of the rubbery material, but does not obviously apply to the polymer glass. The next section examines the material compressibility issues and the extension of the VL function to the compressible case.

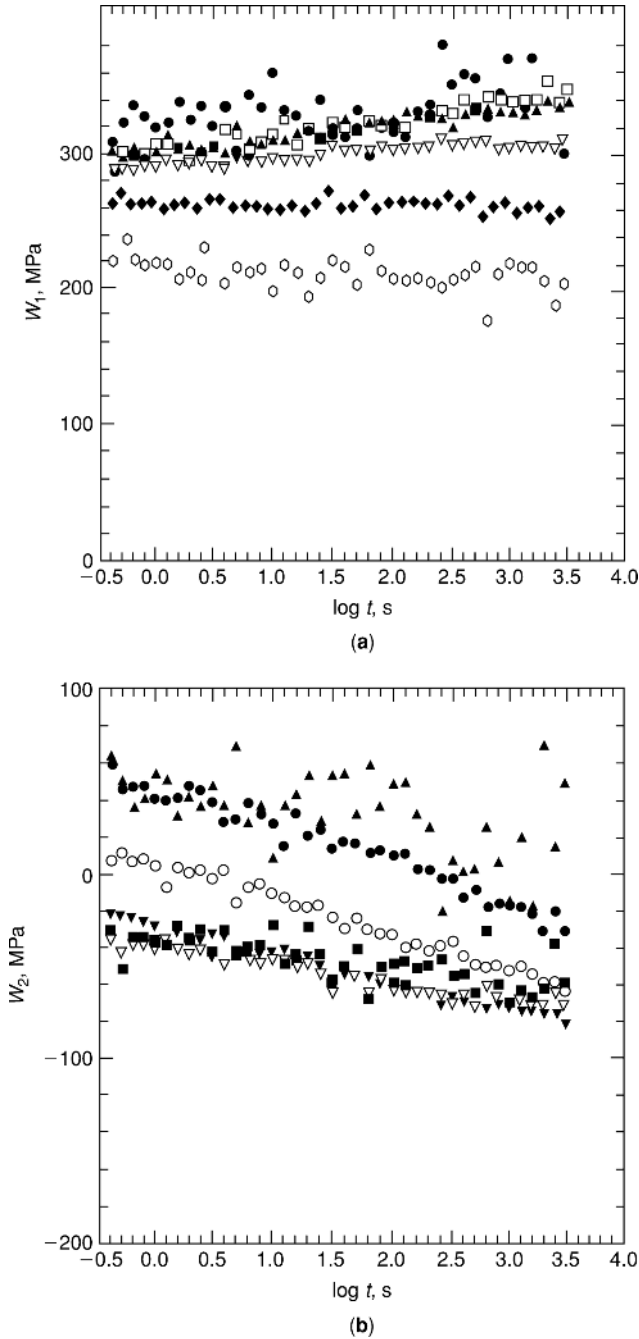


Fig. 57. Values of the time and strain-dependent strain energy function derivatives $W_1 = \partial W/\partial I_1$ and $W_2 = \partial W/\partial I_2$ for a glassy polycarbonate determined from torque and normal force measurements in single-step stress relaxation torsional experiments. (a) γ : \bullet 0.017; \square 0.033; \blacktriangle 0.050; ∇ 0.067; \diamond 0.083; \circ 0.10. (b) γ : \blacktriangle 0.017; \bullet 0.033; \circ 0.050; \blacktriangledown 0.067; ∇ 0.083; \blacksquare 0.10. After Pesce and McKenna (146).

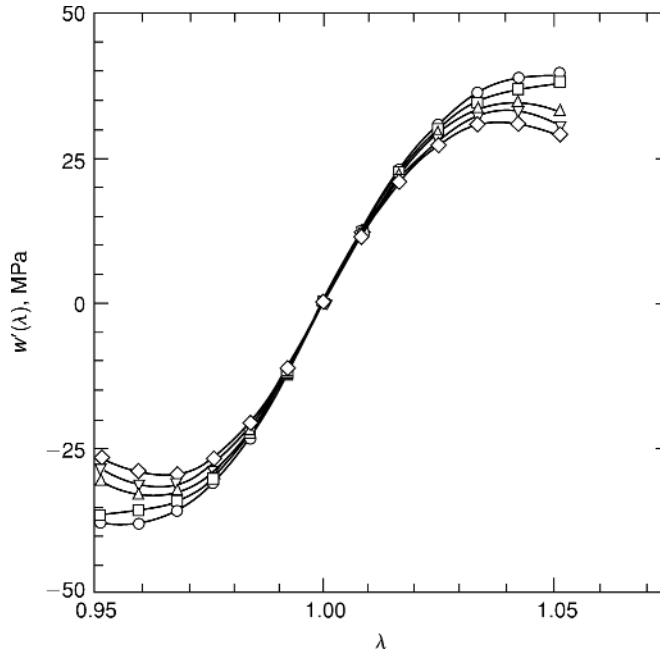


Fig. 58. The VL Valanis-Landel (98) function derivative as a function of deformation for polycarbonate as determined from data of Figures 55 and 57. \circ 0.3 s; \square 3.2 s; \triangle 32 s; ∇ 320 s; \diamond 3000 s. After Pesce and McKenna (146).

Issues of Material Compressibility. There is a full theory of compressible and nonlinear viscoelastic materials that would be equivalent to the compressible finite deformation elasticity theory described above (eq. 39), but more complicated because of the need to develop an expansion of the time-dependent strain potential function as a series of multiple integrals (108,109). One such formalism is discussed briefly under Lustig, Shay and Caruthers Model. Here a simplified model that is based upon the K-BKZ framework with a VL-like kernel function (98) is examined.

One important issue in dealing with the nonlinear viscoelastic response of materials is the amount of data needed to determine the material parameters in the models. As noted above, even the general finite elasticity theory requires significant work to obtain the material parameters over the full three-dimensional deformation space. This is one reason that the VL framework is so attractive, when it works. Therefore, it is of interest to investigate whether or not the model can be extended to include compressibility. Pesce and McKenna (146) performed torsional tests on polycarbonate as described above. They then asked whether the VL function could be used to predict the tension and compression responses of the material. An important assumption in their approach was that the VL function determined from the torsional measurements using equations 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51 (described immediately above) could be used to predict uniaxial data. When the incompressible equations 50 were applied to try to estimate the uniaxial stress-deformation data (isochronal), these equations did not work. However,

upon considering the compressibility of the material good agreement with the data could be obtained. Taking, now, the strain energy density function [assumed to be separable as in the VL function (98)], one obtains

$$\hat{w}(\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3) = w(\lambda_1) + w(\lambda_2) + w(\lambda_3) + f(\lambda_1 \lambda_2 \lambda_3) \quad (110)$$

where the volume $v = \lambda_1 \lambda_2 \lambda_3$ and the function $f(\lambda_1 \lambda_2 \lambda_3)$ represents the extra volume-dependent term beyond that incorporated implicitly in the principal stretches. Writing the constitutive equation for the principal stress (here the stress differences are not used), one obtains

$$\sigma_i = \frac{1}{\lambda_j \lambda_k} \left\{ \frac{\partial \hat{w}}{\partial \lambda_i} \right\} \quad (111)$$

For a uniaxial deformation (extension or compression) in direction 1 and under normal ambient conditions (where $\sigma_2 = \sigma_3 \approx 0$) one can write

$$\sigma_1 = \frac{1}{\lambda_2 \lambda_3} \left[\frac{\partial w}{\partial \lambda_1} \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial v} \right) \left(\frac{\partial v}{\partial \lambda_1} \right) \right] \quad (112a)$$

$$\sigma_2 = \frac{1}{\lambda_1 \lambda_3} \left[\frac{\partial w}{\partial \lambda_2} + \left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial v} \right) \left(\frac{\partial v}{\partial \lambda_2} \right) \right] \approx 0 \quad (112b)$$

Solution of equation 112b gives the relation

$$\left(\frac{1}{\lambda_1 \lambda_3} \right) \left(\frac{\partial w}{\partial \lambda_2} \right) = - \frac{\partial f}{\partial v} \quad (113)$$

which when substituted into equation 112a gives the following expression for σ_1 , which is similar to the equation for the principal stress differences for the incompressible material:

$$\sigma_1 = \frac{1}{\lambda_2 \lambda_3} w'(\lambda_1) - \frac{1}{\lambda_1 \lambda_3} w'(\lambda_2) \text{ or } v \sigma_1 = \lambda_1 \lambda_2 \lambda_3 \sigma_1 = \lambda_1 w'(\lambda_1) - \lambda_2 w'(\lambda_2) \quad (114)$$

Pesce and McKenna (140) applied equation 114 with the VL function obtained from torsional data and successfully described the uniaxial data for the same polycarbonate material to within approximately 15% up to the yield point (140). The results are shown in Figure 59. Importantly, the successful description required both a knowledge of $w'(\lambda)$ and the actual values of the lateral contraction of the material—the equivalent in the nonlinear range of the Poisson's effect in linear elasticity (or viscoelasticity).

Although the compressible VL function shows promise for the description of the response of glassy polymers in the nonlinear deformation regime, further work is required to establish the generality of the approach and how far it can be extended into the post-yield region.

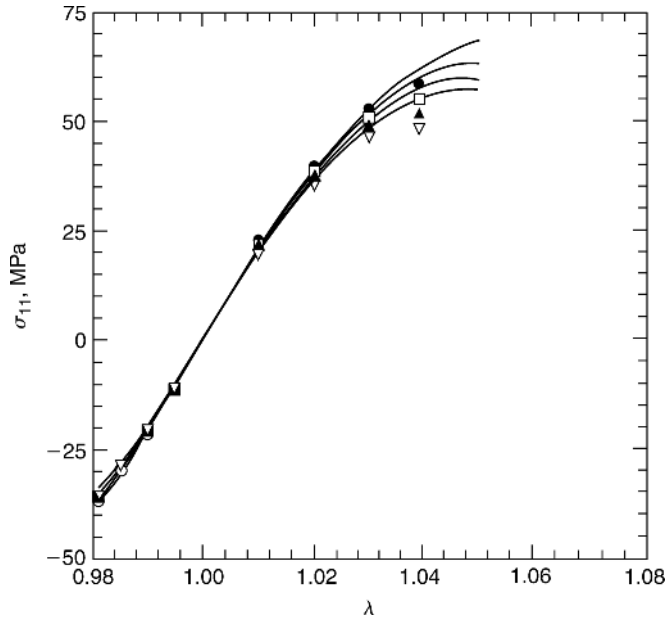


Fig. 59. Comparison between the experiment (points) and predictions (lines) from equation 114 for stress-deformation response of polycarbonate in uniaxial extension and compression. • 3.2 s; □ 32 s; ▲ 320 s; ▽ 3000 s. After Pesce and McKenna (146).

Other Constitutive Model Descriptions. The above work describes a relatively simple way to think of nonlinear viscoelasticity, viz, as a sort of time-dependent elasticity. In solid polymers, it is important to consider compressibility issues that do not exist for the viscoelastic fluids discussed earlier. In this penultimate section of the article, other approaches to nonlinear viscoelasticity are discussed, hopefully not abandoning all simplicity. The development of nonlinear viscoelastic constitutive equations is a very sophisticated field that we will not even attempt to survey completely. One reason is that the most general constitutive equations that are of the multiple integral forms are cumbersome to use in practical applications. Also, the experimental task required to obtain the material parameters for the general constitutive models is fairly daunting. In addition, computationally, these can be difficult to handle, or are very CPU-time intensive. In the next sections, a class of single-integral nonlinear constitutive laws that are referred to as reduced time or material clock-type models is discussed. Where there has been some evaluation of the models, these are examined as well.

The fundamental concept of the material clock or reduced time is similar to the principle described above in the discussion of time–temperature superposition. In the mechanical constitutive models, however, the change in the stress or deformation induces a shift in the material relaxation time. The fact that the time depends on the state of stress (or strain) or on its history leads to additional nonlinearities in behavior from what is expected with, eg, the K-BKZ model. Physical explanations for the shifting material time are often based on free-volume ideas that are often invoked to explain time–temperature superposition. In addition, entropy changes have been invoked as have stress-activated processes.

The Schapery Model. One of the earliest models of the nonlinear viscoelastic response of polymers to use the concept of a reduced time is due to Schapery (147–149). The model is based on thermodynamic considerations and has a form similar to the Boltzmann superposition principle described previously. The model time dependences, except for the shift factors, are the same as those obtained in the linear response regime. Hence, the model is relatively easy to implement and to determine the relevant material parameters. It results in a generalization of the generalized superposition principle developed by Leaderman (150).

While the model can be formulated for three-dimensional stresses and strain states, here only the uniaxial deformation is dealt with. It is important to add that the model has both a creep formalism and a relaxation formalism. The relevant equations are presented in the next paragraphs. In addition, although this is a nonlinear theory, it is a small strain theory.

In creep experiments the equation is given as

$$\varepsilon(t) = g_0 D_0 \sigma + g_1 \int_0^t \Delta D(\psi - \psi') \frac{dg_2 \sigma}{dt} dt' \quad (115)$$

where D_0 is the zero time compliance, ΔD is the time-dependent part of the compliance, and the g_i 's are material parameters. The material clock arguments are written as

$$\psi = \int_0^t \frac{d\zeta}{a_\sigma[\sigma(\zeta)]} \quad \text{and} \quad \psi' = \int_0^{t'} \frac{d\zeta}{a_\sigma[\sigma(\zeta)]} \quad (116)$$

where a_σ is the stress shift factor.

A similar set of equations describes the stress relaxation behavior (stress as a function of strain):

$$\sigma(t) = h_e E_e \varepsilon + h_1 \int \Delta E(\phi - \phi') \frac{dh_2 \varepsilon}{dt'} dt' \quad (117)$$

Here E_e is the equilibrium modulus (infinite time modulus), ΔE is the time-dependent part of the model, and h_e and h_1 are material parameters. The reduced time arguments ϕ and ϕ' are written as

$$\phi = \int_0^t \frac{d\zeta}{a_\varepsilon[\varepsilon(\zeta)]} \quad \text{and} \quad \phi' = \int_0^{t'} \frac{d\zeta}{a_\varepsilon[\varepsilon(\zeta)]} \quad (118)$$

Here, note, that a_ε is the strain shift factor.

Figure 60 illustrates two-step creep and recovery data at different stresses for a reinforced polymer along with the predictions from the Schapery creep formulation and those obtained from simply applying a modified form of the Boltzmann superposition principle. Without going into the details of the procedures of obtaining all the parameters, it is clear that the model captures much of the observed nonlinear response, while the modified Boltzmann rule does not. (Note that the modified Boltzmann rule simply assumes additivity of responses, but without the linearity assumptions.) Figure 61 shows the creep and recovery data

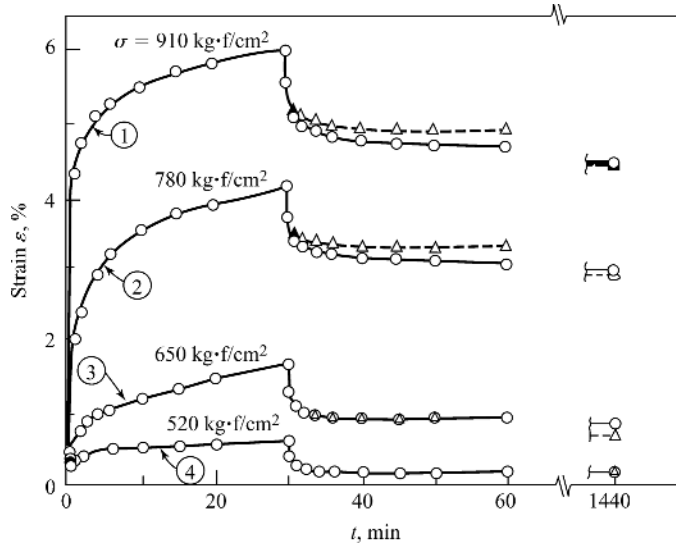


Fig. 60. Comparison of experimental (circles) creep and recovery behavior of a glass-reinforced phenolic resin with the predictions from the Schapery (147–149) nonlinear viscoelastic model. \circ Experimental Data; Δ Predicted Recovery Data (Nonlinear Theory). After Schapery (147), with permission.

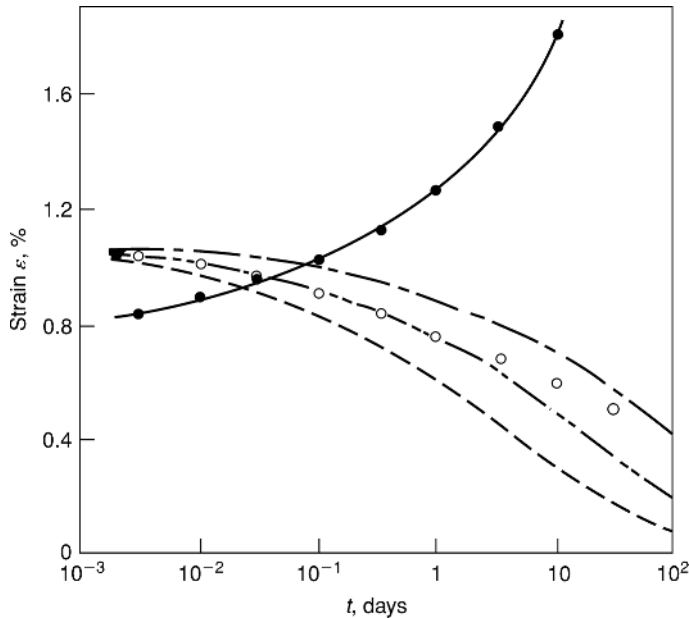


Fig. 61. Comparison of experimental (circles) creep and recovery behavior of a nitrocellulose material with the predictions from the Schapery (147–149) nonlinear viscoelastic model using different stress shift factors, as indicated. \bullet Exp. Creep Strain; \circ Exp. Recovery Strain; ---- Case 1, $a_{\sigma}^{-1} = 1$; — Case 2, $a_{\sigma}^{-1} = 23.15$; - - - Case 3, $a_{\sigma}^{-1} = 4.1$. After Schapery (147), with permission.

for a nitrocellulose film and with different values of the shift factor a_σ to try to describe the second (recovery) step. Here there is less of an agreement between the theory and the data, yet the trends are captured. In cases where materials, such as reinforced polymer matrix composites, exhibit strongly nonlinear behavior at very small strains, this set of models has been very useful (151–154). Also note that in certain deformation histories, the model can reduce to a K-BKZ type of expression and the data presented in Figure 34 was successfully described by the Schapery model (even though the deformations are fairly large).

The Zapas Strain-Clock Model and the Bernstein–Shokooch Stress-Clock Model. Although the K-BKZ theory has been highly successful, as discussed above, it also had some flaws, which lead to attempts to modify the model by incorporating material clock or reduced time concepts. In one form, Zapas introduced a strain-clock (118), ie, a change in the time scale that depended on the strain history. While the model is fully three-dimensional, for simplicity, consider only the equations for the simple shearing case:

$$\sigma_{12}(t) = \int \{[\gamma(t) - \gamma(t')]G_*[\gamma(t) - \gamma(t'), \Phi(t, t')]\} \dot{\Phi}[\gamma(t), \gamma(t'), t - t'] dt' \quad (119)$$

and the material time $\Phi(t, t')$ is written as

$$\Phi(t, t') = \Phi[\gamma(t), \gamma(t'), t - t'] = \int \dot{\Phi}[\gamma(t), \gamma(\xi), t - \xi] dt' \quad (120)$$

The strain-clock term (eq. 120) is a function of the entire deformation history. McKenna and Zapas used the strain-clock formalism to describe the torsional response of a PMMA material in two-step strain histories (112). The difficulty arises because the determination of material parameters requires at least the data for both the first and second step responses. Furthermore, McKenna and Zapas also assumed that the clock-form for the torque response and for the normal force response was the same. Their results were consistent with this assumption, as shown in Figure 62. However, that work also indicates that considerable experimental data are required to use the model—a constant issue in nonlinear viscoelasticity. One other interesting thing that came from the work of McKenna and Zapas (112–114) was the verification of equation 60 for the normal force. This is seen in Figure 63, where the normal force response after the half-step history is plotted against the duration of the first step for two different isochrones. As seen, for times beyond 1677 s and for both short and long isochrones, the response is both independent of the duration of the first step and the same as if the material had been subjected to a step only to γ_2 . The other point of import here is that, while the normal stress is following equation 60, the shear response is dramatically different. In fact, the strain-clock model fits the data, but the “reversing stress” nature of the deformation leads to a similar deviation from K-BKZ-type behavior as was seen in the polymer solution. This is shown in Figure 64. The reader is also reminded that polymer solutions seem to follow this response only at long times ($t > \tau_k$).

While the strain-clock version of the K-BKZ model seems capable of describing fairly complex nonlinear behavior, it is, at least, an inconvenient model to use. The stress-clock model of Bernstein and Shokool (155) has two features that could make it very useful. It takes less data to determine the material properties

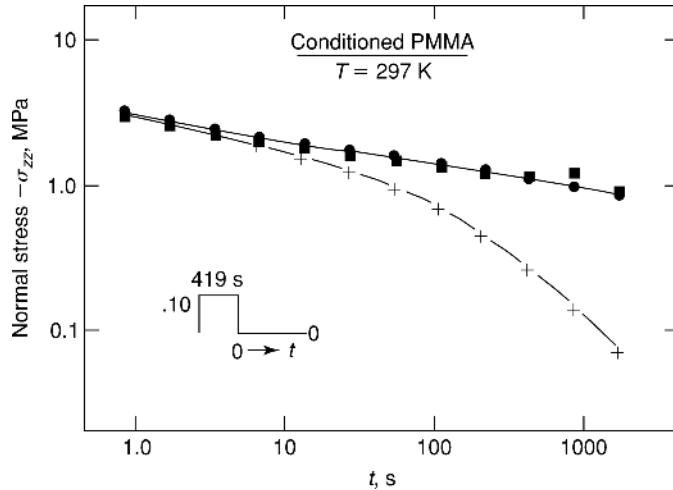


Fig. 62. Normal force response in “step to zero” type of deformation history for a PMMA polymer glass, showing the comparison between the experimental data (filled squares), the K-BKZ model predictions (crosses), and the predictions (filled circles) from the Zapas strain-clock model (118). Note that the clock terms for the normal force response were determined by fitting the shear stress response in the same experiment. After McKenna and Zapas (112).

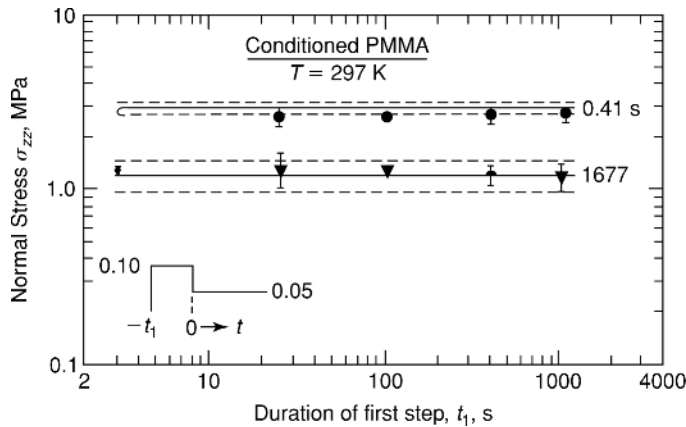


Fig. 63. “Half-step” normal force response in a PMMA polymer glass, showing that the normal force response is independent of the duration t_1 of the first step. Points are data from the second step response for $\gamma = 0.05$ after a step to $\gamma = 0.10$. Lines are data from a single-step experiment at $\gamma = 0.05$. (Solid lines: mean; dashed lines: single standard deviation). Time values of 0.41 and 1677 s are isochronal values after the imposition of the step in the deformation. After McKenna and Zapas (113).

(under certain conditions) and, in the relatively small deformation regime, it can be inverted between creep and stress relaxation.

The equations in simple shear can be written as

$$\sigma_{12}(t) = \int_{-\infty}^t \{G_*[\gamma(t) - \gamma(t'), \beta(t, t')]b_\sigma(t')\} dt' \tag{121}$$

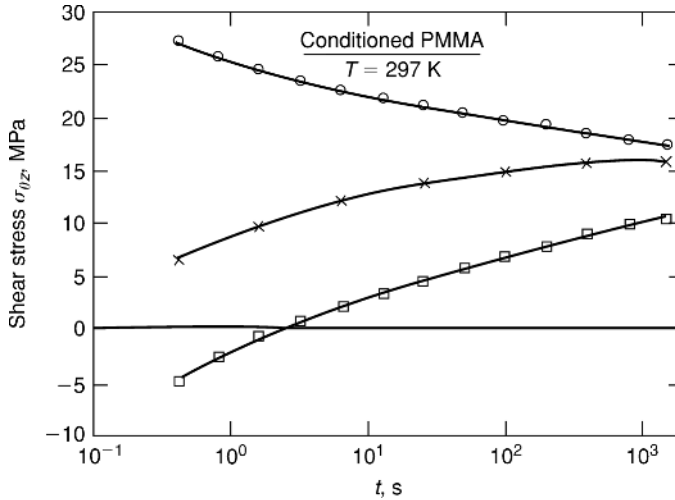


Fig. 64. “Half-step” shear stress response for a PMMA glass. Circles represent single-step stress relaxation response at $\gamma = 0.05$; crosses, K-BKZ prediction; and open squares, experimental data for second step of $\gamma = 0.05$ after a first step of $\gamma = 0.10$ having a duration $t_1 = 419$ s. After McKenna (114).

where b_σ is the stress shift factor. The reduced time $\beta(t, t')$ is written as

$$\beta(t, t') = \int_{t'}^t b_\sigma(s) ds \quad (122)$$

An interesting aspect of the Bernstein–Shokooch model is that the structure of the nonlinear equations is somewhat different from either the Schapery model or the Zapas strain-clock model. In the Bernstein–Shokooch model, the nonlinearity is set up by having the stress response to a deformation history depend also on the stress through the stress shift factor b_σ . Hence, in equation 121 there are stress terms on both sides of the equation. For the other models, including those discussed subsequently, the stresses or deformations are isolated on either side of the equation. For example, in the Schapery stress relaxation formulation (eq. 117) the stress depends on the strain and a strain-dependent material clock. Examination of equations 115 and 119 provides a similar type of conclusion for the Schapery creep formulation or the K-BKZ strain-clock equation. Hence, one might expect that the stress-clock formulation of Bernstein and Shokooch might capture a different sort of material nonlinearity from the other models. To this author’s knowledge, the only other set of equations that provides a similar type of nonlinear response comes in the field of *structural recovery or physical aging* of glassy materials. The so-called Tool–Narayanaswamy–Moynihan and Kovacs–Aklonis–Hutchinson–Ramos models have been very successful to describe the kinetics of structural recovery. (The reader is referred to the relevant literature for further examination of these equations (156–160). See also AGING, PHYSICAL).

There has been relatively little testing of the Bernstein–Shokooch model. Penn did some work to describe the nonlinear response of aluminum, but this, however, was not published (161). Pesce and McKenna did some two-step stress relaxation experiments in torsion (162) using polycarbonate as the material. The results, one of which is shown in Figure 65, indicated that the model is better

than the K-BKZ model, but does not perfectly describe the material response for polycarbonate.

The Knauss–Emri Model. There have been several works in the literature in which volume- or *free-volume*-dependent clocks were used to describe the nonlinear viscoelastic response of polymeric glasses. The chief success among these is the Knauss–Emri model (163) in which the reduced time was defined in terms of a shift factor that depended on temperature, stress, and concentration of small molecules in such a way that the responses depended on the free volume induced by each of these parameters. For an isothermal single phase and homogeneous material, the equations are

$$S_{ij} = 2 \int_{-\infty}^t G(Z - Z') \frac{\partial \varepsilon_{ij}}{\partial t'} dt' \quad (123)$$

$$\kappa_{ii} = 3 \int_{-\infty}^t K(Z - Z') \frac{\partial \varepsilon_v}{\partial t'} dt'$$

where Z is the reduced time, S_{ij} are the deviatoric stresses, κ_{ii} is the first stress invariant, $G(t)$ and $K(t)$ are material functions, and ε_v is the dilatational strain. The dilatational strain is related to the bulk creep compliance $M(t)$ and determines the reduced time as

$$Z(t) - Z(t') = \int_{t'}^t \frac{ds}{\phi[\varepsilon_v(s)]} \quad (124)$$

$$\varepsilon_v(t) = \frac{M(t) * d\kappa_{kk}}{3}$$

where the asterisk denotes a Stieltjes convolution operation.

The Knauss–Emri model captures some of the nonlinear stress relaxation response of materials and looks like linear viscoelasticity in the reduced time variables, and hence is relatively straightforward to implement. However, the observation that material nonlinearities occur in shearing deformations as well as in compression, where the free-volume mechanisms predict decreasing mobility suggest that the model is limited in its usefulness (164,165).

The Lustig–Shay–Caruthers Model. In the past several years there has been a serious effort at the Purdue University School of Chemical Engineering under the direction of J.M. Caruthers (166–170) to adapt one such formalism to the problem of glassy materials. The formalism is that of Rational Mechanics (171) or Rational Thermodynamics, and here the Caruthers group's contributions in this area are examined briefly.

The thermoviscoelastic model is an extension of the original ideas of Coleman (171) and Noll (109) for a nonequilibrium thermodynamics referred to in the literature as *rational mechanics* or *rational thermodynamics*. Historically this approach has been controversial for a variety of reasons beyond the scope of this article. However, one very important issue in the development and uses of the rational mechanics framework has been the need to deal with multiple integral expansions of the relevant response functions and the inherent complexity that

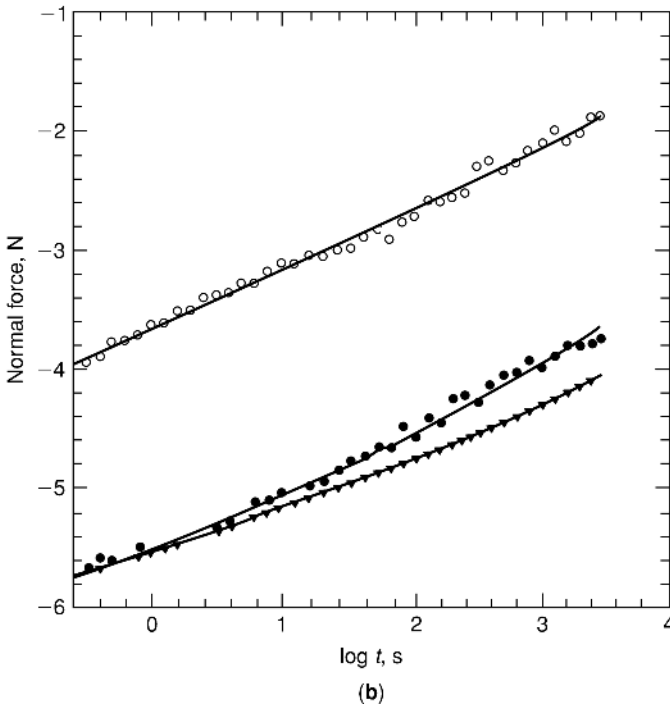
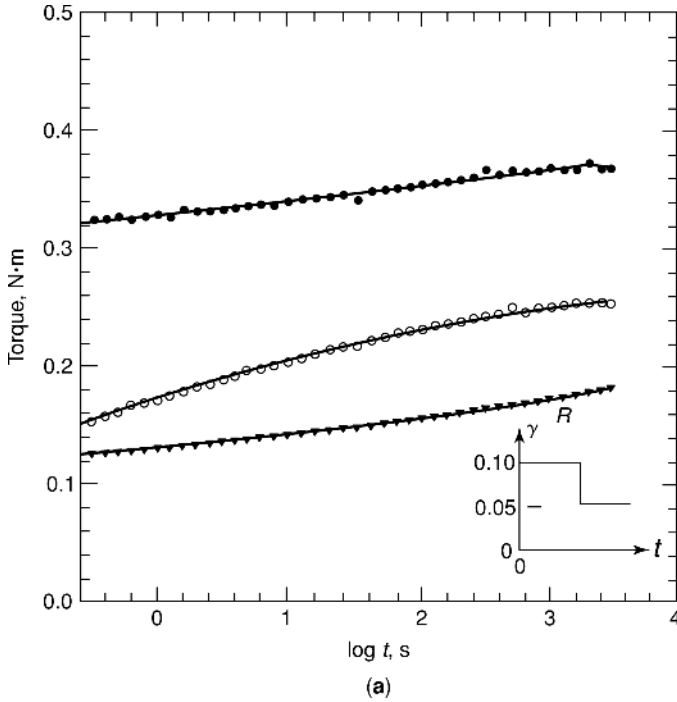


Fig. 65. “Half-step” torque (a) and normal force (b) responses for a polycarbonate glass comparing the experimental data (open circles) with the K-BKZ equation (closed circles) and the Bernstein–Shokoh stress-clock model (155) modified to an energy clock (inverted triangles) predictions. After Pesce and McKenna (162).

arrives in dealing with such representations. The advantage of Lustig–Shay–and Caruthers model (170) is its ability to truncate the multiple integrals and arrive at single integral representations of the material behavior. This leads to a very attractive and tractable set of equations for describing the material response. Because the single integral forms are of themselves insufficient to describe the observed nonlinear response of glass-forming materials, a reduced time much as used in the models presented above, that depends on the configurational entropy has been introduced (170). Hence, one starts with the assumption that there exists a free energy potential functional that is time-dependent. Appropriate differentiation of the functional results in volume, enthalpy, and mechanical responses that contain sufficient information to predict strongly nonlinear behavior from laboratory determined linear viscoelastic response functions.

The detailed development that is followed is beyond the scope of this article. Here simply note that they followed a rigorous approach, beginning with a representation of the time-dependent “free energy” function $\psi(t)$ and through appropriate simplifications and differentiations arrived at a set of equations for the entropy and stress as functions of the thermal and mechanical histories. The fluid form of the model through, single integral terms, is given by the following equations for the stress and entropy. Significantly, note that an important aspect of the model is that all the material parameters are related to response functions obtained from linear viscoelastic measurements, PVT measurements, and heat capacity measurements:

Stress:

$$\begin{aligned} T(t) = & -P^{(\infty)}I + \frac{\rho}{\rho_R} \int_{-\infty}^t G_{\Delta}[I_3(t), \theta(t), t^* - \xi^*] \left[\frac{dC_t(\xi)}{d\xi} - \frac{1}{3}I \frac{dI_{t1}(\xi)}{d\xi} \right] d\xi \\ & + \frac{\rho}{\rho_R} I \int_{-\infty}^t \frac{1}{2} K_{\Delta}[I_3(t), \theta(t), t^* - \xi^*] \frac{dI_{t1}(\xi)}{d\xi} d\xi \\ & + \frac{\rho}{\rho_R} I \int_{-\infty}^t 2\rho_R A_{\Delta}[I_3(t), \theta(t), t^* - \xi^*] \frac{d\theta(\xi)}{d\xi} d\xi \end{aligned} \quad (125)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \eta(t) = & \eta^{(\infty)}[I_3(t), \theta(t)] - \int_{-\infty}^t A_{\Delta}[I_3(t), \theta(t), t^* - \xi^*] \frac{dI_{t1}(\xi)}{d\xi} d\xi \\ & - \int_{-\infty}^t 2C_{\Delta}[I_3(t), \theta(t), t^* - \xi^*] \frac{d\theta(\xi)}{d\xi} d\xi \end{aligned} \quad (126)$$

where P is the pressure and η is the entropy. The superscript ∞ implies the equilibrium value. ρ is the density and ρ_R is its value in the undeformed, reference state. I is the identity tensor, I_3 is the third absolute strain invariant of the deformation tensor (related to the volume change), $C_t(\tau)$ is the relative right Cauchy–Green strain tensor, and $I_{t1}(\tau)$ is the first relative strain invariant of $C_t(\tau)$. Note that in the Caruthers’s group the notation is that θ is the absolute temperature. The K_{Δ} term is the relaxation function for the bulk modulus, G_{Δ} is the shear modulus relaxation function, A_{Δ} is a constant volume thermal stress function, and C_{Δ} is the constant volume heat capacity divided by temperature. Finally, the

reduced time t^* is defined by

$$t^* = \int_0^t \frac{d\xi}{a(\xi)} \quad (127)$$

where $a(\xi)$ is a generalized shift factor that is taken to depend on the configurational entropy following the Adam–Gibbs (172) relationship:

$$\log a = M \left[\frac{1}{\eta_c \theta} - \frac{1}{\eta_{cr} \theta_r} \right] \quad (128)$$

where M is a constant, η_c and η_{cr} are the configurational entropy in the current and reference states respectively, and θ and θ_r are the temperature and reference temperature respectively. The configurational entropy can be calculated from the experimental heat capacity data, assuming that it is approximately equal to the total. The reader is referred to McWilliams (169) for further discussion. Also, note that Hodge (160) has discussed this form of shift factor in the Tool–Narayanaswamy–Moynihan equations for enthalpy recovery.

The Lustig–Shay–Caruthers model has, to date, been primarily used to estimate volume and enthalpy responses in glassy materials (see AGING, PHYSICAL)—a subset of the viscoelastic behaviors seen in solid-like or glassy polymers and not covered in this article. However, recent work between the Purdue group and Sandia National Laboratories (173) has made great strides in implementing the model into finite element codes as well as defining limits on the forms of some of the functions. The model, when finally published, will require full evaluation. At this point, the current author thinks that it will be an important contribution to the understanding of the nonlinear viscoelastic behavior of polymeric glasses.

Plasticity and Viscoplasticity and Other Models. As discussed above, the alternative representation of the nonlinear viscoelastic response of polymers is that of plasticity and viscoplasticity. In some respects, these models could be recast as viscoelastic models and they would be equivalent to some of the models discussed above. However, the perspective that glassy polymers are really fluids and do follow time–temperature superposition is lost with these models. Hence, the physical interpretation of material parameters, in this author’s opinion, becomes very questionable. Therefore, only references to the major papers on polymer plasticity and viscoplasticity are given (174–177).

In addition, there are other viscoelastic models that are not dealt with here. Again, the references are provided for the reader’s information (178–184).

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Viscoelasticity” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 14, pp. 670–717, by J. D. Ferry, University of Wisconsin; in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 587–665, by F. R. Schwarzl, University of Erlangen – Nürnberg; in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 4, pp. 533–628, by G. B. McKenna, Texas Tech University.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. W. Weber, Ueber die Elasticität der Seidenfäden *Pogg. Ann. Physik.* **4**, 247–257 (1835).

2. R. Kohlrausch, Theorie des Elektrischen Rückstandes in der Leidener Flasche *Annalen der Physik und Chemie von J. C. Poggendorff* **91**, 179–214 (1854); F. Kohlrausch, Ueber die elastische Nachwirkung bei der Torsion *Annalen der Physik und Chemie von J. C. Poggendorff* **119**, 337–369 (1863).
3. L. Boltzmann, Zur Theorie der Elastischen Nachwirkung *Sitzungsber. Akad. Wiss. Wien. Mathem.-Naturwiss. Kl.* **70**, 275–300 (1874).
4. H. Markovitz, Boltzmann and the Beginnings of Linear Viscoelasticity *Trans. Soc. Rheol.* **21**, 381–398 (1977).
5. E. N. da C. Andrade, A Theory of the Viscosity of Liquids. Part I *Phil. Mag.* **17**, 497–511 (1934); E. N. da C. Andrade, A Theory of the Viscosity of Liquids. Part II *Phil. Mag.* **17**, 698–732 (1934).
6. C. Zener, *Elasticity and Anelasticity of Metals*, University of Chicago Press, Chicago, 1948.
7. R. A. Schapery, in G. P. Sendeckyj, ed., *Composite Materials*, Vol. 2: *Mechanics of Composite Materials* Academic Press, Inc., New York, 1974, Chapt. 4, pp. 85–168.
8. S. P. Timoshenko and J. N. Goodier, *Theory of Elasticity*, 3rd ed., McGraw-Hill, New York, 1970.
9. J. D. Ferry, *Viscoelastic Properties of Polymers*, 3rd ed., John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York, 1980.
10. N. W. Tschoegl, *The Phenomenological Theory of Linear Viscoelastic Behavior*, Springer Verlag, Berlin, 1989.
11. A. J. Staverman and F. Schwarzl, in H. A. Stuart, ed., *Die Physik der Hochpolymeren. Vierter Band. Theorie und Molekulare Deutung Technologischer Eigenschaften von Hochpolymeren Werkstoffen*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1956, Chapt. 1, pp. 1–125 (In English).
12. H. Leaderman, in F. R. Eirich, ed. *Rheology, Vol. 2: Theory and Applications*, Academic Press, Inc., New York, 1958, pp. 1–62.
13. S. L. Rosen, *Fundamental Principles of Polymeric Materials*, 2nd ed., Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1993.
14. H. H. Winter, Analysis of Dynamic Mechanical Data-Inversion into a Relaxation-Time Spectrum and Consistency Check *J. Non-Newt. Fl. Mech.* **68**, 225–239 (1997).
15. D. W. Mead, Determinations of Molecular Weight Distributions of Linear Flexible Polymers from Linear Viscoelastic Material Functions *J. Rheol.* **38**, 1797–1827 (1994).
16. G. A. Carri and H. H. Winter, Mapping of the Relaxation Patterns of Polymer Melts with Linear Flexible Molecules of Uniform Length *Rheol. Acta* **36**, 330–344 (1997).
17. M. Baumgaertel and H. H. Winter, Interrelation Between Continuous and Discrete Relaxation-Time Spectra *J. Non-Newt. Fl. Mech.* **44**, 15–36 (1992).
18. W. H. Tuminello, Molecular Weight Distributions of Tetrafluoroethylene-Hexafluoropropylene Copolymers *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **29**, 645–653 (1989).
19. S. W. Park and R. A. Schapery, Methods of Interconversion between Linear Viscoelastic material Functions. Part. I.—A Numerical Method Based on Prony Series *Int. J. Solids and Struct.* **36**, 1653–1675 (1999).
20. D. J. Plazek, Don't Cry for Me Charlie Brown or with Compliance Comes Comprehension *J. Rheol.* **44**, 831–841 (2000).
21. W. N. Findley, J. S. Lai, and K. Onaran, *Creep and Relaxation of Nonlinear Viscoelastic Materials with an Introduction to Linear Viscoelasticity*, North Holland, New York, 1976.
22. A. S. Wineman and K. R. Rajagopal, *Mechanical Response of Polymers*, Cambridge University Press, New York, 2000.
23. E. H. Lee, Stress Analysis in Viscoelastic Bodies *Quart. Appl. Math.* **13**, 183 (1955).

24. R. A. Schapery, Approximate Methods of Transform Inversion for Viscoelastic Stress Analysis in *Proc. 4th Int. Cong. Appl. Mech.*, Vol. 2, ASME, New York, 1962, p. 1075.
25. A. V. Tobolsky, *Properties and Structure of Polymers*, John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York, 1967.
26. T. Fujimoto, M. Ozaki, and M. Nagasawa, Stress Relaxation of Monodisperse Poly- α -methylstyrene *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-2* **6**, 129–140 (1968).
27. H. Vogel, Das Temperaturabhängigkeitsgesetz der Viskosität Flüssigkeiten *Phys. Z.* **22**, 645–646 (1921).
28. G. S. Fulcher, Analysis of Recent Measurements of the Viscosity of Glasses *J. Am. Ceram. Soc.* **8**, 339–355 (1925).
29. M. L. Williams, R. F. Landel, and J. D. Ferry, The Temperature Dependence of Relaxation Mechanisms in Amorphous Polymers and Other Glass-forming Liquids *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **77**, 3701–3706 (1955).
30. D. J. Plazek, X. D. Zheng, and K. L. Ngai, Viscoelastic Properties of Amorphous Polymers. 1 Different Temperature Dependences of Segmental Relaxation and Terminal Dispersion *Macromolecules* **25**, 4920–4924 (1992).
31. P. G. Santangelo and C. M. Roland, Temperature Dependence of Mechanical and Dielectric-Relaxation in Cis-1,4-Polyisoprene *Macromolecules* **31**, 3715–3719 (1998).
32. R. Zorn, G. B. McKenna, L. Willner, D. Richter, Rheological Investigations on Polybutadienes with Different Microstructures over a Large Temperature Range *Macromolecules* **28**, 8552–8562 (1995).
33. J.-J. Pesce, J. M. Niemiec, M. Y. Chiang, C. L. Schutte, C. R. Schultheisz, and G. B. McKenna in M. Negahban, ed., Characterization of Polymers in the Glass Transition Range: Time-Temperature and Time-Aging Time Superposition in Polycarbonate in *Current Research in the Thermo-Mechanics of Polymers in the Rubbery-Glassy Range*, American Society of Mechanical Engineers, New York, AMD-Vol. **203**, 1995, pp. 77–88.
34. H. G. Merriman and J. M. Caruthers, Nonlinear Stress Relaxation of a Styrene-Butadiene Random Copolymer *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **19**, 1055–1071 (1981).
35. P. A. O'Connell and G. B. McKenna, Large Deformation Response of Polycarbonate: Time-Temperature, Time-Aging Time and Time Strain Superposition *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **37**, 1485–1495 (1997).
36. G. W. Scherer, *Relaxation in Glass and Composites*, Krieger Publishing Co., Malabar, Fla., 1992.
37. C. A. Angell K. L. Ngai, G. B. McKenna, P. F. McMillan and S. W. Martin, Relaxation in Glassforming Liquids and Amorphous Solids *J. Appl. Phys.* **88**, 3113–3157 (2000).
38. A. J. Kovacs, Transition Vitreuse dans les Polymères Amorphes. Etude Phénoménologique *Fortschritte der Hochpolymeren-Forschung* **3**, 394–507 (1963).
39. G. B. McKenna, in C. Booth and C. Price, eds., *Comprehensive Polymer Science, Vol. 2: Polymer Properties*, Pergamon Press, Oxford, 1989, pp. 311–362.
40. L. C. E. Struik, *Physical Aging in Polymers and Other Amorphous Materials*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1976.
41. L. P. Chen, A. F. Yee, and E. J. Moskala, The Molecular Basis for the Relationship Between the Secondary Relaxation and Mechanical Properties of a Series of Polyester Copolymer Glasses *Macromolecules* **32**, 5944–5955 (1999).
42. W. C. Child Jr. and J. D. Ferry, Dynamic Mechanical Properties of Poly-n-Butyl Methacrylate *J. Colloid. Sci.* **12**, 327–341 (1957).
43. A. K. Rizos, L. Petihakis, K. L. Nagi, J. H. Wu, and A. F. Yee, A Dielectric-Relaxation Study of the Gamma-Relaxation in Tetramethylbisphenol-A Polycarbonate Plasticized by Tris(2-Ethylhexyl) Phosphate *Macromolecules* **32**, 7921–7924 (1999).
44. J. Heijboer, in J. A. Prins, ed., *Physics of Non-Crystalline Solids*, North-Holland, Amsterdam, 1965, pp. 231–254.

45. M. L. Cerrada and G. B. McKenna, Stress Relaxation of Poly(ethylene Naphthalate): Isothermal, Isochronal and Isostructural Responses *Macromolecules* **33**, 3065–3076 (2000).
46. L. R. G. Treloar, *The Physics of Rubber Elasticity*, 3rd ed., Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1975.
47. J. P. Cohen Addad, ed., *Physical Properties of Polymeric Gels*, John Wiley and Sons, Inc., New York, 1996.
48. F. Horkay and G. B. McKenna, in J. E. Mark, ed., *Physical Properties of Polymers Handbook*, AIP Press, Woodbury, N. Y., 1996, pp. 379–400.
49. J. E. Mark and B. Erman, ed., *Elastomeric Polymer Networks*, Prentice Hall, Englewood Cliffs, N. J., 1992.
50. G. B. McKenna and J. A. Hinkley, Mechanical and Swelling Behavior of Well Characterized Polybutadiene Networks *Polymer* **27**, 1368–1376 (1986).
51. P. G. de Gennes, Reptation of a Polymer Chain in the Presence of Fixed Obstacles *J. Chem. Phys.* **55**, 572–579 (1971).
52. M. Doi and S. F. Edwards, Dynamics of Concentrated Polymer Systems Part 1. Brownian Motion in the Equilibrium State *J. Chem. Soc., Faraday Trans. 2* **74**, 1789–1801 (1978).
53. M. Doi and S. F. Edwards, Dynamics of Concentrated Polymer Systems Part 2.—Molecular Motion under Flow *J. Chem. Soc., Faraday Trans. 2* **74**, 1802–1817 (1978).
54. M. Doi and S. F. Edwards, Dynamics of Concentrated Polymer Systems Part 3.—The Constitutive Equation *J. Chem. Soc., Faraday Trans. 2* **74**, 1818–1832 (1978).
55. M. Doi and S. F. Edwards, Dynamics of Concentrated Polymer Systems Part 4.—Rheological Properties *J. Chem. Soc. Faraday Trans. 2* **75**, 38–54 (1979).
56. M. Doi and S. F. Edwards, *The Theory of Polymer Dynamics*, Oxford Science Publishers, Oxford, 1986.
57. G. C. Berry and T. G. Fox, The Viscosity of Polymers and Their Concentrated Solutions *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **5**, 261–357 (1968).
58. M. Doi and N. Y. Kuzuu, Rheology of Star Polymers in Concentrated Solutions and Melts *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Lett. Ed.* **18**, 775–780 (1980).
59. W. W. Graessley, Entangled Linear, Branched and Network Polymer Systems *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **47**, 68–117 (1982).
60. M. Doi, Explanation for the 3.4 Power Law for Viscosity of Polymeric Liquids on the Basis of the Tube Model *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Lett. Ed.* **19**, 265–273 (1981).
61. R. G. Larson, *The Structure and Rheology of Complex Fluids*, Oxford University Press, New York, 1999.
62. R. G. Larson, *Constitutive Equations for Polymer Melts and Solutions*, Butterworths, London, 1988.
63. H. Watanabe, Viscoelasticity and Dynamics of Entangled Polymers *Prog. Polym. Sci.* **24**, 1253–1403 (1999).
64. W. W. Graessley, The Entanglement Concept in Polymer Rheology *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **16**, 1–179, (1974).
65. R. H. Colby, L. J. Fetters, and W. W. Graessley, Melt Viscosity-Molecular Weight Relationship for Linear Polymers *Macromolecules* **20**, 2226–2237 (1987).
66. W. G. Knauss and V. H. Kenner, On the Hygrothermal Characterization of Polyvinyl Acetate *J. Appl. Phys.* **51**, 5131–5136 (1980).
67. T. W. Dewitt, H. Markovitz, F. J. Padden, Jr., and L. J. Zapas, Concentration Dependence of the Rheological Behavior of the Polyisobutylene-Decalin System *J. Colloid Sci.* **10**, 174–188 (1955).
68. R. W. Rendell, K. L. Ngai, and G. B. McKenna, Molecular Weight and Concentration Dependences of the Terminal Relaxation Time and Viscosity of Entangled Polymer Solutions *Macromolecules* **20**, 2250–2256 (1987).

69. C. W. Macosko, *Rheology: Principles, Measurements, and Applications*, VCH Publishers, New York, 1994.
70. B. Bernstein, E. A. Kearsley, and L. I. Zapas, A Study of Stress Relaxation with Finite Strain *Trans. Soc. Rheol.* **7**, 391–410 (1963).
71. A. Kaye, Non-Newtonian Flow in Incompressible Fluids. Part I. A General Rheological Equation of State, Note No. 134, College of Aeronautics, Cranfield, 1962, pp. 1–4.
72. B. Bernstein, Time Dependent Behavior of an Incompressible Elastic Fluid. Some Homogeneous Deformation Histories *Acta Mech.* **2**, 329–354 (1966).
73. W. W. Graessley, R. L. Hazleton, and L. R. Lindeman, The Shear Rate Dependence of Viscosity in Concentrated Solutions of Narrow Distribution Polystyrene *Trans. Soc. Rheol.* **11**, 267–285 (1967).
74. S. L. Rosen, *Fundamental Principles of Polymeric Materials*, 2nd ed., Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1993 pp. 252–253.
75. H. C. Tseng, C. A. Heiber, K. K. Wang, H. H. Chiang, and G. E. Grant, Analysis of Rheological Data from an Automated Injection-Molding Capillary Rheometer in ANTEC '85, Society of Plastics Engineers, 1985, pp. 716–719.
76. D. M. Best, *Prediction of Polymer Melt Processing Behavior*, Thesis, Carnegie Institute of Technology (now Carnegie Mellon Institution), 1969.
77. H. Münstedt, Dependence of the Elongational Behavior of Polystyrene Melts on Molecular Weight and Molecular Weight Distribution *J. Rheol.* **24**, 847–867 (1980).
78. C. M. Vrentas and W. W. Graessley, Study of Shear Stress Relaxation in Well-Characterized Polymer Liquids *J. Rheol.* **26**, 359–371 (1982).
79. G. B. McKenna and L. J. Zapas, The Superposition of Small Deformations on Large Deformations: Measurements of the Incremental Modulus for a Polyisobutylene Solution *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **23**, 1647–1656 (1985).
80. K. Osaki, N. Bessho, T. Kojimoto, and M. Kurata, Experimental Tests of a Few Constitutive Models for Polymer Solutions Based on Birefringence Data in Time-Dependent Fields *J. Rheol.* **24**, 125–144 (1980).
81. L. J. Zapas and J. C. Phillips, Nonlinear Behavior of Polyisobutylene Solutions as a Function of Concentration *J. Rheol.* **25**, 405–420 (1981).
82. R. I. Tanner, From A to (BK)Z in Constitutive Relations *J. Rheol.* **32**, 673–702 (1988).
83. D. C. Leigh, *Nonlinear Continuum Mechanics*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1968.
84. W. Prager, *An Introduction to Mechanics of Continua*, Ginn and Co., Boston, 1961.
85. O. H. Varga, *Stress–Strain Behavior of Elastic Materials. Selected Problems of Large Deformation*, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1966.
86. A. S. Lodge, *An Introduction to Elastomer Molecular Theory*, Bannatek Press, Madison, Wis., 1999.
87. M. Mooney, A Theory of Large Elastic Deformation *J. Appl. Phys.* **11**, 582–592 (1940).
88. R. S. Rivlin, Large Elastic Deformations of Isotropic Materials. I. Fundamental Concepts *Phil. Trans. R. Soc. London, Ser. A*, **240**, 459–525 (1948).
89. W. H. Han, F. Horkay, and G. B. McKenna, Mechanical and Swelling Behaviors of Rubber: A Comparison of Some Molecular Models with Experiment *Math. Mech. Solids* **4**, 139–167 (1999).
90. R. S. Rivlin and D. W. Saunders, Large Elastic Deformations of Isotropic Materials. VII. Experiments on the Deformation of Rubber *Phil. Trans. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **243**, 251 (1951).
91. H. Pak and P. J. Flory, Relationship of Stress to Uniaxial Strain in Crosslinked Poly(dimethyl siloxane) over the Full Range from Large Compression to High Elongation *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **17**, 1845 (1979).
92. M. Gottlieb and R. J. Gaylord, Experimental Tests of Entanglement Models of Rubber Elasticity: 1. Uniaxial Tension Compression *Polymer* 1644–1646 (1982).

93. M. Gottlieb and R. J. Gaylord, Experimental Tests of Entanglement Models of Rubber Elasticity: 2. Swelling *Macromolecules* **17**, 2024–2030 (1984).
94. R. W. Penn and E. A. Kearsley, The Scaling Law for Finite Torsion of Elastic Cylinders *Trans. Soc. Rheol.* **20**, 227–238 (1976).
95. J. H. Poynting, On the Changes in the Dimensions of a Steel Wire when Twisted, and on the Pressure of Distortional Waves in Steel *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **86**, 534–561 (1912).
96. G. B. McKenna and L. J. Zapas, Experiments on the Small Strain Behavior of Crosslinked Natural Rubber. Part I. Torsion *Polymer* **24**, 1495–1501 (1983).
97. E. A. Kearsley and L. J. Zapas, Some Methods of Measurement of an Elastic Strain Energy Function of the Valanis–Landel Type *J. Rheol.* **24**, 483–500 (1980).
98. K. C. Valanis and R. F. Landel, A Strain Energy Function of a Hyperelastic Material in Terms of the Extension Ratios *J. Appl. Phys.* **38**, 2997–3002 (1967).
99. H. Vangerko and L. R. G. Treloar, The Inflation and Extension of Rubber Tube for Biaxial Strain Studies *J. Phys. D: Appl. Phys.* **11**, 1969–1978 (1978).
100. D. G. Jones and L. R. G. Treloar, The Properties of Rubber in Pure Homogeneous Strain *J. Phys. D: Appl. Phys.* **8** 1285–1304 (1975).
101. J. Glucklich and R. F. Landel, Strain Energy Function of Styrene Butadiene Rubber and the Effect of Temperature *J. Polym. Sci.* **15**, 2185–2199 (1978).
102. G. B. McKenna, K. M. Flynn, and Y.-H. Chen, Experiments on the elasticity of Dry and Swollen Networks: Implications for the Frenkel Flory-Rehner Hypothesis *Macromolecules* **22**, 4507–4512 (1989).
103. R. W. Ogden, Large deformation Isotropic Elasticity—On the Correlation of Theory and Experiment for Incompressible Rubberlike Solids *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **326**, 565–584 (1972).
104. E. H. Twizell and R. W. Ogden, Non-Linear Optimization of the Material Constants in Ogden's Stress Deformation Function for Incompressible Isotropic Elastic Materials *J. Austral. Math. Soc., Ser. B* **24**, 424–434 (1983).
105. G. Karami, H. Zohari, and E. Setoudeh, Stress Distribution Change in Bias Tires Due to Changes in Cord Angle—A Finite Element Analysis *Kautsch. Gummi Kunstst.* **51**, 450–454 (1998).
106. G. L. Bradley, P. C. Chang, and G. B. McKenna, Rubber Modeling Using Uniaxial Test Data *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.*, **81**, 837 (2001).
107. R. I. Tanner, *Rheology: An Historical Perspective*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1998.
108. B. D. Coleman, Thermodynamics of Materials with Memory *Arch. Ration. Mech. Anal.* **17**, 1–46 (1964).
109. W. Noll, A Mathematical Theory of the Mechanical Behavior of Continuous Media *Arch. Ration. Mech. Anal.* **2**, 197–226 (1958).
110. V. Rouiller and G. B. McKenna, *Society of Plastics Engineers, in ANTEC '98, Vol. II*, 1998, pp. 2138–2143.
111. L. J. Zapas and T. Craft, Correlation of Large Longitudinal Deformations with Different Strain Histories *J. Res. Natl. Bur. Stand. (U.S.)* **69A**, 541–546 (1965).
112. G. B. McKenna and L. J. Zapas, Nonlinear Viscoplastic Behavior of Poly(methyl methacrylate) in Torsion *J. Rheol.* **23**, 151–166 (1979).
113. G. B. McKenna and L. J. Zapas, The Normal Stress Response in Nonlinear Viscoelastic Materials—Some Experimental Findings *J. Rheol.* **24**, 367–377 (1980).
114. G. B. McKenna, in K. L. Ngai and G. B. Wright, eds., Measurement of the Torque and Normal Force in Torsion in the Study of the Thermoviscoelastic Properties of Polymer Glasses in *Relaxations in Complex Systems*, U.S. Government Printing Office, NTIS, Springfield, Virginia, 1985, pp. 129–144.
115. D. C. Venerus and H. Kahvand, Doi Edwards Theory Evaluation in Double-Step Strain Flows *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **32**, 1531–1542 (1994).

116. D. C. Venerus and H. Kahvand, Normal Stress Relaxation in Reversing Double Step Strain Flows *J. Rheol.* **38**, 1297–1315 (1994).
117. D. C. Venerus, E. F. Brown, and W. R. Burghardt, The Nonlinear Response of a Polydisperse Polymer Solution to Step Strain Deformations *Macromolecules* **31**, 9206–9212 (1998).
118. L. J. Zapas, in H. H. Kausch, J. A. Hassell, and R. I. Jaffee, eds., Nonlinear Behavior of Polyisobutylene Solutions in *Deformation and Fracture of High Polymers*, Plenum, New York, 1974, pp. 381–395.
119. M. H. Wagner and J. Schaeffer, Assessment of Nonlinear Strain Measures for Extensional and Shearing Flows of Polymer Melts *Rheol. Acta* **33**, 506–516 (1994).
120. P. E. Rouse, A Theory of the Linear Viscoelastic Properties of Dilute Solutions of Coiling Polymers *J. Chem. Phys.* **21**, 1272–1980 (1953).
121. T. C. B. McLeish, in M. E. Cates and M. R. Evans, eds., Rheology of Linear and Branched Polymers in *Soft and Fragile Matter. Nonequilibrium Dynamics, Metastability and Flow*, Institute of Physics, London, 2000, pp. 79–111.
122. G. B. McKenna, B. J. Hostetter, A. Hadjichristides, L. J. Fetters and D. J. Plazek, A Study of the Linear Viscoelastic Properties of Cyclic Polystyrenes Using Creep and Recovery Measurements *Macromolecules* **22**, 1834–1852 (1989).
123. K. Osaki, K. Nishizawa, and M. Kurata, Material Time Constant Characterizing the Nonlinear Viscoelasticity of Entangled Polymer Systems *Macromolecules* **15**, 1068–1071 (1982).
124. A. S. Lodge and J. Meissner, On the Use of Instantaneous Strains, Superposed on Shear and Elongational Flows of Polymeric Liquids, to Test the Gaussian Network Hypothesis and to Estimate Segment Concentration and its Variation During Flow *Rheol. Acta.* **11**, 351–352 (1972).
125. M. H. Wagner and J. Schaeffer, Nonlinear Strain Measures for General Biaxial Extension of Polymer Melts *J. Rheol.* **36**, 1–27 (1992).
126. J. des Cloiseaux, Double Reptation vs. Simple Reptation in Polymer Melts *Europhys. Lett.* **5**, 437–442 (1988).
127. S. T. Milner, Relating the Shear-Thinning Curve to the Molecular Weight Distribution in Linear Polymer Melts *J. Rheol.* **40**, 305–315 (1996).
128. C. Tsenoglou, Molecular Weight Polydispersity Effects on the Viscoelasticity of Entangled Linear-Polymers *Macromolecules* **24**, 1762–1767 (1991).
129. K. Osaki, S. Kimura, and M. Kurata, Relaxation of Shear and Normal Stresses in Step-Shear Deformation of a Polystyrene Solution. Comparison with the Predictions of the Doi–Edwards Theory *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **19**, 517–527 (1981).
130. K. Osaki and M. Kurata, Experimental Appraisal of the Doi–Edwards Theory for Polymer Rheology Based on the Data for Polystyrene Solutions *Macromolecules* **13**, 671–676 (1980).
131. K. Osaki, Y. Einaga, M. Kurata, N. Yamada, and M. Tamura, Stress Relaxation of Polymer Solutions under Large Strain: Application of Double-Step Strain *Polym. J.* **5**, 283–287 (1973).
132. K. Osaki and M. Kurata, Stress Relaxation of a Polymer Solution in Double-Step Shear Deformations: A Separate Evaluation of the Stress Components due to Entangled Segments of Different Orientations *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **20**, 623–632 (1982).
133. Y. Einaga, K. Osaki, M. Kurata, S. Kimura, and M. Tamura, Stress Relaxation of Polymer Solutions under Large Strain *Polym. J.* **2**, 550–552 (1971).
134. E. F. Brown and W. R. Burghardt, First and Second Normal Stress Difference Relaxation in Reversing Double-Step Strain Flows *J. Rheol.* **40**, 37–54 (1996).
135. E. F. Brown, W. R. Burghardt, H. Kahvand, and D. C. Venerus, Comparison of Optical and Mechanical Measurements of Second Normal Stress Difference Relaxation Following Step-Strain *Rheol. Acta* **34**, 221–234 (1995).

136. K. Osaki, H. Watanabe, and T. Inoue, Damping Function of the Shear Relaxation Modulus and the Chain Retraction Process of Entangled Polymers *Macromolecules* **29**, 3611–3614 (1996).
137. M. H. Wagner and J. Schaeffer, Rubbers and Polymer Melts: Universal Aspects of Nonlinear Stress-Strain Relations *J. Rheol.* **37**, 643–661 (1993).
138. K. Osaki, S. Kimura, and M. Kurata, Relaxation of Shear and Normal Stresses in Double-Step Shear Deformations. A Test of the Doi–Edwards Theory for Polymer Rheology *J. Rheol.* **25**, 549–562 (1981).
139. Z. Bartzczak, A. S. Argon, and R. E. Cohen, Deformation Mechanisms and Plastic Resistance in Single-Crystal-Textured High Density Polyethylene *Macromolecules* **25**, 5036–5053 (1992).
140. N. W. Brooks, M. Ghazali, R. A. Duckett, R. A. Unwin, and I. M. Ward, Effects of Morphology on the Yield Stress of Polyethylene *Polymer* **40**, 821–825 (1999).
141. N. W. J. Brooks, R. A. Duckett, and I. M. Ward, Modeling of Double Yield Points in Polyethylene Temperature and Strain Rate Dependence *J. Rheol.* **39**, 425–436 (1995).
142. P. A. O’Connell and G. B. McKenna, Arrhenius-type Temperature Dependence of the Segmental Relaxation below T_g *J. Chem. Phys.* **110**, 11054–11060 (1999).
143. R. S. Duran and G. B. McKenna, A Torsional Dilatometer for Volume Change Measurements on Deformed Glasses: Instrument Description and Measurements on Equilibrated Glasses *J. Rheol.* **34**, 813–839 (1990).
144. T. T. Wang, H. M. Zupko, L. A. Wyndon, and S. Matsuoka, Dimensional and Volumetric Changes in Cylindrical Rods of Polymers Subjected to a Twist Moment *Polymer* **23**, 1407–1409 (1982).
145. R. Pixa, V. LeDû, and C. Wippler, Dilatometric Study of Deformation Induced Volume Increase and Recovery in Rigid PVC *Colloid Polym. Sci.* **266**, 913–920 (1988).
146. J.-J. Pesce and G. B. McKenna, Prediction of the Sub-Yield Extension and Compression Responses of Glassy Polycarbonate from Torsional Measurements *J. Rheol.* **41**, 929–942 (1997).
147. R. A. Schapery, On the Characterization of Nonlinear Viscoelastic Materials *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **9**, 295–310 (1969).
148. R. A. Schapery, A Theory of Nonlinear Thermoviscoelasticity Based on Irreversible Thermodynamics *Proc. 5th U.S. National Congress of Applied Mechanics*, ASME, New York, 1966, pp. 511–530.
149. R. A. Schapery, Further Development of a Thermodynamic Constitutive Theory: Stress Formulation, Report AA & ES 69–72, Purdue University, Lafayette, Ind., 1969.
150. H. Leaderman, *Elastic and Creep Properties of Filamentous Materials and Other High Polymers*, The Textile Foundation, Washington, D.C., 1943.
151. G. C. Papanicolaou, S. P. Zaoutsos, and A. H. Cardon, Prediction of the Nonlinear Viscoelastic Response of Unidirectional Fiber Composites *Compos. Sci. Technol.* **59**, 1311–1319 (1999).
152. M. E. Tuttle and H. F. Brinson, Prediction of the Long-Term Creep Compliance of General Composite Laminates *Exp. Mech.* **26**, 89–109 (1986).
153. H. Poon and M. F. Ahmad, A Finite-Element Constitutive Update Scheme for Anisotropic Viscoelastic Solids Exhibiting Nonlinearity of the Schapery Type *Int. J. Numer. Methods Eng.* **46**, 2027–2041 (1999).
154. R. A. Schapery, Nonlinear Viscoelastic Solids *Int. J. Solids Struct.* **37**, 359–366 (2000).
155. B. Bernstein and A. Shokooh, The Stress Function in Viscoelasticity *J. Rheol.* **24**, 189–211 (1980).
156. A. Q. Tool, Relation Between Inelastic Deformability and Thermal Expansion of Glass in Its Annealing Range *J. Am. Ceram. Soc.* **29**, 240–253 (1946); A. Q. Tool, Viscosity and the Extraordinary Heat Effects in Glass *J. Res. Natl. Bur. Stand. (U.S.)* **37**, 73–90 (1946).

157. O. S. Narayanaswamy, A Model of Structural Relaxation in Glass *J. Am. Ceram. Soc.* **54**, 491–498 (1971).
158. C. T. Moynihan, P. B. Macedo, C. J. Montrose, P. K. Gupta, M. A. DeBolt, J. F. Dill, B. E. Dom, P. W. Drake, A. J. Esteal, P. B. Elterman, R. P. Moeller, H. Sasabe, and J. A. Wilder, Structural Relaxation in Vitreous Materials *Ann. N.Y. Acad. Sci.* **279**, 15–35 (1976).
159. A. J. Kovacs, J. J. Aklonis, J. M. Hutchinson, and A. R. Ramos, Isobaric Volume and Enthalpy Recovery of Glasses. II. A Transparent Multiparameter Model *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **17**, 1097–1162 (1979).
160. I. M. Hodge, Enthalpy Relaxation and Recovery in Amorphous Materials *J. Non-Cryst. Solids* **169**, 211–266 (1984).
161. R. W. Penn, *National Bureau of Standards, unpublished*.
162. J. J. Pesce and G. B. McKenna, in M. C. Boyce, ed., *Mechanics of Plastics and Plastic Composites vols. MD-68 and AMD-215, 1995*, ASME, New York, pp 309–336 1995.
163. W. G. Knauss and I. J. Emri, Nonlinear Viscoelasticity Based on Free Volume Consideration *Comput. Struct.* **13**, 123–128 (1981).
164. G. B. McKenna, On the Physics Required for the Prediction of Long Term Performance of Polymers and Their Composites *J. Res. NIST* **99**, 169–189 (1994).
165. H. Lu and W. G. Knauss, The Role of Dilatation in the Nonlinearly Viscoelastic Behavior of Pmma under Multiaxial Stress States *Mech. Time-Dependent Matls.* **2**, 307–334 (1999).
166. J. M. Caruthers, *Ph.D. Dissertations, School of Chemical Engineering, Purdue University, Lafayette, Ind.*
167. S. R. Lustig, *A Continuum Thermodynamics Theory for Transport in Polymer/Fluid Systems*, Ph.D. Dissertation, School of Chemical Engineering, Purdue University, Lafayette, Ind., 1989.
168. D. M. Colucci, *The Effect of Temperature and Deformation on the Relaxation Behavior in the Glass Transition Region*, Ph.D. Dissertation, School of Chemical Engineering, Purdue University, Lafayette, Ind., 1995.
169. D. S. McWilliams, *Study of the Effect of Thermal History on the Structural Relaxation and Thermoviscoelasticity of Amorphous Polymers*, Ph.D. Dissertation, School of Chemical Engineering, Purdue University, Lafayette, Ind., 1996.
170. S. R. Lustig, R. M. Shay, and J. M. Caruthers, Thermodynamic Constitutive Equations for Materials with Memory on a Material Time Scale *J. Rheol.* **40**, 69–106 (1996).
171. B. D. Coleman, On Thermodynamics, Strain Impulses, and Viscoelasticity *Arch. Ration. Mech. Anal.* **17**, 230–254 (1964).
172. G. Adam and J. H. Gibbs, On the Temperature Dependence of Cooperative Relaxation Properties in Glass Forming Liquids *J. Chem. Phys.* **43**, 139–146 (1965).
173. J. M. Caruthers, *Purdue University and D. B. Adolf and R. S. Chambers of Sandia National Laboratories, unpublished*.
174. E. M. Arruda and M. C. Boyce, Evolution of Plastic Anisotropy in Amorphous Polymers during Finite Straining *Int. J. Plast.* **9**, 697 (1993).
175. C. G'Sell and J. J. Jonas, Yield and Transient Effects During the plastic Deformation of Solid Polymers *J. Mater. Sci.* **16**, 1956–1974 (1981); C. G'Sell, H. El Baril, J. Perez, J. Y. Cavaillé and G. P. Johari, Cavaillé and G.P. Johari, Effect of Plastic Deformation on the Microstructure and Properties of Amorphous Polycarbonate *Mater. Sci. Eng., A* **110**, 223–229 (1989).
176. E. Oleynik, S. N. Rudnev, O. B. Salamatina, and V. A. Topolkaraev, Stressed Polymer Glasses-Formation, Microstructure and Properties of Local Plastic Transformations *Makromol. Chem. Macromol. Symp.* **53**, 77–80 (1992).
177. M. C. Boyce, D. M. Parks, and A. S. Argon, Large Inelastic Deformation of Glassy Polymers, Part 1: Rate-Dependent Constitutive Model *Mech. Mater.* **7**, 15–33 (1988).

178. T. A. Tervoort, E. T. J. Klompen, and L. E. Govaert, A Multi-Mode Approach to Finite, Three Dimensional, Nonlinear Viscoelastic Behavior of Polymer Glasses *J. Rheol.* **40**, 779–797 (1996).
179. A. I. Leonov, Nonequilibrium thermodynamics and rheology of viscoelastic polymer media *Rheol. Acta* **15**, 85–98 (1976).
180. E. Krempl and K. Ho, in R. A. Schapery, ed., An Overstress Model for Solid Polymer Deformation-Behavior Applied to Nylon-66 in *Time Dependent and Nonlinear Effects in Polymers and Composites*, ASTM STP-1357, W Conshohocken: American Society Testing and Materials (Series: American Society for Testing and Materials Special Technical Publication, Vol 1357) 2000, pp. 118–137.
181. W. K. Waldron and A. S. Wineman, Shear and Normal Stress Effects in Finite Circular Shear of a Compressible Non-linear Viscoelastic Solid *Int. J. Nonlinear Mech.* **31**, 345–369 (1996).
182. K. S. Cho and S. Y. Kim, A Thermodynamic theory on the Nonlinear Viscoelasticity of Glassy Polymers, 1. Constitutive Equation *Macromol. Theory Simul.* **9**, 328–335 (2000).
183. Z. P. Bazant and C. Huet, Thermodynamic Functions for Ageing Viscoelasticity: Integral Form without Internal Variables **36**, 3993–4016 (1999).
184. A. Drozdov, On Constitutive Laws for Aging Viscoelastic Materials at Finite Strains *Eur. J. Mech. A—Solids* **12**, 305–324 (1993).

GREGORY B. MCKENNA
Texas Tech University

W

WATER-SOLUBLE POLYMERS

Introduction

Water-soluble macromolecules represent a diverse class of polymers ranging from biopolymers that mediate life processes to synthetic polymers of immense commercial utility. In this article water-soluble polymers have been grouped into the categories biopolymers, nonionic, ionic, and associative, based on key structural features. Recently developed controlled polymerization techniques imparting important technological features to water-soluble polymers are also discussed.

General Considerations

Structure. Solution properties and ultimate performance of water-soluble polymers are determined by specific structural characteristics of the hydrated polymer chain. Primary structure depends directly on the nature of the repeating units (bond lengths, valence bond angles) effective compositions, and locations along the backbone. The polymer structure may derive from a single monomer [ie, poly(ethylene oxide) or polyacrylamide] or from multiple monomers. These units may be placed to yield random, alternating, block, graft, or more intricate architectures such as stars or dendrimers (Fig. 1). Biopolymers such as proteins and polynucleotides have multiple repeating units specifically ordered by template polymerization.

Secondary structure in water-soluble polymers is related to configuration, conformation, and intramolecular effects such as hydrogen bonding and ionic interactions. Tertiary structure involves intermolecular and water-polymer interactions; quaternary structure requires multiple chain aggregation or complexation.

A large number of functional groups (Fig. 2) can impart water solubility in copolymers. The degree of solubility is dependent on the number, position, and frequency of these moieties. Hydration relies on interaction at polar (ionic and hydrogen bonding) sites.

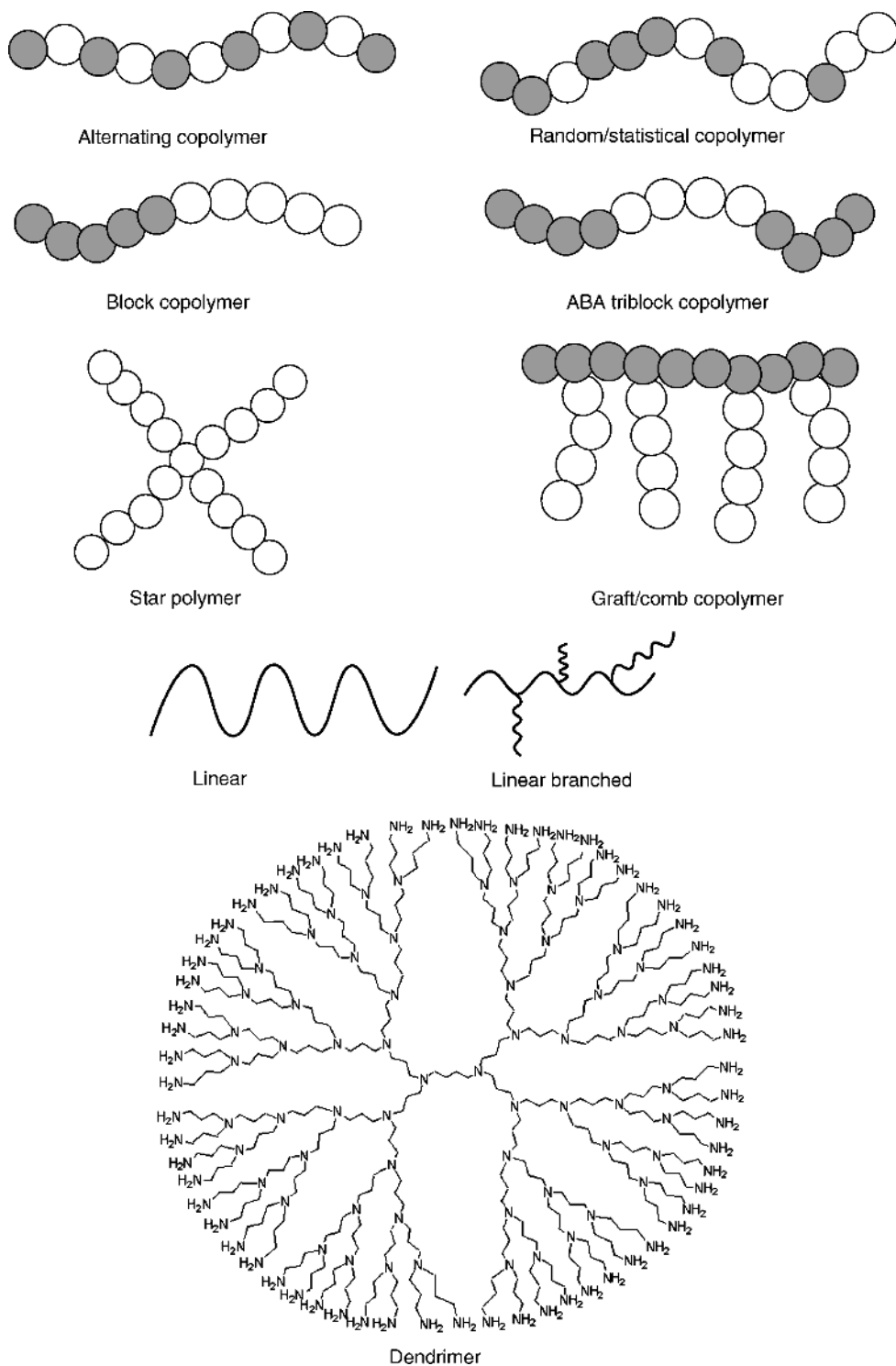


Fig. 1. Structural representation of polymer architectures (1).

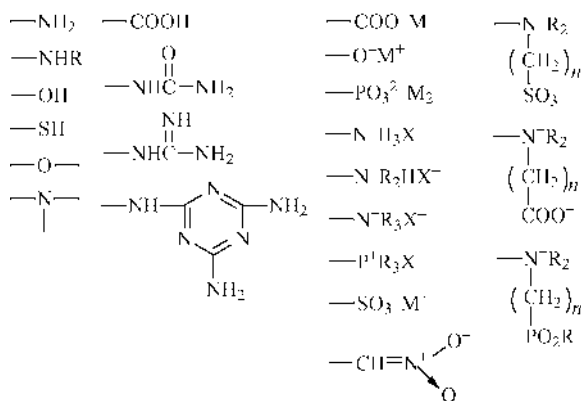


Fig. 2. Examples of functional groups imparting water solubility.

Hydrodynamic Volume. Polymers are often described in terms of hydrodynamic volume (HDV) or that volume occupied by the solvated chain. HDV and molecular shape, determined from light scattering measurements, may be used along with chemical microstructure to predict rheological behavior.

Theoretical attempts to relate dimensions of polymers to chemical structure were pioneered by Flory (2). Statistical macromolecular size in solution can be modeled from first principles by considering the number and length of bonds along with valence bond angles and conformational restrictions. Excluded volume, segmental interactions, specific intramolecular interactions, and chain solvation contribute to dimensions.

Ionic interactions (repulsive or attractive) can also dramatically affect HDV. For charged polymers, ionic effects often dominate behavior, especially in aqueous solutions. Theoretical treatments for predicting polyelectrolyte dimensions and phase behavior are discussed by Barrat and Joanny (3); scaling theory for charged polymers is reviewed by Dobrynin, Colby, and Rubinstein (4).

A number of synthetic strategies may be employed to increase macromolecular coil size (HDV) for water-soluble polymers. Monomers with water-soluble moieties may be polymerized to high molecular weight. Effective bond lengths along the backbone may be increased by introducing chain stiffening-elements. These include covalent rings (polysaccharides), charge-charge repulsions (polyelectrolytes), and helical segments (nucleic acids and proteins). The shape of the solvated coil is determined by placement of charged groups, hydrophobic moieties, hydrogen bonds, chiral centers, or restrictive rings along the molecular backbone. The native shapes of globular proteins, for example, are a result of water-induced organization of strategically placed hydrophilic and hydrophobic moieties.

Polymers dissolved in water can have structures (Fig. 3) ranging from random coils to microheterogeneous polymeric vesicles. Solution behaviors of the various types are quite diverse. Water-soluble random and extended coil polymers are often used for rheology control in various applications. Extended rods in aqueous solution may exhibit lyotropic liquid crystalline behavior. Amphiphilic molecules such as hypercoils, polymeric micelles, and vesicles are used in formulation, drug delivery, and phase-transfer catalysis.

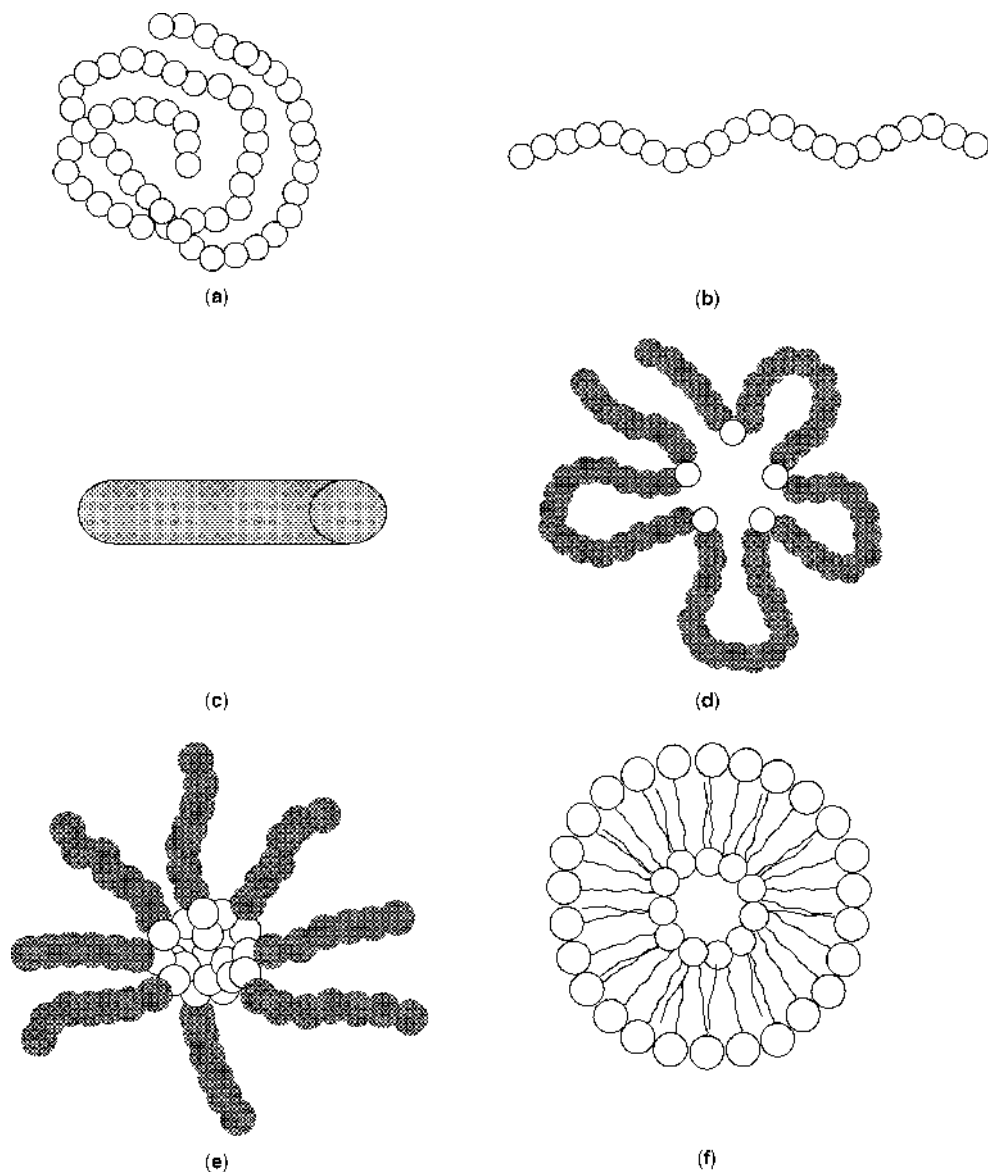


Fig. 3. Structural dependence of molecular shapes of copolymers in aqueous media. (a) Hydrated random coil; (b) hydrated extended coil; (c) rod-like polymer; (d) unimeric micelle; (e) multimeric micelle; (f) vesicle.

Role of Water in Solvation/Phase Behavior. Water plays an extremely important role in determining the properties and ultimate utility of polymers in solution. Solvation of polymer chains may involve simple interaction of ionic, polar, or hydrogen-bonded hydrophilic segments of linear chains with water (Figs. 3a and 3b) or more complex solvation of amphiphilic structures (Figs. 3d, 3e, and 3f). For amphiphilic polymers, water structure around the hydrophobic portion of

the chain is thought to be more ordered than in the bulk whereas hydrophilic portions disorder water structure. Amphiphilic macromolecules, including stimuli-responsive copolymers, have been studied in great detail and are the subject of several books and reviews (5–7). Although the precise nature of water structuring is the subject of continuing debate and extensive research, polymer solubility and phase behavior is rationalized in terms of entropy- or enthalpy-dominated events.

Some polymers such as poly(acrylic acid) or polyacrylamide precipitate from aqueous solutions when cooled (normal solubility behavior) whereas others such as poly(ethylene oxide), poly(propylene oxide), or poly(methacrylic acid) phase separate when heated (inverse solubility behavior). Solution turbidimetry is often used to obtain plots of phase-separation temperatures termed *cloud point* vs concentration for fixed solvent conditions. Changes in ionic strength, molecular weight, and addition of co-solvents or structure breakers affect the shapes of phase behavior curves. The important conclusion of such studies is that the total free energy of the polymer and water must be considered to predict phase behavior. The structure and dynamics of water surrounding polynucleotides, proteins, polysaccharides, and lipids are also major determinants of biological activity (8–10).

Viscosity and Rheology. Viscosity yields important information as to the disposition of the polymer chains in solution and is routinely used to evaluate polymers for particular applications. Dilute solution measurements can yield intrinsic viscosity $[\eta]$, which is a direct indication of the hydrodynamic volume of an isolated polymer chain. This fundamental parameter is related to molecular weight M through the Mark–Houwink–Sakurada (MHS) relationship (eq. 1):

$$[\eta] = KM^a \quad (1)$$

The parameters K and a are characteristics of a polymer chain under specific conditions of solvency and temperature. Values of a can be related to chain extension in dilute solution.

Flexible polyelectrolytes generally are more extended than nonionic polymers owing to charge–charge repulsions along the chain, particularly at low ionic strength. Estimates of $[\eta]$ under such conditions are made by the Fuoss (11) relationship (eq. 2) rather than the traditional Huggins relationship (eq. 3). η_{sp} is the specific viscosity, c is polymer concentration, B and k are characteristic constants. Alternatively, small-molecule electrolytes may be added in sufficient quantity to suppress the charge–charge interactions and equation 3 may then be used.

$$\frac{\eta_{sp}}{c} = [\eta]/(1 + B\sqrt{c}) \quad (2)$$

$$\frac{\eta_{sp}}{c} = [\eta] + kc \quad (3)$$

The MHS relationship (eq. 1) is often used in conjunction with experimentally determined values of molecular weight and intrinsic viscosity to determine

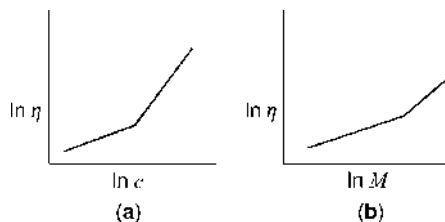


Fig. 4. Relationship between apparent viscosity and (a) concentration at constant molecular weight; (b) molecular weight at constant concentration.

chain stiffness indicated by values of a . Values can range from 0.5 for random coils in theta conditions to nearly 2.0 for extended rods.

In semidilute and concentrated solutions, polymer molecules are no longer isolated from one another. Chain–chain interactions at and above a critical concentration c^* , often termed the *overlap concentration*, lead to increased values of apparent viscosity η . Apparent viscosity can be related to concentration and molecular weight by equation 4, in which b and d are scaling constants.

$$\eta \propto c^b M^d \quad (4)$$

Usually plots of $\ln \eta$ vs $\ln c$ at constant molecular weight (Fig. 4a) or $\ln \eta$ vs $\ln M$ at constant concentration (Fig. 4b) are used to measure entanglement onset. Measurements are made at constant shear rate, temperature, and solvent conditions.

Rheological characteristics of aqueous solutions are dictated by molecular structure, solvation, and by inter- and intrachain associations. In many cases, segmental interactions must be accounted for in more rigorous terms than simple statistical encounters. Enthalpic interactions or entropically driven hydrophobic associations must be considered.

Rheological behavior is dependent on polymer type and can be clearly illustrated, providing appropriate interactive parameters of polymer concentration, ionic strength, pH, shear rate or shear stress, temperature, and time are taken into account. Representative plots are shown in Figure 5 for major behavioral patterns. Figure 5a illustrates the shear thickening (dilatant), Newtonian, and shear thinning (pseudoplastic) behavior. Figure 5b represents time dependence on viscosity for rheopetic and thixotropic polymers. Figure 5c illustrates the viscosity-concentration dependence in water for a polyelectrolyte and nonionic polymer in dilute solution.

Synthetic Methods. Water-soluble copolymers are prepared by step-growth or chain-growth mechanisms. Linear or branched systems may be formed from single monomers or from multiple monomers. Distribution of monomers, along the backbone or side chain, can be controlled in a number of ways. In nearly all cases, sequence selection is obtained by carefully controlling monomer reactivity, concentration, addition order, and reaction conditions. Most chain-growth, water-soluble polymers are prepared by classical free radical polymerization techniques.

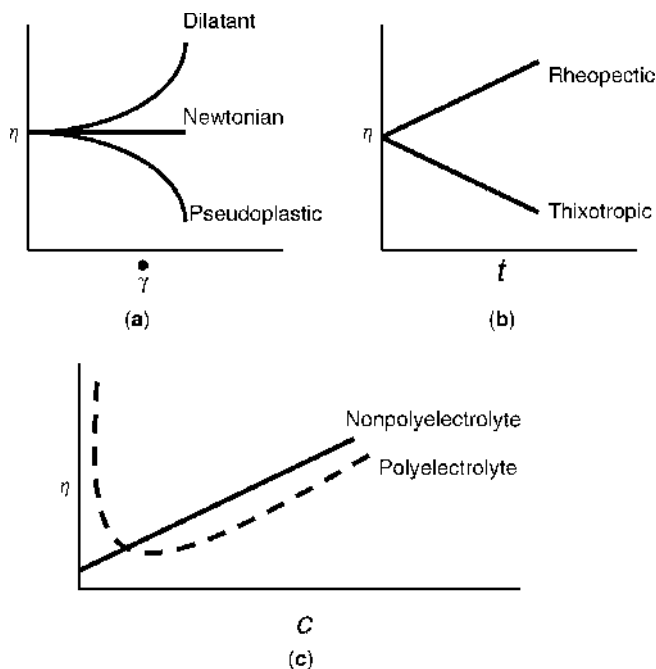


Fig. 5. Rheological characteristics of water-soluble polymers. All variables other than those on the axes are held constant. (a) Viscosity vs shear rate; (b) viscosity vs time; (c) viscosity vs concentrations below c^* .

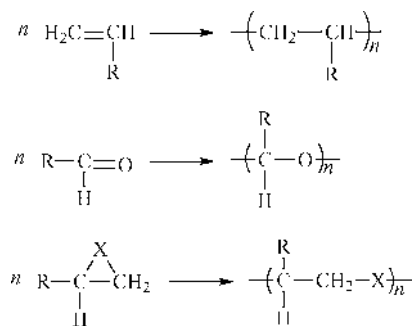
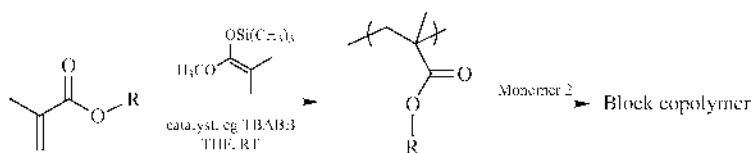


Fig. 6. Synthetic pathways to common water-soluble chain growth polymers.

Step-growth condensation reactions may be carried out in organic solvents, interfacially, in bulk, microheterogeneously, or on a solid support. Active esters are often employed in solution methods at relatively low temperatures to yield water-soluble polyesters or polyamides. Synthetic polypeptides, polynucleotides, and polysaccharides are commonly made by sequential addition of protected monomer units onto polymer supports.

Major commercial synthetic water-soluble polymers are made by chain-growth polymerization of functionalized alkenes, carbonyl monomers, or strained ring compounds, as illustrated in Figure 6. These may be initiated utilizing

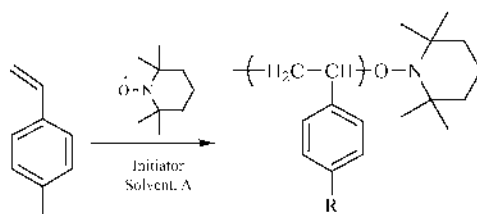
Group Transfer Polymerization (GTP)



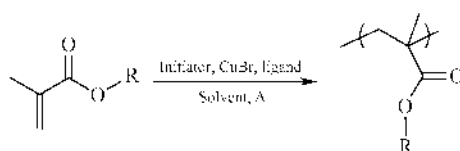
Oxyanionic polymerization (OAP)



Stable Free Radical Polymerization (SFRP)



Atom Transfer Radical Polymerization (ATRP)



Reversible Addition-Fragmentation Chain Transfer Polymerization (RAFT)

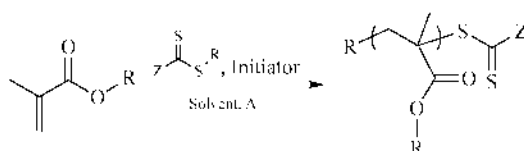
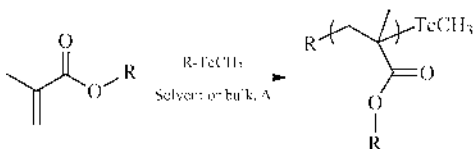


Fig. 7. Controlled or controlled/living polymerization techniques potentially applicable to synthesis of water-soluble or amphiphilic copolymers.

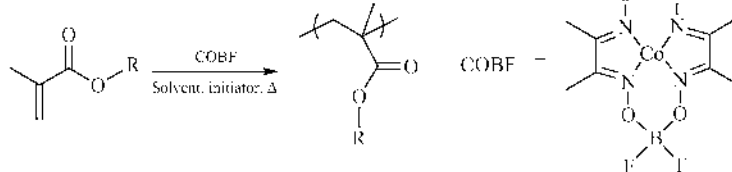
free radical, cationic, anionic or coordinated cationic initiators, depending on monomer structure. Of particular *commercial* interest are syntheses of water-soluble polymers in solutions, dispersions, suspensions, or emulsions. In cases where hydrophobic monomers are to be incorporated with hydrophilic species, microemulsions, or micellar polymerization methodologies are required.

During the last 10–20 years significant advances have occurred in polymer synthesis. Noteworthy is the development of less demanding living polymerization techniques, such as group transfer polymerization (GTP) (12,13) and oxyanionic polymerization (14,15). Most recently, rapid technological advances have been made in the so-called controlled/living free radical polymerizations

Tellurium-Mediated Polymerization (TERP)



Catalytic Chain Transfer Polymerization (CCTP)



Living Ring-Opening Metathesis Polymerization (LROMP)

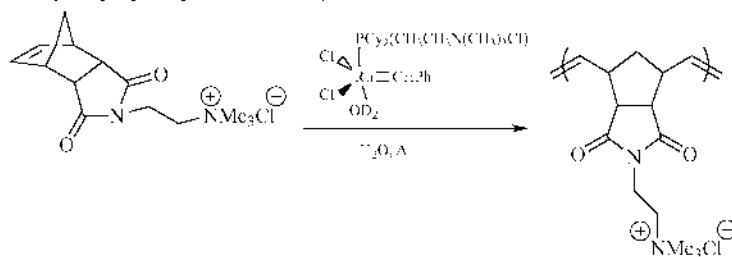


Fig. 7. (Continued.)

(CLRP), such as stable free radical polymerization (SFRP) (16,17), atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP) (18–23), reversible addition-fragmentation chain transfer (RAFT) polymerization (24–27), and tellurium-mediated radical polymerization (TERP) (28–31). Additionally, catalytic chain transfer polymerization (CCTP) (32,33) and living ring-opening metathesis polymerization (LROMP) (34–37) have also been developed. All of these techniques, to some greater or lesser degree, have been employed for the synthesis of novel water-soluble (co)polymers (Fig. 7) with much of the research having been conducted in academic research laboratories (see ANIONIC POLYMERIZATION; LIVING RADICAL POLYMERIZATION).

Whereas each of these techniques has its merits, many have severe limitations either with respect to monomer choice or reaction conditions. The most versatile of the above techniques are arguably the CLRP techniques and have received the greatest attention, to date, with respect to the preparation of novel water-soluble (co)polymers (38,39). These techniques generally exhibit the versatility associated with conventional free radical polymerizations but simultaneously bear many of the characteristics associated with living polymerizations. They are highly tolerant of functional substituents with virtually all vinylic monomers being polymerized by one, or more, of the techniques; additionally, polymerization may be conducted under a wide range of conditions (bulk, solution, dispersion, emulsion etc). Also, molecular weights can be tuned via the monomer/initiator ratio; (co)polymers with narrow molecular weight distributions are typically produced and materials with complex architectures, such as

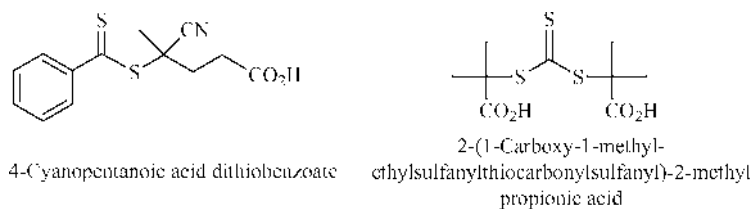


Fig. 8. Structures of chain transfer agents CTP and CTSP.

blocks or stars, can be obtained (40,41). With specific reference to the preparation of water-soluble polymers, ATRP and RAFT have been the most widely examined, with RAFT being the most versatile, at least with respect to monomer choice. For example, certain species such charged (meth)acrylamido monomers can, at present, *only* be polymerized in a controlled fashion by RAFT (42–45). Key to control in RAFT polymerizations is an appropriate thiocarbonylthio compound, called a chain transfer agent (CTA). While many have proven to be effective, such as the dithioesters, trithiocarbonates, xanthates, and dithiocarbamates (38,46,47), to conduct the polymerizations directly in water requires the use of a suitable water-soluble CTA. Of those reported to date, 4-cyanopentanoic acid dithiobenzoate (CTP) has proven to be the most generally effective (46–48), with others such as 2-(1-carboxy-1-methylethylsulfanylthiocarbonylsulfanyl)-2-methylpropionic acid (CTSP) (Fig. 8) also proving particularly effective for acrylamido and methacrylamido monomers (49,50).

Naturally Occurring Polymers

A large number of water-soluble polymers are derived from biological sources. Termed *biopolymers*, this class includes polynucleotides (qv), polypeptides and polysaccharides (qv). Because these polymers perform special biological functions, they have specific microstructures and are often perfectly monodisperse. In the following section the general structural features of major biopolymer types will be reviewed as related to water solubility.

Polynucleotides.

Structure. Nucleic acids (Fig. 9) are biopolymers that carry genetic information involved in the processes of replication and protein synthesis. The primary structural units of the nucleic acids, the mononucleotides, are composed of a 5-carbon cyclic sugar with a phosphate ester at the C-5 carbon. A heterocyclic amine base (purine or pyrimidine) is attached at C-1. RNA and DNA are terpolymers with sugar phosphate backbones (3' and 5' position) and pendent bases on the 1' position. Deoxyribonucleic acids (DNAs) contain the deoxyribose sugar (no hydroxyl group at the 2' position on the sugar ring). The usual bases substituted at the 1' position are adenine (A), guanine (G), thymine (T), and cytosine (C). Ribonucleic acids contain a ribose sugar and the principal bases A, G, C, and uracil (U).

Studies of the structure of DNA by a large number of investigators led to the proposal by Watson and Crick (51) of the classic DNA double helix. Major

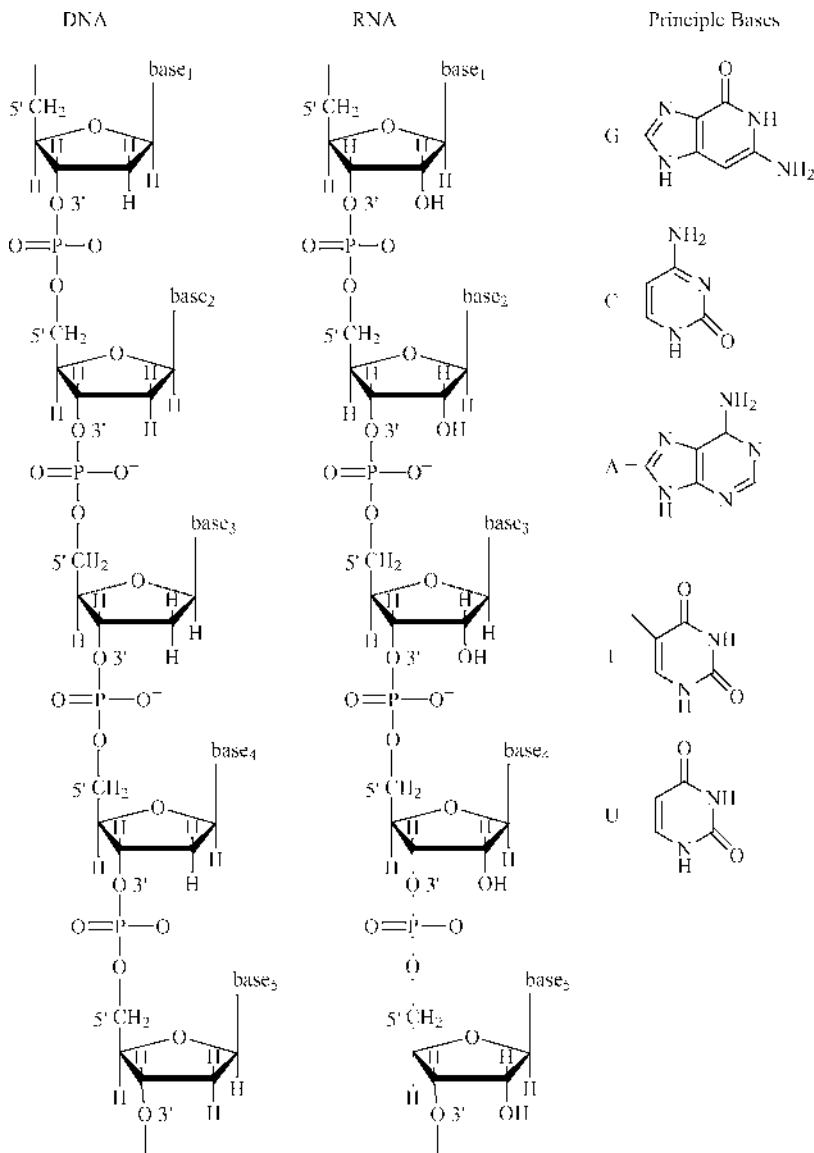


Fig. 9. Structural representations of DNA and RNA; principal bases present in nucleic acid. U, T, and C are the pyrimidines; A and G are the purines.

contributions as to base content and of X-ray structure were made by the groups of Chargaff (52) and Wilkins and co-workers (53). This proposal not only allowed explanation of DNA stability but also provided a framework for postulation of template polymerization during the replication and transcription processes.

The template synthetic process allows organization of the DNA helix into an assembly having two antiparallel strands of DNA (Fig. 10). The pendant bases on the strands are paired in such a manner that A is always paired with T and G with C. The strong hydrogen bonding of the complimentary pairs in hydrophobic



Fig. 10. DNA double-stranded helix (54).

regions orient the hydrophilic-charged phosphate groups outwardly. One negative charge per phosphate unit gives the DNA polyanionic character. The balance of hydrophilic and hydrophobic forces and the presence of divalent ions such as Mg^{2+} are also responsible for chain stability under physiological conditions. Three conformational variations of the double helix have been confirmed by X-ray diffraction—the A, B, and Z forms. Conformational variation, location of certain base-paired sequences, and specific modification (methylation for example) can lead to supercoiling, branching, and direct binding to other polynucleotides or to specific proteins. Such structural organization has major implications in gene regulation (transcription, silencing, etc).

The molecular weights of DNA, depending on the source, can be extremely large. For example, the recently sequenced human genome has been reported to have over 27,000 genes and 3 billion base pairs (55). By contrast, a simple bacterium such as *Escherichia coli* has 5 million (54) chromosomal base pairs. In addition, the latter contains cyclic DNA, called plasmids, which contain from 1000 to 10,000 base pairs. Recombinant DNA technology is routinely utilized to insert synthetic genes or genes from other species into such plasmids. The resultant recombinant DNA segments then serve as templates for synthesis of specific proteins with pharmacological, agricultural, or materials applications.

Ribonucleic acids are synthesized from the DNA template through transcription. The mononucleotides contain ribose. Unlike DNAs, RNAs are single stranded, although twisting may occur in a complementary fashion matching base pairs. RNAs are much lower in molecular weight than DNAs. The three major types—messenger RNA (mRNA), transfer RNA (tRNA), and ribosomal RNA (rRNA)—are involved in a multistep process of protein synthesis (56,57).

Beyond their well-established roles in protein synthesis, RNAs termed *ribozymes* have been shown to catalyze a number of biochemical reactions. Significantly, short hairpin sequences of RNA can hybridize with DNA to suppress (silence) gene expression (58). Alternatively, some of these short RNA sequences bind in a complementary fashion to mRNA resulting in destruction of the latter and preventing protein translation from that gene segment (58).

Synthesis. Recently, nucleic acids have been synthesized from mononucleotides, some with altered or substituted bases. Synthetic methods, along with nucleic acid sequencing methods, have allowed rapid advancement in identifying gene sequences responsible for specific protein synthesis. Kornberg and co-workers first prepared synthetic DNAs polymerized from mononucleotides using isolated enzymes, DNA polymerases (59). Likewise, RNA polymerases have been found for synthesis of oligomeric RNAs (60). DNA also can be made from RNA using reverse transcriptase enzymes. The resulting complementary DNA can be greatly amplified using the polymerase chain reaction process (PCR) (61). These are readily characterized and in many instances introduced into plasmids or other vectors for recombinant protein synthesis. Automated synthesis of single-stranded polynucleotides can be accomplished utilizing sequential protection/deprotection chemistry (62). Although entirely synthetic methods are quite slow compared to biosynthesis, designed oligonucleotides for targeting or diagnostic purposes (including micro arrays with variable sequences for rapid screening) can be readily produced. Post-reaction chemistry including ligation and PCR can then be utilized to produce significant quantities of desired oligonucleotides.

Polypeptides and Proteins. Most polypeptides and proteins are water-soluble or water-swallowable. Enzymes are proteins that catalyze all chemical reactions of biological origin. Enzyme functions include oxygen transport, muscle movement, nerve response, nutrient digestion and storage, hormonal regulation, gene expression, and protein synthesis (63).

Structure. Despite the large number of functions, all proteins are similar with repeating structures along the backbone chosen from 20 amino acid monomers (Fig. 11). These polymers, the structures of which are assembled from a template coded by mRNA, are monodisperse. Each protein has a unique sequence and molecular weight. The 20 amino acids, capable of appearing in various microstructural combinations, sequence lengths, and total molecular lengths, allow assembly of a nearly unlimited number of distinct proteins with specific physical properties and behavioral characteristics.

Primary structure (covalent bond lengths and bond angles) is determined by the microstructure of the amino acid repeating units along the chain. Numerous procedures, including sequential degradation, gel electrophoresis, dye binding, and immunoassays, have been used to determine sequences (63).

Secondary structure of proteins is determined by configuration and conformation along the backbone of the polymer. The resistance to bond rotation of the C–N bond of the peptide unit, the configuration about the chiral carbon, and conformational restrictions to rotation by short-range charge–charge interactions or intramolecular hydrogen bonding play major roles in secondary structure.

The three-dimensional structure, or tertiary structure, depends strongly on primary and secondary structure with the added elements of long-range intramolecular hydrogen bonding, polar and ionic effects, and chain solvation. An

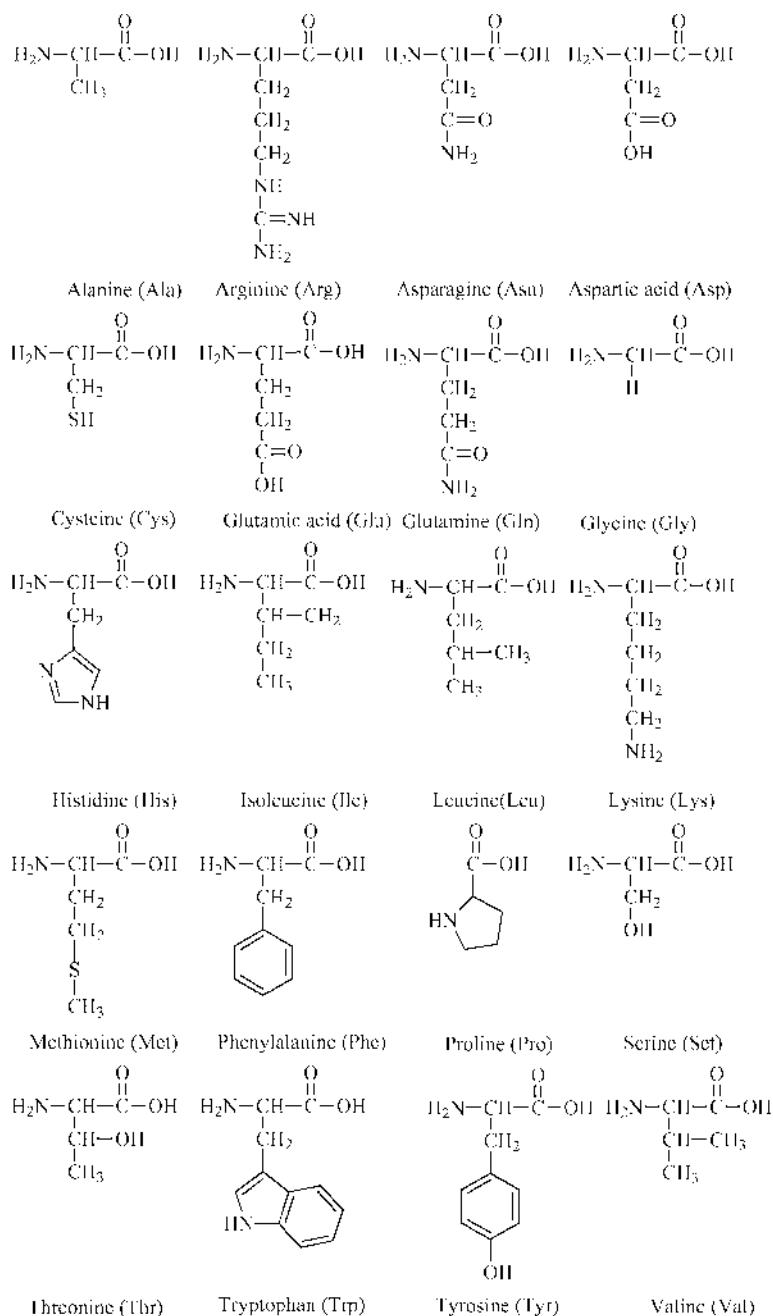


Fig. 11. Chemical structures of the 20 amino acids.

example of the three-dimensional structure of myoglobin is shown in Figure 12. The compact structure illustrates the hydrophobic interior, helical features from intramolecular hydrogen bonding and the L-amino acids, and polar external groups for hydration.

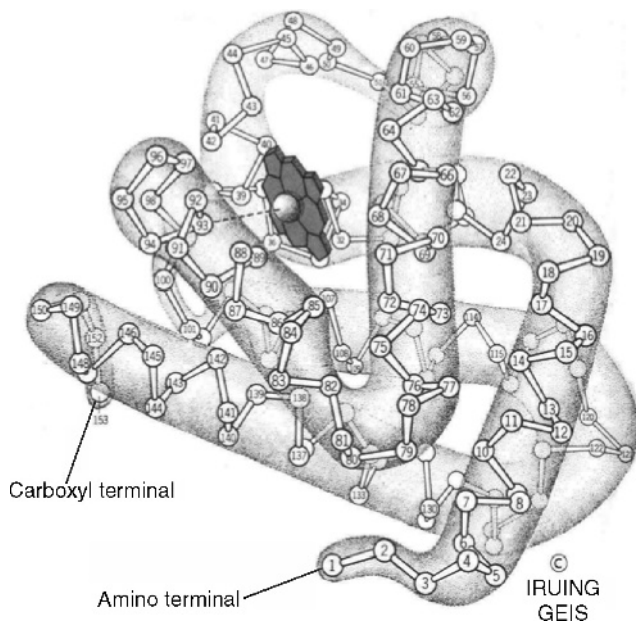


Fig. 12. Tertiary structure of myoglobin (64).

Many proteins exist in subunits of a composite structure. The organization of these subunits is termed the *quaternary structure* and is particularly important in enzyme-mediated reactions. The tertiary and quaternary structure of native protein in water can be disrupted by addition of electrolytes, alkali solutions, urea, or detergents, and by increasing temperature. The properties change markedly; eg, enzyme activity is often lost. In most cases this denaturation is not reversible. The solubilities of proteins vary considerably based on composition and conditions of ionic strength, pH, and concentration. Those with the highest density of polar groups or electrolyte character are most soluble. Therefore, solubility in water is lowest at the isoelectric point and increases with increasing basicity or acidity. A review of enzyme activity as related to protein structure is given by Fersht (65).

Protein Synthesis. Protein biosynthesis is complex, involving more than 300 macromolecules (63). Five stages can be identified involving (1) activation of amino acid monomers and transfer to ribosomes, (2) initiation of polymerization, (3) propagation, (4) termination and release, and (5) folding and processing. Ordering of the monomers is dictated by operation of the triplet code in which a sequence of three consecutive nucleotide units on mRNA positions a specific amino acid for polymerization.

Synthetic polypeptides can be made by sequential addition of protected amino acids onto a solid support. This procedure, pioneered by Merrifield (66,67) has been used to prepare hundreds of peptides of varying sizes and functions. A review of the technique and recent modifications are found in Reference 68.

The study of genes responsible for identifiable biological products and processes (genomics) (69) and the more ambitious study of translated proteins, their isoforms, modifications and interactions (proteomics) (70) has advanced at an

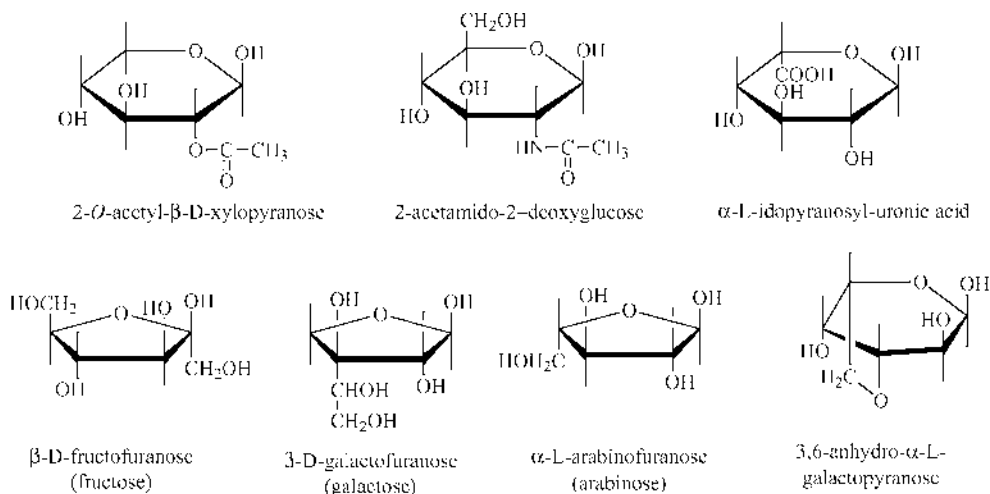


Fig. 13. Common structural units in naturally occurring polysaccharides (71).

incredibly fast pace during the last five years. In a very short time a number of genes have been targeted for recombinant expression in a variety of hosts to produce a wide range of new drugs and to develop new diagnostic markers.

Commercial Use. In addition to the rapid growth of genetically engineered enzymes and hormones for medical and agricultural applications, other water-soluble proteins are isolated from biological sources in a more traditional manner for commercial application. Enzymes are used as detergent additives, for hydrolyzing polysaccharides and proteins, to isomerize various glucose and sucrose precursors, for wine and beer making, for leather tanning, and for mineral recovery. Support-bound enzymes are becoming commercially significant for large-scale substrate conversion.

Polysaccharides

Water-soluble polysaccharides are a diverse class of biological macromolecules with a wide range of structural and behavioral characteristics. More than 100 sugars and sugar derivatives comprise the monomers available for polysaccharide synthesis (63). Covalent linkages between repeating units may occur at different ring positions; linear and branched structures with single or multiple monomers may be formed.

Industrial polysaccharides have traditionally been extracted from renewable resources in the plant and animal kingdom. Examples include starch and gums from plant seeds, pectin from fruits, and algin and carrageenan from algae. Recently, microbial sources have produced commercially useful polysaccharides such as dextran, curdlan, pullulan, xanthan, and pharmacologically active oligosaccharides.

Polysaccharides are cycloliner or branched polymers formed by enzyme-directed step-growth condensation reactions of various activated sugar molecules (71). Some common monomer units are shown in Figure 13; other units include

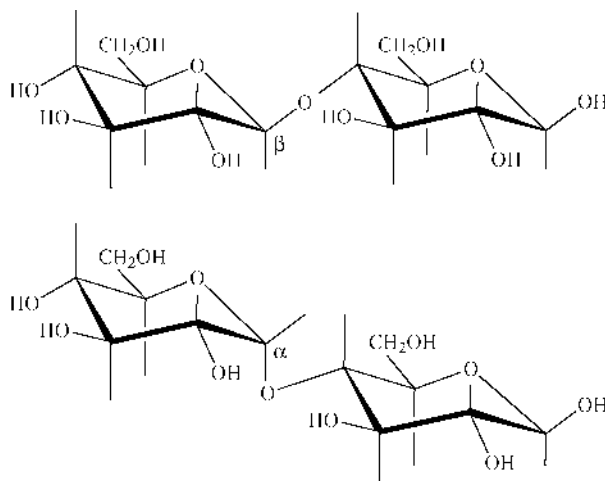


Fig. 14. Dimerization of glucopyranose units to yield α and β structures.

glycerol and other polyhydroxyalcohols, phosphate, sulfate, malonate, and pyruvate.

Aqueous solution properties, including solubility, phase behavior, and viscosity, are highly dependent on the macroscopic nature (linear, branched) of the chain as well as the chemical microstructure (polar characteristics, sequencing) of the repeating units. As with proteins, the presence of acidic or basic functionality causes pH, electrolyte, and temperature-dependent behavior. Degrees of polymerization may vary from 30 to 1×10^5 . Of primary importance in the solution behavior of water-soluble polysaccharides are the configurations of asymmetric carbon atoms in the cyclic monomers and the ring conformations of the resulting covalent backbone units.

Dimerization of glucopyranose (Fig. 14) by condensation of the hydroxyl group at C-1 on one ring with C-4 on the other can lead to two isomers, depending on whether the reaction is equatorial–equatorial or axial–equatorial. The former linkage is designated β , the latter, α . Polymers formed by successive α -1 \rightarrow 4 linkages, eg, amylose, have markedly different properties than polymers formed by successive β -1 \rightarrow 4 linkages, eg, cellulose.

Polysaccharides based on glucopyranose occur with backbones through carbons 1 \rightarrow 2, 1 \rightarrow 3, 1 \rightarrow 4, and 1 \rightarrow 6. The less-ordered structures are more water-soluble in general, with the α -1 \rightarrow 3 and the β -1 \rightarrow 6 forms exhibiting highest aqueous solubility; β structures often form strong inter- or intramolecular hydrogen bonds, making solubilization difficult.

Branched structures, especially for α linked polysaccharides, enhance solubility. Heterogeneity in types of repeating units, backbone linkages, and polar or charged functionality also imparts greater solubility. Excellent reviews of the effects of the structural conformation of monosaccharides are found in References 71 and 72.

Water-soluble polysaccharides can be classified according to structure and commercial applications. Classes include storage polysaccharides, pectins, plant gums, seed and bark mucilage, algal polysaccharides, bacterial and fungal

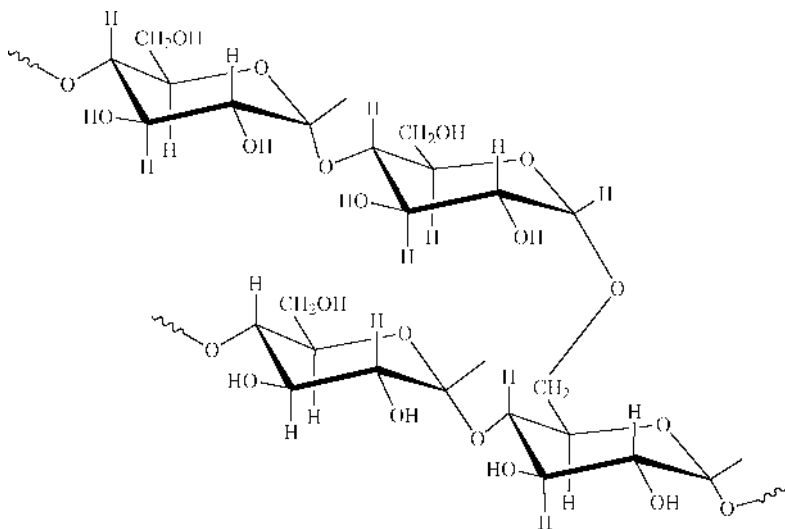


Fig. 15. Structure of amylopectin (73).

polysaccharides, mucopolysaccharides, and synthetically modified polysaccharides. For more detailed descriptions see References 72–75.

Storage Polysaccharides. *Starch and Starch Derivatives.* Amylose and amylopectin are the major components of starch granules found in food reserves of all green plants. Commercial starch is obtained from sources such as corn, sorghum, rice, wheat, and potatoes. The compositions of the amylose and amylopectin vary with source.

Amylose is the linear polysaccharide of α -1 \rightarrow 4-D-glucopyranose having a molecular weight of $1.6 \times 10^5 - 2.6 \times 10^6$. Amylose is not water-soluble in an unmodified state but can be dispersed in water. In the solid state it is reported to exist as a left-hand six-fold helix; in solution it behaves like an extended helix (74). Shearing and heating of starch cause hydration and swelling termed *germination*. Gradually the amylose in this dispersion precipitates through association in a process called *retrogradation*.

Amylopectin (Fig. 15), the water-soluble portion of starch, is an α -1 \rightarrow 4-D-linked glucopyranose with α -1 \rightarrow 6-D-branches. Amylopectin is polydisperse with a molecular weight of $5 \times 10^7 - 4 \times 10^8$.

A number of starch derivatives (73,74) have been prepared in order to control solubility, viscosity, and phase behavior over a temperature range or under conditions of shear and added electrolytes. Major modifications include lowering molecular weight enzymatically or chemically, oxidation, forming derivatives, and cross-linking. Derivatives include starch esters, phosphates, sulfates, and ethers. Cationic, anionic, and amphoteric starches have been prepared as well as starch-graft copolymers, some with super absorbent properties.

Starch (qv) and starch derivatives have a number of applications in the food industry as viscosifiers, gelatinizers, fillers, and paste formers; in the textile and paper industries for coatings, sizing agents, rheology modifiers, and pigment binders; and in the medical area as surgical powders, absorbents, adhesives, and in pharmaceuticals.

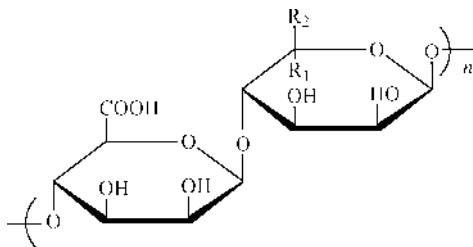


Fig. 16. Structure of β -D-mannuronic acid.

Glycogen. Glycogen is the storage polysaccharide in animals and is found in highest concentration in the liver and muscle tissues. The backbone of glycogen is α -1 \rightarrow 4-D-linked glucopyranose units with large numbers of α -1 \rightarrow 6-D-branch points.

Glucans. Algae form two types of storage polysaccharides. Starch type algal polysaccharides are α -D-glucans similar to those found in land plants, except they contain a small number of α -1 \rightarrow 3-D-linkages and are of lower molecular weight (76). Laminaran is the main carbohydrate food reserve of several green seaweeds and is a β -1 \rightarrow 3-D-linked D-glucan with β -1 \rightarrow 6-D-branches. Other sources include fungi, yeast, flagellates, and diatoms.

Laminaran has two forms distinguished by solubility in cold water. Differences are related to the degree of 1 \rightarrow 6 branching. Both are soluble in hot water and have molecular weights from 3500 to 5300. Laminaran has been used for surgical dusting powder and has been reported to have antitumor activity.

Algal Polysaccharide. *Alginic Acid.* Alginic acid represents the generic group of polymers (74) composed of D-mannuronic acid and L-guluronic acid extracted from brown algae (77). Alginic acid is not soluble in pure water, but easily dissolves in aqueous solutions of alkali metal hydroxides or carbonates. The structure (77) of alginic acid shown in Figure 16 is complicated with three types of segments: poly(β -1 \rightarrow 4-D-mannuronic acid); poly(α -1 \rightarrow 4-L-guluronic acid); and those in alternating patterns. The ionic forms of alginates are polyelectrolytes with extended structures. The precise properties are determined by the structural disposition of these segments. Alginates are used as thickeners and stabilizers in the food industry, in pharmaceutical, cosmetic, and coating formulations, and as flocculants.

Sulfated Derivatives. Sulfated algal polysaccharides (78) are a class of heteropolymers with alternating α -1 \rightarrow 3-D- and β -1 \rightarrow 3-D- (carrageenan and furcellaran) or alternating α -1 \rightarrow 3-L- and β -1 \rightarrow 3-D- galactans (agar). Conformational differences have been shown between the nongelling λ carrageenan and gel-forming κ and ι forms (Fig. 17) (71). Molecular weights range from 1×10^5 to 1×10^6 .

Carrageenan has diverse industrial applications including use in toothpaste, ice cream, chocolate milk, jellies, puddings, pet foods, pharmaceutical and industrial suspensions, antiulcer treatments, shampoos, creams, lotions, and oil/water and water/oil emulsions. Carrageenan reacts with denatured proteins and has been shown to exhibit properties similar to those of the animal mucopolysaccharides, such as anticoagulant activity and induction of growth of new connective tissue.

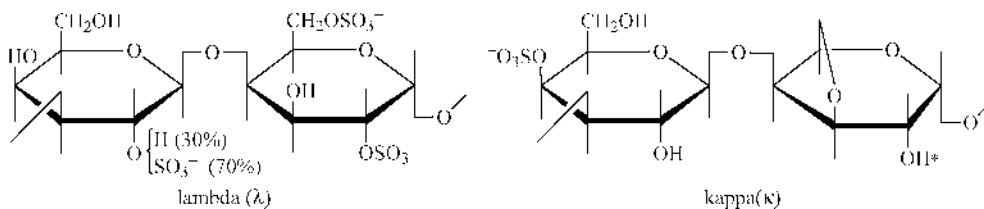


Fig. 17. λ and κ carrageenan. In ι carrageenan, OSO_3^- replaces OH^* in the κ -form (72).

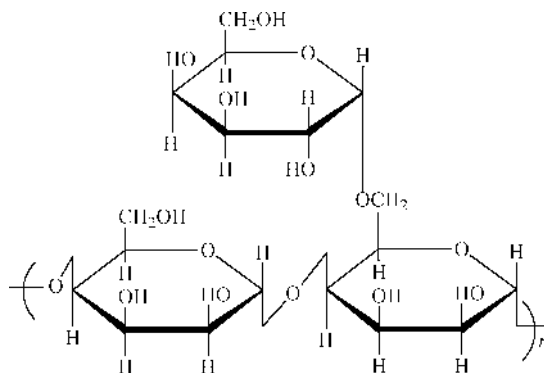


Fig. 18. Structure of guaran.

Pectins. Pectins (pectic and pectinic acids or their derivatives) are gel-forming water-soluble polysaccharides found in the primary cell walls and intercellular layers in land plants. They are found in abundance in apples, sugar beets, and the rinds of citrus fruits. Pectic acids are poly(α -D-galactopyranosyluronic acids) with varying degrees of neutralization. Pectinic acids are also galactouronglycans but with significant quantities of methyl ester groups. Pectins are soluble in water and exhibit pseudoplastic behavior. When heated at appropriate pH, in the presence of divalent electrolytes and sugars, they form spreadable gels (74). For this reason pectins are used for making jams and jellies.

Plant Gums. Plant gums or exudate gums are formed spontaneously at sites of injury to the plant. The exudate is a viscous fluid consisting of complex, highly branched polysaccharides with residues of hexuronic acid and two or more neutral sugars. Many plant gums are used commercially as thickening agents or emulsion stabilizers. Commercially important are karaya gum, gum tragacanth, gum Arabic, and gum ghatti (76).

Seed Mucilages. Guar is a purified polysaccharide from the guar plant seed. It is a linear chain of β -1 \rightarrow 4-linked D-mannopyranosyl units onto which is linked an α -1 \rightarrow 6-D-galactopyranosyl unit (Fig. 18). Molecular weights are estimated to be 2.2×10^5 (79). Guar forms high viscosity, pseudoplastic solutions at low concentrations, is nonionic, and is little affected by electrolyte addition or pH changes. Guar easily forms gels with transition metal elements or borate ions and is therefore useful in drilling, cementing, and fracturing in oil-filed applications. It has also been used as a thickener and stabilizer in the manufacture of ice cream, cheese, pet foods, and deodorant gels.

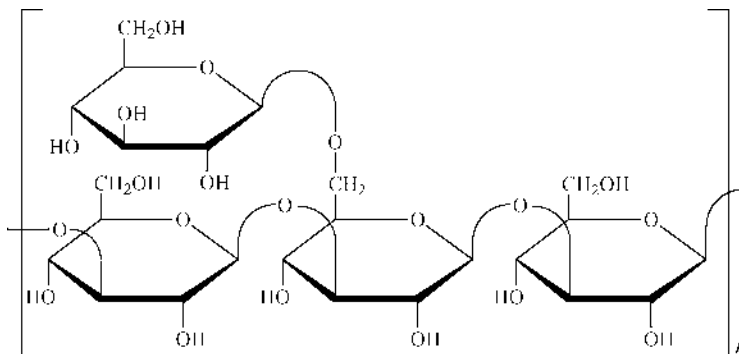


Fig. 19. Structures of scleroglucan and schizophyllan (75).

Extracellular Polysaccharides. One of the most important extracellular bacterial polysaccharides is dextran. Dextrans are high molecular weight α -1 \rightarrow 6-D-glucopyranose polymers with varying proportions of α -1 \rightarrow 4 and α -1 \rightarrow 3 branch linkages. Dextran is produced from sucrose by a number of bacteria from the family *Lactobacillaceae*. Dextran has a variety of commercial applications, including use as a plasma substitute, an anticoagulant, or in studies of cells, viruses, and proteins. Fractionated commercial dextrans are used as standards in various studies of the properties of water-soluble polymers. Dextran-graft copolymers have utility in viscosifications, superabsorbancy, and oil-field applications (80).

Bacterial and Fungal Polysaccharides. Microbes generate a large number of polysaccharides, many of which are not produced by the higher plants or animals. A large number of microbial polysaccharides are used in the food, cosmetic, and pharmaceutical industries. Particular polysaccharides, when isolated from the dried bacteria, have been shown to induce an immune response and generate antibodies in organisms exposed to them. Several of these capsular polysaccharides have been used to develop vaccines for various bacterial infections such as meningitis and typhoid fever (81).

Xanthan (qv) is an extracellular bacterial polysaccharide produced by *Xanthomonas campestris*. Xanthan is a branched polysaccharide with β -1 \rightarrow 4-D-glucopyranose units along the backbone. On every other unit the oxygen at C-3 is substituted with a trisaccharide unit. Approximately half the β -D mannose units have a pyruvic acid group linked as an acetal derivative. Molecular weight has been estimated to be 2×10^6 .

The solutions are viscous at low polymer concentrations, pseudoplastic, and insensitive to salt, temperature, and pH over a wide range. Much controversy remains as to changes in the tertiary structure with changing solution conditions. Single, double, and even triple helical structures have been proposed as well as quaternary structures from side-by-side double helix dimers (72,75,82).

Other water-soluble microbial polysaccharides include the anionic polysaccharides gellan from *Pseudomonas elodea* and bacterial alginate from *Pseudomonas aeruginosa*, and the neutral polysaccharides scleroglucan, curdlan, and pullulan (72,75,76,83).

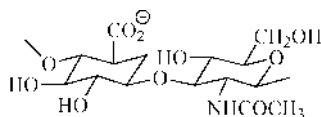


Fig. 20. Structure of hyaluronic acid.

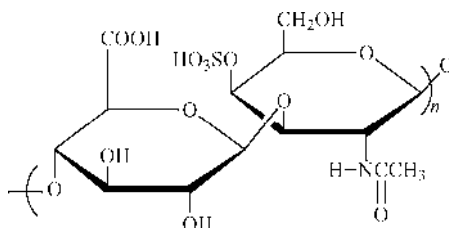


Fig. 21. Structure of chondroitin sulfate. In dermatan sulfate the —COOH group extends axially from the bottom face (77).

Scleroglucan and *schizophyllan* (Fig. 19) are examples of fungal polysaccharides (72,75,81,84). Their structures are identical except for the distribution of side chains along the polymer backbone. Both are rod-like macromolecules forming triple helices in aqueous solutions. They are used industrially as viscosifiers and in polymer flooding for enhanced oil recovery. They have also been shown to exhibit specific biological activity against cancers and infections.

Mucopolysaccharides of Higher Animals. Mucopolysaccharides of higher animals are generally found in the connective tissues. They form highly viscous aqueous solutions that gel readily. These polysaccharides consist of amino sugars (D-glucuronic acid or L-iduronic acid) and may have *N*-acetyl, *O*-sulfate, or *N*-sulfate groups. Their functions include induction of calcification; control of metabolites, ions, and water; and healing of wounds. Several of these polymers are under study for medical, cosmetic, and personal care applications.

Hyaluronic acid (Fig. 20) is a regularly alternating copolymer of D-glucuronic acid and 2-acetamido-2-deoxy-D-glucose (77). It is found in most connective tissues, especially in umbilical cord, vitreous tissue, joint fluid, and skin. It is synthesized by fibroblasts in the mesenchymal tissue and also by bacteria. Hyaluronic acid binds a large amount of water in the interstitial spaces and is thought to be involved with the control of permeability and thus resistance of the tissues to infection. Hyaluronic acid is involved in the wound-healing process and is produced in large amounts at the site of the wound in the days following the injury. Hyaluronic acid also serves as a lubricant in the joints. Commercially, hyaluronic acid has application in postoperative healing in eye surgery.

Chondroitin and *chondroitin sulfates* (Fig. 21) are found in cartilage, skin, cornea, sclera, and bone. They show high viscosity and water retention and play a role in the connective tissue similar to that of hyaluronic acid. Sulfate groups contribute additional ion-binding capacity.

Dermatan sulfate (β -heparin) is found in the skin, lungs, tendons, spleen, brain, and heart. Dermatan sulfate exhibits high water retention and acts in a way similar to the chondroitin sulfates. It is also an anticoagulant.

Heparin (85) is found in the heart, liver, lung, spleen, muscle, kidney, and blood. It is synthesized in the mast cells and has a molecular weight of

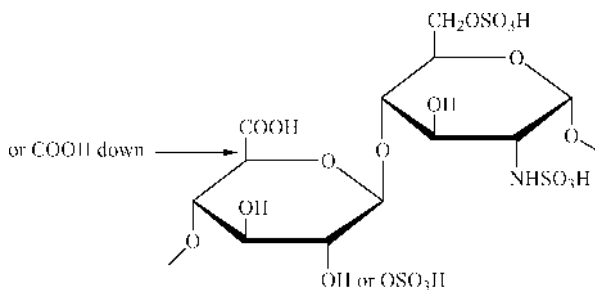


Fig. 22. Structure of heparin.

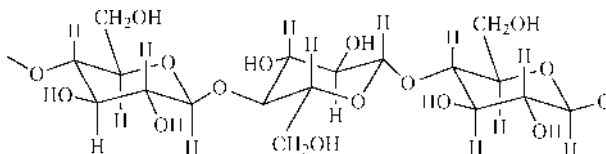


Fig. 23. Structure of cellulose.

5000–25,000. Heparin is a mixture of polysaccharide chains of varying lengths and heterogeneity. It consists of 2-acetamido-2-deoxy- α -D-glucopyranosyl, α -D-glucopyranosyluronic acid, and L-iduronic acid residues containing various proportions of *O*-sulfate, *N*-sulfate, and *N*-acetyl groups (Fig. 22). It is an anticoagulant and antilipemic agent and is widely used in cardiovascular surgery and therapy.

Synthetically Modified Polysaccharides. Water solubility can be conferred on a number of naturally occurring polysaccharides by synthetic derivations producing charged or polar functionality. Two of nature's most abundant polysaccharides, cellulose and chitin, have been synthetically modified in a multitude of ways to produce polymers with significant commercial utilization (86,87).

Cellulose Derivatives. Cellulose (qv) is a β -1 \rightarrow 4-D-anhydroglucopyranose copolymer (Fig. 23) that serves as the major structural component of plants. When the cellulose molecule is extended, it is a flat ribbon with hydroxyl groups protruding laterally and is capable of forming both intra- and intermolecular hydrogen bonds. This form allows the strong interaction with neighboring chains that makes dissolution difficult. In fact, strongly interactive solvents are necessary for solubilization. Molecular weights range from 5×10^5 to 1.5×10^6 , depending on the source. Water-soluble cellulose ethers can be prepared by nucleophilic substitution, ring opening, or Michael addition mechanisms (72).

Carboxymethylcellulose (CMC) is usually prepared by the reaction of cellulose with the sodium salt of chloroacetic acid in aqueous alkaline organic slurries. The extent of substitution on C-2, C-3, and C-6 is related to the degree of disruption of hydrogen bonding, steric factors, and reaction conditions (72,87). The acid form of CMC is a polyelectrolyte with limited solubility and a pK_a of 4. The monovalent metal or ammonium salts are soluble; divalent cations result in borderline solubility; multivalent cations allow gel formation. Solutions of sodium CMC are pseudoplastic for high viscosity grades with degrees of substitution (DS) of 0.9–1.2. Solutions of less uniformly substituted, high molecular weight CMC with

low DS are thixotropic; CMC is stable over the pH range 4–10 (see CELLULOSE ETHERS).

CMC is used in sizing for textile and paper applications and as a thickener, stabilizer, suspending agent, or binder in foods, pharmaceuticals, and cosmetics. CMC is a fluid loss and rheology modifier in drilling muds.

Hydroxyethylcellulose (HEC) and hydroxypropylcellulose (HPC) are prepared by nucleophilic ring opening of ethylene oxide and propylene oxide, respectively, by the hydroxyl anions on the anhydroglucose ring of cellulose. Reactions are conducted commercially in caustic aqueous slurry processes (72). Laboratory methods recently have been reported for preparation of cellulose ethers, esters, and carbamates under homogeneous reaction conditions in organic solvents (88–91). Such solvents may lead to development of new commercial processes for cellulose derivatives with more uniform substitution.

HEC is a nonionic polymer with little surface activity in solution and is compatible with a wide range of surfactants and salts. Solutions are pseudoplastic at higher molecular weights and concentrations. Molecules behave as rigid rods in dilute aqueous solution. Commercial HEC has molar substitution (MS) between 1.8 and 3.5 degree of substitution of 0.8–1.8.

HPC is more hydrophobic than HEC owing to the presence of the methyl group on the side chain. The polymer is soluble in organic solvents but phase separates from water above 45°C. In concentrated solutions, HPC exhibits lyotropic liquid crystalline behavior (61). Commercial HPC has MS values between 3.5 and 4.5 and DS values of 2.2–2.8 (72,87).

HEC is used in coatings, cements, thickeners, pharmaceuticals, oil-well fracturing, cementing, and drilling applications, and in cosmetics, inks, paper finishes, lubricants, gels, and agricultural formulations. HPC is used for warp sizing, flocculations, wetting, thickening, binding, formulation of hair sprays, cosmetics, pharmaceuticals, and personal care items.

Methylcellulose is prepared commercially by reaction of the respective methyl chloride or dimethyl sulfate with alkali cellulose with organic slurry systems, batch methods, or continuous processes (72,87). The methyl ether derivatives have a DS range from 1.5 to 2.0, the uniformity of which depends on the heterogeneity of the reaction medium and other reaction conditions. Substitution occurs preferentially at the C-6 and C-2 positions. Methylcellulose exhibits both an upper and lower critical solution temperature as signified by gel formation on heating or cooling homogeneous solutions. Uses for methyl cellulose include gelling fluids, viscosifiers, pharmaceutical coatings, and food additives.

Hydroxypropylmethylcellulose (HPMC) is one of the many mixed ethers of cellulose. It is prepared by reactions of alkali cellulose with methyl chloride and propylene oxide in a slurry process. Reaction conditions may be varied to control compositions despite the greater reactivity of methyl chloride. HPMC is an extremely effective viscosifier compared to conventional cellulose ethers. Its microheterogeneous nature, phase behavior, and interaction with surfactants allow use in food, pharmaceutical, and coatings applications (72,87).

Cellulose sulfates and phosphates are water-soluble derivatives prepared by reactions of alcohol/water/organic diluent mixtures of sulfuric or phosphoric acids. Phosphate derivatives are flame retardant but have not been commercialized (72).

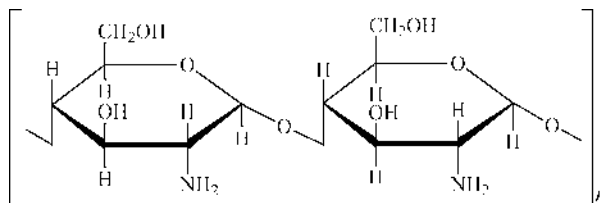


Fig. 24. Chitosan.

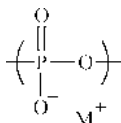


Fig. 25. Poly(phosphoric acid) salt.

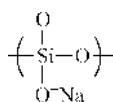


Fig. 26. Poly(silicic acid) salt.

Chitin Derivatives and Chitosan. Chitin (92) is a water-insoluble, high molecular weight polymer of 2-acetamido-2-deoxy-D-glucopyranosyl units linked through β -1 \rightarrow 4-D bonds. This most abundant skeletal material of invertebrates is recovered from shrimp, crab, or lobster waste materials. Fungi are also an important commercial source of chitin. Chitin may be converted to chitosan by partial or complete deacetylation. In the protonated form (Fig. 24), this cationic polyelectrolyte is water-soluble with a number of potential commercial uses including flocculation, viscosification, wound healing, medical dressing, pharmaceutical formulation, drug delivery, membrane technology, and animal nutrition.

Chitin can be derivatized (92–95) by reaction of the hydroxyl substituents on carbons 3 and 6 of the anhydroglucose ring. *N*-substituted derivatives at C-2 can be obtained from reactions on chitosan or partially deacetylated chitin. Hydroxyethylchitin and other water-soluble derivatives are useful wet-end additives in papermaking and flocculants for anionic waste streams (see CHITIN AND CHITOSAN).

Inorganic Water-Soluble Polymers

Poly(metaphosphoric acid) (96,97) (Fig. 25) is formed by controlled dehydration of NaH_2PO_4 . The lower molecular weight sodium hexametaphosphate is available commercially. High molecular weight analogues can be prepared with various cations. The other widely abundant inorganic polymers, poly(silicic acid) (Fig. 26) and its sodium or potassium salts are highly branched, associated, high viscosity polymers. Aqueous solutions of silicates have been used as raw materials for centuries in window-glass formation and insulating-glass fibers (96).

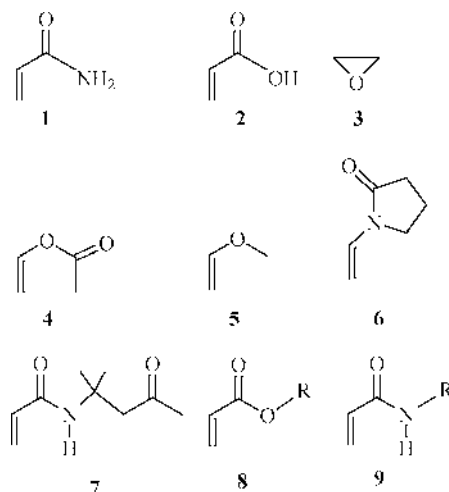


Fig. 27. Examples of uncharged monomers utilized in the synthesis of water-soluble, nonionic copolymers.

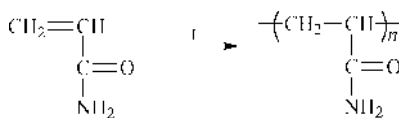


Fig. 28. Polymerization of acrylamide.

Nonionic Polymers

A number of commercially available and experimental nonionic monomers including those shown in Figure 27 have been utilized to prepare a large number of water-soluble (co)polymers. Water solubility is a result of a high concentration of polar or hydrogen-bonding functional groups on the repeating units. Major commercial polymers are based on acrylic, vinyl, oxide, or imine functionality.

Polyacrylamide. Acrylamide (AM) monomer **1** is polymerized by free-radical initiators, eg, azo compounds, redox, catalysts, light, and radiation (Fig. 28). This monomer is unique among vinyl and acrylic monomers because it can be polymerized to ultrahigh molecular weight (10^6 – 10^7). This extraordinary feature of acrylamide polymerization is attributed, in part, to the ease of purification of AM monomer and to the unusually high ratio of its propagation to termination rate constants (k_p/k_t). In fact, AM has the highest k_p/k_t of any free radically polymerizable monomer. Polyacrylamide (PAM) can be prepared via solution, inverse emulsion, inverse microemulsion, or precipitation techniques (98–100) (see ACRYLAMIDE POLYMERS).

Low temperature initiation, high monomer concentration, and a small amount of added 2-mercaptobenzimidazole, a radical scavenger, are reported to be the optimal reaction conditions for preparing high molecular weight, soluble polymers. High total solids concentrations usually result in intractably high solution viscosities. Inverse emulsion polymerization offers the opportunity for

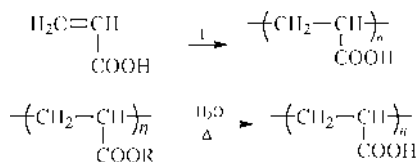


Fig. 29. Preparation of poly(acrylic acid) by direct polymerization or by hydrolysis of a polyacrylate.

lowered viscosities without compromising polymer molecular weights (101–103). Inverse microemulsion polymerization results in rates 10–200 times faster than conventional inverse emulsion systems (104). Precipitation polymerization can also be accomplished using a solvent (eg, *tert*-butyl alcohol) that dissolves the AM monomer but not the PAM (100).

Solution polymers are usually isolated by precipitation or dialysis/freeze drying. However, such solid products are hard to re-dissolve. Recently this problem was overcome by the discovery that water-in-oil (w/o) emulsions of polyacrylamide can be inverted by adding a water-soluble surfactant to produce an oil-in-water (o/w) emulsion. Thus a low HLB surfactant is used for polymerization and a high HLB surfactant is used for phase inversion (103). The resulting polymers re-dissolve easily. Inversion must be complete or polymer (activity) is lost.

AM is difficult to polymerize by any of the “controlled/living” polymerization techniques. However, McCormick and co-workers have recently made significant progress in this area by reporting the CLRP, via RAFT, of AM in both aqueous and organic media (47,49,50). To achieve “living” conditions, judicious choices must be made with respect to RAFT chain transfer agent (CTA) and polymerization conditions.

PAM has reported T_g values of 165 and 188°C. No matter which value is correct, it is clear that PAM remains glassy to relatively high temperatures. Although PAM is slow to dissolve, it is soluble in water in all proportions. However, PAM solution viscosities show a time dependence, attributed to intramolecular conformational changes (98). Because PAM can be polymerized to very high molecular weight, it is a highly efficient aqueous viscosifier. Solution viscosities of nonionic PAM are insensitive to changes in pH (between 1 and 10). Above pH = 10, it is subject to hydrolysis. Solutions of nonionic polyacrylamide are also tolerant of electrolytes (eg, NaCl). Viscosities increase with increasing molecular weights, according to equation 5.

$$[\eta] = 1.0 \times 10^{-2} M_w^{0.755} \quad (\text{water, } 25^\circ\text{C}) \quad (5)$$

Polyacrylamides function as flocculating agents, in rheology control, and as adhesives.

Poly(acrylic acid). Poly(acrylic acid) (PAA) can be prepared by direct free-radical polymerization of **2** in aqueous solution (6) or by precipitation polymerization in benzene. Alcohols and mercaptans are commonly used chain-transfer agents for regulating polymer molecular weight. Alternatively, PAA can be prepared by hydrolysis of poly(alkyl acrylates) (6) (Fig. 29).

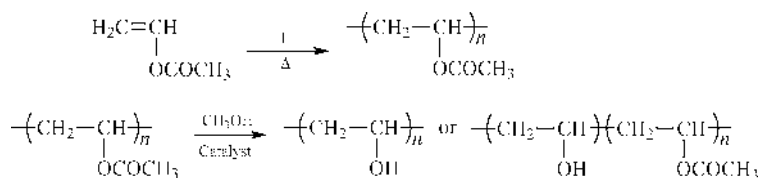


Fig. 30. Polymerization of vinyl acetate.

Both RAFT and NMP controlled/living techniques are suitable for the direct polymerization of acrylic acid. The RAFT polymerization of AA has been reported in DMF (24,105), various alcohols (106,107), water (108), and dioxane (109) employing a variety of RAFT CTAs including dithioesters, xanthates, dithiocarbamates and trithiocarbonates. AA is also susceptible to controlled polymerization by NMP (110,111).

The T_g of PAA has been variously reported as 75, 106, and 126°C, depending on the mode of measurement. However, the highest value is probably the most accurate. Solid polymers are hard, clear, brittle materials. In aqueous solutions, viscosity increases with increasing molecular weight. PAA undergoes a number of reactions in solution, ie, hydrolysis, esterification, dehydration, and complex formation with polyethers. PAA is an excellent thickener for lattices. PAA has been used in oil recovery, as a dispersant for inorganic pigments, as a flocculant, and as an adhesive.

Poly(ethylene oxide). Poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO) is prepared by ring-opening polymerization of the ethylene oxide monomer **3** (112,113). Polymers of molecular weight greater than 1×10^5 are prepared by heterogeneous catalysis (eg, alkaline earth carbonates) in low boiling aliphatic hydrocarbons. Few of the details of the commercial manufacture have been made public (see ETHYLENE OXIDE POLYMERS).

PEO is a white free-flowing powder with commercial grades from 100,000 to 5 million molecular weight (114). It has a T_m of about 65°C and a T_g of -45 to -53°C. Above the melting point it can be processed as a thermoplastic, ie molded or extruded. However, owing to its high melt viscosity, incorporation of plasticizer is often desired. PEO resins are completely soluble in water at room temperature, but show a lower critical solution temperature (LCST) near the boiling point of water. The LCST is lowered by the addition of inorganic salts according to the following order: $\text{PO}_4^{3-} > \text{SO}_4^{2-} > \text{F}^- > \text{Cl}^- > \text{I}^- > \text{K}^+ > \text{Na}^+ > \text{Li}^+$. Aqueous solutions of high molecular weight PEO show high extensional and shear viscosities and pseudoplastic rheology.

Poly(vinyl alcohol). Poly(vinyl alcohol) (PVA) is manufactured by alcoholysis/hydrolysis of poly(vinyl acetate), which is, in turn, produced by free-radical polymerization of vinyl acetate monomer **4** (114) (Fig. 30) (see VINYL ALCOHOL POLYMERS).

Polymerization of vinyl acetate monomer can be effected by bulk, solution, or emulsion techniques. The poly(vinyl acetate) formed is then dissolved in solvent (eg, CH_3OH) and alcoholized/hydrolyzed with acidic or basic catalysts. Vinyl acetate can also be polymerized in a controlled fashion via RAFT/MADIX (115). PVA is insoluble in CH_3OH and precipitates. It is isolated by filtration, washing, and drying.

Properties of PVA depend on the degree of alcoholysis/hydrolysis and polymer viscosity/molecular weight. Bulk/film properties (eg, tensile strength, tear resistance, elongation, and flexibility) of PVA increase with increasing extent of alcoholysis/hydrolysis and with increasing viscosity/molecular weight. The tensile strength is exceptional compared with other water-soluble polymers. Water solubility/sensitivity is at a maximum at 88% alcoholysis/hydrolysis. Beyond that level, polymer–polymer interactions via intramolecular H-bonding become so extreme that solvation of the polymer becomes difficult.

Other noteworthy properties of PVA are its film-forming ability, its barrier, adhesive, and emulsifier properties, and its grease, oil, and solvent resistance. PVA films and coatings do not require a curing cycle because tough films can be formed by evaporation. PVA film also has remarkable gas impermeability, forming barriers to oxygen, nitrogen, carbon dioxide, hydrogen, helium, and hydrogen sulfide. However, PVA does exhibit permeability to ammonia and water vapor. Its adhesive binding strength is attributable, in part, to its film-forming ability and its high strength. PVA has surface activity as an o/w emulsifier and/or protective colloid. Oil and solvent resistance increases with extent of hydrolysis.

Poly(vinyl alcohol) is used alone or combined with extenders, pigments, etc, in the preparation of high wet-strength adhesives for paper. It is an excellent binder for textiles and sizing agent for paper and can be used to emulsify a wide range of materials including vegetable oils, mineral oils, solvents, plastics, waxes, and resins. Its emulsifying, binding, film-forming, and thickening behaviors are useful in cosmetic formulation. PVA films can also be used for making oxygen tents.

Poly(methyl vinyl ether). Methyl vinyl ether (MVE) **5** is isomeric with PPO, but is significantly more water-soluble. Indeed, it is the methyl ether derivative of poly(vinyl alcohol). MVE is readily polymerized using carbocationic methods (116–118). This also facilitates the preparation of novel MVE-based block copolymers. Purification of homo polymers and copolymers prepared by the termination of living poly(methyl vinyl ether) (PMVE) with *n*-alcohols involves a combination of solvent removal, dialysis, and freeze drying (118).

MVE can also be polymerized under alternating free radical conditions with, for example, maleic anhydride to yield poly(9-methylvinylether-alt-maleic anhydride).

The T_g of PMVE is -34°C (119) and as such exists in a rubbery state at standard temperatures and pressures. PMVE exhibits broad solubility. Common solvents include benzene, halogenated hydrocarbons, ethanol, *n*-butanol, acetone, ethylacetate, cold water, heptane and cyclohexenes. Common nonsolvents include hexane, ethylene glycol, and dioxy ether (119). PMVE is readily soluble in water, but like many nonionic water-soluble polymers, PMVE exhibits inverse temperature water-solubility. The cloud point varies over a broad range depending on MW. For example, low molecular weight PMVE with a D_p of 19 is reported to have a cloud point of 18°C while some commercial grades have significantly higher cloud points at ca 35°C (117).

Poly(*N*-vinylpyrrolidinone). *N*-Vinylpyrrolidinone (NVP) monomer **6** polymerizes under free-radical conditions via bulk, solution, and suspension methods (Fig. 32).

Azo initiators are preferred over persulfate initiators because the latter react with the monomer. One of the curious features of this polymerization is that

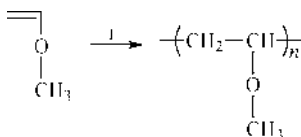


Fig. 31. Polymerization of methyl vinyl ether.

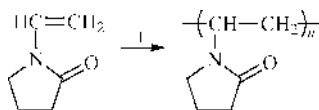


Fig. 32. Polymerization of *N*-vinylpyrrolidinone.

it has a maximum rate of polymerization in the presence of about 1 mol of water (120,121). Presumably, a specific complex forms between the monomer and a water molecule. NVP does not polymerize to particularly high molecular weight, in part because it is difficult to purify the monomer.

The T_g of PNVP is 175°C, but this value is reduced considerably by small amounts of water. Dry-cast films of PNVP are hard and transparent. However, the presence of strong intermolecular dipole–dipole interactions causes it to have a high processing temperature. Consequently, PNVP has never found acceptance for molded parts. PNVP has interesting solution properties. It is readily soluble in water and forms complexes with a wide variety of substances, eg, iodine, polyacids, phenolics. Solutions of PNVP are stable to electrolytes. Solution viscosities increase with increasing polymer molecular weight. PNVP (bulk or solution) is also characterized by high thermal or thermohydrolytic stability and chemical resistance. PNVP is also compatible with a wide range of hydrophilic and hydrophobic resins and modifiers.

PNVP has found applications in a wide variety of industries, including medicine, pharmaceuticals, cosmetics, textiles, beverages, adhesives, and paper (121,122). For example, PNVP was an early plasma and blood volume extender. It is used extensively in pharmaceutical tablets. Its complex with iodine is a germicide. It is used as a component in cosmetics, hair shampoos, and sprays and is a stabilizing agent for beer. PNVP also exhibits excellent adhesion to glass (see *N*-VINYLAMIDE POLYMERS).

Polyelectrolytes

Polyelectrolytes (qv) are polymers with charged functional groups attached along the chain. These polymers are usually classified as either polyanions (negative charges) or polycations (positive charges). Associated with the polyions are counterions or gegenions of the opposite charge in sufficient numbers to maintain electroneutrality (123).

Water-soluble polyelectrolytes exhibit a number of common traits with water-soluble nonionics. However, differences arise from the presence of charges on the macromolecular backbone and more mobile counterions electrostatically

bound to an extent determined by pK_a , solvent, and local dielectric effects. Generally, phase behavior and enhanced solubility result from increased segmental hydration and increased free energy of mixing.

The interactions between fixed charges on the polymer chain in dilute solution normally expand (repulsive) or contract (attractive) coil dimensions. Counterion binding also influences hydrodynamic volume and involves specific ion binding as well as atmospheric ion binding. Theoretical discussions of these effects can be found in References 123 and 124.

Polyelectrolytes with flexible chains and high charge density are more expanded in water than nonionic polymers, especially at low ionic strength. Determination of intrinsic viscosity is difficult in this regime (Fig. 5c). Electrostatic repulsions not only cause increases in hydrodynamic volume but also increases in shear sensitivity or non-Newtonian behavior.

The extent of ionization of polybases or polyacids depends on the relative base or acid strength, degree of solvation, and dielectric constant of the solvent. Poly(acrylic acid), for example, ionizes progressively in aqueous basic solution to yield a copolymer with ionized acrylate units and un-ionized acrylic acid units along the backbone; neighboring group hydrogen-bonding effects accelerate initial ionization. Eventually, however, ionization becomes more difficult owing to excessive buildup of charge along the backbone.

Polyelectrolytes have been studied extensively because molecular structures can be tailored to allow large conformational changes with pH, temperature, or added electrolytes. Molecular parameters that influence behavior include number, type, and distribution of charged repeat units on the chain, hydrophobic/hydrophilic balance, distance of charged moiety from the backbone, and counterion type. Solution properties including phase behavior, hydrodynamic volume, and binding can be altered, offering utilization in flocculation, adhesion, stabilization, compatibilization, viscosification, suspension, etc.

Anionic Polyelectrolytes. Anionic poly(acrylic acid) (PAA) can be synthesized in two ways, ie direct polymerization of **1A** (Fig. 33) or via hydrolysis of a suitable precursor polymer (6). In the direct method, salts of acrylic acid are homopolymerized or copolymerized by free-radical initiation in aqueous media. Usually the rate of polymerization of the ionic monomer is lower than the corresponding nonionic monomer, presumably owing to charge repulsion between the growing chain and the incoming ionic monomer. Direct polymerization of acrylic acid salt solutions has some commercial advantages because the nonvolatility of acrylic acid salts allows simultaneous polymerization and spray drying (or drum drying) to produce high molecular weight polymers directly. Hydrolysis (saponification) is the alternative method for producing anionic poly(acrylic acid) (Fig. 34). Hydrolysis of syndiotactic esters gives syndiotactic salt, and hydrolysis of isotactic esters gives isotactic salts.

The T_g of anionic poly(acrylic acid) [eg poly(sodium acrylate)] is substantially higher (251°C) than that of nonionic poly(acrylic acid) (102°C) because of the strong intermolecular forces due to ionomeric clustering. Physical/mechanical properties (eg, moduli) are also generally higher for salts vs free acids in the bulk phase. Atactic and syndiotactic salts of acrylic acid are water-soluble, but isotactic forms are not. Salts of poly(acrylic acid) show characteristic polyelectrolyte solution behavior (6).

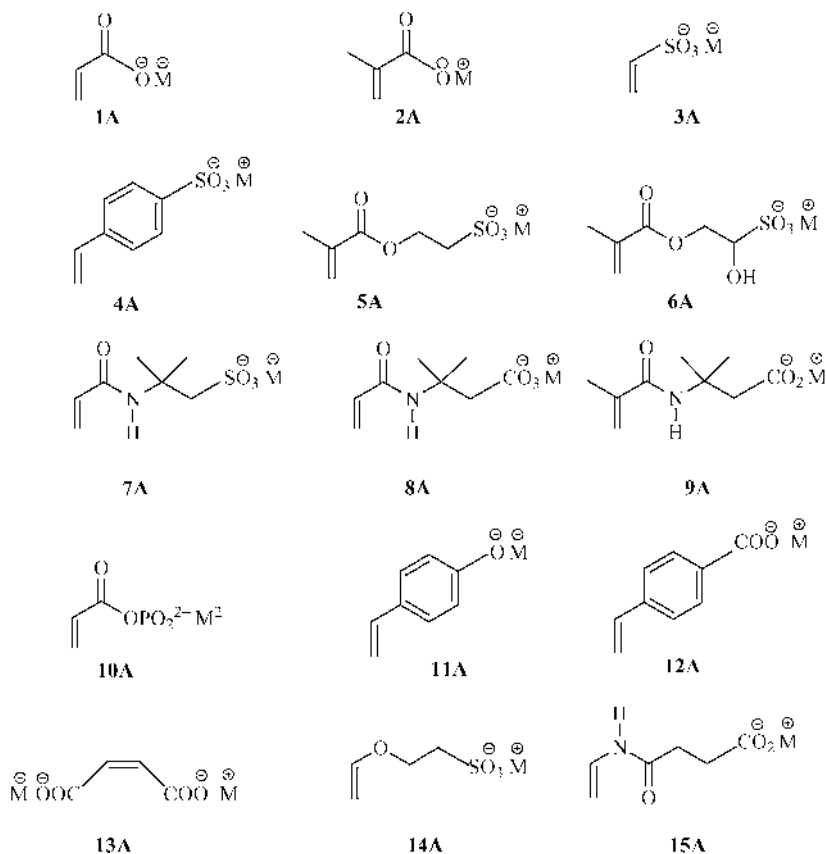


Fig. 33. Examples of monomers utilized in preparing anionic polyelectrolytes.

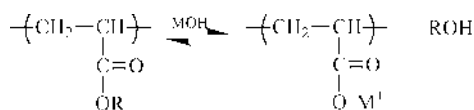


Fig. 34. Preparation of poly(acrylic acid) salts via hydrolysis of a precursors poly(alkyl acrylate).

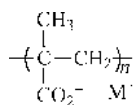


Fig. 35. Structure of poly(methacrylic acid) salt.

The applications of anionic poly(acrylic acid) include use as latex thickeners, oil-field chemicals, dispersants, and flocculants. In addition, poly(acrylic acids) containing small amounts of cross-linking agents are water-swallowable polymers that have found use as superabsorbents.

Poly(methacrylic acid) and Its Salts. A wide variety of methods have been used to prepare poly(methacrylic acid) (PMAA) (6) (Fig. 35). Free-radical

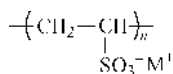


Fig. 36. Structure of poly(vinylsulfonic acid) salt.

polymerization by hydrogen peroxide, persulfate, or redox systems in aqueous solution yields atactic polymer with syndiotactic tendency. At higher pH, a higher syndiotactic content is produced. Stereoregularity can be obtained by hydrolysis of appropriate precursor polymers.

Controlled structure PMAA can be prepared by the deprotection of an appropriate precursor polymethacrylate which has itself been polymerized under living conditions. Both anionic polymerization and GTP have been used to prepare PMAA employing a variety of PMAA precursor monomers such as benzyl methacrylate (125), *tert*-butyl methacrylate (126), trimethylsilyl methacrylate (127) and 2-tetrahydropyranyl methacrylate (128,129). Removal of the protecting group yields the desired PMMA.

The sodium salt of methacrylic acid **2A** has also been polymerized directly in aqueous media via ATRP employing a PEO macro-initiator (130). Short chain, controlled structure oligomers of PMAA may also be prepared by CCTP (131).

Poly(methacrylic acid) in the nonionized form in solution has a compact conformation and low intrinsic viscosity. Upon ionization to the polyelectrolyte form, chain expansion occurs and viscosity increases. Unlike PAA, PMAA shows inverse solubility-temperature behavior. The presence of chain-stiffening methyl groups and their added hydrophobicity are responsible for the phase and viscosity behavior. Tacticity also plays an important role.

PMAA and its copolymers with acrylamide are used in viscosification and flocculation. Copolymers of MAA and its salts have been used as components of superabsorbents, coatings, adhesives, and in drilling operations.

Poly(vinylsulfonic acid) and Its Salts. Poly(vinylsulfonic acid) (PVSA) (Fig. 36) is prepared by polymerization of ethylenesulfonic acid or its sodium salt **3A** under free-radical conditions. It is purified precipitating aqueous solutions of the sodium salt form with methanol or dioxane.

The sodium and ammonium salts of PVSA are soluble in water but insoluble in organic solvents (6). The calcium salt is insoluble. Potentiometric titration studies indicate that PVSA is a strong acid that ionizes completely in water. Ion binding selectivity with alkali metals has been observed in viscosity and phase separation studies. Mark–Houwink–Sakurada (MHS) parameters of $K = 2.22$ and $\alpha = 0.65$ have been obtained for sodium PVSA in 0.5 M NaCl at 25°C.

Poly(styrenesulfonic acid) and Its Salts. Poly(styrenesulfonic acid) (PSSA) (6) (Fig. 37) may be prepared by free-radical polymerization of the monomer in solution using the free acid, sodium, or potassium salt **4A** form.

PSSA may also be prepared by sulfonation of polystyrene or by hydrolysis of poly(*n*-propyl *p*-vinylbenzenesulfonate). The latter cases allow preparation of tactic structures. Copolymers can also be prepared by free-radical copolymerization of appropriate monomers or post-reaction. Polymers are purified by precipitation of aqueous solutions with methanol, alkaline methanol, or other alcohols. Controlled structure PSSA homopolymers and block copolymers may also be prepared directly in aqueous media via RAFT using 4-cyanopentanoic acid dithiobenzoate

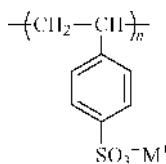


Fig. 37. Structure of poly(styrene sulfonate) salt.

as the CTA and V-501 as the radical source (48). NMP has been successfully employed in the preparation of near-monodisperse PSSA homo/copolymers. For example, PSSA homopolymer can be prepared in an ethylene glycol/water mixture (3:1 vol/vol) using TEMPO and sodium bisulfite/potassium persulfate as the redox initiating pair (132,133).

Atactic PSSA is soluble in water, methanol, and ethanol but insoluble in hydrocarbons. PSSA salts are insoluble in common organic solvents but soluble in water. Ultraviolet and fluorescence spectrometry measurements can yield information on features including local environment, neighboring groups, and tacticity. MHS values and solution properties are reviewed in Reference 56. Cross-linked PSSA has been used commercially as an ion-exchange resin and in heavy metal binding studies. Fractionated PSSA has been offered as a standard for aqueous gel-permeation chromatography.

Other Sulfonic Acids. Extensive development work has been conducted on acrylic sulfonate-containing monomers. 2-Sulfoethyl methacrylate (SEM) monomer **5A** has proved to be of limited commercial value owing to the hydrolytic instability of the ester linkage. However, recently well-defined homopolymers of 3-sulfopropyl methacrylate (SPMA) were prepared under aqueous RAFT conditions with 4-cyanopentanoic acid dithiobenzoate and V-501 as the CTA/initiator pair at 70°C (39). This same hydrolytic instability has been a serious problem with 3-sulfo-2-hydroxypropyl methacrylate. In contrast, 2-acrylamido-2-methylpropanesulfonic acid (AMPSA) **6A**, prepared by the reactions of SO₃ with isobutylene followed by the Ritter reaction with acrylonitrile (134), is quite hydrolytically stable.

AMPS or 2-acrylamido-2-methyl propanesulfonate **7A** is highly reactive in both homo- and copolymerizations and can be incorporated by homogeneous, solution, or emulsion polymerization techniques. With advances in CLRP, acrylamido monomers such as AMPS (specifically in its Na⁺ form) are now easily polymerized in a controlled manner, as homopolymers, statistical copolymers, or block copolymers. Indeed PAMPS and its copolymers may be prepared under facile conditions via RAFT, directly in water employing CTP and V-501 as the CTA/initiator pair (42,44,45). Applications include improving emulsion stability (135), flocculation (136), improving dry strength in paper (137), sludge dispersal in boiler-water treatment (138), and silt control in cooling water systems (139). Copolymers of the sodium salt of AMPS with acrylamide copolymers (140–142) and ampholytic terpolymers (143,144) have potential in oil-field applications and in superabsorbency, respectively.

Other Anionic Carboxylate Monomers. The anionic carboxylate monomers **8A** and **9A**, prepared by the Ritter reaction involving acrylonitrile or methacrylonitrile and 3,3-dimethylacrylic acid have been copolymerized in the

sodium salt form to yield calcium-tolerant copolymers with utility in enhanced oil recovery (145–148). Monomer **8A**, for example, has been copolymerized with **7A** under RAFT conditions to yield novel stimuli-responsive water-soluble polymers capable of reversible pH-induced micellization (42,44). Sodium 4-vinylbenzoate **12A** has also been polymerized under both NMP and ATRP conditions (133,149).

Other examples of specialty anionic monomers shown in Figure 33 include salts of vinylphosphonates **10A**, vinylphenolates **11A**, vinyl benzoate **12A**, maleic acid **13A**, 3-vinylxypropane sulfonates **14A**, and *N*-vinylsuccinimide acid **15A**.

Cationic Polyelectrolytes. Cationic polymers are a class of polyelectrolytes that derive their unique properties from the density and distribution of positive charges along a macromolecular backbone as well as molecular weight. Chain conformation and solubility depend on the extent of ionization and interaction with water. Cationic functional groups can strongly interact with suspended, negatively charged particles or oil droplets and are useful for many applications (76,150–153) including waste treatment and paper making. A number of the most common monomers utilized for preparation of cationic polyelectrolytes are shown in Figure 38.

Polymethacrylic Cationics.

Poly(2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate). 2-(Dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate [DMAEMA, **1C** (Fig. 38)] is readily polymerized under a variety of conditions such as conventional free radical polymerization (154), living free radical polymerization, specifically ATRP and RAFT, anionic polymerization (155), group transfer polymerization (156) and oxyanionic polymerization (157,158). For example, conventional free radically prepared copolymers of **1C** with *N*-vinyl-2-pyrrolidone (159,160), *N*-phenylmaleimide (161), and ethylene (162) have been reported. While **1C** is readily polymerized via both ATRP and RAFT, to date ATRP has received the most attention as a means of preparing controlled-structure homo- and copolymers of **1C** in both aqueous (163) and organic media (164,165) with Cu(I) species as the catalysts employing a variety of different ligands (166–169). It should be noted that under certain conditions **1C** may undergo a transesterification reaction when polymerized via ATRP in MeOH and MeOH/H₂O mixtures (170). It is also possible to directly polymerize quaternized versions of **1C** via aqueous or mixed H₂O/MeOH ATRP (171). **1C** has been successfully polymerized via RAFT in EtOAc with CTP and V-501 as the CTA/initiator pair (172), and also under bulk conditions with cumyl dithiobenzoate and AIBN (173).

Synthesis of Other Amine-Containing Polymethacrylates. Figure 38 shows the structures of other amine-containing methacrylic monomers. Like poly(2-dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate) (PDMAEMA), the homopolymers of these monomers are water-soluble, albeit under somewhat more limiting conditions. The copolymerization of **2C** with methacrylic acid has been reported under conventional free radical conditions in methanol using AIBN as the initiator (174). The controlled polymerization of **2C**, **3C**, **4C**, and **5C** have been reported under GTP conditions (175–179) and oxyanionic conditions (15,180). Homopolymers of **2C** have also been prepared under ATRP conditions (181). Interestingly, **6C** can be polymerized in a controlled fashion by both oxyanionic and classical anionic techniques even though it contains a secondary amine species (180,182).

Aqueous Solution Characteristics. The behaviors of the polyamine methacrylates in aqueous media are both interesting and varied. The polymer

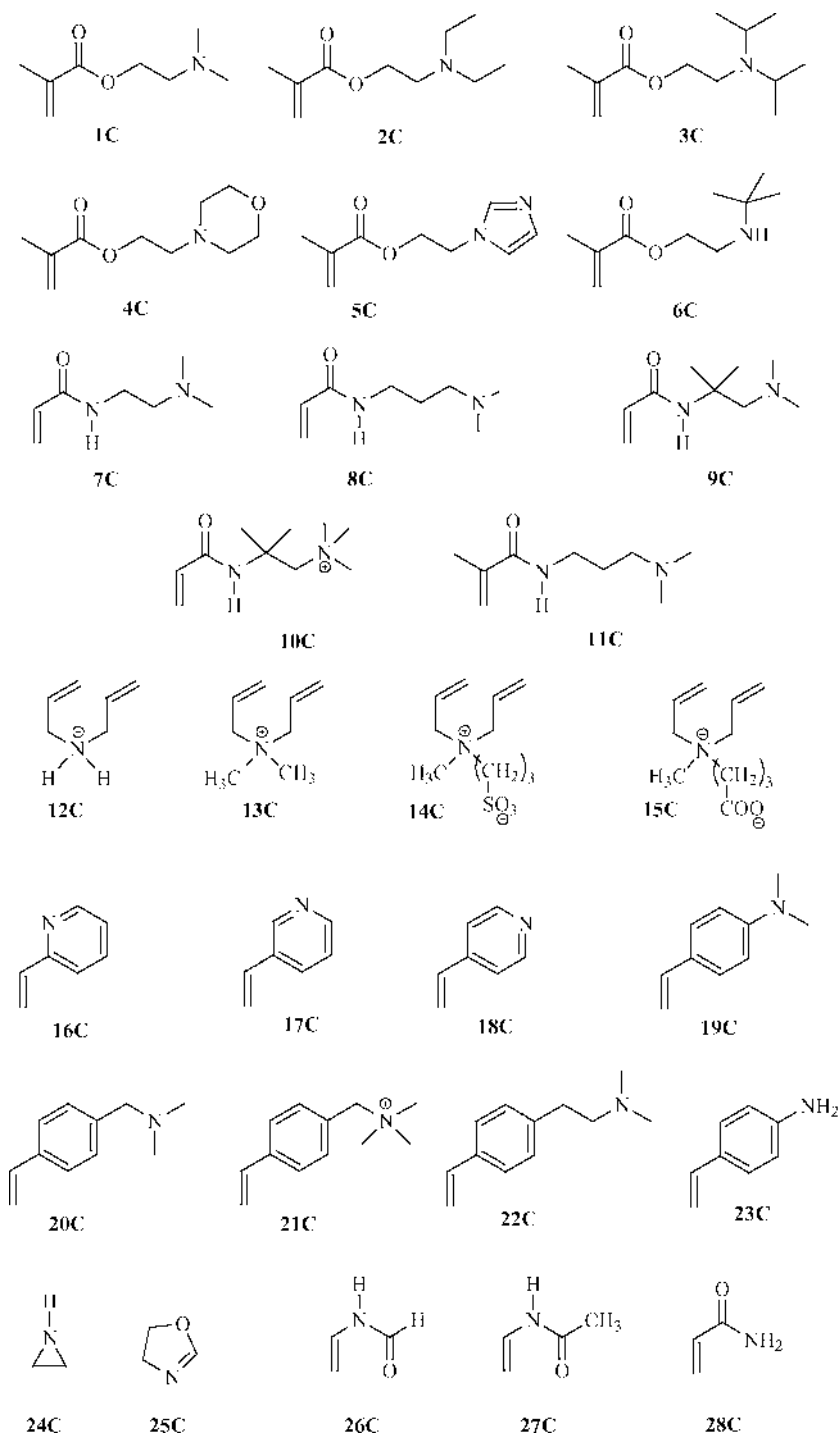


Fig. 38. Chemical structures of common amine-containing monomers (1C–23C) and reactive precursors (24C–28C) to amine-containing polymers.

from **1C** is a weak polybase which is soluble over most of the useful pH range. However, in its non ionized form, and like most nonionic water-soluble polymers, it shows inverse-temperature water-solubility. The neutral polymer has a lower critical solution temperature (LCST), or cloud-point (C_p), between ~ 32 and 47°C depending on its molecular weight. In its protonated form, however, it remains readily soluble up to 100°C .

The other "common" tertiary amine polymethacrylates, PDEAEMA, PDiPAEMA, and PMEMA from **2C** and **3C**, are also responsive to applied stimuli in aqueous solution. These are only soluble in aqueous media at low pH, ie under those conditions in which the tertiary amine residues are protonated and thus cationic. Under basic conditions, where the 3° amine groups are neutral both species are hydrophobic and thus phase separate. So, simply adjusting the pH of an aqueous solution for homopolymers derived from **2C** or **3C** results in phase separation. Polymers from **4C** and **1C** are soluble over the entire useful pH range, but do have an LCST in the range 34 – 54°C , the exact C_p being molecular weight dependent. However, the former is also susceptible to changes in electrolyte concentration. Certain salts such as sodium sulfate readily "salt out" this polymer inducing a phase change (183). These various responses to different applied stimuli have been exploited for the synthesis of novel self-assembled polymeric micelles.

Poly(meth)acrylamido Cationics. (Meth)acrylamido species are one of the most important commercial class of water-soluble monomers with wide-ranging applications. Cationic polyacrylamides are most often prepared by the normal free radical polymerization of the amine-containing monomer, and then most often in a copolymerization. For example, the protonated form of **9C** and the monomer **10C** are both readily copolymerized with **28C** to yield high molecular weight statistical copolymers in which the molar composition is virtually identical to the feed composition (184,185).

The controlled polymerization of amine-containing (meth)acrylamido monomers has, until recently, remained elusive. None of the classical living techniques can be employed and of the controlled free radical polymerization techniques only RAFT has the versatility required for this particular class of monomer. Even so, there is only one report of the controlled polymerization of an amine-containing monomer, namely *N*-[3-(dimethylamino)propyl] methacrylamide, **11C** (186). **11C** is readily homopolymerized in aqueous media (neutral pH) at 70°C using 4-cyanopentanoic acid dithiobenzoate as the RAFT CTA and V-501 as the azo initiator, at an initial molar ratio of 5/1. Under these conditions reasonable control was attained as evidenced by the molecular weight control and resulting polydispersities. Control over the RAFT polymerization of **11C** was attained by conducting the polymerizations in a buffered solution (pH = 5.0). Under these conditions possible side reactions such as monomer hydrolysis followed by aminolysis of the CTA is essentially eliminated (such side reactions have been previously shown to be significant in the homopolymerization of **28C**) (47,186).

Amine functionality can also be introduced into acrylamido polymers via post-polymerization modification of polyacrylamide from monomer **28C**. Strategies include the Mannich reaction (introduction of tertiary-amine functionality), Hofmann degradation (yields polyvinylamine residues) and transamidation reactions. The Mannich reaction is reversible; however, subsequent quaternization of the Mannich product prevents the reverse reaction (187).

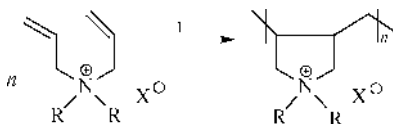


Fig. 39. Cyclopolymerization of diallyl ammonium monomers.

Polydiallylammonium Cationics. Diallyl ammonium monomers, such as **13C–15C** in Figure 38, can be polymerized via so-called cyclopolymerization (Fig. 39) (188).

DADMAC **13C**, for example, can be readily polymerized under these cyclopolymerization conditions to yield PolyDADMAC in which a structure composed of 5-membered *N*-heterocycles predominates. **13C** will readily polymerize at $\sim 35^\circ\text{C}$ employing ammonium persulfate as the initiator. **13C** is readily copolymerized with other diallyl monomers, with acrylamido monomers such as **28C** or diacetone acrylamide, or quaternized **1C**. Extensive reviews of cyclopolymerization and cyclocopolymerization can be found in Reference 188. Recent examples of cyclocopolymerization with sulfobetaine (**14C**) and carboxybetaine (**15C**) diallyl ammonium monomers are given in References (188–191).

Polyvinylpyridines

2-, 3- and 4-vinylpyridines (**16C**, **17C**, and **18C**) are all readily polymerized under normal free radical conditions. Of these species, **18C** has been the most widely studied. An extensively studied derivative of **17C** is 2-methyl-5-vinylpyridine (or 6-methyl-3-vinylpyridine) and its quats (192–195). For example, 1,2-dimethyl-5-vinylpyridinium methyl sulfate is readily polymerized in aqueous solution at room temperature with common free radical initiators such as AIBN or potassium persulfate. In fact it will spontaneously polymerize at concentrations in excess of $\sim 75\%$ (196).

It is also possible to prepare vinylpyridine-based (co)polymers in a controlled fashion with predetermined molecular weights and narrow molecular weight distributions. For example, the controlled polymerization of **16C** and **18C** is possible via anionic polymerization (197–201).

Also, **16C**, **17C**, and **18C** have been polymerized via nitroxide-mediated controlled radical polymerization employing a variety of different nitroxides (202–209). For example, **17C** may be polymerized under bulk or solution conditions (in ethylene glycol) employing 2,2,6,6-tetramethylpiperidin-1-oxyl (TEMPO) as the persistent free radical and benzoyl peroxide as the free radical initiator to yield controlled structure homopolymers with narrow molecular weight distributions (210). More recently, the controlled polymerization of **18C** using a β -phosphonylated nitroxide, namely *N*-*tert*-butyl-*N*-(1-diethylphosphono-2,2-dimethylpropyl) nitroxide, was reported and was shown to be extremely effective for the homopolymerization of **17C** as well as facilitating the synthesis of novel AB diblock copolymers (202).

The controlled polymerizations of **16C** and **18C** have also been reported using RAFT chemistry (211,212). Triblock copolymers of **17C** and styrene were prepared using dibenzyl trithiocarbonate as the RAFT CTA and AIBN as the azo

initiator. The RAFT polymerization of **16C** and **18C** has additionally been achieved using cumyl dithiobenzoate and AIBN as the CTA/initiator pair (212). Homopolymers of **16C** and **18C** were prepared under bulk conditions at 60°C. Excellent control over both the molecular weight and molecular weight distribution was observed with the polydispersity indices for the homopolymers all in the range 1.10–1.25. It was also shown that the corresponding AB diblock copolymers of **16C** with **18C** could be readily prepared using either homopolymer as the macro-CTA for the polymerization of the second block (212).

As well as NMP and RAFT, **16C** and **18C** have been polymerized via ATRP (213–215). For example, **18C** may be polymerized in a controlled fashion using 1-phenylethyl chloride as the initiator and CuCl/5,5,7,12,12,14-hexamethyl-1,4,8,11-tetraazamacrocyclotetradecane (Me₆[14]aneN₄) as the catalyst/ligand pair in propanol at 40°C (215).

Polymers from **16C** and **18C**, and presumably **17C**, may be hydrogenated to form the corresponding polyvinylpiperidines (6), or oxidized to the corresponding water-soluble *N*-oxide. The polyvinylpyridines may also be readily derivatized via quaternization with an appropriate alkylating agent, such as methyl iodide. The monomeric quats are readily water-soluble but can be prone to spontaneous polymerization above critical concentrations (216). The nature of the counterion can also affect the propensity of the quaternized monomers to autopolymerize.

Aqueous Solution Characteristics. The polymer from **16C** becomes water-soluble at a critical degree of ionization (protonation) of ca 30 mol% (217). In comparison, the polymer from **18C** only becomes water-soluble at an apparent degree of ionization of 70 mol%. The polymeric quats behave as strong polyelectrolytes and are readily water-soluble.

Amine-Containing Styrenic Monomers

Several amino-styrenic monomers are known; for example see **19C–23C** in Figure 38. The simplest of these, the primary amine species 4-vinylaniline (or 4-aminostyrene), **23C**, is susceptible to polymerization under conventional free radical conditions, as are **19C–22C**. For example, the UV-induced graft polymerization of **23C** from a Si surface was recently disclosed (218). These monomers tend to polymerize most effectively in aqueous media in their hydrochloride salt form. Given the reactive nature of the amine functionality in **23C** it is also a suitable precursor for the synthesis of novel amide-based styrenics (219). The controlled polymerization of **19C**, **20C**, and **22C**, under classical anionic conditions is also possible (220,221). For example, AB diblock copolymers of **22C** with styrene can be prepared at –78°C, in THF using cumyl potassium as the initiator with **22C** being polymerized first. Near-monodisperse *n*-butyl quats of **19C**, **20C**, and **22C** have also been reported. These were prepared by the post-polymerization modification of polymers from **19C**, **20C**, and **22C** with *n*-butyl bromide (220).

Homo and copolymers comprised of amine-containing styrenic monomers have also been reported by controlled free radical polymerization techniques. Both NMP and RAFT have been employed with varying degrees of success. For example, **20C** was block copolymerized with sodium 4-styrenesulfonate which was employed as a macro-initiator and had been prepared using TEMPO in a

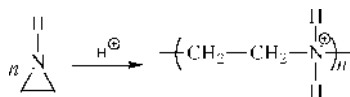


Fig. 40. Polymerization of ethyleneimine.

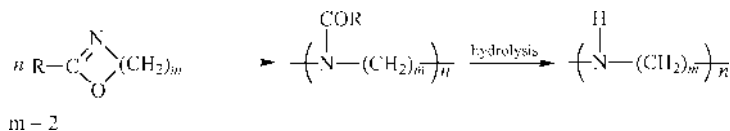


Fig. 41. Polymerization of substituted oxazolines.

3:1 ethylene glycol water mixture at 120°C with potassium persulfate as the initiator (133). More recently, McCormick and co-workers reported the synthesis of novel diamine AB diblock copolymers comprised of **21C** with the protonated form of **20C** (48). These were prepared directly in aqueous media using CTP as the RAFT CTA and V-501 as the azo initiator. Well defined block copolymers were obtained with excellent control over the molar mass and molar mass distribution. Also, new RAFT-synthesized AB diblock copolymers of *N,N*-dimethylacrylamide and **20C** have been reported (222). This work demonstrated the importance of blocking order in RAFT polymerizations when the two comonomers are from different monomer families. While highly efficient blocking was achieved when *N,N*-dimethylacrylamide was polymerized first, very poor crossover efficiencies were seen in the case of the styrenic-based macro-CTA.

Aqueous Solution Characteristics. The amine monomers tend to be water-soluble only in their protonated or quaternized forms. For example, homopolymers from **19C** are water-soluble at pH's below ~5.3; above this value they are hydrophobic and phase separate. This behavior is completely reversible and has been exploited by several researchers for the preparation of reversible pH-induced supramolecular nanoassemblies (48).

Poly(ethylene imine). Poly(ethylene amine) (PEI) is the simplest polybase. It can be prepared directly via the acid-catalyzed polymerization of ethyleneimine (aziridine, **24C**) (Fig. 40). **24C** may be prepared via a number of routes with ethanolamine being a convenient precursor (223). The cationic polymerization of **24C** is very rapid due to the release of the ring strain associated with the monomer. However, the synthesis of PEI under these conditions leads to highly branched structures due to chain transfer reactions involving the $-\text{NH}-$ species in the polymer backbone. Cyclic products can also be produced under these conditions. Copolymerization with an appropriate comonomer can reduce the degree of chain branching (224).

The polymerization of suitable precursor monomers, with subsequent conversion to PEI, is the only route to truly linear products. The most common precursors studied are the substituted oxazolines (Fig. 41), with the 2-substituted-2-oxazolines **25C** being the most thoroughly investigated (225).

Polyvinylamine. Along with PEI, polyvinylamine (PVAm) prepared from **26C** is the simplest polybase, and is related to PEI in a similar manner to the relationship between PVOH and PEO, ie as constitutional isomers. Also like

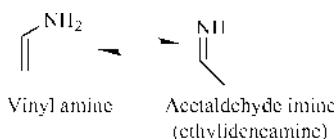


Fig. 42. Vinylamine tautomerization.

PVOH, PVAm cannot be prepared by the direct polymerization of the vinyl amine monomer because it very readily tautomerizes to acetaldehyde imine (Fig. 42).

As such, PVAm must be prepared by indirect methods employing protected monomers which, once polymerized, can be converted to PVAm. The most common employed precursors are the *N*-vinylamides (eg **26C** and **27C**) which after polymerization may be converted to PVAm via hydrolysis. For example, suitable precursors include poly(*N*-vinylacetamide) (PNVA) (226) and poly(*N*-vinylformamide) (PNVF) (227). PNVF is more readily hydrolyzed than other *N*-vinylamides. It is also possible to prepare PVAm via the Hofmann degradation of polyacrylamide prepared from **28C** (228). These precursor polymers are typically prepared using normal free radical polymerization chemistries and as such have broad molecular weight distributions. Recent advances in controlled radical polymerization methodologies, and especially the RAFT technology, should facilitate the synthesis of controlled-structure near-monodisperse PVAm. For example, it is now possible to polymerize **28C** in a controlled fashion under RAFT conditions (49,50). There is also at least one report detailing the RAFT polymerization of **26C** (229).

Miscellaneous Cationic Monomers

While the most common, amine-based species are not the only type of cationic monomers/polymers. There are several other functional species capable of yielding cationic species, namely the sulfonium (230), phosphonium (231,232), and pyrylium (233) species. Several examples of such species are shown in Figure 43.

For example, the statistical free radical polymerizations of **32C** and **33C** with *N*-isopropyl acrylamide were successfully conducted in DMSO employing AIBN at 50°C (234,235). This yielded readily water-soluble copolymers with a thermosensitive component. Such copolymers are also interesting since they can exhibit antibacterial properties against *Escherichia coli* and *Staphylococcus aureus* (234,236,237). Novel water-soluble sulfonium monomers such as **31C** can be polymerized and used as precursor polymers for the synthesis of light-emitting polymers such as poly(2,5-bis(trimethylsilyl)-1,4-phenylenevinylene) (238).

Polyzwitterions. Amphoteric water-soluble polymers are polymeric systems containing both anionic and cationic charges. Such polyzwitterions may be subdivided into two major families, the *polyampholytes* and the *polybetaines* (239). Each of these groups may be further subdivided into specific types of each (see below). Figure 44 shows a number of monomers which have been used in pairs (cationic with anionic) to form polyampholytes.

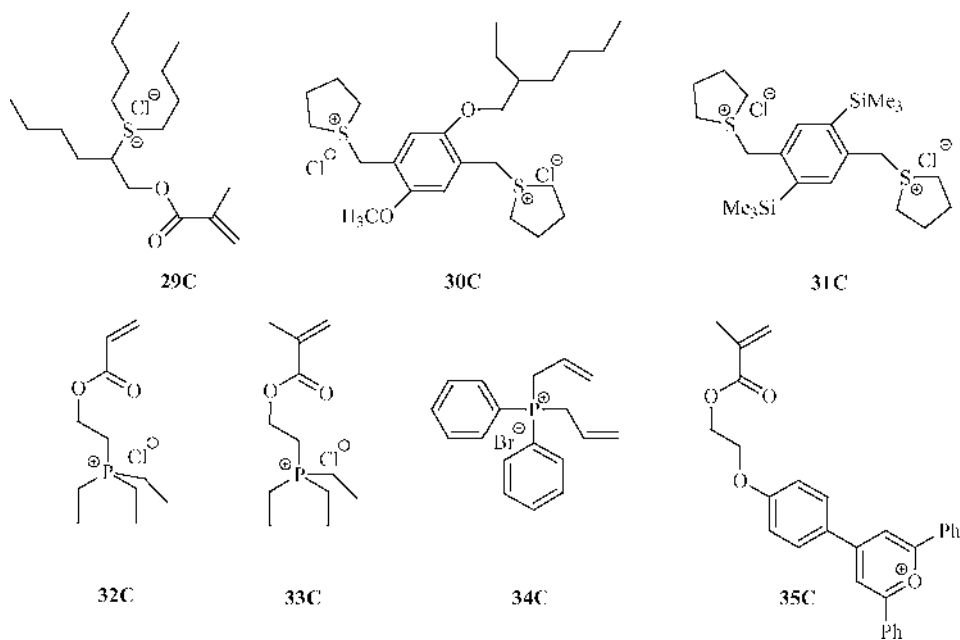


Fig. 43. Specialty cationic monomers.

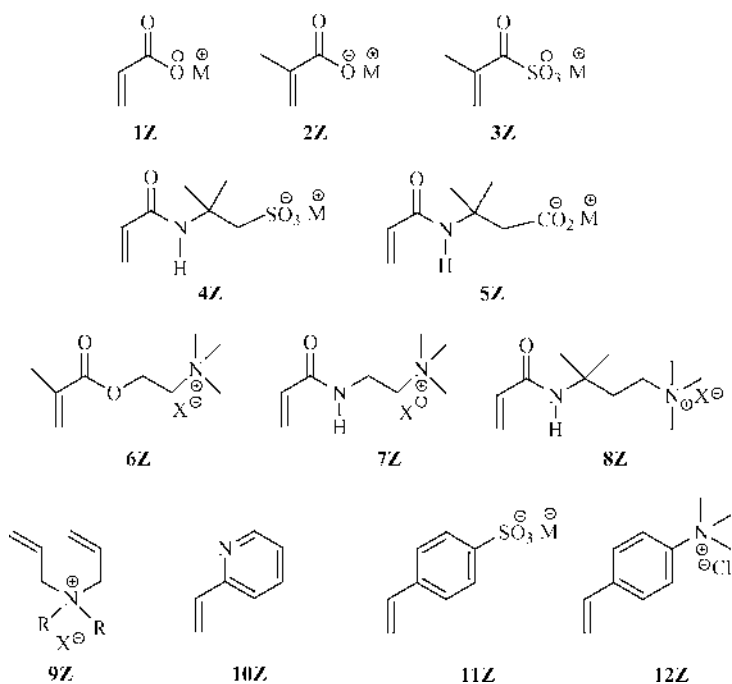


Fig. 44. Monomer pairs utilized in preparing polyzwitterions.

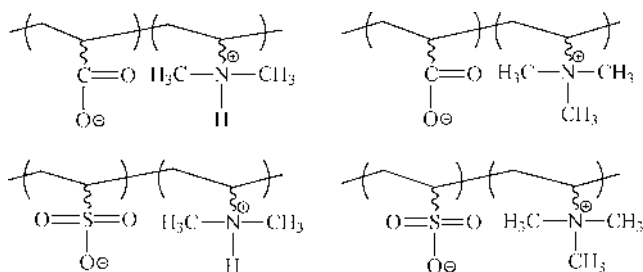


Fig. 45. Polyampholyte structures.

Polyampholytes. Polyampholytes are those materials in which the anionic and cationic charges reside on *different* mer units. Due to this, polyampholytes may be either charge balanced or unbalanced depending on the molar ratio of the anionic/cationic monomers. Polyampholytes may also be subdivided into four inherently different types. There are those in which the anionic and cationic residues may be neutralized, those where the cationic residue may be neutralized but the anionic residue is insensitive to changes in pH, those in which the anionic charges may be neutralized but the cationic residues are insensitive to pH changes, and finally those in which both the anionic and cationic residues are insensitive to changes in the pH (see Fig. 45).

Synthesis. Polyampholytes are most readily prepared by the direct statistical copolymerization of anionic and cationic monomers typically in aqueous media, via conventional free radical polymerization. Examples of such materials were first reported in the 1950s (240–244). Using this approach a wide range of copolymers and terpolymers, often with a neutral hydrophilic monomer such as acrylamide, have been reported. For example, early reports of statistical polyampholytes include the methacrylic acid-*stat*-2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate copolymers (245), from **1Z** and **2Z** with **6Z** and the *N,N*-diethylallylamine-*stat*-acrylic acid copolymers from **1Z** and **6Z** (246). More recently, synthesis and properties of novel polyampholytic terpolymers have been described (247–250). For example, the aqueous solution properties of novel ampholytic terpolymers of acrylamide, sodium 3-acrylamido-3-methylbutanoate **5Z** and 3-(acrylamidopropyl)trimethylammonium chloride **8Z** have been studied in detail (187).

It was not until the 1970s that the first block polyampholytes were reported (251,252). Anionic polymerization was used to prepare precursor AB diblock copolymers of 2-vinylpyridine **10Z** with trimethylsilyl methacrylate (TMSMA). The TMSMA residues were subsequently hydrolyzed to poly(methacrylic acid) residues to yield the corresponding AB diblock polyampholytes. Anionic polymerization has also been employed to prepare other block polyampholytes (253–258). GTP has also been successfully employed for the preparation of block polyampholytes. As with anionic polymerization, protected acid monomers must be employed since methacrylic acid (MAA) cannot be polymerized directly by this technique. A variety of protected monomers have been reported to be suitable as a means of introducing MAA residues, with 2-tetrahydropyranyl methacrylate being the most effective (Fig. 46).

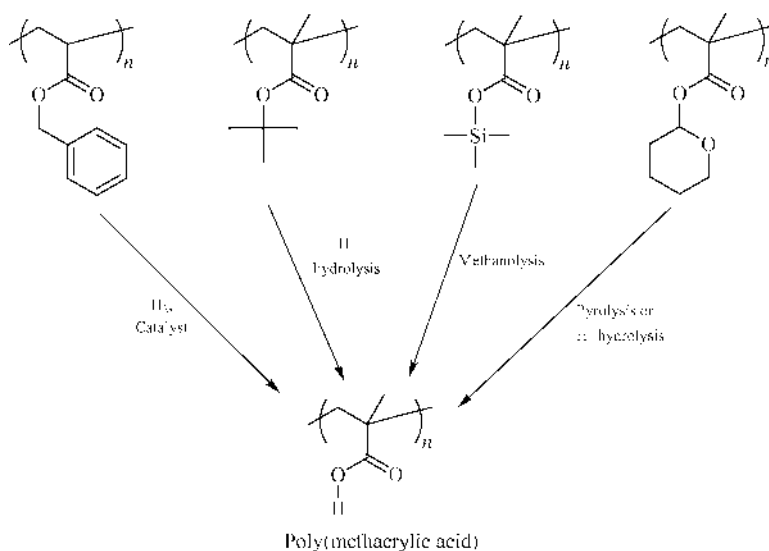


Fig. 46. Deprotection chemistry utilized to produce polymethacrylic acid or its salts.

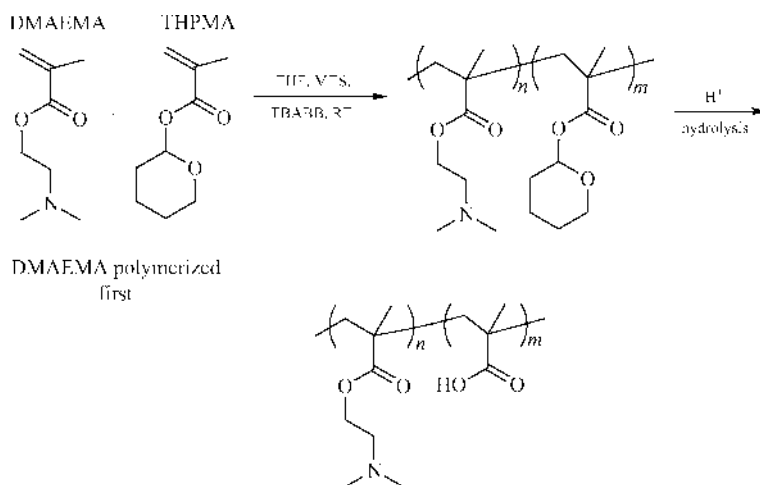


Fig. 47. GTP synthesis of AB diblock polyampholytes.

For example, AB diblock and ABC triblock polyampholytes comprised of basic DMAEMA **6Z** and acidic MAA residues, and hydrophobic methyl methacrylate residues in the case of the triblocks, have been reported (128,259–262).

While these living polymerization techniques do offer the ability to prepare block polyampholytes they are both synthetically demanding and somewhat limiting with respect to monomer choice for example. There are a handful of reports detailing the synthesis of block polyampholytes using controlled/living polymerization techniques discussed earlier (Fig. 47). For example, Gabaston and co-workers have described the TEMPO-mediated SFRP of block copolymers of sodium 4-styrenesulfonate **11Z** with 4-(dimethylamino)methyl styrene **12Z**

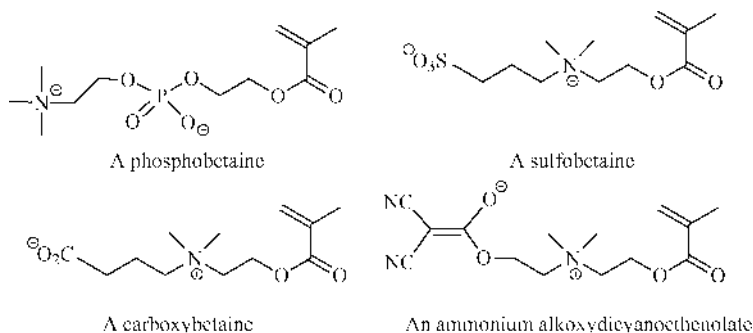


Fig. 48. General structures of selected methacrylic-based betaines.

(133), and several authors have reported the synthesis of block polyampholytes using ATRP although they still employed protecting group chemistry for the methacrylic acid residues (263–265).

Solution Properties. The aqueous solution behavior of polyampholytes is dictated by coulombic interactions between the basic and acidic residues. Polyampholytes have the ability to exhibit both polyelectrolyte and antipolyelectrolyte behavior in aqueous media. Which type of behavior is exhibited depends on factors such as solution pH, copolymer composition, the relative strengths of the acidic and basic residues, and the presence/absence of low molecular weight electrolyte (239). A feature of polyampholytes—in particular those comprised of weak acidic and basic residues—is the so-called *isoelectric point*, or IEP. This is simply defined as the solution pH at which the polyampholyte is electrically neutral. Statistical polyampholytes often remain soluble at and around the IEP whereas block polyampholytes tend to be soluble above and below but insoluble at this critical pH. The IEP may be determined either by titration or by measuring the reduced viscosity as a function of pH—the IEP also represents the point at which the polyampholyte chain is in its most compact conformation and thus corresponds to the minimum in reduced viscosity (239,266). With a knowledge of the respective pK_a 's and copolymer composition it is also possible to predict the IEP (267).

Polybetaines. *Polybetaines* are materials in which the anionic and cationic functional species are part of the *same* mer unit (Fig. 48). Because of this the number of anionic, or potentially anionic, residues is always exactly equal to the number of cationic residues. The cationic residue in polymeric betaines is typically a quaternary ammonium species. The anionic functionality can vary and leads to the classification of polymeric betaines as sulfobetaines (sulfonate functional group), carbo or carboxybetaines (carboxylate functional groups), phosphobetaines (phosphate functional group), and etheneolatebetaines (dicyanoethenolate functional group) (239).

Synthesis. Betaine monomers may be prepared in a number of different ways. For sulfobetaines, the most common, and easiest, method is to react a monomer containing a tertiary amine residue with either 1,3-propanesultone or 1,4-butanedisultone (268). This is an extremely facile reaction and proceeds readily at RT in common solvents such as THF or CH_3CN to yield the

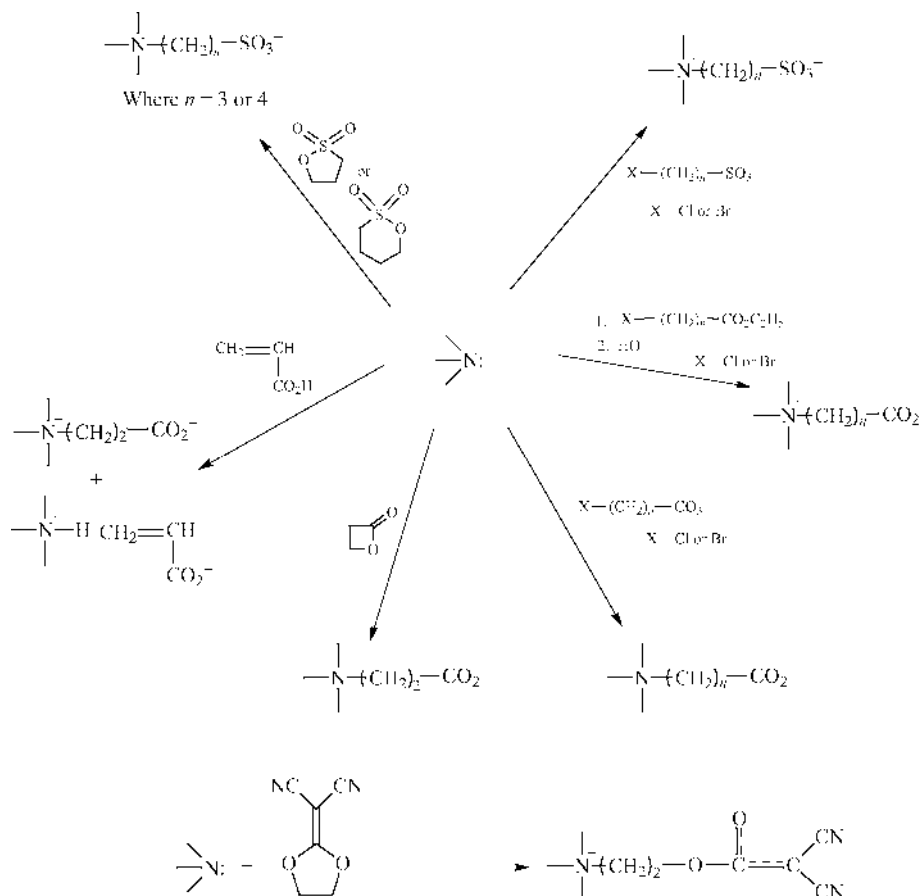


Fig. 49. General synthetic routes for sulfo/carboxybetaines.

corresponding sulfobetaine monomer. Alternatively, the tertiary amine functionality may be reacted with a haloalkylsulfonate species (269). Carboxybetaine monomers may be prepared via a number of different routes (Fig. 49). They may be obtained from the reaction of a suitable lactone (270) with a tertiary amine species, although this is somewhat limited to highly strained lactones to avoid competing nucleophilic attack at the carbonyl group. Alternatively they can be obtained from the Michael addition of a tertiary amine to acrylic acid (271), although again this route is prone to side reactions and simple salt formation. Perhaps the most versatile route for the preparation of carboxybetaines involves the reaction of a tertiary amine with a haloalkylcarboxylate to yield the carboxy betaine directly, or by reaction with the corresponding haloalkylester to yield the quaternized species followed by ester hydrolysis to yield the carboxybetaine (272,273).

Phosphobetaine monomers may also be prepared via a number of routes (239,274). Probably the most common phosphobetaine monomer is 2-(methacryloyloxy)ethyl phosphorylcholine (MPC), although other derivatives are also known (275–278). MPC is prepared from the reaction of 2-hydroxyethyl

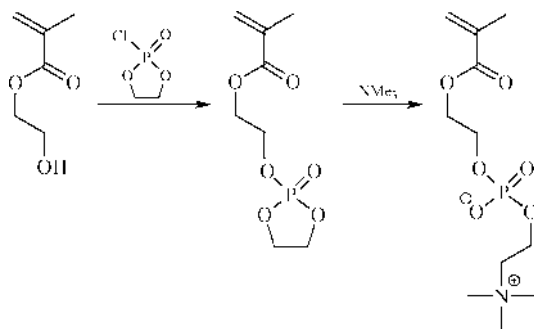


Fig. 50. Synthesis of MPC.

methacrylate with 2-chloro-2-oxo-1,3,2-dioxaphospholane, followed by ring opening of the intermediate phospholane with trimethylamine (Fig. 50). This is a general synthetic procedure which can be applied to any alcohol functional monomer. There are very few examples of the dicyanoetheneolate betaines. These particular species are prepared from the reaction of a tertiary amine monomer with 2,2-dicyanoethene-1,2-ethylene acetal (279–281).

Polymeric betaines are most readily prepared by the direct polymerization of the betaine monomers, typically in aqueous salt solution. Since their initial report in 1957, by Ladenheim and Morawetz (282), there have been a large number of polymeric betaines reported based on many different families of monomers (239). Polymeric betaines may also be prepared under condensation polymerization conditions thus yielding polymers in which the betaine functionality is attached directly to the (co)polymer backbone (283–285).

Controlled structure polymeric betaines were reported for the first time only recently (286). The first examples were those prepared from the post-polymerization modification of poly(2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate) (PDMAEMA), and its block copolymers, which had been prepared under GTP conditions (286,287). Initial reports detailed the modification of hydrophilic-hydrophobic block copolymers, but this was subsequently extended to the selective modification of diamino hydrophilic-hydrophilic block copolymers (276).

The *direct* polymerization of betaine monomers in a controlled fashion has been reported by ATRP (288–291), and, most recently, via RAFT (38,43,292,293). Methacrylic derivatives of carboxy-, sulfo-, and phosphobetaines have been prepared via ATRP, while RAFT is more versatile with respect to monomer choice, and examples of styrenic, methacrylic and acrylamido sulfobetaines have been disclosed.

Solution Properties. Zwitterionic polymers show interesting aqueous solution behavior. As a general rule, they are *insoluble* in pure water due to the formation on intra- and interchain ion contacts resulting in an ionically cross-linked network-type structure. Polyampholytes and polybetaines which are not soluble become soluble upon the addition of low molecular weight electrolytes, such as NaCl (Fig. 51). This dissolution process can best be understood in terms of the low molecular weight electrolyte penetrating the ionically cross-linked network whereupon the ions screen the net attractive interactions between the polymer

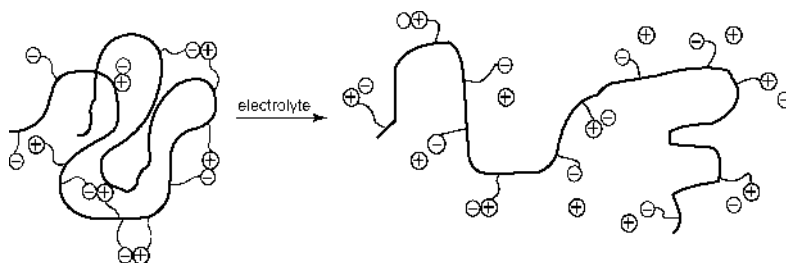


Fig. 51. Schematic illustration of polyampholyte response to added electrolyte.

chains and hence promote solubility. The addition of the salt also results in antipolyelectrolyte behavior, ie chain expansion upon the addition of the salt.

Applications of Polyzwitterions. Polyzwitterions have wide-ranging applications. For example, statistical polyampholytes comprised of 2-vinylpyridine **10Z** and acrylic acid **1Z** have been evaluated as desalination membranes, while others have been used in sewage treatment, flocculation, coagulation, drilling fluids, enhanced oil recovery, and drag reduction.

Polymeric betaines have applications in areas similar to those of the polyampholytes described above. Additionally, phosphobetaines in particular have found application in the biomedical field. (Co)polymers comprised of MPC and various alkyl methacrylates (294,295) for example have been shown to exhibit both good bio and hemocompatibility and have found application as coatings for medical devices such as catheters or arterial stents as well as materials for contact lens application. The success of MPC-based materials, and other phosphobetaines, is attributed to their biomimetic characteristics, ie their structural and chemical similarity to naturally occurring phospholipids. Recently, sulfobetaine-based materials were also shown to exhibit similar properties indicating that these bio/hemocompatibility characteristics may not be unique to polymer phosphobetaines but perhaps to polybetaines in general (296).

Stimuli-Responsive Amphiphilic Polymers

Amphiphilic copolymers with appropriate balance of hydrophilic and hydrophobic sequences along or pendent to the micromolecular backbone can self-organize in water (297). In principle, intramolecular (closed) or intermolecular (open) associations can result. Intramolecular self assembly can, for example, lead to unimeric or multimeric micelles (Fig. 52a,b) with solution behavior resembling that of small molecule surfactants above their critical micelle concentration. Intermolecular assembly (Fig. 52c) often results in network or associative thickening behavior. Judicious choice of polymerization methods and conditions, monomer selection, post reactions, etc allows molecular construction of a wide variety of systems capable of self-assembly. Strategic placement of functional groups along the macromolecular backbone can also lead to reversible association in response to external stimuli including pH (298,299), ionic strength (300), light (301–303), temperature (304), and shear stress (297,305).

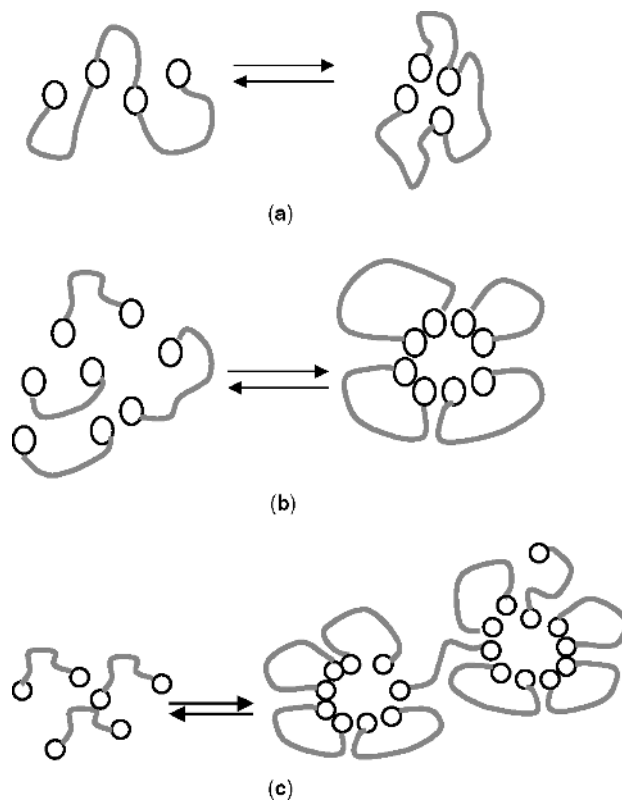


Fig. 52. Behavior of amphiphilic copolymers in response to stimuli.

The earliest synthetic polymeric micelles, often referred to as *polysoaps*, were prepared as biological protein mimics (306–308). Copolymers synthesized by partial *n*-dodecylation of poly(2-vinyl pyridine) or by hydrolysis of poly(maleic anhydride-*alt*-alkylvinyl ethers) possessed surfactant-like properties in water (309–312). The initial associative thickeners, on the other hand, were prepared by (1) substitution of water-soluble cellulose derivatives with long chain alkyl groups (153,313–317) (2) partial esterification of poly(styrene-*alt*-maleic anhydride) with nonionic surfactants (318–321), (3) step growth polymerization of hydrophobically modified diisocyanates with poly(oxyethylene glycols) (322), or (4) by statistical chain growth free radical polymerization of a variety of hydrophobic and hydrophilic monomers under heterogeneous reaction conditions including emulsion polymerization (323,324) and micellar polymerization (325–330).

Despite a number of successes in preparing polymers with aqueous solution behavior depicted in Figs. 21a and 21c, little understanding of the nature of associative polymer domains existed prior to 1990. As well, studies of block copolymer associations had been limited to phase behavior in selective organic solvents. Since then, rapid developments in characterization of reversible microdomains via static and dynamic fluorescence spectroscopy (331–351), NMR spectroscopy (345,352–359) light scattering (171,175,360–364), and rheological

techniques (365–370) have led to a better understanding of the structural parameters governing assembly/disassembly in water. Likewise, the development of facile controlled/living free radical polymerization techniques for preparing block copolymers with well-defined structures has led to better models for study.

It can be established that the extent of closed or open associations depends on the architectures of the macromolecular chains. Molecular parameters affecting such associative behavior include hydrophilic and hydrophobic block lengths, placement and molecular weight of the segments, polymer concentration, flexibility and spacer lengths side-chain functionality. Responsiveness to pH, electrolyte, and to temperature changes depends markedly on the nature of the functional groups (cations, anions, zwitterions), their proximity to hydrophilic or hydrophobic units, and the ionic strength of the surrounding aqueous media. Some theoretical models have been put forth that describe unimolecular micelle formation progressing to bridged micelles and eventually networks (371–373).

Statistical Amphiphilic Polymers

Statistical amphiphilic polymers with ionic charges along the macromolecular backbone represent most of the stimuli-responsive systems reported in the literature. In principle, hydrophilic monomers from Figures 27, 33, 38, 43, or 44 can be copolymerized with hydrophobic comonomers or macromonomers under conditions allowing sufficient incorporation of the latter. The most successful methods have been “micellar” polymerization (324,325,347,348) in which high concentrations of surfactants are added to solubilize the hydrophobic monomer in the aqueous phase or emulsion polymerization utilizing macromonomers having amphiphilic character (323,324). Table 1 gives examples of associative polymers and the type of responsiveness reported in the literature. A comprehensive review (305) presents details of the synthetic routes to and behavioral characteristics of associative polyelectrolytes as determined by a wide variety of analytical techniques.

Well-Defined Amphiphilic Copolymers. Well-defined, controlled structure amphiphilic copolymers may be prepared using a range of polymerization techniques that includes anionic, cationic, and controlled free radical approaches. The materials may be “simple” AB diblock copolymers or more structurally complex species such as ABA or ABC triblock copolymers for example.

Hydrophilic-Hydrophobic Block Copolymers. These materials represent the “simplest” type of amphiphilic block copolymer. Materials are comprised of one block which is inherently hydrophobic, such as polystyrene or poly(methyl methacrylate), and a second block which is hydrophilic such as poly(methacrylic acid). For example, anionic polymerization may be employed for the synthesis of AB diblock copolymers comprised of styrene with 2- (438) or 4-vinylpyridine (439). In the case of the styrene-2-vinylpyridine copolymers, self-assembly, under appropriate aqueous conditions, leads to the formation of block copolymer micelles with styrene forming the hydrophobic core and the 2-vinylpyridine forming the stabilizing corona. These block copolymer micelles are highly stable in 0.1 M HCl. Similarly, styrene–acrylic acid block copolymers may likewise be prepared via anionic polymerization using *tert*-butyl acrylate as a protected precursor for the

Table 1. Copolymer Compositions^a Responsiveness, and References for Stimuli-Responsive Polyelectrolytes

Polymer Composition	Response	Ref.
K-S	pH, salt	(312,374–380)
K-T	pH, salt, shear	(336,374,381–383)
E-H-Fl	pH, salt, shear	(374,384)
I-P	salt, shear	(374,385–388)
G-B-R	salt, shear	(374,389,390)
E-Q-B	pH, salt, shear	(374,391,392)
E-B-Fl	pH, salt, shear	(374,393)
B-R-D	pH, salt, shear	(365,366,374)
E-Q	shear	(327,328,374,393–404)
E-R	shear	(327,328,374,393–404)
E-S	shear	(327,328,374,393–404)
E-U	shear	(374,405,406)
E-B-U	pH, salt, shear	(374)
B-Q	pH, salt, shear	(305,407)
B-Fl	pH	(305,408,410)
A-S	pH, salt, shear	(305,411)
B-Fl	pH, salt, shear	(305,412)
B-Q	pH, salt, shear	(305,345,413)
A-R	pH, salt, shear	(305,363,364)
B-E-Q	pH, salt, shear	(305,404,414,415)
B-Fl	pH, salt, shear	(305,349,409)
C-F-Q	pH, salt, shear	(305,416)
Y	pH, salt, shear	(305,417)
Z	pH, salt, shear	(305,418)
Z-T	pH, salt, shear	(305,382)
Z-T-Fl	pH, salt, shear	(305,336,381)
I-P-Fl	pH, salt, shear	(305,385,419–422)
I-R	pH, salt, shear	(305,423–426)
I-R-P	pH, salt, shear	(305,427)
E-A-R	pH, salt, shear	(305,428)
E-I-R	pH, salt, shear	(305,429,430)
O-V	pH, salt, shear	(305,431–436)
U-M	pH, salt, shear	(276,305)
U-N	pH, salt, shear	(305,437)

^aLetters refer to repeating units in Figure 53.

acrylic acid residues. Such block copolymers exhibit similar self-assembly behavior in aqueous media (440,441). Other examples of such hydrophilic-hydrophobic block copolymers capable of supramolecular self-assembly include the poly(2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate-*block*-methyl methacrylate) (442). and the poly(3-(*N*-2-methacroyloyethyl)-*N,N*-dimethylammonio)propanesulfonate-*block*-methyl methacrylate) copolymers (287,443). In both instances the block copolymers were prepared via group transfer polymerization. Cationic polymerization also offers a route to amphiphilic vinyl ether-based AB diblock copolymers. For example, the synthesis and micellization properties of isobutyl vinyl ether-*block*-methyl tri(ethyleneglycol) vinyl ether copolymers have been reported (444).

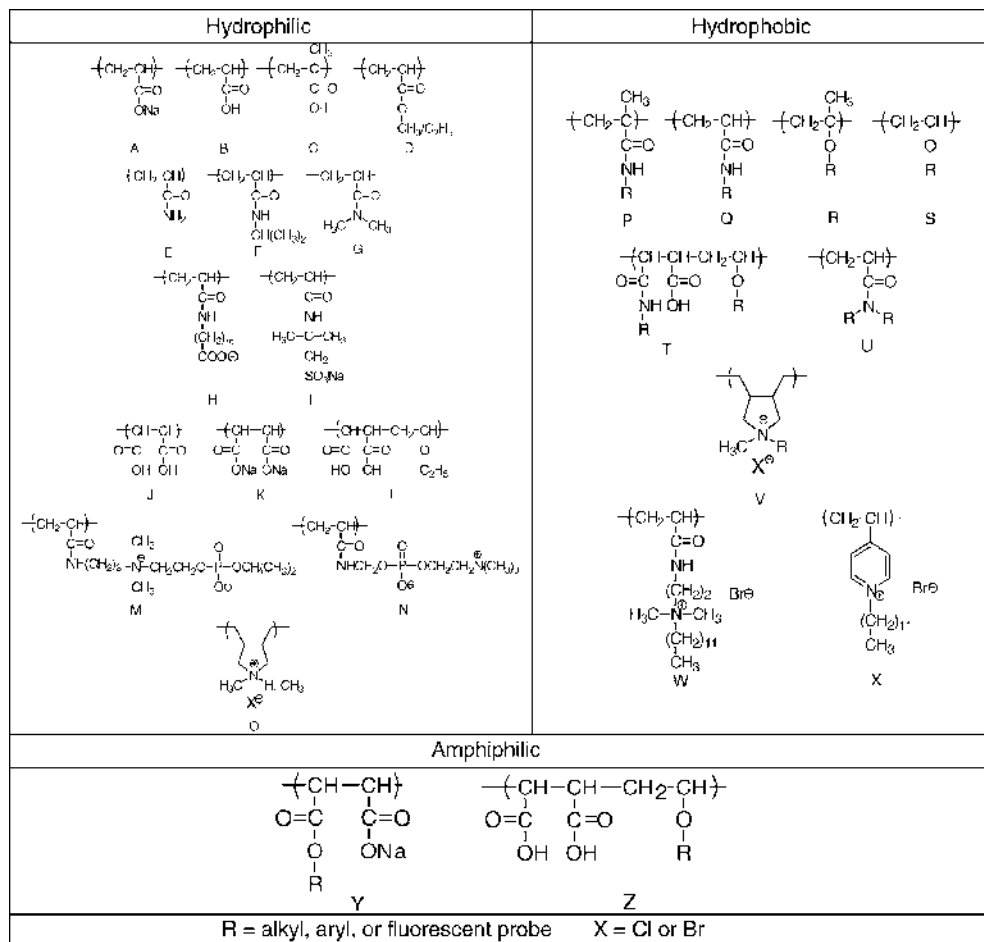


Fig. 53. Polymer segments utilized in statistical polymers with stimuli-responsive associative behavior in water. For polymers incorporating a fluorescent probe the letters Fl are used in Table 1.

Also the self-association of AB diblocks comprised of methyl tri(ethyleneglycol) vinyl ether (hydrophilic block) and benzyl vinyl ether (hydrophobic block) have been investigated (445). In water, micelles with hydrodynamic diameters in the range 10–26 nm were observed depending on the molar composition of the block copolymer.

Hydrophilic/Tunably Hydrophilic/Hydrophobic Block Copolymers. The next level of complexity for amphiphilic block copolymers are those comprised of one block which is permanently hydrophilic with the second block being tunably hydrophilic/hydrophobic, ie under a set of conditions A, the second block is readily water soluble and thus the block copolymer exists as unimers, but upon the application of a certain stimulus (change in pH or temperature for example) to condition B the second block becomes hydrophobic. Provided appropriate block copolymer compositions are employed this will lead to self-assembly. Additionally,

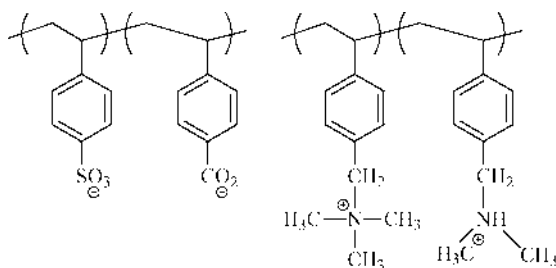


Fig. 54. Responsive AB block copolymers from ionic styrenic monomers.

such behavior is typically completely reversible. While there are now numerous examples of such “smart” self-assembly these types of systems have not been as thoroughly investigated as the inherently hydrophilic/hydrophobic species, with perhaps one notable exception being the PEO/PPO and PEO/PPO/PEO, PPO/PEO/PPO block copolymers.

Group transfer polymerization has proven to be an extremely useful technique for the synthesis of such AB diblock copolymers. For example, the synthesis of AB diblock copolymers in which the A block was 2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate (**1C** in Fig. 38) and the B block was either **2C** or **3C** in Figure 33 have been reported. **1C** is temperature responsive whereas **2C** and **3C** are both pH responsive. At low pH when both the tertiary amine blocks (**1C** + **2C** or **1C** + **3C**) are protonated the block copolymers are molecularly dissolved. Raising the solution pH above the pK_a of tertiary amine residues for **2C** and **3C** renders these blocks hydrophobic and as such the block copolymers self-assemble to form micelles with the hydrophobic **2C** (or **3C**) residues in the core, stabilized by coronal chains of **1**. Supramolecular self-assembly is completely reversible—lowering of the pH back below the respective pK_a 's results in molecular redissolution (183).

More recently controlled free radical polymerization methodologies have been employed for the preparation of novel “smart” AB diblock copolymers. Nitroxide-mediated polymerization was utilized for the synthesis of sodium 4-styrenesulfonate-block-sodium 4-vinylbenzoate block copolymer (133). These strong acid/weak acid species exhibit reversible pH-induced self-assembly, with the sodium 4-styrenesulfonate residues remaining ionized and thus permanently hydrophilic over the useful pH range whereas the sodium 4-vinylbenzoate block can be reversibly protonated (the carboxylate residue has a $pK_a \sim 4.0$). The same block polymers can also be prepared via RAFT, albeit with somewhat more control. Other workers reported the preparation of such AB diblock copolymers as well as some analogous amine-based styrenic diblock copolymers, (48) shown in Figure 54.

Similarly, such AB diblocks may be prepared based on the acrylamido family of monomers. For example, the synthesis of novel AB diblock copolymers comprised of the two anionic monomers sodium 2-acrylamido-2-methylpropanesulfonate (AMPS) and sodium 3-acrylamido-3-methylbutanoate (AMBA) have been reported (42,44). By analogy with the styrenic block copolymers, these AMPS-AMBA species also exhibit reversible pH-induced self-assembly by virtue of the fact that the AMBA residues may be reversible

protonated, switching the residues from a hydrophilic (high pH) to a hydrophobic (low pH) state. Similar AB diblocks of AMPS with sodium 6-acrylamidohexanoate which also exhibit pH-induced micellization have been reported by Yusa and co-workers (45) RAFT has additionally proven very useful for the preparation of AB diblock copolymers comprised of blocks from different monomer families. For example, AB diblocks of *N,N*-dimethylacrylamide (DMA) with *N,N*-dimethylbenzyl vinyl amine (DMBVA) were recently disclosed. These particular blocks are also capable of undergoing reversible pH-induced micellization (222). The DMA residues are nonionic, permanently hydrophilic whereas the styrenic-based DMBVA block is water soluble in its protonated form, but hydrophobic in its nonionized state. As such, simply raising the pH of an acidic solution of the block copolymer results in self-assembly and the formation of aggregates with the hydrophobic DMBVA blocks residing in the core which is stabilized by the DMA block. RAFT has also been utilized for the preparation of AB diblocks in which one of the blocks is a salt-responsive specie (293). For example, AB diblocks of *N,N*-dimethylacrylamide with 3-[2-(*N*-methylacrylamido)-ethyl]dimethylammonio]propanesulfonate (MAEDAPS).

Doubly "Smart" Block Copolymers. Doubly "smart" or responsive copolymers are those in which *both* the blocks of the copolymer are tunably hydrophilic/hydrophobic. As such this potentially facilitates the preparation of both normal and inverse micelles in the *same* solvent (NB: normal and inverse micelles are well known but switching between the two often requires a change of solvent). Some authors have termed such materials "*schizophrenic*" *block copolymers*. At present these represent the least studied of the amphiphilic block copolymers. Examples of such materials include the poly(2-(*N*-morpholino)ethyl methacrylate-*block*-2-(diethylamino)ethyl methacrylate) (177, 446) and the poly(propylene oxide-*block*-2-(diethylamino)ethyl methacrylate) copolymers (447). A number of these types of block copolymers have been studied (263,264,448,449). As a representative example, a precursor poly(2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate-*block*-2-(*N*-morpholino)ethyl methacrylate) (DMAEMA-MEMA) copolymer was reacted with 1,3-propanesultone to yield the corresponding sulfopropylbetaine-MEMA block copolymer (Fig. 55) (448). At temperatures between 30 and 40°C a block copolymer comprised of an equimolar ratio of the two comonomers exists as molecularly dissolved unimeric chains. Upon raising the temperature above the cloud point of the MEMA block, the copolymer self-assembles forming polymeric micelles with the now-hydrophobic MEMA residues residing in the core with the sulfobetaine blocks in the corona.

Sulfobetaine-core micelles were obtained by lowering the solution temperature below 20°C at which point increased attractive electrostatic interactions result in phase separation of the sulfobetaine block and thus micelle formation. A similar doubly temperature responsive block copolymer, prepared via RAFT, was reported which was based on acrylamido monomers (292).

Shell and Core Cross-Linked Nanoassemblies. Shell or core cross-linked nanoassemblies represent a group of materials which can, in principle, be derived from any of the amphiphilic species described in the earlier sections. Clearly the self-assembled structures described above are dynamic species. However, one can envisage the need for "locked" structures for certain applications. One method to achieve this is via cross-linking of either the coronal or core chains. To facilitate

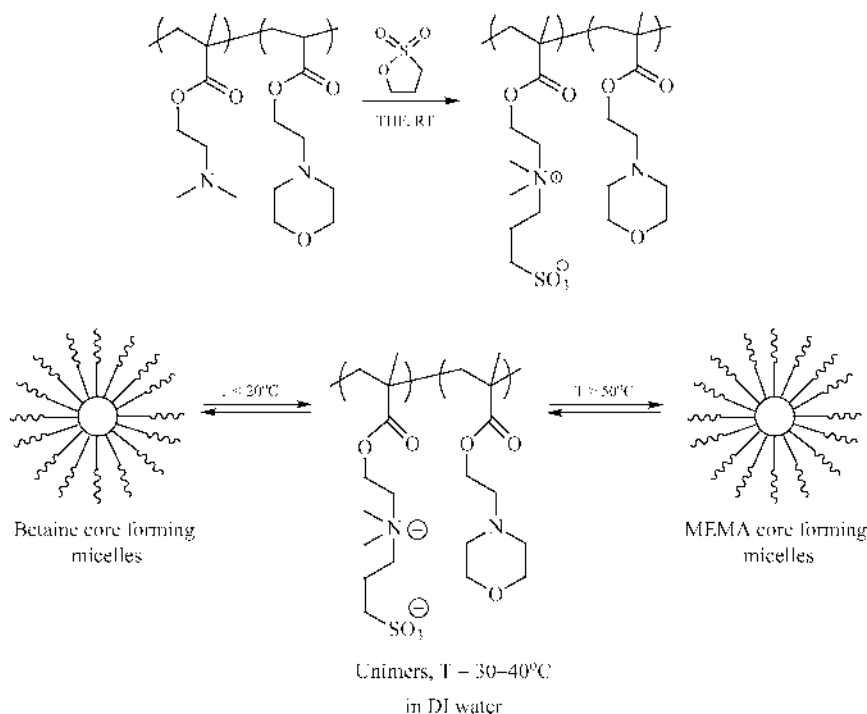


Fig. 55. An example of a “schizophrenic,” methacrylic-based AB diblock copolymer and conditions leading to self-assembly.

either approach there must be a suitable reactive species in the core or corona susceptible to chemical modification after self-assembly.

Shell cross-linked micelles, also referred to as *knedel* or *SCK micelles*, were first reported in 1997 (450,451). For example, an amphiphilic AB diblock copolymer comprised of hydrophobic polystyrene with hydrophilic partially quaternized poly(4-vinylpyridine) was prepared by the sequential living anionic polymerization of styrene and 4-vinyl pyridine followed by quaternization of some of the 4-vinylpyridine residues with 4-vinylbenzyl chloride. Micelles are prepared by dissolving the quaternized block copolymer in a mixture of water and THF. Finally, shell cross-linking is accomplished by polymerizing the styrenic residues in the shell (present as a result of the quaternization reaction) in the presence of a free radical initiator (452). Examples in which the micelle coronal shell consists of hydrophilic acrylic acid residues, with a variety of hydrophobic cores, may be conveniently shell cross-linked using 2,2'-(ethylenedioxy)bis(ethylamine). Thus, cross-linking is achieved via an amidation reaction using a bifunctional primary amine (453–457). Other examples of these novel nanomaterials include those with polysilane cores and partially cross-linked poly(methacrylic acid) coronas (458,459), and micelles in which the reactive, cross-linkable functionality is either methacrylic acid or DMAEMA residues, with the actual cross-linking being achieved with bis-(2-iodoethoxy)ethane (460–462). The effectiveness of bis-(2-iodoethoxy)ethane as a cross-linking agent is illustrated in Figure 56.

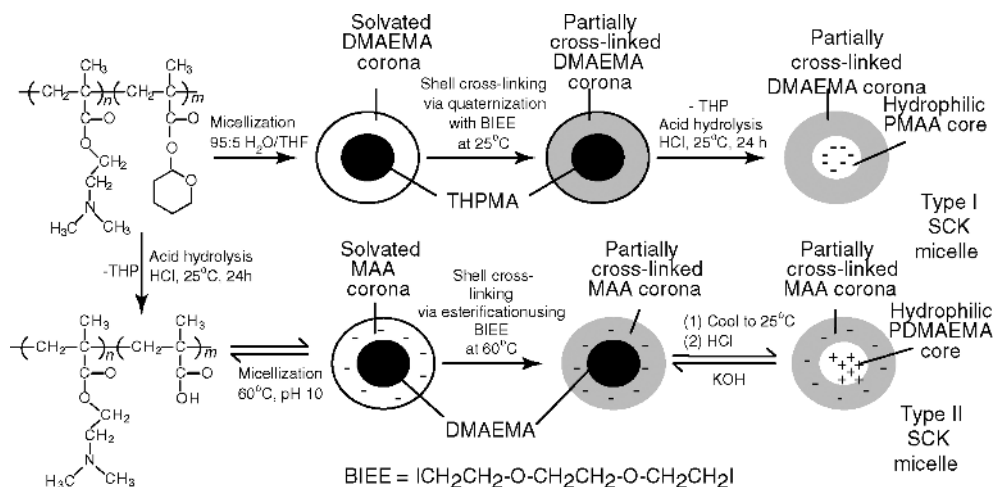


Fig. 56. An example of bis-(2-iodoethoxy)ethane as a cross-linking agent.

Here so-called Type I and Type II zwitterionic SCK micelles can be prepared from the hydrophilic-hydrophobic precursors poly(2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate-*block*-2-tetrahydropyranyl methacrylate) (DMAEMA-THPMA) copolymers prepared via group transfer polymerization (128,129,461). Micellization of the DMAEMA-THPMA block copolymers in a water/THF mixture (95:5) results in the formation of core-shell structures in which the hydrophobic THPMA species forms the core and the hydrophilic DMAEMA species the corona. The reactive tertiary amine residues in the coronal may be cross-linked using bis-(2-iodoethoxy)ethane in a *quaternization* reaction (Menshutkin Reaction). Subsequent hydrolysis of the micelles cores leads to the formation of the Type I SCK species. Alternatively, the DMAEMA-THPMA precursor block copolymers may be initially deprotected to form the block polyampholytes. Heating an aqueous solution of this block polyampholyte above the cloud point of the DMAEMA residues results in the formation of inverse micelles in which the now-hydrophobic DMAEMA residues form the micelle core and ionized poly(methacrylic acid) chains form the corona. These carboxylate coronal chains may also be cross-linked using bis-(2-iodoethoxy)ethane, in this instance via an esterification reaction.

A potential drawback of shell cross-linking is the need to perform such chemistries under relatively dilute conditions to avoid the occurrence of inter-particle cross-linking. However it was recently demonstrated that SCK micelles could be successfully prepared at high solids with ABC triblock copolymers in which the *C* block forms the *micelle* core, the *A* block the outer coronal chains and the cross-linkable *B* block the inner coronal chains. Here, the outer *A* block is effectively acting as a steric barrier to inter-particle cross-linking (463,464).

Most recently the core cross-linking approach was adopted for the preparation of novel nanoassemblies derived from pH-responsive AB diblock copolymers prepared via RAFT (222). Here the *A* block was the permanently hydrophilic DMA species with the tunably hydrophilic/hydrophobic DMBVA forming the *B*

block. In aqueous media, at high pH, these block copolymers form core-shell structures with the DMA residues forming the corona and the DMVBA chains in the core. Addition of a hydrophobic, difunctional, alkyl halide namely 1,4-bisbromomethylbenzene results in this species being sequestered into the hydrophobic core of the micelles where it reacts with the tertiary amine residues via the Menshutkin reaction to yield the core-cross-linked species. Successful core cross-linking was verified via NMR spectroscopy, dynamic light scattering and transmission electron microscopy.

Concluding Remarks

Water-soluble polymers are an extremely important class of materials that permeate every facet of our lives. This class of materials encompasses a wide range of interesting species ranging from naturally occurring proteins, peptides, RNA, DNA, and sugars (carbohydrates) to complex synthetic nanoassemblies such as the well-defined core-cross-linked AB diblock polymeric micelles.

Clearly there have been significant advances in the field of water-soluble polymers since the previous edition of this encyclopedia. Arguably the most important development in recent years has been the discovery and application of more facile controlled/living polymerization techniques for the synthesis of highly functional, well-defined, model materials. Of these, the controlled/living free radical polymerization techniques, and especially reversible addition-fragmentation chain transfer (RAFT) are proving to be especially versatile.

It is likely that such developments will continue to revolutionize water-soluble polymer synthesis in the years to come with chemists taking up the challenge to prepare ever more complex structures capable of supramolecular self-assembly for a wide variety of specialized applications.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Water-Soluble Polymers” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 730–784, by C. L. McCormick, University of Southern Mississippi; J. Bock and D. N. Schulz, Exxon Research; in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 12, pp. 452–521, by C. L. McCormick, N. Ayres, and A. B. Lowe, University of Southern Mississippi.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. <http://www.mathemagic.com/MOBM/fractals.html>.
2. P. J. Flory, *Principles of Polymer Chemistry*, Cornell University Press, Ithaca, N.Y., 1953.
3. J.-L. Barrat and J.-F. Joanny, *Adv. Chem. Phys.* **94**, 1–66 (1996).
4. A. V. Dobrynin, R. Colby, and M. Rubinstein, *Macromolecules* **28**, 1859–1871 (1995).
5. F. Franks, ed., *Water: A Comprehensive Treatise*, Vol. 4, Plenum Press, New York, 1975.
6. P. Molyneaux, *Water-Soluble Synthetic Polymers*, Vols. 1 and 2, CRC Press, Inc., Boca Raton, Fla., 1984.
7. C. Tanford, *The Hydrophobic Effect: Formation of Micelles and Biological Membranes*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1973.
8. W. Saenger, *Annu. Rev. Biophys. Chem.* **16**, 93 (1987).

9. J. T. Edsal and H. A. McKenzie, *Adv. Biophys.* **16**, 53 (1978).
10. J. L. Finney, *J. Mol. Biol.* **119**, 415 (1978).
11. R. M. Fuoss, *J. Polym. Sci.* **3**, 603 (1948).
12. O. W. Webster, W. R. Hertler, D. Y. Cogah, W. B. Farnham, and T. V. TajanBabu, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **105**, 5706 (1983).
13. U.S. Pat. 4,417,034 (1984), O. W. Webster (to E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc.).
14. Y. Nagasaki, Y. Sato, and M. Kato, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **18**, 827 (1997).
15. M. Vamvakaki, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **32**, 2088 (1999).
16. G. Moad, D. H. Soloman, S. R. Johns, and R. I. Willing, *Macromolecules* **15**, 1188 (1982).
17. M. K. Georges, P. M. Veregin, P. M. Kazmeier, and G. K. Hamer, *Macromolecules* **26**, 2987 (1993).
18. M. Kato, M. Kamigaito, M. Sawamoto, and T. Higashimura, *Macromolecules* **28**, 1721 (1995).
19. M. Kato, M. Kamigaito, M. Sawamoto, and T. Higashimura, *Polym. Prep. Jpn.* **43**, 1792 (1994).
20. T. Ando, M. Kato, M. Kamigaito, and M. Sawamoto, *Macromolecules* **29**, 1070 (1996).
21. J.-S. Wang and K. Matyjaszewski, *Macromolecules* **28**, 7572 (1995).
22. J.-S. Wang and K. Matyjaszewski, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **117**, 5614 (1995).
23. T. E. Patten, J. Xia, T. Abernathy, and K. Matyjaszewski, *Science* **272**, 7970 (1996).
24. J. Chiefari, Y. K. Chong, F. Ercole, J. Krstina, J. Jeffrey, T. P. T. Le, R. T. A. Mayadunne, G. F. Meijs, C. L. Moad, G. Moad, E. Rizzardo, and S. H. Thang, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5559 (1998).
25. M. Desarac, D. Charmot, X. Franck, and S. A. Zard, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **21**, 1035 (2000).
26. R. T. A. Mayadunne, E. Rizzardo, J. Chiefari, Y. K. Chong, G. Moad, and S. H. Thang, *Macromolecules* **32**, 6977 (1999).
27. D. Charmot, P. Corpart, H. Adam, S. Z. Zard, T. Biadatti, and G. Bouhadir, *Macromol. Symp.* **150**, 23 (2000).
28. S. Yamago, K. Iida, and J.-I. Yoshida, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **124**, 2874 (2002).
29. S. Yamago, K. Iida, and J.-I. Yoshida, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **124**, 13666 (2002).
30. A. Goto, Y. Kwak, T. Fukuda, S. Yamago, K. Iida, M. Nakajima, and J. I. Yoshida, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **125**, 8720 (2003).
31. S. Yamago, K. Iida, M. Nakajima, and J.-I. Yoshida, *Macromolecules* **36**, 3793 (2003).
32. D. M. Haddleton, E. Depaquis, E. J. Kelly, D. Kukulj, S. R. Morsley, S. A. F. Bon, M. D. Eason, and A. G. Steward, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **39**, 2378–2384 (2001).
33. A. A. Gridnev and S. D. Ittle, *Chem. Rev.* **101**, 3611 (2001).
34. T. M. Trinkka and R. H. Grubbs, *Acc. Chem. Res.* **34**, 18 (2001).
35. D. M. Lynn, B. Mohr, and R. H. Grubbs, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **120**, 1627 (1998).
36. D.-J. Liaw, C.-C. Huang, and P.-L. Wu, *Polymer* **42**, 9371 (2001).
37. E. Khosravi and Szymanska-T. Buzar, eds., *Ring Opening Metathesis Polymerization and Related Chemistry*, Kluwer Academic Publishers, Boston, Mass., 2002.
38. A. B. Lowe and C. L. McCormick, *Aust. J. Chem.* **55**, 367 (2002).
39. C. L. McCormick and A. B. Lowe, *Acc. Chem. Res.* **37**, 312 (2004).
40. K. Matyjaszewski, ed., *Controlled/Living Radical Polymerization*, Vol. 768, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2000.
41. K. Matyjaszewski, ed., *Advances in Controlled/Living Radical Polymerization*, Vol. 854., American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2003.
42. B. S. Sumerlin, M. S. Donovan, Y. Mitsukami, A. B. Lowe, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **34**, 6561 (2001).
43. M. S. Donovan, B. S. Sumerlin, A. B. Lowe, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **35**, 8663 (2002).

44. B. S. Sumerlin, A. B. Lowe, D. B. Thomas, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **36**, 5982 (2003).
45. S.-I. Yusa, Y. Shimada, Y. Mitsukami, T. Yamamoto, and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **36**, 4208 (2003).
46. A. B. Lowe, B. S. Sumerlin, and C. L. McCormick, *Polymer* **44**, 6761 (2003).
47. D. B. Thomas, A. J. Convertine, R. D. Hester, A. B. Lowe, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **37**, 1735 (2004).
48. Y. Mitsukami, M. S. Donovan, A. B. Lowe, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **34**, 2248 (2001).
49. D. B. Thomas, A. J. Convertine, L. J. Myrick, C. W. Scales, A. B. Lowe, N. Ayres, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **37**, 8941 (2004).
50. D. B. Thomas, B. S. Sumerlin, A. B. Lowe, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **36**, 1436 (2003).
51. J. D. Watson and F. H. C. Crick, *Nature* **171**, 737 (1953).
52. E. Chargaff, *Experientia* **6**, 201 (1950).
53. M. H. F. Wilkins, A. R. Stokes, and H. R. Wilson, *Nature* **171**, 738 (1953).
54. D. L. Nelson and M. M. Cox, *Principles of Biochemistry*, 3rd ed., Worth Publishers, Inc., New York, 2000, p. 913.
55. D. Cooper, ed., *Nature Encyclopedia of the Human Genome*, Nature Publishing Group, London, 2003.
56. K. Itakura, J. J. Rossi, and R. B. Wallace, *Annu. Rev. Biochem.* **53**, 323 (1984).
57. D. Freifelder, *The DNA Molecule--Structure and Properties*, W. H. Freeman & Co., San Francisco, 1978.
58. V. Schranke and R. Allshire, *Science* **301**, 1069 (2003).
59. A. Kornberg, *DNA Replication*, W. H. Freeman & Co., San Francisco, 1980.
60. M. J. Chamberlin, *RNA Polymerases: An Overview*, Cold Spring Harbor Laboratory, Cold Spring Harbor, N.Y., 1976.
61. N. Arnheim and H. Erlich, *Annu. Rev. Biochem.* **61**, 131 (1992).
62. M. E. Scott, *Am. Biotech. Lab.* **3**, 131 (1985).
63. D. M. Nelson, A. L. Lehninger, and M. M. Cox, *Principles of Biochemistry*, 3rd ed., Worth Publishers, Inc., New York, 2000.
64. A. L. Lehninger, *Principles of Biochemistry*, Worth Publishers, Inc., New York, 1982.
65. A. Fersht, *Protein Science: A Guide to Enzyme Catalysis and Protein Folding*, W. H. Freeman & Co., New York, 1999.
66. R. B. Merrifield, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **85**, 2149 (1963).
67. R. B. Merrifield, *Adv. Enzymol.* **32**, 221 (1969).
68. E. Gross and Meienhofer, eds., *The Peptides, Analysis, Synthesis, and Biology*, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1979, pp. 43–48.
69. F. S. Collins, E. D. Green, A. E. Guthmacher, and M. S. Guyer, *Nature* **422**, 835 (2003).
70. R. S. Morrison, Y. Kinoshita, M. D. Honson, and T. P. Conrad, *Protein Chem.* **65**, 1 (2003).
71. A. G. Walton and J. Blackwell, *Biopolymers*, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1973, pp. 12–13.
72. D. A. Brant and G. S. Buliga, in R. R. Colwell, ed., *Biotechnology of Marine Polysaccharides*, Hemisphere Publishers, Washington, D.C., 1985, pp. 30–73.
73. R. L. Whistler and E. F. Paschall, *Starch: Chemistry and Technology*, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1965.
74. R. L. Whistler, *Industrial Gums*, 2nd ed. Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1973.
75. P. A. Sanford and A. Laskin, eds., *Extracellular Microbial Polysaccharides*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1977.

76. R. L. Davidson, *Handbook of Water-Soluble Gums and Resins*, McGraw-Hill, Inc., New York, 1980.
77. P. M. Collins, ed., *Carbohydrates*, Chapman and Hall, London, 1987 p. 313.
78. R. F. Gould, ed., *Carbohydrate Sulfates*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1978.
79. B. V. McCleary, A. H. Clark, I. C. Dea, and D. A. Rees, *Carbohydr. Res.* **139**, 237 (1985).
80. C. L. McCormick, in D. A. Brant and G. S. Buliga, eds., *Biotechnology of Marine Polysaccharides*, Hemisphere Publishers, Washington, D.C., 1985, pp. 232–245.
81. T. Bishop and H. J. Jennings, *The Polysaccharides*, Vol. I, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1982, p. 291.
82. R. Moorhous, M. D. Walkinshaw, S. Arnott, ACS Symposium Series 45, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1977, pp. 90–98.
83. P. A. Sanford, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **56**, 879 (1984).
84. W. Pigman and D. Horton, eds., *The Carbohydrates*, Vols. IIA and IIB, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1970.
85. E. Casu, in R. S. Tipson and D. Horton, eds., *Advances in Carbohydrate Chemistry and Biochemistry*, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1985, p. 51.
86. T. P. Nevell and S. H. Zeronian, *Cellulose Chemistry and Its Applications*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1985.
87. R. Y. Lochhead, in R. Y. Lochhead, ed., *Encyclopedia of Polymers and Thickeners for Cosmetics*, Vol. 108, Allured Publishing Corp., 1993, pp. 95–135.
88. C. L. McCormick and P. A. Callais, *Polymer* **28**, 2317 (1987).
89. U.S. Pat. 4,278,790 (1981), C. L. McCormick.
90. U.S. Pat. 4,024,335 (1977), M. D. Nicholson.
91. U.S. Pat. 3,447,939 (1969), D. L. Johnson.
92. R. A. A. Muzzarelli, *Carbohydr. Polym.* **3**, 53 (1983).
93. J. P. Zikakis, ed., *Chitin, Chitosan and Related Enzymes*, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1984.
94. C. L. McCormick and D. K. Lichatowich, *J. Polym. Sci.* **17**, 479 (1979).
95. C. L. McCormick, D. K. Lichatowich, J. A. Pelezo, K. W. Anderson, and C. E. Carraher, eds., ACS Symposium Series 121, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1980, p. 371.
96. H. G. Elias, *Macromolecules* **2**, 1113 (1977).
97. Ref. 6, p. 31.
98. W. M. Kulicke, R. Kniewske, and J. Klein, *Prog. Polym. Sci.* **8**, 373 (1982).
99. R. A. M. Thomson, in C. A. Finch, ed., *Chemistry and Technology of Water Soluble Polymers*, Plenum Press, New York, 1983, pp. 31–70.
100. N. M. Bikales, in N. M. Bikales, ed., *Water Soluble Polymers*, Plenum Press, New York, 1973, pp. 213–225.
101. D. L. Visioli, M. S. El-Assar, and J. W. Vanderoff, *Polym. Prep. (Am. Chem. Soc., Div. Polym. Chem.)* **51**, 258 (1984).
102. J. M. Vanderhoff, D. L. Visioli, and M. S. El-Assar, *Polym. Prep. (Am. Chem. Soc. Div. Polym. Chem.)* **54**, 375 (1986).
103. U.S. Pat. 3,624,019, A. J. Frisque (to Nalco Chemical).
104. F. Candau, U. S. Leong, and R. M. Fitch, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **23**, 167 (1984).
105. Y. K. Chong, T. P. T. Le, G. Moad, E. Rizzardo, and S. H. Thang, *Macromolecules* **32**, 2071 (1999).
106. C. Ladaviere, N. Dorr, and J. P. Claverie, *Macromolecules* **34**, 5370 (2001).
107. J. Loiseau, N. Doerr, J. M. Suau, J. B. Egraz, M. F. Llauro, C. Ladaviere, and J. Claverie, *Macromolecules* **36**, 3066 (2003).
108. D. Taton, Z.-Z. Wilczewska, and M. Destarac, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **22**, 1497 (2001).

109. N. Gaillard, A. Guyot, and J. Claverie, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **41**, 684 (2003).
110. C. Burguiere, S. Pascual, C. Bui, J.-P. Vairon, B. Charleux, K. A. Davis, K. Majaszewski, and I. Betremieux, *Macromolecules* **34**, 4439 (2001).
111. L. Couvreur, C. Lefay, J. Belleney, B. Charleux, O. Guerret, and S. Magnet, *Macromolecules ASAP*, **36**, 8260 (2003).
112. R. H. Harding and J. K. Rose, in R. L. Davidson and M. Sittig, eds., *Water-Soluble Resins*, 2nd ed., Van Nostrand Reinhold, New York, 1982.
113. D. B. Braun, in R. L. Davidson, ed., *Handbook of Water-Soluble Gums and Resins*, McGraw Hill Book Co., Inc., New York, 1980.
114. W. H. Montgomery, in R. L. Davidson and M. Sittig, eds., *Water-Soluble Resins*, 2nd ed., Van Nostrand Reinhold, New York, 1962.
115. M. H. Stenzel, L. Cummins, G. E. Roberts, T. P. Davis, P. Vana, and C. Barner-Kowollik, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **204**, 1160 (2003).
116. C. Forder, C. S. Patrickios, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Chem. Commun.* 883 (1996).
117. C. Forder, C. S. Patrickios, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *Macromolecules* **29**, 8160 (1996).
118. C. S. Patrickios, C. Forder, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **36**, 2547 (1998).
119. O. Fuchs, in J. Brandrup and E. H. Immergut, eds., *Polymer Handbook*, 3rd ed., Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1989, pp. vii–383.
120. S. R. Sandler and W. Karo, *Polymer Synthesis*, Vol. 2, Academic Press, Inc., New York, 1977.
121. L. Blecher, D. H. Lorenz, H. L. Lowd, A. S. Wood, and D. P. Wyman, in R. L. Davidson, ed., *Handbook of Water-Soluble Gums and Resins*, McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., New York, 1980.
122. J. L. Azorlosa and A. J. Martinelli, in W. H. Montgomery, R. L. Davidson, and M. Sittig, eds., *Water-Soluble Resins*, 2nd ed., Van Nostrand Reinhold, New York, 1962.
123. C. Tanford, *Physical Chemistry of Macromolecules*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1961.
124. G. S. Manning, *Annu. Rev. Phys. Chem.* **23**, 117 (1972).
125. J. Mykytiuk, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *Polym. Bull.* **29**, 139 (1992).
126. S. P. Mannard, N. C. Billingham, S. P. Armes, and J. Mykytiuk, *Eur. Polym. J.* **29**, 407 (1993).
127. C. S. Patrickios, W. R. Hertler, N. L. Abbott, and T. A. Hatton, *Macromolecules* **27**, 930 (1994).
128. A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Chem. Commun.* 1035 (1997).
129. A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5991 (1998).
130. E. J. Ashford, V. Naldi, R. O'Dell, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Chem. Commun.* 1285 (1999).
131. D. M. Haddleton, E. Depaquis, E. J. Kelly, D. Kukulj, S. R. Morsley, S. F. A. Bon, M. D. Eason, and A. G. Steward, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **39**, 2378 (2001).
132. B. Kesoshivianan, M. Georges, and D. Boils-Boissier, *Macromolecules* **28**, 6387 (1995).
133. L. J. Gabaston, S. A. Furlong, R. A. Jackson, and S. P. Armes, *Polymer* **40**, 4505 (1999).
134. U.S. Pat. 3,506,707 (1970), L. E. Miller and D. L. Murfin (to Lubrizol Corp.).
135. U.S. Pat. 3,332,904 (1967), E. M. LaCombe and W. P. Miller (to Union Carbide Corp.).
136. U.S. Pat. 3,692,673 (1972), D. I. Hoke (to Lubrizol Corp.).
137. U.S. Pat. 3,709,780 (1973), R. C. Slagel and G. D. Sinkovitz (to Calgon Corp.).
138. U.S. Pat. 3,709,816 (1973), J. E. Boothe III, and T. E. C. (to Calgon Corp.).
139. U.S. Pat. 3,709,816 (1973), J. L. Walker and J. E. Boothe (to Calgon Corp.).
140. U.S. Pat. 3,679,000 (1972), P. R. Kaufman (to Lubrizol Corp.).

141. C. L. McCormick and G. S. Chen, *J. Polym. Sci. Chem.* **20**, 817 (1982).
142. C. L. McCormick and G. S. Chen, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **29**, 713 (1984).
143. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, *Macromolecules* **21**, 694 (1988).
144. C. B. Johnson, Ph.D. dissertation, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Miss., 1987.
145. C. L. McCormick and K. P. Blackmon, *J. Polym. Sci. Chem. A* **24**, 2635 (1986).
146. C. L. McCormick, K. P. Blackmon, and D. L. Elliott, *J. Polym. Sci. Chem. A* **24**, 2619 (1986).
147. C. L. McCormick and K. P. Blackmon, *Macromolecules* **19**, 1512 (1986).
148. C. L. McCormick, K. P. Blackmon, and D. L. Elliott, *Macromolecules* **19**, 1516 (1986).
149. L. Shiyang and S. P. Armes, *Angew. Chem. Int. Ed.* **41**, 1413 (2002).
150. M. F. Hoover, *J. Macromol. Sci. Chem. A* **4**, 1327 (1970).
151. M. F. Hoover and G. B. Butler, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **45**, 1 (1974).
152. E. W. Flick, *Water-Soluble Resins—An Industrial Guide*, Noyes, Park Ridge, N.J., 1986.
153. U.S. Pat. 4,663,159 (1987), G. L. Brode, R. L. Kreefer, D. Goddard, F. M. Merritt, and D. B. Braun, (to Union Carbide).
154. S. Wen, X. Yin, and W. T. K. Severson, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **43**, 205 (1991).
155. S. Creutz, P. Tessie, and R. Jerome, *Macromolecules* **30**, 6 (1997).
156. F. L. Baines, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **29**, 3416 (1996).
157. M. V. de Paz Banez, K. L. Robinson, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **41**, 451 (2000).
158. M. V. de Paz Banez, K. L. Robinson, M. Vamvakaki, S. F. Lascelles, and S. P. Armes, *Polymer* **41**, 8501 (2000).
159. K. Deboudt, M. Delporte, and C. Loucheux, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **196**, 279 (1995).
160. K. Deboudt, M. Delporte, and C. Loucheux, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **196**, 29 (1995).
161. M. Prady, J. Lokaj, M. Novotna, and S. Sevcik, *Makromol. Chem.* **190**, 2229 (1989).
162. T. Ohmae, S. Hosoda, H. Tanaka, H. Kihara, B. Jiang, Q. Ying, R. Qian, and T. Nakajima, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **65**, 1825 (1993).
163. F. Zeng, Y. Chen, S. Zhu, and R. Pelton, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **38**, 382 (2000).
164. X. Zhang, J. Xia, and K. Matyjaszewski, *Macromolecules* **31**, 516 (1998).
165. X. Zhang and K. Matyjaszewski, *Macromolecules* **32**, 1763 (1999).
166. X. Zhang, J. Xia, and K. Matyjaszewski, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5167 (1998).
167. A. P. Narrainen, S. Pascual, and D. M. Haddleton, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **40**, 439 (2002).
168. S. Liu, J. V. Weaver, M. Y. Tang, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **35**, 6121 (2002).
169. L.-H. Gan, P. Ravi, B. W. Mao, and K.-C. Tam, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **41**, 2688 (2003).
170. X. Bories-Azeau and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **35**, 1024 (2002).
171. Y. Li, S. P. Armes, X. Jin, and S. Zhu, *Macromolecules ASAP* **36**, 8268 (2003).
172. J. Chiefari, Y. K. Chong, F. Ercole, J. Krstina, J. Feffery, T. P. T. Le, R. T. A. Mayadunne, G. F. Maijs, C. L. Moad, G. Moad, E. Rizzardo, and S. H. Thang, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5559 (1998).
173. A. B. Lowe and C. L. McCormick, Unpublished Results, 2003.
174. T. Alfrey, R. M. Fuoss, H. Morawetz, and H. Pinner, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **74**, 438 (1952).
175. V. Bütün, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Chem. Commun.* **7**, 671 (1997).
176. V. Bütün, C. E. Bennett, M. Vamvakaki, A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *J. Mater. Chem.* **7**, 1693 (1997).
177. V. Bütün, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **120**, 11818 (1998).
178. M. R. Simmons and C. S. Patrickios, *Macromolecules* **31**, 9075 (1998).
179. M. R. Simmons and C. S. Patrickios, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **37**, 1501 (1999).
180. M. V. de Paz Banez, K. L. Robinson, V. Bütün, and S. P. Armes, *Polymer* **42**, 29 (2001).

181. L.-H Gan, P. Ravi, B. W. Mao, and K.-C. Tam, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **41**, 2688 (2003).
182. S. Creutz, P. Teyssie, and R. J. Jerome, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **35**, 2035 (1997).
183. V. Bütün, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *Polymer* **42**, 5993 (2001).
184. C. L. McCormick, K. P. Blackmon, and D. L. Elliott, *Polymer* **27**, 1976 (1986).
185. C. L. McCormick and L. C. Salazar, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **31**, 1099 (1993).
186. D. B. Thomas, Ph.D. dissertation, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Miss., 2003.
187. M. J. Fevola, Ph. D. dissertation, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Miss., 2003.
188. G. B. Butler, *Cyclopolymerization and Cyclocopolymerization*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1992.
189. R. S. Armentrout and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **33**, 419 (2000).
190. R. S. Armentrout and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **33**, 2944 (2000).
191. D. B. Thomas, *Macromolecules* **36**, 9710 (2003).
192. W. P. Shyluk, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-2* **2**, 2191 (1964).
193. W. P. Shyluk, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **8**, 1063 (1964).
194. W. P. Shyluk, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-2* **6**, 2009 (1968).
195. W. P. Shyluk and R. W. Smith, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-2* **7**, 27 (1969).
196. W. P. Shyluk, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **2**, 2191 (1964).
197. C. L. Lee, J. Smid, and M. Szwarc, *Trans. Faraday Soc.* **59**, 1192 (1963).
198. C. Tsitsiliani, G. A. Voyiatzis, and J. K. Kallitsis, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **21**, 1130 (2000).
199. N. Ekizoglou and N. Hajichristidis, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **40**, 2166 (2002).
200. S. K. Varsheny, X. F. Zhong, and A. Eisenbert, *Macromolecules* **26**, 701 (1993).
201. F. Liu, Q. Wu, A. Eisenbert, 226th ACS National Meeting, American Chemical Society, New York, 2003.
202. T. Diaz, A. Fischer, A. Jonquieres, A. Brembilla, and P. Lochon, *Macromolecules* **36**, 2235 (2003).
203. Z. Chen, J. Cai, X. Jiang, and C. Yang, *Eur. Polym. J.* **37**, 33 (2001).
204. A. Fischer, A. Brembilla, and P. Lochon, *Eur. Polym. J.* **37**, 33 (2001).
205. M. Baumann and G. Schmidt-Naake, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **201**, 2751 (1999).
206. A. Fischer, A. Brembilla, and P. Lochon, *Macromolecules* **32**, 6069 (1999).
207. X. Z. Ding, A. Fischer, A. Brembilla, P. Lochon, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **38**, 3067 (2000).
208. I. Chalari, S. Pispas, and N. Hadjichristidis, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **39**, 2889 (2001).
209. J. Lokaj and P. Holler, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **80**, 2024 (2001).
210. X. Ding, A. Fischer, and A. Brembilla, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **38**, 3067 (2000).
211. J.-J. Yuan, R. Ma, Q. Gao, Y.-F. Want, S.-Y. Cheng, L.-X. Feng, A.-Q. Fan, and L. Jiang, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **89**, 1017 (2003).
212. A. J. Convertine, B. S. Sumerlin, D. B. Thomas, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **36**, 4679 (2003).
213. A. Ramakrishnan and R. Dhamodharan, *J. Macromol. Sci., Pure Appl. Chem. A* **37**, 621 (2000).
214. K. A. Davis and K. Matyjaszewski, *Macromolecules* **34**, 2101 (2001).
215. R. Yang, Y. Wang, X. Wang, W. He, and C. Pan, *Eur. Polym. J.* **39**, 2029 (2003).
216. G. B. Butler and N. Z. Zhang, in S. W. Shalaby, C. L. McCormick, and G. B. Butler, eds., *Water-Soluble Polymers Synthesis: Solution Properties, and Applications*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1991, p. 37.
217. P. Molyeaux, *Water-Soluble Synthetic Polymers*, Vol. 2, CRC Press, Inc., Boca Raton, 1984, p. 50.
218. L. Y. Ji, E. T. Kang, K. G. Neoh, and K. L. Tan, *React. Func. Polym.* **46**, 145 (2000).

219. T. Uchida, Furuzeno K. Ishihara, N. Nakabayashi, and M. Akashi, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **38**, 3052 (2000).
220. K. Se, M. Kijima, R. Ohtomo, and T. Fujimoto, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **35**, 1219 (1997).
221. K. Se, M. Kijima, and T. Fujimoto, *Polymer* **38**, 5755 (1997).
222. B. S. Sumerlin, A. B. Lowe, D. B. Thomas, A. J. Convertine, M. S. Donovan, and C. L. McCormick, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. ASAP* **42**, 1724 (2004).
223. H. Wenker, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **57**, 2328 (1935).
224. D. Fischer, A. V. Harpe, K. Kunath, H. Peterson, Y. Li, and T. Kissel, *Bioconjugate Chem.* **13**, 1124 (2002).
225. G. Odian, *Principles of Polymerization*, 3rd ed. Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1991.
226. G. B. Butler and N. Z. Zhang, in S. W. Shalaby, C. L. McCormick, and G. B. Butler, eds., *Water-Soluble Polymers: Synthesis, Solution Properties and Applications*, ACS Symposium Series 467, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1991, pp. 25–27.
227. K. Yamamoto, Y. Imamura, E. Nagatomo, T. Serizawa, Y. Muraoka, and M. Akashi, *J. App. Polym. Sci.* **89**, 1277 (2003).
228. Z. Hu, S. Zhang, and J. Yang, *J. App. Polym. Sci.* **89**, 3889 (2003).
229. L. Shi, T. M. Chapman, and E. J. Beckman, *Macromolecules* **36**, 2563 (2003).
230. D.-H. Hwang, J.-H. Chang, H.-K. Shim, and T. Zyung, *Syn. Met.* **119**, 393 (2001).
231. G. B. Butler, D. L. Skinner, W. C. Bond, and C. L. Rogers, *Polym. Prep.* **10**, 923 (1969).
232. G. B. Butler and N. Z. Zhang, *Water-Soluble Polymers: Synthesis, Solution Properties and Applications*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., pp. 25–56.
233. C. C. Petropoulos, *J. Polym. Sci. A* **10**, 957 (1972).
234. T. Nonaka, L. Hua, T. Ogata, and S. Kurihara, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **87**, 386 (2003).
235. T. Nonaka, H. Li, K. Makinose, T. Ogata, and S. Kurihara, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **90**, 1139 (2003).
236. A. Kanazawa, T. Ikeda, and T. Endo, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **31**, 335 (1993).
237. A. Kanazawa, T. Ikeda, and T. Endo, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **31**, 3003 (1993).
238. D.-H. Hwang, I.-N. Kang, J.-I. Lee, L.-M. Do, H. Y. Chu, T. Zyung, Shim, and H.-K., *Polym. Bull.* **41**, 275 (1998).
239. A. B. Lowe and C. L. McCormick, *Chem. Rev.* **102**, 4177 (2002).
240. T. Alfrey, H. Morawetz, E. B. Fitzgerald, and R. M. Fuoss, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **72**, 1864 (1950).
241. T. Alfrey and H. Morawetz, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **74**, 436 (1952).
242. T. Alfrey, R. Fuoss, H. Morawetz, and S. H. Pinner, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **74**, 438 (1952).
243. T. Alfrey and S. H. Pinner, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **23**, 533 (1957).
244. A. Katchalsky and I. R. Miller, *J. Polym. Sci.* **14**, 57 (1954).
245. G. Ehrlich and P. Doty, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **76**, 3764 (1954).
246. F. Ascoli and B. Botre, *J. Polym. Sci.* **62**, S56 (1962).
247. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, *Macromolecules* **21**, 686 (1988).
248. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, *Macromolecules* **21**, 694 (1988).
249. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, *Polymer* **31**, 1100 (1990).
250. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, *J. Macromol. Sci. Chem. A* **27**, 539 (1990).
251. M. Kamachi, M. Kurihara, and J. K. Stille, *Macromolecules* **5**, 161 (1972).
252. M. Kurihara, M. Kamachi, and J. K. Stille, *J. Polym. Sci., Chem. Ed.* **11**, 587 (1973).
253. R. Varoqui, Q. Tran, and E. Pefferkorn, *Macromolecules* **12**, 831 (1979).
254. Y. Morishima, T. Hashimoto, Y. Itoh, M. Kamachi, and S. Nozakura, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **20**, 299 (1982).

255. E. A. Bekturov, V. A. Frolova, S. E. Kudaibergenov, R. C. Schulz, and J. Zoller, *J. Makromol. Chem.* **191**, 457 (1999).
256. E. A. Bekturov, S. E. Kudaibergenov, R. E. Khamzamalina, V. A. Frolova, , E. E. Nurgalieva, R. C. Schulz, and J. Zoller, *J. Makromol. Chem. Rapid Commun.* **13**, 225 (1992).
257. S. Creutz, P. Teyssie, and R. Jerome, *Macromolecules* **30**, 6 (1997).
258. S. Creutz, J. V. Stam, F. C. D. Schryver, and R. Jerome, *Macromolecules* **31**, 681 (1998).
259. C. S. Patrickios, W. R. Hertler, N. L. Abbott, and T. A. Hatton, *Macromolecules* **27**, 930 (1994).
260. W. I. Chem, P. Alexandridis, C. K. Su, C. S. Patrickios, W. R. Hertler, and T. A. Hatton, *Macromolecules* **28**, 8604 (1995).
261. A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5991 (1998).
262. C. S. Patrickios, A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **36**, 617 (1998).
263. S. Liu and S. P. Armes, *Angew. Chem. Int. Ed.* **41**, 1413 (2002).
264. S. Liu and S. P. Armes, *Langmuir* **19**, 4432 (2003).
265. S. Dai, P. Ravi, K. C. Tam, B. W. Mao, and L. H. Gan, *Langmuir* **12**, 5175 (2003).
266. F. Ascoli and C. Botre, *J. Polym. Sci.* **62**, S56 (1962).
267. C. S. Patrickios, *J. Colloid Interface Sci.* **175**, 256 (1995).
268. D. W. Roberts and D. L. Williams, *Tetrahedron* **43**, 1027 (1987).
269. U.S. Pat. 3,671,502 (1972), C. M. Samour and M. L. Flaxa (to The Kendall Co.).
270. M. Hahn, E. Gornitz, and H. Dautzenberg, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5616 (1998).
271. V. Barboiu, E. Streba, C. Luca, and C. I. Simionescu, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **33**, 389 (1995).
272. N. Bonte and A. Laschewsky, *Polymer* **37**, 2011 (1996).
273. E. E. Kathmann, L. A. White, and C. L. McCormick, *Polymer* **38**, 879 (1997).
274. T. Nakaya and Y.-J. Li, *J. Prog. Polym. Sci.* **24**, 143 (1999).
275. K. Ishihara, T. Ueda, and N. Nakabayashi, *Polym. J.* **22**, 355 (1990).
276. Y. F. Wang, T. M. Chen, Y. J. Li, M. Kitamura, T. Nakaya, and I. Sakurai, *Macromolecules* **29**, 5810 (1996).
277. D. Hamaide, L. Germanaud, and P. L. Percec, *Makromol. Chem.* **187**, 1097 (1986).
278. T. Nakaya, H. Toyoda, and M. Imoto, *Polym. J.* **18**, 881 (1986).
279. M.-L. Pujol-Fortin, and J.-C. Galin, *Polymer* **35**, 1462 (1994).
280. J.-C. Galin and M. Galin, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys.* **33**, 2033 (1995).
281. A. Biegle, A. Mathis, and J.-C. Galin, *Makromol. Chem. Phys.* **201**, 113 (2000).
282. H. Ladenheim and H. Morawetz, *J. Polym. Sci.* **26**, 251 (1957).
283. T. Umeda, T. Nakaya, and M. Imoto, *Makromol. Chem. Rapid Commun.* **6**, 285 (1985).
284. K. Sugiyama and T. Nakaya, *Makromol. Chem. Rapid Commun.* **7**, 679 (1986).
285. M. Yamada, Y.-J. Li, and T. Nakaya, *Makromol. Sci., Pure Appl. Chem. A* **32**, 1723 (1995).
286. A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Chem. Commun.* 1555 (1996).
287. Z. Tuzar, H. Posposil, J. Plestil, A. B. Lowe, F. L. Baines, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **30**, 2509 (1997).
288. E. J. Lobb, I. Ma, N. C. Billingham, S. P. Armes, and A. L. Lewis, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **123**, 7913 (2001).
289. Y. Ma, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **84**, 143 (2001).
290. I. Y. Ma, E. J. Lobb, N. C. Billingham, S. P. Armes, A. L. Lewis, A. Lloyd, and W. J. Salvage, *Macromolecules* **35**, 9306 (2002).
291. Y. Ma, Y. Tang, N. C. Billingham, S. P. A. L. Lewis, A. L. Lloyd, and J. P. Salvage, *Macromolecules* **36**, 3475 (2003).

292. M. Arotcarena, B. Heise, S. Ishaya, and A. Laschewsky, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **124**, 3787 (2002).
293. M. S. Donovan, A. B. Lowe, T. A. Sanford, and C. L. McCormick, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **41**, 1262 (2003).
294. T. Ueda, H. Oshida, K. Kurita, K. Ishihara, and N. Nakabayashi, *Polym. J.* **24**, 1259 (1992).
295. K. Ishihara, *Trends Polym. Sci.* **5**, 401 (1997).
296. A. B. Lowe, M. Vamvakaki, M. A. Wassall, L. Wong, N. C. Billingham, S. P. Armes, and A. W. Lloyd, *J. Biomed. Mater. Res.* **52**, 88 (2000).
297. C. L. McCormick, ed. *Stimuli-Responsive Water Soluble and Amphiphilic Polymers*, ACS Symposium Series 780, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2000.
298. S. Y. Park and Y. H. Bae, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **20**, 269 (1999).
299. X. Qui, C. M. S. Kwan, and C. Wu, *Macromolecules* **30**, 6090 (1997).
300. M. Schops, H. Leist, A. DuChesne, and U. Wiesner, *Macromolecules* **32**, 2806 (1999).
301. I. Porcar, P. Sergot, and C. Tribet, *Stimuli-Responsive Water Soluble and Amphiphilic Polymers*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2000, p. 82.
302. M. Irie and R. Iga, *Macromolecules* **19**, 2480 (1986).
303. H. Yamamoto, *Macromolecules* **19**, 2472 (1986).
304. Z. Tong, F. Zeng, X. Zheng, and T. Sato, *Macromolecules* **32**, 4488 (1999).
305. A. Hashidzume, Y. Morishima, and K. Szczubialka, in S. K. Tripathy, J. Kumar, and H. S. Nalwa, eds., *Handbook of Polyelectrolytes and Their Applications*, Vol. 2, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2002.
306. U. P. Strauss and E. G. Jackson, *J. Polym. Sci.* **6**, 649 (1951).
307. S. J. Assony and J. Layton, *J. Polym. Sci.* **9**, 509 (1952).
308. W. Kauzmann, ed., *Advances in Protein Chemistry*, Academic Press, Inc., Orlando, Fla., 1959.
309. P. Dubin and U. P. Strauss, *J. Phys. Chem.* **77**, 1558 (1973).
310. P. Dubin and U. P. Strauss, *J. Phys. Chem.* **71**, 2757 (1963).
311. P. Dubin and U. P. Strauss, *J. Phys. Chem.* **74**, 2842 (1967).
312. U. P. Strauss and G. Vesnaver, *J. Phys. Chem.* **79**, 1558 (1975).
313. U.S. Pat. 4,663,159, G. L. Brode and R. L. Kreeger (to Union Carbide Co.).
314. U.S. Pat. 4,352,916 (1982), L. M. Landoll.
315. U.S. Pat. 4,228,277 (1980), L. M. Landoll.
316. L. M. Landoll, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **20**, 443 (1982).
317. U.S. Pat. 4,426,485 (1984), K. L. Hoy and R. C. Hoy (to Hercules, Inc.).
318. U.S. Pat. 3,779,970 (1973), S. Evani and R. H. Lalk (to Hercules, Inc.).
319. S. Evani and G. D. Rose, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **57**, 477 (1987).
320. U.S. Pat. 3,963,684 (1976), S. Evani and E. P. Corson (to Union Carbide Co.).
321. U.S. Pat. 4,105,649 (1978), S. Evani and F. P. Corson (to Dow Chemical Co.).
322. J. E. Glass, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **57**, 618 (1987).
323. U.S. Pat. 4,514,552 (1985), G. D. Shay, E. Eldridge, and J. E. Kail (to Dow Chemical Co.).
324. U.S. Pat. 4,600,761 (1986), C. G. Ruffner and J. M. Wilkerson (to Dow Chemical Co.).
325. J. Bock, D. B. D. N. Schulz, S. R. Turner, P. L. Valint, and S. J. Pace, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **55**, 355 (1986).
326. U.S. Pat. 4,520,182 (1985), S. R. Turner, D. B. Siano, and J. Bock (to Exxon Research & Engineering Co.).
327. U.S. Pat. 4,528,348 (1985), S. R. Turner, D. B. Siano, and J. Bock (to Exxon Research & Engineering Co.).
328. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **55**, 366 (1986).

329. C. L. McCormick and C. B. Johnson, T. Nonaka, *Polymer* **29**, 731 (1987).
330. C. B. Johnson, Ph.D. dissertation, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Miss., 1986.
331. S. A. Ezell and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **25**, 1881 (1992).
332. S. A. Ezell, C. E. Hoyle, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **25**, 1887 (1992).
333. F. M. Winnik, M. A. Winnik, H. Ringsdorf, J. Venzmer, and S. E. Webber, *J. Phys. Chem.* **95**, 2583 (1991).
334. S. E. Webber, *Chem. Rev.* **90**, 1469 (1990).
335. H. Ringsdorf, J. Simon, and F. M. Winnik, *Macromolecules* **25**, 5353 (1992).
336. Y. Hu, M. C. Kramer, C. Boudreaux, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **28**, 7100 (1995).
337. M. C. Kramer, J. A. Steger, Y. Hu, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **29**, 1992 (1996).
338. Y. Morishima, *Prog. Polym. Sci.* **15**, 949 (1990).
339. Y. Morishima, T. Hashimoto, Y. Itoh, M. Kamaichi, and S. Nozakura, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **20**, 299 (1982).
340. T. J. Martin and S. E. Webber, *Macromolecules* **28**, 8845 (1995).
341. S. Cruetz, J. V. Stam, S. Antoun, and R. Jerome, *Macromolecules* **30**, 4078 (1997).
342. C. K. Smith and G. Liu, *Macromolecules* **29**, 2060 (1996).
343. A. R. Eckert, T. J. Martin, and S. E. Webber, *J. Phys. Chem. A* **101**, 1646 (1997).
344. K. T. Wang, I. Iliopoulos, and R. Audibert, *Polym. Bull.* **20**, 577 (1988).
345. Y. Sato, A. Hashidzume, and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **34**, 6121 (2001).
346. G. L. Smith and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **34**, 918 (2001).
347. G. L. Smith and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **34**, 5579 (2001).
348. G. L. Smith and C. L. McCormick, *Langmuir* **17**, 1719 (2001).
349. C. L. McCormick, C. E. Hoyle, and M. D. Clark, *Macromolecules* **23**, 3124 (1990).
350. C. L. McCormick and K. Kim, *J. Macromol. Sci., Chem. A* **25**, 285 (1988).
351. C. L. McCormick and K. Kim, *J. Macromol. Sci., Chem. A* **25**, 307 (1988).
352. F. Petit-Agnely, I. Iliopoulos, and R. Zana, *Langmuir* **16**, 9921 (2000).
353. F. Petit-Agnely and I. Iliopoulos, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **103**, 4053 (1999).
354. Z. Gao, A. Desjardins, and A. Eisenberg, *Macromolecules* **27**, 794 (1994).
355. J. K. Newman and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **27**, 5123 (1994).
356. H. Yamamoto and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **32**, 7469 (1999).
357. M. Seki, Y. Morishima, and M. Kamachi, *Macromolecules* **25**, 6540 (1992).
358. Z. Gao, A. Desjardins, and A. Eisenberg, *Macromolecules* **25**, 1300 (1992).
359. K. Nagashima, V. Strashke, P. M. McDonald, R. D. Jenkins, and D. R. Bassett, *Macromolecules* **33**, 9329 (2000).
360. J. Selb and Y. Gallot, *Makromol. Chem.* **182**, 1491 (1981).
361. J. Selb and Y. Gallot, *Makromol. Chem.* **182**, 1513 (1981).
362. J. Selb and Y. Gallot, *Makromol. Chem.* **182**, 1775 (1981).
363. T. Noda, A. Hashidzume, and Y. Morishima, *Polymer* **42**, 9243 (2001).
364. T. Noda, A. Hashidzume, and Y. Morishima, *Langmuir* **17**, 5984 (2001).
365. V. Tirtaatmadja, K. C. Tam, and R. D. Jenkins, *Macromolecules* **30**, 1426 (1997).
366. V. Tirtaatmadja, K. C. Tam, and R. D. Jenkins, *Macromolecules* **30**, 3271 (1997).
367. S. Dai, K. C. Tam, R. D. Jenkins, and D. R. Bassett, *Macromolecules* **33**, 7021 (2000).
368. M. F. Islam and R. D. Jenkins, *Macromolecules* **33**, 2480 (2000).
369. S. Dai, K. C. Tam, and R. D. Jenkins, *Macromolecules* **33**, 404 (2000).
370. W. K. Ng, K. C. Tam, and R. D. Jenkins, *Polymer* **42**, 249 (2001).
371. P. G. deGennes, *Isr. J. Chem.* **35**, 33 (1995).
372. A. Halperin, *Macromolecules* **24**, 1418 (1991).
373. A. N. Semenov, J. Joanny, and A. Kholokov, *Macromolecules* **28**, 1066 (1995).

374. G. L. Smith, Ph.D. Dissertation, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Miss., 2001.
375. M. G. Baldwin, *J. Polym. Sci. A* **3**, 703 (1965).
376. W. Binana-Limele and R. Zana, *Macromolecules* **23**, 2731 (1990).
377. W. Binana-Limele and R. Zana, *Macromolecules* **20**, 1331 (1987).
378. U. P. Strauss and M. S. Schlesinger, *J. Phys. Chem.* **82**, 1627 (1978).
379. U. P. Strauss and M. S. Schlesinger, *J. Phys. Chem.* **82**, 571 (1978).
380. U. P. Strauss and G. Vesnaver, *J. Phys. Chem.* **79**, 2428 (1975).
381. C. L. McCormick and Y. Chang, *Macromolecules* **27**, 2151 (1994).
382. C. L. McCormick, C. E. Hoyle, and M. D. Clark, *Polymer* **33**, 243 (1992).
383. Y. Hu, M. C. Kramer, C. J. Boudreaux, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **30**, 3526 (1997).
384. M. C. Kramer, C. G. Welch, J. R. Steger, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **28**, 5248 (1995).
385. Y. Morishima, S. Nomura, T. Ikeda, M. Seki, and M. Kamachi, *Macromolecules* **28**, 2874 (1995).
386. Y. Morishima and M. Kamachi, *Proc. Am. Chem. Soc., Div. Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **71**, 271 (1994).
387. Y. Morishima, in S. E. Webber, D. Tuzar, and P. Munk, eds., *Solvents and Self-Organization of Polymers*, Kluwer Academic Publishers, Dordrecht, the Netherlands, 1996, p. 331.
388. H. Yamamoto, M. Mizusaki, K. Yoda, and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **31**, 3588 (1998).
389. F. Petit-Agnely and I. Iliopoulos, *J. Phys. Chem. B.* **103**, 4803 (1999).
390. L. Guillaumont, G. Bokias, and I. Iliopoulos, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **201**, 51 (2000).
391. C. L. McCormick, J. C. Middleton, and C. E. Grady, *Polymer* **33**, 4184 (1992).
392. K. D. Branham, Ph.D. dissertation, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Miss., 1995.
393. K. D. Branham, C. L. McCormick, and G. S. Shafer, *Proc. Am. Chem. Soc. Div. Polym. Mater., Sci. Eng.* **71**, 423 (1994).
394. W. Peer, in J. E., Glass, ed., *Polymers in Aqueous Media: Performance Through Association*, Advances in Chemistry Series 223, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1989, p. 381.
395. S. A. Ezzell and C. L. McCormick, in W. Shalaby, C. L. McCormick, and G. B. Butler, eds., *Water Soluble Polymers, Synthesis, Solution Properties, and Applications*, ACS Symposium Series 467S, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1991, p. 130.
396. S. A. Ezzell and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **25**, 1881 (1992).
397. S. A. Ezzell, C. E. Hoyle, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **25**, 1887 (1992).
398. U.S. Pat. 4,432,881 (1984), S. Evani (to Dow Chemical Co.).
399. C. L. McCormick, T. Nonaka, and C. B. Johnson, *Polymer* **29**, 731 (1988).
400. S. Biggs, A. Hill, J. Selb, and F. Candau, *J. Phys. Chem.* **96**, 1505 (1992).
401. C. Graillat, M. Lepais, and C. Pichot, *J. Dispersion Sci. Technol.* **11**, 455 (1990).
402. C. Holtzschler and F. Candau, *J. Colloid Interface Sci.* **125**, 97 (1988).
403. F. Candau, Y. S. Leong, G. Pouyet, and S. Candau, *J. Colloid Interface Sci.* **101**, 167 (1984).
404. K. D. Branham, S. Snowden, and C. L. McCormick, *Macromolecules* **29**, 254 (1996).
405. E. Volpert, J. Selb, and F. Candau, *Macromolecules* **29**, 1452 (1996).
406. E. J. Regalado, J. Selb, and F. Candau, *Macromolecules* **32**, 8580 (1999).
407. C. Poncet, F. Tiberger, and R. Audebert, *Langmuir* **14**, 1697 (1998).

408. D. F. Anghel, V. Alderson, F. M. Winnik, M. Mizusaki, and Y. Morishima, *Polymer* **39**, 3035 (1998).
409. C. L. McCormick, C. E. Hoyle, and M. D. Clark, *Macromolecules* **24**, 2397 (1991).
410. C. J. Boudreaux, W. C. Bunyard, and C. L. McCormick, *J. Controlled Release* **40**, 223 (1996).
411. P.-L. Kuo, M.-N. Hung, and Y.-H. Lin, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **47**, 1295 (1993).
412. C. J. Boudreaux, W. C. Bunyard, and C. L. McCormick, *J. Controlled Release* **44**, 171 (1997).
413. J. Chen, M. Jiang, Y. Zhang, and H. Zhou, *Macromolecules* **44**, 171 (1999).
414. R. Varadaraj, J. Bock, N. Brons, and S. Pace, *J. Phys. Chem.* **97**, 12991 (1993).
415. K. D. Branham, *Diss. Absstr. Int. B* **56**, 5518 (1996).
416. T. L. Lowe, J. Virtanen, and H. Tenhu, *Langmuir* **15**, 4259 (2000).
417. D. Tsiourvas, C. M. Paleos, and A. Malliaris, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **31**, 387 (1993).
418. G. Akazome, S. Sakai, and K. Murai, *Kobunshi Kagaku* **17**, 618 (1960).
419. Y. Morishima, M. Kobayashi, and S. Nozakura, *Macromolecules* **20**, 1707 (1987).
420. Y. Morishima, T. Kobayashi, and S. Nozakura, *Polym. J.* **21**, 267 (1989).
421. Y. Morishima, Y. Tominaga, S. Nomura, and M. Kamachi, *Macromolecules* **25**, 861 (1992).
422. Y. Morishima, Y. Tominaga, S. Nomura, M. Kamachi, and T. Okada, *J. Phys. Chem.* **96**, 1990 (1992).
423. T. Noda and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **32**, 4631 (1999).
424. A. Hashidzume, T. Noda, and Y. Morishima, in C. L. McCormick, ed., *Stimuli-Responsive Water Soluble and Amphiphilic Polymers*, ACS Series 780, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2001, p. 14.
425. T. Noda and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **33**, 3694 (2000).
426. T. Noda, A. Hashidzume, and Y. Morishima, *Macromolecules* **34**, 1308 (2001).
427. S. Yusa, M. Kamachi, and Y. Morishima, *Langmuir* **15**, 6059 (1998).
428. J. C. Middleton, D. Cummins, and C. L. McCormick, *Polym. Prep. (Am. Chem. Soc., Div. Polym. Chem.)* **30**, 348 (1989).
429. J. C. Middleton, D. F. Cummins, and C. L. McCormick, in W. Shalaby, C. L. McCormick, and G. B. Butler, eds., *Water Soluble Polymers: Synthesis, Solution Properties, and Applications*, ACS Symposium Series 467S, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1991, p. 338.
430. C. L. McCormick, J. C. Middleton, and D. F. Cummins, *Macromolecules* **25**, 1201 (1992).
431. Y. J. Yang and J. B. F. N. Engberts, *Recl. Trav. Chim. Pays-Bas* **110**, 384 (1991).
432. Y. J. Yang and J. B. F. N. Engberts, *J. Org. Chem.* **56**, 4300 (1991).
433. Y. J. Yang and J. B. F. N. Engberts, *Eur. Polym. J.* **28**, 881 (1992).
434. J. B. F. N. Engberts, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **64**, 1653 (1992).
435. G.-J. Wang and J. B. F. N. Engberts, *J. Org. Chem.* **59**, 4076 (1994).
436. G.-J. Wang and J. B. F. N. Engberts, *Langmuir* **10**, 2583 (1994).
437. Y.-F. Wang, T.-M. Chen, K. Okada, I. Sakurai, and T. Nakaya, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A: Polym. Chem.* **37**, 1293 (1999).
438. M. R. Talingting, P. Munk, S. E. Webber, and Z. Tuzar, *Macromolecules* **32**, 1593 (1999).
439. Z. Gao, S. K. Varshney, S. Wong, and A. Eisenberg, *Macromolecules* **27**, 7923 (1994).
440. L. Zhang and A. Eisenberg, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **118**, 3168 (1996).
441. L. Zhang and A. Eisenberg, *Macromolecules* **32**, 2239 (1999).
442. F. L. Baines, S. P. Armes, N. C. Billingham, and Z. Tuzar, *Macromolecules* **29**, 815 (1996).

443. A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **32**, 2141 (1999).
444. C. S. Patrickios, C. Forder, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **34**, 1539 (1996).
445. C. Forder, C. S. Patrickios, S. P. Armes, and N. C. Billingham, *Macromolecules* **30**, 5758 (1997).
446. V. Bütün, S. P. Armes, N. C. Billingham, Z. Tuzar, A. Rankin, J. Eastoe, and R. K. Heenan, *Macromolecules* **34**, 1503 (2001).
447. S. Liu, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Angew. Chem. Int. Ed.* **40**, 2328 (2001).
448. J. V. M. Weaver, S. P. Armes, and V. Bütün, *Chem. Commun.* **18**, 2122 (2002).
449. V. Bütün, M. Vamvakaki, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Polymer* **41**, 3173 (2000).
450. K. B. Thurmond, T. Kowalewski, and K. L. Wooley, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **119**, 6656 (1997).
451. H. Huang, T. Kowalewski, E. E. Remsen, R. Gertzmann, and K. L. Wooley, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **119**, 11653 (1997).
452. K. B. Thurmond, T. Kowalewski, and K. L. Wooley, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **118**, 7239 (1996).
453. Q. Zhang, E. E. Remsen, and K. L. Wooley, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **122**, 3642 (2000).
454. K. S. Murthy, W. Ma, C. G. Clark, E. E. Remsen, and K. L. Wooley, *Chem. Commun.* 773 (2001).
455. Q. Ma, E. E. Remsen, T. Kowalewski, J. Schafer, and K. L. Wooley, *Nano Lett.* **1**, 651 (2001).
456. J. Liu, Q. Zhang, E. E. Remsen, and K. L. Wooley, *Biomacromolecules* **2**, 362 (2001).
457. M. L. Becker, E. E. Remsen, and K. L. Wooley, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **39**, 4152 (2001).
458. T. Sanji, Y. Nakatsuka, F. Kitayama, and H. Sakurai, *Chem. Commun.* 2201 (2000).
459. T. Sanji, Y. Nakatsuka, S. Ohnishi, and H. Sakurai, *Macromolecules* **33**, 8524 (2000).
460. V. Bütün, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **120**, 12135 (1998).
461. V. Bütün, A. B. Lowe, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **121**, 4288 (1999).
462. V. Bütün, and S. P. Armes, in C. L. McCormick, ed., *Stimuli Responsive Water Soluble and Amphiphilic Polymers*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 2000.
463. V. Bütün, W.-S. Wang, M. V. de Paz Banez, K. L. Robinson, N. C. Billingham, and S. P. Armes, *Macromolecules* **33**, 1 (2000).
464. S. Liu and S. P. Armes, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **123**, 9910 (2001).

CHARLES L. MCCORMICK

NEIL AYRES

Department of Polymer Science,
University of Southern Mississippi

ANDREW B. LOWE

Department of Chemistry and Biochemistry,
University of Southern Mississippi

WEATHERING OF POLYMERIC MATERIALS

Introduction

The resistance of polymeric materials to weathering is a very important consideration for their use in outdoor applications that depend on their durability. *Weathering* of a polymeric material may be defined as the irreversible changes in the material's chemical and physical properties in a direction that is usually to the detriment of its usefulness. Changes in appearance and mechanical properties result from modification of the chemical structure of the material by its complex interaction with the environmental elements, primarily solar radiation, heat/cold, moisture (solid, liquid, and vapor), oxygen, and pollutants. Although all weather factors play a very important role in the deteriorating effect of the environment on polymeric materials, the actinic radiation of the sun is the critical factor because it initiates the reactions that lead to degradation. Testing the weatherability of polymeric materials is an essential step in development of new and improved products and in ascertaining that production lots meet the specified requirements. Most polymeric products require stabilization against the effects of the environment to obtain reasonable serviceability. For some applications, polymeric materials are designed to degrade rapidly after their intended use in order to protect the environment. Weathering of "degradable" polymeric materials is not specifically addressed in this article, although much of the information on weatherability testing of polymeric materials is applicable.

The destructive effect of the weather varies with geographic location, season, time of day, cloud cover, and exposure orientation due to variations in the critical weather factors with these conditions as well as in individual years. Therefore, outdoor tests in one location during a specific time interval cannot be expected to provide information on either absolute durabilities or stability rankings of materials under all service conditions. To determine resistance to the worst conditions, tests are commonly carried out in environments that have the most severe conditions, such as subtropical or desert climates. As a result of the progressive improvement over the years in the durability of polymeric materials for outdoor applications, it is now impractical in many cases to screen potential new formulations by standard outdoor weathering tests, even those that provide severe environmental conditions. Therefore, accelerated outdoor weathering techniques and laboratory-accelerated weathering tests simulating the effects of natural weathering are required for development of weatherable formulations as well as for quality control and specification tests. Laboratory tests have the advantage of repeatability of test results and control of the three main test parameters, that is, radiation, heat, and moisture, for more consistent stability evaluations and for research studies on the effect of these parameters. Development of valid laboratory-accelerated tests requires measurement of the critical weather factors in the end use environment and determination of the effects of natural weathering on polymeric materials.

Weather Factors and Their Effect on Polymeric Materials.

Solar Radiation. Solar radiation on the earth's surface consists of energy received both directly from the solid angle of the sun's disk and diffusely reflected

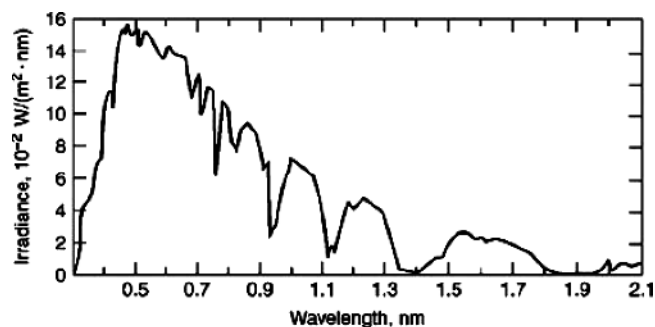


Fig. 1. Hemispherical solar spectral irradiance incident on a 37° sun-facing tilted surface (air mass of 1.5). Based on data in Table 2 of ASTM G173-08. Courtesy of ASTM International.

by the atmosphere. The diffuse component is strongly influenced by atmospheric conditions and is generally a large fraction of the total radiation, particularly in the UV region because of the greater scattering of the shorter wavelengths (1). For this reason, the spectral power distribution (SPD) of the diffuse component differs from that of the solar beam in that it contains a higher intensity of short wavelength radiation. Thus, the type of exposure that materials receive depends on their orientation. Samples positioned for maximum direct beam exposure receive less short wavelength radiation than those positioned for maximum exposure to sky radiation.

The hemispherical (direct plus diffuse) solar spectral irradiance incident on a 37°-tilted surface facing the equator at an air mass of 1.5, representative of average conditions in the 48 contiguous states of the United States, is shown in Figure 1 (2). It is referred to as “U.S. Standard Atmosphere.” The spectral energy ranges from about 298 nm in the UV region to about 2500 nm in the near-infrared (NIR) region. Both the quantity and quality of solar radiation vary with time of day, season, altitude, geographical location, and atmospheric conditions. The shorter the wavelength, the more sensitive it is to these variables. The UV portion (298–400 nm), the portion that has the largest actinic effect on most materials, varies from less than 1% to about 5% of total solar radiation. Owing to the seasonal effect of the angle of the sun, at north latitude of about 41° the short wavelength cut-on of direct normal solar radiation shifts from below 300 nm in the summer to about 310 nm in the winter. At all latitudes, the altitude of the sun, and thus total solar irradiance, is highest at solar noon.

Because of the small percentage of UV present in the full solar spectrum, changes in this important component cannot be detected in measurements of total solar radiation. Therefore, commercial outdoor testing facilities measure and monitor the irradiance of the UV portion alone, both total UV and narrow spectral bands of the UV, in addition to total solar radiation. Total solar UV radiation (TUV_R) is typically measured between 295 and 385 nm. Irradiance is reported in watts/square meter (W/m²) and radiant exposure, ie, irradiance integrated over time, is reported in megajoules/square meter (MJ/m²). The average

12-month TUVB radiant exposure is reported to be 308 MJ/m² at a 5° angle in a subtropical climate and 333 MJ/m² at latitude angle in a desert climate (3).

Spectral Effects of Solar Radiation: Activation Spectra. The wavelength-specific degradation of a material by the light source to which it is exposed is referred to as the activation spectrum. It is a graphical representation of the relative damage caused by individual spectral regions of the radiation source. Degradation is wavelength specific because both the absorption capability of the material for the incident radiation and the capability of the absorbed radiation to break some of the chemical bonds of the material, and thus initiate degradation, vary with wavelength. According to the first law of photochemistry, light must be absorbed by a material to have any effect on it. Since the energy of radiation is inversely proportional to its wavelength, the shorter the wavelength, the higher the energy of the photons associated with it. The shorter wavelengths also have a greater likelihood of being absorbed by materials. Therefore, the shorter the wavelength, the greater is its potential to break stronger and more types of chemical bonds. In order to be able to cleave specific chemical bonds, the radiation must contain wavelengths that have photon energies in excess of the binding energies of the chemical bonds. Thus, UV radiation generally has a greater deleterious effect on materials than visible radiation and the shorter the wavelength of UV, the more degradation it can be expected to cause. However, the wavelength-specific effectiveness of the light source in causing degradation also depends on the relative number of photons of each wavelength, ie, the wavelength-specific intensity of the radiation. Because the intensity of solar and solar-simulated UV radiation decreases nearly exponentially with decrease in wavelength, the shortest wavelengths cause less degradation than longer UV wavelengths in the majority of polymeric materials. Although the UV portion of solar radiation is mainly responsible for initiating weathering effects in polymeric materials, the visible and NIR portions also contribute to degradative processes. The damaging wavelengths of some colorless polymeric materials extend into the short wavelength visible region. Visible radiation absorbed by colored polymeric materials can cause photolytic bond cleavage of pigments followed by polymer degradation, initiated by the free radicals formed or due to charge-transfer processes. The absorbed visible radiation that does not have sufficient energy to cause bond cleavage and the NIR radiation absorbed by both colored and colorless polymeric materials raise the temperature of the materials and thus accelerate the chemical reactions initiated by the actinic wavelengths.

The activation spectra listed in Table 1 show that many polymeric materials are degraded to a greater extent by the longer UV wavelengths of simulated terrestrial solar radiation than by the shorter UV wavelengths. There are a number of reasons for this, including the fact that there are fewer photons associated with the shortest wavelengths of the light source. The activation spectra show that solar-simulated radiation shorter than 340 nm is responsible for the maximum amount of yellowing in less than half of the polymeric materials examined. The wavelengths listed represent just the peak(s) of the activation spectrum for each of the polymeric materials. Both longer and shorter wavelengths also cause degradation that decreases with both the increase and decrease in wavelength from the peak of the activation spectrum. In polymers

Table 1. Activation Spectra Based on Borosilicate Glass Filtered Xenon Arc Radiation

Polymeric Material	Type of Degradation	Mils	Wavelengths (nm) Causing Maximum Degradation (nm)
Acrylonitrile–Butadiene–Styrene (ABS)	Yellowing ^a	10	330
	Yellowing ^b	100	340–360
	Bleaching ^a	10	380–400
	Bleaching ^b	100	>380
	Impact strength	100	350–380 ^c
	Impact strength	100	>380 ^d
Nylon-6	UV, modulus	?	390, 450
Aromatic polyamides ^e	Yellowing and Tensile strength	?	360, 370, 414
Polyarylate	Yellowing ^b	3	350
	Yellowing ^b	60	385
Polycarbonate	Yellowing ^a	4.5	295, 310–340
	Yellowing ^b	28	<300, 310–340
Polyethylene	Yellowing ^a	4	310
	C=O increase ^a	4	340
Polyethylenenaphthalate	Yellowing, IR, modulus ^a	5	370–380
Polypropylene	C=O increase ^a	15	340–380
	C=O increase ^b	10	320
	Tensile strength ^b	60	320–350 ^c
	Tensile strength ^b	60	360–380 ^d
Polystyrene	Yellowing ^a	125	319
	Yellowing ^b	125	300–330
Polysulfone	Yellowing ^a	1	310–320
	Yellowing ^b	1	320
	C=O,OH increase	1	330
Aromatic polyurethane	Yellowing ^a	?	350–415 ^f
Poly(vinyl chloride)	Yellowing ^a	2	308–325 ^f
	Yellowing ^b	40	300–320

^aSpectrographic technique.^bSharp cut-on filter technique.^cShort exposure duration.^dLonger exposure duration.^eFilms and fibers.^fVarious samples.

such as acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene (ABS), aromatic polyamides, polyarylate, polyethylenenaphthalate, and aromatic polyurethane, wavelengths longer than 340 nm are mainly responsible for yellowing. In all polymers, including those in which shortwavelength UV radiation causes yellowing, longwavelength UV is primarily responsible for degradation of physical properties, such as tensile strength

and impact strength. In some cases this extends into the visible region. The explanation for differences in damaging wavelengths with type of change lies in the differences in the wavelengths that affect the surface versus the bulk of the material. Short wavelengths, which are more strongly absorbed by most materials, have a greater effect on the layers close to the surface and cannot penetrate as far into the material as the longer wavelengths. Thus, the changes that occur in the surface layers, such as yellowing, opacity to UV radiation, and cracking and crazing, result from exposure to shorter wavelength radiation. Longer wavelengths penetrate more deeply into materials, where the physical property changes occur.

The activation spectra of ABS and polypropylene based on changes in impact strength and tensile strength, respectively, show a progressive shift to longer wavelength sensitivity with an increase in duration of exposure. It results from an increase in the absorption of longer wavelengths due to a progressive increase in chain length of the unsaturated conjugation species in aliphatic polymers and aliphatic portions of aromatic polymers. A similar shift to maximum degradation by longer wavelengths for extended exposures of polyethylene and poly(vinyl chloride) can be expected for the same reason. Pickett and co-workers (4) had shown that the yellowing of polycarbonate containing titanium dioxide is caused mainly by filtered xenon arc wavelengths shorter than 300 nm during initial exposure, but after a period of exposure the activation spectrum peaks at about 320 nm and identifies the 310–340 nm spectral region as being mainly responsible for yellowing. Damaging wavelengths vary with the thickness of aromatic-type polymers because of the shift in the tail end of the main absorption band to longer wavelengths with an increase in the thickness. For example, the activation spectra of two thicknesses of ABS and polyarylate show that the thicker specimens are degraded by the longer wavelengths of the light source. The activation spectrum of a polymeric material also depends on its formulation, particularly with the addition of UV absorbing components. Addition of a protective UV absorber will generally shift the damaging radiation to shorter wavelengths.

Photodegradations of polymeric materials are complex processes usually with many thermally dependent steps between absorption of the photons and the final products. Their wavelength sensitivities to a radiation source must be determined experimentally. The activation spectra cannot be determined by multiplication of the source-independent wavelength sensitivity (action spectrum) of the material by the emission spectrum of the light source at each wavelength (5). It also cannot be determined from the absorption spectrum of the material and the SPD of the light source, even if the chemical mechanism of degradation is known, as quantum efficiencies cannot be predicted from fundamental principles. The activation spectra shown in Table 1 are based on two techniques for obtaining activation spectra, the spectrographic and sharp cut-on filter techniques. They are described in the *Handbook of Polymer Degradation*, 2nd ed. (5), *ASTM G178* (6), and other publications (7–11).

Temperature. Elevated temperatures can significantly influence the destructive effects of light on polymeric materials by accelerating the rate of the secondary reactions and by altering the reaction processes following the primary photochemical step of bond breakage. For example, the increase with temperature of the rate of oxygen diffusion and rates of reactions of free-radical fragments

can alter the main mechanism of degradation. Therefore, temperature differences in various climatic zones of the earth are responsible to a large extent for the variations in weathering. The areas exposed to the greatest solar irradiance are also those exposed to the highest temperatures. Both are usually highest near the equator and decrease with increasing latitude. Because of differences among materials in the effect of temperature on the secondary reactions, the stability ranking of materials can change with increase in temperature.

Daily averages and extremes of air temperature are measured to quantify temperature conditions during exposure of specimens to natural weathering, but the temperatures that materials attain are higher than that of the surrounding atmosphere. The temperature of exposed materials depends on the amount of radiation absorbed, the emissivity of the specimen, thermal conduction within the specimen, and exchange of heat with the surroundings through conduction and convection. A large portion of the absorbed radiation is converted to heat, and the amount absorbed is closely linked to color, with white materials absorbing only about 20% of the incident energy and black about 90%. Thus, the darker the color the higher the temperature. Surface temperatures of exposed plastic specimens have been reported to reach 77°C (12), and specimens inside a closed automobile exposed to sunlight have been reported to reach 120°C (13). Because it is not practical to measure the surface temperature of individual test specimens, black panel and white panel temperature sensors are used to represent, respectively, the maximum and minimum temperatures attained by samples.

Temperature differences between the surface and bulk of polymeric materials, due to the low thermal conductivity and heat capacity of these materials, result in physical stresses. Daily and seasonal temperature cycling can cause mechanical stress in composite systems, such as between a coating and a substrate or between coating layers, because of mismatch in the thermal expansion coefficients. It often results in cracking and loss of adhesion of the coating. Temperature and its cycles can also affect the weathering of polymeric materials through its influence on the effect of moisture. An increase in the temperature accelerates hydrolysis reactions, whereas a reduction in the temperature results in condensation as dew on the material. Freeze/thaw cycling or thermal shocks due to cool rain hitting hot, dry surfaces induces mechanical stress that can cause structural failures in some systems, or accelerate degradation already initiated.

Moisture. Moisture is a critical variable for many polymeric materials. In combination with solar radiation, it can significantly contribute to the effect of weather, both by reacting chemically and by imposing mechanical stresses when it is absorbed or desorbed (14). It can also act as a solvent or carrier, for example, in leaching away plasticizers or in transporting dissolved oxygen. Examples of chemical reactions of moisture are hydrolysis of labile bonds in polymers such as polyesters, polyamides, and poly(ether)urethanes; the promotion of chalking of titanium dioxide (TiO₂) pigmented coatings; and chemical changes in building products exposed to solar radiation in a moist environment. Chalking results from the release of TiO₂ particles at the surface when the organic binder is degraded by the hydroxyl and perhydroxyl free radicals formed in the reaction between water, oxygen, and the titanium and hydroxyl ions produced on exposure of the pigment to UV radiation.

Compressive stresses on the surface and tensile stresses in the bulk of materials result from expansion of the volume of surface layers by absorbed moisture. During drying, reduction in volume of surface layers results in compressive stress in the bulk and surface tensile stress gradients. These stresses result in cracking and loss of adhesion of coatings. Solar radiation has a pronounced effect on the moisture-induced stresses because of the formation of hydrophilic groups, which increase the tendency of the material to absorb moisture. Also, embrittlement of the surface by solar radiation enhances the tendency to crack under tensile stresses during the drying period. High relative humidity levels in conjunction with heat, as, for example, in tropical and subtropical climates, often promote microbial growth, which can play a significant role in material degradation.

The form and amount of moisture vary widely, depending on the geographic area and ambient temperature. Moisture can take the form of humidity, dew, rain, frost, snow, or hail. Commercial exposure facilities typically measure two main types of moisture, relative humidity and wet time. The wet time is the amount of time during which liquid water is present on a material's surface due to condensation and precipitation. The span of time over which precipitation occurs and the time the sample surface is exposed to wetness are more important in weathering of materials than the total amount of precipitation. The penetration depth of moisture into the material, and thus the influence on weathering, is substantially greater when the total amount of precipitation is distributed over a longer time period.

Oxygen. Oxidative degradation of organic polymers is generally very slow at room temperature in the dark, but is greatly accelerated by solar radiation in the presence of oxygen. Photooxidation reactions account for most polymer failures that occur during outdoor exposure. The reaction products of oxygen with the free radicals formed as a result of bond cleavage by solar radiation propagate radical chain reactions that multiply the destructive effect of the radiation. Thus, the degradative effect of solar radiation and oxygen acting in combination with each other is synergistic, ie, it is considerably larger than the sum of both factors acting individually. Polymers containing carbon-carbon double bonds are most sensitive to oxidation, their sensitivity increasing with the degree of unsaturation. Saturated polymers are considerably less sensitive, particularly those having bulky side groups that interfere with the attack by oxygen. Tertiary carbon atoms are more susceptible to oxidation than secondary ones, unless they are shielded by bulky side groups, as in polystyrene. Polymers that contain activated carbon-hydrogen bonds, such as polyethers, polyesters, and polyamides, display a higher susceptibility to oxidation than other hydrocarbon polymers. Oxygen can also increase the amount of solar radiation absorbed by conjugated unsaturated hydrocarbons through formation of a complex with these structural components. The singlet state of oxygen formed by reaction of oxygen with sensitizers, such as ketones and certain dyes in the presence of solar radiation, is a very reactive form of the molecule. It is responsible for rapid deterioration of natural rubber and polymeric materials with conjugated unsaturation.

The importance of oxygen in the weathering process is evidenced by the fact that photooxidation in polymers, such as polyolefins, is significantly reduced toward the center of thick samples because of the limited supply of oxygen. The

penetration of oxygen into the polymer is a critical factor and is related to its rate of diffusion, which depends on the temperature, polymer type, and morphology. It has been shown that oxygen diffusion and not UV radiation becomes the rate-controlling process in photooxidation of polypropylene and polyethylene plaques at a depth at which the rate of oxygen consumption is greater than the rate at which it can be replenished from the environment (15–18).

Atmospheric Pollutants. Ozone is present in the earth's atmosphere both as a result of UV photolysis of oxygen in the upper atmosphere and as a result of reaction between terrestrial solar radiation and atmospheric pollutants such as nitrogen oxides and hydrocarbons from automobile exhausts. It is a powerful oxidant that can react rapidly with elastomers and other unsaturated polymeric materials to cause stiffening and cracking, particularly under mechanical stress. Other common air pollutants include sulfur oxides, hydrocarbons, nitrogen oxides, and particulate matter such as sand, dust, dirt, and soot. Some of these may react directly with organic materials, but have a much more severe effect in combination with other weather factors.

Acid rain is an important consequence of pollutants generated by modern industrial societies and has been shown to damage both organic and inorganic materials exposed to the environment. Dilute sulfuric acid is formed on the surface of materials from sulfur dioxide (SO_2) and water exposed to solar radiation. It causes rapid discoloration when it reacts with pigments and causes cross-linking (14) and embrittlement (19) of polymers. The results of the action of acidic pollutants and solar radiation on automotive coatings have been described (20).

Acid rain enhances hydrolytic degradation and thus is an important factor in weathering of polymeric materials in which the mechanism includes hydrolysis. Acids have also been shown to interfere with the use of hindered amine light stabilizers (HALS) to improve the light stability of acrylic urethane clearcoats. It is believed that acids may reduce the effectiveness of HALS by reacting to form salts, which are then washed out of the coating. While acids generally act synergistically with radiation to accelerate the effects of weathering, acid precipitations can also slow the aging processes in polymers (21).

Outdoor Weathering Tests. Outdoor weathering tests are commonly characterized as “natural” or “accelerated.” Ideally, “natural” weathering would be the result of exposure of a material in its actual intended location and orientation. The term is, however, generally used for outdoor exposure on fixed angle racks in locations and orientations that maximize the effects of weathering components, particularly solar radiation. Since these exposures will generally produce higher degradation rates than the normal end-use environments, they are actually outdoor accelerated tests. In this article, “natural” exposures are divided into “static” exposure tests at fixed positions and “dynamic” exposure tests in which sample orientations are changed during the test, or in which the sun is tracked. “Accelerated” outdoor exposures include techniques that further increase either the temperature, solar irradiance, moisture, or some combination of these factors. Practices for natural and accelerated outdoor weathering of polymeric materials are described in ASTM D1435 (3), ASTM D4364 (22), and ISO 877 (23).

Most natural and accelerated outdoor weathering tests in the United States are carried out in either (or both) South Florida or CENTRAL Arizona. These have the two most important “benchmark” environments where materials typically fail fastest because of intensification of the weather elements responsible for degradation. South Florida has a subtropical climate with higher levels of the three critical weathering factors, solar radiation, temperature, and moisture, than are present in most end-use environments. The climate is particularly destructive to materials sensitive to moisture. A number of studies have shown that the South Florida climate has a twofold or higher weathering rate for coatings compared to that in central Europe. The CENTRAL Arizona desert has become a worldwide recognized standard exposure environment for testing in a climate typical of the hot and dry conditions of the desert, having summer solar radiant exposures and temperatures that are higher than those in South Florida. The large daily and summer-to-winter temperature swings also differentiate Arizona from South Florida environments. Other test sites are in tropical and temperate climates, industrial areas, and salt air locations. Often, the same materials are tested in several different climates.

Because of seasonal and year-to-year climatological variability of outdoor conditions, repeated testing during different seasons and over a period of at least 2 years is usually recommended. Results of tests conducted for less than 12 months will often depend on the particular season of the year in which they begin. To take into account the variability of weather, the performance of test materials should be evaluated by comparing their weatherability with that of one or more control materials of known performance exposed at the same time rather than in terms of absolute changes in the test materials. The use of a number of control materials of different durability and multiple replicate specimens of the test and control materials should be exposed for statistical evaluations of the test results.

Static Exposures. Outdoor static weathering tests can take numerous forms. Some of the variables include tilt angle, unbacked or backed exposure with various types of backing material, under glass exposure, additional wetting, and other special conditions, all of which have an impact on the critical weathering factors. The variables of static outdoor exposures are described in detail in ASTM G7 (24), ASTM G24 (25), and ISO 877 (23). The particular test variables chosen depend on the application of the material and should generally simulate the worst-case in-service conditions as closely as possible. Materials used with a backing should be exposed with a similar type backing to provide the higher temperatures and longer wetness times of typical in-use conditions. In some cases, the backing is painted black to increase surface temperature and degradation rates. Materials intended for applications indoors or in enclosures behind specific types of glass, such as in automotive interiors, require weathering tests simulating conditions found in their specific end-use environment. Because of variations in specimen temperature and time of wetness due to location of a specimen on the exposure rack and the type or color of adjacent specimens, control, and test specimens should be placed on a single test panel or on test panels adjacent to each other.

The direction and angle of the exposed samples, measured from the horizontal, influence the amount of total radiant energy received, the quality and

quantity of UV, the temperature, and time of wetness. The 45° angle facing toward the equator is the most widely used, probably because many of the early exposure tests were carried out at temperate latitudes at which this angle was considered to be the fixed angle for optimum solar radiation for the whole year. However, in both temperate and tropical zones, exposures at 0°–20° angles contain a higher proportion of the diffuse component of incident solar radiation and therefore higher annual doses of shortwavelength UV than exposures at higher angles of inclination (26,27). At 0° (horizontal) and 5° angles, samples are exposed to essentially the entire sky dome and experience higher temperatures and longer time of wetness and thus more rapid deterioration. The 5° angle is preferable because it provides for some drainage to reduce ponding and allows some of the dirt to be washed off by rain. It is used extensively by the automotive industry for exterior applications, such as surface coatings, and may be used as an alternate to horizontal exposures for items such as indoor–outdoor carpeting, artificial turf, and roofing materials.

Samples receive maximum annual total solar radiation at an angle equal to the latitude of the exposure station. At a more horizontal exposure angle, specimens are nearly perpendicular to the sun's radiation during the summer months when the UV content is highest (28). The 90° angle facing the equator is used to simulate in-service applications of construction materials such as sidings, windows, door profiles, and automotive components, eg., doors and seat backs. However, it provides significantly lower radiant exposure, temperature, and time of wetness than a 45° or smaller angle. Therefore, the rate of degradation is usually slower for many samples exposed at this than at other fixed angles. A 90° angle facing away from the equator is a common exposure angle for testing a material's resistance to mold/mildew in subtropical climates.

In applications of polymeric materials as building sealants, particularly for joint seals, a major stress factor acting synergistically with the critical environmental stress factors is mechanical movement. Both daily and annual cycles of expansion and contraction caused by variations in the temperature and moisture content of the sealants lead to premature cohesive and adhesion failure and thus to functional failure of the sealants. Studies have shown the importance of added cyclic movement during outdoor exposure in order to reliably assess the in-use performance of sealants as well as accelerate the test results (29). In the absence of mechanical cycling, only surface changes are accelerated, but periodic expansion and compression during weathering also accelerates deterioration in the bulk of the sealant. Specially designed exposure strain-cycling racks used to simultaneously subject sealants to cyclic movement and temperature change were shown to produce early failures similar to those that occur during in-service use (30).

Dynamic Exposures. While the incidence of critical weather parameters can be modified by the setting of the static exposure angle, at any one angle it is not optimum for all seasons. Several dynamic exposure techniques have been developed to further optimize the annual radiant exposure, temperature, and moisture delivery to specimens. One technique consists of changing exposure angle with seasonal changes of the sun's path. However, compared with fixed angle exposures of less than 90° in Florida and Arizona, the maximum increase in annual

solar radiant exposure is only about 12% (31). In a study using this technique applied to exposure of a coating in Florida, no appreciable acceleration in degradation was obtained compared with 5° south exposure (32).

Another type of dynamic exposure uses a motor-driven, follow-the-sun rack designed to maintain direct-normal conditions from sunrise to sunset by keeping the sample surface at a constant near-normal angle to the direct solar beam. It is often combined with variable angle exposure, but is mainly applicable to arid environments such as central Arizona where the direct beam component of solar radiation is high. Its efficiency is low in subtropical environments where the diffuse portion of solar radiation is a significant portion of the total irradiance. The option of adding water spray to this type of exposure provides a combination of three of the critical weather factors, increased radiant exposure, temperature, and moisture, which can significantly accelerate degradation rates of many materials over static exposures.

Accelerated Weathering Exposures. In spite of optimization of weather factors by site selection, type of backing, exposure angle, and follow-the-sun exposures, long periods of outdoor testing are required to establish the durability of modern materials. Options available to further accelerate degradation by natural weathering tests include black box enclosures for higher panel temperatures and longer wetness time than open or backed exposures and Fresnel reflectors for increased irradiance. Any major intensification of weather factors over those present under end-use conditions must be used with caution to avoid changing the types and mechanisms of degradation or altering stability rankings because of differences among materials in their response to intensified stress factors. This cannot be overemphasized.

Black-Box Exposures. The black box test was developed to simulate the air heatsink characteristics of an automotive body and thus provide the high temperatures encountered by the surface coatings and decorative trim on automobiles exposed to direct sunlight. Details of the black boxes and test procedures are given in ASTM G7 (24), ASTM D4141 (33), and SAE J1976 (34). The test panels form the top surface of an open aluminum box painted with flat black paint on the outside. The box is typically positioned at 5° from the horizontal, facing the equator, but can be positioned at any angle. Black-box exposures maintain surface condensation longer after daybreak and have elevated daytime temperatures, which extend longer into the evening, thus providing greater probability of interactions with the materials of the combined effects of irradiance, temperature, and moisture than in other types of exposures.

Black-Box under-Glass Exposures. These tests were designed specifically to simulate and accelerate the effect of interior automotive conditions. Air temperatures in the box may exceed 80°C under conditions of high outside ambient air temperature and solar irradiance. Exterior non-glass surfaces are painted flat black, and interior surfaces are left unpainted. The specimens, supported on a rack in a plane parallel to the glass cover at a distance of at least 75 mm (3 in.), can be unbacked or backed with either expanded aluminum or a solid backing such as plywood. Liquid water is prevented from accumulating on the specimen's surface by the cover glass, and blowers inside the box circulate enclosed air for better temperature distribution. The box is typically covered with

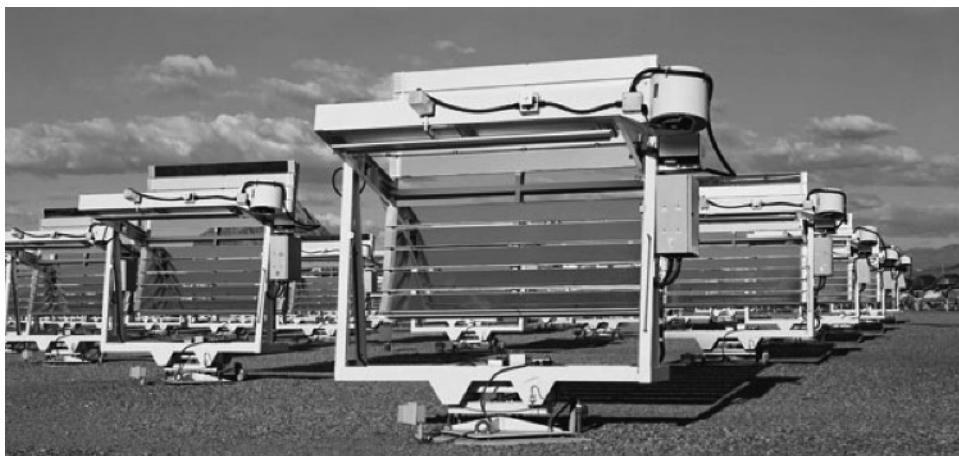


Fig. 2. Fresnel reflecting solar concentrators. Photo courtesy of Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC.

“single-strength” window glass that is 2–3 mm thick, although other types of glass more suitable to replicate the end-use application of the material exposed may also be used. Because of variability between different lots of glass, the relative performance of materials is best determined by testing them at the same time behind the same lot of glass.

Fresnel Reflector Solar Concentrator. The maximum acceleration of aging processes in outdoor weathering is obtained by exposure on a Fresnel-reflector panel rack that provides high intensity solar radiation of approximately eight suns to materials by following the sun and reflecting the sun’s rays from an array of 10 flat mirrors onto a single target area. Figure 2 (35) is a photograph of a typical Fresnel reflector solar concentrator. These devices were originally developed at DSET Laboratories (part of the Atlas Weathering Services Group) in the mid 1960s. The device is a follow-the-sun rack with its axis oriented in a north–south direction. Mirrors are positioned as tangents to an imaginary parabolic trough. Test specimens are placed in frames and mounted on the target board on which the mirrors are focused. A blower forces air across the target to cool the test specimens and generally limits sample surface temperatures to about 5–15°C above the maximum temperature of equatorially mounted samples exposed to unconcentrated normal incidence radiation. Testing of samples exceeding 13 mm (0.5 in.) in thickness is not recommended because the cooling may not be sufficient for such samples. Oscillating or pulsing nozzles provide periodic spraying with deionized water to simulate the moisture conditions of conventional testing in semi-humid subtropical and temperate regions. Nighttime spray cycles simulate rain and dew. Special cycles have also been recently developed for more customization and to improve the similarity between moisture delivery on these devices and moisture processes that exist with natural weathering exposures. Tests carried out in the absence of a programmed moisture cycle are intended to simulate conventional exposure testing in desert, arid, and semiarid regions.

The test can be used to intensify either direct exposures or those behind glass. Descriptions of the device and guidelines for its use are given in ASTM G90 (36) and ISO 877 (23).

New features, related to temperature control, have been added to the Fresnel reflecting devices to improve repeatability and provide the capability to define specimen temperatures (37). These include (1) static temperature control to maintain a user-defined temperature of a reference specimen within device capability limits; (2) dynamic temperature control to match the temperature of a reference panel to the diurnal temperatures of a reference specimen exposed at the same time on a static exposure rack; and (3) control of nighttime heating of specimens to elevate low nighttime desert temperatures, especially in winter. This is useful for accelerating degradation as well as for matching the higher nighttime temperatures in Florida and other locations. The most recent development in acceleration of the effects of solar radiation is the "UV Concentrator," an ultraaccelerated device that provides up to $63\times$ intensification of the UV and short wavelength visible portion of solar radiation while eliminating the NIR wavelengths that cause excessive specimen temperatures (38).

Because these devices only concentrate the direct rays of the sun and not the diffuse radiation, they require clear atmospheric conditions with little moisture, such as is prevalent in the Sonoran desert area of Central Arizona. Acceleration factors over conventional outdoor tests based on elapsed time to a predetermined change in property have been reported to vary from 2 to 11 using the basic Fresnel reflector solar concentrators for various polymer types and compositions (31). The acceleration factor varies with the material tested because the effect of increased irradiance and temperature on the degradation rate varies with the material and its formulation. Therefore, the stability rankings may differ from that of natural exposure. However, acceleration of degradation using Fresnel-reflector exposure can provide better correlation to natural exposures than laboratory-accelerated weathering due to the fact that the radiation source (the sun) does not contain any unnatural wavelengths of radiation. Good correlations as well as discrepancies have been reported between Fresnel-reflector exposures and standard outdoor tests based on stability ranking of polymeric materials (32,39–43).

Timing of Exposures. Methods of "timing" outdoor weathering tests include (1) chronological basis—exposure for a specified number of days, months, or years; (2) radiant exposure basis—exposure to a specified level of solar radiant energy in a specified wavelength region based on hemispherical radiation measurements at the same tilt and azimuth angle as the test specimens; and (3) property change in a weathering reference material (WRM)—exposure until a specified property change has occurred in a WRM exposed at the same time. Timing on a calendar basis has been the most widely used method of evaluating stabilities because of its simplicity, but it is subject to seasonal or year-to-year variations, especially for shorter weathering tests. Timing based on radiant exposure can reduce the seasonal and year-to-year variations in weathering due to inconsistent conditions of total solar and solar UV irradiance. Timing based on property change in a WRM can reduce variations in weathering also due to other weather factors, provided its response to all factors is similar to the response of the test materials.

Studies have shown that better correlations are obtained among exposures made at different times when timing is based on incident solar UV radiation rather than on incident total solar radiation (39,44–49). Timing based on only the portion of solar radiation that is responsible for the damage, that is, on the actinic portion identified by the activation spectrum of the material, should further improve correlations. Furthermore, since all actinic wavelengths are not equally destructive, the optimum method of timing should be on the basis of “effective” radiant exposure H_{Eff} . The latter can be determined by using the activation spectrum to weight the incident radiation in accordance with equation 1.

$$E_{\text{Eff}} = \sum_{\lambda_1}^{\lambda_2} E_0(\lambda) \frac{[\Delta(\lambda)]}{[\Delta(\lambda_{\text{max}})]} \quad (1)$$

where E_{Eff} is the effective irradiance, $E_0(\lambda)$ is the incident irradiance at a specified wavelength, $\Delta(\lambda_{\text{max}})$ is the property change at the wavelength of the activation spectrum peak, and $\Delta(\lambda)$ is the property change at a specified wavelength.

The irradiance at the wavelength corresponding to the peak of the activation spectrum, $\Delta(\lambda_{\text{max}})$, is normalized to 1.0, and irradiances at other wavelengths are multiplied by the fractional sensitivities obtained from the activation spectrum. The sum is the “effective” irradiance. The effective radiant exposure H_{Eff} is obtained by multiplying the total radiant exposure H_{Total} by the ratio of the effective irradiance divided by the total irradiance (eq. 2).

$$H_{\text{Eff}} = \left[\frac{E_{\text{Eff}}}{E_{\text{Total}}} \right] H_{\text{Total}} \quad (2)$$

Laboratory-Accelerated Weathering Tests. Laboratory-accelerated weathering devices have been used for nearly a century with increasing importance concomitant with the development of more weatherable materials and the need to determine in a short time the effects of natural exposures over prolonged periods. The importance of these devices lies in their ability to accelerate the weathering processes and provide variations of the individual weathering stresses for experimentation under controlled and consistent test conditions. They are particularly useful in research and development of new polymeric formulations and are also used for quality control and specification testing. Their application to prediction of service life under use conditions is continually improving as the technology of the instruments advances and new testing methodologies are developed (see the section Service Life Predictions).

These devices have the unique requirement of accelerating as well as simulating the effects of the natural environment. In some cases, simulation of a specialized environment is required as, for example, extreme climates or the microclimate of the interior of an automobile. Appropriate acceleration techniques require knowledge of material-specific sensitivities to the weathering factors because the validity of the tests requires that the results correlate with the effects of natural exposure. Thus, the chemical and macroscopic changes induced in materials by laboratory-accelerated weathering and the relative stabilities of

the materials tested must be the same as those induced by natural weathering. These requirements can only be realized if the critical weather factors in the environment are appropriately intensified so that their complex interactions with the materials are reproduced. Although the variability of weathering factors in nature precludes an exact representation of the actual conditions, the least that should be achieved is simulation of the full spectral actinic radiation of sunlight by the laboratory test source and appropriate irradiance, temperature, and moisture conditions. The ability to closely control the conditions is now included in the basic design of most laboratory-accelerated weathering devices.

The single most important consideration when conducting laboratory-accelerated weathering tests is the SPD of the radiation source. Degradation is wavelength-specific because both absorption of the incident radiation and initiation of degradation, caused by bond breakage by the photon energies absorbed are wavelength-specific (see the section Spectral Effects of Solar Radiation: Activation Spectra). Therefore, simulation of the incident wavelengths and their relative intensities in terrestrial solar radiation is critical to simulation of the performance of polymeric materials under natural weather conditions. A close match to the short wavelength cut-on of solar radiation is essential when testing polymers such as polycarbonate or isophthalate-based esters and others that are particularly sensitive to small changes in radiation in this region. For polymeric materials that are degraded either mainly or to a large extent by the long wavelength UV of solar radiation and for colored materials, it is essential that the artificial source contains long wavelength UV and visible radiation in order to simulate the effects of natural weathering. Nevertheless, the SPD of some exposure sources commonly used in artificial weathering devices has very little resemblance to the SPD of hemispherical solar radiation on the earth's surface, referred to as "daylight." Users should directly measure the SPD or refer to the manufacturer of the artificial test device for specific information pertaining to the SPD produced by a particular light source with any additional optical filters.

Xenon Arc Devices. Laboratory-accelerated weathering tests advanced significantly with the introduction of xenon arc devices in the 1950s in Europe and in the 1960s in the United States. The properly filtered xenon arc more closely simulates terrestrial solar radiation in both the UV and visible regions than any other artificial test source. It has become established worldwide as the radiation source for optimum simulation of terrestrial solar radiation. Because the irradiance from the xenon arc can be adjusted and controlled, the SPD is presented in Figure 3 (50) in relation to that of daylight by normalization of the two at 560 nm. The filtered xenon arc emission closely matches the spectrum of terrestrial solar radiation in the region of the solar UV cut-on as well as in the full UV and visible spectral regions; the emission also contains NIR radiation. Coated NIR absorbing filters screen out about 50% of the 800- to 1000-nm radiation, thus reducing the excessive energy in this region of the xenon arc compared with daylight and reducing the heat it causes in materials that absorb this radiation. Other filters are used with the xenon arc to simulate exposure to daylight through window glass for applications in which this is required. Procedures for

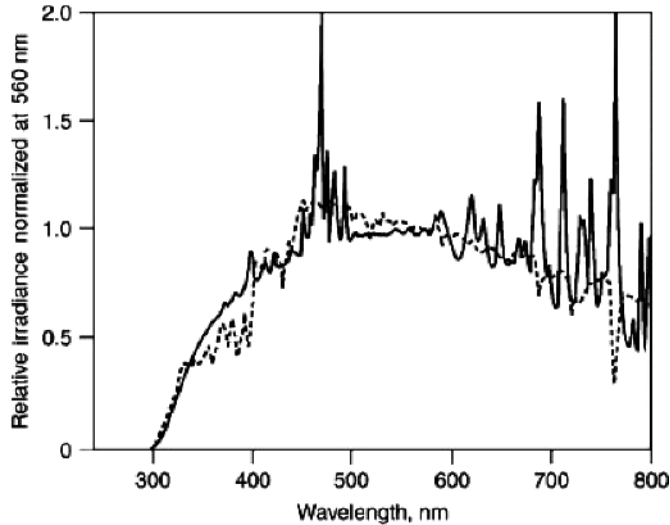


Fig. 3. Spectral power distributions of the water-cooled xenon arc with filters meeting ASTM and ISO requirements for daylight _____, and noon daylight in Miami, Fla. at 26° south exposure during the spring equinox - - - -. Courtesy of Atlas Material Testing Technology, Reprinted from Ref. 5, copyright (2000) with kind permission from Marcel Dekker, Inc LLC.

exposure of polymeric materials in xenon arc weathering devices are given in ASTM Standards D2565 (51), D4459 (52) and G155 (53), and in the ISO 4892-2 (54) standard.

Photographs of the two different lamp/specimen configurations that have been developed for weathering tests using xenon arc exposure sources are shown in Figures 4 (55) and 5 (56). The most predominant of these incorporates a cylindrical specimen rack that rotates around a centrally located vertical xenon arc lamp. Larger instruments allow for placement of specimens on more than one tier, and these tiers are commonly inclined to provide uniform irradiance levels deposited onto the exposed specimens. The rack rotates around the light source for even more uniform irradiance and temperature distribution and to allow for periodic spraying, either on the front surface during exposure to radiation or on the back surface of the specimens during a dark period. Smaller, less expensive instruments place the xenon lamp horizontally over the specimens on a flatbed specimen tray, often tilted at 5° from the horizontal to facilitate water runoff during a water spray period. Irradiance and temperature uniformity is typically not as good as in rotating-rack instruments.

Two related xenon arc systems have been developed, air cooled and water cooled. The type of cooling has some influence on the overall design and on the optical filtering system but has a negligible effect on the SPD of the U/visible radiation. The irradiance in watts per square meter (W/m^2) in a specified spectral range is photometrically monitored, and the lamp power is automatically adjusted to maintain constant irradiance. It is commonly controlled at either 340 nm, referred to as “narrowband control,” or over the full UV, 300–400 nm, referred to as “broadband control.” In some cases, control includes the full UV and

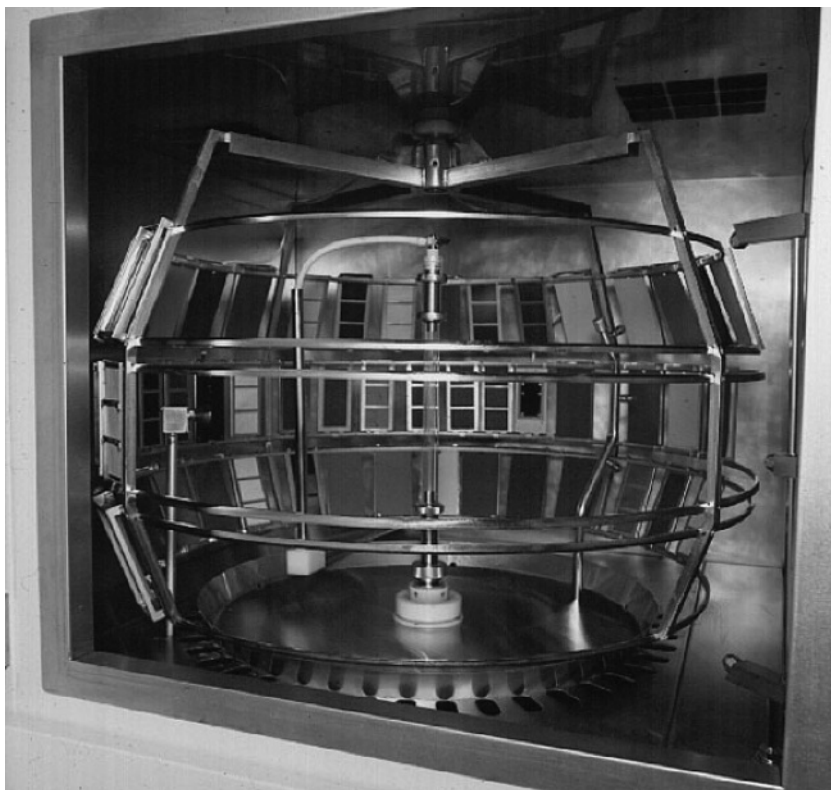


Fig. 4. Interior of a rotating-rack xenon-arc weathering instrument. Photo courtesy of Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC.

visible range, 300–800 nm. Most standard weathering tests currently specify an irradiance of 0.35 or 0.51 $\text{W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$ measured at 340 nm. The irradiance of 0.35 $\text{W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$ at 340 nm represents the daily average of irradiance measured at this wavelength over a full day in Miami, Florida, or Central Arizona at normal incidence under clear sky conditions during the spring equinox. It is half the peak irradiance of 0.68 $\text{W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$ at 340 nm measured at these locations at solar noon. The irradiance level of 0.51 $\text{W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$ at 340 nm is more representative of the type of exposures samples receive in Miami or Arizona for 2–3 h before and after solar noon and is equivalent to the irradiance setting used in ISO standards. Interest in using even higher irradiance is increasing because of the demands of the market for faster test results. This necessitates improved filter technology to better match the SPD of terrestrial solar radiation, in particular to restrict excessive heating of specimens by the xenon arc NIR radiation. The irradiance integrated over time is the radiant exposure in Joules per square meter, which may be automatically monitored. Test duration is often specified in terms of radiant exposure rather than in chronological time.

The UV radiation absorbed by any glass filters used with exposure sources cause “solarization” of the filters, resulting in a decrease in their UV transmission; the shorter the wavelength the greater the decrease. Deposition of some of



Fig. 5. Interior of a flat-bed xenon-arc weathering instrument. Photo courtesy of Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC.

the electrode material on the inside of the quartz envelope also decreases transmission. The automatic light monitoring and control systems of xenon arc devices can compensate for this to a large degree, but only at the wavelengths the device can monitor and control. Manufacturers of artificial testing instruments provide recommended lamp and filter replacement schedules, but these schedules are based on certain conditions. Lamp quality, water quality, irradiance levels, etc can cause aging to occur at higher or lower rates. The most effective way to know the appropriate time to replace these optical components is to measure the SPD directly, which has recently been made available. The criticality of an accurate SPD match as well as irradiance measurement and control of the actinic wavelengths in artificial weathering devices cannot be overemphasized, especially in connection with correlation studies and service life prediction methodologies. The use of an onboard spectroradiometer, such as the Full Spectrum Monitoring (FSM) system (57), permits continuous measurement and verification of the spectrum during exposure as well as irradiance control over the critical actinic wavelengths identified by the activation spectrum of the material.

Xenon arc devices have capabilities for temperature control as well. Standard test methods specify controlling the temperature of both the chamber air and a reference material (usually an insulated or uninsulated black metal panel). Specimens are heated to a large extent by the visible and NIR radiation they absorb but also by the heated air. Therefore, the specimen temperatures depend on the absorption properties of the materials as well as on the SPD and irradiance of the source. Generally, the black panel temperature specified is the maximum temperature that dark samples attain under use conditions, but it does not provide information on the temperature of actual test specimens of various colors

while on exposure. New technology has recently been developed for rotating-rack instruments incorporating a non-contact infrared pyrometer to measure temperatures of individual specimens as they rotate around the xenon arc lamp.

Moisture can be provided in xenon arc instruments in the form of water spray, condensation, immersion, or humidity. The type of moisture present can influence the type and rate of degradation. Many test procedures include more than one type of moisture. Commonly, the front surface of samples is periodically sprayed with cool, deionized water simultaneous with exposure to light. This imparts a thermal shock to the samples, but does not simulate natural weather conditions in which rain is unaccompanied by exposure to radiation. The formation of condensation on samples during the dark period is an effective means of simulating nighttime conditions in an environment with high moisture content, such as in South Florida. It is accomplished by providing high humidity conditions while cooling the back of the samples with ambient air or a water spray. High humidity can be as effective as liquid water. In many devices, during light or dark periods without water spray, relative humidity is automatically controlled to a specified level by moistening the air using either the evaporation or atomization technique. In devices in which wetting is by immersion, the sample is immersed in water while the surface is exposed to light.

The cycle that has been historically specified for wetting by water spray or immersion in most of the xenon arc test standards is 102 min light only followed by 18 min light plus wetting. Although it does not provide sufficient moisture to adequately represent the amount of moisture to which materials are exposed in humid climates, such as in Miami, Florida, it has been the main cycle used since the inception of laboratory-accelerated weathering tests. In the past few years, an alternate cycle providing more moisture has been included in test standards for sealants. It consists of 2 h light only followed by 2 h light plus wetting. Automotive weathering tests with xenon arc exposure use a cycle that also has equal periods of light and water spray, but most of the latter is during a dark period and includes condensation in an attempt to more closely simulate end-use conditions.

Fluorescent Ultraviolet Devices. Fluorescent UV lamps, similar in mechanical and electrical characteristics to fluorescent lamps used for residential and commercial lighting, have been developed with specific spectral distributions in the UV region. The emission properties of two most common types of fluorescent UV lamps, UVB-313 and UVA-340, are shown in Figure 6 (58) in comparison with the same daylight spectrum shown in Figure 3. Procedures for exposing polymeric materials in devices with fluorescent UV lamps are given in ASTM standards D4329 (59), D4587 (60), and G154 (61) and the ISO 4892-3 (62) standard.

In general, fluorescent UV devices produce moisture in the form of condensation during a dark period. The test surface is exposed to a heated, saturated mixture of air and water vapor. The relative humidity inside the chamber is approximately 100% during the dark cycle. The reverse side of the panel is exposed to room air that drops the panel temperature below the dew point, causing condensation (dew) on the exposed surface. The sequence and time intervals for both the UV exposure phase and condensation phase are programmable and

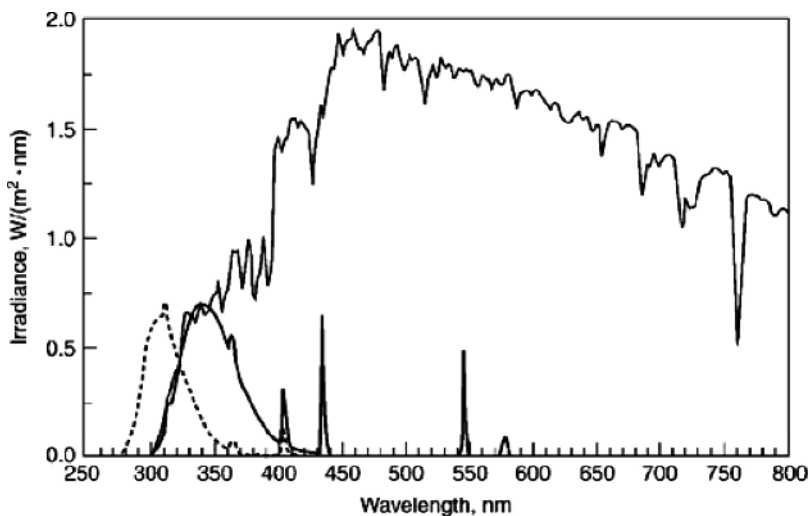


Fig. 6. Spectral power distributions of fluorescent UVB-313 lamps , fluorescent UVA-340 lamps, _____, and noon daylight in Miami, Fla. at 26° south exposure during the spring equinox. _____. Courtesy of Atlas Electric Devices, Reprinted from Ref. 5, copyright (2000) with kind permission from Marcel Dekker, Inc.

automatic. Spray cycles are commonly available as an option. Likewise, temperature can be controlled (within limits) during both the UV and condensation phases. Newer devices control irradiance at a wavelength appropriate for the type of fluorescent UV lamp used.

All fluorescent UV lamps are deficient in long-wavelength UV radiation and, except for a few mercury emission lines in the visible region, lack the visible and NIR energy present in daylight and xenon arc radiation. Thus, they are not suitable for testing materials that are sensitive to these spectral regions. Compared with stability ranking by daylight, reversals have been reported for materials exposed to these lamps as well as to the fluorescent UVA-351 lamps, which emit somewhat longer UV wavelengths (63). The UVB-313 lamps were previously commonly used because they provided rapid tests of the sensitivity of polymeric materials to UV radiation owing to the high flux of short wavelengths below the solar cut-on. However, because of the excessive short wavelength radiation, exposures to these lamps often caused reversals in stability rankings of polymers and errors in the performance of stabilizers compared with outdoor tests. These highly energetic wavelengths can initiate different mechanisms and types of degradation than the wavelengths present in solar radiation.

Because the UVB-313 type lamps generally cannot predict the outdoor performance of polymeric materials (64–66), the UVA-340 lamps are gradually replacing them in tests on polymers that are mainly sensitive to wavelengths in the 300- to 330-nm region. These lamps match the cut-on and short-wavelength spectral irradiance of solar radiation quite well in this region. However, in addition to the lack of actinic effects on materials sensitive to long wavelength UV and visible radiation, heating of colored materials by absorbed visible radiation is

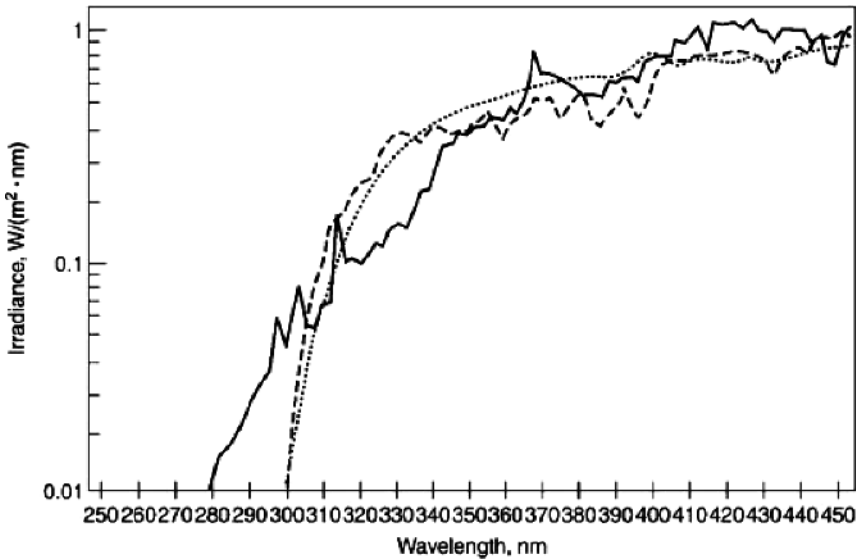


Fig. 7. Spectral power distributions of the water-cooled xenon arc with filters meeting “daylight” requirements , the filtered HMI metal halide lamp, _____ and daily average of optimum daylight in Miami, Fla. measured at normal incidence during the spring equinox under clear sky conditions - - - - . Courtesy of Atlas Material Testing Technology, Reprinted with kind permission from Hanser Gardner Publications, Inc.

absent. Therefore, in contrast to the temperature variations of differently colored materials exposed to a source that emits visible radiation, all materials attain the same (ambient) temperature. Thus, stability rankings will differ from those based on exposure to solar or solar-simulated radiation. Also, the mechanical stresses resulting from the heating and cooling of the absorbing surface layer are absent, resulting in reduced tendency to crack. For all these reasons, it is important to simulate the full SPD of the source to which the materials will be exposed under use conditions.

Metal Halide Lamps. The UV emission curve of the borosilicate-filtered menaury mercury medium-arc iodide (HMI) metal halide lamp is shown in Figure 7 (67) compared with the emission curves of daylight and filtered xenon arc radiation. It has a multiline spectrum, which can be considered to be a continuum for purposes of material testing. It gives a relatively good simulation of terrestrial solar radiation in the UV region above 300 nm but requires additional filtering of the short wavelength radiation for better simulation of daylight. Their high efficiency and low infrared output, which eliminates the need for water cooling, makes these sources ideally suited for use in large-scale multiple source arrays and are effective in thermal loading studies. However, metal halide lamps have technical problems that make them difficult to use in weathering systems. One is the dependence of the SPD of the radiation on the temperature of the lamp, thus requiring as constant a temperature as possible in the vicinity of the lamp.

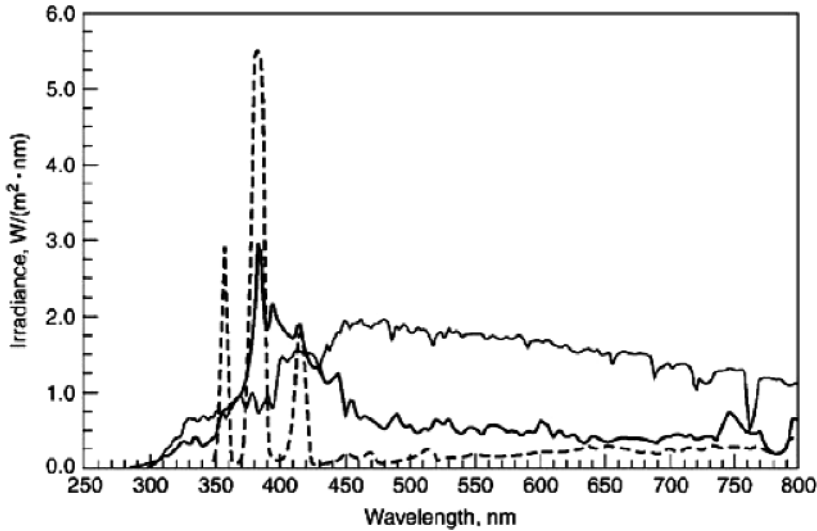


Fig. 8. Spectral power distributions of the enclosed carbon arc _____, the open flame carbon arc with Correx D filters _____, and noon daylight in Miami, Fla. at 26° south exposure during the spring equinox _____. Courtesy of Atlas Electric Devices, Reprinted from Ref. 5, copyright (2000), with kind permission from Marcel Dekker, Inc.

Because of the effect of temperature on the SPD, the latter changes with change in power. Therefore, the ability to alter the level of irradiance by changing the power is limited to about 5–10%. Reduction in irradiance is accomplished either by the use of close-meshed wire filters or by increase in the distance between the lamp and the sample. The other problem is the variation in SPD from one lamp to another of the same type. It is remedied by measuring the SPD of each lamp and selecting one that is applicable.

Carbon Arcs. Figure 8 (68) compares the representative UV/visible emission of two types of carbon arc radiation sources with daylight measured at noon at a 26°-tilt angle in Miami, FL during the spring equinox. The enclosed carbon arc uses both solid and cored electrodes burning within a semisealed borosilicate glass globe that provides optical filtering of the short wavelength UV radiation and an oxygen-deficient atmosphere to enhance the efficiency of the arc. The SPD differs significantly from that of terrestrial solar radiation in both the UV and visible regions. The enclosed carbon arc has a much weaker effect than solar radiation on materials that absorb only short wavelength UV radiation, but a stronger effect on materials that also absorb long wavelength UV radiation. Therefore, the stability ranking of materials that differ in the relative UV absorption characteristics in these regions can be expected to be distorted by this source compared with exposure to daylight. Procedures for using enclosed carbon arc devices for exposure of polymeric materials are given in ASTM standards D5031 (69), D6360 (70), and G153 (71).

The open-flame carbon arc device (also referred to as the Sunshine carbon arc) uses copper-coated electrodes operating in a free-flow of air in an open-flame

type lamp. The unfiltered arc emits a significant amount of short wavelength UV radiation below the solar cut-on. The SPD in Figure 8 represents the emission through Corex D borosilicate glass filters, commonly used to improve simulation to daylight in this region. Although the SPD of the radiation of the filtered open-flame carbon-arc is considerably improved over that of the enclosed carbon arc, it is still considered a poor match to terrestrial solar radiation. The open flame carbon arc used without the glass filters for faster testing, often produces reversals in stability rankings compared with outdoor testing because of the excessive amount of high energy radiation below the solar cut-on. It can also result in differences in degradation mechanisms and types of failure. Procedures for using the filtered open flame carbon arc devices for exposures of polymeric materials are given in ASTM standards D822 (72), D1499 (73), and G152 (74).

Both types of carbon arc devices have capabilities for periodic water spray on the samples and condensation during a dark period as well as for humidity and temperature control. The carbon arc devices typically require daily replacement of the carbon rods, cleaning of the filters or globes and periodic replacement of the latter because of changes in their transmission characteristics with exposure to UV radiation. There is a large volume of historical data using carbon arcs, and a number of test methods still specify their use; but this technology is largely being replaced with xenon arc systems.

Laboratory-Accelerated versus Natural Weathering. Laboratory-accelerated weathering tests have played an important role in development of polymeric materials with highly improved weatherability. However, because all types and modes of stresses present in an outdoor exposure cannot be simulated in a laboratory-accelerated test, the latter cannot replace natural exposure. It is a complimentary technique, the usefulness of which largely depends on how closely it reproduces the chemical and macroscopic changes in a material and the relative weatherabilities of materials under environmental conditions. Thus, correlation is a fundamental issue that must be considered when selecting a laboratory-accelerated weathering method. The critical weather factors, that is, the SPD of the radiation, temperature, and moisture, must be reasonably representative of those in the service environment and their effects accelerated without distorting the type of failure and mechanism of degradation as well as the stability ranking of the materials under natural exposure conditions. Higher irradiance than materials encounter under use conditions is very effective in accelerating degradation by laboratory weathering, but the irradiance must be below the level that distorts the degradation processes. Similarly, higher temperature is effective in accelerating the degradation reactions that follow bond breakage by the actinic radiation, but the temperature cannot exceed that which alters the degradation mechanism or distorts stability rankings. Acceleration of degradation must not interfere with good correlation with natural weathering (refer to the section on Correlation). Appropriate laboratory-accelerated tests that correlate with environmental effects have the potential of providing information to predict lifetimes of polymeric materials under natural weathering conditions. However, before drawing any final conclusions concerning the ability of a polymeric material to withstand the outdoor environment based on laboratory-accelerated weathering tests, it is necessary to validate the results by conducting outdoor exposure tests.

SPD of the Radiation Source. The SPD of the radiation source is the most critical weathering factor as degradation of polymeric materials, which is wavelength specific, is initiated by the actinic radiation absorbed. If the SPD of the radiation source used in the laboratory-accelerated test does not closely simulate the SPD of terrestrial solar radiation, the degradation mechanism and type of failure produced in materials can differ from those due to exposure to environmental conditions. The inability to simulate the degradation processes eliminates the possibility of predicting the service life of the materials based on laboratory-accelerated tests. Solar radiation on the earth's surface, shown in Figure 1, has a short wavelength UV cut-on of about 298 nm. The intensity is very weak at the shortest UV wavelengths and increases nearly exponentially to about 500 nm in the visible region. The intensity decreases from there, but the radiation continues into the NIR region. A close match to the cut-on wavelength and the SPD of the short UV wavelengths of solar radiation by the artificial source is important for tests of materials that are mainly degraded by these wavelengths. However, simulation of the SPD in the long wavelength UV and, at least, short wavelength visible regions is also essential for testing materials that are either solely or largely degraded by these regions (refer to Table 1). In a number of aromatic type polymers, different degradation mechanisms and type of degradation result from exposure to short versus long UV wavelengths. Absorption of short UV wavelengths results in photo-Fries rearrangements of the chemical structure, whereas absorption of longer UV wavelengths initiates photooxidation reactions involving free radicals. Therefore, the predominant mechanism of degradation of these polymeric materials is determined by the relative intensities of short-to-long wavelengths responsible for degradation and thus on the SPD of the radiation source. Some examples of differences in macroscopic changes in these polymers are bond scission versus cross-linking, chalking versus cracking and crazing of TiO₂-pigmented systems, and yellowing versus bleaching of the yellow color. The importance of simulating the SPD of the full solar spectrum is shown in Table 1 by the large differences in solar UV wavelengths to which different types of polymers are sensitive. Differences in the actinic wavelengths, that is, those responsible for degradation of a specific polymeric material, can be determined by comparison of the activation spectra of the material obtained using each of the radiation sources (refer to the section on Spectral Effects of Solar Radiation: Activation Spectra). Because of differences among polymeric materials in their absorption capabilities and in the effect of the absorbed radiation, the stability ranking of materials can vary with differences in emission properties of radiation.

Sources. The effectiveness of stabilizers, such as free radical scavengers and excited state quenchers, that act by interfering with the mechanism of degradation is dependent on the predominant mechanism of degradation and thus on the SPD of the radiation source to which the material is exposed. For example, HALS can only protect polycarbonate and aromatic polyurethane against the mechanism initiated by long wavelength UV. They are ineffective against the degradation caused by short wavelength UV. For this reason, evaluation of the performance of HALS in these polymers by exposure to a radiation source that primarily emits short UV wavelengths and lacks the long wavelength UV

radiation representative of solar radiation will give misleading information on their ability to protect the polymers against solar radiation. Also, significant differences have been shown among various types of exposures in the ability of HALS to protect against photooxidation of acrylic melamine coatings.

Owing to variation in the wavelengths primarily responsible for damage to a specific polymeric material with differences in the SPD of the radiation source, the screening requirements and thus the type of UV absorber required will differ. For example, activation spectra data showed that yellowing of a polyarylate film is caused mainly by 310- to 340-nm radiation when it is exposed to fluorescent UVB lamps, but by 335- to 365-nm radiation when it is exposed to solar radiation. Thus, this artificial test source cannot provide valid data on the protective effectiveness of an additive against solar radiation.

Irradiance. The solar irradiance levels to which materials are exposed under use conditions vary widely, depending on the geographic location, season, time of day, and exposure angle. Outdoor weathering tests are commonly carried out in geographic locations in which the materials are exposed to the most intense irradiance. In North America, these are South Florida and central Arizona where at solar noon on a clear day the UV irradiance at 340 nm reaches a maximum of about $0.68 \text{ W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$. During the 2–3 h before and after solar noon, the irradiance at 340 nm is approximately $0.50 \text{ W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$. In laboratory-accelerated xenon arc tests, the irradiance level is rarely higher than this and, historically, most ASTM standard xenon arc test methods have specified an irradiance of $0.35 \text{ W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$ at 340 nm. Acceleration of degradation is achieved by the 24-h exposure to the radiation in contrast to the few hours of solar irradiance at levels of about $0.50 \text{ W}/(\text{m}^2 \cdot \text{nm})$ at 340 nm. Solar irradiance is considerably lower in the early morning and late afternoon hours and does not exist during the nighttime periods. The xenon arc dose rate is three to eight times the rate in Miami, Florida.

One of the most obvious ways to shorten test time is to increase the irradiance level. However, use of high irradiance weathering tests requires an understanding of the effect of the increase in irradiance on predicting the performance of materials under environmental conditions. Simulation of the effects of natural weathering would be compromised if high irradiance levels alter the mechanism of degradation. Also, because all materials are not affected equally by an increase in irradiance, higher levels of irradiance than materials are exposed to under environmental conditions can alter the stability ranking of the materials. The dependence of the rate of degradation on the irradiance level is complex. It varies with the type of material, the formulation, including type of stabilizer, and wavelengths responsible for the degradation. For many polymeric materials, the degradation rate is not a linear function of irradiance. For example, rates of photooxidation of polypropylene have been shown to be proportional to various fractional powers of the light intensity ranging from the square root to the first power (75). The quantum yield of degradation, that is, the amount of degradation for a specific number of photons absorbed, often decreases with increasing irradiance. In a free radical process, this is partly explained by the "cage effect." Because of the higher concentrations of free radicals formed at higher irradiance levels, the likelihood of recombination is increased and reaction with oxygen and other

molecules is reduced. Owing to more rapid oxygen depletion at the higher irradiance levels, oxygen diffusion from the surface inward becomes the rate-limiting factor at some distance from the surface in photooxidation reactions. In addition, an increase in temperature accompanies an increase in irradiance of solar and solar-simulated radiation with its consequences on weathering tests of polymeric materials discussed in the next section of this article. Thus, the reciprocity law does not necessarily apply in many weathering tests, that is, doubling the intensity may not double the rate of degradation. A method to determine the effect of increased intensity of solar radiation at several temperature levels has been reported (76)

Temperature. Temperature can have a significant influence on the degradation of polymeric materials through increase in the rate and type of secondary reactions following bond breakage by the absorbed actinic radiation. In the geographic locations in which outdoor exposure tests are commonly carried out, atmospheric temperature as well as solar irradiance are highest. The temperature of the materials is higher than that of the atmosphere since a large portion of the absorbed visible and NIR solar radiation is converted to heat. Temperatures of polymeric materials as high as 120°C have been reported inside a closed automobile exposed to solar radiation (12) but are lower when exposed to the atmosphere. Specimens mounted on a thermal insulating backing have higher temperature than unbacked specimens and dark colored specimens have a higher temperature than white specimens.

During exposure to the radiation in laboratory-accelerated tests, the temperature is generally controlled at levels between 60°C and 89°C, depending on the material tested. While degradation can be accelerated by testing at temperatures higher than materials are exposed to under use conditions, caution must be exercised to avoid altering the mechanism of degradation and/or producing unrealistic types of degradation. The photodegradation process is complex, involving many chemical reactions with different activation energies. High temperatures accelerate reactions with high activation energies more than reactions with low activation energies. Since the latter may predominate under in use exposure conditions, high temperatures can alter the normal degradation processes. Often, a different degradation mechanism is triggered at a specific temperature, particularly if the temperature exceeds the glass transition temperature of the polymer. With an increase in the temperature, the rate of decomposition of hydroperoxides or of diffusion of oxygen or free radicals formed in primary processes increases allowing secondary reactions to take place that only occur at high temperatures. Change in the degradation mechanism from that produced under natural weathering conditions precludes simulation of the effects of environmental exposures and thus the potential of predicting lifetimes under in use conditions based on laboratory-accelerated tests. Since the effect of temperature varies with the type of polymer and its formulations, temperatures higher than those encountered in enduse environments can distort the stability rankings of materials in addition to causing unrealistic aging behavior in some of the polymeric materials.

The temperature differences exhibited by differently colored specimens exposed to solar radiation can only be simulated by a laboratory-accelerated weathering device that uses a full spectrum radiation source having an SPD

representative of that of solar radiation. In the latter, the black panel used for temperature control is largely heated by the visible and NIR radiation it absorbs. Heated chamber air supplies the additional heat required to reach the specified temperature. The temperature of colored specimens varies with the amount of radiation they absorb, being highest for black and lowest for white specimens. In contrast, in devices that use fluorescent UV lamps, because they lack visible and NIR radiation, hot chamber air is the main source of heat for temperature control by the black panel. Therefore, all samples, regardless of color, are heated to the same temperature that of the chamber air, which is considerably hotter than the chamber air in devices with a full spectrum radiation source. Thus, for the same black panel temperature control, in both types of devices the black specimens will attain the same temperature during exposure, but the white specimens will be exposed at a much lower temperature in the device with the full spectrum radiation source. The difference in temperatures of colored specimens will vary with the color.

Owing to the difference in the temperature of white samples in the two types of devices, exposure of an acrylic white sealant for 2000 h in each resulted in a major difference in the effect of weathering on the surface of the material (77). The black panel temperatures were 60°C in the fluorescent UVA-340 lamp device and 63°C in the xenon arc device. In the fluorescent UV device, the exposure resulted in substantial surface erosion and melting of the material at the edges as well as formation of rigid surface layers. Exposure in the xenon arc device resulted in very little change, similar to results of outdoor tests of the sealant. The most logical explanation is the difference in sample temperature in the two types of exposure.

Moisture. Moisture is one of the critical weathering factors contributing to degradation of polymeric materials exposed to environmental conditions. The various ways in which moisture, in combination with absorbed actinic radiation, can promote degradation is described in the section Weathering Factors and Their Effect on Polymeric Materials. The processes of photoinitiated oxidation and hydrolysis are enhanced by the presence of sufficient moisture. This was shown in a study on the effect of relative humidity on the photodegradation of an acrylic melamine coating. Both the rate and magnitude of chain scission and oxidation increased with an increase in relative humidity (78). While some polymers are themselves sensitive to moisture, often due to the moisture sensitivity of formulation ingredients, moisture can have a significant effect on weathering of the polymeric materials. For example, some plasticizers in PVC can be hydrolyzed under hot, humid conditions by traces of the hydrogen chloride released on exposure of PVC to UV radiation, resulting in significant loss in elongation.

Because water absorption by polymers from a humid atmosphere or by direct wetness is a diffusion-controlled process, the frequency and duration of the exposure to moisture is often a critical parameter. Weathering processes can be accelerated by more frequent swelling and contraction than that occurring during natural exposures. The length of the required wet period depends on the water diffusion coefficient and water absorption capacity of the material as well as on its thickness. Long periods of moisture may be required for some polymeric types.

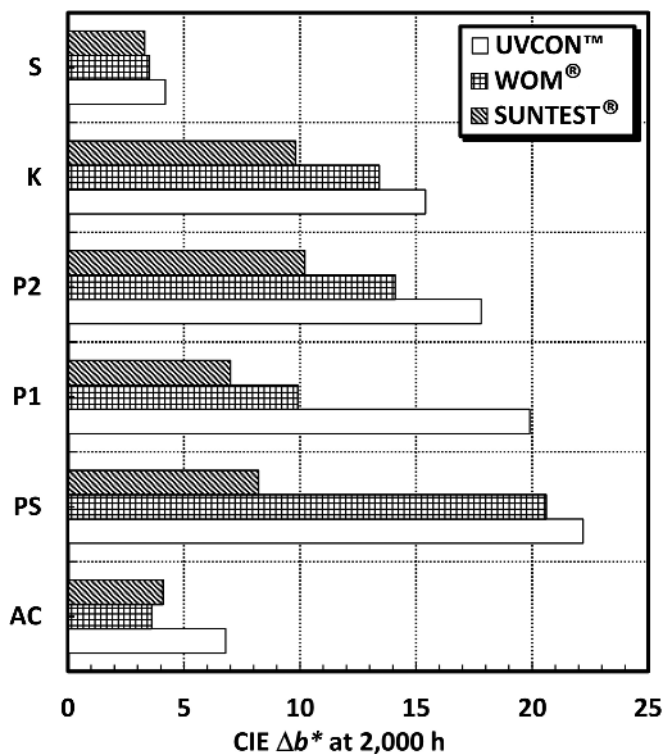


Fig. 9. Dependence of lightfastness (yellowing in terms of CIE Δb^*) of sealants (S = silicone; K = Kraton-based thermoplastic; P₂ and P₁ = one-component polyurethanes (P₂ softer than P₁); PS = polysulfide; AC = siliconized acrylic) on type of exposure (UVCON = fluorescent UVA-340; WOM = xenon arc with moisture; SUNTEST = xenon arc without moisture). Reprinted from Ref. 77, copyright 2000, with kind permission from RILEM Publications S.A.R.L.

The fact that moisture can have a significant influence on the degradation of polymeric materials initiated by absorbed actinic radiation is shown in Figure 9 (79). It compares data on the degradation of various types of sealants based on yellowing by three types of exposures (77). The WOM and SUNTEST are both xenon arc devices, but in the WOM, samples are periodically sprayed with water during exposure, whereas in the SUNTEST they are tested in the absence of added moisture. The irradiance level and black panel temperature were the same in both devices, 0.35 W/(m².nm) at 340 nm and 63°C, respectively. The UVCON contained fluorescent UVA-340 lamps and was operated using the cycle of 8-h radiation at 60°C followed by 4-h condensation at 50°C in the absence of UV radiation. The irradiance was estimated to be 0.7 W/(m².nm) at 340 nm. Although the irradiance at 340 nm is twice that in the xenon arc devices, it lacks the long wavelength UV of the xenon arc devices and exposes samples to radiation only two-thirds of the total exposure time. Exposure in all three devices was for 2000 h.

Differences in the increase in yellowness by the two xenon arc exposures varied with the type of sealant. However, for four of the six sealants, the WOM produced more severe yellowing than the SUNTEST. The difference was largest

for exposure of polysulfide, the polymer most sensitive to moisture, the weather factor that differed between the two types of xenon arc tests. The presence of moisture during exposure in the WOM also had a significant effect on the stability ranking of these sealants. Tests in the WOM ranked polysulfide as less stable than the Kraton-based thermoplastic (*K*) and polyurethane 2 (*P*₂), but tests in the SUNTEST, which lacked moisture, ranked polysulfide as more stable than *K* and *P*₂. Thus, the data demonstrate that for materials that are sensitive to moisture it is an important weathering factor

Experience has shown that the more intense yellowing of the samples exposed in the UVCON is due to the lack of long wavelength UV and visible radiation in the emission of the fluorescent UV lamps. These wavelengths are known to photobleach the yellow species produced by short wavelength UV radiation. Thus, photobleaching concurrent with the formation of yellow species on exposure to xenon arc and solar radiation is absent during exposure to fluorescent UV lamps.

Correlation. The term, "correlation," as applied to weathering tests, implies that the laboratory-accelerated weathering test produces similar weatherability rankings for a series of materials, that is, *rank correlation*, or the same types of failure modes as weathering under environmental conditions. The term has also been used when comparing tests by linear regression analysis of the weathering data or in terms of similar profiles of graphed data for change versus exposure time or radiant exposure. The term, "correlation" has often been erroneously used for the relation between tests in terms of exposure times to produce equal levels of degradation. The latter is the "acceleration factor." Ideally, the laboratory-accelerated test should satisfy all correlation criteria to provide a reliable early evaluation of the weatherability of a polymeric material. Good correlation between laboratory-accelerated and environmental weathering tests depends on simulation of the SPD of the natural source, environmental surface temperature of the materials, type and total amount of moisture, relative humidity level during exposure to the radiation, and the light/dark cycle. The reasons for the importance of closely matching the SPD of the artificial test source to the SPD of terrestrial solar radiation and the consequences of exposing materials to an abnormally high level of irradiance or temperature were described in earlier sections of Laboratory-Accelerated versus Natural Weathering. For some materials, continuous exposure to light without a dark period can preclude correlation with natural exposures due to elimination of critical dark reactions that occur during outdoor exposures. Simulation of the natural balance of all critical weathering factors by the laboratory-accelerated test is required to reproduce the degradation processes that occur under environmental conditions, that is, provide good correlation. Because of the synergistic effects of the weather factors and the complex nature of the weathering processes, acceleration by intensification of one factor alone can distort degradation mechanisms, failure modes, and stability ranking of materials. In the absence of good correlation with natural weathering degradation processes based on all the latter criteria, the laboratory-accelerated weathering test cannot be used in methodologies to predict service life of polymeric materials.

Factors that can interfere with correlation between laboratory-accelerated tests and natural exposures are described in ASTM G151 (80). Performance

rankings can vary with the duration of exposure and thus with the extent of degradation at which they are determined. Therefore, correlation should be evaluated at an optimum point in the exposures (64). The extent of correlation between two types of tests may also depend on the material property measured as the criterion of degradation. Similar to the effect of the season on the test results of some materials in which the outdoor weathering test is started, in laboratory-accelerated tests for some materials, whether they are exposed first to a dry period with radiation or first to a wet, dark period can alter their resistance to weathering (81). Some studies have claimed a high correlation between artificial and natural weathering, at least for certain performance properties. For example, in the study shown in Figure 9, very good correlation was obtained between xenon arc exposure that included water spray and humidity control and exposure in South Florida. Simulation in laboratory-accelerated weathering tests of the atmospheric acid precipitations to which materials are subjected in outdoor exposures has been shown to improve correlations based on stability ranking and type of degradation for various types of polymeric materials including sealants and automotive clearcoats (20,21,82,83). Test conditions that give good correlation with one exposure site for one type and formulation of a material do not necessarily assure good correlation to other sites or for other materials.

Acceleration Factors. The appropriate term for the relation between test times for laboratory-accelerated and outdoor weathering exposures that produce the same extent of degradation is *acceleration factor*. It is the time under natural exposure divided by the time in the accelerated test, both based on the same criterion of degradation. Acceleration over "real-time" weathering can be accomplished in several ways (1) by continuous exposure to the critical weather factors, uninterrupted by the diurnal cycle and variations in weather conditions; (2) by continuous exposure to irradiance levels that are only encountered during optimum conditions outdoors; and (3) by setting irradiance, temperatures, relative humidity, and thermal and moisture cycles to higher stress levels than materials encounter under end-use conditions. The acceleration factor is only valid if the laboratory-accelerated weathering test does not alter the degradation mechanism, cause unnatural failure modes or distort stability ranking of the test materials, that is, provides good correlation with outdoor exposure. For years, accelerated weathering test methods, both in the laboratory and outdoors, have only moderately intensified the stress factors. An acceleration factor of 10 has generally been considered the maximum for obtaining good correlation. The belief is that the greater the acceleration, the poorer the correlation. Very little attention has been given to studies on greater intensification of stress factors and its effect on correlations with weathering under in use conditions and thus on its use in predicting long-term service life of polymeric materials. However, due to the development of polymeric materials capable of 20 or more years of satisfactory service, there is a need for highly accelerated tests to evaluate new materials for this application. Therefore, techniques to further accelerate degradation by both natural and laboratory-accelerated weathering tests have been surfacing to be followed by verifications of their validities.

Acceleration factors are material dependent and can be significantly different for each material and for different formulations of the same material.

Therefore, it is not possible to establish a single acceleration factor for a laboratory-accelerated test to predict lifetimes under natural weather conditions for a variety of materials and formulations. Owing to the complexity of the effect of intensification of weather factors on a material, the acceleration factor cannot be estimated but must be determined experimentally for each material. For many polymeric materials, the rate of degradation is not simply a linear function of the level of irradiance. The relation between the increase in irradiance and rate of degradation and the effect of the increase in temperature on the degradation vary with the material. In addition, moisture and other weather factors also have a significant effect on the degradation. Therefore, there is no substitute for experimentally determining the acceleration factor for a given material.

A practical approach to determining acceleration factors for materials that are expected to have long life expectancy is to determine the acceleration factor during the early stages of weathering using a sensitive analytical technique for measuring chemical changes (84,85). These are the precursors to the macroscopic property changes that occur later in the weathering processes. The acceleration factor can then be used to extrapolate the time to failure for the macroscopic property change determined by the laboratory-accelerated test to estimate the time under natural exposure conditions. The validity of this technique is based on the reliance that both types of exposure cause the same degradation mechanism and have the same relation between chemical and macroscopic property change. Also, it requires that the acceleration factor is consistent throughout the service life of the material. A curve-fitting method to determine the "acceleration shift factor" has been developed (86) to account for change in the acceleration factor with progression of weathering. However, the technique requires that the profiles of the graphed property change versus exposure are similar for the two types of exposures.

The acceleration factor for a specific material depends not only on the type of laboratory-accelerated test, the test parameters, and the property change measured but also on the geographical environmental conditions of outdoor exposure and on the specific type of outdoor test. Furthermore, variability in the rate of the degradation in both the laboratory-accelerated and natural exposures can have a significant effect on the acceleration factor calculated. Therefore, the latter should be based on a sufficient number of exterior and laboratory-accelerated exposures and at least two, preferably three, replicate specimens in each test so that time to failure in each can be analyzed accurately. Standardizing test conditions with a reference material, such as polystyrene, in devices that provide for control of weather factors, can improve reproducibility of laboratory tests. Often, problems related to repeatability and reproducibility in test results can be traced to differences in the samples, either because of differences in polymer batches or because of nonuniformity among test specimens from a single batch. Even specimens cut from the same sheet often vary significantly. Poor reproducibility in weathering among specimens from the same production lot can be due to the nonuniform distribution of stabilizers or UV absorbing impurities that initiate the degradation. Aliphatic-type polymers are particularly prone to this problem since only the impurities in these polymers are capable of absorbing terrestrial solar radiation. In aromatic-type polymers with aliphatic moieties, UV

absorbing impurities are also largely responsible for the degradation and thus for poor reproducibility in weathering of these test specimens. Preparation of samples and their treatment during storage can have a substantial effect on the test results.

Durations of Exposure. The exposure duration is a very important consideration in testing the weatherability of materials. Outdoor exposure tests are generally carried out in a geographic location in which stress factors are more severe than they are under in use conditions. In addition, depending on the type of outdoor weathering test, one or more of the weather factors is often intensified. Therefore, the exposure duration necessary to evaluate the material's weatherability for its intended useful lifetime is shorter than the latter. The duration required varies with the geographic location, the type of outdoor test, the in use geographic location and the expected, and useful service life of the material.

The duration of the laboratory-accelerated weathering test is critical to its validity for testing the weatherability of materials. If the duration of the test is insufficient to fail a material known to have poor weathering performance in the intended application, the test is invalid as it cannot identify an unacceptable material, which is one of the major reasons for doing these tests. The exposure duration required for one type of polymeric material under specific laboratory weathering test conditions cannot be assumed to be applicable for other types of polymeric materials. Therefore, specification of the minimum exposure duration must be based on experimental determination of the time to failure of an unacceptable product for each type of polymeric material. The ultimate goal for the use of accelerated weathering tests is to be able to determine in a short time the suitability of a material for its intended lifetime. A very rough estimate of the required duration for this purpose can be obtained by extrapolation of the time to failure by the laboratory-accelerated test using the acceleration factor determined for the type of material of interest. For example, assuming an acceleration factor of 10, absence of failure after 1 year of exposure in the laboratory-accelerated test device can qualify the material for at least 10 years of service. Because the in-service environmental conditions are generally less harsh than the outdoor test conditions, the serviceability can be expected to be more than 10 years.

Generally, for quality control and specification requirements, laboratory-accelerated weathering tests are carried out for a specified test time or radiant exposure. Evaluation is based on pass/fail criteria and the statistically determined repeatability of the combined test exposure and property measurement. In the absence of statistical information, acceptance should be based on comparison of the weatherability of the test materials with the weatherability of one or more control materials of known weatherability exposed at the same time. Three replicates of the test and control specimens should be exposed to determine the significance of weatherability differences using analysis of variance. When exposing for a single period, the latter should be selected to give the largest performance difference between test materials. However, as extent of degradation is usually not a linear function of exposure, relative weatherabilities are more accurately evaluated in terms of the time or radiant exposure required to produce a defined property change in the material than in terms of property change after a specified

period of exposure. The required periodic evaluations of the changes in the test and control materials also provide information on rates and direction of property changes as a function of exposure time or radiant exposure. In some tests, for example, the AATCC Test Methods (87), timing is based on a specified change of color in a weathering reference material, such as the AATCC Blue Wool Lightfastness Standards. However, these reference materials are only applicable to tests with minimum moisture and low heat because of their sensitivity to these factors. Change in color of test specimens compared to that of the standards has also been used to rank the lightfastness of specimens.

Evaluations of Weathering. Weathering effects on all polymeric materials proceed from the irradiated surface inward. Therefore, the effects can be detected sooner by surface-oriented techniques than by methods that measure changes in bulk properties, such as mechanical changes. The latter becomes evident only after prolonged exposure when degradation has penetrated a sufficient distance into the material. Surface changes can take the form of discoloration, crazing, cracking, chalking (whitening), loss of gloss, and surface erosion. Most of these are appearance changes, some of which may be measured photometrically, and others are commonly assessed subjectively by visual inspection. The most frequently used criteria for determining the weather resistance of polymeric products that will be subjected to mechanical stress are tensile (or flexural) strength, elongation, impact strength, hardness, and elastic modulus. These techniques and others are described in several reviews on the subject (78,79). The particular test method used to evaluate weathering effects depends on the type of polymer and the appearance or mechanical property most important in its application. The specific criteria used to determine the effects of weathering can significantly influence the acceleration factor and correlation between the laboratory-accelerated weathering test and outdoor weathering.

Most of the macroscopic property changes require exposure in laboratory-accelerated devices for an impractically long length of time when evaluating weatherabilities of products designed for useful lifetimes of more than 5 years. An alternative to further intensifying exposure conditions to shorten test time is evaluation of weathering effects by sensitive analytical methods that detect molecular (chemical) changes. Infrared spectroscopy provides information on the chemical structure of a material. It is particularly useful in identifying the formation of new functional groups, as, for example, carboxyls, hydroperoxides, and free radicals resulting from photooxidation reactions. It is also useful for determining the reduction of existing functional groups caused by the breaking of chemical bonds. Other methods include UV spectroscopy and measurements of fluorescence and chemiluminescence (88–91). The value of these methods lies in the extent to which the changes measured are related to the macroscopic changes of the polymers.

Service Life Predictions. The service life of a polymeric material is the period of time after it is placed into use during which all relevant properties exceed minimum acceptable values while the material is being routinely maintained. Failure occurs when one or more critical properties required for its use falls below a predefined level. Both natural and laboratory-accelerated weathering tests, even those with enhanced stress factors, require impractically long durations for testing polymeric materials expected to have acceptable performance for more

than 5 years. Therefore, service life prediction of polymeric materials under actual use conditions is essential for the development of new materials. Although a need has existed for many years for a methodology capable of providing reliable service life predictions based on short-term accelerated weathering tests, there is currently no commonly accepted predictive method. The prediction of service life based on accelerated weathering test data is still largely an unsolved weathering problem because of the extensive experimental requirements and complexity of the methodologies proposed.

The apparently simplest and most direct approach to predicting lifetimes under natural weathering is extrapolation of the time to failure by laboratory-accelerated weathering using an experimentally determined acceleration factor relating exposure times in the laboratory test versus outdoor weathering for the same property change. However, determination of the acceleration factor is not a simple, direct procedure and has many limitations in addition to the requirement to determine it for each polymer type and formulation (refer to the section Acceleration Factors). Regression analysis is another technique for deducing lifetimes under natural weathering from lifetimes in laboratory-accelerated tests. It is based on measurements of property changes as a function of exposure by both types of tests and depends on good linear relations over the period measured or on finding the mathematical expression between property change and exposure that gives a linear relationship (92). However, the same limitations exist as those inherent in using acceleration factors. Recently, a simple empirical method of estimating lifetimes of polymeric materials by comparison with control materials was reported (93). It consists of exposing test materials in the laboratory-accelerated test device simultaneously with several control materials having similar composition and construction to the test materials and a range of known failure times outdoors. As for all service life methods, it requires that the accelerated tests produce the same failure modes as natural exposure. In addition, it requires that the rank correlation among materials exposed in the two types of exposures is very high. If these conditions prevail and the service life of the control materials is well defined, the service life of the test material can be bracketed by two control materials.

Various forms of exponential expressions have been used to quantitatively describe the kinetic relations between weather factors and change in properties of polymeric materials (94–96). An approach referred to as the concept of “exposure parameters” was able to successfully predict 2–3 years of outdoor performance of a large number of materials based on several months of accelerated testing (95,96). It has the potential for predicting long-term outdoor weatherability at any location on the basis of accelerated indoor tests using appropriate local weather factors. Investigations have also included mathematical modeling of the effects of weather factors on the degradation process based on data obtained by varying stress levels in laboratory-accelerated tests. One proposed method (97) is based on the “cumulative damage theory,” which assumes, among other things, that the deterioration of a material is a cumulative effect of individual deteriorating stresses, and their effects on physical properties can be represented by a general form of a kinetic equation. The cumulative effect during service life aging is then estimated for various levels and types of natural stress conditions by

computer simulation. The mathematical treatment includes determination of the survival distribution function to account for the fact that all specimens do not fail at the same time. In another study (98), a service life prediction model was developed based on tests of four aircraft coatings using three stress factors in the laboratory-accelerated test, UV, temperature, and sulfuric acid aerosols. Probability density functions obtained at the high stress levels were extrapolated to in-service conditions by assuming an Arrhenius life-stress relationship for temperature and an inverse power life-stress relationship with a power coefficient of 0.46 for UV irradiance. The aerosol effect was treated as an indicator variable using the value of zero without aerosol and the value of one when aerosol was included. The service life predictions of times to failure compared favorably with times to failure determined from experimental tests under in-service conditions that lasted for more than 60 months. Mathematical modeling in an ongoing study (99) of other types of coatings and polymeric materials also uses reliability-based analyses of laboratory-accelerated data in which weathering is characterized by frequency of failures.

The validity of the estimates of service life depends on the validity of a number of assumptions including the assumption that the failure mechanism at the higher stress levels of the accelerated tests is the same as the failure mechanism under in use conditions. Accurate service life predictions also depend on reliable laboratory test data requiring precise control of the variables in the laboratory-accelerated test device, the appropriate number of replicate specimens so that life distribution information can be extracted and translated to service life predictions, accurate quantitative data on environmental factors, and considerable experimental effort.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Weathering” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 14, pp. 779–795, by J. E. Clark, National Bureau of Standards; “Weathering” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 796–827, by N. D. Searle, Consultant, Plastics and Chemicals; “Weathering” in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 4, pp. 629–659, by N. D. Searle, Chemical Consultant.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. N. Robinson, *Solar Radiation*, Elsevier Science Publishing Co(Inc.), New York, 1966, Chapt. 5, pp. 161–195.
2. ASTM G173-08, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
3. ASTM D1435-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.01**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
4. J. E. Pickett, D. A. Gibson, and M. M. Gardner, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **93**, 1597–1606 (2008).
5. N. D. Searle, in S. H. Hamid, ed., *Handbook of Polymer Degradation*, 2nd ed, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 2000, Chapt. 16, pp. 605–643.
6. ASTM G178-09, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.

7. N. D. Searle, in A. V. Patsis, ed., *International Conference on Advances in the Stability and Controlled Degradation of Polymers*, Vol. 1, Technomic Publishing Co., Lancaster, Pa., 1989, pp. 62–74.
8. N. D. Searle, in D. Kockott, ed., *International Symposium on Natural and Accelerated Weathering of Organic Materials, Part B, Atlas SFTS BV*, Essen, Germany, Sept. 28–29, 1987, Lochem, The Netherlands, 1988, pp. 1–15.
9. L. D. Johnson, W. C. Tincher, and H. C. Bach, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **13**, 1825–1832 (1969).
10. R. M. Fischer and co-workers, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **83**, 136–139 (2000).
11. ACS National Meeting, Aug. 20–24, 2000.
12. B. L. Garner and P. J. Papillo, *Ind. Eng. Chem. Prod. Res. Dev.* **1**, 249–253 (1962).
13. D. Clauson, in *75th Annual IFAI Convention*, Nov. 1987, Industrial Fabrics Assoc. Int'l, St. Paul, Minn., 1988, pp. 96–110 (Preprint).
14. M. E. Nichols and C. A. Darr, *ACS Symp. Ser.* **722**, 333–353 (1999).
15. G. C. Furneaux, K. J. Ledbury, and A. Davis, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **3**, 441–432 (1980–1981).
16. A. V. Cunliffe and A. Davis, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **4**, 17–37 (1982).
17. G. E. Schoolenberg, J. C. M. deBruijn, and H. D. F. Meijer, in *Proc. 14th Int. Conf. on Advances in Stabilization and Degradation of Polymers*, Lucerne, Switzerland, 1992, p. 25.
18. G. Yanai, A. Ram, and J. Miltz, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **59**, 1145–1149 (1996).
19. D. Patil, R. D. Gilbert, and R. E. Fornes, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **41**, 1641–1650 (1990).
20. U. Schulz and P. Trubiroha, in R. J. Herling, ed., *Durability Testing of Nonmetallic Materials*, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 1996, pp. 106–120. ASTM STP 1294.
21. P. Trubiroha and U. Schulz, *Polym. Polym. Compos.* **5**, 359–367 (1997).
22. ASTM D4364-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.03**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
23. ISO 877:1994 International Organization for Standardization, Geneva, Switzerland, 1994.
24. ASTM G7-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
25. ASTM G24-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
26. M. M. Quayyum and A. Davis, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **6**, 201–209 (1984).
27. H. H. G. Jellinek, *Aspects of Degradation and Stabilization of Polymers*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, The Netherlands, 1978, Chapt. 3.
28. G. C. Newland, R. M. Schulken Jr., and J. W. Tamblyn, *Mater. Res. Stand.* **3**, 487–488 (1963).
29. T. G. B. Jones and M. A. Lacasse, in A. T. Wolf, ed., *Durability of Building Sealants*, RILEM Report 21, RILEM Publications, Cachan, France, 1999, pp. 73–105.
30. K. K. Karpati, *Adhes. Age* **31**(5), 20–23 (1988).
31. Data supplied by South Florida Test Services, Inc., Miami, Fla.
32. M. P. Morse, in G. G. Schurr, ed., *Permanence of Organic Materials*, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 1982, pp. 43–66. ASTM STP 781.
33. ASTM D4141-07, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **6.01**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
34. SAE J 176, 2002, SAE International, Warrendale, Pa., 2002.
35. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL. 60613.
36. ASTM G90-10, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.

37. U.S. Pat. 6,659,638 B1 (2003), H. K. Hardcastle (to Atlas Material Testing Technology, LLC).
38. H. K. Hardcastle, G. J. Jorgensen and C. E. Bingham, in *4th European Weathering Symposium EWS*, Budapest, Hungary, Sept. 16–18, 2009.
39. G. A. Zerlaut and M. L. Ellinger, *J. Oil Col. Chem. Assoc.* **64**, 387–397 (1981).
40. G. A. Zerlaut, in W. E. Brown, ed., *Testing of Polymers*, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1969, Vol. 4, pp. 10–34.
41. R. J. Martinovich and G. R. Hill, in M. R. Kamal, ed., *Weatherability of Plastic Materials*, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1967, pp. 141–154. Appl. Polym. Symp. No. 4.
42. J. B. Howard and H. M. Gilroy, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **9**, 286–294 (1969).
43. C. R. Caryl, in W. E. Brown, ed., *Testing of Polymers*, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1969, Vol. 4, pp. 379–397.
44. G. A. Zerlaut, in W. D. Ketola and D. Grossman, eds., *Accelerated and Outdoor Durability Testing of Organic Materials*, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 1994, pp. 3–26. ASTM STP 1202.
45. G. A. Zerlaut, M. W. Rupp, and T. E. Anderson, in *Proceedings of SAE International Congress, Detroit, Mich.*, Feb. 1985, paper 850378.
46. R. W. Singleton, R. K. Kunkel, and B. S. Sprague, *Text. Res. J.* **35**, 228–237 (1965).
47. R. W. Singleton and P. A. C. Cook, *Text. Res. J.* **39**, 43–49 (1969).
48. G. A. Zerlaut, in Ref. 31, pp. 10–34.
49. B. Zahradnik and B. Juriaanse, in *ANTEC '84, 42nd Annual Technical Conference*, 1984, pp. 397–400 (preprint).
50. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL 60613.
51. ASTM D2565-99 (2008), in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.02**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
52. ASTM D4459-06, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.03**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
53. ASTM G155-05a, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
54. ISO 4892-2:2006, International Organization for Standardization, Geneva, Switzerland, 2006.
55. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL 60613.
56. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL 60613.
57. K. P. Scott, in J. W. Martin, R. A. Ryntz, and R. A. Dickie, eds., *Service Life Prediction, Challenging the Status Quo*, Federation of Societies for Coatings Technology, Blue Bell, Pa. 2005, Chapt. 19, pp. 259–271.
58. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL 60613.
59. ASTM D4329-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.03**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
60. ASTM D4587-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **6.01**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
61. ASTM G154-06, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
62. ISO 4892-3:2007, International Organization for Standardization, Geneva, Switzerland, 2007.
63. N. D. Searle, in Ref. 43, pp. 52–67.
64. R. M. Fischer, SAE Tech. Paper Ser. No. 841022, In *West Coast Int'l Mtg. & Expos.*, San Diego, Calif., 1984, Society of Automotive Engineers, Warrendale, Pa., 1984, pp. 1–9.
65. H. H. McEwan and L. A. Simpson, *Tech. Serv. Rept. D9187GC*, Tioxide Group, Plc., London, 1985.

66. D. R. Bauer, M. C. Paputa Peck, and R. O. Carter III, *J. Coat. Technol.* **59**(755), 103–109 (1987).
67. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL 60613.
68. Atlas Material Testing Technology LLC, Chicago, IL 60613.
69. ASTM D5031-01(2006), in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **6.01**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
70. ASTM D6360-07, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.03**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
71. ASTM G153-04, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
72. ASTM D822-01(2006), in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **6.01**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
73. ASTM D1499-05, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **8.01**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
74. ASTM G152-06, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
75. T. M. Kollmann and D. G. M. Wood, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **20**, 684–687 (1980).
76. H. K. Hardcastle, in *2nd European Weathering Symposium EWS*, Confederation of European Environmental Engineering Societies, June 16–17, 2005.
77. G. Wypych, F. Lee, and B. Pourdeyhimi, in A. T. Wolf, ed., *Durability of Building and Construction Sealants*, RILEM Publications S.A.R.L., Cachan, France, 2000, pp. 173–197.
78. T. Nguyen, J. W. Martin, E. Byrd, and N. Embree, *Polym. Mater. Sci. Eng.* **83**, 118–119 (Aug. 2000).
79. RILEM Publications S.A.R.L., Cachan, France, in Ref. 76.
80. ASTM G151-10, in *Annual Book of ASTM Standards*, Vol. **14.04**, American Society for Testing and Materials, West Conshohocken, Pa., 2010.
81. L. E. Pimental Real, A. M. Ferraria, and A. M. Botelho do Rego, *Polym. Test.* **26**, 77–87 (2007).
82. U. Schulz, P. Trubiroha, T. Boettger, and H. Bolte, in *8th Int. Conf. on Durability of Building Materials and Components*, May 30–June 3, 1999.
83. K. M. Wernstahl and B. Carlsson, *J. Coat. Technol.* **69**(865), 69–75 (1997).
84. D. R. Bauer, J. L. Gerlock, and R. A. Dickie, *Prog. Org. Coat.* **15**, 209–221 (1987).
85. J. L. Gerlock, D. F. Mielewski, and D. R. Bauer, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **20**, 123–134 (1988).
86. J. A. Simms, *J. Coat. Technol.* **59**(748), 45–53 (1987).
87. *AATCC Technical Manual*, Vol. 85, American Association of Textile Chemists and Colorists, Research Triangle Park, N.C., 2010, Method 16, pp. 25–36.
88. N. D. Searle, in J. M. Fitzgerald, ed., *Analytical Photochemistry and Photochemical Analysis: Solids, Solutions and Polymers*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1971, Chapt. 9, pp. 249–336.
89. J. L. Gerlock, D. Bauer, L. M. Briggs, and R. A. Dickie, *J. Coat. Technol.* **57**, 37–46 (1985).
90. G. A. George and M. Ghaemy, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **33**, 411–428 (1991).
91. V. Dudler, Th. Bolle, and G. Rytz, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **60**, 351–365 (1998).
92. F. Gugumus, in *Symposium on Polymer Stabilization and Degradation: Problems, Techniques and Applications*, Manchester, UK, Sept. 1985 (preprint).
93. R. M. Fischer and W. D. Ketola, in S. H. Hamid, ed., in Ref. 5, 2000, Chapt. 17, pp. 645–669.
94. J. E. Clarke and J. A. Slater, *NBS Technical Report No. 10116*, National Bureau of Standards, Washington, D.C., Oct. 1969.
95. M. R. Kamal, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **6**, 333–340 (1966).

96. M. R. Kamal and R. Saxon, in M. R. Kamal, ed., in Ref. 40, 1967, pp. 1–28.
97. C. S. Shah and M. J. Patni, *Polym. Test.* **13**(4), 295–322 (1994).
98. O. Guseva, S. Brunner and P. Richner, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **82**(1), 1–13 (2003).
99. J. W. Martin, S. C. Saunders, F. L. Floyd, and J. P. Wineburg, *Federation Series on Coatings Technology*, Federation of Societies for Coating Technology, Blue Bell, Pa., 1996, pp. 1–34.

NORMA D. SEARLE
Consultant in Weathering of Materials
MATTHEW MCGREER
ALLEN ZIELNIK
Atlas Material Testing Technology, LLC
Chicago, Illinois

WOOD COMPOSITES

Introduction

Wood composites can be defined as materials made by gluing together small pieces of wood, residue materials from wood processing operations, or other elements into larger materials to produce products with specific definable mechanical and physical properties. Wood composite products continue to be among the most widely utilized building materials throughout the world. They are commonly manufactured as lumber, flooring, roofing, paneling, palettes, decking, fencing, cabinets, furniture, millwork, structural beams, etc.

The increased number and importance of wood composite products are directly related to the decreased supply of high quality large timber, and as the quality and variety of wood composite products increases, and new applications for them are found, the trend toward increased use and importance of wood composites should continue. Wood composites offer numerous advantages over lumber. They can be produced from waste wood, agricultural residues, little used and low commercial value wood species, as well as smaller and fast growing trees, which can relieve stress on old growth forests that are increasingly unavailable for use. Also, the increased homogeneity of the raw material obtained by combining small wood elements allows a wide variety of composite products to be produced that have consistent, high quality properties. The properties can often surpass those of lumber (eg, have stronger and more uniform properties throughout the product, and be completely free of growth characteristics, weak spots, or defects such as knots), and often, the product can be produced with customized engineered properties, dimensions, and complex shapes (eg, complex roof shapes, cathedral ceilings, cantilevered supports).

The exact properties and the appropriate end use for a composite depend on the wood species and wood adhesive, and are very dependent on the size, shape, and arrangement of the wood in the composite. In fact, the names of the composite products are mostly based on the wood geometry (wood shape and size) and their

arrangement in the product, without involving the name of the wood species or adhesive. These elements (species and adhesive) can be changed with far less effect on properties than changing wood geometry or arrangement.

The procedure for making a wood composite begins with the raw wood being processed by removal of leaves and bark, then being cut into pieces of the desired size and shape, followed by drying to the desired moisture content, and then going through a sorting process to ensure the wood pieces meet the selection criteria. This process is followed regardless of wood species or wood geometry. Some composite processes allow more than 90% of the tree stem to be utilized with either small or large diameter trees, while lumber can only be produced from large diameter trees and even then typically less than 50% of the tree can be converted to the intended product.

A large number of product types having quite different properties can be prepared using the same wood element. Processing conditions to convert the wood element into a composite product will depend on the type of adhesive selected and/or if the product being produced is pressed, impregnated, extruded, etc. Therefore, wood composites can be classified into two major types: (1) wood bonded with thermoset adhesives and (2) wood combined with other materials such as cement and thermoplastics.

This article outlines some of the features and components of wood composites, describes some major wood composite products and properties, and describes some future directions in the wood composites industry. For additional information the reader is referred to some recent reviews (1–7).

Wood Bonded with Thermoset Adhesives

Wood composite products are conventionally manufactured from wood materials having various geometries (eg, fibers, particles, strands, flakes, veneers, and lumber) combined with a thermoset resin and bonded in a press (4). The press applies heat (if needed) and pressure to activate (cross-link) the adhesive resin and bond the wood material into a solid panel, lumber, or beam having good mechanical (strength and stiffness) and physical (form, dimensional stability, etc) properties.

Types of Wood Elements. A wide range of wood elements are employed to produce an increasing number of wood composite products. These elements can be broadly divided into two categories: “long grain” and “short grain” elements based on their size and shape (Table 1). The largest of the commonly used long grain wood elements, excluding lumber itself, is veneer. Shorter grain elements include strands, flakes, wafers, particles, and fibers. It should also be noted that increasing numbers of wood composite products are employing recycled wood such as sawdust and wood flour, which can be considered to be a separate wood type. Agrofibers are increasingly being employed as a raw material to produce commercial products similar to wood composites but with varying degrees of success. Some of the reasons for the rising interest in agrofibers include their low density and low abrasion, the potential to improve some properties such as stiffness, and potential cost savings when used as a filler for thermoplastics, and because many of these materials are the by-products of annual crops (8). In the United States and Canada wheat straw is currently the most important

Table 1. Types of Wood Elements Used In Wood Composites^a

Elements	Length		Width		Thickness	
	cm	in.	cm	in.	cm	in.
Lumber	120–600	48–240	10–30	4–12	12.5–50	0.5–2
Veneer	120–240	48–96	10–120	4–48	0.5–12.5	0.02–0.5
Strands	1.27–7.5	0.5–3	0.63–2.5	0.25–1	0.25–0.625	0.010–0.025
Flakes	1.25–7.5	0.5–3	0.125–7.5	0.5–3	ditto	0.010–0.025
Wafers	3.3	1.3	2.5–7.5	1–3	0.625–1.25	0.025–0.05
Particles	0.125–1.25	0.05–0.5	0.0125–0.125	0.005–0.05	0.125–1.25	0.005–0.050
Fibers	0.1–0.63	0.04–0.25	0.0025–0.0075	0.001–0.003	0.025–0.075	0.001–0.003

^aAdapted from Ref. 7.

agrofiber furnish but many other agrofibers are of interest. Agrofiber preferences vary with availability and geographical region of the world (9). Soybean and cotton stalks, kenaf, flax, coffee and rice husk, hemp, fescue straw, ramie, and sugarcane bagasse are just some of the agrofiber raw materials being used or studied. Composites made from various agrofibers include low density insulating board, medium density fiberboard, hardboard, and particleboard (9,10). The mechanical properties for some agrofiber composites are reported in the literature, but additional research is needed, particularly on the long-term durability and weathering properties of these composites (10).

Thermoset Wood Adhesives

A wide range of adhesive types and chemistries are used to bond wood elements to one another (Table 2), but relatively few adhesive types are utilized to form the composites themselves. The vast majority of pressed-wood products use synthetic thermosetting adhesives. In North America the most important wood adhesives are the amino resins (qv), eg, urea–formaldehyde (UF) and melamine–formaldehyde (MF), which account for 60% by volume of adhesives used in wood composite products, followed by the phenolic resins (qv) eg, phenol–formaldehyde (PF) and resorcinol–formaldehyde (RF), which account for 32% of wood composite adhesives (12,13). The remaining 9% consists of cross-linked vinyl (X-PVAc) compounds, thermoplastic poly(vinyl acetates) (PVA), soy-modified casein, and polymeric diphenylmethane diisocyanate (pMDI). Some products may use various combinations of these adhesives to balance cost with performance.

The thermosetting amino and phenolic adhesives are by far the predominant adhesives used in making wood composites. These adhesives are described below, but more detailed information is available elsewhere (4,7,16–21) (see ADHESIVE COMPOUNDS).

Urea–Formaldehyde (UF) Adhesives. UF resins are produced in a two-stage condensation polymerization process through the reaction of urea with excess formaldehyde. In the first stage of the polymerization process, urea and formaldehyde are heated under slightly alkaline conditions (pH 7–8) to produce methylolurea resins (Fig. 1). Depending on the synthesis conditions (eg, the

Table 2. Characteristics of Major Wood Composites Bonded with Thermoset Adhesives

Types of composites	Raw materials ^c	Adhesives used	Structural (S) vs nonstructural (NS)	Applications	Typical thickness, mm (in.)	Typical density, kg/m ³ (lb/ft ³)
Particleboard	Particles	UF, MF, MDI	Mostly NS	Furniture, cabinetry, floor underlay, stair treads,	6–57 ($\frac{1}{4}$ – $2\frac{1}{4}$)	640–800 (40–50)
Medium density fiberboard (MDF)	Fibers	UF, pMDI	NS	Furniture, kitchen and bath cabinet, fixtures, molding, millwork, laminate flooring	5–38, max. 76 (3/16– $1\frac{1}{2}$, max. 3)	640–800 (40–50)
Construction and industrial plywood	Softwood veneer, some hardwood	PF	S	Roof, floor, wall sheathing, single-layer floor, siding, floor underlayment, preserved wood foundations, laminated veneer lumber	6–31.5 ($\frac{1}{4}$ – $1\frac{1}{4}$)	450–500 (28–31)
Decorative plywood	Hardwood veneer, some softwoods	UF, MF, RF, PVAc	Mostly NS	Decorative wall paneling, furniture, cabinetry, decorative flooring	6–19 ($\frac{1}{4}$ – $2\frac{3}{4}$)	400–880 (25–55)
Oriented strandboard (OSB)	Strand, flake, wafer	PF, pMDI	S	Roof, floor, wall sheathing, floor underlayment, siding, I-beams web stock, hybrid products	6–32 ($\frac{1}{4}$ –11/8)	580–700 (36–44)
Laminated veneer lumber (LVL)	Softwood veneer	PF, pMDI	S	Floor and roof joists, roof ridge beams, roof truss chords, window and doorheaders, wood I-joint flanges, concrete form, scaffold planking, window and door joinery	19–75 ($\frac{3}{4}$ –3 in.), 27–50 in. wide, up to 24.4 m (80 ft) long	
Wood I-joint	Lumber, LVL, OSB, plywood	Cold setting glue (eg, RF, PRF), pMDI	S	Floor and roof construction	Flange sizes (1.5–3 in. in depth, 2.5–3.5 in. in width), Joist depths range from $9\frac{1}{2}$ to 50 in. and lengths up to 50 ft	
Glulam beams	Lumber, some LVL	RF, PRF, MF		Headers, girders, purlins, beams, arches, bridges, marinas, power transmission structures	Up to 50 m long	
Parallel strand lumber (PSL)	Strands from softwood veneer	PF	S	Headers, beams, columns and posts; industrial uses such as bridge structures and power poles; and with CCA pressure treatment, post, beams and columns for decks, balconies, car-ports	280 by 430 cross section (11 by 17), length up to 66 ft	
Laminated strand lumber (LSL)	Strand	pMDI	S	Industrial and light structural applications	140 mm (5.5 in.) thick, 2.4 m wide, 10–15 m long	

^cRefer to Table 1. The data in this table are adapted from various references 3–6, 11–16.

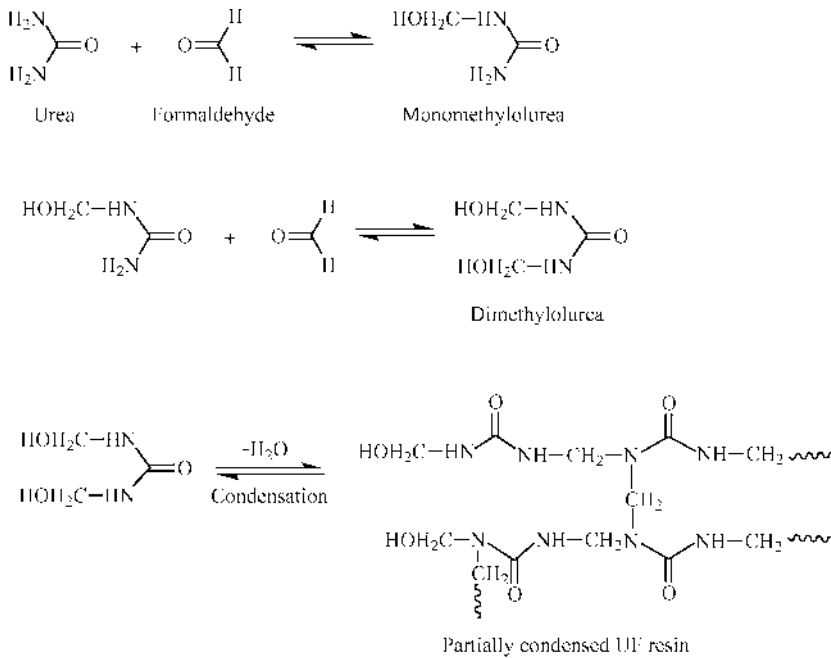


Fig. 1. Polymerization reaction of UF resin.

relative urea-to-formaldehyde molar ratios, the reaction temperature, and pH), up to four molecules of formaldehyde can bond to urea owing to the four replaceable hydrogen atoms of urea. The methylolureas produced at this stage are low molecular weight prepolymer solutions that have no adhesive properties. During the second stage, these prepolymer solutions are slightly acidified, which causes the methylolureas produced in the first stage to condense with one another. As this occurs the prepolymer molecular weight increases, and as the polymerization of the UF resin advances further the growing chains begin to cross-link through the formation of methylene-ether links. At the desired point in this polymerization process the aqueous suspension of UF adhesive is neutralized, which stops the reaction before the resin precipitates, and cooled. Water is removed under reduced pressure (vacuum) to produce a final resin content of about 65% nonvolatile resin solids. The final stage of the condensation polymerization, which produces a solid cross-linked thermoset, is completed during production of the wood composite. It is accomplished by the addition of a small amount of acid catalyst to the UF suspension immediately prior to its application to the wood element and occurs during the pressing cycle to produce the wood composite.

UF resin is applied to wood furnish as an aqueous suspension. With the addition of a catalyst such as an acid, the curing can occur at room temperature in a few days, but most industrial processes employ high temperatures and ammonium salts to shorten the bonding cycle (7). In the presence of heat and catalyst, UF condenses into a cross-linked three-dimensional network of macromolecules that provide bonding. UF resin cures rapidly, provides strong adhesion in a permanently dry environment, and is the least expensive of the major wood

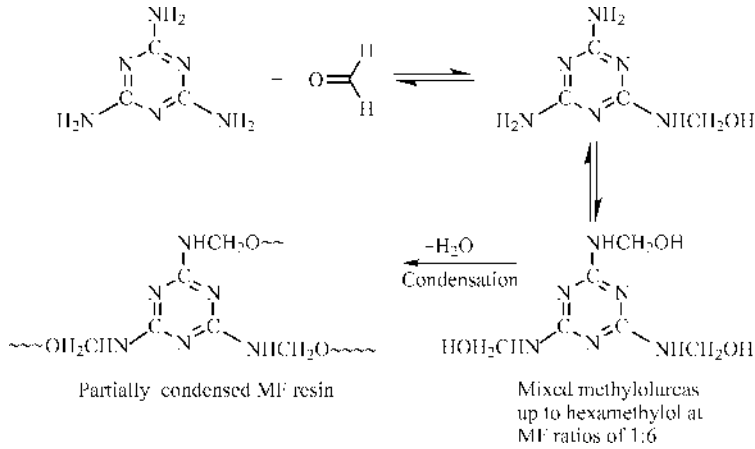


Fig. 2. Formation of MF resin.

adhesives. For these reasons, UF resin is by far the dominant commercial adhesive and is widely used throughout the world for bonding wood and wood-based composites. Despite these attributes, UF resins have three major drawbacks: (1) their brittleness once cured, (2) their limited resistance to moisture in the cross-linked state (limiting their use to interior products), and (3) the potential for formaldehyde emission from UF-bonded wood composites.

Although the urea (U) to formaldehyde (F) molar ratios can be in the range of 1:1.2 to 1:2, governmental regulations on the permissible level of free formaldehyde have forced resin producers and wood-composite manufacturers to lower the molar ratio, and so today resins with a U:F ratio as low as 1:1.1 are not uncommon. The potential for formaldehyde release from UF resin-bonded wood composites is caused by two factors: (1) release of a portion of the excess formaldehyde that did not react and (2) hydrolysis of susceptible bonds in the UF resin producing the urea and formaldehyde reactants (hydrolytic degradation), which can occur in the presence of moisture and heat during the pressing operation or subsequent installation (18,19). The low moisture resistance of UF resins limits their application to interior products, but if greater moisture resistance is required various urea derivatives or melamine are included in the UF formulation.

Melamine-Formaldehyde (MF) Adhesives. MF resins are produced by a condensation process by reacting melamine with excess formaldehyde (Fig. 2). The reaction proceeds in a manner similar to that between formaldehyde and urea but progresses to a greater extent (see MELAMINE-FORMALDEHYDE RESINS).

Cured MF resins are considerably more water-resistant than UF resins. This is attributed to the lower solubility of melamine in cold water compared to urea (18,19), and the overall greater hydrophobicity of the MF. These resins also have superior heat resistance and shorter curing times than UF resins because of the higher functionality of melamine compared to urea (up to six molecules of formaldehyde can react with melamine). Therefore, MF-bonded composites can be employed in both interior and in some exterior applications.

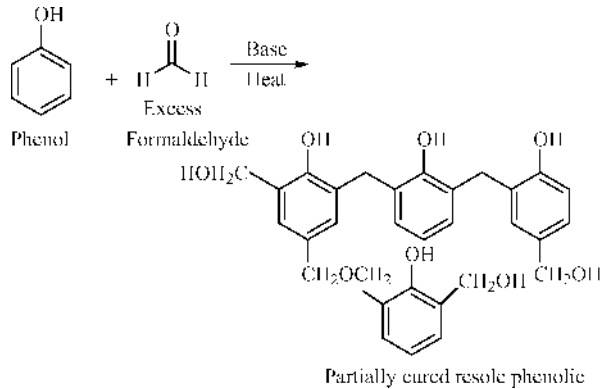


Fig. 3. Formation of resole PF resins.

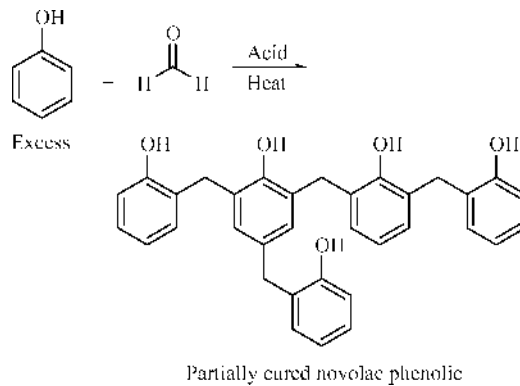


Fig. 4. Formation of novolac PF resins.

However, MF resins are costly (about 3.5 times the price of UF based on 100% resin solids), and can only be cured properly at high temperature, which adds to the cost. This is a serious commercial drawback.

As previously mentioned, MF and UF resins are often combined. In the case of UF resins it is done to improve their moisture resistance, to accelerate their cure rate, and to reduce formaldehyde emission from UF-bonded wood composites, while in the case of MF resins it is done to reduce the cost. However, because of the differences in reactivity between urea and melamine mixing these components can complicate the curing. The conditions needed to cure the MF can overcure the UF, and conditions designed to properly cure the UF can leave the MF component undercured. However, when a suitable cure cycle is found for the blended resin, a good combination of properties can be achieved.

Phenol-Formaldehyde (PF) Adhesives. PF resins are produced by the reaction of a phenol and formaldehyde. Depending upon the phenol-to-formaldehyde (P:F) molar ratios and the type of catalyst, two types of PF resins can be produced: resole and novolac PF resins (Figs. 3 and 4).

Resole PF resins are produced by the reaction of phenol with excess formaldehyde (P:F molar ratio 1:1.8 to 1:2.2) in the presence of an alkali

catalyst (Fig. 3). Because resole resins contain reactive methylol groups, they are self-curing resins that can condense with active sites on the phenol rings to form a cross-linked network in the presence of heat even without additional hardener. Resole resins have a very branched structure (Fig. 3) and are by far the more important of the two types of PF resins for wood composites.

Conversely, novolac PF resins are produced by the reaction of excess phenol with formaldehyde (P:F molar ratio 1:0.8 to 1:1) in the presence of an acid catalyst. Unlike resole resins, novolac PF resins have a more linear structure (Fig. 4) and do not self-cure because they lack the residual reactive methylol groups of resoles. Therefore, an external curing agent such as hexamethylenetetraamine must be added to novolac resins to yield a cross-linked structure. Novolac PF resins cured under acidic conditions are not recommended for wood composites for long-term structural applications.

In the presence of heat and on the addition of sodium hydroxide (NaOH) or other catalyst, resole PF resins condense into a three-dimensional cross-linked network having reactive sites suitable for wood bonding. While too much heat accelerates the degradation of UF resins, use of heat is desirable in PF-bonded composites to achieve a high degree of cross-linking. It should also be mentioned that the curing rate of PF resins is strongly influenced by the amount of NaOH added to the resins, with the higher NaOH content affording a faster cure up to a point. However, use of an excessive amount of NaOH in PF resins has adverse effects, including increasing the affinity of the composite for absorbing moisture from the air, which in turn results in PF-bonded composites having a higher thickness swell. As is the case with UF bonding, the adhesion to the wood surfaces in PF-bonded wood composites is achieved through secondary and/or physical bonding. PF resins have greater moisture resistance and greater strength retention when exposed to a high moisture environment than UF resins, and so are employed extensively in the manufacture of wood composites slated for exterior applications. Long-term aging studies in which plywood specimens prepared using various adhesives bonds were exposed to natural weathering confirmed the superior moisture resistance of PF. The PF-bonded specimens retained up to 90% of their original strength even after 8 years, while the UF-bonded specimens lost 100% of their original strength after only 4 years in service (7).

Resorcinol-Formaldehyde (RF) Adhesives. RF resins are a type of phenolic adhesive that are distinguished by a very high reactivity relative to PF resins. This greater reactivity is due to the two phenolic hydroxyl groups on resole. The groups *activate* one another by making each other more electron-rich. Therefore, the first hydroxyl group is much more reactive than the phenol hydroxyl group, and following its reaction the remaining hydroxyl group is still highly reactive. Consequently, although RF adhesives are generally prepared using excess resorcinol to produce a novolac-type resin, in contrast to PF novolacs, these resins set rapidly *with the addition of hardener* even at low temperatures (eg, anywhere from 5 to 70°C). This is termed *cold curing*. The high reactivity between resorcinol and formaldehyde with additional hardener, eg paraformaldehyde, allows the cure to proceed rapidly to completion. The reaction can be further accelerated by applying heat. Attempts to produce a resole RF resin typically result in an unusable gel (18–20). Despite the ability to cure at room or elevated temperatures and give composite products having good moisture resistance, RF

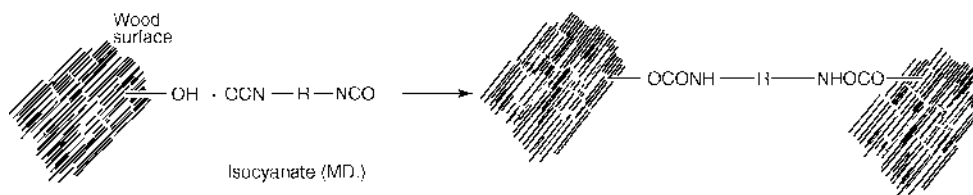


Fig. 5. Reaction of wood with MDI resin.

adhesives are not used extensively because they are among the most expensive of the thermoset adhesives, being second only to the isocyanates in cost. Nevertheless, RF adhesives are used as binders for selected wood products.

Isocyanates. Polymeric diphenylmethane diisocyanate (pMDI) is the most commonly used isocyanate wood adhesive mainly because of its lower volatility and toxicity when compared to other isocyanates such as toluene diisocyanate and dicyclohexylmethane diisocyanate. Some of the advantages enjoyed by pMDI include the fact that it is a liquid polymer, and so it does not require a solvent carrier for application, it is free of formaldehyde, and also it does not require acidic (the case with UF) or alkaline catalysts (the case with PF). It is an effective wood adhesive because the high reactivity of the isocyanate ($-\text{N}=\text{C}=\text{O}$) groups allows the resin to cure rapidly, and it has the potential to covalently bond directly to the wood by reacting with the hydroxyl groups on the wood surface (Fig. 5) (7,18–20).

The ability of pMDI to cure rapidly is due to the high reactivity of isocyanate ($-\text{N}=\text{C}=\text{O}$) groups that react rapidly with active hydrogen atoms. Wood possesses active hydrogens from hydroxyl groups on wood surfaces and from moisture in the wood. When the isocyanates react several reactions occur simultaneously but at different rates. The $-\text{N}=\text{C}=\text{O}$ groups first add water to form unstable carbamic acid groups that then dissociate into an amine and carbon dioxide. The resulting amine is more reactive than water and reacts rapidly with another isocyanate to form a polyurea (22). The $-\text{N}=\text{C}=\text{O}$ groups can also add cellulosic hydroxyl groups on the wood surface to form covalent bonds via urethane linkages (Fig. 5). pMDI can cure at ambient temperature in the presence of moisture and so it can also be used in cold pressing of wood-based composites, but hot pressing is usually preferred to shorten the press cycle.

pMDI forms covalent bonds and polar interactions with wood and tolerates both high moisture content in the wood and lower press temperatures during composite manufacture. When wood composites are prepared with equal amounts of adhesive and the bond strength and the dimensional stability of wood composites are compared it is found that pMDI's bond strength and dimensional stability of composites prepared with it are generally superior to those of amino and phenolic resins in both dry and moist environments. Despite these advantages, pMDI adhesives also have some disadvantages. There are some perceived health hazards associated with the manufacturing process, and it can bond to the metal surfaces of a hot press, which is undesirable, although this can be prevented by applying release agents to the surfaces of the press. However, the primary drawback is cost. pMDI is the most expensive of the wood adhesives.

Other Wood Adhesives. There is considerable interest in developing adhesives from renewable resources that can be used as a primary adhesive or as an adhesive component (an “extender”) to replace a portion of petroleum-based adhesives. These natural and renewable resources include lignin, tannins, and natural oils such as soy bean and proteins.

Lignin. Lignin is a waste product produced in large quantities by the pulp and paper industry that is often burned as fuel. Lignin-modified PF resins have been formulated to bond fiberboards, strandboards, and structural plywood (14,15,23–29). Lignin (qv) is employed in this manner primarily to reduce the consumption of oil-based products and to a lesser extent for cost savings since lignin can be less expensive than phenols. The lignin is usually methylolated *in situ* during the PF resin formulation, replacing anywhere from 15 to 35% of the phenol (12,13). Some lignins (eg, lignosulfonates) have also been added directly into the adhesive formulation as a PF resin extender (24–26). Although lignin-based adhesives are used in bonding wood composites, these adhesives require longer press times, produce darker coloration of the panel, and potentially have lower strength relative to PF without lignin (19,25). However, composites having good dimensional stability and good performance under conditions of high moisture have been reported for boards produced with lignin-extended resins, so interest in developing these adhesives continues (4).

Tannin. Tannin is an inexpensive naturally occurring polyphenol found mostly in the bark of trees but also as a component of the wood of some species. Tannin, like lignin, has also been used as a substitute for phenol in the manufacture of PF resins (4,30,31). Although using tannin-based adhesives in the manufacture of wood composites is thought to have potential, some reports indicate that these resins have lower cohesive strength and lower moisture resistance compared to common exterior wood adhesives (30). The poor performance of tannin-based adhesives is attributed to their limited ability to cross-link into a three-dimensional network, their high initial viscosity, and a short pot life owing to the high reactivity of tannin with formaldehyde. However, extensive research has been conducted in recent years to improve the performance of tannin-based adhesives. For example, the addition of small amounts of amino or phenolic resins (4) or metallic ion catalysts (18) has been shown to effectively increase the degree of cross-linking, thereby improving the strength and moisture resistance of tannin adhesives. Reducing the pH or adding hardeners such as hexamethylenetetramine during resin formulation has been shown to decrease the initial viscosity of some tannin-based adhesives (19) thus extending their pot life. These breakthroughs have allowed tannin-based glues to be used in the manufacture of wood composites in South Africa, New Zealand, India, South America, and to some extent in North America.

Other adhesives such as hot melt adhesives (HMA), poly(vinyl acetate) (PVA, catalyzed or uncatalyzed), pressure-sensitive adhesives (PSA), or elastomeric adhesives (based on natural or synthetic rubbers) are also used in wood bonding (7). However, their use is mostly limited to nonstructural applications (eg, secondary manufacturing processes such as kitchen furniture, interior joinery, decorative paper, and packaging) where strength and water resistance are of limited concern.

Advances in Wood Composite Adhesives

Improvements in wood composite properties can be achieved in three areas: (1) improvements in wood properties, (2) improvement in adhesive properties, and (3) improvement in the overall wood composite design. Most advances in wood composites witnessed over the last 10–15 years have been brought about by improved manufacturing equipment and improved composite design (eg, oriented strandboard, I-joist, parallel strand lumber, and laminated strand lumber), while significant advances in future wood composites seem likely to involve changes in wood properties (eg, genetic modification to produce species with some desired property such as improved resistance to decay). However, given the importance of developing alternatives to petroleum-based materials, development of new adhesives may yield the next generation of significant advances in wood composite products.

Some of the more recent research efforts that may lead to new adhesive types are categorized as follows: (1) adhesives from natural products, (2) adhesives generated *in situ* in the wood, (3) adhesive modifications to facilitate processing, and (4) adhesive modification for improved properties. Examples of these approaches are given below.

Prior to the 1930s all adhesives were based on natural products (eg, proteins such as animal blood, casein, soy protein). Use of adhesives from natural products steadily decreased thereafter with the development of synthetic polymers that had superior properties. Recently, renewed interest has been shown in using natural products to replace, entirely or in part, petroleum-based adhesive components with natural products, without sacrificing the performance levels achieved with modern petroleum-based adhesives. The purposes are often to reduce cost and dependence on petrochemicals, to reduce formaldehyde emissions, and improve selected properties (eg, biodegradability).

For example, there is renewed interest in using soy-based adhesives for fiber-based composites. New research is underway to develop soy-based adhesives that have improved properties and durability, and that have low volatile emissions (32).

Lignin-modified PF has been utilized for more than 20 years in a variety of different wood products (fiberboards, strandboards, structural plywood, etc.) where the lignin extender has lowered the cost. More recently lignosulfonates have been utilized as extenders to replace up to 35% of phenol in PF formulations (15). It has also been evaluated as an extender for other resins such as epoxy and polyurethane. Considerable research has recently been directed toward incorporating lignin into copolymers or grafting reactive monomers onto lignin allowing it to be copolymerized (33). One recent example of this approach describes using enzymes to copolymerize lignin with alkenes to produce well-defined lignin acrylate copolymers within fibers and pressing those fibers into medium density fiberboard (MDF) (34).

Work in South Africa and in South America has resulted in development of adhesives based largely or entirely on tannins. Tannins, which like lignins are renewable natural products, have the advantage of affording adhesives with low or no formaldehyde emissions, but tannin-based adhesives tend to be brittle.

A useful tannin-based particleboard adhesive was reported using tannin extract from radiata pine bark that was formulated with 5% isocyanate and 5% urea (13). Another report described a tannin-based adhesive in which a significant number of the phenolic groups of the tannin had been esterified to produce a less brittle adhesive (35). The partially esterified tannin was blended with paraformaldehyde and the resulting resin afforded a less brittle adhesive that had better properties than those of the unmodified tannin adhesive.

Because lignin and tannin are phenolic species they have both been evaluated as extenders for PF and UF adhesives. It was subsequently shown that they could be used as primary adhesives. Because these natural phenolics can function as primary adhesives, and because these and other phenolics are components of wood and bark, researchers are investigating reactions of wood's natural phenolic components *in situ* to form a composite without added adhesives. Bark contains not only high amounts of tannins, but also carbohydrates and various other reactive phenolic components. Composites have been prepared by subjecting bark particles to high temperature and pressure to react the phenolic components within the bark so that these components cross-link *in situ* to serve as the sole binder for composites (13). A 1999 publication reported a similar approach for binding wood (36). In that work, birch wood was heated for 1–15 min at 170–230°C under 2 MPa pressure from hot steam. These conditions were used to hydrolyze the polysaccharides within the wood. Under the acidic conditions (formic and acetic acid from hemicellulose and sugars) the resulting sugars reacted with phenolic fragments originating from hydrolyzed lignin. These reactions yield a polymeric binder *in situ*, and have several advantages over adding adhesives to wood. These advantages include eliminating the need for equipment to apply adhesive to wood, no formaldehyde emissions from added synthetic adhesive, and this approach accommodates a high moisture content in wood, which is a major processing advantage. Nevertheless, the long processing time required at high temperature is expensive and additional research is required to evaluate the composite properties, so it is not yet known if this approach will be cost-effective.

Research efforts have been directed towards developing new adhesives that address some disadvantages associated with the processing of pressed wood composites. Pressed wood composites using thermosetting adhesives typically employ a high temperature press cycle. This process requires that the wood furnish be dried to a moisture content typically below 5%. Pressing wood with higher moisture content at higher temperatures can produce a poor product because of “blows,” delaminated wood produced when water vapor generated within the mat during the hot-press cycle is rapidly released. Development of effective adhesives that tolerate high moisture content wood has been a goal for many years because drying the wood furnish to a low moisture level is time-consuming and costly, and the potential exists for overdrying some of the wood furnish. Moisture-tolerant isocyanate and PF adhesives are currently available that can tolerate high moisture content furnish (above 15%). Isocyanate adhesives have been used for many years with composites that use higher moisture-content conditions such as “wet wood.” Under these conditions isocyanate adhesives have less tendency to delaminate than other adhesives (37). This is probably because of several characteristics of isocyanate-bonded wood composites, including that they can be pressed at a lower temperature than is usual for UF and PF adhesives, isocyanates can

chemically bond to the wood rather than rely only on mechanical adhesion, and the cured adhesive retains greater flexibility than UF and PF adhesives. PF adhesives that can be used with wet wood are also available, but their exact composition and method of function is not clear, although these adhesives may make use of higher formaldehyde content, a coupling agent to promote wood bonding, and/or be a PF/isocyanate blend.

Approaches have been developed that allow some other adhesives to be used with wet wood. The simplest of these approaches uses foamed adhesives. Foaming allows the adhesive to be applied at a higher solid content, often having only 15–20% water, and so higher moisture content in wood can be tolerated, and the composite cures faster since less moisture needs to be removed during cure. A recent investigation reported use of a soy protein-modified PF as a foamed adhesive for plywood production (38). The soy replaced animal blood in the formulation, which not only improves durability but can alleviate health concerns.

Another major difficulty with hot-pressed wood composites is adequate thermal transfer across the thickness of the composite. Heat is transferred through the press platens, sometimes with the aid of steam. However, wood is a low thermal transfer medium and so there is risk of overcuring resin nearer the surfaces of the composite, while undercuring resin in the interior. This is particularly true with thicker composites. Also the pressing step is probably the most expensive of the processing steps so any adhesive modification that reduces the press time and facilitates a more uniform cure is a significant advantage for cost and properties. Matuana (39) reported using thermally conductive filler material such as synthetic graphite (carbon filler) in the mat or adhesive to facilitate thermal transfer. Use of the carbon filler not only reduced the required cure time but also significantly increased the internal bond strength of the wood composites.

Wood composites are now being considered for use under increasingly demanding conditions and so adhesive modifications to improve specific composite properties, such as improved strength, durability, and dimensional stability, are needed. These types of modifications which usually increase adhesive cost were previously considered not cost-effective, but now might find markets. Early efforts to improve properties included adding thermoplastic polymers to the reactive adhesive prepolymer and applying the thermoplastic-modified prepolymer to the wood furnish and pressing. Examples of this approach include adding poly(furfural alcohol), a water-soluble polymer, to a UF prepolymer (40) and using chlorinated natural rubber to modify PF (41). The poly(furfural alcohol) did not improve properties, while the chlorinated natural rubber did improve properties but required processing conditions that were not industrially viable. These efforts highlight issues that must be addressed for an industrially useful modification. Any modifications must allow the processing conditions to be similar to those used now. Therefore, solvent should not be required, and prepolymer viscosity, stability, and cure conditions should be similar to those used now, and the resulting properties must be improved sufficiently so that an increased resin cost is worthwhile. A series of publications by Ebewele and co-workers (42–45) described modifying UF resins with di- and trifunctional amines and ureas without excessive increases in viscosity or processing difficulty. Particleboard made with the modified UF resins had an internal bond (IB) strength that was significantly greater than the IB strength of the control particleboards

before and after exposure to moisture. Recently a method was reported that yielded thermoplastic-modified UF adhesives that could be processed in the same way as unmodified control UF and gave wood flour composites with improved mechanical properties and moisture resistance. A premade thermoplastic polymer suspension (46–48), or aqueous slurry of acrylic and vinylic monomers, and a radical polymerization initiator (49) were combined with the UF prepolymer. The modified UF was used to prepare hot-pressed wood flour composites with significant improvements in notched Izod impact strengths. Further development simplified the method and modified UF resins were employed for hot pressing of particleboards (50) that, depending on the choice of thermoplastic monomers employed, also gave a higher IB strength and the neat resin showed lower moisture uptake than unmodified UF neat resin. Zanetti and co-workers (51) recently reported substantial increases in the IB strength of melamine–urea–formaldehyde (MUF) resins by the addition of small amounts (10%) of acetals to MUF resins. The authors reported that the acetals worked by improving the solubility of melamine and higher molecular weight reactive oligomers in the MUF resin and also appeared to disrupt the clustering of colloidal particles of MUF. This modification afforded 25–50% increases in IB strength and yet required no additional modification of the MUF formulation or the processing conditions.

Wood Composites Bonded with Thermoset Adhesives

The principal wood composite products currently in use in the United States and Canada, based on volume, are plywood (17.5 million cubic meters), oriented strandboard (16.8 million cubic meters), particleboard (10.3 million cubic meters), medium density fiberboard (3.4 million cubic meters), hardboard (2.0 million cubic meters), hardwood plywood (1.0 million cubic meters), and laminated veneer lumber (1.2 million cubic meters) (13). These products are described below. While all of these composites occupy an important place in the market now, some of these products are gaining in importance while others appear to be losing market share to other composite products.

Wood composites for structural and nonstructural applications that are bonded with thermosetting glues can be produced in many different geometries, including panels (3 ft or more in width by $\frac{3}{8}$ to 1 in. thick), lumber (2 in. or more in width by 2–4 in. thick), or beams ($3\frac{1}{8}$ in. wide by 9 in. or more in depth) (Table 2). The exact procedure for making wood composites depends on the type of wood furnish (wood geometry), the desired arrangement of the particles in the final product, and the adhesive to be used, as well as the cure cycle if the adhesive needs to be reacted during the process step. These processing variables determine the characteristics of the final products, including mechanical properties, water resistance, dimensional stability, surface quality, and workability. Regardless of the increasing number of wood composite products being introduced into the market, the different sizes and shapes of these products, and the different volumes of these products that are produced, the fabrication process is a highly automated one, and once the adhesive mixture is applied to the wood furnish the general manufacturing method for preparing these composites is similar (Fig. 6).

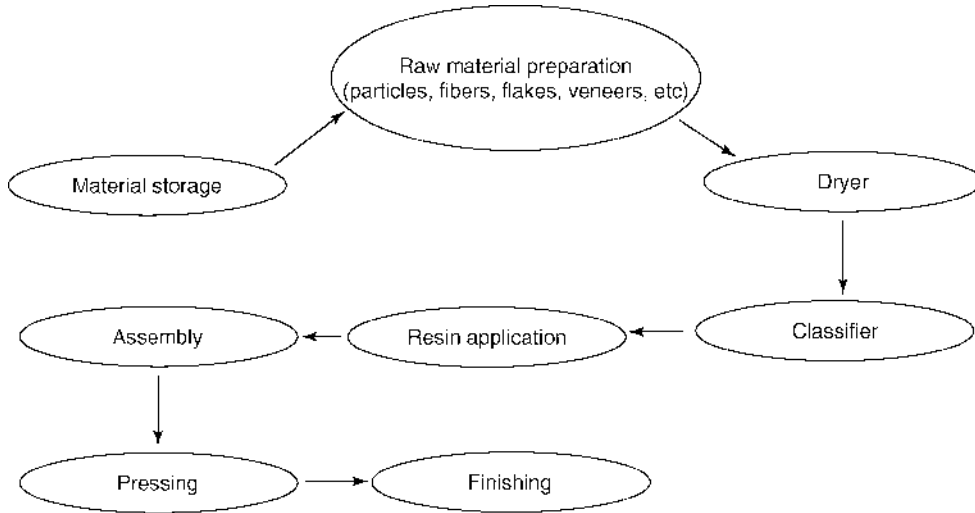


Fig. 6. A typical wood composites manufacturing process.

The composite fabrication process begins once the trees have been processed into a dried furnish and the furnish is transported to a device such as rotating drum (as is the case for flakes, particles, and fibers). Here, the adhesive and other additives are applied to the furnish by air spray, airless spray, or a high shear atomizer. The rotating drum possesses nozzles that are fed by hose lines connected to resin storage drums. Adhesive resin mixtures are applied to veneer-based wood products (plywood, laminated veneer lumber) by a roll coater, curtain coater, spray coater, or liquid or foam extrusion. The amount of adhesive applied to the furnish varies with the product and adhesive type. Common additives are also applied during this step and include wax (to improve dimensional stability by reducing moisture absorption), wood preservatives (for protection against insect and fungal attack), and fire retardants.

After resin application, the coated wood furnish moves to a forming apparatus. The forming apparatus arranges the furnish appropriately into a mat having the specified dimensions and orientation of wood raw material to give the desired product type with the desired dimensions and density after pressing. This mat is then prepressed to remove much of the air, ie, consolidate a loosely formed mat into a rigid mat which has a certain degree of cohesion to reduce its thickness. The formed mat then goes to a hot press where it is subjected to a selected press cycle. Here it is heated and pressed at the desired temperature and pressure for specified periods of time to bond the wood into a composite part of the desired thickness. The pressed wood composite finally goes on to the finishing steps where the panel is sized, sanded, trimmed to the desired thickness and dimensions, edge sealed, and packaged for shipment. In some cases the hot composite product is stacked to help retain heat and continue the cure out of the hot press, as is the case with phenolic resins.

The biggest differences in processing for each type of wood composite reside in the geometry and arrangement of wood furnish, the adhesive type and amount

applied, and the cure cycle. The following sections describe the main characteristics of the major wood composite products made with thermoset adhesives.

Plywood. Plywood panels have been produced and marketed in the United States for more than five decades. They are considered a material of choice in the building industry because of outstanding structural performance as defined by a high strength-to-weight ratio, excellent dimensional stability, and durability compared to other building material (6). Plywood typically consists of an uneven number of thin layers of wood veneers, called plies, that are glued together into a panel. The individual plies are typically arranged in the panel so that their grains are perpendicular to one another (right angles of 90°). The plies are arranged at 90° to one another to improve the dimensional stability and make the properties of the plywood more uniform along both the vertical and horizontal axes. The anisotropic nature of wood results in a tendency to swell less parallel to the grain than perpendicular to the grain and simultaneously gives wood greater strength parallel to the grain than perpendicular to the grain. Therefore, arranging individual plies at 90° to one another affords greater dimensional stability, decreases the tendency to split, and generally evens out the strength properties in all directions. If the grain angles were not varied then the plywood would have less dimensional stability and be much stronger along the grain axis but weaker perpendicular to the axis. The appearance of the final product can be improved if desired by applying a decorative surface veneer to give the final plywood a desired appearance. The final overall properties of the plywood depend on many factors, including the wood species, the quality of wood veneers, the order of placement of the veneer plies in the panel, the type and amount of adhesive applied, and the curing or pressing conditions.

Both hardwood and softwood species are utilized in the manufacture of plywood. Softwoods (Douglas-fir, western hemlock, larch, white fir, ponderosa pine, redwood, and southern pine are examples) are generally preferred in construction applications where strength and stiffness are required. Hardwood plywood is generally preferred for decorative applications where appearance is most important and strength is a limited criterion, although hardwood plywood can also be designed for structural applications. In decorative applications, hardwood plywood often competes with thin MDF which can be given a high quality overlay giving it an appearance similar to that of hardwood plywood.

Oriented Strandboard (OSB). Oriented strandboard (OSB) panels have been developed as an alternative to plywood in building construction. The emergence of OSB was driven in part by a decreased supply of large diameter logs suitable for veneer production, and by innovation and productivity changes in the North American wood products industry over the past few decades as well as the structural performance of OSB products, which are suitable for use in most plywood applications but at a much lower cost. In addition, OSB manufacture allows small, low grade timber resources to be processed into a marketable product. This effectively saves raw materials that are in short supply and promotes efficient utilization of wood (3,5,6).

OSB panels are made up of rectangular strands (wafers or flakes) of wood approximately 0.030 in. thick, bonded together with exterior-grade adhesive under extreme heat and pressure to develop adequate strength properties in the panel. During this process, long grain strands are compressed and mechanically

oriented more or less parallel to each other and arranged into three to five distinct layers. These layers are oriented at ca 90° to one another, ie, strands are aligned lengthwise in layers perpendicular to each other similar to veneer plywood. The strands near the surface are typically ≥ 3 in. long but shorter strands are sometimes used in core layers. The core layers are also sometimes randomly arranged rather than oriented. The strands for the faces are typically oriented parallel with the long direction of the panel, whereas the core layers are oriented perpendicular to the length of the panel. Hardwood species, alone or in combinations with softwood species, can be used in the manufacture of OSB panels, but preferably lower density wood species (eg, aspen poplar in the northern part of North America and southern yellow pine in the south) are employed because strands of these woods can be compressed into medium density boards with sufficient contact between strands during pressing for good bonding (4).

The alignment of strands and the use of long strands give OSB panels improved mechanical (strength and stiffness) and physical (dimensional stability) properties in the direction of alignment, which make them acceptable in a wide range of industrial, residential, and commercial applications (Table 2). Even though OSB panels are being used as a substitute for plywood, their potential for use in some structural applications has been limited because of poor dimensional stability and durability compared to that of plywood. OSB panels will swell in thickness, and like all wood products decay when they come into extended contact with water. Since most of the thickness swelling is not reversed when the panels are re-dried, the products are regarded as unacceptable for some applications where high moisture contact is expected (52–54).

Particleboard. Particleboard is prepared using small dried-particles combined with a thermally curable adhesive or other suitable binder and bonded together under high heat and pressure into panels of the desired thickness. The raw materials used to produce particleboard consist of wood wastes from sawmills, primarily from milled or ground wood chips, sawdust, and planer shaving. In some cases recycled cellulosic materials and plant residues such as wheat straw and bagasse are utilized as furnish to make particleboard. Most particleboard is formed into flat panels. However, molded and extruded particleboard products such as furniture parts, molded door skins, and molded pallets are also produced.

Particleboard usually consists of a three-layered panel with two surface layers (outer layers) and one core layer (inner layer). The face furnish is usually thinner than that in the core. This permits the strength and stiffness of the panel to be tailored and the faces to be produced with smooth surfaces. The American National Standard for Particleboard, ANSI A208.1, classifies particleboard by density, properties, and class, and is the voluntary particleboard standard for the North American industry (Table 3).

Medium Density Fiberboard (MDF). MDF is manufactured from refined wood chips or other fine cellulosic materials combined with a synthetic resin. The adhesive coated furnish is joined together under heat and pressure to form a versatile material having varying characteristics depending on the composition and processing conditions (Tables 2 and 3).

The surface of MDF can be controlled so that it is smooth, flat, and uniform in appearance and free of wood growth features such as knots and grain patterns. MDF panels are highly valued by woodworkers because they machine well and

Table 3. Selected Properties of Wood-Based Composite Panels

Physical properties	Plywood ^a	OSB ^b	Particleboard ^c	MDF ^a
Density, lb/ft ^{3d}	28–31	36–44	40–48	<40 to >50
Thickness, in.	1/4–1 1/4	1/4–3/4	1/2–1 1/4	3/4 or higher
Internal bond (IB), psi ^e	Species specific	50	15–145	44–131
Modulus of rupture (MOR), psi ^e	3000–7000	3394–4206 () 1392–1799 (⊥)	435–3408	2030–5003
Modulus of elasticity (MOE), 10 ³ psi ^e	1000–1900	653–798 () 189–218 (⊥)	79.8–449.6	203–500
Screw holding capacity—face, lb	Species specific	100–300	90–450	172–342
Screw holding capacity—edge, lbs	Species specific	100–300	180–348	147–294
Hardness, lb	Species specific	—	500–1,500	—
Linear expansion (max. avg. percent)	0.15	0.20–0.40	0.35	—

^aProperties for various plywood grades or MDF (55).

^bProperties obtained from the Canadian Standards Association, standard CAN3–0437.0-M85, Waferboard and Strandboard/Test Methods for Waferboard and Strandboard (June 1985). || means parallel to the indicated direction of face alignment; ⊥ means perpendicular to the indicated direction of face alignment. The Wood Handbook (55) shows OSB having MOR values of 3000–4000 psi and MOE values of (700–1200) × 10³ psi.

^cProperties obtained from ANSI standard (ANSI A208.1–1999) for various grades of particleboard.

^dTo convert lb/ft³ to kg/m³, multiply by 16.

^eTo convert psi to MPa, divide by 145.

are suitable for finishing operations such as direct printing (eg, wood grains), thin laminating (eg, paper, decorative foil laminates), and painting (eg, custom colors). These attributes allow MDF panels to serve as excellent substitutes for solid wood in many interior applications such as kitchen cabinets, furniture, door parts, and moldings (Table 2).

Composite Lumbers and Beams. Composite lumbers and beams comprise a large and diverse family of products known as engineered wood products (EWPs). EWPs include laminated veneer lumber (LVL), laminated strand lumber (LSL), parallel strand lumber (PSL), glulam, and I-joists, among others.

LVL [also known as structural composite lumber (SCL)] technology was developed in Finland. Trus Joist became the first U.S. producer of LVL in 1970 (3,6). LVL is a structural building material manufactured by layering dried and graded wood veneers with waterproof adhesive into billets of various thicknesses and widths. Generally, high quality laminates are used at the faces and low quality laminates in the center of the lumber. This specific arrangement gives LVL greater strength (by a factor of 2 or more) than conventional solid lumber having equivalent dimensions. In LVL billets, all veneers are laminated with the grain angle parallel to the longitudinal axis of the wood (one-grain direction) rather than arranging the veneer grains perpendicular to one another as in plywood. PF and pMDI are the resins that are typically employed to produce LVL and so the billets are hot-pressed or radio-frequency-pressed to consolidate the laminates. Common wood species used for LVL include Douglas fir, larch, southern yellow pine, and poplar, but other wood species can be used as the raw

material. As an engineered wood product, LVL is an ideal structural building material for applications in housing, commercial, and industrial construction. Typical applications include floor and roof joists, roof beams, roof truss chords, flanges for prefabricated wood I-joists, concrete form, and scaffolding plank, among others (Table 2).

Wood I-joists are hybrid beam elements that are made by gluing together lumber and panel composites to produce a dimensionally stable lightweight member having specified engineering properties. The product utilizes the geometry of the I-shaped cross section composed of two flanges (top and bottom) of various widths linked by a web (or two webs) of various depths (Table 2). The flanges are typically LVL, or finger-jointed sawn lumber of various machine stress-rated grades, while the webs are either structural grade OSB or structural plywood. The flanges are designed to resist bending strength and provide stiffness, while the web is designed to resist shear forces in the beam. Thus, the I-shaped geometry of these products gives a high strength-to-weight ratio. I-joists are marketed as building products that do not warp, twist, or shrink, and their dimensions are more uniform than those of conventional sawn lumber joists. The wood I-joists performs much better than solid lumber because greater joist spacing can be used and their frames are lighter and more dimensionally stable than lumber, making their installation less costly for the builders. Wood I-joists are used in residential and light commercial construction in applications such as floor and roof joists, rafters, and purlins, among others (Table 2). Wood I-joists are certified by the APA-Engineered Wood Association as the APA-Engineered Wood System (APA-EWS), and are manufactured in compliance with Performance Rated I-Joists (PRI-400), Performance Standard for APA-EWS I-Joists.

Glued laminated timber, or glulam, is a structural beam element manufactured by gluing laminates of solid wood lumber, finger-jointed lumber, or LVL. The individual lumber elements are oriented parallel to the longitudinal axis of the beam and laminated flat-wise to bond along the entire length and width of the lumber elements. Based on the stiffness rating of the individual laminations high quality laminates are generally applied at the beam faces, while low quality laminates are placed in the middle of the beam. This combination is preferred since the load is carried by the beam in the top and bottom faces, while the middle only has to resist shear. A cold curing resin adhesive such as resorcinol or phenol-resorcinol is usually used to produce the beam by applying the adhesive and clamping or cold-pressing the laminates. Since little or no heat is required for the cure, curved glulam members and other customized shapes can easily be produced. Glulams are manufactured in accordance with the American National Standards Institute (ANSI) ANSI standard A190.1 for structural glued laminated timber. The strength values (bending and shear) for glulam are higher than for lumber. Glulam members are typically used as headers, beams, arches, etc (Table 2). The production of glulam is not expected to grow significantly in North America because of the scarcity and high cost of laminating grade lumber, combined with stiff competition from LVL and other engineered wood products such as LSL and PSL, which are expected to grow because they have excellent structural properties and they employ more readily available raw materials (5,6).

PSL is an engineered wood product developed by MacMillan Bloedel, Ltd., of Canada and was first commercialized in 1988 (3,6). PSL is made in a similar

manner to glulam beams with the difference being that strands of broken-up veneer (about $\frac{1}{2}$ in. wide and up to about 37 in. long) are employed instead of solid lumber laminates. The strands are oriented and laid-up into a mat in a lengthwise direction, ie, aligned parallel to one another. The strands are glued with a water-resistant adhesive (PF) and are consolidated in a continuous microwave press. PSL is stronger, stiffer, and more stable than sawn lumber having the same cross section and is free of splits, knots, and warp. PSL is employed in various applications such as head beams, trusses, and other structural frames (Table 2).

LSL is another type of engineered wood product in which all the strands are aligned in one direction, ie, LSL is an oriented strand lumber. The strands in LSL are shorter than in PSL and produced from strand wood rather than veneer. The strands are typically longer than strands utilized in oriented strandboard. Pressing includes steam injection rather than radio-frequency heating, and isocyanate resin is typically used rather than PF adhesive. LSL is used in industrial and light structural applications (Table 2).

Wood Thermoplastic Composites

Wood-based composites continue to be among the most widely used building materials throughout the world. While thermoset wood composites date back to the early 1900s (a wood flour/PF composite called Bakelite[®]), wood combined with thermoplastic composites have become of major commercial importance only since the 1980s in the United States, although they have been in use longer in Europe (2). Wood-plastic composites (WPCs) represent a rapidly growing industry in the United States in both the plastic processors and forest products industries (56–58).

To plastic processors wood and other lignocellulosic fibers (eg, agrofibers) represent a vast supply of readily available raw materials for all types of WPCs. Statistics show that 2.5 million tons of fillers were used in North America in 2001 with the most important fillers being inorganic materials (2.3 million tons) such as calcium carbonate (1 million tons), glass fiber (0.77 million tons), and other mineral fillers such as clay, talc, mica (0.55 million tons). Only 182,000 t was natural fibers (57). The inorganic materials enhance some composite properties (eg, strength and modulus) and are extensively employed as fillers, but have several drawbacks. They are produced from nonrenewable sources and they have high density, so products prepared with inorganic fillers tend to be heavy. Furthermore, these inorganic fillers cause equipment wear during processing (59). Therefore, on a volumetric basis, their use may not be very cost-effective. During the past two decades, wood fibers and other lignocellulosic materials have begun to penetrate the filled thermoplastic markets because they possess many advantages relative to the common inorganic fillers. These advantages include high specific stiffness and strength, easy availability, lower density, lower cost on a unit-volume basis, low hardness which minimizes wear of the processing equipment, renewability, recyclability, safety, and biodegradability (60,61). The replacement of inorganic fillers with lignocellulosic fibers also provides an opportunity to increase processing productivity rates (56).

Table 4. Some Physicomechanical Properties of WPCs and Comparative Performance of WPCs with (Oak) and Softwood (Pine) Solid Wood

Tests	Test methods	HDPE/WF ^a	PVC/WF ^a	Northern oak ^b	Ponderosa pine ^b
Specific gravity	ASTM D143	0.96–1.1	1.36	0.56–0.63 ^b	0.38–0.40 ^b
MOR, psi ^c	ASTM D790	790–1423	2100–4500	14300 ^b	9400 ^b
MOE, 10 ³ psi ^c	ASTM D790	160–510	700–980	1820 ^b	1290 ^b
Water absorption, %	ASTM D1037	0.7–4.3	1.2	—	17.2
Thickness swell, %	ASTM D1037	0.2	—	—	2.6
Nail withdrawal, lb	ASTM 1761	90–170	—	—	50
Screw withdrawal, lb	ASTM 1761	430–600	—	—	165
Hardness, lb	ASTM 143	1290	—	1290 ^b	460 ^b
Linear coefficient of expansion (per °F)	ASTM 696	16 × 10 ⁻⁶	17 × 10 ⁻⁶	—	25 × 10 ⁻⁶

^aHDPE/WF and PVC/WF contained 50–70% wood fiber.

^bMOE and MOR values measured at 12% moisture content (7).

^cTo convert psi to MPa, divide by 145.

The forest products companies, on the other hand, see plastics as a way to expand sustainable forest resource utilization through the use of wood waste, fibers from underutilized species, and reclamation and recycling of wood, other agricultural species and waste, and paper materials from municipal solid waste streams (62), as well as a way to make new construction materials with attributes that wood does not have (56).

WPCs are typically manufactured by first mixing dried cellulosic materials (in powder or fibrous form) with various plastics and other processing ingredients (eg, lubricants, fusion promoters, coupling agents, flame and smoke retardants, ultraviolet stabilizers). Cellulosic materials that are used in the production of WPCs include wood flour or particle, flax, jute, or other agricultural waste. The most commonly employed plastics are polyethylene (PE), polypropylene (PP), polystyrene (PS), and poly(vinyl chloride) (PVC). These thermoplastics are selected mainly because they can be processed at lower temperatures (150–220°C) to prevent the degradation of cellulosic materials (2). Generally, wood flour and other coarse particles (10–100 mesh size) are easier to handle during processing than long fibers which tend to agglomerate and cause dispersion problems during mixing. However, because of their higher aspect ratio, long fibers provide greater reinforcing effects in WPCs than particles. The fiber can be difficult to disperse but the dispersion problems can be offset by using compatibilizers during processing (60,63,64). Once mixed, the blended material is processed into the desired shape by conventional plastic processing equipment such as an extruder, injection molder, and a hot press (compression molding). Most of the WPCs used in construction applications are extruded to a profile of uniform cross section (solid or hollow) and any practical length, whereas products having more complex shapes such as those used in the automotive industry or other consumer products are injection- or compression-molded.

WPCs comprise an emerging class of materials that combine the favorable performance and cost attributes of both wood and plastics (Table 4). Because

WPCs are true hybrid materials, they have strength and stiffness properties that are somewhere between both materials. They have outstanding bolt, drill, screw, and nail retention and they machine similarly to wood. Generally, WPCs are stiffer than neat plastics and have attributes that solid wood does not have. If properly manufactured, WPCs are more resistant to moisture (water absorption and thickness swell) than wood and resist attack by insects and fungi better than other wood products. This outstanding performance is due to the fact that the plastic matrix encapsulates the individual wood fibers, thus interfering with moisture uptake by the wood element. Moisture can only be absorbed into the exposed sections of the wood. WPCs can be sanded, stained, painted, and finished just like natural solid wood. However, sealants and paints are not required for protection because WPCs resist moisture better than wood, and WPC products can be prepared with colorants and other additives during the processing phase, which eliminates the need for additional finishing.

Because of their performance, easy installation, and cost-effectiveness, WPC products are being selected by homebuilders over other materials such as solid wood, concrete, clay, and aluminum, especially as building materials for applications like decking, siding, and window and door frames. WPCs are also used as molded panel components for automotive interiors. The market for these composites continues to expand in the United States and other parts of the world. In 1999, 460 million pounds of WPCs were produced in North America (56). In 2000, production of these composites increased to 760 million pounds and experts believe that the production of WPCs will continue to grow particularly because of their acceptance as a substitute for chromated copper arsenate pressure-treated lumber (57,58).

Although a variety of WPC products have been commercialized, some drawbacks in their properties may limit the market potential of these products. For example, WPCs are more brittle and have lower impact resistance than neat plastic products (61,65). In addition, their high density (62–85 lb/ft³), which is almost twice that of solid lumber (22–40 lb/ft³ for various pine species), may hinder their acceptance in the conventional structural lumber market (66). In general, unfilled plastics are more ductile than WPCs because the incorporated brittle wood fibers alter the ductile mode of failure of the matrix making the composites more brittle (61,65,67). The higher density of WPCs compared to the unfilled plastic and solid wood is mainly due to the compression of wood cell walls during processing. The final specific gravity of WPCs manufactured by injection molding, extrusion, and compression molding, even when made with a 0.9 specific gravity thermoplastic resin, is over 1 because the wood cell walls are crushed or compressed nearly to the specific gravity of solid wood without air spaces (approximately 1.5), and voids between and within the wood fiber structure are completely filled with resin (68,69).

Several attempts have been made to overcome the drawbacks of dense WPCs (65,70–72). Significant improvements in the impact strength of WPCs are achieved by incorporating impact modifiers into the formulation (65). However, impact modification of WPCs does not enhance their ductility or reduce the density of the products (65). The creation of a microcellular void structure (wood-like structure) in WPCs through foaming has recently been found appropriate to reduce the weight of the composites (70–73). The lightweight WPCs, as a result of the presence of microcells, exhibit enhanced ductility and impact resistance.

Table 5. Mechanical Properties of Microcellular Pure Plastic and WPC Foams

Samples ^a	Mechanical properties ^b							
	Strength at break, MPa ^c		Tensile modulus (stiffness), GPa ^d		Elongation at break, %		Notched Izod impact strength, J/m ^e	
	Unfoamed	Foamed	Unfoamed	Foamed	Unfoamed	Foamed	Unfoamed	Foamed
Pure plastic (PVC)	17	14	0.06	0.07	84	126	72	206
WPC	14	13	0.37	0.20	28	63	31	87

^aThe density of pure PVC was 1.35 g/cm³ whereas the densities of the composites with 30% wood fibers were in the range of 1.35–1.45 g/cm³. The densities of foamed PVC and WPC samples were 0.60 g/cm³.

^bProperties are expressed as specific properties, ie, property divided by the specific density of the sample (72).

^cTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^dTo convert GPa to psi, multiply by 145,000.

^eTo convert J/m to ft-lbf/in., divide by 53.38.

However, the reduced density can be achieved at the expense of other mechanical properties such as strength and stiffness (72,74) (Table 5).

There currently are no manufacturing standards for WPCs and the standard test methods for evaluating the mechanical and physical properties of WPC products are under development by the American Society for Testing and Materials (ASTM), committee D7 on Wood. The lack of manufacturing standards combined with the increased use of WPCs by the construction industry have also resulted in concern about the durability of these products exposed to outdoor environments. In applications such as decks and docks, landscaping timber, fencing, signposts, playground equipment, window frames, etc, the products can be in ground contact and/or are in an above-ground environment where there often are risks of material deterioration. When WPCs are in ground contact, biological agents such as fungi and subterranean termites may be the main cause of degradation (75,76). On the other hand, exposure to sunlight and moisture can cause degradation in an above-ground environment (77,78). Freeze-thaw durability may also be of significant importance in colder regions where freeze-thaw action is prevalent. These climatic environments may cause millions of dollars of material damage and high material cost may be involved to replace damaged products. Therefore, the durability of these composites is of special concern for their use in outdoor applications and is currently being extensively studied.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Composition Board” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 4, pp. 75–118, by M. N. Carroll, Washington State University; “Composition Board” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 4, pp. 47–66, by T. M. Maloney, Washington State University; “Wood, Polymer-Impregnated” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 887–900, by J. A. Meyer, SUNY College of Environmental Science and Forestry; “Wood Composites” in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 12, pp. 521–546, by L. M. Matuana, Michigan State University, and P. A. Heiden, Michigan Technological University.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. J. L. Bowyer, R. Shmulsky, and J. G. Haygreen, *Forest Products and Wood Science: An Introduction*, 4th ed., Iowa Press, Ames, Iowa, 2003, p. 554.
2. C. Clemons, *Forest Products J.* **52**(6), 10–19 (2002).
3. T. M. Maloney, *Forest Products J.* **46**(2), 19–22 (1996).
4. T. M. Maloney, *Modern Particleboard and Dry-Process Fiberboard Manufacturing* (updated edition), Miller Freeman Publications, Inc., San Francisco, 1993, p. 681.
5. L. M. Guss, *Forest Products J.* **45**(7/8), 17–24 (1995).
6. D. A. Pease in J. A. Sowle, ed., *Panels: Products, Applications and Production Trends, A Special Report from Wood Technology*, Miller Freeman Publications, Inc., San Francisco, 1994, p. 272.
7. A. A. Marra, *Technology of Wood Bonding: Principles in Practice*, Van Nostrand Reinhold, New York, 1992.
8. R. M. Rowell, A. R. Sanadi, D. F. Caulfield, R. E. Jacobson, in A. L. Leao, F. X. Carvalho, E. Frollini, eds., *Proceedings of the First International Lignocellulosics-Plastics Composites, Mar. 13–15, 1996*, Sao Paulo, Brazil, 1997, pp. 23–51.
9. J. A. Youngquist, A. M. Krzysik, B. W. English, H. N. Spelter, and P. Chow, *The Use of Recycled Wood and Paper in Building Applications* (Proceedings of a 1996 symposium sponsored by the U. S. Department of Agriculture Forest Service, Forest Products Laboratory and the Forest Products Society, in cooperation with the National Association of Home Builders Research Center, the American Forest & Paper Association, the center for Resourceful Building Technology, and Environmental Building News), Proc. 7286, Forest Products Society, Madison, Wis., 1996, pp. 123–134.
10. J. A. Youngquist, A. M. Krzysik, P. Chow, and R. Meimban, in R. M. Rowell, R. A. Young, J. K. Rowell, eds., in *Paper and Composites from Agro-Based Resources*, CRC Lewis Publishers, Boca Raton, Fla., 1997, Chapt. 9, pp. 301–336.
11. Anonymous, Wood-based Panel Products: Technology roadmap (Canadian Cataloguing in Publication Data), 1998, <http://strategis.ic.gc.ca/trm>.
12. T. Sellers Jr., *Wood Technol.* **127**(3), 40–43 (2000).
13. T. Sellers Jr., *Forest Products J.* **51**(6), 12–22 (2001).
14. T. Sellers Jr., *Panel World* **35**(3), 22–26 (1994).
15. T. Sellers Jr., *Panel World* **31**(5), 26–29, 44 (1990).
16. T. Sellers Jr., *Plywood and Adhesive Technology*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1985, p. 661.
17. A. Gardziella, L. A. Pilato, and A. Knop, *Phenolic Resins*, 2nd ed., Springer, New York, 2000, p. 560.
18. A. Pizzi, *Advanced Wood Adhesives Technology*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1994, p. 89.
19. A. Pizzi and A. Pizzi, eds., in *Wood Adhesives: Chemistry and Technology*, Vols. 1 and 2, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1983, 1989.
20. A. Pizzi and K. L. Mittal, eds., *Handbook of Adhesive Technology*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1994, p. 680.
21. A. V. Pocius, *Adhesion and Adhesives Technology: An Introduction*, Hanser–Gardner Publications, Inc., Cincinnati, Ohio, 1997.
22. Z. W. Wicks, F. N. Jones, and S. P. Pappas, *Organic Coatings, Vol. 1: Film Formation, Components, and Appearance*, Wiley-Interscience, New York, 1992, p. 190.
23. M. Turunen, L. Alvila, T. T. Pakkanen, and J. Rainio, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **88**, 582–588 (2003).
24. J.-S. Kazayawoko, B. Riedl, and J. Poliquin, *Holzforchung* **46**, 349–354 (1992).
25. J. S. M. Kazayawoko, B. Riedl, J. Poliquin, A. O. Barry, and L. M. Matuana, *Holzforchung* **46**, 257–261 (1992).

26. L. M. Matuana, B. Riedl, and A. O. Barry, *Eur. Polym. J.* **29**, 483–490 (1993).
27. W. Peng and B. Riedl, *Polymer* **35**, 1280–1286 (1994).
28. A. O. Barry, W. Peng, and B. Riedl, *Holzforschung* **47**, 247–252 (1993).
29. D. J. Gardner and G. D. McGinnis, *J. Wood Chem. Technol.* **8**, 261–288 (1988).
30. M. Fechtal and B. Riedl, *Holzforschung* **47**, 349–357 (1993).
31. M. Fechtal, B. Riedl, and L. Calvé, *Holzforschung* **47**, 419–424 (1993).
32. United Soybean Board 2002. Market Opportunity Summary, Soy-Based Wood Adhesives, Feb. 2002, and Soy-Based Wood Adhesives and the Environment, Feb. 2002, www.unitedsoybean.org.
33. J. J. Meister, Presented at the *2nd Annual Partnerships for Environmental Improvement and Economic Development Conference on Wood and Cellulose, Building Blocks for Chemicals, Fuels and Advanced Materials*, Syracuse, New York, Apr. 9–11, 2000.
34. A. Huttermann, C. Mai, and A. Kharazipour, *Appl. Microbiol. Biotechnol.* **55**, 387–394 (2001).
35. A. P. Barbosa, E. B. Mano, and C. T. Andrade, *Forest Products J.* **50**, 89–92 (2000).
36. O. V. Startsev, B. N. Salin, Yu. G. Skuridin, R. M. Utemesov, and A. D. Nasonov, *Wood Sci. Technol.* **33**, 73–83 (1999).
37. R. D. Palardy, B. A. Haataja, S. M. Shaler, A. D. Williams, and T. L. Laufenberg, *Forest Products J.* **39**, 27–32 (1989).
38. Anonymous, Soy-Based Foaming Adhesive May Change Plywood Industry, <http://www.unitedsoybean.org/feedstocks.pdf/fs9803.pdf>, accessed May 26, 2003.
39. L. M. Matuana, *Forest Products J.* **53**(3), 40–42 (2003).
40. M. H. Schneider, Y. H. Chui, and S. B. Ganey, *Forest Products J.* **46**(9), 79–83 (1996).
41. J. Neetha and J. Rani, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **68**, 1185–1189 (1998).
42. R. O. Ebewele, G. E. Myers, B. H. River, and J. A. Koutsky, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **42**, 2997–3012 (1991).
43. R. O. Ebewele, G. E. Myers, B. H. River, and J. A. Koutsky, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **43**, 1483–1490 (1991).
44. R. O. Ebewele, B. H. River, and G. E. Myers, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **52**, 689–700 (1994).
45. R. O. Ebewele, B. H. River, and G. E. Myers, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **49**, 229–245 (1993).
46. P. Rachtanapun, M.S. thesis, Michigan Technological University, 1999, p. 171.
47. P. Rachtanapun and P. Heiden, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **87**, 890–897 (2003).
48. P. Rachtanapun and P. Heiden, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **87**, 898–907 (2003).
49. S. Das, M.S. thesis, Michigan Technological University, 2000, p. 169.
50. K. Carlborn, M.S. thesis, Michigan Technological University, 2002, p. 131.
51. M. Zanetti, A. Pizzi, M. Beaujean, H. Pasch, K. Rode, and P. Dalet, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **86**, 1855–1862 (2002).
52. Can. Pat. 1,215,510 (1986), W. E. Hsu.
53. R. L. Geimer, and J. H. Kwon, *Wood Fiber Sci.* **31**(1), 15–27 (1999).
54. R. L. Geimer, J. H. Kwon and J. Bolton, *Wood Fiber Sci.* **30**, 326–338 (1998).
55. Wood Handbook: Wood as an Engineering Material, Forest Products Laboratory General Technical Report FPL-GTR-113, U.S. Department of Agriculture, Forest Service, Forest Products Laboratory, Madison, Wis., 1999.
56. J. Patterson, *J. Vinyl Additive Technol.* **7**(3), 138–141 (2001).
57. M. Defosse, *Mod. Plast.* 25–30 (Jan. 2003).
58. R. Donnell, *Timber Processing* 28–30 (Nov. 2000).
59. L. C. Czarnecki and J. L. White, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **25**, 1217 (1980).
60. R. T. Woodhams, G. Thomas, and D. K. Rodgers, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **24**, 1166–1177 (1984).
61. L. M. Matuana, C. B. Park, and J. J. Balatinecz, *J. Vinyl Additive Technol.* **3**, 265–273 (1997).
62. J. J. Balatinecz and R. T. Woodhams, *J. of Forestry* **91**(11), 22–26 (1993).

63. L. M. Matuana, R. T. Woodhams, J. J. Balatinez, and C. B. Park, *Polym. Comp.* **19**, 446–455 (1998).
64. M. Kazayawoko, J. J. Balatinez, and L. M. Matuana, *J. Mater. Sci.* **34**, 6189–6199 (1999).
65. F. Mengeloglu, L. M. Matuana, and J. A. King, *J. Vinyl Additive Technol.* **6**(3), 153–157 (2000).
66. F. Mengeloglu and L. M. Matuana, *J. Vinyl Additive Technol.* **7**(2), 142–148 (2001).
67. C. M. Clemons, A. J. Giacomini, and J. A. Koutsky, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **37**, 1012–1018 (1997).
68. B. D. Park and J. J. Balatinez, *J. Thermoplast. Comp. Mater.* **9**, 342–364 (1996).
69. R. L. Geimer, C. M. Clemons, and J. E. Wood Jr., *Wood Fiber Sci.* **25**(2), 163–169 (1993).
70. L. Matuana-Malanda, C. B. Park, and J. J. Balatinez, *J. Cell. Plast.* **32**, 449–467 (1996).
71. L. M. Matuana, C. B. Park, and J. J. Balatinez, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **37**, 1137–1147 (1997).
72. L. M. Matuana, C. B. Park, and J. J. Balatinez, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **38**, 1862–1872 (1998).
73. L. M. Matuana and F. Mengeloglu, *J. Vinyl Additive Technol.* **7**(2), 67–75 (2001).
74. F. Mengeloglu and L. M. Matuana, *J. Vinyl Additive Technol.* **9**(1), 26–31 (2003).
75. P. I. Morris and P. Cooper, *Forest Products J.* **48**(1), 86–88 (1998).
76. W. Chetanachan, D. Sookkho, W. Sutthitavil, N. Chantasatrasamy, and R. Sinsersuksakul, PVC/Wood: A New Look in Construction, in *Proceedings of Vinylitec 2000: Rigid PVC in the New Millennium: Innovations, Applications, Properties*, Sponsored by Vynil Division-SPE and Philadelphia Section, Philadelphia, Pa., Oct. 11–12, 2000, pp. 15–18.
77. L. M. Matuana and D. P. Kamdem, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **42**, 1657–1666 (2002).
78. L. M. Matuana, D. P. Kamdem, and J. Zhang, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **80**, 1943–1950 (2001).

LAURENT M. MATUANA
Michigan State University
PATRICIA A. HEIDEN
Michigan Technological University

WOOL

Raw Wool Specification

Wool is the fibrous covering from sheep (1) and is by far the most important animal fiber used in textiles. It appears to have been the earliest fiber to be spun and woven into cloth. In 2000–2001, world greasy wool production was 2.3×10^9 kg from 1×10^9 sheep, which is equivalent to 1.4×10^9 kg of clean wool (2) (Tables 1 and 2). This is down from a peak of 2.0×10^9 kg in 1989–1990.

Wool belongs to a family of proteins, the keratins, that also includes hair and other types of animal protective tissues such as horn, nails, feathers, beaks, and outer skin layers. The relative importance of wool as a textile fiber has declined over the past decades with the increasing use of synthetic fibers for textile products. Wool, however, is still an important fiber in the middle and upper price ranges of the textile market. It is also an extremely important export commodity

Table 1. World Production (10⁶ kg) of Wool (2000/2001)^a

Source	Fiber diameter, μm	Greasy	Clean
Merino	<24.5	932	572
Crossbred	24.6–32.5	540	308
Other (carpet)	>32.5	852	494
<i>Total</i>		<i>2324</i>	<i>1374</i>

^aFrom Ref. 2.**Table 2. Wool Production and Numbers of Sheep in Principal Wool-Producing Countries (2000/2001)^a**

Country/region	Wool production (greasy)		No. of sheep, (10 ⁶)
	10 ⁶ kg	%	
Australia	652	28.1	113
China	291	12.5	135
New Zealand	258	11.1	45.3
South Africa	50	2.2	17.5
Argentina	62	2.7	13.4
Uruguay	57	2.5	13.0
United Kingdom	62	2.7	27.6
Turkey	70	3.0	30.2
Iran	74	3.2	53.9
Former USSR	128	5.5	49.2
Others	620	26.5	508
<i>Total</i>	<i>2324</i>	<i>100</i>	<i>1006</i>

^aFrom Ref. 2.

for several nations, notably Australia, New Zealand, South Africa, and Argentina, and commands a price premium over most other fibers because of its outstanding natural properties. These include soft handle (the feel of the fabric), water absorption (and hence comfort), and superior drape (the way the fabric hangs). Table 2 shows wool production and sheep numbers in the world's principal wool-producing countries.

The principal characteristics of clean wool types are average diameter, measured in micrometers (referred to as microns), and average length, measured in millimeters. Essentially all fine diameter wool is produced by merino sheep or merino crossbreeds. Over 75% of the sheep in Australia (the world's largest wool producer) are merino sheep, which are also bred in large numbers in South Africa, Argentina, and the former USSR. The softness, fineness, and lightness of fabrics is determined primarily by fiber diameter, and so the price is very sensitive to the mean diameter (3) (Fig. 1).

Medium diameter wool includes sheep breeds of English origin, eg, south-down, hampshire, dorset, and cheviot, as well as crossbreeds, eg, columbia, targhee, corriedale, and polwarth, from interbreeding with merinos. Coarse diameter wool comes from sheep chiefly bred for meat, eg, lincoln, cotswold, and leicester.

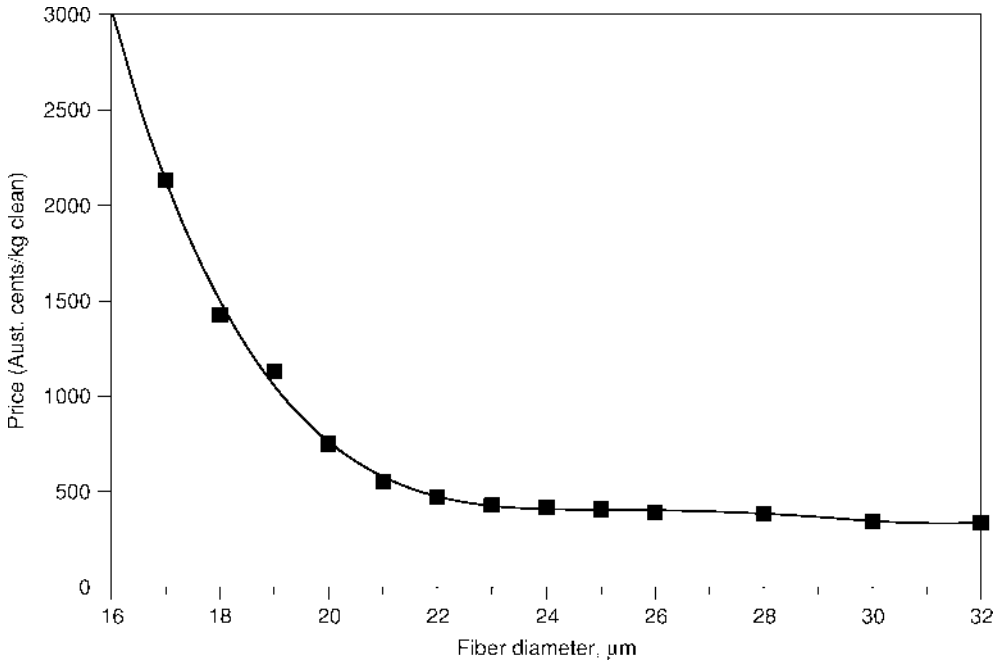


Fig. 1. Dependence of Australian wool prices on fiber diameter (1999/2000) (3).

Raw wool from sheep contains other constituents considered contaminants by wool processors. These can vary in content according to breed, nutrition, environment, and position of the wool on the sheep. The main contaminants are a solvent-soluble fraction (wool grease), protein material, a water-soluble fraction (largely perspiration salts, collectively termed *suint*), dirt, and vegetable matter (VM) (eg, burrs and seeds from pastures).

In buying raw wool, wool processors are concerned about its quality, the quantity of pure fiber present, and its freedom from contamination (4). For the fine and medium wools used for apparel, the major characteristics are average fiber diameter, yield (ie, the percentage content of pure fiber), content and type of VM, average fiber length, strength of fiber staples, and the position of any weak spot along the fibers. For very fine wools, the frequency and clarity of waves (crimp) in the staples has a significant effect on price. The range of fiber diameters, color of the clean wool, and the number (if any) of naturally colored fibers present can also be important. For carpet-type wools (long wools), the important properties (5) are yield, fiber diameter, fiber length, color, bulk (the volume occupied by the fibers in a yarn), and VM content. Also important for coarse wools is the degree of medullation. This is associated with cells containing air, arranged along the fiber axis. The presence of medulla cells increase light scattering by the fibers, restricting the use of these wools for some purposes.

Until the early 1970s, the characteristics of different wools were largely evaluated visually by wool classers and valuers. With the development of sampling techniques and equipment capable of rapid and economical measurement of yield, diameter, and VM (6,7), objective measurement and the sale of wool by

sample became dominant in major wool-exporting countries. In sale by sample, cores are drawn from each lot and tested for yield, diameter, and VM content in accordance with international standards (8,9). Measurements of staple length, strength, and position of weakness are also now in routine commercial use. In addition, a full-length display sample, representative of each lot and obtained by standard procedure (10), is available for buyers to appraise other characteristics. Sale by sample decreased costs by reducing the handling of bulk wool in wool-brokers' stores and selling operations. It also enabled the processing performance of wool to be predicted in topmaking (11) and spinning (12).

Fiber Characteristics

New instrumentation for measuring fiber diameter (13,14) has meant that data on the range of diameters present (CV_D) and fiber curvature (related to crimp frequency) are now available. The impact of these is fairly well established (15). These instruments have also been introduced on-farm so that the fleece quality of each animal can be assessed from a mid-side (16) or whole-fleece (17) sample. In some cases it is possible to gain increased returns from separating out the finest fleeces but bigger gains are possible from accelerating the rate of genetic progress. A remaining objective of research is to facilitate the introduction of a system of sale of raw wool by description in which a sale sample will not be required for inspection.

Fiber Growth. Wool fibers are produced from multicellular tube-like structures known as follicles. These follicles are located in the skin layers (dermis and epidermis) of sheep, and two types of follicles, primary and secondary, are usually identified. Primary and secondary follicles are described from the order of their initiation and development in foetal skin. The primary follicles develop first, in the unborn lamb. Secondary follicles develop later and in finer woolled sheep derived secondary follicles subsequently form by branching from the original secondaries, with which they share a common orifice (18). Each primary follicle has a sebaceous gland and a sweat gland together with an arrector muscle, whereas secondary follicles usually have only an associated sebaceous gland (19).

Fiber Morphology. Wool fibers consist of cells, where flattened overlapping cuticle cells form a protective sheath around cortical cells. A scanning electron micrograph of a clean merino wool fiber is shown in Figure 2. In some coarser fibers, a central vacuolated medullary cell type may be present.

In fine wool, such as that obtained from merino sheep, the cuticle is normally one cell thick (approximately $20 \times 30 \times 0.5 \mu\text{m}$) and usually constitutes about 10% by weight of the total fiber. Sections of cuticle cells show an internal series of laminations (Fig. 3), comprising outer sulfur-rich bands known as the exocuticle and inner regions of lower sulfur content called the endocuticle (20). On the exposed surface of cuticle cells, a membrane-like proteinaceous band (epicuticle) and a unique lipid component form a hydrophobic-resistant barrier (21). These lipid and protein components are the functional moieties of the fiber surface and are important in fiber protection and textile processing (22).

The cortex comprises the main bulk and determines many mechanical properties of wool fibers (Fig. 3). Cortical cells are polyhedral, spindle-shaped, and



Fig. 2. Scanning electron micrograph of merino fiber, showing overlapping cuticle cells.

approximately 100 μm long. They consist of a class of biological filaments known as intermediate filaments (23) embedded in a sulfur-rich matrix. The intermediate filaments (originally termed microfibrils), together with the matrix, are organized into large macrofibrillar units and these are often observed in sections of cortical cells. In fine merino wool, two main types of cortical cell, known as ortho- and para-, are arranged bilaterally. Orthocortical cells show different intermediate filament/matrix packing arrangements from those of paracortical cells (24). The arrangement of ortho- and paracortical cells differs among wool types. For example, in lincoln wool an annular (orthocortical core surrounded by paracortex) cellular arrangement is present. Merino fibers possess a characteristic crimp and in these fibers the orthocortex is located on the outer side of the crimp curvature.

A continuous intercellular material is present between cuticle and cortical cells which, despite being a relatively minor fraction of the total fiber weight, is of increasing interest because of its presumed role in the penetration of water and chemical reagents into wool fibers. This region, called the cell membrane complex, is approximately 25 nm wide (25). It comprises a continuous phase of intercellular material, together with the apposing cellular membranes of the cuticle and cortical cells.

Over the past decade, major advances have been made in our knowledge of the cellular and molecular processes in wool follicles that lead to the formation of the wool fiber cuticle, fiber surface, and fiber cortex. In the wool follicle, presumptive cuticle cells undergo flattening during their passage up the follicle and

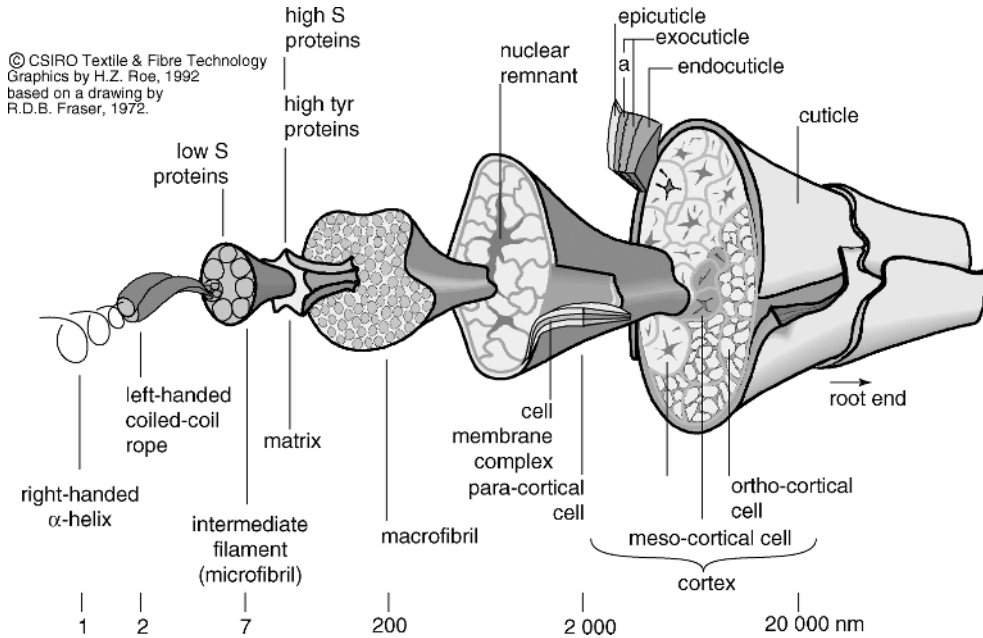


Fig. 3. Schematic of the structure of a fine merino wool fiber.

are interlocked with the cuticle cells of the inner root sheath (IRS). When examined by transmission electron microscopy (TEM), the developing fiber cuticle cells demonstrate densely stained intracellular laminae forming in the outer regions of the cells. As the laminae develop, they separate to form an outermost layer, the a-layer, and an underlying layer. Together, these layers comprise the exocuticle.

The remaining cellular volume contains an innermost lightly stained endocuticle (20). In the final stages of cuticle differentiation, proteolipid complexes are formed on the presumptive fiber surface. Unusual mixtures of fatty acids are present in these complexes, which lead to the formation of a hydrophobic surface on the emergent wool fiber (26).

During their upward growth in the follicle, fiber cuticle cells remain adhered to the IRS cuticle by intercellular laminae that develop between two cell types (20). This produces a membrane complex that is different in appearance to that formed between differentiated cortical cells. The main differences exist in the presumptive surface of fiber cuticle cells, where the original plasma membrane appears to be disrupted. This process has been observed by using energy-filtered TEM (21), where it appears that the intercellular laminae are precursors to the formation of a new fiber cuticle surface membrane. It seems reasonable to conclude that a specialized hydrophobic membrane must be synthesized, because a plasma membrane is designed to exist only in a physiological environment and could not perform the protective and other specialist functions of the fiber surface membrane. The mechanism involving separation of inner root sheath cuticle and fiber cuticle cells is essentially unknown, but the cleavage plane appears to occur

along a densely stained ultrafine band located in the center of the intercellular laminae (21).

Cortical cells form from a central or annular stream of germinal epithelia. During their early differentiation they undergo elongation and alignment processes. The initial sites for the formation of keratin structural components (arising concurrently with cell elongation) are at the outer boundaries (plasma membranes) of cortical cells, often in association with desmosomes (27,28). At high magnification, these initial keratin structures appear to consist of intermediate filaments (IFs) of 7–8 nm in diameter. These show appreciable staining when viewed after application of the heavy-metal preparations commonly used for contrast enhancement in TEM studies (28). After the formation and packing of IFs into lattice structures, a densely stained proteinaceous material appears to occupy the interfilamentous spaces. This proteinaceous material forms a matrix that is generally considered to be composed of high sulfur and high tyrosine proteins. The formation of these various structural components from their constituent proteins follows this two-stage sequential differentiation (29). As differentiation proceeds, the IF matrix aggregates to form structures, often known as macrofibrils, which increase in size and eventually occupy the bulk of presumptive cortical cells (30).

Chemical Structure

Wool belongs to the family of proteins called α -keratins, which also include materials such as hooves, horns, claws, and beaks (31). A characteristic feature of these “hard” keratins is a higher concentration of sulfur than “soft” keratins, such as those in skin. Although clean wool consists mainly of proteins, wool also contains approximately 1% by mass of nonproteinaceous material. This consists mainly of lipids plus very small amounts of polysaccharide material, trace elements, and, in colored fibers, pigments called melanin. The lipids are both structural and free.

Protein Composition. Proteins, or polypeptides, are formed by multiple condensation of α -amino acids via their amino and carboxyl groups to form secondary amide (ie peptide) bonds ($-\text{CONH}-$). The general structure of all proteins or polypeptides may be represented as $(-\text{NHCHRCO}-)$, where R represents the side chain of the amino acid. The peptide grouping is also known as an amino acid residue, because it is the part of the amino acid that remains after the condensation reaction. Complete acid hydrolysis of wool yields 18 amino acids, the relative amounts of which vary considerably between fibers from different sheep breeds, from different individuals of the same species, and sometimes along the length of single fibers from the same animal (31). These differences are the result of several factors, including genetic origin and nutrition. Studies on the chemical structure of wool have been largely confined to fine merino fibers, although aspects treated herein are relevant to all wool types. Typical figures for two different samples of wool are given in Table 3.

The side groups of the amino acids derived from wool vary markedly in size and chemical nature and play an important role in the physical and chemical properties of the fiber. Those containing nonpolar, hydrocarbon groups are hydrophobic and of low chemical reactivity. The polar, aliphatic hydroxyl groups of

Table 3. Amino Acid Composition of Merino Wool

Amino acid ^a	Amino acid content, residues/100 residues		Nature of R group
	Sample 1 ^b	Sample 2 ^c	
Glycine	8.6	8.2	Aliphatic hydrocarbon
Alanine	5.3	5.4	Aliphatic hydrocarbon
Valine	5.5	5.7	Aliphatic hydrocarbon
Leucine	7.7	7.7	Aliphatic hydrocarbon
Isoleucine	3.1	3.1	Aliphatic hydrocarbon
Phenylalanine	2.9	2.8	Aromatic hydrocarbon
Tyrosine	4.0	3.7	Aromatic hydrocarbon
Serine	10.3	10.5	Hydroxyl
Threonine	6.5	6.3	Hydroxyl
Aspartic acid ^d	6.4	6.6	Acidic
Glutamic acid ^e	11.9	11.9	Acidic
Histidine	0.9	0.8	Basic
Arginine	6.8	6.9	Basic
Lysine	3.1	2.8	Basic
Methionine	0.5	0.4	Sulfur containing
Cystine ^f	10.5	10.0	Sulfur containing
Tryptophan	^g	^g	Heterocyclic
Proline	5.9	7.2	Heterolytic

^a(+H₃N—C(R)—COO⁻)

^bRef. 32.

^cRef. 33.

^dIncludes asparagine.

^eIncludes glutamine.

^fThe amount of cystine is shown as the concentration of its reduction product, cysteine (also termed "half-cystine"). This includes any of the oxidation by-product, cysteic acid, that is present).

^gTryptophan is destroyed under the conditions used for these analysis; values of about 0.5 residues % have been obtained by alternative techniques (Refs. 34–36).

serine and threonine are chemically more reactive than the hydrocarbon residues. The side chains that have the most overall influence on the properties of wool are, however, the acidic groups of aspartic and glutamic acids and the basic groups of histidine, arginine, and lysine. These acidic and basic groups give wool an amphoteric character and play an important role in wool dyeing. They are also responsible for wool's ability to combine with large amounts of acids or bases. The individual polypeptide chains of wool are held together and stabilized by both covalent and noncovalent bonds and interactions.

The most important of these is the disulfide bond (Fig. 4). This occurs by reaction of pairs of cysteine residues to form cystine (disulfide) linkages (—S—S—) between different polypeptide molecules, or between segments of the same molecules, as shown. The disulfide interchain cross-links have been compared with the rungs of a ladder. They are important because they prevent movement of chains and chain segments and, thus, are responsible for the higher stability and lower solubility of wool fibers compared with most proteins. The disulfide cross-links are readily rearranged through a thiol/disulfide interchange reaction under the influence of heat and water, or more rapidly on treatment with

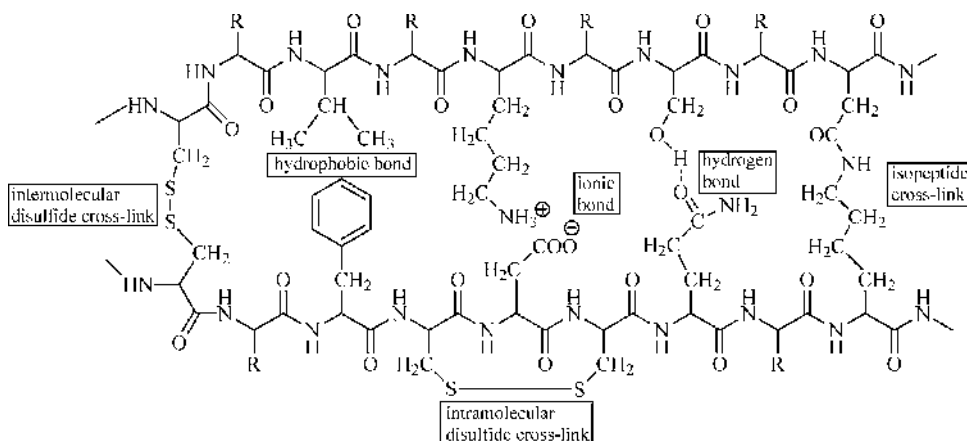


Fig. 4. Types of covalent and noncovalent bonds in wool.

alkaline-reducing agents (eq. 1 where W = Wool).



Thiol/disulfide interchange facilitates conformational rearrangement of the wool proteins, leading to relaxation of molecular stress in the fiber. This property is employed in the permanent setting of wool fabrics. Another type of covalent cross-link present in wool is the isopeptide bond, formed between the side chains of lysine and either aspartic or glutamic acid (Fig. 4). Noncovalent bonds or interactions also make an important contribution to the properties of wool. These secondary bonds can occur within a single protein chain, or between different chains. They include hydrogen bonds between $-CO$ and $-NH$ groups in the polypeptide chains and the amino and carboxyl groups in the side chains, and also between suitable donor and acceptor groups in the amino acid side chains. Strong electrostatic interactions (ionic bonds, or "salt linkages") also occur between ionized carboxyl and amino groups in some of the side chains. Ionic bonds contribute to the dry mechanical properties of wool fibers. Hydrophobic interactions can occur between nonpolar groups in some of the side chains and these contribute to the mechanical properties of keratin fibers, particularly when wet. They are also important in wool setting.

Structure of Wool Proteins. The structure of wool proteins has been the subject of much research. Methods to solubilize, separate, and determine the amino acid sequence of these proteins have been reviewed (31,37). It is estimated that wool contains about 170 different types of polypeptides varying in relative molecular mass from below 10,000 to greater than 50,000 (37,38). Morphologically, wool fibers are biological composites, with each component having a different physical and chemical composition (Fig. 3). The groups of proteins that constitute wool are not uniformly distributed throughout the fiber, but are aggregated within the various regions.

Except for a small amount of the amino acid methionine, the sulfur in wool occurs in the form of the amino acid cystine. Only approximately 82% of clean

wool consists of keratinous proteins, which are characterized by a high concentration of cystine. Approximately 17% of the fiber is protein material of relatively low cystine content (<3%); this has been termed nonkeratinous. As a result of the lower cystine content, the nonkeratinous proteins have a lower concentration of disulfide cross-links compared with the keratinous proteins in the fiber. The nonkeratinous material is, therefore, more labile and less resistant to chemical attack than the keratinous proteins. The nonkeratinous proteins are located primarily in the cell membrane complex between the cortical cells and in the endocuticle (Fig. 3). Approximately 13% of the total nonkeratinous material is also located within the cortical cells, where its distribution differs between the cells of the ortho- and paracortex.

The keratinous proteins of wool belong to three groups:

- (1) low sulfur proteins, rich in amino acids that contribute to α -helix formation (glutamic acid, aspartic acid, leucine, lysine, arginine)
- (2) high sulfur proteins, rich in cystine, proline, serine, and threonine
- (3) high glycine, high tyrosine proteins which are also rich in serine.

The proteins derived from the rod-like intermediate filaments (microfibrils) of the cortical cells contain the helical segments of low sulfur proteins. These are surrounded by a relatively amorphous, nonfilamentous matrix, which consists principally of high sulfur and high glycine/high tyrosine proteins. It has been shown that the amino acid sequences of the helical portions are highly homologous with those of intermediate filament proteins derived from skin and other tissues. For this reason the microfibrils of wool are now generally referred to as intermediate filaments (37). Although the filament proteins of the ortho- and paracortex are similar, the orthocortex contains a higher proportion of intermediate filaments than the paracortex. The orthocortex is, therefore, richer in the low sulfur proteins that favor α -helix formation. The intermediate filaments contain a rod-like central helical domain in which the sequences show a heptad repeat, interrupted at three positions by short nonhelical segments. The ends of the polypeptides consist of nonhelical domains terminated in carboxyl and *N*-acetyl groups, respectively (37,39). The proportion of matrix (and hence of the high sulfur proteins) is greater in the paracortex than in the cells of the orthocortex (40). Furthermore, the proteins of highest sulfur content (ultra-high sulfur proteins) are concentrated in the paracortex (41).

Wool Lipids. The lipids of wool are located mainly in the cell membrane complex. They constitute less than 1% of the fiber mass but play an important role in many properties, such as the intercellular diffusion of dyes and reagents (25,31). The free lipids are extractable with organic solvents and consist of fatty acids, fatty alcohols, sterols, sterol esters, and trace amounts of glycerides, sphingolipids, and glycolipids (26). Although phospholipid is present in the wool follicle membranes, only trace amounts of phospholipid are found in the keratinized fiber (42,43). Cholesterol and its biosynthetic precursor, desmosterol, are the main sterol components of the free lipids. In addition to the free lipids, wool contains some lipids that are believed to be covalently bound to proteins. These components are not readily removed by organic solvents, but those at the fiber surface

can be released by alkaline hydrolysis under conditions where damage or modification of the fiber interior cannot occur (44). Covalently bound surface lipids represent approximately 0.025% of the fiber mass and are a distinct component of the fiber that has been termed the F-layer (44,45). This component is very important because it is responsible for the hydrophobicity of the fiber surface. The major component of the F-layer is an unusual branched-chain fatty acid (18-methyleicosanoic acid), which accounts for approximately 60% of the surface lipid material. Removal of the bound surface lipids generates a clean protein surface, which is more wettable, and has higher friction and better adhesion properties than the surface of clean untreated wool (44).

Physical Properties

Fiber Size and Shape. Wool is usually harvested from sheep by annual shearing. The fiber length is, therefore, determined largely by the rate of growth, which in turn depends on both genetic and environmental factors. Typical merino fibers are 50–125 mm long. They have irregular crimp (curvature), with the finer fiber generally showing lower growth rates and higher crimp. The fiber surface is rough as a consequence of the outer layer of overlapping cuticle cells. By far the most important dimension is the fiber diameter. Wool fibers exhibit a range of diameters, which like fiber length is dependent on both genetics and environment. Coarse wool fibers (25–70 μm diameter) are used in carpets, while fine merino fibers (10–25 μm) are used in apparel because of their soft handle. Fibers from an individual sheep also exhibit a range of diameters. The mean diameter is the prime dictator of price; however, the distribution of diameters is also important. When worn next to the skin, the number of coarse fibers affects comfort as these fibers, rather than buckling, indent the skin and activate nerve receptors (46,47). This gives rise to a sensation of prickle and itch that has been incorrectly assumed, by some consumers, to be an allergic reaction. True allergies are rare, if they exist at all, and the irritation is mechanical and not immunological. Instruments that measure the full diameter distribution as well as fiber curvature have been developed recently (13,14). Individual fibers exhibit curvature in three dimensions; however, by measuring the circular curvature of short segments, a two-dimensional value can be obtained that correlates with the crimp frequency measured in staples. Crimp contributes to the excellent insulating properties of wool fabrics by improving their bulkiness and, hence, the amount of entrapped air.

Water Sorption. Wool is hygroscopic and able to absorb and desorb large amounts of water as the relative humidity surrounding the fiber changes. The water is believed to be associated with specific chemical groups in the amorphous regions, with polar side groups and peptide groups of the protein chains considered to be the most important (48). Debate continues, however, on the exact location of this water, its state, and the mechanism by which it enters the fiber (49–51). As a consequence of the lipid outer layer, the surface of wool is hydrophobic. It is dry to touch and not readily wet-out by liquid water. In line with other polymers having functional surfaces, the surface of wool is believed to rearrange in different environments (52). In textiles, the amount of water absorbed is generally expressed as a percentage of the dry weight. This is referred to as “regain” and

Table 4. Effect of Moisture Sorption on the Physical Properties of Wool Fibers at 25°C^a

Property	Regain, %							
	0	5	10	15	20	25	30	33
Relative humidity, % (absorption)	0	15	42	68	85	94	99	100
Relative humidity, % (desorption)	0	8	32	58	79	92	98	100
Specific gravity, kg/m ³	1.304	1.314	1.315	1.313	1.304	1.292	1.277	1.268
Volume swelling, %	0	4.24	9.07	14.25	20.0	26.2	32.8	36.8
Length swelling, %	0	0.55	0.93	1.08	1.15	1.17	1.18	1.19
Radial swelling, %	0	1.82	4.00	6.32	8.88	11.69	14.57	16.26
Heat of wetting ^b , kJ/kg wool	101	64.4	38.1	20.5	10.0	4.2	1.13	0
Young's modulus, relative ^c	2.69	2.54	2.36	2.02	1.59	1.27	1.05	1.00
Torsional rigidity modulus, GPa ^d	1.76	1.60	1.26	0.90	0.50	0.28	0.16	0.11
Electrical resistivity, MΩ · m	—	3 × 10 ⁴	400	8	0.40	0.06	—	—

^aUnless otherwise stated, data from Ref. 55.

^bHeat evolves when wool, dry mass of 1 kg, at a particular regain is immersed in water.

^cRef. 56.

^dTo convert GPa to psi, multiply by 145,000.

is different to “water content“, which is the mass of water in the fiber expressed as a percentage of the total mass of fiber plus water. A pronounced hysteresis is observed in the water sorption isotherm of wool. This is 2% higher on desorption than on absorption, at most relative humidities (53). The saturated regain of wool is about 33%, which is higher than that of most other fibers (54).

Heat is liberated when wool absorbs water; this increases comfort by helping to buffer the wearer against sudden environmental changes. The absorption of water by wool also results in other improvements to comfort during wear. At a given relative humidity, wool has similar water sorption to skin. Wool garments, therefore, act as an excellent buffer during physical activity by transporting perspiration away from the skin, thereby keeping its moisture content close to the comfort level. A new wool-containing product designed for active sportswear (SportWool™) utilizes the moisture-buffering properties of wool (CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology Web site: <http://www.tft.csiro.au>; Sportwool Web site: <http://www.sportwool.com>). As can be seen from Table 4, most physical properties of the fiber are affected by (water) regain.

Table 4 Effect of Water Sorption on the Physical Properties of Wool Fibers at 25°C

Wool is sold by weight; thus, allowance for uptake of water must be made. A premium is paid for fine wools and because the diameter changes with regain, diameter measurements must be made under standard conditions of temperature and humidity.

Thermal Properties. The regular packing of α -helical polypeptide chains within the intermediate filaments forms a crystalline phase that occupies about 70% of the dry volume of the fiber (57). This phase melts irreversibly at a temperature that is both time- and regain-dependent (58). During the dyeing and finishing of wool, no melting of the fiber occurs. Care should be taken, however, when processing blends of wool and synthetic fibers that require higher

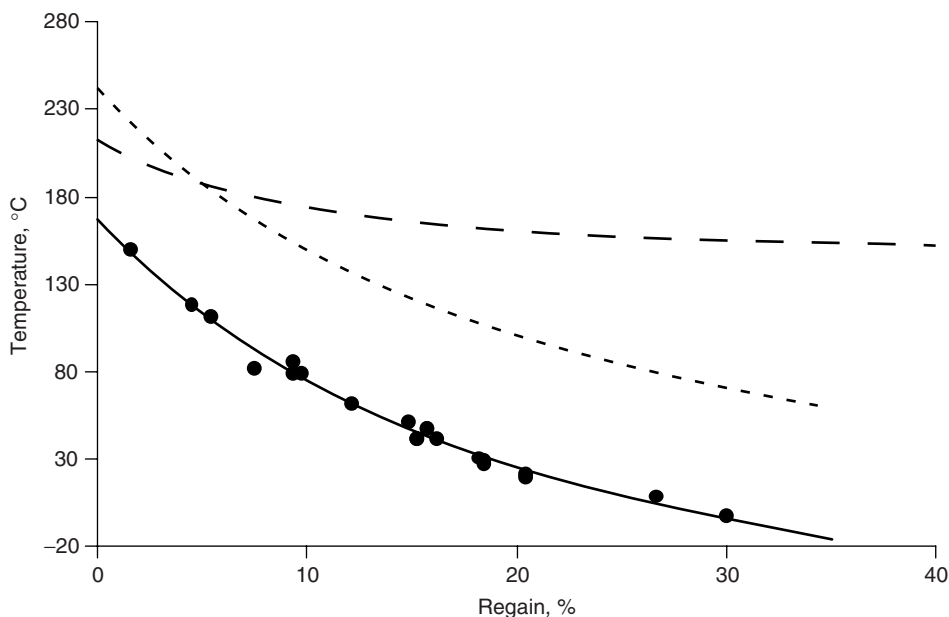


Fig. 5. Glass-transition (—) (60), indicative permanent setting temperature (---), and melting temperature (- · - · -) (58) of wool as a function of regain.

temperatures. The amorphous matrix phase contains a high concentration of the amino acid cystine and is, therefore, highly cross-linked. As with other amorphous materials, a glass transition T_g has been detected in the wool fiber (59,60) which is sensitive to physical aging (61). Water acts as a plasticizer, lowering the glass-transition temperature of the dry fiber from 170°C to below zero when saturated (Fig. 5).

The glass-transition temperature is an important parameter, as the properties and performance of wool are influenced by the environmental conditions (temperature and humidity) relative to the glass transition. The insertion of temporarily set creases or pleats in wool fabric (equivalent to thermally set creases in synthetic polymer fabrics) is achieved by subjecting wool to bending strain above T_g and fixed by transition to conditions below T_g . This can be done by heating and cooling, wetting and drying, or a combination of both, eg, steam pressing. Wrinkle recovery is poorer when wrinkles are inserted above T_g and recovery is below T_g . This is likely to occur under hot and humid conditions where local wetting (perspiration) and wrinkle insertion occurs simultaneously. When the fabric moves away from the skin, the wrinkle has insufficient time for complete recovery before the fabric dries. This causes the T_g of the fabric to rise to a temperature above that of the environment. The viscoelastic properties (59), physical aging (59), felting (62), and the water absorption isotherm of wool (50) are also influenced by the glass transition.

Tensile Properties. The tensile properties of wool are quite variable but, typically, at 65% RH and 20°C individual fibers have a tenacity of 110–140 N/ktex (140–180 MPa), a breaking elongation of 30–40%, and an initial

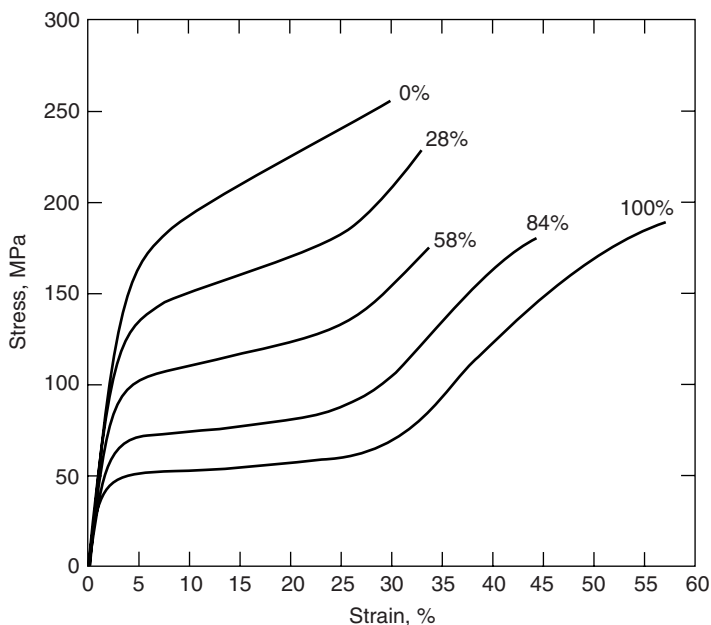


Fig. 6. Stress–strain curves of typical wool fibers at different relative humidities.

modulus of 2100–3000 N/ktex (2.7–3.9 GPa) (54). Although wool has a complicated hierarchical structure (see Fig. 3), the tensile properties of the fiber are largely understood in terms of a two-phase composite model (63–65). In these models, water-impenetrable crystalline regions (generally associated with the intermediate filaments) oriented parallel to the fiber axis are embedded in a water-sensitive matrix to form a semicrystalline biopolymer. The parallel arrangement of these filaments produces a fiber that is highly anisotropic. While the longitudinal modulus of the fiber decreases by a factor of 3 from dry to wet (56), the torsional modulus (a measure of the matrix stiffness) decreases by a factor greater than 10 (Table 4 and Reference 66). The longitudinal stress–strain curves for a wool fiber at different relative humidities are shown in Fig. 6 (54).

Three distinct regions can be discerned, especially for fibers at higher relative humidity. Once the fiber crimp is removed, a near-linear region up to about 2% strain is obtained (pre-yield region). For the wet fiber, this is generally associated with stretching of the α -helices within the intermediate filaments. At lower (water) regain, the matrix phase plays an increasingly dominant role. Between 2 and 25% strain (yield-region) progressive unfolding of zones of α -helices to form a β -pleat configuration occurs. Very little increase in stress is observed during this stage and complete recovery is still possible, provided the fiber is allowed to relax in water. Beyond 25% strain (post-yield region), the fiber stiffens and breaks. At a molecular level, the reasons for this are still a matter of debate but include resistance to the unfolding of a stabilized region of the intermediate filaments (63,65) and the rubber-like response of the matrix (64). A recent review looks critically at the different models (67).

For a fiber immersed in water, the ratio of the slopes of the stress–strain curve in these three regions is about 100:1:10. While the apparent modulus of the fiber in the pre-yield region is both time- and water-dependent, the equilibrium modulus (1.4 GPa) is independent of water content and corresponds to the modulus of the crystalline phase (68). The time-, temperature-, and water-dependence can be attributed to the viscoelastic properties of the matrix phase.

Wool Processing

The conversion of raw wool into a textile fabric or garment involves a long series of separate processes. There are two main processing systems, worsted and woolen. A significant volume of wool is also processed on the semiworsted system, for carpet use. Some wool is processed on the short-staple (cotton) system. Details of the principal stages in the woolen and worsted systems and discussion of more recent developments can be found elsewhere (69,70).

The majority of the world's apparel wool clip is combing wool and this is processed on the worsted system. This process was so named because the combed wool spinning industry in England developed in the English town of Worsted in the fourteenth century (70). Fine, smooth yarns were produced by "spinsters" who placed the combed parallel array of fibers on top of a distaff (combed wool even today is known as top), drew the strand down to the required linear density, and inserted the twist using a spindle. Prior to the development of worsted spinning, and coexisting ever since with it, the traditional system produced yarns in which the fibers were much more disorientated. Although the texture was not as smooth, there was a high degree of bulk, and the finished woven fabrics produced coatings, blankets, and distinctive products such as tweeds and flannels. Woolen spinning is the mechanized form of the traditional system.

Besides scoured (cleaned) wool, the next saleable commodity in worsted processing is top, or combed wool. Generally the combing plant combines the processes of scouring and combing. Most often, a separate commercial enterprise which buys top from the topmaker carries out spinning. Although there are woolen sales-to-yarn spinners, particularly in the knitwear area, the production of woven woolen products in the one enterprise from raw wool is more common. The woolen process is characterized by a much higher degree of vertical integration than the worsted system.

Scouring. The first stage in wool processing is to remove the fleece impurities by scouring. The impurities consist principally of wool wax, dirt, proteinaceous contaminants, and suint. The latter is a water-soluble component, consisting mainly of potassium and other inorganic salts arising from perspiration. Scouring is carried out by washing the raw wool in an aqueous medium, a solvent medium, or a combination of the two. Aqueous scouring is used to process 99% of the world's wool. This involves washing the raw wool in aqueous solutions (neutral or slightly alkaline) of nonionic detergent or, less frequently, soap and alkali. This is followed by rinsing in water.

The process is carried out in a series of between four and seven tanks (called bowls), in which the wool is transported through the wash liquor by mechanical rakes, or by passing it around perforated drums (71,72). At the end of each bowl,

the wool passes through a roller squeeze. Agitation of wool in anhydrous solvents does not cause felting, and several systems (71,73,74) have been operated to take advantage of this property, but none are still in commercial operation.

There are two broad categories of contaminants on raw wool: those that are easily removed and those that are hard to remove. The different rates of removal of these contaminants in the scouring process has led to the development by CSIRO of a new scouring technology, known as Siroscour™. This uses the principles of multistage scouring, rather than severe mechanical action, to optimize the removal of contaminants during aqueous scouring. The three separate stages which comprise the Siroscour process are a modified desuinting bowl, designed to remove as much dirt as possible; a hot scouring stage that removes the easy-to-remove contaminants; and a third stage, designed to remove the hard-to-remove contaminants. To achieve optimum performance, separate dirt and grease contaminant recovery loops are incorporated into the Siroscour process, as well as specific bowl designs for optimum scouring efficiency of Australian wools. Comparative trials have shown Siroscour to consistently produce wool of superior whiteness and lower residual content of mineral contaminants (ash content) than other scouring systems (75).

In most situations, wastewater discharged from a scouring machine contains large quantities of wool wax and both water-soluble and water-insoluble material (organic and inorganic). The pollution load of a single modern scouring machine is equivalent to a population of 50,000 people. Disposal or treatment of the wastes to comply with environmental requirements is expensive. In the past, the least expensive approach involved biological treatment by irrigation of large land areas, or maturation in very large, shallow lagoons. The high levels of potassium present in scour effluent require 1000 ha of land for sustainable irrigation. These factors have forced scourers to install large evaporation ponds that cover many hectares. Technology has been developed that enables scourers to recover a large amount of the potassium from the scour liquor. This can be used as a potassium supplement in fertilizer.

Physicochemical methods of wastewater treatment have been investigated. These include flocculation with inorganic or polymeric flocculants, or with sulfuric acid, and also physical techniques, eg, membrane processes and solvent extraction. Few of these processes have proceeded beyond pilot-scale evaluation, however. One of the most recent processes that has proved to be commercially viable is the Sirolan CF™ technology developed by CSIRO (76). This is a chemical flocculation process that removes more than 75% biological oxygen demand, 80% chemical oxygen demand, and 99% of the suspended solids and wool wax. This is a simpler process with lower operating costs than other methods involving chemical flocculation. Sludge disposal technologies have been developed that can be used in conjunction with the Sirolan CF process. These include composting, incineration, and pelletizing (77). The centrate from the Sirolan CF process contains mainly suint salts. Plant growth trials, carried out by Agriculture Victoria and CSIRO, demonstrated that suint salts, which contain about 27% potassium, are equal or better than inorganic sources of potassium (78).

Carbonizing. Carbonizing is a process used to remove excessive amounts of cellulosic impurities, eg burrs and VM, from wool. It is carried out on loose wool, rags (79), and fabric (80). With loose wool and fabric, the wool is treated with

aqueous sulfuric acid and then baked. The cellulosic matter is rapidly destroyed by the hot concentrated acid, by conversion into friable hydrocellulose, whereas wool is scarcely affected by the treatment. For dyed rags, hydrogen chloride gas is preferred as the mineral acid, because it has less effect on the colors. After acid treatment, the carbonized VM is crushed to facilitate its removal. The wool is then normally neutralized in alkali, although some mills omit this stage to facilitate subsequent dyeing under acid conditions.

Most industrial carbonizing is done on loose wool, the technology having changed little over the past 40 years. Australian carbonizers use surface-active agents to reduce fiber damage in the carbonizing process (81,82). The improved results depend on the use of high acid concentrations and rapid throughput (81).

Processing on the Worsted and Woolen Systems. The wool is dried after scouring and blended before carding. Carding individualizes the entangled fibers and reassembles them into a "sliver" weighing about 25 g/m. At the same time, up to 90% of the VM is removed. Lubrication (83) is used to minimize fiber breakage. After carding, there are three stages of gilling, to align fibers and remove hooked fiber ends before combing. Here, the advancing beard of fibers is inserted into a circular comb, and the leading fibers are then gripped and pulled through a top comb before being reassembled, like overlapping tiles, in the output sliver. The process removes short and entangled fibers and almost all remaining VM. The waste (noil) can be carbonized and fed into the woolen system. The sliver is then given two more gillings and consolidated into top. Some combing plants also produce shrink-resist treated wool top. The current process incorporates chlorination followed by application of a polymer.

The worsted spinner converts top of about 25 g/m linear density into roving of between 200 and 2000 g/km, depending on the linear density of the yarn to be spun. The sequence of processes incorporates four or five drawing stages. The first three or four usually employ gills, whereas the last is commonly carried out on a roving frame in which the attenuated strands are rubbed or twisted to impart cohesion. For finer wool, dyed tops or after blending with synthetic fibers, it is normal to recomb the wool before the above drawing stages.

Long-staple ring spinning is similar to short-staple (cotton) ring spinning, except that the components are increased in approximate proportion to the length of the fibers. On the spinning frame, the rovings are drafted by a factor of about 20, twist is inserted, and at the same time the yarn is wound onto bobbins. The yarn on the bobbins is usually steam-set in an autoclave to reduce its twist liveliness, then wound onto packages or cones. Detection and removal of thick, thin, and colored faults can occur during winding. Following twisting into a twofold yarn and further setting, the yarns are ready for knitting or weaving. Open-end (rotor) spinning is rarely used for wool, and spinning and twisting are very costly operations, because of their low productivity: typically 40 spindles produce 1 kg/h of yarn.

In woolen processing, there are no highly efficient mechanical methods to remove VM. Generally, very clean scoured wool, combed wools, or carbonized wool must be used as inputs. Alternatively, fabrics must be carbonized. A much longer card than in worsted processing and shorter fibers are used. The web of fibers at the card delivery is split longitudinally into about 120 ends, rubbed to impart cohesion, and wound into cylindrical packages called slubbing. Twisting of these

slubbings occurs on the woolen spinning frame with a draft of 1.3–1.5, to produce woolen singles yarn. This yarn can be woven without any further processing, other than a winding and clearing operation similar to that used in the worsted sequence. Woolen spinning is, thus, a very short sequence of operations compared to worsted processing. Woolen yarns, however, become economically uncompetitive with worsted yarns at relatively coarse yarn counts, because production is tied to the number of ends times their weight.

Woolen yarns cannot be spun as fine as worsted yarns, even when using the same fiber diameter. The fabric weights are greater and they have a harsher feel. For these reasons, woolen products have not been able to follow the modern trend to smoother lightweight clothing as easily as their worsted counterparts.

Setting

Setting operations form an important part of the processing of wool yarn, fabric, and garments. Yarn is set in steam to stabilize twist and prevent snarling during winding and warping, while fabrics may be set after weaving to prevent the formation of distortions during wet processes, such as scouring and dyeing. Normally, fabrics are flat-set near the end of the finishing routine to impart dimensional stability and to confer the required handle. Finally, garments are set by steam pressing to form their desired shape, for example, to insert pleats and creases.

Two forms of set may be conferred to the wool fiber and these two forms can be distinguished on the basis of stability. Temporary set (or cohesive set as it is generally referred to in the wool industry) is imparted when wool fibers are dried, or steamed for a short time and then cooled while under strain. This set is readily lost when the fibers are gently steamed or allowed to relax in water at room temperature (84). Permanent set, as the name implies, is set that has a considerable degree of permanency. Set that remains after relaxation in water at 70°C for approximately 15 min is generally considered permanent, ie, the set is permanent to conditions in excess of those that a wool garment would normally encounter during use, eg machine washing.

At the molecular level, setting is a process of stress relaxation which results from the rearrangement of the protein macromolecules that form the fiber. Under ambient conditions of water content and temperature, the matrix regions of wool are glass-like (ie below the glass-transition temperature, see Fig. 5). When fibers are deformed under these conditions, stress relaxation is slow.

If wool is heated or becomes wet, the matrix regions become rubber-like and stress relaxation occurs much more rapidly. Cohesive or temporary setting occurs whenever the fibers are deformed under conditions where stress relaxation is high (rubbery state), and then cooled or dried to a glassy state before they are released. In the glassy state the relaxation rate is slow, so that the fiber will essentially maintain its new shape indefinitely, or until it is again wetted-out or heated to make it rubber-like.

The protein molecules, particularly those of the cuticle and matrix regions of the fiber, are stabilized by a number of covalent bonds and noncovalent interactions. The most important of these are disulfide bonds, which cross-link the

peptide chains (Fig. 4). A unique feature of the wool fiber is the ability, under suitable conditions, for these disulfide bonds to rearrange and form a new cross-linked polymer network. This occurs via a mechanism involving thiol/disulfide interchange (eq. 1). Permanent setting will occur if this rearranged network, cross-linked by reformed disulfide bonds, is at equilibrium with the new shape of the fiber. The rate of disulfide rearrangement is "catalyzed" by the concentration of thiol anions in the fiber (85), as well as by the macromolecular mobility of the protein chains. Hence, the rate of disulfide rearrangement can be increased by increasing the pH, breaking disulfide bonds with a reducing agent to form additional thiol anions, or by increasing the regain or temperature to facilitate molecular mobility. In addition to the rearrangement of disulfide cross-links via thiol/disulfide interchange, other mechanisms are also involved. These include rearrangement of hydrogen bonds and the formation of new types of covalent cross-links that are formed from residues produced by breaking disulfide bonds. The new bonds include lanthionine and lysinoalanine cross-links (86). These cross-links are more stable than the disulfide bonds from which they were produced and make a significant contribution to the stability of permanently set wool fibers. In some circumstances, hydrophobic bonds between suitably located nonpolar side chains can also contribute to the stabilization of permanent set (87). Figure 5 depicts a curve above which the temperature and regain are sufficient for imparting permanent set to wool within a few minutes. This curve is indicative only, as its actual position can vary between different wool types, previous treatments, and process conditions, because it is influenced by the thiol content and pH of the wool fiber, and also the definition of "permanent set."

During wool processing, the regain and temperature are carefully selected and controlled in order to impart either permanent or temporary set. As indicated in Figure 5, permanent setting can be achieved under wet or dry conditions (less than saturation, ie <33% regain). The most common form of wet permanent setting is continuous crabbing. This is an operation in which a wet fabric, sandwiched between a hot (up to 160°C) roller and an impermeable belt, is heated to temperatures above 100°C for up to 1 min, before being rapidly quenched in cold water. The amount of permanent set imparted in a continuous crab is less than that conferred by a traditional batch crabbing operation. The continuous method has greater productivity, however. The effectiveness depends on the pH of the wool and the treatment time and temperature. The rate of permanent setting can be increased by increasing the number of thiol groups within the fiber by impregnating the fabric with a reducing agent. Some dyeing operations can impart large amounts of permanent set to wool. This can be minimized by including in the dye bath a chemical that reacts with the thiol anions. Minimizing permanent set during dyeing is beneficial in maintaining fiber strength (88) and for maintaining yarn bulk (89).

Dry setting operations usually involve the use of steam. As is the case for wet setting, the amount of permanent set imparted in steam-setting depends on the wool pH, water content, and the time and temperature of setting. Fabrics are steam-set by decatizing. In this process, the wool fabric, interleaved with a cotton wrapper cloth, is wound onto a perforated drum, through which steam is forced. In continuous machines, the conditions are mild and little permanent set is imparted. In a batch process, in which the fabric roll is placed in a pressure

vessel (autoclave), setting temperatures up to 130°C for 3–5 min are used. These conditions impart a higher degree of permanent set than continuous methods. The amount of temporary or cohesive set imparted in both batch and continuous machines depends on the temperature of the fibers when the fabric is released from the wrapper cloth. The cooler the fabric, the higher the level of cohesive set. Yarns on packages are normally cohesively set in an autoclave at temperatures up to 90°C, in order to reduce twist liveliness. A vacuum pump is used to remove air from the packages, which ensures even penetration of steam and, thus, a uniform level of set.

Normal pressing operations carried out during garment making impart only temporary set to the fibers. A number of commercial processes are used, however, to set permanent creases into wool garments (90–92). These include autoclave setting and wet or dry pressing in the presence of chemical assistants. Permanent pleats are fixed into skirts by autoclave setting at around 110°C. In the SIROSET™ process of CSIRO, for inserting permanent creases into trousers, a chemical assistant (monoethanolamine sulfite) is sprayed onto the trousers before steam-pressing.

A New Textile Fiber from Wool. The most recent application of wool setting is in the manufacture of OPTIM™ (CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology Web site: <http://www.tft.csiro.au>), a new textile fiber produced from wool (93). The production process involves stretching and setting wool to create two new fiber types; Optim fine and Optim max (94). A key aspect of the continuous process is the use of false twist to maintain cohesion within a large fiber assembly during the whole operation.

In the Optim fine manufacturing process a chemical setting agent, such as sodium bisulphite, is applied to wool. A twisted assembly of the treated fibers is stretched by around 40–50% and then permanently set in the extended state. This procedure gives longer fibers of decreased diameter. Stretching and setting the fibers converts ordered intermediate filaments in the wool from an α -crystallite helical form to a β -pleated sheet structure that more closely resembles silk (95). Typically, the diameter is reduced by about 3–4 μm for a 19- μm parent wool fiber. The use of false twist to control fiber movement applies a large transverse force to the twisted assembly that changes the cross-sectional shape of the fibers so that common measures of diameter that assume a mostly circular cross section are no longer valid (Fig. 7).

Optim fine fibers are stronger and softer than the parent wool and exhibit an attractive lustre. They are used to produce fabrics with many of the aesthetic properties of silk. The modified wool is ideal for spinning into fine yarns, especially with other high value natural fibers, eg, silk, cashmere, and alpaca, where softness, lightness, and sheen are desirable attributes.

Optim max utilizes a key benefit of the manufacturing process that allows the extent of set in the fiber to be manipulated in a controlled manner. Optim max fiber is wool that has been temporarily set while stretched, so that the fiber retracts when released in hot moist conditions by about 25% in length. This fiber offers scope for innovation in yarn and fabric design. For example, when Optim max is blended with normal wool, spun into yarn, and relaxed in hank form in hot water, the Optim max fibers retract and force the normal wool fibers to buckle. The yarn has an increased volume and this property produces increased “cover”

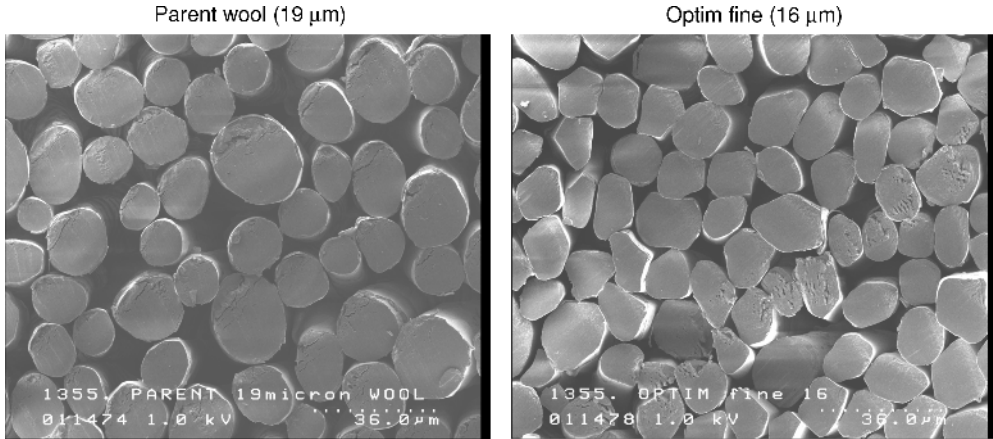


Fig. 7. Scanning electron micrograph of cross sections of normal wool and Optim fine fibers.

in knitted fabric and decreased weight. When knitted to the same cover factor, a weight saving of 20–30% is possible compared with fabrics made from normal wool yarns.

Shrinkage of Wool Textiles

Two mechanisms of fabric shrinkage are observed for wool: relaxation shrinkage and felting shrinkage (22,96). Relaxation shrinkage occurs when a fabric or yarn made from any textile fiber is first immersed in water. It results from the release of temporarily set strains imparted during previous processing operations such as spinning, knitting, and fabric finishing. Relaxation shrinkage also occurs when a knitted garment or fabric is immersed in water after it has been dried while in a stretched state (for example by line drying). Felting results from the presence of cuticle cells (scales) on the wool fiber surface that point away from the fiber root and overlap like tiles on a roof (Fig. 2). The protruding scale edges result in differential friction between the with-scale and against-scale direction, which under some conditions results in irreversible migration of individual fibers toward their root ends. Felting is exploited in the “milling” of wool. This is a process of controlled, mild felting used to close up the structure of fabrics and garments. Milling is also used to produce wool felts, which are composed of a very dense matting of fibers. Felts are used for products as diverse as hats, polishing pads, table covers, and piano hammers.

Felting in garments and fabrics that leads to excessive shrinkage is, however, undesirable. It occurs when the wet material is subjected to severe mechanical action, for example, in laundering or tumble drying (22). Shrink-resist treatments are directed at preventing felting shrinkage, whereas minimization of relaxation shrinkage requires careful control during fabric finishing. Felting of loose fibers results in entanglement, whereas in fabrics fiber migration inside and between yarns reduces the fabric area, ie, shrinkage occurs. The

mechanisms of felting shrinkage and its prevention have been discussed comprehensively (22). Many factors influence felting shrinkage; these include (1) yarn and fabric structure (woolen or worsted, knitted or woven, yarn twist level); (2) the method of wash-testing (pH, temperature of wash liquor, presence of detergents, electrolytes, or lubricants, and the severity of the mechanical action of the washing machine); (3) the properties of the fiber (elasticity, diameter, length). Recently, felting shrinkage has been related to the glass-transition temperature of wool (97). Important points to note are that products made from fine diameter wools felt more readily than those from coarse fibers, and that if a small amount of untreated wool is added to shrink-resist treated wool, the blend will felt as readily as the untreated material.

Shrink-Resistant Terminology and Testing. The term shrink-resistant is preferred to “shrinkproofed,” although in recent years emphasis has switched to performance-related terms, such as hand-washable and machine-washable. A recent trend is to use the term easy-care, which for knitwear means resistance to felting shrinkage under severe conditions, including tumble drying. It also includes assessment of the fabric appearance after testing. For woven garments, this includes retention of pleats or creases as well as smooth drying performance. All these terms are meaningless unless related to some standard testing sequence and criteria for passing the test.

Relaxation shrinkage tests usually involve mild agitation in water. Felting shrinkage is then determined after more severe agitation. Hence, in practice it may be difficult to say when relaxation ceases and felting starts. The most commonly used methods to test for felting shrinkage is to use multiple wash-test cycles in domestic-type washing machines (front loading in Europe, or top loading in the United States). The Woolmark Company (formally the International Wool Secretariat) has developed test methods for machine washability, together with performance criteria for different garment types and end uses. Woolmark test methods are widely used around the world, although in the United States AATCC methods predominate.

Development of Shrink-Resist Science and Technology. Felting of wool and its use in fabric finishing has been known for a very long time. Monge observed the differential friction effect in wool fibers in 1790 and Mercer chlorinated wool to improve dye affinity in printing in 1839, but chlorination was soon found to impart shrink-resistance (22). Chlorination was widely used during World War II to produce shrink-resistant wool socks and blankets for the military. From then on, two distinct trends in shrink-resist research and technology emerged. Firstly, better control of the reaction of chlorine or other oxidants with wool, and secondly, the use of synthetic polymers to bond adjacent wool fibers together. The reader is directed to Reference 98, which gives a good summary up to the early 1950s, and to Reference 22, which continues to the late 1970s and discusses the mechanism of felting. Recent research has been directed toward environmental aspects of the shrink-resist treatment of wool, particularly the reduction or elimination of organochlorine compounds in effluents from treatment plants. In future years, replacements for chlorination processes are likely to emerge.

Figures published by The Woolmark Company in 2002 show that approximately 40×10^6 kg of wool is shrink-resist-treated each year. This figure may include some low level chlorination treatments of fine wools, designed to

prevent felting during wet processing or to improve garment appearance or dyeability. The products of these low level treatments are generally not claimed to be machine-washable. The fact that only 5–10% of all wool is shrink-resist-treated indicates that many end uses do not require an antifelting treatment. More than 90–95% of the treated wool is used in knitwear. The amount treated, however, varies markedly from country to country and also with the type of product, with those worn next to the skin, eg, underwear, being most likely to be treated. Wool can be shrink-resist-treated at various stages, from loose wool to garments. Approximately 5% is treated at the loose wool stage, mainly for use in bedding products such as futons; 80% at the top stage; very little as yarn; 10% as knitted garments; and about 5% as woven fabrics. The chlorine-Hercosett process for treating loose wool or top is by far the most important method used. In 2002 this method accounted for at least 80% of shrink-resist-treated wool.

Industrial Shrink-Resist Treatments. Mechanistically, shrink-resist treatments can be divided into degradative and additive types. Degradative treatments use an oxidizing agent to eliminate or reduce the differential friction effect of the fiber surface by modifying or removing the scales. In some cases, a polymer is also applied to the surface to mask the modified scales. The additive approach prevents fiber migration by bonding fibers together with elastomeric polymers. Some polymer deposition processes involve a degradative chemical pretreatment, to improve the adhesion of the polymer to the fiber surface. Additive treatments must be applied after spinning (usually at the fabric stage), whereas degradative treatments can be used at any stage from loose wool through to garments.

Chlorine-Based Shrink-Resist Treatments. The principal oxidizing agent used in degradative shrink-resist treatments is chlorine. Free chlorine reacts very rapidly with wool; hence, it is difficult to treat a mass of wool fibers evenly. Two different types of chlorination methods are used commercially: continuous treatment and batch treatment. In the continuous method, top or loose wool is reacted with an aqueous solution of chlorine gas for a short time (<30 s). The batch treatment method involves a longer treatment time (5–30 min) with a less reactive chlorinating agent, such as DCCA (*N,N'*-dichloroisocyanuric acid). Batch treatments are mainly used on garments and fabrics but can also be applied to loose wool or tops. Generally, in both continuous and batch treatments a reactive polymer, usually cationic, is applied after the chlorination step.

The features and chemistry of chlorination shrink-resist treatments are best illustrated by consideration of the chlorine-Hercosett process for wool top (99). This process uses a dedicated plant, of which there are about 40 around the world. A web of parallel slivers is treated with water and chemicals in a series of bowls (tanks), separated by squeeze rollers. The wool is then dried. Usually, 30–40 slivers (20–30 g/m) are treated simultaneously at a speed of 5–10 m/min. Overall production rates range from 200 to 500 kg/h.

The first stage involves chlorination, either with chlorine gas dissolved in water or with sodium hypochlorite acidified with sulfuric acid. Chlorination is the most critical step of the process and modern plants incorporate features designed to achieve uniform treatment of the web. These include cooling the chlorine solution to 10–12°C, to slow down the rate of reaction with wool, and special application devices, eg, those produced by the Kroy or Fleissner companies, to rapidly contact the web with a large volume of dilute chlorine solution. The second stage

of the process is a neutralization, or anti-chlor, treatment with sodium sulfite. In the third stage, the wool is treated with a cationic polyamide/epichlorohydrin polymer, usually Hercosett 57 (Hercules, Inc.). The final stage consists of treatment with a cationic softener and a lubricant to facilitate further processing, followed by drying to cross-link the polymer on the fiber surface. The reaction of chlorine with wool is complex, but the principal effect of the combination of the chlorination and neutralization stages is to remove surface lipid from the fiber. This increases the surface energy and shifts the isoelectric point of the fiber to a lower pH, by converting cystine disulfide residues to cysteic acid (sulfonic acid) groups. Some of the surface protein is also solubilized and removed, which softens the fiber cuticle. These changes allow the cationic Hercosett polymer to spread on the fiber surface. Virtually all the shrink-resistance is imparted by the chlorination step. The function of the Hercosett is to compensate for any weight loss arising from chlorination, prevent further loss of soluble protein during subsequent dyeing, and improve the shrink-resistance of any insufficiently chlorinated fibers.

Chlorine-Free Shrink-Resist Treatments. Commercially, the only other oxidizing agent used to any extent is permonosulfuric acid (PMS; HOOSO_3H). This is used in the form of its potassium triple salt, containing potassium sulfate and bisulfate. It is employed in batch processes at elevated temperatures, because it reacts more slowly with wool than chlorine (100). The process sequence is similar to that used for chlorine-based treatments. It involves degradative oxidation with PMS, followed by neutralization with sodium sulfite and then application of a resin. Unlike chlorine, however, PMS does not remove the bound lipid or oxidize cystine to cysteic acid. The main product of the reaction is cystine sulfonic acid or Bunte salt groups.

Other chlorine-free shrink-resist technologies under development include plasma and ozone treatments for sliver and enzyme treatments for garments and fabrics.

Additive Shrink-Resist Treatments. The principal additive shrink-resist treatment for wool fabrics uses the polymer Synthappret BAP (Bayer AG). This is a poly(propylene oxide) polyurethane, containing reactive carbamoyl sulfonate (bisulfite adducts of isocyanate) groups, ie $-\text{NHCOSO}_3^- \text{Na}^+$. An aqueous solution of this polymer is padded onto woven fabrics. The polymer cross-links on drying to form flexible linkages between fibers and yarns (101). Other polymers may be applied at the same time to modify the handle.

Easy-Care Wovens

Dry-clean-only garments are increasingly becoming a turnoff to the modern consumer. Consumers now demand "total easy-care" garments that can withstand repeated machine washing and tumble drying, while maintaining their "just pressed" appearance with no more than minimal ironing. In addition to dimensional stability, wool-containing fabrics and garments must be specifically engineered so that, after laundering, seams remain flat and without pucker, the fabric remains wrinkle-free without the development of fuzz or pills, and the creases or pleats stay sharp.

To produce total easy-care garments from a blend, of wool and polyester, heat-setting the polyester component using a hot head press will generally impart sufficient set to the creases and pleats to make them stable to repeated laundering. A minimum of 20–30% polyester is needed for adequate stability. An alternative procedure that sets the entire garment is to impart temporary set to the wool component of the blend by steam-pressing the garment, followed by baking the entire garment in an oven to permanently set the polyester. The wool dries out in the oven and maintains the garment shape during setting of the polyester (102). A fabric-based treatment to prevent felting may be unnecessary, provided the polyester content is above 50% and a suitable fabric construction is used.

It is more difficult to produce pure wool total easy-care garments. The challenge is to obtain adequate permanent set rather than obtaining shrink resistance, because some wool setting processes are not stable to machine washing. The problem of set stability is further exacerbated when the garments are tumble-dried, because the tumbling action tends to flatten the creases and they become temporarily set in a distorted configuration, even if a high level of permanent set has been imparted to the garment. The application of a delay-cure polymer to the fabric, followed by curing in an oven after the garment has been made and pressed, appears to be the latest approach to producing total easy-care wool garments.

Dyeing

Commercially, wool is dyed from aqueous solutions, usually under acidic conditions. In the past, methods have been proposed for dyeing wool from organic solvents, in particular concentrated formic acid. More recently, the use of supercritical carbon dioxide has also been investigated. These solvent systems are, however, very unlikely to replace water as the preferred dyeing medium for wool, because of the relative cost of the solvent compared with water and also the specialized, expensive equipment required.

The majority of dyes used on wool are sodium salts of aromatic anions. Water solubility is usually provided by sulfonic acid groups, but in a few cases carboxyl or hydrophilic, nonionic substituents are used. In a typical wool dyeing operation, the ratio of the mass of dyestuff solution to the mass of wool ranges from approximately 10:1 to as high as 60:1, depending on the type of wool substrate and the equipment used. Wool is dyed as loose fiber, sliver, yarn, fabric, or in garment form by batch methods (103,104). In the case of fiber, sliver or yarn, the process involves pumping dye solution through the stationary substrate, whereas in fabric dyeing the material may be transported through the dye liquor or, alternatively, both liquor and fabric may be moved through the machine. Simultaneous circulation of liquor and wool substrate is also used in garment dyeing techniques. In a typical operation, the liquor is heated from around 40°C to a temperature of 98–100°C, where it is held for a period that can range from around 30 min to over 2 h. The actual time depends on the type of dye and depth of shade. Procedures have also been developed for continuously dyeing wool in loose, or sliver form and wool fabric can be dyed by a pad-batch method (105). These techniques

have found only limited use, however, because they are uneconomic unless a large quantity of substrate is dyed to a single color, which is uncommon in the wool industry.

Dyeing Theory. Wool is composed mainly of a large number of different proteins, the fundamental structural units of which are α -amino acids (31). It is amphoteric in character because of the presence of basic amino groups in the side chains of lysine, histidine, and arginine, and acidic carboxyl groups in the side chains of aspartic and glutamic acids. In an aqueous, acidic dyebath protonation of the amino and carboxyl groups results in a net positive charge on the fiber. Early workers explained the mechanism of wool dyeing in terms of electrostatic interactions between the positively charged amino groups and anionic dye molecules. The two most popular theories were the Gilbert–Rideal theory and the Donnan theory (106–108). Later studies, however, showed that the affinity and wetfastness properties of dyes on wool are largely determined by other types of interactions, namely, van der Waals' forces and interactions between hydrophobic regions in the fiber and hydrophobic parts of the dye molecules (109,110). Dyes differ markedly in their hydrophilic–hydrophobic character (105,110,111). Ionic forces are of greatest importance for dyes of relatively low molecular weight. With increasing molecular weight, van der Waals' and hydrophobic interactions become increasingly important, which is reflected in a higher affinity for the fiber and better wetfastness properties. Ionic interactions are important, however, for all wool dyes in determining the rate at which the dye is taken up by the fiber from the dye liquor. The dyeing rate can be controlled by varying the amount of acid added to the dyebath, because this determines the size of the net positive charge on the wool, produced by protonation of amino groups.

In early studies on the uptake of dyes by wool, the fiber was treated as a cylinder of uniform composition. The main focus was on the thermodynamics of the dyeing process, in particular the situation applying when equilibrium had been attained. These studies provided little information, however, on the mechanism of the dyeing process itself. Recent work has clarified the relationship between fiber structure and the mechanism of wool dyeing (112,113).

Dyeing Mechanism. Wool fibers have a very complex morphological structure (Fig. 3). They can be considered as biological composite materials, in which the various regions are both chemically and physically different (31). Fine wool fibers contain two types of cell: those of the internal cortex and those of the external cuticle. Cortical cells, which constitute around 90% of the fiber, are spindle-shaped and are arranged in an overlapping pattern, parallel to the fiber axis. They are separated and held together by a continuous network, the cell membrane complex. This region of the fiber contains protein and also lipid material. The proteinaceous material in the cell membrane complex is relatively lightly cross-linked compared with the proteins in other regions of wool. The external cuticle cells are rectangular in shape and overlap, rather like tiles on a roof (Fig. 2). Dyes enter wool fibers at the junctions where the cuticle cells overlap and in the early stages of the dyeing process they diffuse into the interior along the lightly cross-linked network of the cell membrane complex (31,112,113). Later in the cycle, the dyes transfer, progressively, from the cell membrane complex into the cortical cells. The affinity of the dyes for wool is largely the result of their interaction with hydrophobic proteins located within the matrix of cortical cells.

Wool Dyes. The dyes used on wool can be divided into the following groups: acid dyes, chrome dyes, premetallized dyes, and reactive dyes (103,105, 107,110,111,114–116). Strictly speaking, all types of wool dyestuffs can be described as acid dyes, but in practice this term is confined to leveling acid dyes, half-milling dyes, milling dyes, and supermilling dyes (111,114). This subclassification of acid dyes arises out of the methods used for their application and their fastness properties on wool.

Levelling acid dyes (sometimes called level-dyeing or equalizing dyes) are the simplest type of dyes used on wool. They are of relatively low molecular weights (300–600) and have a comparatively low affinity for the fiber, because they interact largely by ionic attraction. They are applied at around pH 3, obtained with sulfuric acid. Under these conditions, the initial uptake of dye is usually uneven because the exhaustion rate is very rapid. As their name implies, levelling acid dyes have good migration properties and levelling occurs during the stage of the dyeing cycle when the dye liquor is held at the boil, thus producing a very even result. Levelling of the dyes is assisted by the presence of sodium sulfate in the dye bath, because the anionic sulfate ions compete with dye anions for the positively charged amino groups in the fiber. In general, these dyes are not particularly resistant to wet treatments, but are used when level dyeing is critically important.

Milling acid dyes are so named because they are more resistant than levelling acid dyes to extraction from wool during the milling process. They are of higher molecular weight (600–900) and are more hydrophobic than levelling acid dyes, which gives them a higher affinity for wool. The higher molecular weight and lower dependence on ionic attraction means that they diffuse out of the fiber more slowly than levelling dyes, which is responsible for their higher fastness to wet treatments such as milling and laundering. Their migration properties, and hence their ability to level during application, is not as good as that of acid dyes. To obtain level results it is important to ensure that the rate of exhaustion is uniform and not too rapid. This is achieved by setting the dyebath at a higher pH (ca pH 4.5–6.0) with a weak acid, such as acetic acid, and also by the addition of a surfactant-type levelling agent, which promotes even uptake on wool. Half-milling dyes fall between levelling acid and milling dyes in molecular weight (500–600), migration properties, and wetfastness. They are applied at a pH in the range pH 4.0–4.5.

Supermilling acid dyes are similar in molecular weight to milling dyes, but contain long alkyl groups that make them more hydrophobic in character. This gives them a high affinity for wool that is virtually independent of ionic interactions with the fiber; consequently, they have very good wetfastness properties. They show good exhaustion under almost neutral (pH 5.5–7.0) dyeing conditions, but their high affinity means that they have poor migration and relatively poor levelling properties. Auxiliary products are often used to assist level application of these dyes.

Chrome dyes are acid dyes (mol. wt. 300–600) that contain groups capable of forming complexes by reaction with a metal salt, usually sodium or potassium dichromate (111,114). The chrome/dye complex has lower solubility, and hence better wetfastness, than the parent dyestuff. Reaction between the dye molecule and chromium salt can be carried out before, during or after application of the

dye to the wool. Modern practice is to carry out the chroming step after dyeing. Chrome dyes are relatively cheap, and have good migration and level dyeing behavior and excellent wetfastness properties. Their popularity, except for black and navy blue shades, has declined in recent years. This is because of the need for prolonged dyeing cycles, fiber damage associated with oxidation of the fiber in the chroming step, and environmental concerns about the use of chromium salts in the textile industry.

In many applications, chrome dyes have been replaced by metal-complex dyes, which have a very high affinity for wool (111,115). In these dyes, the metal complex is preformed during manufacture of the dye, by reaction of one metal atom with either one (1:1 metal-complex dyes) or two (1:2 metal-complex dyes) dyestuff molecules that contain groups capable of coordinating with chromium or, occasionally, cobalt atoms. In general, metal-complex dyes produce duller shades than acid or milling dyes. The 1:1 metal-complex dyes are applied to wool from strongly acidic dyebaths at around pH 2. They are almost all monosulfonates (mol. wt. 400–500) and have good levelling behavior and wetfastness properties. Some degradation of the fiber can be caused by the low dyeing pH. The earliest type of 1:2 metal-complex dyes were unsulfonated; solubility was provided by nonionic polar groups, such as sulfonamide or methylsulfone. More recently, monosulfonated, disulfonated, and some carboxyl-containing types have become available. These dyes range in molecular weight from 700 to around 1000. They are applied at pH values ranging from pH 4.5 to 7.0, depending on the degree of sulfonation and molecular size of the dye.

Reactive dyes have molecular weights in the range 500–900 and usually contain two or three sulfonic acid groups (105,116). These dyes also contain groups that react covalently with wool, which gives them outstanding wetfastness properties. They are characterized by bright colors and moderate migration and levelling properties, provided careful attention is given to ensuring that the exhaustion rate is not too rapid. This is achieved by careful control of the dyebath pH and by using special amphoteric levelling agents. Their ability to react with the fiber means that uneven uptake of these dyes is very difficult to rectify. Reactive dyes are relatively expensive and, currently, their most important application is on wools that have been treated to withstand shrinkage in machine washing. They are, however, becoming increasingly important as alternatives to chrome dyes for dyeing all types of wool. At present, reactive dyes offer the only viable alternative to chrome dyes for products where very high wetfastness properties are required.

Fiber Damage in Dyeing. When wool is dyed for prolonged times at the boil, the fiber can be damaged as a result of hydrolysis of the component proteins. Methods of dyeing wool substrates at temperatures below the boil (85–90°C) have been developed. One such method, the CSIRO Sirolan-LTD™ process employs a special chemical (Valsol LTA-N, APS Chemicals) that increases the rate of exhaustion and diffusion of dye into the fiber, thus enabling satisfactory dyeings to be obtained at temperatures below the boil (117). Wool dyed by this method suffers less degradation than wool dyed for a similar time at the boil. This leads to benefits in the processing performance of the dyed fiber and in improved quality of end products (118). Permanent setting of wool fibers during dyeing has been identified as a major factor that also contributes to deterioration of the quality of

dyed wool (117). This effect is separate from hydrolytic degradation. Setting occurs via a mechanism involving thiol/disulfide interchange (eq. 1). Methods of inhibiting the permanent setting of wool fibers during dyeing have been developed (89). These involve addition to the dyebath of auxiliaries (antisetting agents such as Basolan AS, BASF) that block thiol groups and, thus, prevent thiol/disulfide interchange. Improvements in the properties of a range of products made from wool are obtained by reducing the amount of permanent set that occurs during dyeing.

Printing

Printing provides the means of transferring bright multicolor designs onto textiles. The amount of wool fabric printed is very small compared to cotton and synthetics. This is partly because the pigment printing systems widely used for cotton and synthetics have a severe adverse effect on the natural handle of wool. Furthermore, although the printing of wool using dyes maintains the natural qualities of the fiber, it requires a more complex processing sequence involving several stages, some of which are technically challenging.

The usual route for printing wool with dyestuffs is fabric preparation/print/dry/steam at 100°C (to fix dye to fabric)/wash off (to remove thickener and unfixed dye)/dry. Globally, an estimated 20 million meters per annum of high quality printed wool fabric is produced, with the center of excellence being in Northern Italy.

Fabric preparation is considered to be the most important stage for obtaining good color yields, levelness, and brightness on wool fabric (119,120). Currently, this is done almost exclusively by an oxidative chlorination process. The most popular commercial methods use either a batch treatment with DCCA or a continuous fabric treatment with gaseous chlorine (the Kroy process). Chlorination has a profound effect on wool, especially near the fiber surface. The number of anionic groups is increased, with cystine residues oxidized to cysteic acid and accessible peptide bonds cleaved to form carboxyl groups. These reactions increase the wettability of the surface of wool, which facilitates spreading of the dye formulations. Chlorination also reduces the degree of cross-linking of wool, which increases the rate of dye diffusion into the fiber. Chlorination can have several adverse effects, however. At higher levels (4% on mass fabric of DCCA), there are problems in obtaining level treatments. Yellowing, especially after steaming, can also occur. These problems can be minimized by treating fabrics continuously in open width in a machine such as the Kroy chlorinator. With all chlorination processes, soluble protein and free oxidation products must be removed from the wool before drying. This is done by neutralization with a reducing agent, such as sodium bisulphite or sodium dithionite.

The effluent from the chlorination of wool contains adsorbable organohalogen compounds (AOX), which are now regarded as undesirable products to release into the environment, particularly in Europe. Several AOX-free methods for preparing wool for printing are currently being investigated. Plasma (121) and corona discharge (122) treatments have been investigated as potential prepare-for-print methods for wool, as they oxidize the surface of wool fibers and have the

advantage of being dry processes. Although the wettability of fabrics prepared using these methods is high, the color yields of prints are significantly less than prints on chlorinated fabric and the fabric handle is inferior. An alternative approach is the CSIRO "Siroflash" process. This method involves continuous ultraviolet (UV) irradiation of dry wool fabric with the type of commercial UV source used for curing polymer films. This is followed by a conventional oxidative bleaching treatment with hydrogen peroxide (123). This process is surface-specific, giving a white fabric with good handle properties and similar color yields to DCCA treatment.

Most wool is printed directly onto the prepared fabric. Automatic flat-screen printing remains the most popular method over the rotary screen process used for most cotton printing, because of the shorter run lengths normally processed for wool fabrics. The dyestuffs most commonly used for wool printing are acid milling, metal complex, and reactive dyes. A simple dye paste is prepared using a suitable thickener, urea (to swell wool fibers during steaming), and the dyestuffs. Various additives may be included in the paste recipe, such as antifoam, glycerol to prevent screen blocking, an acid donor (to maintain a low pH), wetting agent, and a dye solvent such as thiodiglycol (120).

During the steaming stage, large aggregates of dye molecules break down into smaller entities which can then penetrate the swollen wool fibers, allowing fixation to take place. Typical steaming times are 10–15 min for reactive dyes and 30 min for acid milling and metal complex dyes. Saturated steam is essential for optimum penetration and fixation of dyes, especially for dyes of high molecular weight such as those based on copper phthalocyanine derivatives. Both continuous and batch steamers are used commercially. Chlorinated fabrics are highly prone to yellowing during steaming, which can be detrimental to printed pale shades.

The aim of washing off is to remove the thickener and any residual chemicals and unfixed dye from the fabric, without causing staining of any pale or unprinted areas. Fabrics printed with metal complex or acid milling dyes are usually washed off in water at 30–40°C, whereas reactive dyes require higher temperatures (60–80°C), with addition of ammonium hydroxide (120).

Discharge printing of wool remains popular, despite its technical difficulties (119,120). In this style of printing, a predyed fabric is printed with a reducing agent that destroys the background shade. Included in the print paste is a dye which is resistant to the discharge agent. The result is bleaching of the color in the printed areas and replacement with the illuminating color. It is often impossible to reproduce the designs and effects of discharge printing with direct printing. The reducing agents used in discharge printing are zinc, calcium or sodium formaldehyde sulfoxylate, or thiourea dioxide. The technique is limited by the choice of dyes that are resistant to the reducing agent.

Other techniques, such as resist printing, cold batch printing, and transfer printing have been applied to wool with some success, but these now occupy only a small share of the current wool printing market (119,120).

Digital inkjet printing is a recent development for printing textiles (124). It has the advantage that any design can be transferred rapidly from a personal computer onto a fabric, without the requirements to perform a color separation and make a separate screen to print each color. It is also more cost-effective for

producing the short runs of printed fabric designs that are typical for wool compared with other methods. The wool fabric is prepared for printing using a conventional method, padded with a mixture of a thickening agent and urea and dried before digital printing. The padding process assists penetration of the dye into the wool fabric and avoids flushing of the prints during steaming.

Yellowing

In common with many other polymeric materials, yellowing of wool is an undesirable property that can be caused by several different mechanisms (see DEGRADATION). For wool, the most important of these are exposure to sunlight and heat.

The rate and extent of photoyellowing of wool exposed to direct sunlight is a serious shortcoming when compared with fibers such as cotton and synthetics. Photoyellowing is caused by the UV components of natural sunlight (285–380 nm), whereas exposure of wool to sunlight filtered through window glass, which absorbs most of the UV, causes photobleaching (125). Photoyellowing of wool by sunlight only occurs in the presence of oxygen and it has been proposed that it is a photo-oxidative process involving the formation of singlet oxygen (126,127). More recent work, however, has shown that in common with cotton, polyester, and nylon, wool in the wet state is capable of producing hydroxyl radicals (OH^\bullet) on irradiation with UV light at 366 nm and blue light at 430 nm (128). This reaction appears to be catalyzed by trace metals such as iron and copper. It has been proposed that the photoyellowing mechanism for wool may involve a free-radical chain reaction involving formation of hydroperoxide intermediates (as is the case for most other polymers), rather than a singlet oxygen mechanism (128). There is now general agreement in the literature that yellow chromophores formed in irradiated wool are derived (at least in part) from tryptophan residues (129,130).

The use of some water-soluble benzotriazoles (a well-known class of UV absorber) can be effective against both photoyellowing and phototendering (see UV STABILIZERS). The effectiveness of these reagents relies on intramolecular hydrogen bonding and proton transfer, and intermolecular bonding of the compounds to wool fibers was found to be highly detrimental to their performance. Optimization of the photochemical properties of soluble benzotriazoles has resulted in a suitable formulation (Cibafast W) for use on both bleached and unbleached wool (131). Unfortunately, UV absorbers cannot be used on wool together with a fluorescent whitening agent (FWA) because they absorb the UV wavelengths necessary to excite fluorescence. FWA treatment is essential to achieve a high level of whiteness on wool, because even wool that has been bleached retains some of its natural cream color. An important problem for wool is the very rapid photoyellowing that occurs following treatment with FWAs (132). The poor light-fastness of bright white and pastel colors severely limits the range of possible shades for wool products. This is reflected in wool's limited market share in fashion and summer knitwear, sportswear, hosiery, and baby wear. Wet photoyellowing of whitened (FWA-treated) wool is extremely rapid and can cause unacceptable yellowing after a single laundering and drying cycle in direct sunlight. When wet FWA-treated wool is exposed to sunlight, hydrogen peroxide is formed (133). The rate

of photoyellowing of FWA-treated wool is significantly increased by doping with hydrogen peroxide. This indicates that blocking the formation of peroxide (via the superoxide radical anion) could improve the photostability of whitened wools.

Treatment of wool with a FWA, followed by post-treatment with thiourea/formaldehyde by a pad/cure method, confers a high level of protection against photoyellowing and also improves the initial fabric whiteness (134). Unfortunately, this process is not commercially viable, partly because of environmental concerns about thiourea and formaldehyde and also because much of the benefit is lost after laundering. An alternative approach is to physically separate the FWA from the wool fiber by incorporating the whitener into a suitable polymer that can be applied as a surface treatment to wool fabrics (135). The photostability of the treated fabrics is somewhat better than for conventional FWA treatments (being similar to bleached wool) but the initial whiteness is significantly lower than that of FWA-treated wool.

Two comprehensive reviews on the photodegradation of wool keratin have been published recently by Smith (129) and by Davidson (136). There is also an excellent review dealing specifically with the problem of sunlight yellowing of wool treated with FWAs (126).

Thermal yellowing of wool can be a problem during wool processing, in particular during extended dyeing at the boil, in setting with superheated steam (decatizing), and in drying for extended times, particularly under alkaline conditions (137). The thermal yellowing of wet wool is far more rapid than for dry wool, which is similar to the behavior observed for photoyellowing. Thermal yellowing of wool during dyeing is influenced by pH, temperature, and time, chlorinated wools being especially sensitive. Yellowing during dyeing can be counteracted by adding a bleaching agent, based on sodium bisulfite or hydroxylamine sulphate, to the dyebath (138). Addition of hydrogen peroxide to the dyebath after exhaustion of the dyestuffs can also be effective.

Bleaching and Fluorescent Whitening

The natural pale cream color of wool is due to absorption of light above 320 nm. This is the result of natural pigments and also photodecomposition products in the fiber. Reduction of the natural cream-yellow color of wool is sometimes necessary for improving the brightness of dyed shades, particularly pastel colors, and also for improving the whiteness of undyed wool fabrics. Commercially, wool bleaching is carried out using either an oxidative or a reductive system, or a combined oxidation/reduction process. Oxidative bleaching in the dyebath is also possible (138). In general, oxidative bleaching with hydrogen peroxide gives superior whiteness over reductive methods.

A batch treatment with hydrogen peroxide is used for most bleaching applications. An activator (eg an alkali) is normally added to increase the rate of bleaching. Typically, wool is bleached at pH 8–9 for 1 h at 60°C with a stabilized solution of hydrogen peroxide (0.75% w/w). It is generally accepted that, under alkaline conditions, the active bleaching species is the perhydroxy anion (OOH^-), the formation of which is encouraged by higher pH (139). Peroxide bleaching of wool under mild acidic conditions (pH 5–6) can also be carried out using a peracid

activator such as Prestogen W (BASF) or citric acid (140). As wool sustains some damage in the presence of alkali, this method is useful for bleaching delicate fabrics. An undesirable side effect is the rapid decomposition of hydrogen peroxide to water and oxygen, a reaction catalyzed by transition-metal ions. A stabilizer, which sequesters these ions, is used to prevent this side reaction occurring. The most common stabilizers for alkaline wool bleaching are phosphates, particularly tetrasodium pyrophosphate. However, recent concerns over phosphates in effluents from textile treatment have led to the development of alternative stabilizers based on silicates (141). An alkaline peroxide bleaching process using the silicate-based product Stabicol BAC (Allied Colloids) has been developed (138).

Heavily pigmented fibers, such as Karakul wools, require a more severe approach known as mordant bleaching. In this method, the wool is treated with a metal salt and then with hydrogen peroxide. In the first step, the melanin pigment in the wool preferentially absorbs the metal cations; and in the second step, the cations catalytically decompose the peroxide to produce highly aggressive hydroxyl free radicals, which selectively attack and bleach the melanin (142).

The two most popular chemicals used for reductive bleaching of wool are stabilized sodium dithionite and thiourea dioxide. Most reductive bleaching of wool is carried out using stabilized dithionite (2–5 g/L) at pH 5.5–6 and 45–65°C for 1 h. Thiourea dioxide is more expensive than sodium dithionite, but is an effective bleach when applied (1–3 g/L) at 80°C and pH 7 for 1 h. Whiter fabrics are produced when oxidative bleaching is followed by a reductive process—this is often referred to as “full bleaching.”

To obtain a high level of whiteness, comparable to white cotton and synthetics, wool must be treated with a FWA after bleaching. The normal procedure is to carry out a full bleaching process and include the FWA in the reductive bleaching bath. FWA-treated wool absorbs UV light and emits blue fluorescence, which makes it appear much whiter than bleached wool. Commercial FWAs for wool are usually based on a sulfonated stilbene, distyrylbiphenyl, or pyrazoline derivative.

Wool fabrics that have been bleached or treated with FWAs yellow rapidly when exposed to sunlight, especially when wet. This is a major problem when bright whites and pastel shades are required. Despite a significant amount of research into the chemistry of photoyellowing processes progress in this area has been limited (126).

Insect-Resist Treatment

Wool is a protein fiber but, because it is insoluble and highly cross-linked, it is not widely available as a food resource. Only a few keratin-digesting animals have developed specialized digestive systems that allow them to derive nutrition from the potential protein resource. These animals, principally the larvae of clothes moths and carpet beetles, perform a useful function in nature by scavenging the keratinous parts of dead animals (fur, skin, beak, claw, feathers) that are unavailable to other animals.

The principal insects that attack wool are the common clothes moth (*Tineola bisselliella*), the case-bearing clothes moths (*Tinea metonella*, *T. dubiella*,

T. translucens, and *T. pellionella*), the brown house moth (*Hofmannophila pseudopretella*), the variegated carpet beetle (*Anthrenus verbasci*), the black carpet beetle (*Attagenus piceus*), and a few others. The taxonomy of the Tineid species has been comprehensively reviewed (143). These insects have different temperature sensitivities and tend to be found in different climates. Studies in Australia have shown that the native Tineids are rarely involved in domestic infestations. The introduced species, such as *T. translucens*, are the major textile pests and these are often associated with the nests of introduced urban bird species such as sparrows and swallows (144), while *T. bisselliella* is widely distributed and is common in domestic infestations.

All keratinous materials stored for long periods, including stored greasy wool in bales, animal skins, furs, and horns, are liable to attack. Strategies for protecting goods vary with the product type. Buildings used to store wool may be fumigated or sprayed periodically. Small articles of clothing may be isolated from the environment in sealed bags, often with the use of heat (sunlight), cold (refrigerated storage), or volatile repellent agents (mothballs), with varying degrees of success.

The most practical means of protecting wool textile products is treatment with an insecticide during manufacture (145). Wool products most commonly treated are carpets, furnishings, and insulation. Except for insulation, the most convenient point for treating wool goods is during dyeing, which is attractive because it avoids the needs for an additional wet processing step. Under ideal application conditions the pesticide will be adsorbed inside the highly swollen fiber. This ensures that the pesticide will have maximum resistance to desorption from the dry fiber, and also have optimum fastness to washing, dry-cleaning, and skin contact. An additional benefit of locating the pesticide inside the fiber is that there is little contact action against nontarget pests, as the active agent is released only in the insect gut when the fiber is completely degraded.

Unfortunately, it is impossible under practical dyebath conditions to ensure 100% transfer of pesticide from dyebath to fiber. It is also extremely difficult and expensive to remove residual insect-resist agent from dyehouse effluents (146). Even if the pesticide is removed by absorption or flocculation, the fate of the adsorbed material also needs to be considered (147). As a result, there is inevitably some environmental contamination. With the current generation of insect-resist agents, discharge of residual pesticide from dyebaths is a cause of significant environmental concern in large processing centers. Insect-resist agents must have a broad spectrum of activity because of the variety of moth and beetle species that must be controlled. They must also be reasonably stable to the dyeing conditions used in their application and be durable on wool for long periods. It is also essential that the agent is relatively hydrophobic so that it exhausts effectively from the dyebath onto wool. Unfortunately, this combination of properties is likely to lead to adverse effects on aquatic insects and invertebrates. To minimize environmental damage an allowable environmental concentration for permethrin of 10 ng/L has been set in the United Kingdom (148,149). To meet this requirement, the U.K. carpet dyeing industry has introduced a range of "best practice" operational procedures. These include dyeing at low pH and high temperature, avoiding dyes and dyeing assistants that may decrease the efficiency of application of the insecticide, containing spillages, and avoiding the discharge of effluents from

tape scouring machines. Additionally, a number of manufacturers are using alternative application procedures, where little or no aqueous effluent is produced (147,150–152).

Prior to the introduction of synthetic pyrethroids, insect-resist agents were based mainly on speciality materials, such as polychloro chloromethyl sulfon-amido diphenyl ether (PSCDs) (Eulan U33, Eulan WA New). The production of these compounds has been discontinued, however, because of a combination of environmental toxicity (149) and cost. One speciality insect-resist agent based on sulcofuron (Mitin FF), released in 1939 (153), retains a small market share for specific applications where cost is less important and where high resistance to wet conditions is required. It has also been used on wool insulation where it also has low volatility and provides resistance to rotting (154).

The principal active agent used for insect-resist treatments since the late 1970s has been permethrin. Although other broad-spectrum agricultural insecticides (including other synthetic pyrethroids) have been examined, permethrin remains dominant as it is a nonirritant with a good human health profile, especially when strongly adsorbed into the wool fiber. Pyrethroids with a safer environmental profile, such as cycloprothrin, have also been examined (155). These, however, require higher application levels, which increases the cost of the treatment. Newer commercial insect-resist agents under development are based on lufenuron (an insect growth regulator) (147,156) and on bifenthrin (a synthetic pyrethroid). The latter agent includes a synergist to counter the resistance to synthetic pyrethroids that is being observed in Australia (147). Resistance is an inevitable result of using a single protective agent for more than two decades. Resistance to pyrethroids is common among other agricultural pests, and pyrethroid-resistant strains of the Australian carpet beetle and the case-bearing clothes moth have been found in domestic infestations in northern Australia (157). In the future, it is unlikely that speciality insect-resist agents for the protection of wool will be developed, as the market is too small to support the testing required to demonstrate the safety of modern, biologically active agents. The focus remains, therefore, on the use of commercial insecticides for protecting wool against insect damage.

A diverse range of nonpesticidal approaches has also been studied (144). Attempts to find triggers for such behaviors as egg-laying and recognition of food were inconclusive. Although it has been long known that otherwise unrelated clothes moths and carpet beetles have developed unique reducing systems in the gut that allow them to digest wool, specific inhibitors of these systems have not yet been identified.

Flame-Resist Treatment

Wool is regarded as a naturally flame-resistant fiber, which is partly due to its high nitrogen content, high sulfur content, and high (water) regain under ambient conditions. It has a high ignition temperature (570–600°C), high limiting oxygen index (25–26%), and a low heat of combustion (4.9 kcal/g) (158). In most cases, when wool fabrics are ignited they will rapidly self-extinguish, because of the formation of a high volume, insulating ash, or char. Unlike thermoplastic

materials, wool does not melt or drip when ignited. In many end uses, no additional fire-retardant treatment is needed.

If higher standards of flammability are needed, such as in aviation, furnishing fabrics, or protective clothing, durable protective treatments are available. These treatments evolved from the observation that wool treated with a chrome mordant, such as that used in chrome dyeing, has a markedly improved flame resistance (159). The chrome mordant, however, discolors undyed wool. It was shown, subsequently, that titanium or zirconium compounds give similar improvements in fire retardancy (160), with reduced discoloration of the wool. The Zirpro Process, developed by IWS (now, The Woolmark Company) has been used extensively for wool in aircraft interiors to meet FAA requirements. It is also used for protective clothing and for stage curtains and carpets in public buildings and similar areas, where high flame resistance is required by legislation (161,162). Other wool finishes (dyeing, insect-resist, shrink-resist) have been developed that are compatible with the Zirpro Process.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Keratin” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 8, pp. 1–44, by E. G. Bendit and M. Feughelman, CSIRO Wool Research Laboratories; “Wool” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 15, pp. 41–79, by K. R. Makinson, CSIRO Wool Research Laboratories; “Keratin” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 8, pp. 566–600, by Max Feughelman, University of New South Wales; “Wool” in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 12, pp. 546–586, by J. R. Christoe, R. J. Denning, D. J. Evans, M. G. Huson, L. N. Jones, P. R. Lamb, K. R. Millington, D. G. Phillips, A. P. Pierlot, J. A. Rippon, and I. M. Russell, CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. *Textile Terms and Definitions*, 10th ed., Textile Institute, Manchester, England, 1996.
2. *Wool Statistics*, International Wool Textile Organisation (IWTO), London, 2000–2001.
3. *Australian Wool Statistics Yearbook*, 1999–2000, Australian Wool Exchange, 2000, p. 57.
4. *Seminar Proceedings CSIRO Woolspec 94*, CSIRO, Sydney, Australia, 1994.
5. G. A. Carnaby and A. J. McKinnon, *Aus. Text.* **2**, 11 (1982).
6. *Objective Measurement of Wool in Australia*, Australian Wool Corp., Melbourne, Australia, 1973.
7. B. H. Mackay, In *Proc. 6th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, South African Wool and Textile Research Institute (SAWTRI), Pretoria, South Africa, 1980, Vol. I, p. 59.
8. Core Test Regulations Test Methods IWTO 19–76.28–75, 3–73, 20–69, International Wool Textile Organisation (IWTO), London, 1968.
9. B. P. Baxter, In *Proc. Inaugural Wool Ind. Sci. Technol. Conf.*, Hamilton, Australia, 2002.
10. *Australian Standard 1363–1976*, Standards Association of Australia, Melbourne, Australia, 1976.
11. *Report on Trials Evaluating Additional Measurement, 1981–1988*, Australian Wool Corp., Melbourne, Australia, 1988.
12. P. R. Lamb and S. Yang, In *Proc. 9th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Città degli Studi Biella and International Wool Secretariat (IWS), Biella, Italy, 1995, Vol. V, p. 159.
13. A. R. Edmunds, *Wool Tech. Sheep Breeding* **45**(3, 27 (1997).

14. B. P. Baxter, *Wool Tech. Sheep Breeding* **45**, 267 (1997).
15. P. R. Lamb, In *Proc. Inaugural Wool Ind. Sci. Technol. Conf.*, Hamilton, Australia, 2002.
16. A. D. Peterson and S. G. Gherardi, *Wool Tech. Sheep Breed.* **49**(2), 110 (2001).
17. K. A. Hansford, *Wool Tech. Sheep Breed.* **47**(1), 19 (1999).
18. M. H. Hardy and A. G. Lyne, *Aust. J. Biol. Sci.* **9**, 423 (1965).
19. R. E. Chapman and K. A. Ward, in J. L. Black and P. J. Reis, eds., *Physiological and Environmental Limitations to Wool Growth*, University of New England Publishing Unit, Armidale, Australia, 1979, p. 193.
20. R. D. B. Fraser, T. P. MacRae, and G. E. Rogers, *Keratins, Their Composition, Structure and Biosynthesis*, Charles C. Thomas, Springfield, Ill., 1972.
21. L. N. Jones, T. J. Horr, and I. J. Kaplin, *Micron* **25**, 589 (1994).
22. K. R. Makinson, *Shrinkproofing of Wool*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1979.
23. R. C. Marshall, D. F. G. Orwin, and J. M. Gillespie, *Electron Microsc. Rev.* **4**, 47 (1991).
24. I. J. Kaplin and K. J. Whiteley, In *Proc. 7th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Society of Fiber Science and Technology, Tokyo, Japan, 1985, Vol. 1, p. 95.
25. J. D. Leeder, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **63**, 35 (1986).
26. D. E. Rivett, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **67**, 1 (1991).
27. M. S. C. Birbeck and E. H. J. Mercer, *Biophys. Biochem. Cytol.* **3**, 203 (1957).
28. R. E. Chapman and R. T. J. Gemmell, *Ultrastruct. Res.* **36**, 342 (1971).
29. K. M. Rudall, In *Proc. 1st Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Commonwealth Scientific and Industrial Research Organisation (CSIRO), Melbourne, Australia, 1955 Vol. F, p. 176.
30. D. F. G. Orwin, in D. A. D. Parry and L. K. Creamer, eds., *Fibrous Proteins: Scientific, Industrial and Mechanical Aspects*, Academic Press, New York, 1979, pp. 271–297.
31. J. A. Rippon, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 1.
32. J. H. Bradbury, G. V. Chapman and N. L. R. King, in W. G. Crewther, ed., *Symposium on Fibrous Proteins*, Butterworths, Australia, 1967, p. 368.
33. J. D. Leeder and R. C. Marshall, *Text. Res. J.* **52**, 245 (1982).
34. B. Milligan, L. A. Holt, and J. B. Caldwell, *Appl. Polym. Symp.* **18**, 113 (1971).
35. M. Cole, J. C. Fletcher, K. L. Gardner, and M. C. Corfield, *Appl. Polym. Symp.* **18**, 147 (1971).
36. L. A. Holt, B. Milligan, and L. J. Wolfram, *Text. Res. J.* **44**, 846 (1974).
37. J. M. Gillespie, in R. D. Goldman and P. M. Steinert, eds., *Cellular and Molecular Biology of Intermediate Filaments*, Plenum Press, New York, 1990, Chapt. 4.
38. H. Zahn and P. Kusch, *Melliand Textilber. (Eng. Ed.)* **10**, 75 (1981).
39. J. F. Conway, R. D. B. Fraser, T. P. Macrae and D. A. D. Parry, in G. E. Rogers, P. J. Reis, K. A. Ward, and R. C. Marshall, eds., *The Biology of Wool and Hair*, Chapman and Hall, London, 1988, p. 127.
40. I. J. Kaplin and K. J. Whiteley, *Aust. J. Biol. Sci.* **31**, 231 (1978).
41. L. M. Dowling, K. F. Ley, and A. M. Pearce, In *Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Wool Research Organisation of New Zealand (WRONZ), Christchurch, New Zealand, 1990, Vol. I, p. 205.
42. J. Herrling and H. Zahn, In *Proc. 7th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Society of Fiber Science and Technology, Tokyo, Japan, 1985, Vol. 1 p. 181.
43. A. Schwan, J. Herrling and H. Zahn, *Colloid Polym. Sci.* **264**, 171 (1986).
44. J. D. Leeder and J. A. Rippon, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **101**, 11 (1985).
45. D. E. Evans, J. D. Leeder, J. A. Rippon, and D. E. Rivett, In *Proc. 7th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Society of Fiber Science and Technology, Tokyo, Japan, 1985, Vol. 1, p. 135.
46. G. R. S. Naylor, D. G. Phillips, C. J. Veitch, M. Dolling, and D. J. Marland, *Text. Res. J.* **67**, 288 (1997).

47. G. R. S. Naylor and D. G. Phillips, In *Proc. 9th. Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Città degli Studi Biella and International Wool Secretariat (IWS), Biella, Italy, 1995, Vol. II, p. 203.
48. I. C. Watt, *J. Macromol. Sci.-Rev. Macromol. Chem.*, C **18**(2), 169 (1980).
49. H. Sakabe, H. Ito, T. Miyamoto, and H. Inagaki, *Text. Res. J.* **57**, 66 (1987).
50. A. P. Pierlot, *Text. Res. J.* **69**, 97 (1999).
51. C. Popescu and F.-J. Wortmann, *Wool Tech. Sheep Breed.* **50**(1), 52 (2002).
52. D. J. Evans, R. J. Denning, and J. S. Church, *Encyclopedia of Surface and Colloid Science*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., 2002, p. 2628.
53. I. C. Watt and R. L. D'Arcy, *J. Text. Inst.* **70**, 298 (1978).
54. W. E. Morton and J. W. S. Hearle, *Physical Properties of Textile Fibres*, 3rd ed., The Textile Institute, Manchester, U.K., 1993.
55. *Wool Research*, Wool Industries Research Association, Leeds, U.K., 1955, Vol. 2.
56. M. G. Huson, *Text. Res. J.* **68**, 595 (1998).
57. M. Feughelman, *Text. Res. J.* **59**, 739 (1989).
58. A. R. Haly and J. W. Snaith, *Text. Res. J.* **37**, 898 (1967).
59. F.-J. Wortmann, B. J. Rigby, and D. G. Phillips, *Text. Res. J.* **54**, 6 (1984).
60. J. M. Kure, A. P. Pierlot, I. M. Russell, and R. A. Shanks, *Text. Res. J.* **67**, 18 (1997).
61. M. G. Huson, *Polym. Int.* **26**(3), 157 (1991).
62. A. P. Pierlot, *Text. Res. J.* **67**, 616 (1997).
63. M. Feughelman, in J. I. Kroschwitz, ed., *Encyclopedia of Polymer Science and Engineering*, Vol. 8, 1987, p. 566.
64. J. W. S. Hearle and M. Susutoglu, In *Proc. 7th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Society of Fiber Science and Technology, Tokyo, Japan, 1985, Vol. 1, 214.
65. F.-J. Wortmann and H. Zahn, *Text. Res. J.* **64**, 737 (1994).
66. T. W. Mitchell and M. Feughelman, *Text. Res. J.* **30**, 662 (1960).
67. J. W. S. Hearle, *Int. J. Biol. Macromol.* **27**, 123 (2000).
68. M. Feughelman and M. S. Robinson, *Text. Res. J.* **41**, 469 (1971).
69. A. Brearley and J. A. Iredale, *The Worsted Industry: An Account of the Worsted Industry and Its Processes from Fibre to Fabric*, Wira, Leeds, U.K. (1980).
70. R. G. Stewart and R. G. Jamieson, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **64**, 16 (Dec. 1987); J. R. Christoe, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **64**, 25 (Dec. 1987); B. V. Harrowfield, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **64**, 44 (Dec. 1987).
71. G. F. Wood, *Text. Prog.* **12**(1), 1 (1982).
72. *Text. Recorder* **81**, 69 (Jan. 1964).
73. CSIRO Division of Textile Industry Report No. G. 10, CSIRO Division of Textile Industry, Geelong, Australia, 1960.
74. J. Brach, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **36**, 38 (May 1969).
75. B. Robinson, C. P. S. Lee, and T. Shaw, Technical Information Letter, TIL/ET-14, International Wool Secretariat, Jan. 1993; J. R. Christoe and B. O. Bateup, CSIRO Division of Wool Technology Report, G70, CSIRO Division of Wool Technology, Geelong, Australia, 1992.
76. J. R. Christoe and B. O. Bateup, In *Proceedings of Third Asian Textile Conference*, Hong Kong Polytechnic University, Hong Kong, 1995.
77. B. O. Bateup, J. R. Christoe, F. W. Jones, A. J. Poole, C. Skourtis, and D. J. Westmoreland, *Enviro. 2000*, Sydney, Australia, 2000; B. O. Bateup, J. R. Christoe, F. W. Jones, A. J. Poole, C. Skourtis, and D. J. Westmoreland, In *80th Textile Institute Conference*, Melbourne, Australia, 2001.
78. A. Elice-Invaso, J. Maheswaran, K. I. Peveril, J. R. Christoe, and C. Skourtis, *Wool Scour Effluent as a Potassic Fertiliser. ASSI & NZSS National Soils Conference, Aural Papers*, Melbourne, Australia, July 1996, p. 75.
79. N. C. Gee, *Shoddy and Mungo Manufacture*, Emmott & Co., Bradford, U.K., 1950.

80. H. K. Rouette and G. K. Kittan, *Text. Praxis Int.* **36**, 784 (1981).
81. W. G. Crewther, In *Proc. 1st Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Commonwealth Scientific and Industrial Research Organisation (CSIRO), Melbourne, Australia, 1955, Vol. E, p. 408.
82. W. G. Crewther and T. A. Pressley, *Text. Res. J.* **28**, 67 (1958).
83. Lubrication for Improved Worsted Top, CSIRO, Division of Textile Industry Report No. G.65, CSIRO Geelong, Australia, Oct. 1989.
84. D. G. Phillips, *Text. Res. J.* **55**, 171 (1985).
85. J. A. Maclaren and B. Milligan, *Wool Science: The Chemical Reactivity of the Wool Fibre*, Science Press, Marrickville, NSW, Australia, 1981.
86. K. Ziegler, In *Proc. 3rd Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Institut Textile de France, Paris, 1965, Vol. II, p. 403.
87. R. S. Asquith and A. K. Puri, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **84**, 461 (1968).
88. M. G. Huson, *Text. Res. J.* **62**, 9 (1992).
89. P. G. Cookson, P. R. Brady, K. W. Fincher, P. A. Duffield, S. S. Smith, K. Reincke, and J. Schreiber, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **111**, 228 (1995).
90. M. A. White, CSIRO Division of Textile Industry Report No. G 44, CSIRO, Geelong, Australia, 1982.
91. A. J. Farnworth, *Am. Dyest. Rep.* **49**, 996 (1960).
92. J. R. Cook and J. Delmenico, In *Proc. 3rd Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Institut Textile de France, Paris, 1965, Vol. III, p. 619.
93. Aust. Pat. 645026 (May 20, 1994), D. G. Phillips and J. J. Warner (to CSIRO).
94. A. Y. Bhojro, J. S. Church, D. G. King, G. J. O'Loughlin, D. G. Phillips, and J. A. Rippon, In *Proc. Text. Inst. 81st World Conf.*, Melbourne, Australia, 2001.
95. E. G. Bendit, *Text. Res. J.* **30**, 547 (1960).
96. P. Alexander, R. F. Hudson, and C. Earland, *Wool Its Chemistry and Physics*, 2nd ed., Chapman and Hall, London, 1963, Chapt. 2.
97. A. P. Pierlot, *Text. Res. J.* **67**, 616 (1997).
98. R. W. Moncrieff, *Wool Shrinkage and Its Prevention*, National Trade Press, London, 1953.
99. J. Lewis, *Wool Sci. Rev.* **55**, 23 (1978).
100. R. J. Denning, G. N. Freeland, G. B. Guise, and A. H. Hudson, *Textile Res. J.* **64**, 413 (1994).
101. J. A. Rippon and M. A. Rushforth, *Textilver.* **11**, 224 (1976).
102. A. G. De Boos, K. W. Fincher, and A. M. Wemyss, *Text. Chem. Colorist* **29**(10), 28 (1997).
103. C. L. Bird, *The Theory and Practice of Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1972.
104. F. W. Marriott, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 5.
105. D. M. Lewis, *Rev. Prog. Colorat.* **8**, 10 (1977).
106. P. Alexander, R. F. Hudson, and C. Earland, *Wool Its Chemistry and Physics*, 2nd ed., Chapman and Hall, London, 1963, Chapt. 6 and 7.
107. L. Peters, in C. L. Bird and W. S. Boston, eds., *The Theory of Coloration of Textiles*, Dyers' Company Publications Trust, Bradford, U.K., 1975, p. 163.
108. R. H. Peters, *Textiles Chemistry*, Vol. III, Elsevier Publishing, Amsterdam, 1975, p. 203.
109. J. Meybeck and P. Galafassi, *Appl. Polym. Symp.* **1**, 463 (1971).
110. M. T. Pailthorpe, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 2.
111. J. A. Bone, J. Shore, and J. Park, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **104**, 12 (1988).

112. J. D. Leeder, J. A. Rippon, F. E. Rothery, and I. W. Stapleton, In *Proc. 7th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Society of Fiber Science and Technology, Tokyo, Japan, 1985, Vol. V, p. 14.
113. J. D. Leeder, L. A. Holt, J. A. Rippon, and I. W. Stapleton, In *Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Wool Research Organisation of New Zealand (WRONZ), Christchurch, New Zealand, 1990, Vol. IV, p. 227.
114. P. A. Duffield, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 6.
115. S. M. Burkinshaw, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 7.
116. D. M. Lewis, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 8.
117. P. R. Brady and J. A. Rippon, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **108**, 114 (1992).
118. J. A. Rippon, F. J. Harrigan, and A. R. Tilson, In *Proc. 9th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Città degli Studi Biella and International Wool Secretariat (IWS), Biella, Italy, 1995, Vol. III p. 122.
119. V. A. Bell, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **104**, 159 (1989).
120. V. A. Bell, in D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992, Chapt. 10.
121. D. Radetic, D. Josic, P. Jovancic, and R. Trajkovic, *Text. Chem. Colorist* **32**(4), 55 (2000).
122. J. Ryu, T. Wakida, and T. Takagishi, *Text. Res. J.* **61**, 595 (1991).
123. K. R. Millington, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **114**, 286 (1998).
124. T. L. Dawson, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **116**, 52 (2000).
125. M. G. King, *J. Text. Inst.* **62**, 251 (1971).
126. B. Milligan, In *Proc. 6th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, South African Wool and Textile Research Institute (SAWTRI), Pretoria, South Africa, 1980, Vol. V, p. 167.
127. C. H. Nicholls and M. T. Pailthorpe *J. Text. Inst.* **67**, 397 (1976).
128. K. R. Millington and L. J. Kirschenbaum, *Coloration Technol.* **118**, 6 (2002).
129. G. J. Smith, *J. Photochem. Photobiol., B: Biol.* **27**, 187 (1995).
130. S. Collins, R. S. Davidson, P. H. Greaves, M. Healy, and D. M. Lewis, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **104**, 348 (1988).
131. I. H. Leaver and J. F. K. Wilshire, *Chem. Aust.* 174 (1990).
132. D. R. Graham and K. W. Statham, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **72**, 434 (1956).
133. K. R. Millington, In *Proc. 9th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Città degli Studi Biella and International Wool Secretariat (IWS), Biella, Italy, 1995, Vol. III, p. 174.
134. B. Milligan and D. J. Tucker, *Text. Res. J.* **34**, 681 (1964).
135. R. Levene, *Text. Res. J.* **57**, 298 (1987).
136. R. S. Davidson, *J. Photochem. Photobiol., B: Biol.* **33**, 3 (1996).
137. J. A. Maclaren and B. Milligan, *Wool Science: The Chemical Reactivity of the Wool Fibre*, Science Press, Marrickville, NSW, Australia, 1981, p. 85.
138. P. A. Duffield, IWS Review of Wool Bleaching Processes, International Wool Secretariat, Ilkley, U.K., 1996.
139. K. M. Thompson, W. P. Griffith, and M. Spiro, *J. Chem. Soc., Chem. Commun.* 1600 (1992).
140. A. W. Karunditu, C. M. Carr, K. Dodd, P. Mallinson, I. A. Fleet, and L. W. Tetler, *Text. Res. J.* **64**, 570 (1994).
141. J. Cegarra, J. Gacén, D. Cayuela, and M. C. Riva, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **110**, 308 (1994).
142. A. Bereck, *Rev. Prog. Colorat.* **24**, 17 (1994).
143. G. Robinson and E. Nielsen, *Tineid Genera of Australia: Lepidoptera*, CSIRO Publications, Canberra, Australia, 1993.

144. D. E. Rivett, S. Ciccotosto, R. I. Logan, E. S. Nielsen, C. P. Robinson, L. G. Sparrow, and R. M. Traynier, In *Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Wool Research Organisation of New Zealand (WRONZ), Christchurch, New Zealand, 1990, Vol. IV, p. 548.
145. R. J. Mayfield, *Text. Progress* **11**(4, 1 (1982)); D. M. Lewis and T. Shaw, *Rev. Prog. Colorat.* **17**, 86 (1987).
146. P. I. Norman and R. Seddon, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **107**, 215 (1991).
147. J. Barton, *Intern. Dyer*, **14** (Sept. 2000).
148. T. Zabel, J. Seager, and S. D. Oakley, Proposed Environmental Quality Standards For List 2 Substances in Water-Mothproofing Agents, Report TR261, Water Research Center, U.K., 1988.
149. T. Shaw, In *Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Wool Research Organisation of New Zealand (WRONZ), Christchurch, New Zealand, 1990, Vol. IV, p. 533.
150. Anon, *Wool Rec.* **154**, 25 (Mar. 1995).
151. D. Allenach, In *Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Wool Research Organisation of New Zealand (WRONZ), Christchurch, New Zealand, 1990, Vol. IV p. 568.
152. D. Allenach, *Wool Rec.* **151**, 35 (Mar. 1992).
153. R. W. Moncrieff, *Mothproofing*, Billing and Sons, Ltd., London, U.K., 1950, p. 70.
154. I. M. Russell, Combined Insect Resist and Rot-Resist Treatments for Wool Insulation, CSIRO Division of Wool Technology Report G69, CSIRO, Geelong, Australia, May 1992.
155. I. M. Russell, In *Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Wool Research Organisation of New Zealand (WRONZ), Christchurch, New Zealand, 1990, Vol. IV, p. 606.
156. Anon, *WRONZ News* **44**, 2 (2001).
157. Specification of Insect Resistance. E 10, The Woolmark Co., Australia, 2001.
158. T. Shaw and M. A. White, in M. Lewin and S. B. Sello, eds., *Handbook of Fiber Science and Technology, Vol. II: Chemical Processing of Fibers and Fabrics*, Part B, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1984, Chapt. 5.
159. M. J. Koroskys, *Am. Dyes. Rept.* **60**(5), 48 (1971).
160. L. Benisek, *Text. Manuf.* **99**, 36 (Jan.–Feb. 1972); *Melliand Textilber.* **53**, 931 (1972).
161. L. Benisek, *J. Text. Inst.* **65**, 102 and 140 (1974).
162. P. Gordon and L. Stephen, *J. Soc. Dyers Colour.* **90**, 239 (1974).

GENERAL READING

- Textile Terms and Definitions*, 10th ed., Textile Institute, Manchester, England, 1996.
- W. E. Morton and J. W. S. Hearle, *Physical Properties of Textile Fibres*, 3rd ed., The Textile Institute, Manchester, U.K., 1993.
- P. Alexander, R. F. Hudson, and C. Earland, *Wool Its Chemistry and Physics*, 2nd ed., Chapman and Hall, London, 1963.
- J. A. Maclaren and B. Milligan, *Wool Science: The Chemical Reactivity of the Wool Fibre*, Science Press, Marrickville, NSW, Australia, 1981.
- R. S. Asquith, ed., *Chemistry of Natural Protein Fibers*, Plenum Press, New York, 1977.
- A. Brearley and J. A. Iredale, *The Worsted Industry: An Account of the Worsted Industry and Its Processes from Fibre to Fabric*, Wira, Leeds, U.K., 1980.
- D. M. Lewis, ed., *Wool Dyeing*, Society of Dyers and Colourists, Bradford, U.K., 1992.
- K. R. Makinson, *Shrinkproofing of Wool*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1979.
- P. R. Brady, ed., *Finishing and Wool Fabric Properties: A Guide to the Theory and Practice of Finishing Woven Wool Fabrics*, CSIRO Division of Wool Technology, Victoria, Australia, 1997.
- Proc. 1st Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Melbourne, Australia, 1955.
- Proc. 2nd Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Harrogate, U. K., 1960.
- Proc. 3rd Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf.*, Paris, 1965.

Proc. 4th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf., San Francisco, 1970; Published in *Appl. Polym. Symp.*, No. 18, Interscience Publishers, a Division of John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1971.

Proc. 5th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf., Aachen, Germany, 1975.

Proc. 6th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf., Pretoria, South Africa, 1980.

Proc. 7th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf., Tokyo, 1985.

Proc. 8th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf., Christchurch, NZ, 1990.

Proc. 9th Int. Wool Text. Res. Conf., Biella, Italy, 1995.

JOHN R. CHRISTOE

RON J. DENNING

DAVID J. EVANS

MICKEY G. HUSON

LESLIE N. JONES

PETER R. LAMB

KEITH R. MILLINGTON

DAVID G. PHILLIPS

ANTHONY P. PIERLOT

JOHN A. RIPPON

IAN M. RUSSELL

CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology

X

XANTHAN

Introduction

Industrial polysaccharides are useful because they thicken or stabilize aqueous systems. These polysaccharides, or gums as they are also called, can produce gels or act as emulsion stabilizers, flocculants, binders, film formers, lubricants, and friction reducers. Thus, industrially useful polysaccharides modify and control the rheological properties of aqueous systems.

Traditionally, industrially useful polysaccharides have been derived from botanical sources, but more recently several microbial polysaccharides have achieved commercial status. These include dextran, gellan gum, xanthan gum, and welan gum, the generic name for polysaccharide S-130, which was commercialized in 1985.

Xanthan gum has found significant commercial success in food, industrial, and oilfield applications and has provided the springboard for the development of a new generation of microbial polysaccharides (1). Several excellent reviews have been written on the structure, properties, and uses of xanthan gum (2–5).

Manufacture

An appropriate medium for xanthan production comprises carbohydrate and other nutrients. As shown in Figure 1, a pure *Xanthomonas campestris* culture (after inoculum buildup) is grown in a seed vessel, which is then used to inoculate a large fermentor. The additional nutrients required by this organism include ammonium ion, a phosphate buffer, magnesium ion, and trace elements (6). Broth pH decreases during the fermentation, because anionic groups are formed as part of the polysaccharide molecules, and it is necessary to add caustic to maintain the pH within the range of 6.0–7.5. A suitable fermentation temperature is about 28°C (7). Glucose, sucrose, and starch are similar with respect to polysaccharide production efficiency.

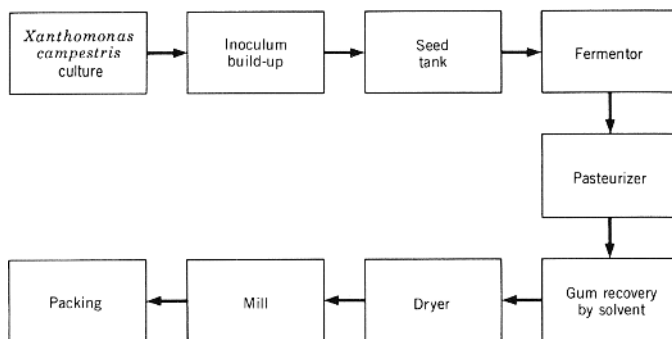


Fig. 1. Diagram of production process.

At completion, that is, when the carbohydrate source is exhausted, the fermentation broth is heat-treated at near-boiling temperature. Xanthan gum is recovered by precipitation with isopropyl alcohol, and the polysaccharide is dried and milled to the desired particle size distribution.

In another commercial process, pasteurization, alcohol precipitation, and drying are omitted, biocide is added to the fermentor and the liquid broth is shipped as the final product. Alternatively, the broth is ultrafiltered and shipped as a liquid concentrate.

Alternative methods have been suggested for the recovery of xanthan gum. Each process starts with pasteurization of the broth to kill bacterial cells. Because xanthomonads are nonspore-forming organisms and vegetative cells are sensitive to elevated temperatures, complete pasteurization can readily be accomplished. Drum drying or spray drying of fermentation broth yields a crude grade of polysaccharide (8). Also, high molecular-weight quaternary ammonium salts have been proposed as precipitants (9).

Xanthan gum can also be recovered by precipitation with aluminum at low pH (10) or calcium ion at high pH (11). Washing the insoluble aluminum or calcium complex with acid or salt generates the soluble gum.

Structure

Xanthan gum is a high-molecular-weight heteropolysaccharide comprising three different monosaccharides: mannose, glucose, and glucuronic acid (as a mixed potassium, sodium, and calcium salt) (12). The repeating-unit structure of xanthan gum is shown in Figure 2 (13,14).

Numerous studies have indicated a molecular weight of approximately 2 million, but values as high as 13–50 million have been reported (15). These differences probably reflect different degrees of association of the polymer chains.

An ordered conformation of the xanthan gum molecule was proposed as a result of x-ray-diffraction studies using oriented fibers (16). A molecular conformation of a right-handed, fivefold helix with a rise per backbone disaccharide residue of 0.94 nm, that is, a fivefold helix with a pitch of 4.7 nm (Fig. 3), was postulated. In this conformation, the trisaccharide side chains are believed to align

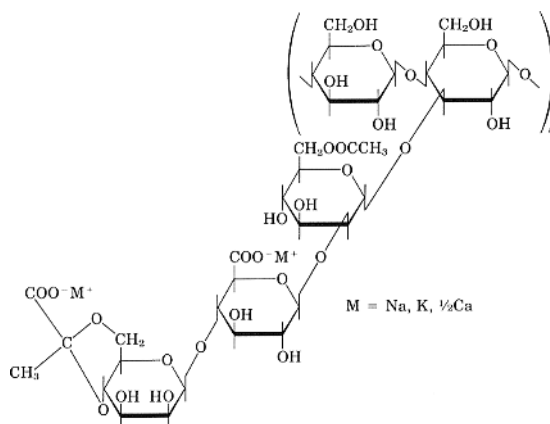


Fig. 2. Structure of xanthan gum.

with the backbone and presumably stabilize the overall conformation by various noncovalent interactions. Multistranded structures are consistent with the x-ray data and represent alternative conformations.

Solution studies on the conformation of xanthan gum suggest that the molecule is rodlike with some degree of flexibility (17) and is related to the solid-state conformation. The nature of the association between chains and the role of the side chain in the overall conformation have yet to be determined, and current data do not clearly define the nature of the xanthan molecule in solution.

In 1977, Holzwarth and Prestridge (18) suggested a double or multistranded assembly, whereas later studies (19) argue for a single helical entity in solution. Other studies based on intrinsic viscosity and molecular weight measurements have presented evidence for both single (20) and double (21),(22) helical structures; the question of whether the xanthan gum molecule is a single or double strand in an aqueous solution is still not resolved. Electron micrographs (23) obtained for xanthan gum samples, vacuum dried from high and low ionic strength solutions, show double- and single- stranded structures, respectively. Xanthan solutions at low ionic strength undergo a thermal transition that has been detected by a variety of physical methods. This transition was first detected (24) as a sigmoidal change in viscosity of 1% salt-free solutions ($t_m \sim 5$ to 5°C). Subsequent work (25) demonstrated that optical rotation and circular dichroic transitions are coincident with the viscosity change, indicating a conformation transition of the molecule. These data are consistent with the unwinding of an ordered conformation such as a helix into a random coil with a consequent decrease in effective hydrodynamic volume and, therefore, viscosity.

Intermolecular association among polymer chains results in the formation of a complex network of entangled, rodlike molecules. These weakly bound aggregates are progressively disrupted under the influence of applied shear. Upon heating above the transition temperature, there is a progressive melting of the ordered structure, which is partly or totally reversible upon cooling, depending on the salt environment. All these features are summarized schematically in Figure 4 (19). Atomic force microscopy studies of single molecules revealed a

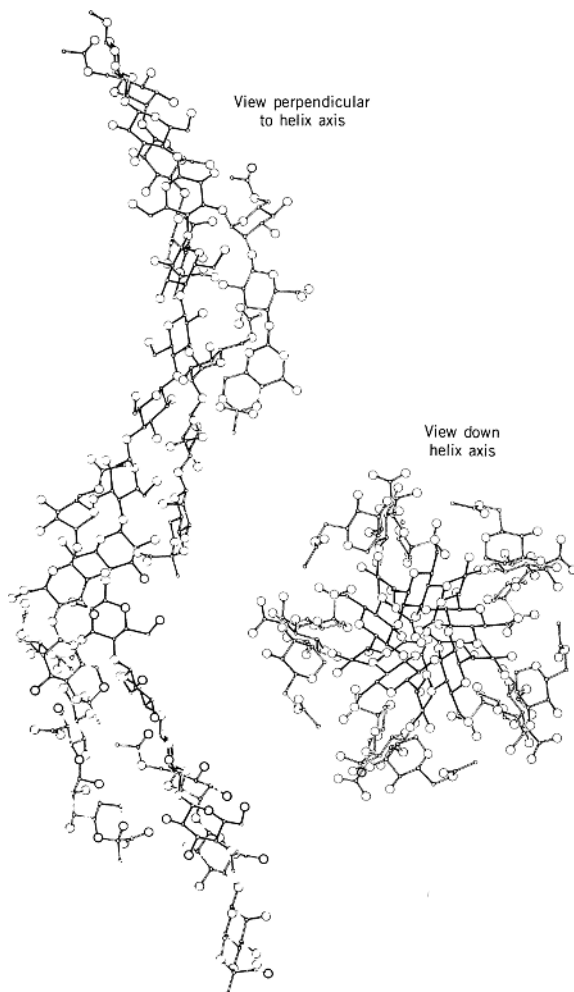


Fig. 3. Helical conformation of xanthan gum viewed parallel and perpendicular to helix axis. [Reprinted with permission from (16). Copyright (1977) American Chemical Society.]

double helical structure in the presence of salt for renatured xanthan and a single helix in the absence of salt; see Figure 5.(26).

Pyruvate and Acetate Content. The pyruvate content of xanthan gum varies and is dependent on the strain (27), fermentation conditions (28),(29), and recovery conditions employed (30). Pyruvate content influences the viscosity in salt solutions (31–33) and the thermal stability (34) of xanthan gum. Recent studies (35) indicate that pyruvate has a strong destabilizing effect on the ordered conformation, which is ascribed to an unfavorable electrostatic contribution. These data indicate that xanthan gum with increased pyruvate may be characterized by increased viscosity. However, the pyruvate content of the commercial product demonstrates minimal variability by using a defined strain and carefully controlled fermentation and recovery conditions.

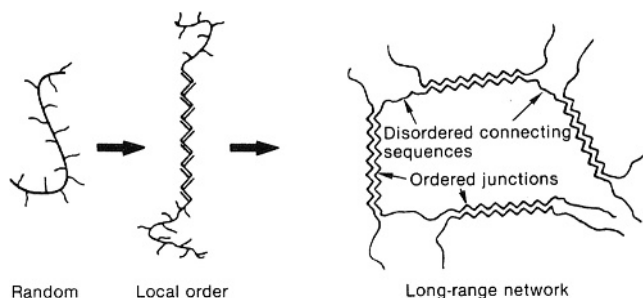


Fig. 4. Conformation ordering in xanthan polysaccharide. [Reprinted from (19), Copyright (1984), with permission from Elsevier.]

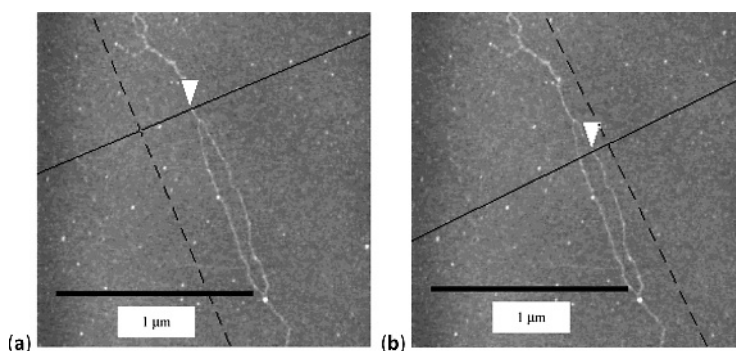


Fig. 5. Incomplete renaturation of xanthan chain in pure water. (a) Where renaturation has occurred, there is a double helix with a height of 0.86 nm. (b) Where renaturation has not occurred, there is a single helix with a height of 0.48 nm. Arrows point to regions where strands are very thin or a loop has formed. [Reprinted with permission from (26). Copyright (2001) American Chemical Society.]

Although no variability in the *O*-acetyl content of xanthan gum has been noted, these ester groups can be removed by the use of mild alkali. An increased synergism between deacetylated xanthan gum and galactomannans has been reported (36).

Properties

The commercial importance of xanthan gum results from several unique rheological properties, and its stability and compatibility over a wide range of solution conditions, including ionic strength variations, heat, pH changes, shear, enzymes, and additions of salts, acids, or bases (Table 1). Xanthan solutions display high viscosity at low concentration, high viscosity at low shear rates, a high degree of pseudoplasticity, and high elastic modulus.

Pseudoplasticity. Xanthan gum solutions are pseudoplastic. When shear stress is applied, viscosity is reduced in proportion to the amount of shear. Upon the release of shear, total viscosity recovery occurs instantaneously. This

Table 1. Structure—Property Relationships

Structural Features	Properties
Complex aggregates, with weak intermolecular forces	High viscosity at low shear rates (suspension stabilizing properties) pseudoplasticity
Rigid helical conformation, hydrogen-bonded complexes, anionic charge on side chains	Temperature insensitivity and salt compatibility
$\beta - 1 \rightarrow 4$ -linked backbone protected by large overlapping side chains	Stability to acids, alkali, and enzymes

behavior of xanthan gum solutions can be explained on the basis of the high-molecular weight, rodlike molecule, which forms complex molecular aggregates through hydrogen bonds and polymer entanglement see Figure 6 (37). Also, this highly ordered network of entangled, stiff molecules accounts for the high viscosity at low shear rates, which translates, in practical terms, into the gum's outstanding suspending properties. The shear thinning results from further dissociation of this network by the continued application of shear. However, when the shearing force is removed, the aggregates (junction zones) reassociate to produce high viscosity. This is the basis of pseudoplastic behavior.

The ordered conformation is stabilized by hydrogen bonding but destabilized by the repulsion between the negatively charged groups on the overlapping side chains. This is also suggested by an oscillatory behavior of aggregation and dissociation of xanthan gum hydrogels (37) with stable homogeneous networks observed only after annealing. A low concentration of electrolyte stabilizes the ordered conformation of xanthan gum by reducing the electrostatic repulsion between carboxylate anions on the trisaccharide side chains. This stabilized helical conformation is maintained with an increase in temperature and explains the insensitivity of the viscosity of xanthan gum solutions to temperature changes below the transition temperatures. Xanthan polyelectrolyte complexes with low polycationic strength and also generates a variety of nonaggregated stable and metastable morphologies, including rods and toroids; see Figure 7 (38). Subsequent kinetic studies show that only the compacted toroidal morphologies are stable (39).

The rigidity of the helical conformation is also responsible for the relative insensitivity of xanthan gum viscosity to differences in ionic strength and pH. In contrast, other polysaccharides that are polyelectrolytes usually have a random coil conformation, a state in which increasing or decreasing electrolyte levels inversely affect solution viscosities. Finally, protection of the backbone by the side chains results in the extraordinary stability of xanthan gum when exposed to acid, alkali, and enzymes.

Solution Viscosity. Solutions of xanthan gum have high apparent viscosity at low concentration and exhibit pseudoplastic rheology. The decreased apparent viscosity at high shear rates facilitates mixing, pumping, and pouring; high apparent viscosity at low shear rates stabilizes foams, emulsions, and suspensions.

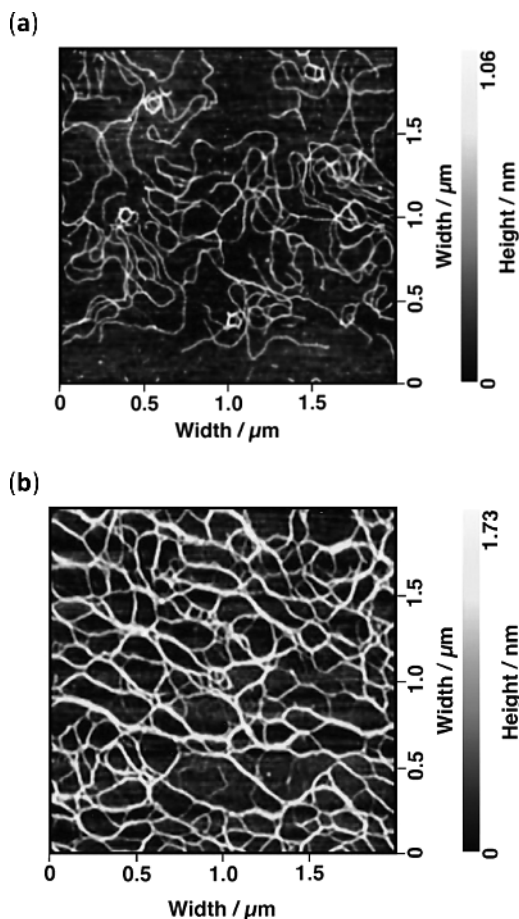


Fig. 6. AFM images of xanthan gum: without annealing (a), and after 24 h annealing of hydrogel (b). [Reprinted from (37), Copyright (2007), with permission from Elsevier.]

The effect of salts on viscosity depends on the concentration of xanthan gum in solution. At low gum concentrations (below approximately 0.3%), monovalent salts such as sodium chloride cause a slight decrease in viscosity. At higher gum concentrations, viscosity increases. At a monovalent salt level of about 0.1%, the peak viscosity is reached and further addition of salt has no effect on the viscosity.

The same effects occur with salts of most divalent metals (eg, calcium and magnesium). The degree of change in viscosity that occurs in formulated systems depends on pH and on other ingredients in the system. To develop optimal rheology and uniform solution properties, some type of salt should be present. Usually, the salts naturally present in tap water are sufficient.

Although the magnitude of the change increases at low shear rates and concentrations, pH generally has very little effect on the viscosity of xanthan gum solutions. Xanthan gum solutions maintain high viscosity over the pH range 2–12 with some reduction at extreme pH values. Also, solutions have excellent stability over time; actual stability depends on the temperature.

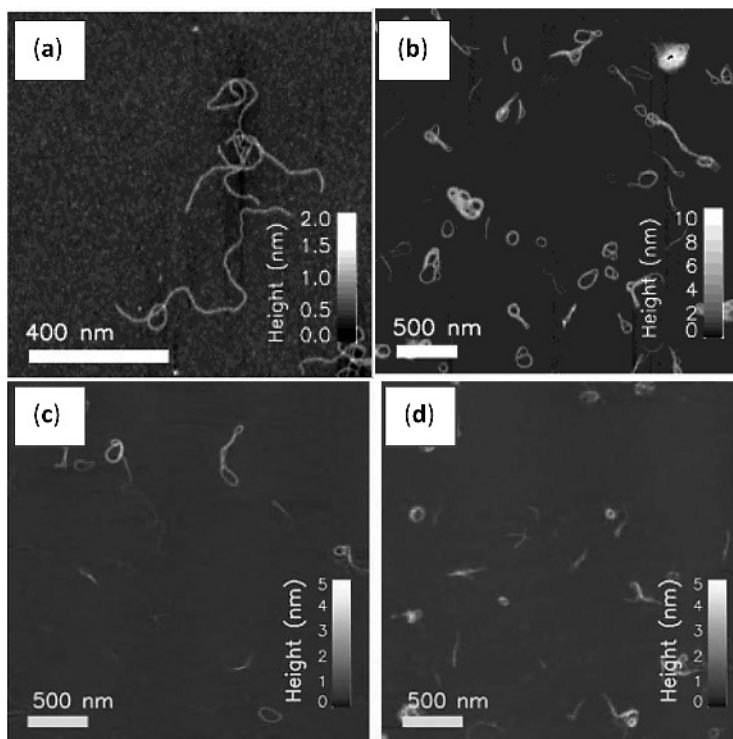


Fig. 7. AFM images of xanthan polyelectrolyte complexes: xanthan (a), xanthan-chitosan (b), xanthan- Cr^{3+} (c), and xanthan – poly-L-lysine (d). The complexes form metastable morphologies (eg, rods, coiled, or folded toroids) and stable toroidal structures (see b–d). [(a, b): reprinted with permission from (38), Copyright (2003) American Chemical Society. (c, d): reprinted with permission from (39), Copyright (2004) Wiley.]

The change in viscosity with increasing temperature depends on the concentration, pH, and shear rate. However, when salts are present, only a small change in viscosity occurs at temperatures up to 80°C . At higher temperatures, viscosity is reduced but even at elevated temperatures xanthan gum solutions have excellent stability and, upon cooling, essentially all viscosity returns. In other words, xanthan gum solutions have excellent heat stability in the presence of salts and viscosity reductions at high temperatures are reversible upon cooling.

Rheology. Viscosity and shear rate curves of xanthan gum at different gum concentrations are shown in Figure 8 (40). The relatively higher viscosity of xanthan gum at low shear rates and lower viscosity at high shear rates is indicated. This illustrates the potential for the use of xanthan gum at low concentrations to produce solutions with high viscosity at low shear rates and therefore excellent suspension and emulsion stabilizing properties; low viscosity at high shear rates facilitates pumping.

Figure 9 is a plot of “zero shear” viscosity versus the concentration of xanthan gum, hydroxyethylcellulose (HEC), and guar gum. Although data were obtained from different literature sources, they illustrate the potential to use

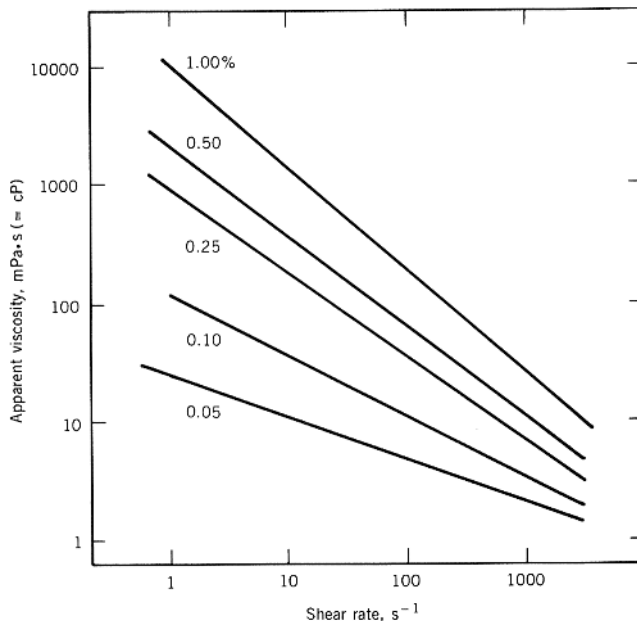


Fig. 8. Effect of the shear rate on apparent viscosity (at 100 s^{-1}) at 25°C for 0.05–1.00% (w/w) xanthan gum dispersions (40). Courtesy of the Institute of Food Technologists.

Xanthan gum at one-half to one-third of the concentration of guar and HEC to produce equivalent zero shear viscosity, which in turn relates to suspension ability.

In the evaluation of polysaccharides as stabilizing agents for suspensions or emulsions, it is important to determine viscosity under relevant conditions, that is, at low concentrations, low shear rates, and in the presence of salts, or at elevated temperature. Under these conditions, the superior functionality of Xanthan gum compared with other thickeners is evident. Although in some applications, this advantage can be compensated for by the use of higher concentrations of lower cost competitive gums such as starch, guar, and carboxymethylcellulose (CMC); this often leads to formulations with unacceptably high viscosity at higher shear rates and inferior stability to changes in pH and salt. The superiority of xanthan has led to its emergence as the stabilizer of choice in many food, industrial, and oilfield applications.

The viscoelastic response, at 25% strain level, of 0.25% Xanthan gum prepared in 0.1% NaCl is shown in Figure 10 (41). At low frequencies, G'' (viscous modulus) predominates over G' (elastic modulus). The point at which G' becomes greater than G'' is known as the crossover frequency; above this point G' predominates, indicating increased structure in the fluid. The lower the frequency at which G' becomes $>G''$, the more solid-like the rheology and the more structure is present. Behavior of this type is characteristic of xanthan gum solutions at low concentrations and exemplifies a solution with good suspending properties. The quantity labeled eta star (η^*) is the complex viscosity and is calculated by dividing the vector sum of G' and G'' by the deformation frequency in radians per second. For most materials η^* correlates with the steady shear viscosity, eta (η).

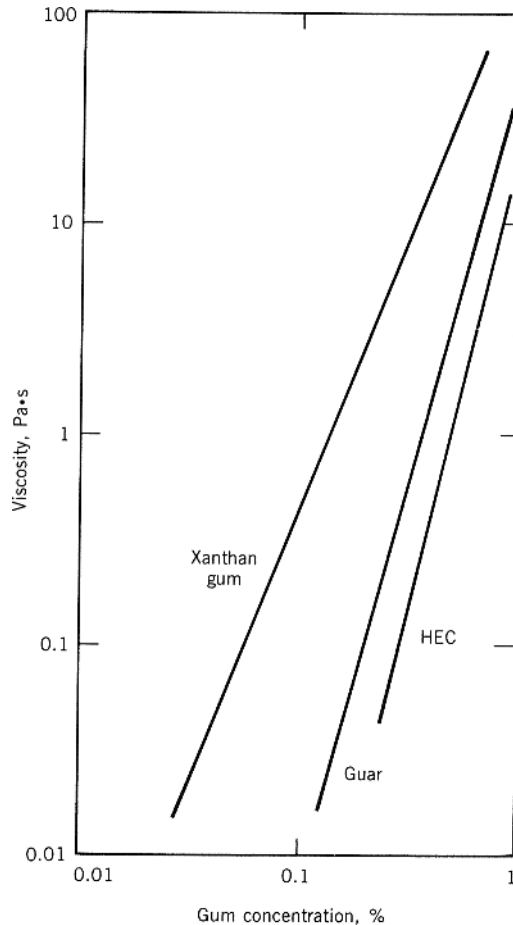


Fig. 9. Zero shear rate viscosity versus gum concentration. To convert Pa·s to P, multiply by 10.

However, in the case of highly elastic fluids such as xanthan gum solutions, η^* can be several percentage points larger, especially at low imposed strain levels. This increase in η^* is thought to be due to the large amount of structure or association that exists between chains in xanthan gum solutions. Taken in sum, these data confirm what is well known about xanthan gum solutions. They are gel-like in nature and have a pseudoplastic (or “shear thinning”) rheological flow profile.

Compatibility. Xanthan gum solutions have excellent compatibility and stability in the presence of many other chemicals.

Acids. Xanthan gum dissolves directly in many acidic solutions. The best results are obtained, however, when acid is added to a xanthan gum solution, rather than adding the gum to the acid solution. Xanthan gum stability is excellent in the presence of most organic acids. The compatibility with mineral acids depends on the type of acid and its concentration in the solution. However, at elevated temperatures acid hydrolysis of the polysaccharide is accelerated and lower viscosities may result.

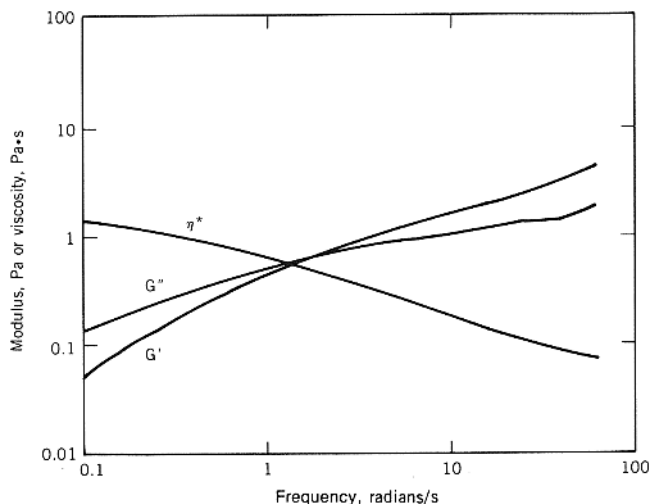


Fig. 10. Rheological properties 0.25% xanthan gum in 0.1 M NaCl. η^* = complex viscosity; G' = elastic modulus; G'' = viscous modulus. To convert Pa to dyn/cm² or Pa·s to P, multiply by 10.

Bases. Xanthan gum is compatible with many basic compounds, including concentrated ammonium hydroxide. Sodium hydroxide concentrations greater than 12.0% cause gelation or precipitation of xanthan gum in the solution. Basic salts, such as sodium carbonate, phosphate, or metasilicate, may also produce gelation after prolonged storage of xanthan gum solutions, if their concentrations in the solutions are greater than 5%.

Salts. Xanthan gum solutions are unusually stable in the presence of many salts. In some cases, compatibility is limited only by the solubility of the salt. However, xanthan gum is incompatible with polyvalent metal ions in solutions with high pH. This incompatibility often can be controlled or prevented by the addition of sequestrants, such as polyphosphates.

Very low concentrations of borates, generally less than 300 ppm as boron, can cause gelation when other soluble salts are present in xanthan gum solutions. Usually, this gelation can be avoided by increasing the boron ion concentration to greater than 300 ppm or by lowering the pH to ~5.0 or less.

Substances that contain vicinal hydroxyl groups also prevent gelation by forming soluble complexes with the borate ion. Ethylene glycol and mannitol are useful for this purpose.

Oxidizing Agents. Persulfates, peroxides, hypochlorites, and other strong oxidizers degrade xanthan gum. High temperature and alkaline pH accelerate this reaction.

Reducing Agents. In the presence of reducing agents, xanthan gum is generally stable. Even so, care is needed to prevent the formation of free radicals that may cause degradation of long-chain polymers. Such degradation can also occur if oxidizers are present.

Thickeners. Xanthan gum shows good compatibility with sodium alginate and the starches. With dextrin, guar, and locust bean gum, xanthan gum exhibits synergistic increases in viscosity.

Compatibility is good with the synthetic, water-soluble resins. Gum arabic forms complexes with xanthan gum at medium to high concentrations. It is generally not recommended that xanthan gum be used along with cellulose derivatives.

Enzymes. Those enzymes that are commonly encountered as microbial by-products or as commercially available products, for example, protease, cellulase, pectinase, and amylase, have no effect on xanthan gum.

Surfactants. The compatibility of xanthan gum solutions with nonionic surfactants is quite good for surfactant concentrations of 20% or lower. At surfactant concentrations of about 15% or higher, anionic and amphoteric surfactants tend to salt out the xanthan gum. Below this concentration, stability is good.

Preservatives. Although xanthan gum is compatible with most of the commonly used preservatives, quaternary ammonium compounds should not be used as preservatives unless there is a suitable salt present to serve as a shielding agent. As is true for other polysaccharides, xanthan gum solutions support microbial growth, even though xanthan is a poorer supporter of growth than most other polysaccharides. Therefore, an antimicrobial preservative is recommended if xanthan gum solutions are to be stored for periods of 24 h or longer.

Latex Emulsions. For the manufacture of paints, foams, coatings, or adhesives, xanthan gum is compatible with the common types of latex emulsions, making it effective as a stabilizer, thickener, and rheological properties modifier.

Cationic Dyes. Although xanthan gum is incompatible with cationic dyes, it may be stabilized to prevent reaction by lowering the solution pH to 1.5 or by adding a shielding agent (eg, a soluble monovalent or divalent salt). The salt needed depends on the type of dye and the cation that must be shielded, but the salt concentration used is generally in the 2.0–3.0% range.

Combination and Modification

Interaction between Xanthan and Galactomannans. When xanthan gum is combined at ambient temperature with galactomannans such as guar and locust bean gum, a synergistic viscosity increase occurs (42). In addition, the xanthan gum/locust bean gum combinations form a thermal reversible gel when solutions of these polymers are heated above 54°C and subsequently cooled (43). Mixtures of xanthan and Konjac glucomannan were also shown to form reversible hydrogels (44).

Guar gum and locust bean gum are galactomannans, that is, polysaccharides composed solely of mannose and galactose. The backbone of both polymers is made up of a linear chain of $\beta - 1 \rightarrow 4$ -linked D-mannose units, and attached to the backbone by $\alpha - 1 \rightarrow 6$ links are single-unit D-galactose side chains. For guar gum, the mannose-to-galactose ratio is 1.8:1 and for locust bean gum the ratio is 4:1.

In guar galactomannan, the galactose side chains occur on alternate mannose units, but, in locust bean galactomannan, the galactose side chains occur in blocks. Since the galactomannans that are most reactive with xanthan gum have

higher proportions of mannose units, it is assumed that the smooth regions are involved in the interaction. As mentioned earlier, it has been suggested that xanthan gum contains helical regions and that the xanthan gum/locust bean gum gel arises from the interaction between these helices and the “smooth” regions of the locust bean gum to form a cross-linked, three-dimensional network.

Xanthan gum/locust bean gum solutions and gel properties are influenced by a number of variables, such as colloid concentration, colloid ratio, and hydrogen ion concentration.

Although guar gum and locust bean gum are galactomannans and are structurally similar, the difference in structure is sufficient to prevent the same type of gelation with guar gum that occurs with locust bean gum. A viscosity synergism does occur with guar gum; however, the magnitude depends on many factors, such as pH, ionic environment, and so on.

In addition to increased viscosity, the addition of xanthan gum to solutions of guar gum or modified guar gum permits modification of flow properties and can be a useful development tool in a number of applications.

Xanthan and Proteins. Interactions between polysaccharides and proteins are critically dependent on hydrocolloid concentrations, ionic strength, pH, other ingredients, and processing conditions (45). Consequently, it is inadvisable, as is sometimes done, to generalize on the so-called reactivity of a particular polysaccharide with proteins. For the same reason, it is often misleading to extrapolate the results from model studies on protein/polysaccharide combinations to more complex food systems. The most reliable information is usually obtained by observing the end result of combining a particular polysaccharide with the desired protein(s), and processing under the conditions of interest. This empirical approach has successfully identified combinations in which the interaction between xanthan gum and proteins must either be prevented or, alternatively, used to best advantage.

Xanthan and Starch. Several years ago, studies on the effect of heating and cooling starches in the presence of xanthan gum (46) suggested that xanthan gum lowered the gelatinization temperature, thereby offering a means of reducing energy input during starch processing. Although the initial increase in viscosity does indeed occur at a lower temperature, this viscosity is generated, not by lowering the gelatinization temperature, but by interaction between the rodlike xanthan gum molecules and the slightly swollen but essentially ungelatinized starch granules. Later studies (47) using differentiated scanning calorimetry (DSC) to monitor starch gelatinization more accurately have confirmed these findings. They show that xanthan gum has no influence on gelatinization of cornstarch and does not change the energy required for gelatinization. However, a very small but statistically significant drop in the onset temperature of gelatinization was observed.

Upon storage, many starch-containing foods exhibit a phenomenon known as retrogradation. Retrogradation refers to the tendency for the linear amylose molecules to associate, progressively building up additional structure within the food, and leading to excessive thickening or gelation. Retrogradation is a major factor in bread staling and, in frozen foods, can reduce freeze—thaw stability. Xanthan gum has been successfully used in a number of foods to reduce the adverse effects of retrogradation. For example, xanthan gum can reduce the rate of bread staling to some extent.

Table 2. Food and Industrial Applications of Xanthan Gum

Food	Oilfield
Pourable salad dressing (high oil, low oil, no oil)	Drilling fluids (muds)
Relishes and sauces	Work over and completion fluids
Syrups and toppings	Stimulation
Starch-based products (canned desserts, sauces, puddings, and fillings, and retort pouches)	Hydraulic fluids
Dry mix products (desserts, gravies, beverages, sauces, and dressings)	Acidizing
Farinaceous foods (cakes)	Enhanced oil recovery-polymer flooding
Beverages	
Dairy products (ice cream, shakes, processed cheese spread, and cottage cheese)	<i>Industrial</i>
Confectionery	flowable pesticides
<i>Personal Care</i>	Liquid feed supplements
Lotions	Cleaners, abrasives, and polishes
Creams	Metalworking
Toothpaste	Ceramics
	Foundry coatings
	textures coatings
	Slurry explosives
	Dye and pigment suspensions

Differentiation. Over the past few years, further improvements have been made in modifying the functionality of xanthan gum to increase its value in various applications.

In 1985, a high clarity food-grade xanthan gum, KELTROL-T, was introduced in the United States by the Kelco Division of Merck & Co., Inc. for applications that demand high clarity, for example, beverages, syrups, and personal care products (48). Xanthan gums with improved dispersibility have been developed for industrial or oilfield applications where large volumes are required quickly, or mixing equipment is limited. Also, a xanthan gum with altered rheology (more Newtonian rheology at low shear rates) and improved compatibility to alkali is finding application in alkaline cleaners.

Applications

The unique physical and rheological properties of xanthan gum make it one of the most versatile hydrocolloids for use in a host of food, pharmaceutical, and personal care products (Table 2; (49–51)). These properties result in products with longer shelf life, improved flow, consistent viscosity, better texture, and a pleasing appearance.

Food Applications. Xanthan gum's stability to acid and salt, effectiveness at low concentrations and highly pseudoplastic rheology make it an ideal choice for stabilization of pourable no-oil, low oil, and regular oil dressings (52),(53). Long-term emulsion stability is readily obtained, and the dressings,

which pour easily from the bottle but cling well to the salad, have excellent flavor release and a nongummy mouthfeel.

Xanthan gum at low levels provides high viscosity, which is stable to changes in temperature, in sauces and gravies at both acid and neutral pH. Relishes stabilized with xanthan gum have excellent sheen and improved cling.

In syrups and toppings, the rheological properties of xanthan gum provide ease of pouring and excellent cling to ice cream, fruits, and pancakes. In chocolate syrups, the cocoa powder remains uniformly suspended, eliminating settling and ensuring consistency.

In starch-based desserts, such as puddings, mousses, and flans, inclusion of xanthan gum provides additional body or structure, improved mouthfeel and reduced syneresis upon storage. In reduced and low calorie foods, xanthan can be used as a partial or total replacement for starch.

Baked goods containing xanthan gum often show increased volume and have improved eating quality. In reduced-calorie baked goods and gluten-free breads, xanthan gum provides improved volume, texture, and moisture retention (54).

The addition of xanthan gum to bakery and pie fillings improves texture, mouthfeel, and flavor release, with the added benefits of extended shelf stability, freeze-thaw stability, and syneresis control (55).

Inclusion of xanthan gum in dry mix bases for beverages provides a pleasant body and mouthfeel to the reconstituted drink. Xanthan gum keeps particulate materials, such as fruit pulp, uniformly suspended in prepared drinks to improve product appearance and provides improved mouthfeel without impairing flavor release. The potential interaction of xanthan gum with the protein in the citrus pulp can be eliminated by the addition of small amounts of highly substituted carboxymethylcellulose (56). Xanthan gum, in combination with gum arabic or modified starch, can be used to stabilize orange oil emulsions, traditionally stabilized with gum arabic alone (57),(58).

Blends of xanthan gum, carrageenan, and galactomannans are excellent stabilizers for frozen and chilled dairy products, including ice cream, sherbet, and sour cream (59). Blends are formulated to take advantage of xanthan gum's unique rheological properties and its synergistic interaction with galactomannans and proteins. Xanthan gum can be used to control viscosity of purees (60),(61).

Addition of low concentrations of xanthan gum extends the shelf life of marshmallows while allowing for a reduction in the gelatin content. The synergistic gelling reaction between xanthan gum and locust bean gum can be utilized to improve the efficiency of manufacturing starch jelly candies by accelerating the set time and to improve storage stability.

Xanthan gum and various galactomannan polysaccharides such as guar gum, locust bean gum, tara gum, and the like, can interact in a "synergistic" manner. This interaction is important for the food industry as it is used commercially in a number of situations that require lower cost or a lower level of stability than that provided by unblended xanthan gum (62). Such applications can include dairy stabilizers, sauces, soups, frozen foods, and certain salad dressings (creams).

Personal Care Products. Xanthan gum provides excellent stability to creams and lotions. The high-at-rest viscosity effectively stabilizes the dispersed

oil phase, whereas the shear thinning properties provide good lubricity and skin-feel during application. Xanthan gum improves the flow properties of shampoos and liquid soaps, suspends insoluble pigments and medicants, and provides a stable, rich, and creamy lather.

Xanthan gum is an excellent binder for all types of toothpastes. Its ease of hydration, excellent enzyme stability, and consistent viscosity produce a uniform stable product and improve extrusion.

Industrial Applications. The excellent suspension properties at low concentration and compatibility with salts, acid, and alkali have resulted in the use of xanthan gum in a variety of industrial applications (Table 1).

Xanthan gum is an excellent suspending agent for flowable herbicides and fungicides and suspension fertilizers (63),(64). Owing to its pseudoplastic property, it can also be used to produce excellent drift control agents. A dispersible-grade xanthan gum is particularly advantageous in these systems.

Xanthan gum prevents separations of insolubles, such as minerals and fats, and maintains a homogeneous concentration of vitamins throughout animal feeds. It is particularly effective in feeds containing magnesium oxide or calcium carbonate and is also used in feeds where molasses is partly replaced by other carriers.

Xanthan gums are used as suspending agents in electrode coatings, as well as in glazes and frits for tiles and sanitary ware. In these products, it is also used because it prevents sagging and pinholing.

Xanthan gum's rheological properties and its outstanding stability at pH extremes make it the thickener of choice in products such as highly alkaline drain, tile, and grout cleaners; acidic descalers for rust and metal oxide removal; graffiti removers; aerosol oven cleaners; toilet bowl cleaners; and metal-cleaning compounds. In these products, xanthan gum also provides cling to vertical surfaces combined with ease of washing off.

The pseudoplastic property of xanthan gum provides excellent texturing in high-build paints and ceiling tile coatings, ensuring in-can stability, ease of application to the wall, and retention of the textured finish. It thickens latex emulsions and dispersions and maintains uniform suspension of zinc, copper, and other metal additives in corrosion coatings. It is also used to suspend particles of refractory materials used in products such as foundry mold and core washes.

Xanthan gum stabilizes highly loaded coal—water fuels, prevents settling, and maintains a stable viscosity during the atomization and combustion cycle. Its low viscosity under conditions of high applied shear as well as its low extensional viscosity enables the fuel to be atomized into a fine spray.

Xanthan gum suspends solids in leather and silver polish, provides lubricity to lotions and heavy creams, and stabilizes emulsions and polishes. It provides excellent print definition in space printing, forms temperature-stable foams for printing and finishing, and acts as a flow modifier for dyeing heavy fabrics and inkjet printing (65). Its rheological properties and temperature stability make it ideal for carpet jet printing where it ensures sharp print definition, the absence of frosting, and trouble-free operation.

Oilfield Application. The shear thinning viscosity provided by xanthan gum allows optimal hydraulic efficiency of drilling fluids (66),(67). It reduces pressure losses within the drill strings, enabling maximum hydraulic horsepower to be delivered to the bit. As a result, penetration rates can be increased, Other

benefits from drilling fluids formulated with xanthan gum include improved bottom-hole cleaning, increased cutting—carrying capacity under annular shear rate conditions, and better separation efficiency in mechanical solids control equipment.

Because of its compatibility with most drilling fluid additives, xanthan gum can be used in a wide variety of drilling fluids. These fluids include those with high pH, fresh water, seawater, and electrolyte-inhibited systems containing dissolved electrolytes such as calcium, potassium, and sodium (68). For special drilling applications, xanthan gum is also used to formulate stiff foams to improve stability and carrying capacity for drilled cuttings.

The pseudoplastic properties of fluids formulated with xanthan gum make it a highly functional additive for work over and completion operations (69). Other key features include its compatibility with most field-formulated brines and its temperature stability, pH stability, and lack of shear degradation. It provides superior hole cleaning, sand suspension, and friction reduction, and purified xanthan gum produces minimal formation damage.

Carrier fluids, formulated with xanthan gum, help improve the competency and durability of gravel packs. In addition, they allow efficient gravel placement in deviated wells, improved slurry transport at high gravel concentrations, and superior suspension at low polymer concentrations.

Xanthan gum provides the ideal viscosity requirements for water- or acid-based hydraulic fracturing fluids. The unique pseudoplastic properties offer improved proppant suspension and maximum viscosity within the fracture.

Xanthan gum forms viscous, pseudoplastic fluids that offer superior mobility control for increased fluid displacement efficiency in secondary and tertiary oil recovery processes. In profile modification applications, xanthan gum provides unique functionality in high salinity formations when cross-linked with chromium and/or other metal ions (70),(71).

Regulatory Status

Food-grade xanthan gum products meet the following requirements: (i) U.S. Food and Drug Administration (FDA) food additive order for xanthan gum, 21 CFR 172.695; (ii) Food Chemicals Codex (FCC) requirements (72) and the National Formulary (73); (iii) EEC purity criteria for xanthan gum, laid down in EEC Directive 82/504/EEC.

Xanthan gum appears as E-415 on Annex I to Directive 74/329/EEC authorizing emulsifiers, stabilizers, thickeners, and gelling agents for use in EEC foodstuffs, amended by Directive 80/597/EEC.

In addition to the food-grade products named above, food-grade xanthan gum has been formulated for use as an additive for liquid feed supplements for ruminant animals and calf milk replacers (21 CFR 573.1010). Xanthan gum is particularly useful in agricultural applications. It is exempted from tolerance requirements when used as a thickener in pesticide formulations applied to growing crops or to raw agricultural commodities after harvest under 40 CFR 180.1001(c). It is also exempted when used in formulations applied to animals under 40 CFR 180.1001(e).

Food-grade products can be used in specified meat products under Department of Agriculture regulation 9 CFR 318.7, and in most poultry products under 9 CFR 381.147. They also meet the FDA requirements for components of paper and paperboard in contact with aqueous and fatty foods under 21 CFR 176.170, and are included in many FDA food standards. It is recommended that current regulations be consulted before any additive is included in new food formulations.

Analytical and Test Methods

Methods for moisture content, ash, pyruvate, trace elements, residual isopropyl alcohol, and so on may be found in the monographs for xanthan gum in the current editions of both the FCC (72) and NF (73). Because of the wide variety of products in which these biogums are used, it would be impossible to give a general method that would not be subject to interference from some other material present.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Xanthan” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 901–918, by John K. Baird, Kelco Division of Merck & Co., Inc.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. (a) J. K. Baird, P. A. Sandford, and I. W. Cottrell, *Bio. Technol.* **9**, 778–783 (1983);
(b) I. W. Sutherland, *Int. Dairy J.* **11**, 663 (2001).
2. H. McNeely and K. S. Kang, in R. L. Whistler, ed., *Industrial Gums*, 2nd ed., Academic Press, New York, 1973, pp. 473–497.
3. I. W. Cottrell and K. S. Kang, *Dev. Ind. Microbiol.* **19**, 117 (1978).
4. B. Katzbauer, *Polym. Degrad. Stabil.* **59**, 81 (1998).
5. A. Becker, F. Katzen, A. Puhler, and L. Ielpi, *Appl. Microbiol. Biotechnol.* **50**, 145 (1998).
6. M. P. Starr, *J. Bacteriol.* **51**, 131 (1946).
7. F. Garcia-Ochoa, V. E. Santos, J. A. Casas, and E. Gomez, *Biotechnol. Adv.* **18**, 549 (2000).
8. S. P. Rogovin, W. J. Albrecht, and V. Sohns, *Biotechnol. Bioeng.* **7**, 161 (1965).
9. U.S. Pat. 3,119,812 (Jan. 28, 1964), S. P. Rogovin and W. J. Albrecht (to U.S. Agriculture Secretary).
10. U.S. Pat. 4,051,317 (Sept. 27, 1977), G. A. Towle (to Hercules, Inc.).
11. U.S. Pat. 3,232,929 (Feb. 1, 1966), W. H. McNeely and J. J. O’Connell.
12. J. H. Sloneker and A. R. Jeanes, *Can. J. Chem.* **40**, 2066 (1962).
13. P. Jansson, L. Kenne, and B. Lindberg, *Carbohydr. Res.* **45**, 275 (1975).
14. L. D. Melton, L. Mindt, D. A. Rees, and G. R. Sanderson, *Carbohydr. Res.* **46**, 245 (1976).
15. F. R. Dintzis, G. E. Babcock, and R. Tobin, *Carbohydr. Res.* **13**, 257 (1970).
16. R. Moorehouse, M. D. Walkinshaw, and S. Arnott, in P. A. Sandford and A. Laskin, eds., *Extracellular Microbial Polysaccharides*, ACS Symposium Ser. 45, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1977, pp. 90–102.
17. P. J. Whitcomb and C. W. Macosko, *Rheology* **22**, 493 (1978).

18. G. Holzwarth and E. G. Prestridge, *Science* **197**, 757 (1977).
19. I. T. Norton, D. M. Goodall, S. A. Frangou, E. R. Morris, and D. A. Rees, *J. Mol. Biol.* **175**, 371 (1984).
20. G. Muller, J. Lecourtier, G. Chauveteau, and C. Allain, *Makrom. Chem. Rap. Commun.* **5**, 203 (1984).
21. T. Sato, S. Kojima, T. Norisuye, and H. Fujita, *Polym. J.* **16**, 423 (1984).
22. T. Sato, T. Norisuye, and H. Fujita, *Polym. J.* **16**, 341 (1984).
23. B. T. Stokke and A. Elgsaeter, *Carbohydr. Res.* **160**, 13 (1987).
24. A. Jeanes, J. E. Pittsley, and F. R. Senti, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **5**, 519 (1961).
25. E. R. Morris, D. A. Rees, G. Young, M. D. Walkinshaw, and A. Darke, *J. Mol. Biol.* **110**, 1 (1977).
26. T. A. Camesano and K. J. Wilkinson, *Biomacromolecules* **2**, 1184 (2001).
27. G. Danute, J. H. Orentas, J. H. Sloneker, and A. Jeanes, *Can. J. Microbiol.* **9**, 427 (1963).
28. I. W. Davidson, *FEMS Microbiol. Lett.* **3**, 347 (1978).
29. B. Seeger, *Nahrung* **25**, 655 (1981).
30. M. Rinaudo, M. Milas, F. Lambert, and M. Vincendon, *Macromolecules* **16**, 816 (1983).
31. P. A. Sandford, P. R. Watson, and C. A. Knutson, *Carbohydr. Res.* **63**, 253 (1978).
32. K. C. Symes, *Food Chem.* **6**, 63-76 (1980).
33. I. H. Smith, K. C. Symes, C. J. Lawson, and E. R. Morris, *Int. J. Biol. Macromol.* **3**, 129 (1981).
34. S. G. Ash, A. J. Clarke-Sturman, R. Calvert, and T. M. Nisbet, *Soc. Pet. Eng. AIME Pap.*, 12085 (1983).
35. M. Dentini, V. Crescenzi, and D. Blasi, *Int. J. Biol. Macromol.* **6**, 93 (1984).
36. U.S. Pat. 4,369,125 (Jan. 18, 1985), H. Kragen and G. Brigand (to Ceca SA FR).
37. M. Iijima, M. Shinozaki, T. Hatakeyama, M. Takahashi, and H. Hatakeyama, *Carbohydr. Polym.* **68**, 701 (2007).
38. G. Maurstad, S. Danielsen, and B. T. Stokke, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **107**, 8172 (2003).
39. G. Maurstad and B. T. Stokke, *Biopolymers* **74**, 199 (2004).
40. R. A. Speers and M. A. Tung, *J. Food Sci.* **51**(1), 96 (1986).
41. R. Moorhouse, Kelco Div. of Merck & Co., Inc., 1987, personal communication.
42. J. K. Rocks, *Food Technol. Chicago* **25**(5), 22 (1971).
43. P. Kovacs, *Food Technol. Chicago* **27**(3), 26 (1973).
44. G. Paradossi, E. Chiessi, A. Barbiroli, and D. Fessas, *Biomacromolecules* **3**, 498 (2002).
45. J. M. R. Patino and A. M. R. Pilosof, *Food Hydrocolloids* **25**, 1925 (2011).
46. Brit. Pat. 1,562,275 (Mar. 12, 1980), D. D. Christian and H. W. Gardner, US Commerce.
47. R. C. Clark, *Poster session, presented at the 27th Annual Conference of the Canadian Institute of Food Science and Technology*, Vancouver, Canada, 1984.
48. C. Andres, *Food Process. Chicago* **46**(12), 66 (1985).
49. G. R. Sanderson, *Food Technol. Chicago* **35**(7), 50 (1981).
50. (a) H. B. Chen, X. L. Chang, D. R. Du, J. Li, H. B. Xu, and X. L. Yang, *Int. J. Pharm.* **315**, 52 (2006); (b) J. Ceulemans, I. Vinckier, and A. Ludwig, *J. Pharm. Sci.* **91**, 1117 (2002); (c) C. W. Vendruscolo, I. F. Andreazza, J. Ganter, C. Ferrero, and T. M. B. Bresolin, *Int. J. Pharm.* **296**, 1 (2005).
51. P. A. Sandford, I. W. Cottrell, and D. J. Pettitt, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **56** (7), 879 (1984).
52. K. A. Coia and K. R. Stauffer, *J. Food Sci.* **52** (1), 166-172 (1987).
53. A. Parker, P. A. Gunning, K. Ng, and M. M. Robins, *Food Hydrocolloids* **9**, 333 (1995).
54. A. Lazaridou, D. Duta, M. Papageorgiou, N. Belc, and C. G. Biliaderis, *J. Food Eng.* **79**, 1033 (2007).
55. M. Gomez, F. Ronda, P. A. Caballero, C. A. Blanco, and C. M. Rosell, *Food Hydrocolloids* **21**, 167 (2007).
56. U.S. Pat. 4,163,807 (Aug. 7, 1979), K. R. Jackman (to Merck & Co., Inc.).

57. C. Andres, *Food Process. Chicago* **43**(6), 85 (1982).
58. H. Mirhosseini, C. P. Tan, N. S. A. Hamid, S. Yusof, and B. H. Chern, *Food Hydrocolloids* **23**, 271 (2009).
59. G. Downey, *Int. J. Food Sci. Technol.* **37**, 869 (2002).
60. C. P. Kechinski, A. B. Schumacher, L. D. F. Marczak, I. C. Tessaro, and N. S. M. Cardozo, *Food Hydrocolloids* **25**, 299 (2011).
61. C. M. Rosell, W. Yokoyama, and C. Shoemaker, *Carbohydr. Polym.* **84**, 373 (2011).
62. S. G. Collyer, in G. O. Phillips, D. J. Wedlock, and P. A. Williams, eds., *Gums and Stabilizers for the Food Industry, Vol. 2: Applications of Hydrocolloids*, Pergamon Press, Oxford, UK, 1984, pp. 349–355.
63. G. T. Colegrove, *Ind. Eng. Chem. Prod. Res. Dev.* **22**, 456 (1983).
64. G. T. Colegrove, *Ind. Eng. Chem. Prod. Res. Dev.* **25**, 108 (1986).
65. M. I. H. Panhuis, A. Heurtematte, W. R. Small, and V. N. Paunov, *Soft Matter* **3**, 840 (2007).
66. R. Caenn, *Soc. Pet. Eng. AIME Pap.*, 5870 (1976).
67. R. Caenn and F. R. Bagshaw, *Soc. Pet. Eng. AIME Pap.*, 7747 (1978).
68. D. E. O'Brien and M. E. Chenevert, *J. Pet. Technol.* **25**, 1089 (1973).
69. U.S. Pat. 3,625,889 (Dec. 7, 1971), C. D. Branscum (to Phillips Petroleum Co.).
70. U.S. Pat. 4,606,772 (Aug. 19, 1986), S. W. Almond and D. J. Hanion (to Halliburton Co.).
71. U.S. Pat. 4,606,407 (Aug. 19, 1986), P. Shu (to Mobil Oil Corp.).
72. *Food Chemicals Codex*, 3rd ed., National Academy Press, Washington, D.C., 1981.
73. *The National Formulary*, 16th ed., U.S. Pharmacopeia Convention, Rockville, Md., 1985.

JOHN K. BAIRD
Kelco Division of Merck & Co., Inc.

X-RAY MICROSCOPY

Introduction

Various types of microscopy have played a crucial role throughout the history of Polymer Science by elucidating the underlying organization and morphology of multiphase polymeric materials and systems in real space. In many applications, there is often the need to not only visualize the morphology of a multicomponent system or material, but to also quantify the composition of the various phases in detail. Typically, techniques providing very high quantitative chemical information, such as infra red (ir), Raman, and nuclear magnetic resonance (nmr) spectroscopy, would be ideal for these tasks, but these techniques have very limited spatial resolution and achieve at best a resolution of the order of a micron. In contrast to this, electron microscopy has very high spatial resolution, but relies generally on heavy metal staining or only elemental contrast to provide qualitative compositional information. On surfaces, scanning force microscopy (sfm) has proven to be a very versatile characterization tool, but the compositional information obtained is only qualitative in nature. X-ray microscopy bridges this gap between ir, nmr on the one hand and electron and scanning force microscopy on

the other, and fills a need by providing quantitative compositional information at a spatial resolution of presently 40 nm.

This article reviews Near Edge X-ray Absorption Fine Structure (nexafs) spectroscopy, which underlies the ability for quantitation of sample composition in x-ray microscopy. Also covered are state-of-the-art x-ray microscopy instrumentation techniques and a relatively complete overview of nexafs microscopy applications.

Near Edge X-ray Absorption Fine Structure Spectroscopy

The utility of x-ray microscopy is based on the range and subtlety of the spectroscopic and hence compositional information content of nexafs spectroscopy. As is true for all spectroscopies, the higher the chemical speciation capability that can be achieved, the better the compositional quantitation. In nexafs spectroscopy, the photoabsorption cross section for the excitation or photoionization of tightly bound core electrons is measured. NEXAFS spectra are necessarily element specific, as each element has a characteristic core binding energy (ie, carbon 1s: ~ 290 eV, nitrogen 1s: ~ 400 eV, oxygen 1s: ~ 530 eV, etc). The spectral features observed in nexafs spectra correspond to transitions from the ground state to a core excited state. Figure 1 presents a schematic of the x-ray photoabsorption process for the carbon 1s nexafs spectrum of poly(styrene-*r*-acrylonitrile) (SAN). The most pronounced spectral features are intense and narrow peaks at the lowest energies in the spectrum. The first transition at ~ 285 eV is a C 1s $\rightarrow \pi^*$ transition corresponding to carbon atoms of the phenyl functional group. The second transition at ~ 287 eV is a C 1s $\rightarrow \pi^*$ electronic transition corresponding to the carbon atoms of the acrylonitrile functional groups. The energy of these features is dictated by the combination of initial state effects (core binding energies) and final state effects (energy of the optical orbital in the presence of the core hole). The relative magnitude of initial and final state effects in SAN can be gleaned from the energy diagram on the right-hand side of Figure 1. At higher photon energies in the spectrum, broad C 1s $\rightarrow \sigma^*$ transitions are superimposed on the photoionization continuum.

A more broadly based illustration of the compositional sensitivity of nexafs spectroscopy can be seen in Figure 2 (1), displaying spectra from a number of unsaturated polymers that consist primarily of various aromatic functional groups, C=C bonds in the polymer chain backbone, as well as amide, ester, and carbonyl groups. It is readily apparent that the shape and intensity of the spectral features observed are unique for each polymer. Most nexafs spectra of these polymers are dominated by low energy C 1s $\rightarrow \pi^*_{C=C}$ transitions at 285–287 eV. The shape and intensity of this $\pi^*_{C=C}$ band varies with the chemical and hence electronic structure. An example of this chemical sensitivity can be observed in the C 1s nexafs spectra of polystyrene (PS) and poly(bromo styrene) (PBrS) (right panel of Fig. 2). In the PBrS spectrum, the core $\rightarrow \pi^*_{C=C}$ (LUMO) transition has two major components, a C 1s(C–H) $\rightarrow \pi^*_{C=C}$ component at ~ 285 eV and a C 1s(C–Br) $\rightarrow \pi^*_{C=C}$ component at ~ 286.2 eV, whereas PS has only one major component at ~ 285 eV. Note that in this notation, the core level is indicated parenthetically before the arrow (eg C–H), and the nature of the upper level of a given transition

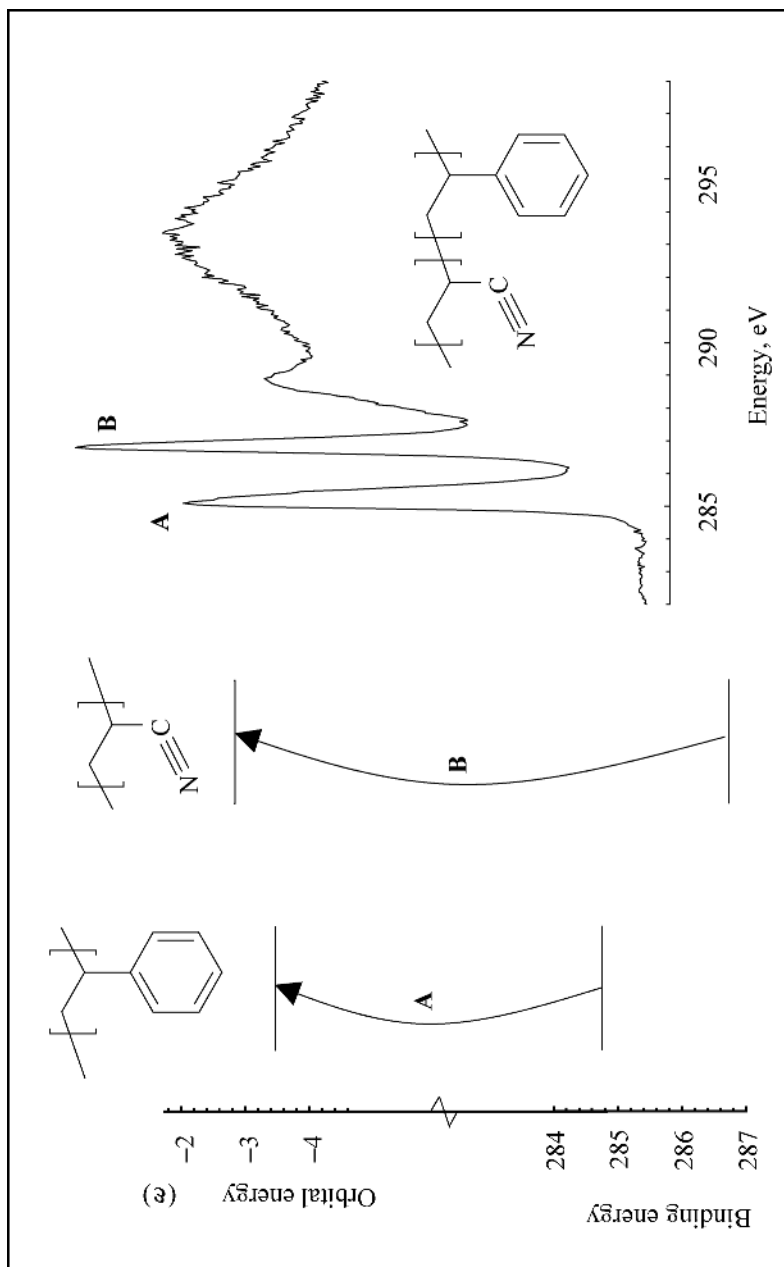


Fig. 1. Electronic schematic for the nexafis photoabsorption spectrum of poly(styrene-*r*-acrylonitrile). The C 1s binding energies were obtained from xps. Orbital energies of the C 1s \rightarrow LUMO(π^*) transition of the phenyl (A) and acrylonitrile (B) functional groups were obtained from ab initio calculations. Reproduced from Ref. 1.

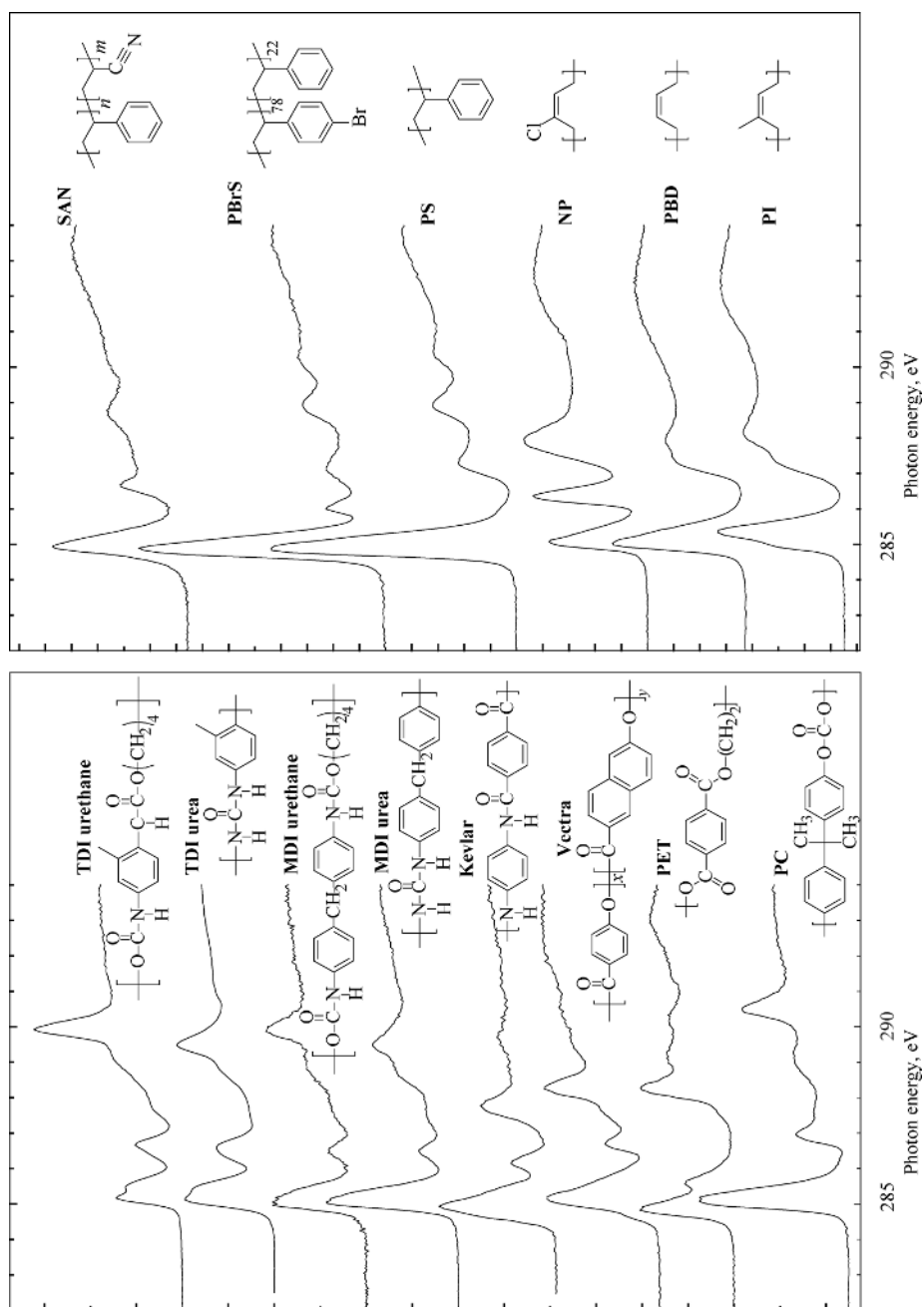


Fig. 2. C 1s nexafis spectra for a series of unsaturated polymers, recorded with the Stony Brook STXM. Reproduced from Ref. 1.

is indicated by the final subscript (eg C=C for phenyl). The inductive effect of the bromine shifts the C 1s ionization potential of the C–Br carbon atom to lower energy, increasing the energy of the C 1s(C–Br) \rightarrow $\pi^*_{\text{C}=\text{C}}$ transition to the common manifold of π^* (LUMO) states.

A similar situation applies to 4,4'-methylene di-*p*-phenylene isocyanate (MDI) and toluene diisocyanate (TDI) polyurea and polyurethane spectra, where the core \rightarrow $\pi^*_{\text{C}=\text{C}}$ (LUMO) transition has two major components: a C 1s(C–H) \rightarrow $\pi^*_{\text{C}=\text{C}}$ component at \sim 285 eV and a C 1s(C–R) \rightarrow $\pi^*_{\text{C}=\text{C}}$ component at \sim 286.5 eV. In TDI, the main, low energy π^* peak itself is furthermore split into two components. The inductive effect of a heteroatom can also be clearly observed by comparing the spectra of neoprene (NP) and polyisoprene (PI). A complementary series of nexafs spectra is shown in Figure 3, which presents the evolutionary trend of the spectral signature of carbonyl functional groups as the nearest neighbor environment is changed progressively and systematically from a keton to a carbonate (2).

Unfortunately, peaks attributable to different functional groups and specific carbon atoms have the tendency to overlap in a nexafs spectrum. Most of the spectroscopic information is compressed into a 6-eV wide energy window, while lineshapes are about 100 meV wide. Most notably, π^* spectral features corresponding to carbonyl, ester, and carbonate groups generally sit on top of C 1s (C–H) \rightarrow σ^* transitions or the vacuum continuum.

Sometimes the shifts of slightly inequivalent carbon atoms are small and of the order of the intrinsic line width of a spectral feature (about 80–100 meV) that arises from the finite core-hole lifetime. Small chemical shifts can be found, for example, for the six inequivalent carbon atoms of the phenyl ring of PS. Further complicating matters, these small chemical energy shifts overlap with vibrational effects that have also similar energy shifts. The chemical shifts can thus not be observed in isolation from vibration and are furthermore convolved with the natural line width. The relative contributions of chemical and vibrational effects to the spectrum of PS has been explored (3). The magnitude of the shifts of these six carbon atoms based on calculations ranges from 50 to 400 meV. Figure 4 shows the lowest energy spectral features of PS and deuterated PS (d-PS). Difference of up to 15% in intensity can be observed that can be clearly attributed to vibrations.

NEXAFS spectroscopy is also sensitive to differences in the chemical structure of saturated polymers (polyolefins and polyethers). The nexafs features in spectra of these materials are predominantly core \rightarrow σ^* electronic transitions with some Rydberg character (4–6). In general, the spectral differences and variations observed for σ^* transitions as a function of chemical structure are not as great as those for π^* transitions. Only slight, although noticeable, differences in the nexafs spectra of polyethylene (PE), polypropylene (PP), polyisobutylene (PIB), and ethylene propylene rubber (EPR) have been observed (1). The main chemical structural differences between these polymers are the number and distribution of methyl groups to the $(\text{CH}_2)_x$ backbone. The small spectroscopic differences are not surprising, since the structural differences involve bonds of the same C–C and C–H σ -bonded character. Nevertheless, spectroscopic differences have even been observed for PE of different density. These differences have been attributed to a matrix effect that varies between amorphous and crystalline regions of the semicrystalline PE materials (6). The largest spectral differences

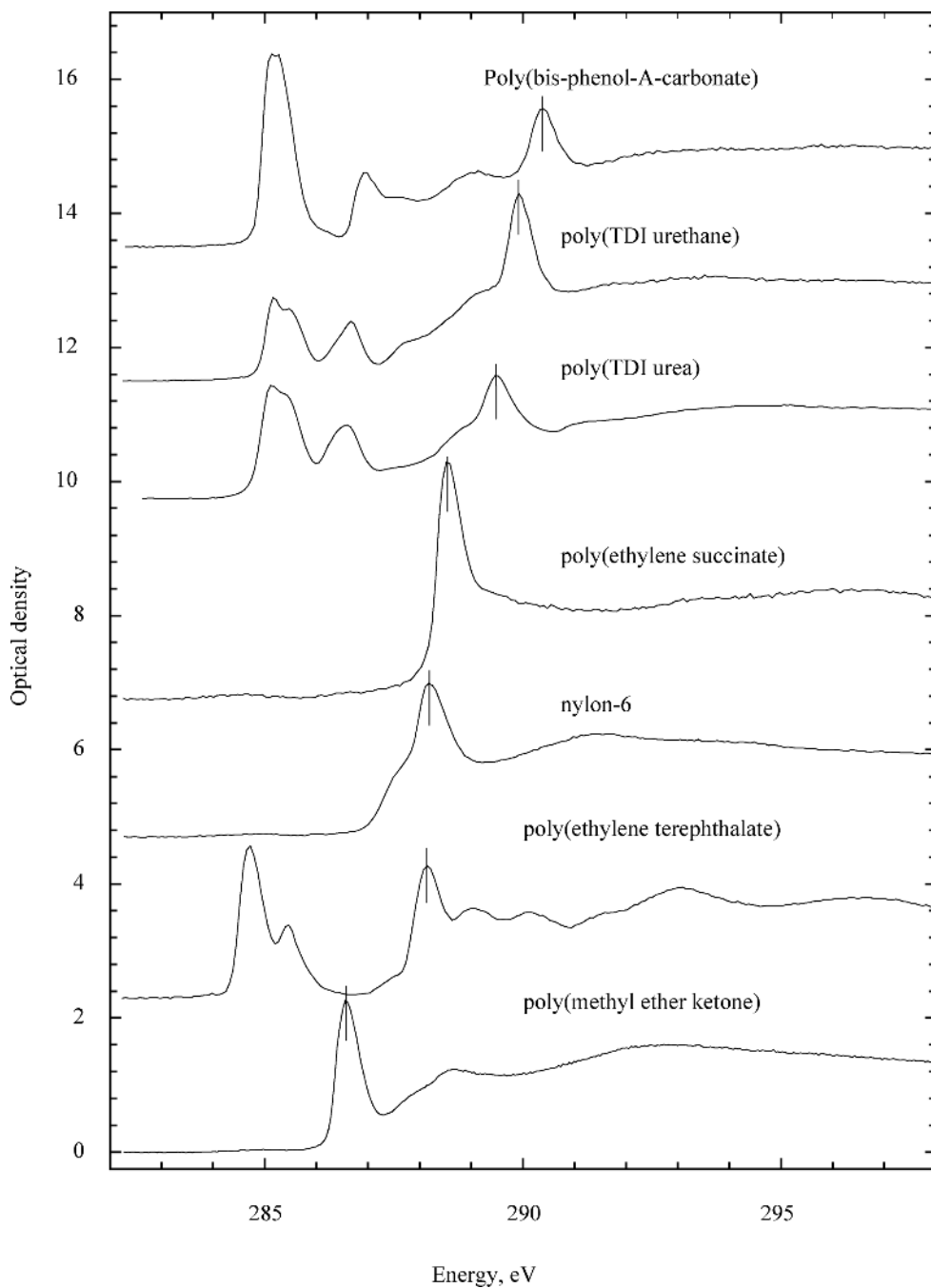


Fig. 3. C 1s nexafs spectra for a series of polymers that have carbonyl functional groups in different local electronic environments. (Data recorded with the Stony Brook STXM.) Reproduced from Ref. 2.

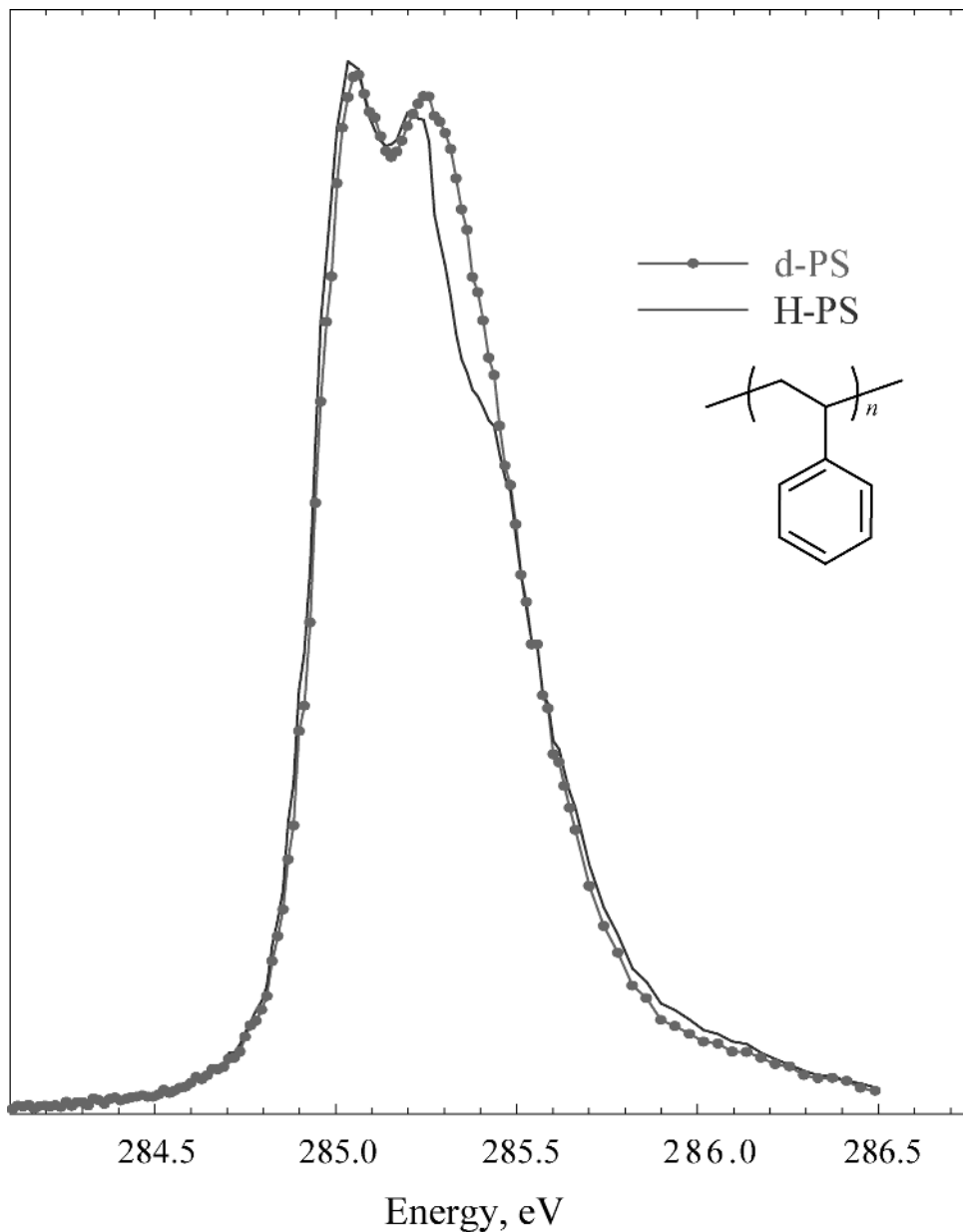


Fig. 4. C 1s nexafs spectra of polystyrene (gray line) and deuterated polystyrene (light gray line) recorded with a resolving power of about 6100. The area of the C 1s \rightarrow π^* transition is normalized so that absolute differences in the spectral intensity are chemically meaningful. (Data acquired with ALS BL7.0 STXM.) Reproduced from Ref. 3.

between the nexafs spectra of saturated polymers are observed when heteroatoms such as oxygen, chlorine, or fluorine are present. Substantial shifts of the corresponding features of PE toward higher energy are observed in poly(ethylene

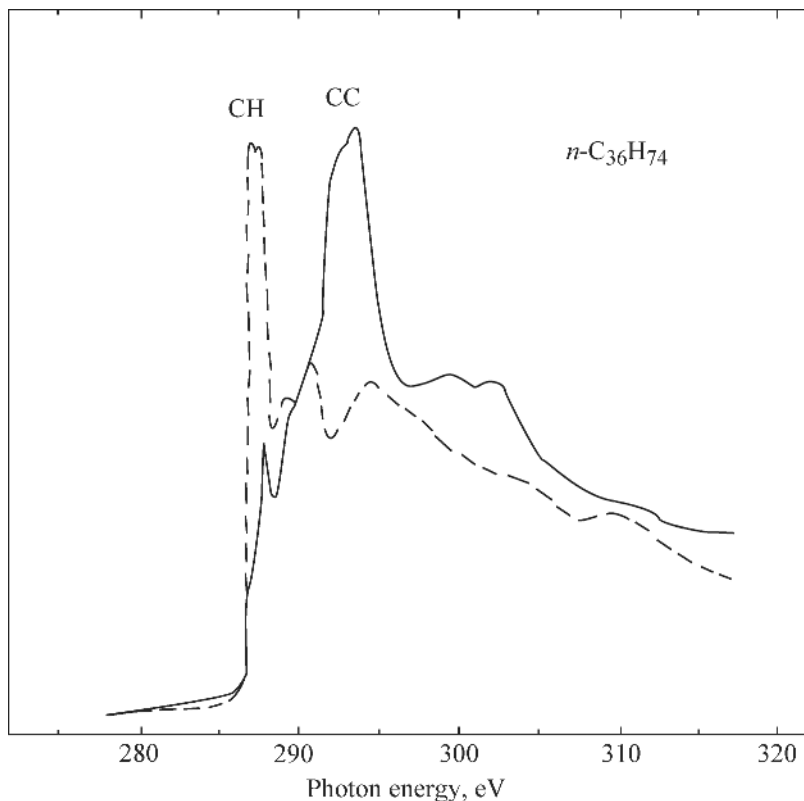


Fig. 5. Angle-dependent C 1s nexafs spectra of evaporated hexatriacontane- $\text{CH}_3(\text{CH}_2)_{34}\text{CH}_3$. Although this is not a polymeric substance, it provides a good illustration how large the linear dichroic signal can be even for fully saturated materials. The solid line data has the polarization vector aligned along the molecular axis of the oriented materials, while the dashed line data is for polarization perpendicular to the molecular axis. Reproduced from Ref. 7.

oxide), polytetrafluoroethylene, polyvinylidene, or poly(vinyl chloride), primarily on account of shifts in the ionization potential because of the heteroatom.

NEXAFS experiments are almost exclusively performed with linearly polarized light from synchrotron radiation facilities. Since the discrete nexafs transitions obey dipole selection rules, oriented samples exhibit linear x-ray dichroism. This can be utilized to explore and measure orientation in polymeric materials. As an example, Figure 5 displays two nexafs spectra of an oriented long-chain hydrocarbon molecule (8). The orientation of the electric field vector with respect to the sample can be changed by rotating the sample relative to the x-ray beam. The spectra shown in Figure 5 correspond to glancing and normal incident radiation. Large spectral differences are observed, even though saturated molecules with only σ bonds tend to give less well-defined spectral features than polymers with π bonds.

The principles and underlying physics of nexafs spectroscopy and x-ray linear dichroism and their applications to small molecules and some polymers

have been reviewed in a monograph (9). Complementary, but somewhat limited, overviews of polymer nexafs spectra have been presented (10–13). A more detailed “primer” of nexafs spectroscopy of polymers has also been provided (1). A carefully energy-calibrated library of nexafs spectra is presently being compiled by the North Carolina State University nexafs microscopy research group. Energy calibration is accomplished by leaking a small amount of CO₂ gas into the experimental chamber and by recording characteristic polymer features and characteristic features of the CO₂ gas simultaneously, thus reducing any ambiguity about the energy scale (14).

The chemical and orientational sensitivity of nexafs spectroscopy has been used for analysis in a variety of applications. Examples of studies involving nexafs spectroscopy are given below:

- (1) Photoactive polymers: poly(phenylene vinylene) (15), poly-*p*-phenylenes and polyacenes (16), photo-oxidation of electroluminescent polymers (17), and uv-polymerized diacetylene (8)
- (2) Polyurethanes and model compounds (18,19)
- (3) Plasma and radiation damaged polymers: oxygen plasma damaged polypropylene (20) and argon plasma damaged polycarbonate (21). Electron and x-ray beam damaged or decomposing polymers: poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA) (22–24), several polymers with carbonyl functionality (25).
- (4) Metal polymer interfaces: chromium coated poly(ethylene terephthalate) (PET) (26) and metalized polycarbonate (PC)(27)
- (5) Surface relaxation of PS (28)
- (6) Surface structure of polyimides (29–34)
- (7) Surface orientation and grafting density of semifluorinated polymers (35–39)
- (8) Organic geochemical polymers: petroleum asphaltenes and coals (40,41) and kerogens and bitumens (42)
- (9) Inorganic polymers: polydimethylsilane films (43,44) and poly(di-*N*-hexyldisiloxane) (45).

Additional studies comprise various forms of polyethylene (CH₂)_{*x*}, such as oriented homopolymer (7,46). Other examples include polytetrafluoroethylene homopolymer and models (7,47–50); poly(ethylene terephthalate) and the related polymers poly(butylene terephthalate) and poly(ethylene naphthalate) (51–53); and electrochemically polymerized thin films such as poly(3-methyl thiophene) (54) and polypyrrole (55). This is not intended to be a comprehensive list, but only an indication of the wide range of applications possible with nexafs spectroscopy.

Energy electron loss spectroscopy (eels) used under dipole approximation conditions is a closely related tool to nexafs spectroscopy as it measures the same electronic transitions (56,57). Indeed, most of the early polymer core excitation spectroscopy, work particularly at the C 1s core edge, was performed by eels (58–61). EELS can be performed in a scanning transmission electron microscope (stem) at high spatial resolution (62–64), or by energy filtered tem

imaging (65). The relatively poor energy resolution in commercial instruments and higher beam damage (66) limits the use of these eels methods for compositional analysis of complex polymeric materials. EELS is best used for elemental analysis or semiquantitative low loss spectroscopy (67–69). Specialized tem-eels instruments have demonstrated 0.2–0.4 eV FWHM energy resolution for semiconductors (70) and nickel aluminum intermetallics (71). The development of tem-monochromators capable of reaching 50 meV resolution is in progress (72–74).

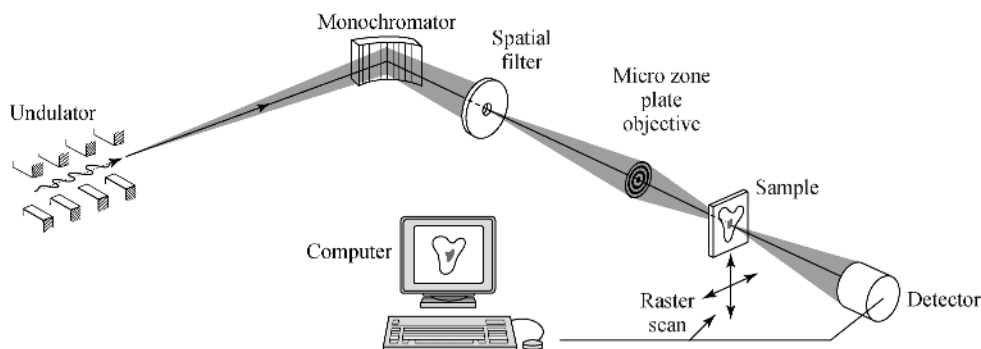
NEXAFS Microscopy: Instrumentation and Analysis Tools

Having seen the power (and limitation) of nexafs spectroscopy in the preceding sections, one can readily envision the enhanced utility of nexafs spectroscopy as a characterization tool that would result from the addition of high spatial resolution capabilities. Since the spectroscopic sensitivity to specific moieties and functional groups can in many or even most cases be exceeded by ir, nmr, and Raman spectroscopies, nexafs microscopy will have to exceed the spatial resolution of these other spectroscopy techniques in order to be truly useful. To date, nexafs microscopy has surpassed a spatial resolution of 50 nm both in transmission to measure bulk properties (75–77) and in a reflection geometry to study surfaces (78,79). This level of spatial resolution is at least an order of magnitude better than what can be accomplished with complementary compositional analysis techniques. Future developments in nexafs microscopy might achieve a spatial resolution of a few nanometers (80,81). In addition, nexafs microscopy has exceptional surface sensitivity of about 10 nm, a sensitivity that could be improved to about 1 nm with photoemission electron microscopes (peem's) that incorporate a bandpass filter (80–82).

High spatial resolution nexafs microscopy is generally accomplished in two ways: (1) instruments for transmission experiments typically employ high resolution zone plate optics (83), whereas (2) surfaces are characterized with peem's (78,79,82). Zone-plate-based microscopes are true x-ray microscopes. PEEM's are essentially electron microscopies in which high spatial resolution is achieved with electrostatic or electromagnetic electron optics. The quality of the optics system is essential in both cases.

For zone-plate-based microscopes, the accuracy of the zone placement and the width of the outermost zone determines the spatial resolution achievable with these elements. The Rayleigh resolution of a perfect zone plate is 1.22 times the outermost zone width. Zone plates with outermost zone widths between 20 and 40 nm are presently in use with experimental spatial resolution in the range of 25–50 nm (77). Two types of instruments have been developed and are being continually refined and improved: (1) scanning transmission x-ray microscopes (stxm) and (2) full-field conventional transmission x-ray microscopes (txm) (see schematics in Fig. 6). Present stxm's generate a microprobe of about 40–50 nm in size, and the sample is raster scanned through the focus of the x-ray microprobe by mechanical means (84,85). In a txm, a zone plate downstream of the stationary sample magnifies the sample onto a 2-D detector (86–88). NEXAFS microscopy with good chemical sensitivity requires good energy resolution. For a stxm that

Scanning X-ray Microscope



Conventional X-ray Microscope XM-1 at the ALS

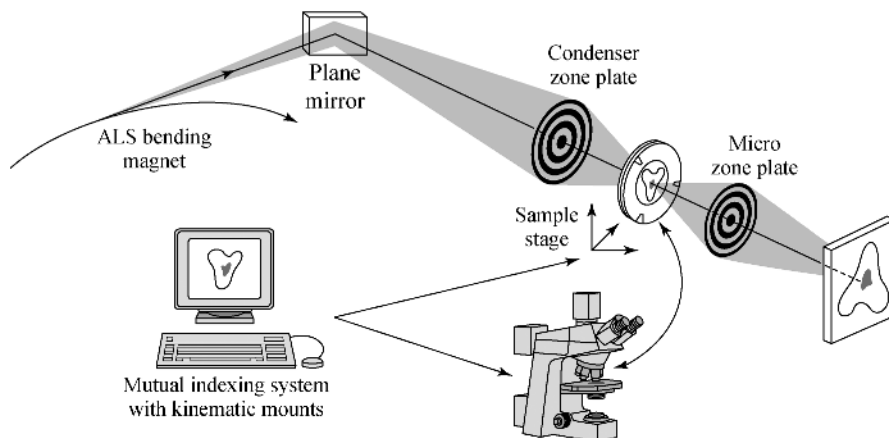


Fig. 6. Schematic of a scanning transmission x-ray microscope (stxm) and a conventional transmission x-ray microscope (txm). Courtesy of W. Meyer-Ilse, CXRO.

is operated in the 200–900 eV energy range, this is achieved with a grazing incidence monochromator upstream of the microscope. Near the carbon edge, the most widely used edge for polymeric materials, a resolving power of 2000–5000 is routinely available (85,89,90). TXM's presently employ zone plate monochromators in order to match the numerical aperture of the illumination at the sample to the numerical aperture of the objective. Present zone plate monochromators used in a txm have relatively low energy resolution (~ 0.5 eV), limiting the utility of txm for nexafs microscopy of polymers. Efforts are underway to improve this shortcoming of txm's.

Zone plates are highly chromatic, with a focal length proportional to the photon energy. As a result, continual refocusing is required during the photon energy change necessary for spectroscopy. This is accomplished by changing the sample to zone plate distance. If a high spatial resolution point spectrum is to be

acquired, care and effort must be exercised to control the transverse motion of the scanned element (sample or zone plate) during refocusing to avoid blurring of the region from which the spectrum is acquired. Controlling this "run-out" is a technological challenge, and places severe constraints on the accuracy of the mechanical apparatus. An accuracy, stability, and repeatability consistent with the spatial resolution of the zone plate has not yet been routinely achieved in existing stxms. One way to work around these problems, at least partially, is to acquire image sequences at each photon energy in the spectrum (91). The images in these sequences can then be correlated to each other and shifted to provide the proper alignment. If one is only interested in spectra from a few locations, the image sequence approach results in a time penalty: image sequences typically require between 0.5 and 3 h, while a few point spectra require a few minutes. Refocusing after a change in energy is also necessary in a txm, with similar requirements to an stxm regarding stability and alignment. In a txm, one has to translate both the zone plate objective and the detector in order to keep the magnification the same.

The first stxm had been operated at a relatively low brightness bending magnet beamline at the National Synchrotron Light Source (NSLS) uv ring (92), but was moved to an undulator beamline as these high brightness sources became available (93). This was motivated by the requirement to illuminate the zone plate coherently to achieve the highest spatial resolution possible. High intensity at high spatial resolution is thus most easily accomplished at the brightest sources available, ie, undulator sources at synchrotron radiation facilities (83,85,90). In order to increase stxm capacity at relatively low cost, an effort is underway to build an stxm at a bending magnet beamline at the Advanced Light Source (ALS) in Berkeley that is about two orders of magnitude brighter than a bending magnet at the NSLS uv ring. In order to achieve the best data rates for the majority of polymer experiments, the ALS bending magnet stxm and beamline has been optimized for C-nexafs (94). The brightness requirement for a txm is less severe than for an stxm. TXM's can be successfully operated with short exposure times at bending magnet beamlines even at second generation synchrotron facilities. Since most laboratory based x-ray sources do not have a continuous and stable emission spectrum, laboratory based nexafs microscopy, with its requirement for photon energy tunability, is an unlikely development in the near future.

To study surfaces, secondary processes, such as fluorescent photons and secondary or primary photoelectrons, that track the absorption cross section as a function of photon energy are utilized. All three of these secondary processes are already extensively employed in nexafs spectroscopy without spatial resolution, in what is called the fluorescent yield (FY), total- (TEY) or partial electron yield (PEY) mode, respectively (9). PEY traditionally refers to experiments that utilize a bias voltage on the channel plate or channeltron detector or an energy window set with an energy analyzer. Both methods strive to accept primarily electrons with kinetic energy in the 100–300 eV range near the minimum of the secondary electron mean free path in order to achieve high surface sensitivity of about 1 nm. In nexafs microscopy, only a modified version of PEY mode is presently available. In a peem, the photoelectrons emitted from the sample surface are accelerated in a cathode lens to high energies, and subsequent electrostatic or electromagnetic

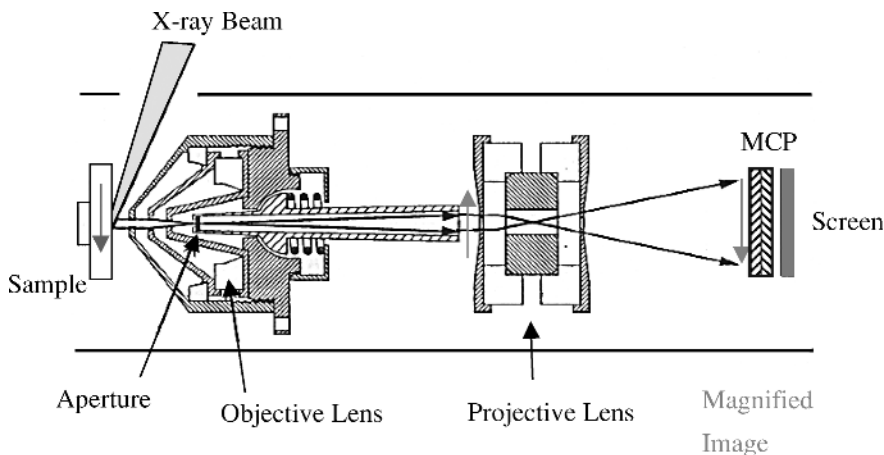


Fig. 7. Schematic of a photoemission electron microscope (peem). Courtesy of S. Anders, ALS, and B. Tonner, University of Central Florida.

lenses magnify the image onto a 2-D detector (see Fig. 7 as an example). The peem instrument itself acts as a low pass energy filter with a bandwidth of a few electron volts near the photoelectron threshold. This energy window is not near the mean free path minimum and has a large sampling depth of about 10 nm associated with it. True energy filtering in a peem would allow operation near the mean free path minimum. However, the one instrument presently available with an energy filter, the spectroscopic low energy electron microscope (SPLEEM) developed by the group of E. Bauer, has not yet been utilized for nexafs experiments (95).

Several contrast mechanisms assert themselves simultaneously in a peem instrument: (1) composition, ie, the cross section difference between different materials at a given photon energy, (2) topography and (3) illumination effects. Topographic contrast arises from the modified collection efficiency in the peem from sample locations that are not perpendicular to the optical axis. Concave round features tend to have reduced collection efficiency, while convex features are enhanced. Illumination effects arise because the sample is illuminated at a shallow angle of 30° or less. The local photon intensity of the sample depends thus on the topography. Even complete shadowing is possible. Typically, one is interested primarily in the compositional information, and analysis procedures are presently developed to disentangle the spectroscopic, ie, compositional, information from topography and illumination effects. Generally, these methods use pre- and post-edge normalization of the nexafs spectra acquired with the peem and reference spectra acquired with the same instrument (see, for example, Ref. 96)

Since peem's acquire information in parallel from all pixels in the image, and incoherent illumination of the sample is possible, the source requirements are generally not extreme. peem's can be successfully operated at any bending magnet beamline that provides sufficient energy resolution (78,79,97,98). PEEM's also do not require any refocusing during photon energy changes. However, for future ultrahigh spatial resolution (<10 nm) instruments, the necessary flux densities on the sample can only be provided with undulator beamlines.

Quantitative Microanalysis. In transmission nexafs spectroscopy, quantitative analysis can be achieved by inverting Lambert–Beer’s law of x-ray absorption:

$$\text{OD} = \mu\rho t = \alpha t = -\ln(I/I_0)$$

where OD is the optical density, μ is the energy-dependent mass absorption coefficient, ρ is the density, t is the sample thickness, and an energy scan from the sample (I) is normalized to another energy scan recorded without a sample (I_0). The product of μ and ρ is the linear absorption coefficient α .

For accurate quantitation, well-characterized nexafs spectra of carefully chosen analytical models of the polymer components are required. The basic and well-founded assumption is that nexafs spectra of *non-interacting* moieties or components are additive. For a blend of two or more homopolymers, such as PS/PMMA, the analytical models can simply be the individual homopolymers. Even for quantitation of components in a random block copolymer, eg poly(styrene-*r*-acrylonitrile) (SAN), the spectra of the homopolymers PS and polyacrylonitrile (PAN) can be used, provided that the blocks do not interact electronically. Accuracy of a few per cent can presently be obtained for a variety of polymers including polyurethanes (19). In general, care must be exercised to choose models and reference spectra that indeed reflect noninteracting moieties (1). The utility and limitations of quantitative nexafs analysis for polymeric materials has recently been discussed (1).

Quantitative Image Analysis. Two methods are available if the composition of large sample areas is to be analyzed quantitatively: (1) singular value decomposition (SVD) of a few images at carefully chosen photon energies (98–101), or (2) acquisition of image sequences at many energies that provide nexafs spectra at each point (91). SVD requires prior knowledge about the sample and works only if the overall composition of the sample is known. In addition, the linear absorption coefficients of the components must be accurately known in order to minimize systematic errors in the analysis. The nexafs spectra used as standards must be free of spectral distortions caused by absorption saturation because of the presence of higher order spectral contamination and detector nonlinearity.

The SVD procedure requires a series of images acquired at a number of energies that equal or exceed the number of compositional components. The reference spectra provide crucial guidance for the selection of the photon energy. Usually energy values for images are chosen that correspond to large spectral differences between the constituent components. An example of raw transmission images is shown in Figure 8. Each transmission image is converted to an optical density (OD) image by computing $\text{OD} = -\ln(I/I_0)$, where I is the transmitted intensity and I_0 is the incident intensity. The normalization with I_0 can be most readily and accurately accomplished if the image itself contains an open area (see Fig. 9), but recording a separate I_0 spectrum is also possible. Since $\text{OD} = \alpha t = \mu\rho t$, each pixel in an OD image can be described by a linear combination of the product of the linear absorption coefficient α and the thickness t for each component respectively. This results in a set of linear equations that can be solved for the thickness of each component. Since SVD utilizes only a limited and small number of images,

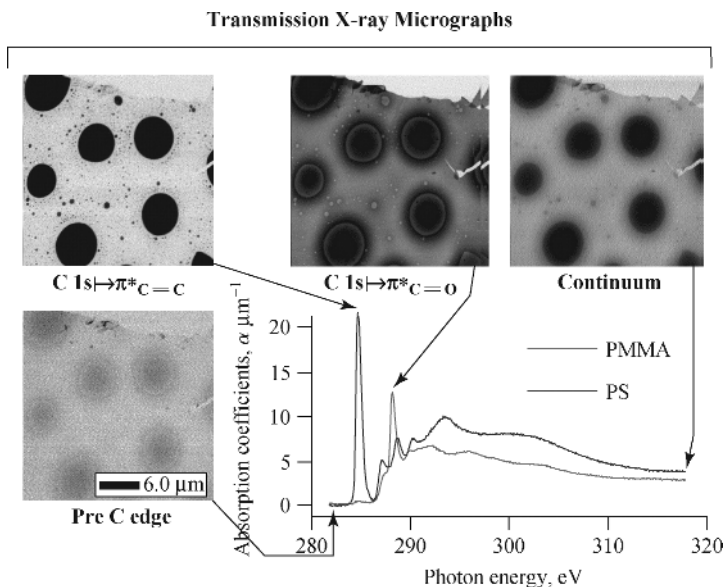


Fig. 8. Basic data set for SVD analysis, with reference spectra of PS and PMMA and transmission images of a PS/PMMA sample at the four energies indicated. Generally, each image has a weighted absorption for each substance present, based on the cross sections at the particular photon energy and the abundance of the substance, even though the absorption in some x-ray micrographs can be dominated by one or the other chemical substance, eg 285.2 eV is dominated by PS absorption. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.) Courtesy of D. A. Winesett, NCSU.

it results in the smallest (and minimum) dose to the sample to extract the desired information. Since $\alpha t = \mu \rho t$, one could alternatively use the mass absorption coefficient as the known quantity and calculate the mass-thickness ρt , rather than the thickness itself. The latter is advantageous if the same component might be present in the sample with different densities, ie, a polymer in an amorphous and crystalline form. The relative contrast and intensities of the images derived from the SVD analysis are not affected by this change in perspective, only their interpretation.

Acquisition of image sequences has the advantage that complete spectroscopic information is acquired from all sample areas (91). Hence the spectra extracted from image sequences can be compared *post facto* to a large number of possible reference spectra, and the existence and identification of unknown species can be more readily accomplished than with SVD (see, for example, Ref. 96).

For C-NEXAFS transmission, optimum signal-to-noise ratios are achieved with sample thicknesses of 50–200 nm. For bulk materials, these sample requirements can usually be met using well-developed electron microscopy (em) preparation techniques such as ultramicrotomy or cryomicrotomy. Alternatively, thin films can be spun-cast to the right thickness and transferred to em grid for x-ray microscopy inspection. Thin samples and section of samples can also be examined in a completely hydrated/solvated state sandwiched between two very thin Si_3N_4

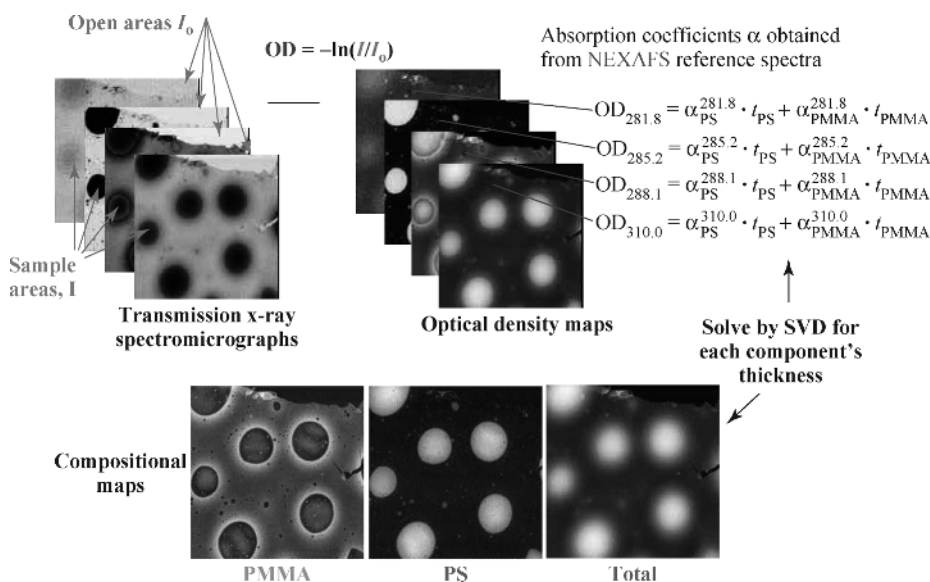


Fig. 9. The transmission images shown in Figure 8 are normalized to optical density (OD) images by inversion of Lambert–Beer’s Law. These OD images are now linear in the absorption coefficients α and thickness t . A set of OD images can subsequently be processed via a singular value decomposition (SVD) procedure to yield quantitative composition maps in terms of the thickness t . (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.) Courtesy of D. A. Winesett, NCSU.

membranes (102). For surface analysis in a peem, polymer thin films typically show the propensity to charge. Generally, only thin polymer films with a thickness of less than 200 nm on top of a conducting substrate can be investigated. Precise temperature control in an stxm and txm is not yet routinely available. PE samples have been melted near 120°C (6), and biological materials have been examined in the frozen state (103). Temperature range in a peem can be from –70 to >1200°C. However, accuracy for near room temperatures is not very good.

NEXAFS Microscopy: Applications

NEXAFS spectroscopy and microscopy provide a new approach to study carbon-based materials. During the last couple of years, nexafs microscopy has been successfully applied to materials characterization in a variety of fields ranging from polymer science and biology to meteoritics (1,83,99). Here, the discussion is focused on synthetic polymeric materials. Organizing the presentation by separating it into compositional and orientational analysis does not work well, as several studies of one material combine both aspects of nexafs spectroscopy. The discussion progresses thus from the “simple” to the apparently or supposedly “more complex” without regards as to whether compositional or orientational information is sought. The discussion starts with homopolymer surfaces, then progresses to single or multicomponent thin polymer films and structured spheres,

followed by bulk properties of multicomponent polymers. The latter might involve formation of "unknown" compounds during processing, presenting a challenge that necessitates careful selection of nexafs reference spectra. These applications will be complemented by a short discussion of research on polymer fibers.

Homopolymer and Polymer Blend Surfaces and Ultrathin Films.

Because of the various technological applications of polymer thin films, ranging from multicolor photographic printing to flat panel and liquid crystal displays, it is important to understand thin film and polymer surface characteristics in order to improve performance or to develop entirely new applications or processing methodologies. Polymer and block copolymer thin films and surfaces thus enjoy continued research interest from both a technological and fundamental perspective.

NEXAFS spectroscopy, on account of its excellent surface sensitivity (about 1–10 nm) and its polarization dependence, can and has been utilized to study a variety of surface properties. Some recent, nonexhaustive examples of nexafs spectroscopy applications are the investigation of the alignment and orientation of polymers and its functional groups in polyimide surfaces after rubbing with a buffing cloth (29–34), the surface relaxation of PS (28), and the orientation of semifluorinated polymers and block copolymers (35–38,104,105). The potential for nexafs characterization of polymer surfaces even without spatial resolution is in fact enormous. A large number of polymer surface characterizations, eg in adhesion science, are currently performed with laboratory x-ray photoemission spectroscopy (xps), even though nexafs spectroscopy might be much more suitable to the task because of increased chemical and surface sensitivity. NEXAFS microscopy has been utilized to investigate the stability and dewetting behavior of bilayers, the phase separation in polymer thin films, and the orientation produced by buffing and rubbing polyimide films. Several examples are provided below.

Polyimide Films and Surfaces. In flat panel displays, polyimide films typically about 0.2- μm thick are coated onto the electrode surfaces. To prepare a surface that aids the alignment of the liquid crystal (LC) molecules in the final device, the polyimide surface is buffed with a velour cloth. Valuable information about the function and the possible improvement of flat panel displays is provided by understanding the conditions and factors that cause LC alignment. Numerous nexafs studies without spatial resolution have investigated the effect of the buffing (29–34). In addition, nexafs microscopy in a peem was utilized to characterize the inhomogeneity of the surface orientation produced by buffing (106). Stripes several microns in width were observed with contrast based entirely on differences in local orientation of polymer chains, chain segments, or moieties. While it was clearly observed that buffing does not orient the surface homogeneously, polyimide films produced under the same rubbing conditions than the samples observed in the peem resulted in LC films with the liquid crystal oriented uniformly over the entire sample surface. The separation distance between the oriented stripes of polymers was less than the correlation length of the liquid crystal and the heterogeneous distribution of the pinning centers is sufficient to align the liquid crystal.

Local stress during buffing is an important parameter that might cause the polymer to orient. However, the local stress cannot be estimated well for

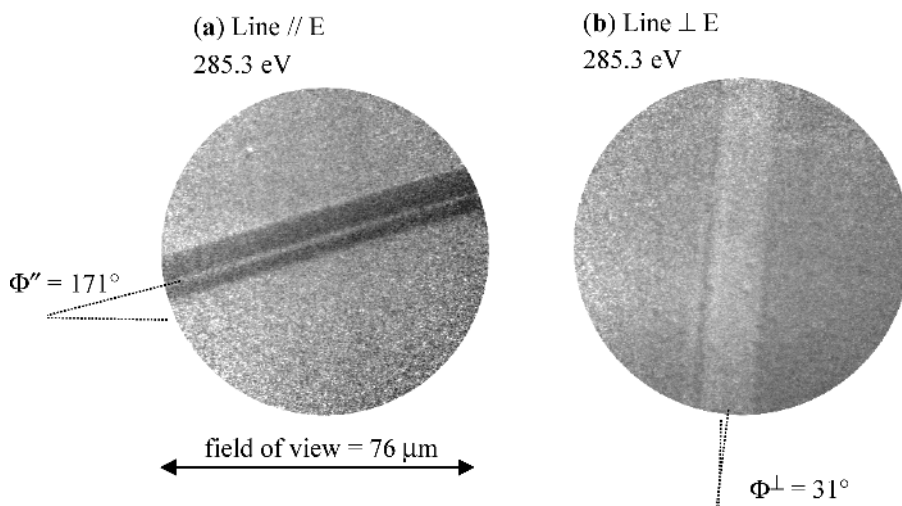


Fig. 10. PEEM images of a stylus track on a polyimide surface at a photon energy of 285.3 eV and two different orientations as indicated. Contrast is based on differences in functional group alignment between the stylus track and the virgin surface. The uniform gray outside the track corresponds to isotropic chains (106). (Data acquired with ALS PEEM-I.) Courtesy of A. Cossey-Favre.

buffing with a cloth. Hence, BPDA-PDA polyimide surfaces rubbed with a stylus of well-defined shape and with a known load were also investigated with nexafs microscopy. Stylizing with a radial tip is an ideal model case that produces an ellipsoidal stress profile on the polymer surface. The nexafs micrographs of a track from the stylus are shown in Figure 10, acquired at two different sample orientations relative to the polarization orientation of 285.3 eV x-rays. Spectra from inside the track from the two different sample orientations relative to the polarization orientation of the x-rays are displayed in Figure 11 and clearly demonstrate the dichroic nature of the contrast in Figure 10. By measuring the width of the track that resulted in alignment and comparing it to the expected stress profile, the minimum stress necessary to cause alignment of the BPDA-PDA film was determined to be 45 MPa. This stress is much lower than the bulk yield stress of 200–300 MPa. The low surface value was attributed to a reduction of polymer entanglement at the surface.

Confined Free-Standing Homopolymer Thin Films. Free standing thin polymer films (eg of PS) can form holes when annealed, driven by dispersion forces that amplify structural instabilities at the film surface. Mechanical confinement offers the possibility to control these instabilities, and raises the possibility to generate unique self-assembled structures. While thin (~ 50 nm) PS films confined between continuous layers of silicon oxide (SiO_x) are prevented from hole formation, aggressive annealing at temperatures well above the PS glass-transition temperature generates an in-plane microstructure (107). The formation of the microstructure is driven by the attractive dispersion force between the SiO_x -air surface. To properly model the mechanisms for this spontaneously generated lateral morphology, it is important to measure the thickness of

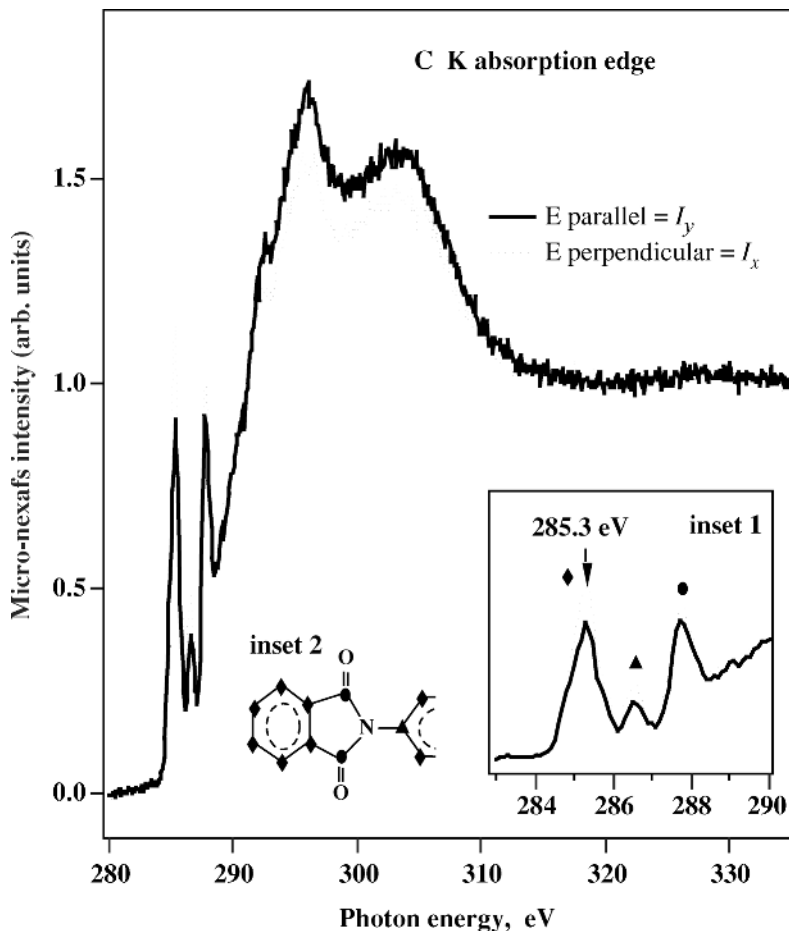


Fig. 11. Linear dichroic nexafs spectra from within the stylus track in Figure 10 at two orientations. Spectral differences are due to differences in orientation and alignment of the polymer functional groups (106). Primary peak assignment is indicated by the symbols. (Data acquired with ALS PEEM-I.) Courtesy of A. Cossey-Favre.

the trapped polymer film throughout the structure. This requires a quantitative tool that can measure the thickness of the polymer inside the trilayer system. While it might be a reasonable assumption that there is almost a complete exclusion of the PS in the thin regions of the pattern, nexafs microscopy indicated $\sim 30\%$ residual PS in the thinnest parts of the sample (see Fig. 12) (108). This fact can now be incorporated into models of the structure formation.

Superabsorbent Polymers: Lightly Cross-Linked Homopolymers.

Third generation superabsorbent polymers (SAP) are a class of highly engineered cross-linked polymers widely used as gels in a variety of fields. SAPs are designed to simultaneously provide high fluid absorption capability, retain the fluid in a weight bearing mode with high gel strength, provide attrition resistance during manufacture, be compatible with other manufacturing materials, and remain safe for hygienic uses (109–111). SAPs are made from partially neutralized

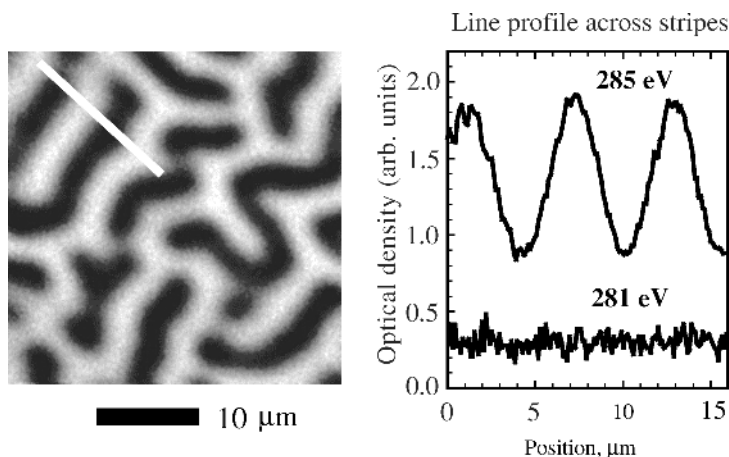


Fig. 12. Image acquired at 285.2 eV of a trilayer structure consisting of a 60-nm thick film of polystyrene (PS) coated on each side with 30 nm of SiO_x . Annealing above the glass-transition temperature of PS results in the observed morphology. Profiles that emphasize PS (top profile labeled 285 eV) and spectra show that significant amounts of PS remain in the thin regions. Note that the preabsorption edge profile at 281 eV is essentially flat. (Data acquired with the ALS BL7.0 STXM.) Courtesy of A. P. Hitchcock, McMaster University, and J. Dutcher, Guelph University.

polyacrylic acid which is lightly cross-linked throughout small (<0.5 mm) beads to form an insoluble, hydrophilic gel. Several different methods have been developed for surface cross-linking SAP gels as means to improve materials properties (112,113). Until now, however, the outcome of these different surface cross-link processes, and the resulting core/shell structure and cross-link density gradient could not be directly visualized and quantitatively assessed.

Crosslinking involves the change in only a very small number of bonds and cannot be monitored directly via spectroscopic differences. A more indirect method, that nonetheless can provide quantitative cross-link density, has to be used. The swelling of SAP beads (polyacrylic acid, sodium salt) and particularly of the more highly cross-linked surface shell depends on the cross-link density of the polymer. Regions or beads with a high cross-link density will expand less in water and therefore will have a higher carbon density when examined in the swollen state. A wet cell was developed and used to characterize cross-link density in thin sections from SAP beads (102,114). NEXAFS resonances were used to provide the highest image contrast possible: The π^* spectral feature of the carboxylic acid increased the signal by a factor of 2 with respect to the core edge jump. Core/shell structures in SAP beads prepared by chemically cross-linking the surface of SAP beads were directly visualized, and variations in surface cross-link density resulting from different cross-link protocols were observed and compared on a common, quantitative cross-link density basis. Figures 13 and 14 compare the results of two different processes that resulted in a gradient and abrupt surface cross-link density profile, respectively. The direct observation of these cross-link density profiles can now be used to optimize the manufacturing and development process of these polymers.

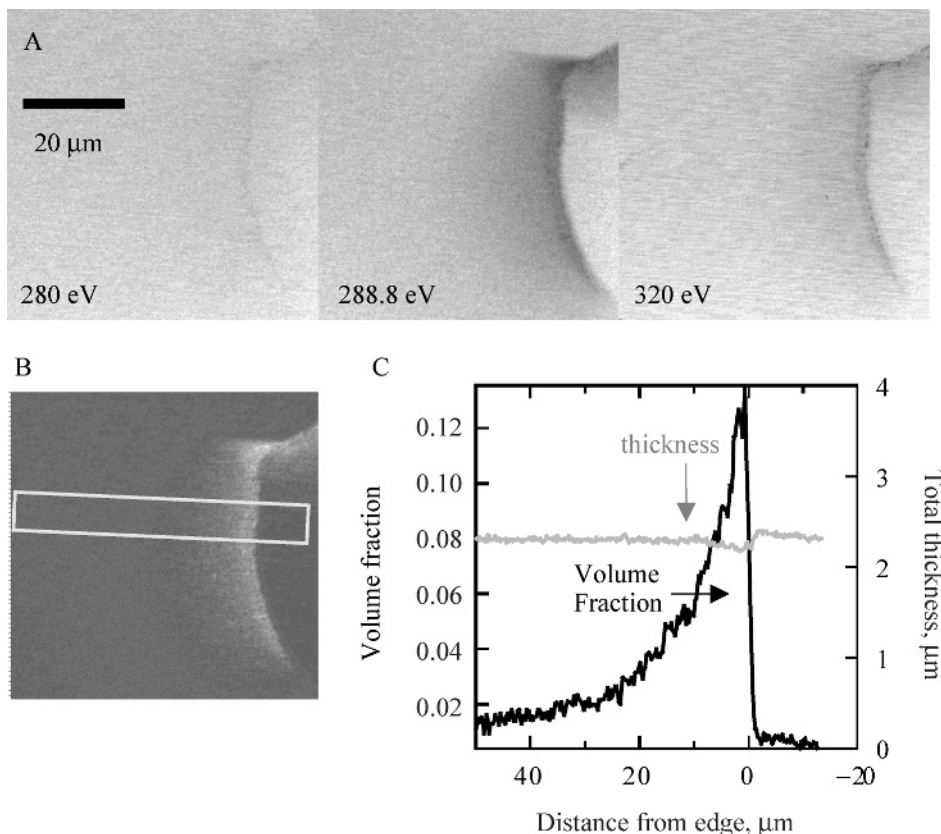


Fig. 13. (A) Transmission nexafs images of a saline-swollen microtomed thin section of an SAP bead that was surface cross-linked with ethylene glycol diglycidyl ether. The images were recorded at 280, 288.8, and 320 eV, as indicated; (B) Quantitative map of the polymer volume fraction derived via SVD from the three images; (C) Profiles of the polymer volume fraction and the total sample thickness (water and polymer) across the edge of the SAP bead, derived from the SVD analysis in the indicated region. (Data acquired with the ALS BL7.0 STXM.) Courtesy of G. Mitchell (102).

Thin-Film Blends and Bilayers. Generally, the properties of polymer blends when they are processed into thin films are not as well understood as those of bulk polymer blends. The constraints imposed by the two close-by interfaces alter the equilibrium morphology as well as the polymer mobility and phase separation dynamics. Numerous studies (115–124) have elucidated some aspects of these effects. Interfacial energies are important since they determine thermodynamic equilibrium structures. The viscosity and diffusion near surfaces and attractive interfaces can be substantially modified (125), which will influence the dynamics, and possibly cause the formation of kinetically trapped morphologies. A number of morphologies that evolve during the phase separation process in polymer thin films have been previously observed (117–123,126). NEXAFS microscopy provides an additional tool to study such systems (100,127–129). The two primary beneficial aspects of nexafs microscopy for these applications

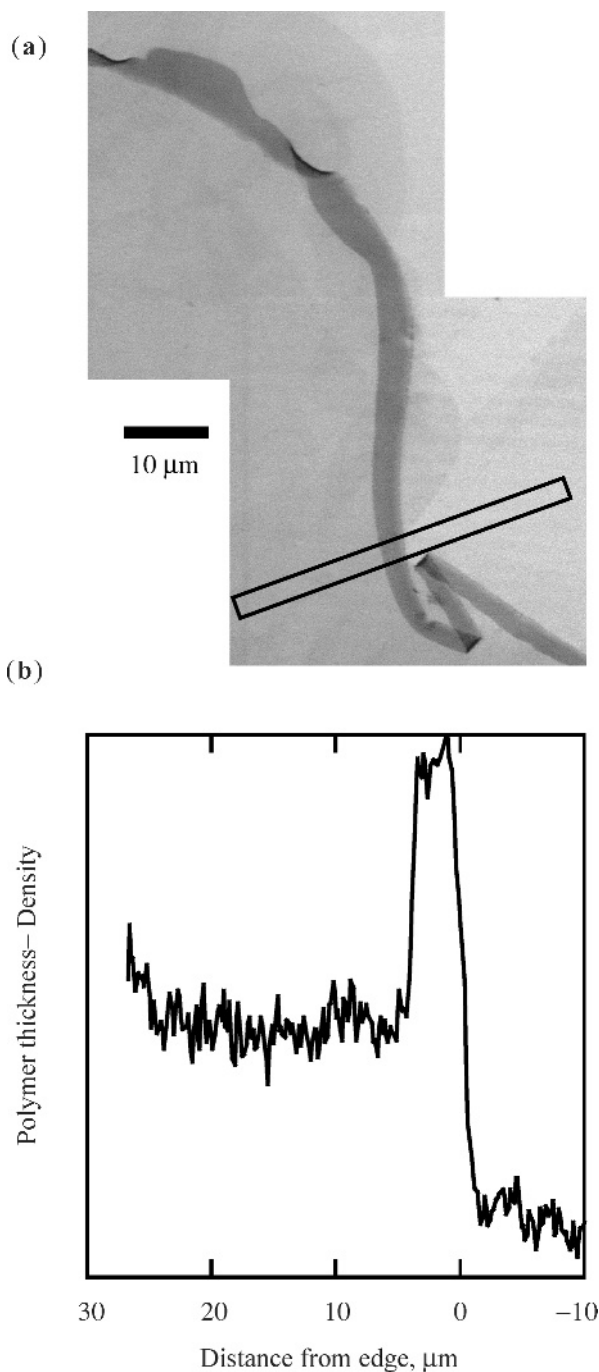


Fig. 14. (a) Transmission nexafs image acquired at 288.8 eV of the microstructured shell of an SAP bead surface cross-linked with glycerol. A 5- μm wide band of uniform cross-link density that is twisting back and forth can be observed; (b) Profile of polymer density-thickness across the edge of the cross-linked shell in the region indicated on the image. (Data acquired with the ALS BL7.0 STXM.) Courtesy of G. Mitchell (102).

are (1) quantitative mapping that can be translated into thickness profiles, and (2) compositional analysis of surfaces.

The first nexafs microscopy characterization of phase-separated thin-film blends was performed by two groups (127,130,131). The first group observed good chemical contrast between PS and PBrS phases in phase-separating PS/PBrS blends, and made a strong suggestion that the PS encapsulates the PBrS after sufficient annealing (130,131). The second group used a peem to observe chemical surface contrast in annealed, phase-separated PS/PVME (PVME – poly(vinyl methyl ether)) and PS/SAN thin-film blends (127). Additional peem observations concluded that the formation of protrusions in the PS/PVME film are not accompanied by a total dewetting of the polymers from the Si substrate.

PS/PBrS Thin-Film Blends and Bilayers. Initial nexafs microscopy investigations explicitly exploring the time evolution and composition of domains in thin films focused on morphology formation during spin-casting and annealing of PS and PBrS blends. Emphasis was placed on elucidating the late stage morphology after annealing above the glass-transition temperature of both components for samples with different PS/PBrS composition ratios (128). Quantitative nexafs maps derived via SVD composition procedures were compared to atomic force afm topographs and complemented with secondary ion mass spectroscopy (sims) depth profiling. NEXAFS microscopy of annealed samples showed directly that the morphology changes from “PS droplets” to “PS surface holes” in a continuous PBrS matrix layer as PBrS becomes the majority phase. SIMS data indicated a continuous PS layer at the substrate and the surface interface. The observed continuous PS layer for all blend compositions explained the observed “droplet” and “hole” structures formed for different PBrS fractions. Although the interfacial energy could have been minimized in the bulk if the PS formed spheroidal domains in the PBrS-rich phases, the continuity constraint of the PS at the interfaces requires the formation of the hole morphologies at high PBrS volume fraction. From the morphologies formed, constraints for the values of the various interfacial energies could be deduced.

PEEM from surfaces can provide a much more direct and unambiguous means of showing PS encapsulation of PBrS than the combination of area averaged sims, surface afm (atomic force microscopy), and bulk stxm measurements. Direct evidence for encapsulation was observed during the dewetting of a PS/PBrS bilayer consisting of a 50-nm thick PBrS film on top of a 30-nm thick PS film (98). These investigations were the first combination of surface (peem) and quantitative bulk (stxm) characterization of a polymeric system to assess and reconstruct the 3-D morphology. As the PBrS is dewetting the PS sublayer, holes form randomly in the PBrS top layer and subsequently grow to form Veronoi tessellation patterns. These patterns consist of an interconnected network of spines that eventually break up to form droplets. The mass thickness maps of the constituent polymers PBrS and PS, as well as the total thickness maps of the bilayer annealed for 1 week, reveal that these “spines” consist of sharply delineated PBrS, which are at least partially wetted, if not encapsulated, by PS walls. PEEM studies of the same type of sample provided surface nexafs spectra from the top 10 nm of the surface from sample areas that included the spines and droplets. Since the PBrS C 1s to π^* characteristic spectral feature at 286 eV was not observed from any sample areas (see Fig. 15), one can conclude

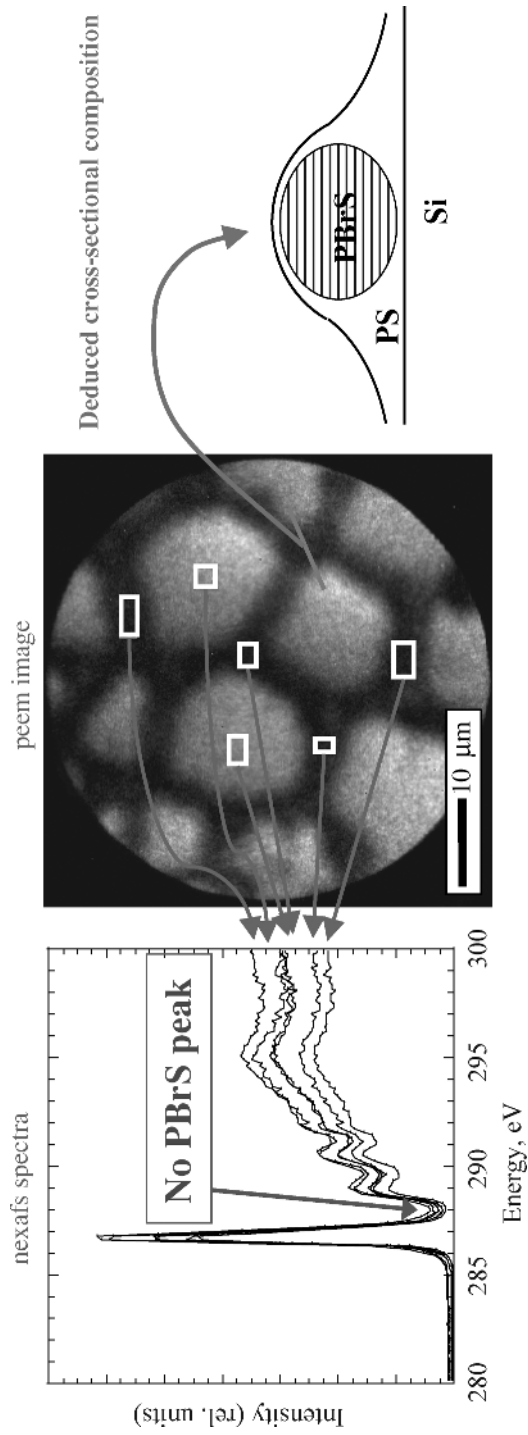


Fig. 15. PEEM images and spectra from a dewetting PBrS/PS bilayer after one week of annealing at 180°C. Spectra from the sample locations are indicated. The combination of stxm and peem characterization allowed the deduction of the 3-D morphology with certainty. (Data acquired with the ALS PEEM-I.) Adapted from Ref. 98.

that the PBrS spines are completely encapsulated. The time taken for evolution (from 0 to 11 days of annealing) of the dewetting process furthermore revealed the encapsulation pathway and also allowed one to know whether polymer diffusion or viscous flow was the dominant encapsulation process: A sufficient number of holes have to form in the PBrS layer through which the PS can penetrate the PBrS film and subsequently flow along the PBrS/air and PBrS/PS interfaces.

Related studies showed that the apparent contact angle at the polymer/air interface decreases exponentially with the PS film thickness, with a constant that depend upon the radius of gyration R_g . The droplets consist of a PBrS core fully encapsulated by PS for substrates thicker than R_g while only partial encapsulation is seen with nexafs for substrates with a thickness less than R_g (132).

PS/PMMA Thin-Film Blends. Another excellent model system to investigate the dynamics and the morphologies formed during phase separation in thin films are PS/PMMA blends. A variety of interesting morphologies during both the early and late stages of the phase separation process in PS/PMMA blends have been observed and characterized by a combination of quantitative nexafs mapping and lateral force microscopy (100). Films (143 nm thick) of monodisperse, 50/50 (w/w) PS/PMMA blends spun cast out of toluene solution onto Si substrates were annealed in a vacuum, quenched to room temperature, and subsequently characterized. The composition of the mixed phases resulting from solvent spin casting were determined with quantitative nexafs microscopy. After very short annealing times at 180°, a sudden rearrangement into domains smaller than those originally formed was observed. Subsequently, unique, jagged patterns formed during the early stages of coarsening. These patterns resemble turbulent hydrodynamic mass flow, although they might have an entirely different physical origin. A 50-nm thick 50/50 (w/w) blend of PS/PMMA 27K/27K film on Si annealed at 165°C, and a 50-nm thick 50/50 (w/w) blend of 90k PS and 27K PMMA on Au showed the same kind of ragged morphology, while a 50-nm layer of the 90K/27K blends on Si did not (129). Complicated polymer/polymer interface morphologies persisted in several cases even after extended annealing. These were explained by the dependence of polymer viscosity on film thickness and the constraints imposed by the substrate (100). An example is shown in Figure 16 that shows trapped PMMA spikes inside the PS droplets.

As shown by numerous studies, the initial morphologies from spin casting as well as the final morphologies after annealing depend on the substrate utilized. The dependence of PS/PMMA morphologies and phase separation dynamics on Si, Au, and Co surfaces has been investigated (129). Clearly phase-separated domains are observed on Si and Au surfaces. The morphologies on Co surfaces, however, are more complex. They have a layered appearance and do not evolve much during annealing, presumably because of a lack of either a PS or PMMA wetting layer on the substrate.

PS/PMMA blends spun to different film thickness onto SiO_x surfaces showed that time-temperature superposition is observed. Indirectly, this indicates that the influence of the film thickness on the dynamics is relatively small (133).

While most work on annealed PS/PMMA blends support the formation of phase-separated domains right to the surface, a recent study (134) reports that an encapsulating layer of PS-skin forms over the PMMA domains. The stxm and peem might be a good complementary tool to afm, xps, and nexafs spectroscopy to

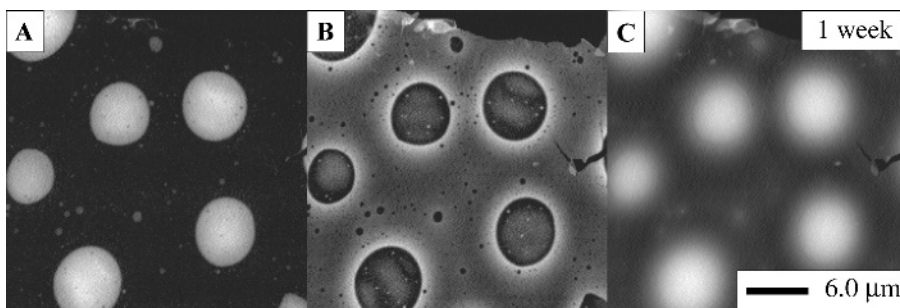


Fig. 16. Quantitative compositional maps derived via an SVD procedure of a nominally 143-nm thick 50/50 (w/w) PS/PMMA blend annealed for 1 week: (A) PS mass thickness, (B) PMMA mass thickness, and (C) total thickness maps, ie, PS plus PMMA maps. All images are individually scaled for good contrast, with Black = 0 and White = maximum mass-thickness. The maximum total thickness of the films increases from the initial 143 nm to 460 nm in Figure 16C due to surface roughening. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM at the National Synchrotron Light Source.) Adapted from Ref. 100.

further elucidate PS/PMMA thin-film blends, their phase separation dynamics, and their surface composition (96).

PS/PMMA with PS-*b*-PMMA Copolymer Thin-Film-Blends and Bilayers. Polymer blends when processed into thin films are typically rough when produced by spin casting on a substrate and roughen even further when annealed. The surface modulation amplitudes of certain spatial frequencies might actually get much larger than the original film thickness. This is due to the phase separation between immiscible polymers, and the effect can be readily observed from Figure 16. This roughening would be a serious problem in many applications and limits the use of polymer blends as materials in ultrathin films. A common strategy to improve miscibility of polymer blends is to add copolymer compatibilizers. The compatibilizer will reduce the interfacial tension if located at the polymer/polymer interface. The tendency of the compatibilizer to form micelles in one of the phases often limits the amount of copolymer that locates at the interface. For relatively strongly segregating systems, formation of a microemulsion has never been achieved. Relying on entropy as a driving mechanism, rather than interfacial energies, it was shown that PS/PMMA thin films can be compatibilized with a PS-*b*-PMMA diblock copolymer (135). Samples of a bottom PMMA layer and a top layer of a blend of PS and 30% of a PS-*b*-PMMA diblock copolymer were annealed. When the top PS/PS-*b*-PMMA layer thickness was comparable to or less than the size of bulk micelles, the film evolves toward a stable 2-D microemulsion. The two-dimensionality of the film was established by showing with nexafs microscopy that the microemulsion phases extended throughout the thin film. It was observed (135) that the loss in configurational entropy as a result of confinement can change the micellar transition for copolymers. Mixing in thin films in the presence of block copolymers can thus be achieved independently of the specific polymer chemistry by making the films thin enough.

The dynamics of the formation of the microemulsion has been assessed (136). The initial growth of the domain size had a growth exponent of 1/3, using the inverse of the wave-vector with maximum amplitude q_{\max} derived from

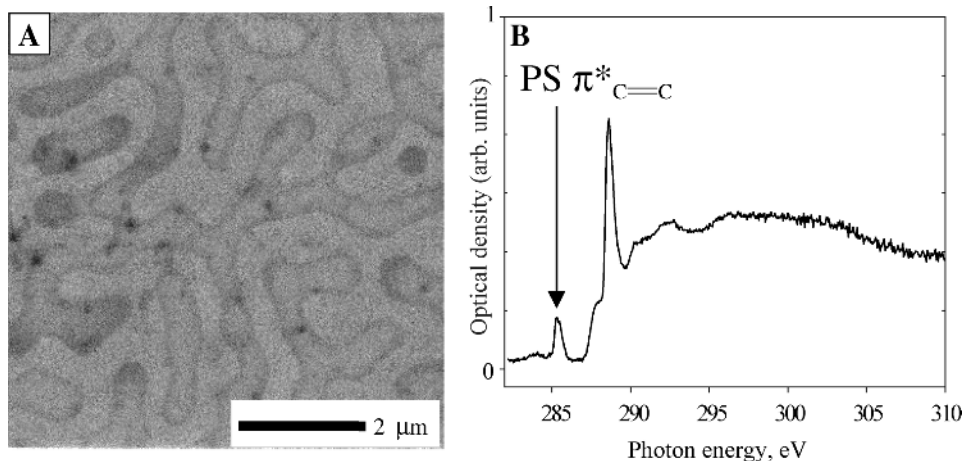


Fig. 17. (A) PS $\pi^*_{C=C}$ image acquired at 285.3 eV from a 168-h annealed PS/PMMA/PS-*b*-PMMA microemulsion thin film washed with cyclohexane to remove all PS. At this photon energy, only the aromatic content of styrene will appear dark. Enhanced absorption, although at low contrast, can be detected at the domain interfaces that directly shows that the highest PS-*b*-PMMA block copolymer concentration is located at the PS/PMMA domain interface; (B) The nexafs spectrum acquired from $10 \mu\text{m}^2$ area of this sample. The PS and PMMA intensities reveal that cyclohexane washing is removing essentially all PS. The remnant 285 eV signal is consistent with expected signal from the PS-*b*-PMMA block copolymer. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.)

Fourier transform analysis as the measure of the domain size. At long annealing times, domain growth slowed dramatically as the block copolymer was forced to the interface, lowering the interfacial energy and thus reducing the driving force for further phase separation. NEXAFS microscopy of the microemulsion thin films that had the PS preferentially washed with cyclohexane revealed directly that the PS-*b*-PMMA diblock copolymer is located at the PS/PMMA interface (see Fig. 17).

Polystyrene/Poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate) Thin-Film Blends. The morphology of polystyrene/poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate) (PS/PnBMA) thin-film blends, and whether encapsulation occurs in this system has been assessed by using SFM, txm, and peem (137). The same droplet-to-hole transition found in the earlier studies by Slep and co-workers (128) with PS/PBrS blends as a function of composition was observed in the PS/PnBMA blends. This strongly suggests that one of the two polymers preferentially segregates to both the substrate and air interface. Investigations of the PS/PnBMA thin films with peem were indeed interpreted to have preferential PnBMA segregation to the surface. Based on the surface composition and morphology observation, one would expect PnBMA to also segregate to the substrate, although no direct measurement regarding preferential segregation to the substrate has been made (137).

Block Copolymer Thin Films. NEXAFS microscopy is also a tool that can provide complementary and unique information for block copolymer organization, which traditionally has been investigated using a wide variety of analytical techniques, including electron microscopy, x-ray scattering, and optical

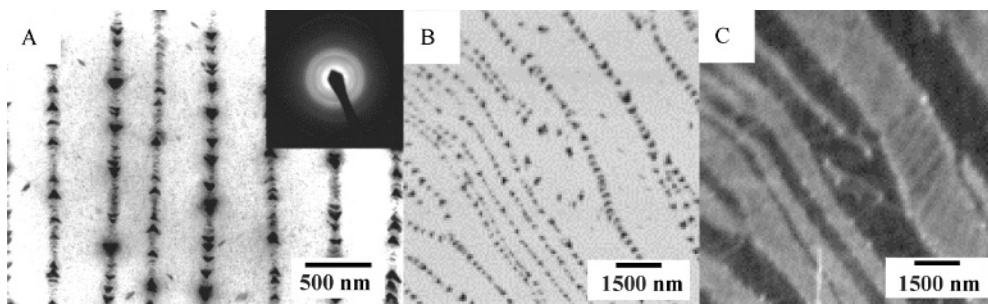


Fig. 18. (A) tem image of PS-*b*-PHIC diblock copolymer and small area electron diffraction pattern averaged over several lamellae; (B) nexafs image at 285.2 eV (PS dark); and (C) nexafs image at 288.5 eV, where the PHIC layers have altering contrast because of differences in orientation. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.) Courtesy of C. Zimba, NIST, and E. Thomas, MIT.

microscopy. These traditional techniques yield considerable information about the morphology and organization of block copolymer materials, but occasionally the information provided is incomplete and provides only “circumstantial” evidence for a conclusion. For example, the novel molecular organization of a high molecular weight rod-coil block copolymer has been investigated (138). This block copolymer has a PS coil block of 9K molecular weight and a main-chain poly(hexyl isocyanate) (PHIC) rod block of 245K molecular weight. Homopolymer PHIC is known to behave as a lyotropic nematic liquid crystal in a wide range of solvents with a persistence length of 50–60 nm. Rotational motion along the backbone of the PHIC is limited by short-range interactions, leading to inherent chain stiffness. The PS behaves as a typical coil polymer with a low persistence length. Combined as a block copolymer, there is competition between the microphase separation of the PS and PHIC blocks into periodic structures and the tendency of the PHIC block to form anisotropically ordered structures, giving rise to new morphologies. A typical tem image from solution cast thin films is shown in Figure 18A and clearly shows a microphase-separated morphology with long-range order over tens of microns. The PS domains, stained with RuO₄, appear as dark regions shaped somewhat like arrowheads while the PHIC regions appear as largely featureless light regions between rows of PS domains. An interesting feature in this image is the orientation of the PS arrowheads which changes direction between adjacent PS-rich layers. On account of radiation damage, the small area electron diffraction (SAED) pattern had to be obtained from a sample area of 10–20 lamellae. The SAED pattern (inset of Fig. 18A) shows a superposition of two distinct single crystal-like PHIC patterns rotated relative to each other by approximately 90°, indicating that the PHIC chain axis alternates between +45° and –45° with respect to the geometric normal of the lamellae layers. While the evidence for the alternating 45° PHIC oriented layers is quite strong, it is only indirect, and the orientation could not be observed directly with tem.

To directly investigate the orientation of the PHIC lamella, thin film samples cast from 0.05% solutions in toluene onto uncoated tem grids were examined with nexafs microscopy (139). Using an x-ray energy corresponding to the phenyl

carbon resonance of the PS (285.2 eV), nexafs imaging clearly shows a similar arrowhead morphology as the tem image, albeit at lower spatial resolution (see Fig. 18B). At the carbonyl resonance of the PHIC at 288.5 eV, nexafs images reveal the structure of the PHIC layers in ways not available with tem (Fig. 18C). The PHIC domains appear as layers of alternating intensity separated by the PS domains that appear as white pearls. The intensity variation of the PHIC layers arises from differences in dichroic absorbance of the polarized synchrotron radiation because of orientation of the carbonyl moiety, and thus also the backbone, of the PHIC. In contrast to the average SAED pattern, the nexafs image is able to give detailed information about the orientation of individual PHIC domains. NEXAFS microscopy furthermore reveals previously unsuspected microstructure within the PHIC domains that are clearly not entirely homogeneous, but show striations in a direction across the lamellae.

Multicomponent, Multiphasic Polymers

Many polymeric materials of academic and industrial interest are multicomponent polymers that have multiple phases in the bulk. Control over the composition and size distribution of the domains and their interface properties is often very important in determining the materials properties. A variety of blends and multiphasic polymers have already been investigated with nexafs microscopy. These include studies of

- (1) the morphology of PET/PC (140), low density PE/PET/Kraton (141), and PC/(acrylonitrile butadiene styrene) blends (141,142), and macrophase-separated random block copolymer/homopolymer blends (143);
- (2) the morphology and composition of mechanically alloyed PET/poly(oxybenzoate-*r*-oxynaphthoate) [Vectra (Celanese Corp.)] blends (144), mechanically alloyed and rubber-toughened PMMA (145), mechanically alloyed poly(ethylene-*alt*-propylene) (PEP)/PMMA and PI/PMMA blends (146–150), and the assessment of recycling of tires by mechanical alloying (151);
- (3) the characterization of phase separation during processing, such as the formation of precipitates in polyurethanes (13,19,152) and multiphase liquid crystalline polyesters (141);
- (4) single- and multistep synthesized latexes and structured microspheres (153–155); and
- (5) various multilayers (156,157).

Included here as examples is a discussion of the characterization of PET/Vectra blends, blends produced by cryogenic mechanical alloying, various polyurethane polymers, multilayers and structured spheres, as well as rubber composites. The discussion of the PET/Vectra blends is particularly instructive, as this study combined chemical and orientational analysis.

NEXAFS Microscopy of Mechanically Alloyed Blends. Mechanical alloying of polymers has the potential of becoming an alternative, novel means of producing and recycling polymer blends (144,146–148,150,151,158). The efficacy

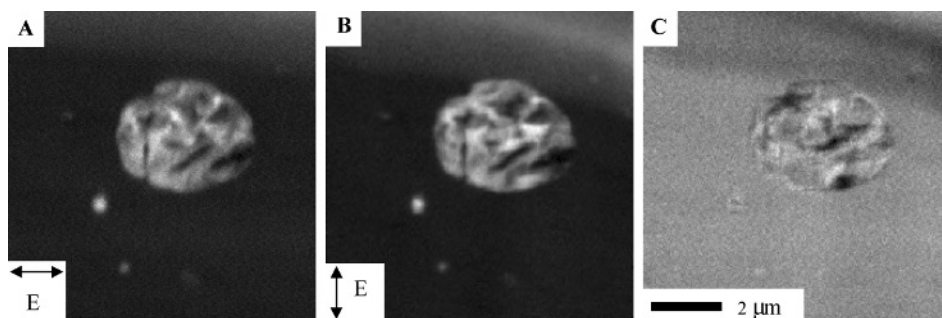


Fig. 19. NEXAFS images acquired at 286.7 eV of a 99/1 (w/w) PET/Vectra blend subjected to post-milling melt pressing. Images (A) and (B) have been converted to optical density. In images (A) and (B), the electric polarization vector (\vec{E}) is rotated by 90° with respect to each other, as indicated. Changes in the relative intensity in these images are primarily due to anisotropic molecular orientation. The ratio of these images (C) reveals the linear dichroism of the specimen. Small Vectra domains appear gray and possess no discernible orientation, whereas the large dispersion exhibits a measurable degree of molecular orientation (black and white areas) because of the nematic nature of this liquid crystalline polymer. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.) Reproduced from Ref. 144.

of such a new method is best assessed by direct visualization of the morphology of the generated materials.

Since incorporation of liquid crystalline polymers (LCPs) into commodity thermoplastic polymers remains an ongoing challenge in the design of new high performance, low cost polymeric blends, the feasibility of blending of PET and Vectra A950 [73/27 (mol/mol) oxybenzoate/2,6-oxynaphthoate] with mechanical alloying was investigated (144). The morphology and composition of dispersions in PET and Vectra blends are difficult to assess with conventional microscopies, because of a lack of staining agents for electron microscopy, and spatial resolution limitations of optical and ir microscopy. Despite the presence of similar functional groups in each polymer, such as aromatic and carbonyl groups, nexafs microscopy can readily delineate the morphology. After mechanical alloying, the resulting powders were melt-pressed at 285°C (above the melting points of PET and Vectra) for 5 min and cryomicrotomed at -100°C to obtain sufficiently thin sections for nexafs microscopy. Melt-pressed films of PET/Vectra alloyed blends varying in composition from 75/25 to 99/1 by weight percent were investigated. The frequency and size of the Vectra dispersions increased with increasing Vectra concentration (144). The distribution in size ranged from 100 nm to about $20\ \mu\text{m}$ in diameter. The presence of these small, 100-nm Vectra domains demonstrated that mechanical alloying is capable of pulverizing Vectra. The PET/Vectra blends retained much of the initial degree of mixing during post-processing in the molten state. Point nexafs spectroscopy showed that the Vectra domains contained little, if any PET. Molecular orientation in the Vectra domains was characterized with linear dichroism microscopy. Figure 19 shows x-ray micrographs of the 99/1 (w/w) PET/Vectra blends acquired at 286.7 eV. The image contrast between Vectra dispersions and the PET matrix is based on differences in the nexafs spectra of the two polymers (see Fig. 2). Some of the contrast within the larger Vectra domains arises from molecular orientation and thickness variations. The dichroic ratio

image (Fig. 19C), derived from the two orientations displayed in Figures 19A and 19B, cancels thickness and compositional effects: anisotropic orientation inside Vectra domains was only observable in domains larger than about 2 μm .

Other blends produced by mechanical alloying and investigated with nexafs microscopy included blends of poly(ethylene-*alt*-propylene) (PEP), polyisoprene (PI), and PMMA (146–150). PI can be readily differentiated from PMMA with electron microscopy by heavy metal staining of the PI, but PEP and PMMA cannot be differentiated. In the blends investigated, intimate mixing at the nanoscale was accomplished. Since mechanical alloying is a highly nonequilibrium, high energy method with effects that resemble those of high energy radiation (159), it seems likely that bonds are breaking, and radicals, and maybe even new bonds in new chemical configuration, are forming during alloying. It is the detection of these chemical modifications where nexafs microscopy might be particularly useful. However, the extent of any chemical changes occurring has been below the sensitivity limit of nexafs microscopy.

In the PEP/PMMA blends an anomalous phase inversion was observed (148). Phase inversion in polymer blends is typically encountered under conditions of melt flow. However, the unexpected phase inversion occurred upon quiescent annealing in an asymmetric blend of PMMA and PEP prepared by cryogenic mechanical alloying, where there is very little flow. For short milling times, consolidation of the cryomilled powders at temperatures above the glass-transition temperature of PMMA exhibited dispersions of PEP in 75/25 (w/w) PMMA/PEP blends. However, as the milling time increased to 10 h, the consistency of the blends changed from rigid to pliable. nexafs microscopy revealed that for the long milling times the PMMA becomes the dispersed phase upon consolidation, and it directly confirmed that phase inversion occurs during consolidation. The transition from PEP dispersions to a continuous PEP phase as observed with nexafs microscopy is shown in Figure 20.

The strategy of producing highly dispersed blends of thermoplastics and tires was also investigated in an effort to provide a potentially new route by which to recycle discarded tires (151). NEXAFS microscopy showed that cryogenic mechanically alloyed tires can be dispersed in PET and PMMA matrices with submicron domains. The tire and thermoplastic did not appear to interact chemically. For the milling conditions employed, there was also no significant chemical interaction between constituent polymers in PI/tire/PMMA ternary blends. Based on the ability to produce good dispersion of the tire material, the results indicated that cryogenic mechanical alloying constitutes a viable alternative for recycling elastomeric materials.

Engineered Polyurethane and Polyurea Polymers. Polyurethane polymers constitute a versatile class of engineered polymers of great economic value. Despite the ubiquitous utilization and considerable past research, several fundamental aspects of these polymers are not well understood because of the complex chemical reactions and physical processes during production. Over the past few years it has become clear that x-ray spectromicroscopy can uniquely address some complex issues in polyurethane research (19,66,160–163).

The urea distribution in polyurethanes is presumed to have a major influence on the mechanical properties of polyurethane foam (modulus, compression set, load bearing, etc), yet relatively little is known beyond the average size and

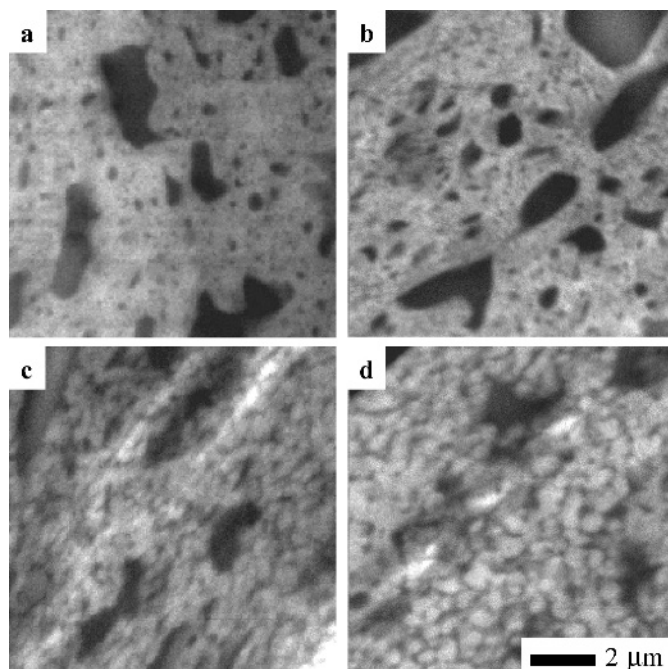


Fig. 20. NEXAFS images at 288 eV (PEP appears dark) of a 25/75 PEP/PMMA blend cryomilled for 10 h and annealed at 150°C for different times (in min): (a) 1, (b) 2, (c) 5, and (d) 30. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.) Adapted from Ref. 148.

nanoscale distribution of the so-called hard-segment urea as measured with x-ray and neutron scattering techniques. The mesoscale hard-segment urea distribution in polyurethane materials might be connected to physical properties and is strongly influenced by the relative amounts of urea and carbamate (urethane) present, which in turn is closely linked to formulation and processing. The urea/urethane ratio and its distribution through the material is thus an important quantity. In certain formulations, macrophase separation occurs. Using polymer reference standards with known chemical composition, the spectral signal corresponding to the urea and urethane components (typically only ~20% in systems of interest) can be isolated and quantified (18,19). Based on similar quantitation, the composition and sharpness of precipitates in two high water TDI polyurethane plaques made with different polyols have been assessed at the submicron level (164). The precipitates in both materials were highly enriched in urea. One of the materials had a fuzzy interface to the polyether-rich matrix, while the second material had a more sharply delineated interface. The fuzzy precipitates were more isolated, while the sharper “precipitates” appear to have formed a network of urea-rich domains. These observations will lead to an improved understanding of structure–property–processing relationships in polyurethane polymers.

Another key parameter influencing physical properties in polyurethane foams is the distribution of additive or modifier phases. These modifier phases are typically smaller than a few microns in size. Two compositionally

different, common modifier particles, polyurethane-rich, polyisocyanate polyaddition (PIPA) based and styrene-acrylonitrile (SAN) based particles, were dispersed in a TDI-based, polyether-rich polyurethane matrix. Both particles have the same contrast in tem and cannot be distinguished. In contrast, nexafs micrographs of this material show clear differences: at 285 eV, both types of particles are dark dispersions, while at 287 eV, only the SAN particles are highly absorbing relative to the matrix. The uniformity of their composition and the size distribution could thus be determined (165). Discrimination between the two types of particles has also been achieved at the nitrogen absorption edge and, to a lesser extent, the oxygen edge. The chemical composition of the largest SAN particles was found to be independent of particle size. It was furthermore determined that the SAN particles contain about 12 wt% polyether.

Structured walls of complex capsules based on polyurea chemistry have been investigated (166). Polymer capsules are frequently used to encapsulate other chemicals for a variety of purposes, including controlled release of drugs, nutrients, or pesticides. In these applications, the structure and composition of the capsule wall is of paramount importance. The capsules investigated were produced by a polymerization reaction between amine- and isocyanate-based chemicals at the interface of organic and aqueous phases. In addition to the amine-isocyanate reaction that produces an asymmetric aromatic urea, a competing reaction between the isocyanate and water produces a symmetric diaromatic urea. These competing reactions can lead to the formation of compositional gradients in the submicrometer thick capsule wall. Figure 21 shows reference spectra of model urea compounds, compositional maps, and line profiles of two capsule walls produced by different protocols. The asymmetry of the urea and diurea functionalities can be clearly observed. Comparison of these compositional profiles with diffusion and reaction kinetics will allow the detailed modeling of the capsule wall formation.

Multilayers and Structured Spheres. Multilayer structures are used extensively in photographic applications, such as optical and x-ray photography and xerographic processes, as well as in packaging materials. Several such materials were so far investigated with nexafs microscopy.

The degree of spatial uniformity of a nitrogen containing charge transfer compound present in a protective polycarbonate (PC) capping layer above the image sensing layer of a test photoconductive thin-film structure from Xerox Research Center of Canada has been determined with nexafs microscopy. A simple, 5-min measurement consisting of an image at 407 eV of the film and a nitrogen 1s linescan energy sequence showed that the (~10%) nitrogen content of the PC layer was distributed throughout the PC layer with a relatively uniform ($\pm 20\%$) distribution, but with some gradient in density toward the exterior of the thin film. By comparison, it was barely possible to detect any nitrogen, and thus impossible to analyze the spatial distribution of the charge transfer component, by either energy loss or x-ray fluorescence spectroscopy in a state-of-the-art JEOL 2010 analytical tem (168).

Several multilayer polymer films used in photography have been characterized with nexafs microscopy. In one structure, consisting of four layers of 0.7–3 μm in thickness coated on a base layer, nexafs images clearly showed each of the layers. The nexafs spectra from closely spaced points showed no significant

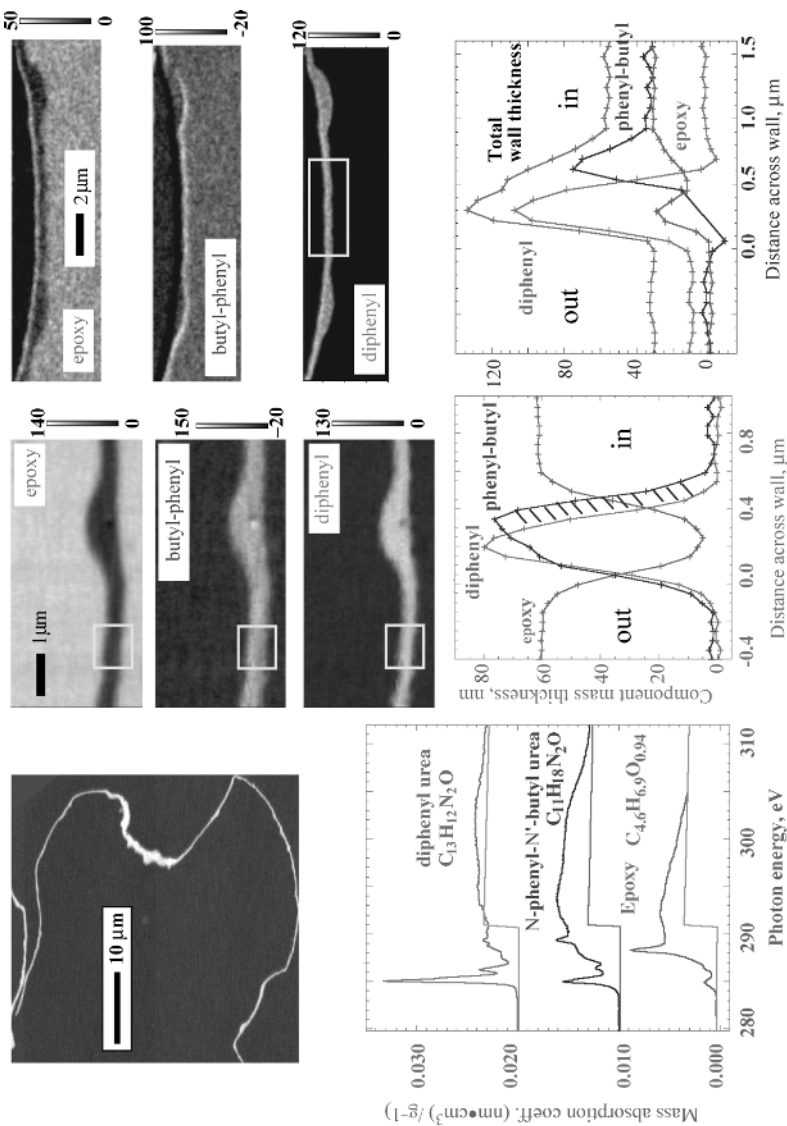


Fig. 21. NEXAFS characterization of polyurea capsules. The upper left shows a low resolution image acquired at 285 eV of a microtomed section containing a nearly complete capsule embedded in epoxy. The lower right shows the C 1s spectra of the epoxy, butylphenylurea (asymmetric model) and diphenylurea (symmetric model). The center panel displays (top) component maps derived from image sequences and (bottom) average line profiles of each component across the capsule wall in the indicated region. The right panel shows the corresponding signals for a capsule wall prepared with a longer emulsification step. This process leads to a thick outer skin of symmetric urea. (Data acquired with the ALS BL 7.0 STXM.) Courtesy of A. P. Hitchcock. Adapted from Ref. 166 and 167.

interpenetration between two layers of interest, poly(styrene acrylonitrile) and a porous carbon black (156). The nexafs microscopy of another laminate consisting of nine layers on a base layer revealed a microstructure of undetermined origin dispersed throughout the fourth layer (169,170). The domains of these microstructures are elongated in the direction parallel to the layer boundary. This microstructure is not observed in the tem, and is likely due to a compositional microphase separation or a preferential orientation of the aromatic groups present in some of the compounds.

A commercially available multilayer used as food container provided a suitable test structure for nexafs microscopy, particularly since this multilayer had been previously characterized with ir microscopy. Because of the spatial resolution limitations of ir microscopy, a special procedure had to be used to analyze the thinnest of the nine layers, about 4 μm thick. The objective of an x-ray microscopy study of this multilayer was to further elucidate the chemical composition of the thinnest layers within the sample, and to provide a basic comparison between ir and nexafs microscopy (157). NEXAFS microscopy could acquire spectra from all layers without interference from adjacent layers. It established that several of the thin layers had virtually the same composition, a result not obtained from the ir measurements. Unfortunately, the present lack of a comprehensive and accurate nexafs spectroscopy database of polymers prevented the positive identification of some of the layers.

Structured polymer microspheres are attractive for a wide number of applications, including biomedical devices and controlled release reservoirs. Particular morphologies desired for different applications require control over internal porosity and core-shell structures. In order to optimize the internal or core-shell morphologies of such composite materials for particular applications, quantitative compositional analysis is often required. Structured latex spheres have first been analyzed using nexafs microscopy (153). More recently, core-shell microspheres have been investigated (155). In the latter experiment, a two-step precipitation polymerization resulted in 3.2 μm polydivinylbenzene-55 (DVB55) cores coated with $\sim 0.4\text{--}0.9$ μm wide shells composed of poly(DVB55-co-EDMA), a copolymer of DVB55 and ethylene glycol dimethylacrylate (EDMA). Singular value decomposition of images recorded at selected photon energies yielded quantitative maps of the DVB55 and EDMA components. The EDMA concentration in the shell as determined by nexafs microscopy was in good agreement with that predicted from the comonomer composition. It was shown that the precision of compositional quantitation is adequate to be useful in guiding the development of structured polymeric systems for particular applications.

Elastomeric Composites. Blends and composites based on styrene-butadiene rubber (SBR) and butadiene rubber (BR) are widely used throughout the rubber industry in order to get a balance of properties that cannot be achieved through the use of a single elastomer. Typically blends are formed using immiscible elastomers. The vast majority of these blends are heterogeneous on some length scale (171,172), and their mechanical properties are determined, in part, by their phase morphology. Many blends are further complicated by the addition of both fillers and curatives. In addition to determining the polymer phase structure itself, it is desirable to determine the distribution of fillers and curatives in each of the elastomer phases.

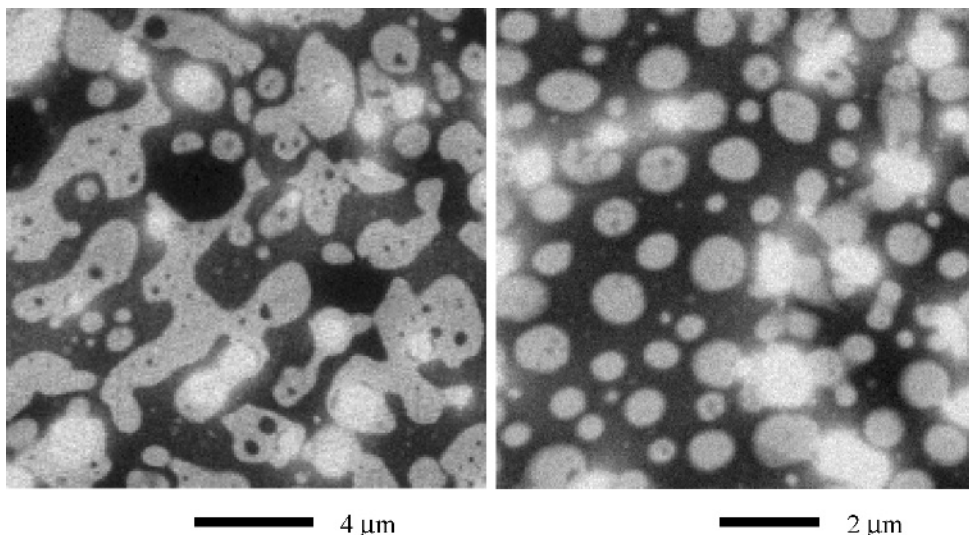


Fig. 22. NEXAFS micrographs of (A) d-PB/BIMS-1 [50/50 (w/w)] and (B) d-PB/BIMS-1/hSBR [45/45/10 (w/w/w)] blend supported by a Si_3N_4 membrane. The film was annealed in a vacuum oven for 18 h at 150°C . The dark areas correspond to the dPB phase. (Data acquired with the Stony Brook STXM.) Adapted from Ref. 174.

Most present automobile and truck tires are made from SBR and BR mixtures. These application requirements are severe and tires are constantly being improved. For example, poly(isobutylene-*co*-4-bromomethylstyrene) can be blended with highly unsaturated general-purpose rubbers to impart unique barrier or dynamic properties and enhanced oxidative stability. The final properties of such a blend are the result of a complex series of compounding, mixing, and curing stages. These stages profoundly impact the homogeneity of the mixed components, which include the polymers, the filler, and the curatives. The characterization of the phase morphology of blends of commercial rubbers like polybutadiene (PB), polyisoprene (PI), poly(butadiene-*co*-styrene), and brominated poly(isobutylene-*co*-4-methylstyrene) (BIMS) continues to represent a problem for conventional techniques, especially in the case of filled rubbers. The utility of nexafs microscopy for these applications have thus been explored and it was found that the phase morphology of various blends and the distribution of silica and carbon black fillers can be determined based on spectroscopic differences (173). However, the size of most filler particles is still below the present spatial resolution of nexafs microscopy. These kinds of applications will greatly benefit from future technical advances and improvements in spatial resolution.

Similar elastomer blends were also studied (174). The interfacial properties of PB and BIMS blends were determined with a variety of tools including neutron scattering and microscopy. The interfacial width decreased with increasing bromine functionality. The effects of a styrene butadiene random copolymer (SBR) on the miscibility were also investigated. The results show that SBR enhances the compatibilization of the PD/BIMS blends. NEXAFS micrographs of annealed PB/BIMS and PB/BIMS/SBR blends are shown in Figure 22.

The smaller BIMS domains in the PB/BIMS/SBR blends indicate that SBR indeed compatibilizes PB/BIMS blends, which is consistent with the observations and conclusions drawn from neutron reflectivity and afm measurements. The effects of carbon black and silica on the interfacial properties of PB/BIMS blends have been investigated with neutron reflectivity, ultra-small angle neutron scattering, spm, and nexafs microscopy (175).

Fibers

NEXAFS microscopy is also well suited to study the composition and structure of fibers. The qualitative orientation of functional groups in poly(*p*-phenylene terephthalamide) [Kevlar (DuPont)] fibers has been investigated and it was found that aromatic groups are, on average, pointing radially outwards (176). Subsequently, the relative quantitative orientational order was characterized in three different grades of Kevlar fibers and it was found that Kevlar 149 is 2.3 and 1.6 times as radially orientated as Kevlar 29 and Kevlar 49, respectively (177). This variation in orientation is relatively large, given that the crystallinity of all fiber grades is above 85%. More recent work on these fibers combined absorption spectroscopy at the carbon, nitrogen, and oxygen edges. This combination, in conjunction with theoretical calculations, can estimate the absolute degree of radial orientation in these fibers. Preliminary analysis indicated that Kevlar 149 is about 50% radially orientated (178,179).

NEXAFS microscopy has been used to study the effect of heat treatment on polyacrylonitrile fibers (180). In heat-treated fibers, a clear core-rim structure was observed in images at several photon energies. A decrease in the nitrile group concentration was measured in the core of these fibers when compared to the untreated fibers.

Conclusion and Future Outlook

NEXAFS microscopy has moved well beyond proof-of-principle experiments and has evolved into a tool that has been used in a variety of polymer science and technology projects. It is particularly noteworthy to remark that numerous industrial partners have participated over the last few years in nexafs microscopy experiments. Some of these industrial experiments performed, some with high industry internal impact, will remain unpublished, because of proprietary concerns.

While nexafs microscopy capabilities are continually improving, the field has not yet reached any fundamental performance limits. For example, the far-field wavelength-limited spatial resolution for zone-plate-based microscopes is about 3 nm for carbon K-edge energies, about an order of magnitude better than the resolution presently achieved. Similarly, several aberration corrected peem's with a projected spatial resolution of about 2 nm are planned or under construction (80,81), while the best peem's to date have a spatial resolution of 20 nm. Significant technical challenges have to be overcome for both peem and, in particular, zone-plate-based microscopes to achieve these substantial improvements in spatial resolution. Nonetheless, improvements and further technological developments can be confidently anticipated in the next few years.

Several new operating modalities such as tomography (181,182), cryomicroscopy (103,182), and dark-field microscopy (183) have already been implemented in transmission. Because of their limited routine availability, they have not been discussed in detail in this review. These operating modes should prove very beneficial for certain applications in polymer science and technology. In particular, the radiation dose will have to increase as the spatial resolution improves. This might evolve into a relatively serious issue for the study of the more sensitive polymeric materials. Procedural improvements, more efficient detector development, and use of cryomicroscopy might have to be used extensively to minimize damage.

Applications beyond those possible today might be enabled through the use of higher energy resolution that reveals subtle spectral features. Studies on PS and deuterated PS have shown, for example, that nexafs of polymers can be sensitive to vibrations (3). This might serve as an additional contrast mechanism in several applications. The establishment of a nexafs spectroscopy database similar to the spectroscopy database available in the ir community would greatly facilitate quantitation and analysis of materials for which prior knowledge is very limited. In parallel to the development of a spectroscopic database, improved theoretical modeling would expand the ability to interpret nexafs spectra and the chemical structural information that they provide.

Improved and more dedicated facilities are about to be commissioned at the ALS in Berkeley and BESSY-II in Berlin, and are under development at the Canadian Light Source in Saskatoon. While there remain many scientific questions that can be addressed with the present performance of existing nexafs microscopes, improved capabilities and the increasing availability of nexafs microscopy will result in significant growth of applications in polymer science and related fields.

Based on the progress made to date and the improvements that can still be achieved, we are confidently looking forward to continuing growth of the nexafs spectroscopy and microscopy community and to exciting applications that have not yet been conceived.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

In *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 8, pp. 477–516, by H. Ade, North Carolina State University.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. H. Ade and S. Urquhart, in T. K. Sham, eds., *Chemical Applications of Synchrotron Radiation*, World Scientific Publishing, Singapore, 2002.
2. S. G. Urquhart and H. Ade, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **106**, 8531 (2002).
3. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *Chem. Phys. Lett.* **322**, 412 (2000).
4. P. S. Bagus and co-workers, *Chem. Phys. Lett.* **248**, 129 (1996).
5. K. Weiss, P. S. Bagus, and C. Wöll, *J. Chem. Phys.* **111**, 6834 (1999).
6. A. Schöll, R. Fink, E. Umbach, G. Mitchell, S. G. Urquhart, and H. Ade, *Chem. Phys. Lett.* **370**, 834 (2003).
7. T. Ohta, and co-workers, *Phys. Scr.* **41**, 150 (1990).
8. K. Seki and co-workers, *Phys. Scr.* **41**, 172 (1990).

9. J. Stöhr, *NEXAFS Spectroscopy*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1992.
10. J. Kikuma and B. P. Tonner, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **82**, 53 (1996).
11. W. E. S. Unger and co-workers, *Fresenius' J. Anal. Chem.* **358**, 89 (1997).
12. H. Ade, in J. A. R. Samson and D. L. Ederer, eds., *Experimental Methods in the Physical Science*, Vol. **32**, Academic Press, New York, 1998, p. 225.
13. H. Ade, *Trends Polym. Sci.* **5**, 58 (1997).
14. H. Ade and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **84**, 53 (1997).
15. J.-H. Guo and co-workers, *J. Chem. Phys.* **108**, 5990 (1998).
16. T. Yokoyama, and co-workers, *Phys. Scr.* **41**, 189 (1990).
17. D. G. J. Sutherland and co-workers, *Appl. Phys. Lett.* **68**, 2046 (1996).
18. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **103**, 4603 (1999).
19. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **100**, 119 (1999).
20. T. Gross and co-workers, *Polymer* **35**, 5590 (1994).
21. M. Keil and co-workers, *Appl. Surf. Sci.* **125**, 273 (1998).
22. M. C. K. Tinone and co-workers, *J. Chem. Phys.* **100**, 5988 (1994).
23. M. C. K. Tinone and co-workers, *Appl. Surf. Sci.* **80**, 89 (1994).
24. X. Zhang and co-workers, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol., B* **13**, 1477 (1995).
25. T. Coffey, S. G. Urquhart, and H. Ade, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **122**, 65 (2002).
26. I. Koprinarov and co-workers, *Polymer* **38**, 2005 (1997).
27. A. Lippitz and co-workers, *Polymer* **37**, 3157 (1996).
28. Y. Liu and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **30**, 7768 (1997).
29. J. Stöhr and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **31**, 1942 (1998).
30. J. Stöhr and M. G. Samant, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **99**, 189 (1999).
31. M. G. Samant and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **29**, 8334 (1996).
32. K. Weiss and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **31**, 1930 (1998).
33. K. Weiss, C. Wöll, and D. Johannsmann, *J. Chem. Phys.* **113**, 11297 (2000).
34. I. Mori and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **78**, 371 (1996).
35. J. Genzer and co-workers, *Mater. Res. Soc. Symp. Proc.* **524**, 365 (1998).
36. J. Genzer and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 1882 (2000).
37. J. Genzer and co-workers, *Langmuir* **16**, 1993 (2000).
38. J. Genzer and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 6068 (2000).
39. M. L. Xiang and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 6106 (2000).
40. S. M. Kirtley and co-workers, *Fuel* **72**, 133 (1993).
41. O. C. Mullins and co-workers, *Appl. Spectrosc.* **47**, 1268 (1993).
42. S. Mitra-Kirtley and co-workers, *Energy Fuels* **7**, 1128 (1993).
43. S. Furukawa and T. K., *Solid State Commun.* **87**, 931 (1993).
44. K. Seki and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **78**, 403 (1996).
45. V. R. McCrary and co-workers, *J. Chem. Phys.* **88**, 5925 (1988).
46. J. Stöhr and co-workers, *Phys. Rev. B* **36**, 2976 (1987).
47. H. Ågren and co-workers, *Phys. Rev. B* **51**, 17848 (1995).
48. D. G. Castner and co-workers, *Langmuir* **9**, 537 (1993).
49. K. Nagayama and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **78**, 375 (1996).
50. C. Ziegler and co-workers, *Langmuir* **10**, 4399 (1994).
51. A. Lippitz and co-workers, *Polymer* **37**, 3151 (1996).
52. I. Ouchi and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **78**, 363 (1996).
53. T. Okajima and co-workers, *J. Phys. Chem. A* **102**, 7093 (1998).
54. X. Q. Yang and co-workers, *Synth. Met.* **28**, C329 (1989).
55. G. Appel and co-workers, *Chem. Phys. Lett.* **313**, 411 (1999).
56. A. P. Hitchcock, *Phys. Scr. T* **31**, 159 (1990).
57. P. Rez, in Ref. 62, p. 107.
58. J. Fink and co-workers, *Phys. Rev. B* **34**, 1101 (1986).

59. J. Fink and co-workers, *Synth. Met.* **18**, 163 (1987).
60. J. J. Ritsko and co-workers, *J. Chem. Phys.* **69**, 3931 (1978).
61. J. J. Ritsko and R. W. Bigelow, *J. Chem. Phys.* **69**, 4162 (1978).
62. M. M. Disko, C. C. Ahn, and B. Fultz, eds., *Transmission Electron Energy Loss Spectrometry in Materials Science Minerals*, Metals and Materials Society, Warrendale, Pa. 1992.
63. R. F. Egerton, *Electron Energy Loss Spectroscopy in the Electron Microscope*, Plenum Press, New York, 1986.
64. D. A. Muller and co-workers, *Nature* **366**, 725 (1993).
65. F. P. Ottensmeyer, *J. Ultrastruct. Res.* **88**, 121 (1984).
66. E. G. Rightor and co-workers, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **101**, 1950 (1997).
67. K. Siangchaew and M. Libera, *Macromolecules* **32**, 3051 (1999).
68. G. Kim and M. Libera, *Macromolecules* **31**, 2569 (1998).
69. Y. C. Wang and co-workers, *Microsc. Microanal.* **4**, 146 (1998).
70. P. E. Batson, in Ref. 62, p. 217.
71. D. A. Muller, P. E. Batson, and J. Silcox, *Phys. Rev. B* **58**, 11970 (1998).
72. H. W. Mook and P. Kruit, *Electron Microsc. Anal.* **153**, 81 (1997).
73. P. Kruit, *Electron Microsc. Anal.* **153**, 269 (1997).
74. P. E. Batson, H. W. Mook, and P. Kruit, *Inst. Phys. Conf. Ser.* **165**, 213 (2000).
75. H. Ade and co-workers, *Science* **258**, 972 (1992).
76. M. Feser and co-workers, *Proc., SPIE* **3449**, 19 (1998).
77. E. H. Anderson and co-workers, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol. B* **18**, 2970 (2000).
78. S. Anders and co-workers, *Rev. Sci. Instrum.* **70**, 3973 (1999).
79. G. De Stasio and co-workers, *Rev. Sci. Instrum.* **70**, 1740 (1999).
80. R. Fink and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **84**, 231 (1997).
81. R. Wichtendahl and co-workers, *Surf. Rev. Lett.* **5**, 1249 (1998).
82. E. Bauer and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **84**, 201 (1997).
83. J. Kirz, C. Jacobsen, and M. Howells, *Q. Rev. Biophys.* **28**, 33 (1995).
84. C. Jacobsen and co-workers, *Opt. Commun.* **86**, 351 (1991).
85. T. Warwick and co-workers, *Rev. Sci. Instrum.* **69**, 2964 (1998).
86. W. Meyer-Ilse, D. Attwood, and M. Koike, in B. Chance and co-workers, *Synchrotron Radiation in Biosciences*, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1994, p. 624.
87. B. Nieman, D. Rudolph, and G. Schmahl, *Appl. Opti.* **15**, 1883 (1976).
88. G. Schmahl and co-workers, *Q. Rev. Biophys.* **13**, 297 (1980).
89. B. Winn and co-workers, *Rev. Sci. Instrum.* **67**, A31 (1996).
90. B. Winn and co-workers, *Proc. SPIE* **2856**, 100 (1996).
91. C. Jacobsen and co-workers, *J. Microsc.—Oxford* **197**, 173 (2000).
92. J. Kirz and H. Rarback, *Rev. Sci. Instrum.* **56**, 1 (1985).
93. H. Rarback and co-workers, *J. X-Ray Sci. Technol.* **2**, 274 (1990).
94. T. Warwick, H. W. Padmore, and H. Ade *Proc. SPIE* **3449**, 12 (1998).
95. T. Schmidt and co-workers, *Surf. Rev. Lett.* **5**, 1287 (1998).
96. C. Morin and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **121**, 203 (2001).
97. B. P. Tonner and co-workers, *J. Electron Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **75**, 309 (1995).
98. H. Ade and co-workers, *Appl. Phys. Lett.* **73**, 3775 (1998).
99. X. Zhang and co-workers, *J. Struct. Biol.* **116**, 335 (1996).
100. H. Ade and co-workers, *Europhys. Lett.* **45**, 526 (1999).
101. C. J. Buckley, N. Khaleque, S. J. Bellamy, M. Robbins, and X. Zhang, in J. Thieme, G. Schmahl, E. Umbach, and D. Rudolph, eds., *X-ray Microscopy and Spectromicroscopy*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1997.
102. G. E. Mitchell and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **35**, 1336 (2002).
103. J. Maser and co-workers, *J. Microsc.* **197**, 68 (2000).
104. J. Genzer and K. Efimenko, *Science* **290**, 2130 (2000).

105. T. Hayakawa and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 8012 (2000).
106. A. Cossy-Favre and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **31**, 4957 (1998).
107. K. Dalnoki-Veress, B. G. Nickel, and J. R. Dutcher, *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **82**, 1486 (1999).
108. A. P. Hitchcock, T. Tyliczszak, I. Koprinarov, H. Stöver, W.-H. Li, Y.-M. Heng, H. W. Ade, J. Dutcher, and K. Dalnoki, *Advanced Light Source Compendium of User Abstracts*, 1999.
109. F. L. Buchholz, in F. L. Buchholz and A. T. Graham, eds., *Modern Superabsorbent Polymer Technology*, Wiley-VCH, New York, 1998, p. 251.
110. T. Shimomura and T. Namba, in F. L. Buchholz and N. A. Peppas, eds., *Superabsorbent Polymers: Science and Technology*, American Chemical Society, Washington, D.C., 1994 p. 112.
111. K. Hogari and F. Ashiya, in Ref. 110, p. 128.
112. T. L. Staples, D. E. Henton, and F. L. Buchholz, in Ref. 109, p. 55.
113. F. L. Buchholz, in Ref. 109, p. 190.
114. G. Mitchell and co-workers, *Inst. Phys. Conf. Ser.* **165**, 113 (2000).
115. S. Reich and Y. Cohen, *J. Polym. Sci. Part B: Polym. Phys.* **19**, 1255 (1981).
116. F. Bruder and R. Brenn, *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **69**, 624 (1992).
117. J. Genzer and E. J. Kramer, *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **78**, 4946 (1997).
118. S. Affrossman and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **29**, 5010 (1996).
119. E. Kumacheva and co-workers, *Langmuir* **13**, 2483 (1997).
120. G. Krausch and co-workers, *Appl. Phys. Lett.* **64**, 2655 (1994).
121. W. Straub and co-workers, *Europhys. Lett.* **29**, 353 (1995).
122. K. Tanaka, A. Takahara, and T. Kajiyama, *Macromolecules* **29**, 3232 (1996).
123. S. Walheim and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **30**, 4995 (1997).
124. A. Karim and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **31**, 857 (1998).
125. X. Zheng and co-workers, *Phys. Rev. Lett.* **74**, 407 (1995).
126. P. Müller-Buschbaum and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **31**, 5003 (1998).
127. A. Cossy-Favre and co-workers, *Acta Phys. Pol. A* **91**, 923 (1997).
128. D. Slep and co-workers, *Langmuir* **14**, 4860 (1998).
129. D. A. Winesett and co-workers, *Polym. Int.* **49**, 458 (2000).
130. A. P. Smith, H. Ade, D. Slep, S. Qu, M. Rafailovich, J. Sokolov, G. Halada, S. A. Schwarz, and Y. Strzhemechny, *Abstracts, MRS 1996 Fall Meeting*, 1996.
131. A. P. Smith, H. Ade, D. Slep, S. Qu, M. Rafailovich, and J. Sokolov, NSLS Activity Report for 1996, Brookhaven National Laboratory, 1997.
132. D. Slep and co-workers, *Langmuir* **16**, 2369 (2000).
133. D. A. Winesett and co-workers, *High Perform. Polym.* **12**, 599 (2000).
134. C. Ton-That and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 8453 (2000).
135. S. Zhu and co-workers, *Nature* **400**, 49 (1999).
136. D. A. Winesett, H. Ade, D. Gersappe, M. H. Rafailovich, J. Sokolov, and S. Zhu, in preparation.
137. T. Schmitt, P. Guttman, O. Schmidt, P. Müller-Buschbaum, M. Stamm, G. Schönhense, and G. Schmahl, *X-ray Microscopy, AIP Conf. Proc.* **507**, 245 (1999).
138. J. T. Chen and co-workers, *Science* **273**, 343 (1996).
139. C. Zimba, E. Thomas, and C. Ober, unpublished.
140. H. Ade and co-workers, *Polymer* **36**, 1843 (1995).
141. H. Ade and co-workers, *Mater. Res. Soc. Symp. Proc.* **437**, 99 (1996).
142. C. C. Sloop and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci. Part B: Polym. Phys.* **39**, 531 (2001).
143. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **30**, 663 (1997).
144. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **19**, 557 (1998).
145. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Microsc. Microanal.* **4 S-2**, 142 (1998).
146. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 2595 (2000).
147. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **33**, 1163 (2000).

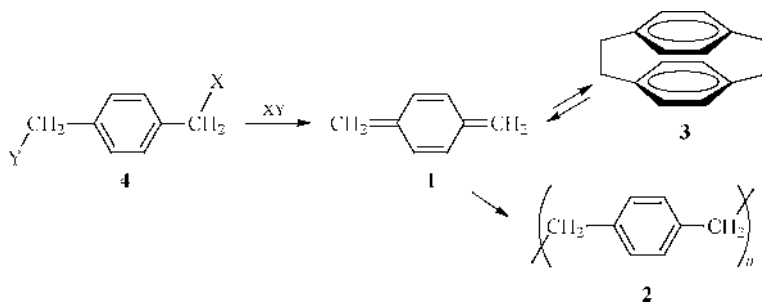
148. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **34**, 1536 (2001).
149. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Macromol. Mater. Eng.* **274**, 1 (2000).
150. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Adv. Mater.* **11**, 1277 (1999).
151. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Polymer* **42**, 4453 (2001).
152. A. P. Hitchcock and co-workers, *Microsc. Microanal.* **4 S-2**, 808 (1998).
153. G. Mitchell, M. Cheatham, Y. Chonde, J. Marshall, H. Ade, and V. Zhuang, 1995 National Synchrotron Light Source Activity Report, 1996.
154. A. P. Hitchcock and co-workers, *AIP Conf. Proc. Ser.* **507**, 235 (2000).
155. I. Koprinarov and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **34**, 4424 (2001).
156. C. G. Zimba, H. W. Ade, and A. P. Smith, "Characterization of the Interfacial Regions in Multilayer Coatings by *nexafs* Microscopy," presented at the Society of Plastics Engineers, Brookfield, Conn., 2000 (unpublished).
157. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Appl. Spectrosc.* **55**, 1676 (2001).
158. A. P. Smith and co-workers, *Polymer* **41**, 6271 (2000).
159. A. P. Smith, R. J. Spontak, and H. Ade, *Polym. Degrad. Stab.* **72**, 519 (2001).
160. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **33**, 1593 (1995).
161. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *J. Polym. Sci., B: Polym. Phys.* **33**, 1603 (1995).
162. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **101**, 2267 (1997).
163. S. G. Urquhart and co-workers, *Mater. Res. Soc. Symp. Proc.* **437**, 243 (1996).
164. E. G. Rightor, S. Urquhart, A. Hitchcock, H. Ade, A. P. Smith, G. Mitchell, R. Priester, and W. Lidy, *Macromolecules*, **35**, 5873 (2002).
165. A. P. Hitchcock and co-workers, *Ultramicroscopy* **88**, 33 (2001).
166. A. P. Hitchcock, *J. Synchr. Radiat.* **8**, 66 (2001).
167. A. P. Hitchcock, I. N. Koprinarov, H. P. Stöver, L. Croll, and E. Kneedler, in preparation.
168. I. N. Koprinarov, A. P. Hitchcock, C. McCrory, and R. F. Childs, *J. Phys. Chem. B* **106**, 5358 (2002).
169. C. Zimba, A. P. Smith, and H. Ade, unpublished.
170. C. Zimba, A. P. Smith, and H. Ade, NSLS Activity Report for 1996, Brookhaven National Laboratory, 1997.
171. C. M. Roland, *Rubber Chem. Technol.* **62**, 456 (1989).
172. W. M. Hess, C. R. Herd, and P. C. Vegvari, *Rubber Chem. Technol.* **66**, 329 (1993).
173. J. Dias, S. G. Urquhart, H. Ade, and P. Stevens, *155th Meeting of the Rubber Division (Paper no. 30)*, American Chemical Society, Chicago, 1999.
174. Y. Zhang and co-workers, *Polymer* **42**, 9133 (2001).
175. Y. M. Zhang and co-workers, *Macromolecules* **34**, 7056 (2001).
176. H. Ade and B. Hsiao, *Science* **262**, 1427 (1993).
177. A. P. Smith and H. Ade, *Appl. Phys. Lett.* **69**, 3833 (1996).
178. H. Ade and co-workers, *Bull. Am. Phys. Soc.* **42**, 47 (1997).
179. A. P. Smith, A. Garcia, and H. Ade, *Microsc. Microanal.* **4 S-2**, 812 (1998).
180. J. Kikuma and co-workers, *J. Electron. Spectrosc. Relat. Phenom.* **94**, 271 (1998).
181. Y. Wang and co-workers, *J. Microsc.* **197**, 80 (2000).
182. D. Weiss and co-workers, *Ultramicroscopy* **84**, 185 (2000).
183. H. N. Chapman, C. Jacobsen, and S. Williams, *Ultramicroscopy* **62**, 191 (1996).

H. ADE
North Carolina State University

XYLYLENE POLYMERS

Introduction

In a process capable of producing pinhole-free coatings of outstanding conformality and thickness uniformity through the unique chemistry of *p*-xylylene (PX) [502-86-3] (1), a substrate is simply exposed to a controlled atmosphere of pure gaseous monomer. The coating process is best described as a *vapor deposition polymerization* (VDP). The monomer molecule is thermally stable, but kinetically very reactive toward polymerization with other molecules of its kind. Although it is stable as a rarified gas, upon condensation it polymerizes spontaneously to produce a coating of high molecular weight, linear poly(*p*-xylylene) (PPX) [25722-33-2] (2). This article emphasizes recent VDP developments. There have been several reviews of the subject (1,2), which offer a more thorough treatment of early developments in the field.



In the commercial Gorham process (3), the extremely reactive PX is conveniently generated by the thermal cleavage of its stable dimer, *cyclo-di-p*-xylylene (DPX), a [2.2]paracyclophane [1633-22-3] (3). In many instances, substituents attached to the paracyclophane framework are carried through the process unchanged, ultimately becoming substituents of the polymer in the coating.

The process takes place in two stages that must be physically separate but temporally adjacent. Figure 1 presents a schematic of a typical parylene deposition process, also indicating the approximate operating conditions.

The PPXs formed as coatings in the Gorham process are referred to generically as the parylenes. The terms Parylene N [25722-33-2], Parylene C [9052-19-1], and Parylene D [52261-45-7] refer specifically to polymers produced as coatings by the Gorham process using the dimers DPXN, DPXC [28804-46-8], and DPXD [30501-29-2], respectively, originally marketed by Union Carbide Corp.

The parylene process has certain similarities with vacuum metallizing. The principal distinction is that truly conformal parylene coatings are deposited even on complex, three-dimensional substrates, including on sharp points and in hidden or recessed areas. Vacuum metallizing, on the other hand, is a line-of-sight coating technology. Whatever areas of the substrate cannot be "seen" by the evaporation source are "shadowed" and remain uncoated.

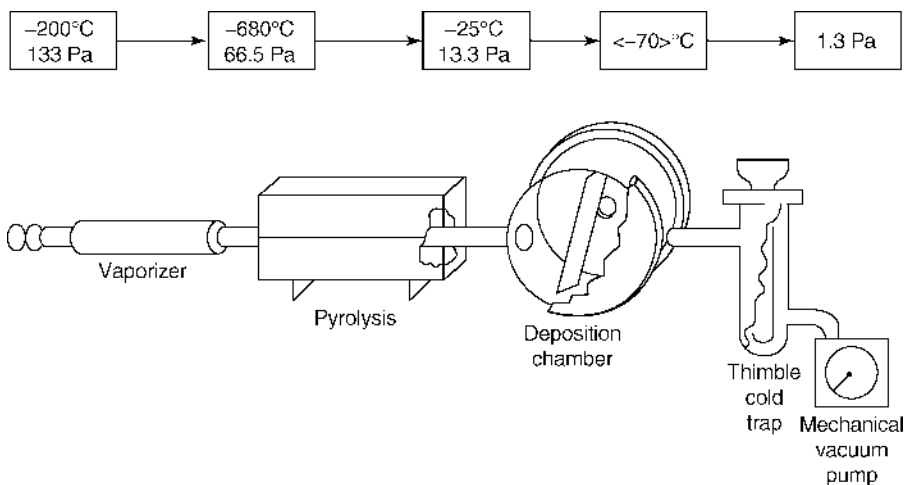


Fig. 1. Parylene deposition apparatus. To convert Pa to torr, multiply by 0.0075.

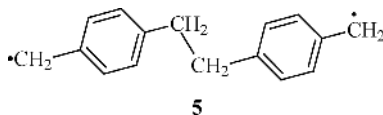
The *p*-xylylene species plays a central role in the coating process itself as well as in the making of the dimers which are used as feedstocks for the coating process. Polymers and dimers have both been made from precursor *p*-xylene compounds (4) featuring a variety of X and Y leaving groups. The conditions of the reaction determine the relative amounts of the resulting dimeric or polymeric products. Dilution is of course the key element in any procedure which offers a high yield of dimer.

The modest commercial success the *p*-xylylene dimer based Gorham process has achieved to date is readily attributed to the fact that thermal cleavage of cyclic dimer produces the *p*-xylylene monomer in essentially quantitative yield, while at the same time producing no gaseous by-products. In a gas-to-solid coating process, any gaseous entities generated from the leaving groups X and Y, necessarily formed in volumes comparable to the volume of the monomeric *p*-xylylene generated, would at the very least need to be exhausted through the pumping system, thereby slowing the process down. Moreover, certain of the most effective leaving groups XY, such as halogens or halogenide acids, would create a corrosion hazard both for any sensitive substrates to be coated and for the deposition equipment itself.

Gorham Process Monomers

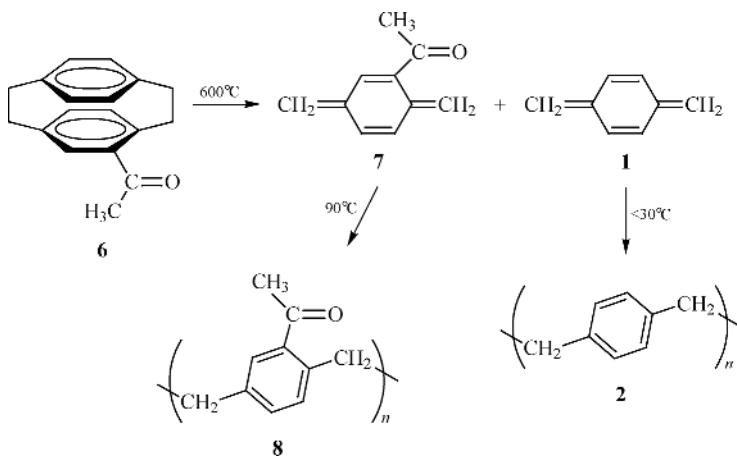
The eight-carbon monomer PX is generated in the first stage of the parylene process by heating gaseous dimer as it passes through a high temperature zone. Its intermediacy in the process was deduced by the earliest investigators. Apprehending the unusual properties of PX is an important aid to understanding the unique features of the coating process.

Chemical Evidence for PX Monomer. Establishing early on that PX is indeed the pyrolysis product, rather than the molecule formed by breaking only one of the original dibenzyl bonds, the dimer diradical (5), would prove to be an important development.



When the pyrolysis gases are quenched with a molar excess of iodine vapor, a yield of greater than 50% *p*-xylylene diiodide is recovered. The observation of this effect offered the first direct chemical support for the idea that DPX pyrolysis results in PX (1) (4).

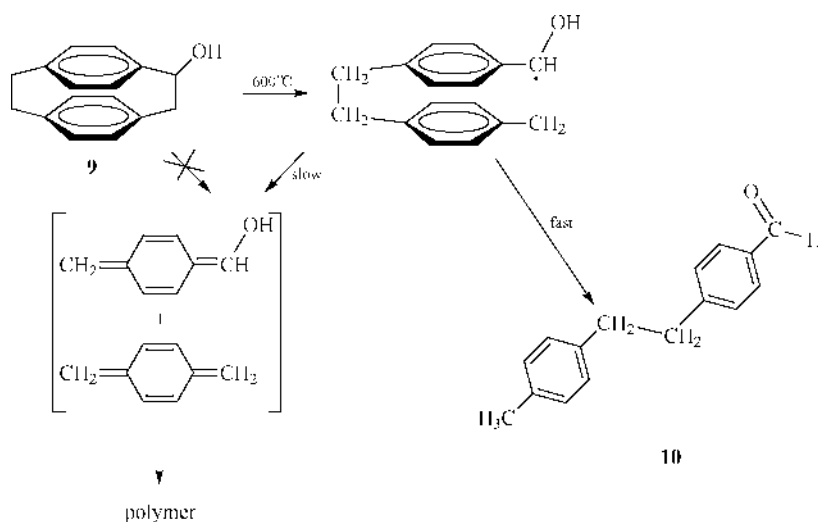
Moreover, where *ar*-acetyldi-*p*-xylylene [10029-00-2] (6) is pyrolyzed, by adjusting temperatures in the deposition region, it is possible to isolate two different polymeric products, ie, poly(acetyl-*p*-xylylene) [67076-72-6] (8) and poly(*p*-xylylene) (PPX) (2). This of course requires the cleavage of the original dimer into two fragments.



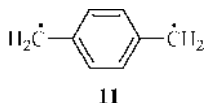
Experiments with monoethyl and monocarbomethoxy di-*p*-xylylene (5) gave similar results. These experiments do not, however, shed any light on whether the rupture of the methylene-methylene bonds in the dimer upon pyrolysis is simultaneous or sequential.

Only one exception to the clean production of two monomer molecules from the pyrolysis of dimer has been noted. When α -hydroxydi-*p*-xylylene (9) is subjected to the Gorham process, no polymer is formed, and the 16-carbon aldehyde (10) is the principal product in its stead, isolated in greater than 90% yield. This transformation indicates that, at least in this case, the cleavage of dimer proceeds in stepwise fashion rather than by a concerted process in which both methylene-methylene bonds are broken at the same time. This is consistent with the

predictions of Woodward and Hoffmann from orbital symmetry considerations for such [6 + 6] cycloreversion reactions in the ground state (6).



Monomer Properties. Despite difficulties involved in studying it owing to its great reactivity, a great deal is known about the structure of the parylene process monomer PX: the eight-carbon framework is planar (7); The molecule is diamagnetic, ie, all electron spins are paired in the ground state (spectroscopically, a singlet). Although many have ascribed its reactivity to its so-called biradical nature, the true biradical (triplet) form (11) of the molecule, an electronically excited state, is substantially more energetic, estimated at ca 50 kJ/mol (12 kcal/mol), and therefore cannot contribute to the monomer at equilibrium to any appreciable extent, even at pyrolysis temperatures. The PX molecule is instead a conjugated tetraolefin whose particular arrangement gives it extreme reactivity at its end carbons.



This extreme reactivity of PX has precluded many experimental approaches that otherwise would have been useful in studying it. Most of the present structural knowledge has been gleaned from spectroscopic studies and molecular orbital calculations. A noteworthy exception is an electron diffraction study (8) in which an electron beam was directed at a stream of gaseous PX, generated much as it is in the parylene process, issuing from a nozzle in a specially constructed apparatus. The results of the study are shown in Figure 2. Although the study was unable to resolve the lengths of the two different C=C and C-H bonds, it clearly distinguished between the C-C and C=C bond lengths. Thus *p*-xylylene is experimentally demonstrated to have an olefinic geometry rather than that of an aromatic biradical.

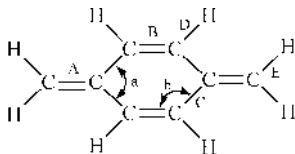


Fig. 2. Structure of PX monomer molecule from electron diffraction (9). Bond lengths: C=C $A = B + 0.1381 \pm 0.008$; C-C, C = 0.1451 ± 0.0007 nm; C-H, D = E = 0.1116 ± 0.0035 nm. Bond angles: $a = 122.2 \pm 3.7^\circ$, $b = 118.9 \pm 1.9^\circ$.

By trapping PX at liquid nitrogen temperature and transferring it to THF at -80°C , the ^1H NMR spectrum could be observed (10). It consists of two sharp peaks of equal area at chemical shifts of 5.10 and 6.49 ppm downfield from tetramethylsilane (TMS). The fact that any sharp peaks are observed at all attests to the absence of any significant concentration of unpaired electron spins, such as those that would be contributed by the biradical (11). Furthermore, the chemical shift of the ring protons, 6.49 ppm, is well upfield from the typical aromatic range and more characteristic of an olefinic proton. Thus the olefin structure (1) for PX is also supported by NMR.

A particularly useful property of the PX monomer is its enthalpy of formation. Conventional means of obtaining this value, such as through its heat of combustion, are, of course, excluded by its reactivity. An experimental attempt was made to obtain this measure of chemical reactivity with the help of ion cyclotron resonance; a value of 209 ± 17 kJ/mol (50 ± 4 kcal/mol) was obtained (11). Unfortunately, the technique suffers from lack of resolution in addition to experimental imprecision. It is perhaps better to rely on molecular orbital calculations for the formation enthalpy. Using a semiempirical molecular orbital technique, which is tuned to give good values for heat of formation on experimentally accessible compounds, the heat of formation of *p*-xylylene has been computed to be 234.8 kJ/mol (56.1 kcal/mol) (12).

Successful *p*-Xylylene VDP Monomers. Within the limits mentioned above, it is frequently possible, and often desirable, to modify the *p*-xylylene monomer by attaching to it certain substituents. Limitations on such modifications lie in three areas: reactivity, performance in the coater, and cost.

Reactivity. Although the reactivity which enables the gas-solid polymerization to proceed is a characteristic of the eight-carbon *p*-xylylene tetraolefin system, it is possible to subdue that reactivity. For example, by attaching electron-withdrawing substituents to the alpha positions and thereby further delocalizing the π -electrons of the highly reactive *p*-xylylene nucleus, it is in several instances possible to prepare *p*-xylylenes that are so stable that they can be isolated and handled as normal organic compounds (Fig. 3). These sorts of substitutions must of course be avoided if the goal is to make polymer.

It is also possible to interfere with the polymerization by attaching at the alpha positions either too many groups, or groups which are too bulky. Four chlorine atoms (13) or four methyl groups (14) seem to be sufficient to hinder the production of polymer. These crowded *p*-xylylene monomers can be polymerized, but not through a VDP process.

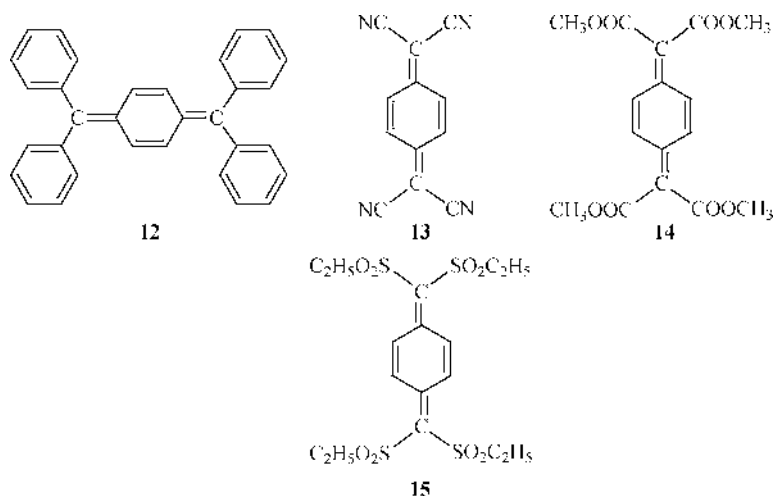


Fig. 3. Isolatable *p*-xylylene derivatives: 12, Thiele's hydrocarbon—1904 [26392-12-1]; 13, tetracyanoquinodimethane [1518-16-7] (TCNQ); 14, tetrakis(methoxycarbonyl)quinodimethan [65649-20-9]; 15, tetrakis(ethylsulfonyl)quinodimethan [84928-90-5].

Thus, except for electron-withdrawing or bulky substituents, at least from the standpoint of reactivity toward polymerization, modification by most other substituents is possible.

Performance in Coater. The modified monomer should perform well in commercial deposition equipment. Performance considerations include the growth rate of the coating, the uniformity of thickness of the coating over the chamber volume, and the efficiency with which the dimer is converted to useful coatings on the substrates.

An important further constraint is the fact that economic considerations in the construction of deposition equipment normally lead to a preference for an ambient-temperature deposition chamber. Control of deposition temperature is possible, but it adds to both equipment expense and operational complexity.

The vapor pressure of a parylene monomer is a prime factor in determining how rapidly a coating grows when exposed to an atmosphere of monomer at a given pressure. Vapor pressure is reduced as molecular weight increases, thereby increasing the monomer's tendency to condense and, along with it, increasing the VDP growth rate. The presence of polar functionality in the molecule further depresses vapor pressure. But too low a vapor pressure makes it difficult to transport gaseous monomer from point to point in the deposition chamber. Hence, some optimum value of monomer volatility is expected.

The widely used Parylene C owes its popularity principally to the room-temperature volatility of its monomer. The Parylene C monomer, chloro-*p*-xylylene, has become the de facto performance standard. By comparison, the Parylene N monomer, *p*-xylylene itself, is too volatile and would perform better in a sub-ambient-temperature deposition system. The Parylene D monomer, dichloro-*p*-xylylene [85586-88-5] is too heavy, and causes distribution problems in larger deposition systems.

Cost. It is necessary to produce the feedstock from which the monomer is generated, viz, the dimer, at a cost which can be supported by the commercial application, and yet allow it to be economically competitive with all other alternative ways to achieve the same end result. This factor often, but not always, seriously limits the amount of effort that can be put into dimer synthesis and purification.

Other, Related Processes

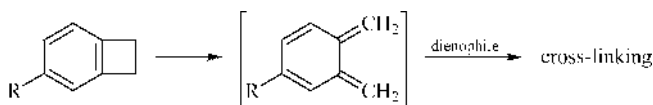
VDP processes using means other than the pyrolytic cleavage of DPX (Gorham process) to generate the reactive monomer are also known, although none are practiced commercially at the time of this writing (ca 1997).

Photopolymerization and Plasma Polymerization. The use of ultra-violet light alone (15,16) as well as the use of electrically excited plasmas or glow discharges to generate monomers capable of undergoing VDP have been explored. The products of these two processes, called plasma polymers, continue to receive considerable scientific attention. Interest in these approaches is enhanced by the fact that the feedstock material from which the monomer capable of VDP is generated is often inexpensive and readily available. In spite of these widespread scientific efforts, however, commercial use of the technologies is quite limited.

When *p*-xylene is used as the monomer feed in a plasma polymer process, PX may play an important role in the formation of the plasma polymer. The plasma polymer from *p*-xylene closely resembles the Gorham process polymer in the infrared, although its spectrum contains evidence for minor amounts of nonlinear, branched, and cross-linked chains as well. Furthermore, its solubility and low softening temperature suggest a material of very low molecular weight (17).

VDP Polyimides. Polyimide films have also been prepared by a kind of VDP (18). The poly(amic acid) layer is first formed by the coevaporation and condensation of two monomers, followed by copolymerization on the substrate. The imidization is carried out in a separate baking step (see POLYIMIDES).

***o*-Xylylene/BCB.** Thermosetting resins based on benzocyclobutene (BCB)



chemistry have been reported (19,20). In these condensed phase cures, the *o*-xylylene isomer is the key reactive intermediate. From the behavior of this energetically similar ortho isomer, the value of the para configuration's rendering any ring closure reaction—analogueous to cyclobutene formation from the ortho isomer—geometrically forbidden can be appreciated.

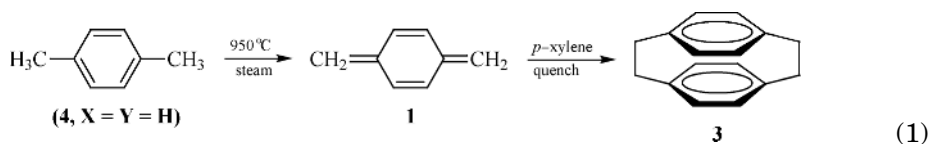
Dimer

In contrast to the extreme reactivity of the monomeric PX (1) generated from it, the dimer DPX (3) feedstock for the parylene process is an exceptionally stable

compound. Because of their chemical inertness, dimers in general do not exhibit shelf-life limitations. Although a variety of substituted dimers are known in the literature, at present only three are commercially available: DPXN, DPXC, and DPXD, which give rise to Parylene N, Parylene C, and Parylene D, respectively.

The unsubstituted C-16 hydrocarbon, [2.2]paracyclophane (3), is DPXN. Both DPXC and DPXD are prepared from DPXN by aromatic chlorination and differ only in the extent of chlorination; DPXC has an average of one chlorine atom per aromatic ring and DPXD has an average of two.

Manufacture. For the commercial production of DPXN (di-*p*-xylylene) (3), two principal synthetic routes have been used: the direct pyrolysis of *p*-xylene (4, X = Y = H) and the 1,6-Hofmann elimination of ammonium (HNR_3^+) from a quaternary ammonium hydroxide (4, X = H, Y = NR_3^+). Most of the routes to DPXN share a common strategy: PX is generated at a controlled rate in a dilute medium, so that its conversion to dimer is favored over the conversion to polymer. The polymer by-product is of no value because it can neither be recycled nor processed into a commercially useful form. Its formation is minimized by careful attention to process engineering. The chemistry of the direct pyrolysis route is shown in equation 1:



First, *p*-xylene is dehydrogenated pyrolytically in the presence of steam at about 950°C to give *p*-xylylene (PX), which in turn forms di-*p*-xylylene (DPX) when quenched in liquid xylene. The xylene is recycled to the pyrolysis vessel. Yields and conversion efficiency are satisfactory. However, several engineering challenges need to be overcome, including the choice of a suitable diluent; establishing optimal residence time, vapor velocity, and operating pressure during pyrolysis; and the design and construction of novel equipment to withstand the highly corrosive reaction environment.

The Hofmann elimination route, of which many versions exist, can be carried out at much lower temperatures in conventional equipment. The PX is generated by a 1,6-Hofmann elimination of amine from a quaternary ammonium hydroxide in the presence of a base. This route gives yields of 17–19%. Undesired polymeric products can be as high as 80% of the product. In the presence of a polymerization inhibitor, such as phenothiazine, DPXN yields can be increased to 50%.

In the 1,6-elimination of *p*-trimethylsilylmethylbenzyltrimethylammonium iodide with tetrabutylammonium fluoride, yields as high as 56% have been reported (21). The starting materials are not readily accessible, however, and are costly.

The yield can be raised to 28% if the Hofmann elimination is conducted in the presence of a water-soluble copper or iron compound (22). Further improvements up to 50% were reported when the elimination was carried out in the

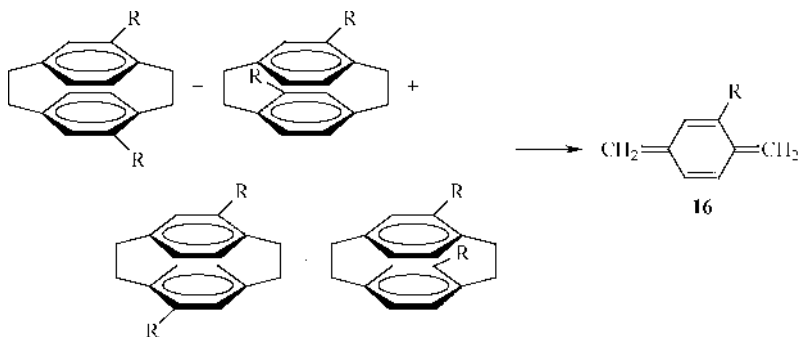


Fig. 4. Isomeric dichloro[2.2]paracyclophanes produce the same xylylene.

presence of ketone compounds (23). Further beneficial effects have been found with certain cosolvents, with reported yields of greater than 70% (9).

DPXC and DPXD. The economic pressure to control dimer costs has had an important effect on what is in use today (ca 1997). Attaching substituents to the ring positions of a [2.2]paracyclophane does not proceed with isomeric exclusivity. Indeed, isomeric purity in the dimer is not an essential requirement for obtaining isomeric purity, eg, monosubstituted monomer, in the pyrolysis. Any mixture of the four possible heteronuclearly disubstituted dichloro[2.2]paracyclophanes, will, after all, if pyrolyzed produce the same monomer molecule, chloro-*p*-xylylene [10366-09-3] (16) (Fig. 4).

Although DPXC and DPXD prepared by the chlorination of DPXN are relatively complex mixtures, after pyrolytic cleavage the resulting mixture of monomers is considerably simpler. Thus DPXC, when pyrolyzed, gives predominantly monochloro PX, which is accompanied by small but significant amounts of PX and dichloro PX. The resulting polymer, Parylene C, consequently has an average of about one chlorine atom per repeat unit. However, it contains significant amounts of unchlorinated, as well as dichlorinated, repeat units.

DPXC and DPXD are prepared from DPXN by chlorinating to different extents. The conditions are controlled to favor aromatic ring chlorination to the exclusion of the free-radical chlorination of the ethylene bridges. However, the chlorination products are complex mixtures of the homologues DPXN, monochloro DPX, dichloro DPX, trichloro DPX, and tetrachloro DPX, and even higher homologues, as well as the several possible isomers of each.

New synthetic routes for the preparation of homogeneously pure dichloro DPX and tetrachloro DPX have been reported through the 1,6-Hofmann elimination of chlorinated *p*-methylbenzyltrimethylammonium hydroxide. In the case of dichloro DPX, yields of 30% were reported (24). In the presence of ketone compounds, yields were increased to 50% (23).

Purification. Unsubstituted di-*p*-xylylene (DPXN) is readily purified by recrystallization from xylene. It is a colorless, highly crystalline solid. The principal impurity is polymer, which fortunately is insoluble in the recrystallization solvent and easily removed by hot filtration.

In purifying DPXC and DPXD, care must be taken not to disturb the homologue composition, so that product uniformity is maintained. For example, a

Table 1. Properties of Parylene Dimers

Dimer	Melting point, °C	Density, g/cm ³
DPXN	284 ^a	1.22
DPXC	140–160 ^b	1.30
DPXD	170–195 ^b	1.45

^aDecomposes.^bMixture of homologues and their isomers.

recrystallization of DPXC from ethanol would give a higher melting, more crystalline dimer material, at the expense of a decrease in yield owing to the removal of otherwise useful isomers, but the polymer made from it would not be identical to the historical Parylene C, as defined by its preparation from the chlorination mixture. The real purification issues are the removal of insoluble residues and any components that contain aliphatic side-chain chlorine. Although ring-substituted chlorine is stable, side-chain chlorine can give rise to hydrogen chloride gas under the conditions of the parylene process, or subsequent to it, which in certain applications could initiate substrate corrosion. Fortunately, the aliphatic chlorine problem can be minimized by proper attention to process detail.

Properties. The DPXs are all crystalline solids; melting points and densities are given in Table 1. Their solubility in aromatic hydrocarbons is limited. At 140°C, the solubility of DPXN in xylene is only about 10%. DPXC is more readily soluble in chlorinated solvents, eg, in methylene chloride at 25°C its solubility is 10%. In contrast, the corresponding figure for DPXN is 1.5%.

The structure of DPXN was determined in 1953 from X-ray diffraction studies (25). There is considerable strain energy in the buckled aromatic rings and distorted bond angles. The strain has been experimentally quantified at 130 kJ/mol (31 kcal/mol) by careful determination of the formation enthalpy through heat of combustion measurements (26). The release of this strain energy is doubtless the principal reason for success in the particularly convenient preparation of monomer in the parylene process.

Polymer

The linear polymer of PX, poly(*p*-xylylene) (PPX) (2), is formed as a VDP coating in the parylene process. The energetics of the polymerization set it apart from all other known polymerizations and enable it to proceed as a vapor deposition polymerization.

Thermodynamic Considerations. On the basis of the value for the enthalpy of formation of *p*-xylylene, ΔH_f^0 (PX), the enthalpy of polymerization, $\Delta H_{\text{polym}}^0 = \Delta H_f^0(\text{PPX}) - \Delta H_f^0(\text{PX})$, can be estimated. No experimental combustion data are available for high molecular weight poly(*p*-xylylene) as it is formed in the parylene process, ΔH_f^0 (PPX).

For crystalline [2.2]paracyclophane [(1,2), DPXN], a ΔH_f^0 of +154.4 kJ/mol (+36.9 kcal/mol) is reported (26). The hypothetical transformation of crystalline DPXN into polymer is accompanied by the release of 129.7 kJ/mol (31.0 kcal/mol)

of paracyclophane strain energy per mole of paracyclophane, and 12.6 kJ/mol (3.0 kcal/mol) per polymer repeat unit as a result of the bibenzyl hyperconjugative stabilization, which is permitted in the polymer but excluded by geometry in the dimer. Thus the standard enthalpy of formation for the hypothetical 100% crystalline poly(*p*-xylylene) is estimated to be -0.3 kJ/mol (-0.05 kcal/mol), assuming that the energies associated with crystallinity are the same in both cases. Although it might be acceptable to assume that such energies per repeat unit are similar in the crystalline polymer and crystalline dimer, Parylene N, as produced by the parylene process, is typically only about 57% crystalline. Using a value of 14.1 kJ/mol (3.37 kcal/mol) for the heat of fusion for poly(*p*-xylylene) (27), the standard formation enthalpy for Parylene N, as it is typically deposited in the parylene process, ΔH_f^0 (Parylene N), is $+5.7$ kJ/mol ($+1.4$ kcal/mol).

In estimating the enthalpy of polymerization, the physical state of both starting monomer and polymer must be specified. Changes in state are accompanied by enthalpy changes. Therefore, they also affect the level of the polymerization enthalpy. The ΔH_f^0 for *p*-xylylene previously mentioned is applicable to the monomer as an ideal gas. To make comparisons with other polymerization processes, most of which start with condensed monomer, a heat of vaporization for *p*-xylylene is needed. It is assumed herein that it is the same as that for *p*-xylene, 42.4 kJ/mol (10.1 kcal/mol). Thus the ΔH_f^0 of the liquid monomer *p*-xylylene is 192.3 kJ/mol (46.0 kcal/mol).

The enthalpy of polymerization of unannealed (57% crystalline) Parylene N, as it is deposited, starting with liquid monomer, $\Delta H_{\text{polym(lu)}}^0$, is -186.6 kJ/mol (-44.6 kcal/mol). This is an exceptionally high value compared with those of other addition polymers, which generally fall in the -60 to -100 kJ/mol (-14.3 to -23.8 kcal/mol) range. It quantifies the vigor of the polymerization. Because the source of polymerization enthalpy is within the *p*-xylylene system, substituents affect it only to a minor extent. All parylenes are expected to have a similar molar enthalpy of polymerization. An experimental value for the heat of polymerization of Parylene C has appeared. Using the gas evolution from the liquid nitrogen cold trap to measure thermal input from the polymer, and taking advantage of a peculiarity of Parylene C at -196°C to polymerize abruptly, perhaps owing to the arrival of a free radical, a $\Delta H_{\text{polym}}^0$ of -152 ± 8 kJ/mol (-36.4 ± 2.0 kcal/mol) at -196°C was reported (28). The correction from -196°C to room temperature is estimated at -17 kJ/mol, bringing this experimental value for Parylene C closer to the calculated value for Parylene N. It is assumed that S_{polym} is 0 at 0 K (third law), 125 J/(mol · K) [30 cal/(mol · K)] at 298 K, and proportional to T in between—a crude assumption, but appropriate to the current level of knowledge. Thus experiment and calculation are in harmony in quantifying the exceptional exothermicity of parylene polymerization (see THERMODYNAMIC PROPERTIES OF POLYMERS).

The thermodynamic ceiling temperature (29) T_c for a polymerization is computed by dividing the $\Delta H_{\text{polym}}^0$ by the standard entropy of polymerization, $\Delta S_{\text{polym}}^0$. The T_c is the temperature at which monomer and polymer are in equilibrium in their standard states at 25°C (298.15 K) and 101.3 kPa (1 atm). (In the case of *p*-xylylene, such a state is, of course, purely hypothetical.) The T_c quantifies the binding forces between monomer units in a polymer and measures the tendency of the polymer to revert back to monomer. In other systems, the T_c indicates a

Table 2. Entropies, Enthalpies, and Ceiling Temperatures for the Polymerization of Various Monomers at 25°C (298.15 K) and 101.3 kPa (1 atm)^a

Monomer	Liquid			Gas		
	$-\Delta H^0$, kJ/mol ^b	$-\Delta S^0$, J/ (mol · K) ^b	T_c , °C	$-\Delta H^0$, kJ/mol ^b	$-\Delta S^0$ J/ (mol · K) ^b	T_c , °C
Ethylene	108.4	173.6	351			
Propylene	81.6	116.3	429			
Isoprene	74.9	101.3	467	101.3	187.0	268
Styrene	69.9	104.6	395	113.4	212.1	262
Methyl methacrylate	55.2	117.2	198			
α -Methylstyrene	35.1	103.8	65			
<i>p</i> -Xylylene	186.6	56.4	3035	229.1	161.1	1149

^aRef. 26.^bTo convert J to cal, divide by 4.184.

temperature above which the polymer is unstable with respect to its monomer, but in the case of parylene it serves rather as a means of comparing the relative stability of the polymer with respect to its reversion to monomer. For computing the T_c , however, the standard entropies of polymerization are required.

The standard polymerization entropies can be estimated from the following. The standard entropy S^0 for PX as an ideal gas is computed by a group-contribution method (30) to be 310.6 J/(mol · K) [74.24 cal/(mol · K)]. The entropy of vaporization for PX is assumed to be the same as that of *p*-xylene, 104.7 J/(mol · K) [25.03 cal/(mol · K)] (31). Therefore, the S^0 for liquid PX is 205.9 J/(mol · K) [49.21 cal/(mol · K)]. Noting that the experimental specific heat C_p of PPX follows that of polystyrene over the range of 160 to 340 K (32), it can be assumed that the proportionality continues down to 0 K and that the factor 135/116 at 298 K can be applied to the known S^0 for polystyrene [$S = 128.5$ J/(mol · K) or 30.70 cal/(mol · K) (33)]. It follows that the S^0 for as-deposited 57% crystalline Parylene N is 149.5 J/(mol · K) [35.73 cal/(mol · K)]. Therefore, $\Delta S_{\text{polym(g)}}^0 = -161.1$ J/(mol · K) [−38.50 cal/(mol · K)] and $\Delta S_{\text{polym(l)}}^0 = -56.4$ J/(mol · K) [−13.48 cal/(mol · K)].

The results of the above polymerization thermodynamics calculations for parylene are compared to similar data for typical addition polymers in Table 2. The T_c quantifies the stability of the polymer only with respect to reversion to monomer. When PPX is thermally degraded (ca 500°C), a mixture of degradation products including hydrogen gas, *p*-xylene, toluene, and *p*-methylstyrene is observed (34), suggesting that the path taken in thermal degradation requires the cleavage of bonds other than those formed in the polymerization, very likely starting with the methylene C–H bond. Complete replacement of the methylene hydrogens in PPX with fluorine gives a polymer with substantially better stability at elevated temperatures (35).

The enthalpy liberated on the VDP of parylene is real and in an adiabatic situation causes a rise in temperature of the coated substrate. For Parylene C, 229.1 kJ/mol (54.7 cal/mol) corresponds to 1654 J/g (395 cal/g) whereas its specific heat at 25°C is only 1.00J/(g · K) [0.239 cal/(g · K)] (36). In most practical

situations, however, the mass of parylene deposited is dwarfed by the substrate mass, and the heat of polymerization is dissipated within the coated substrate over the time required to deposit the coating with minimal actual temperature rise.

Polymerization Mechanism. The physical processes of condensation and diffusion must be considered along with the *p*-xylylene polymerization chemistry for a proper understanding of what happens microscopically during vapor deposition polymerization (37). These processes point to an important distinction between VDP and vacuum metallization, ie, that in the latter, adsorption is followed by a surface reorganization of the existing deposited material, and diffusion of incoming species through the bulk is nonexistent. In most parylene depositions, a coating forms from gaseous monomer under steady-state conditions.

Gaseous monomer is transported to the location within the coating where it is to be consumed to produce polymer by an initial condensation, followed by diffusion. The net flux of monomer molecules through the growth interface, ie, the outer boundary of the coating, between the gaseous and condensed phases, needed to sustain growth at a given rate can be readily calculated [for Parylene C, 10 $\mu\text{m/h}$ requires $1.55 \times 10^{15}/(\text{cm}^2 \cdot \text{s})$]. Comparing a net flux so obtained with the flux of molecules that according to the kinetic theory of gases are striking the growth surface ($Z = PN_0/\sqrt{2\pi MRT}$) for the conditions typical of parylene deposition, a large difference (two or three orders of magnitude) is observed. For Parylene C monomer at a pressure of 1.3 Pa (10 $\mu\text{m Hg}$) and 25°C, $Z = 6.7 \times 10^{17}/(\text{cm}^2 \cdot \text{s})$. For each molecule that eventually enters the coating, some hundred or thousand molecules strike the growth interface. Those that condense and do not react must, of course, evaporate. The term "sticking coefficient" has sometimes been borrowed from vacuum metallization to describe this ratio of incident molecules to consumed molecules. However, the VDP situation is not adequately described by hard spheres bouncing off a growth interface. Every incident molecule spends at least some time in the polymeric coating phase beyond the growth interface before it is lost again to the gas phase.

Because most of the condensing molecules evaporate, condensation equilibrium at the growth surface can be assumed, to a good approximation. The concentration of monomer dissolved in the coating near the growth interface is, therefore, governed by Henry's law, and monomer concentration in polymer solution increases proportionately to the partial pressure of monomer in the gas phase. Furthermore, as the temperature is lowered, or as higher molecular weight monomers of lower volatility are selected, monomer concentration at the growth interface increases. In most practical situations, these Henry's law effects dominate in determining growth rates for VDP coatings by regulating monomer concentration within the coating. For each monomer, there exists a threshold condensation temperature, T_{tc} , above which the rate of growth of coating is, for all practical purposes, zero (Table 3), but this phenomenon is governed by the competition between initiation and propagation chemistries, discussed herein.

Once it is in "solution" in the coating, the monomer moves about in random directions by diffusion until it evaporates or is consumed by chemical reaction. The polymer molecules that have already grown to higher molecular weight cannot relocate appreciably owing to entanglement with their neighbors. The rate of diffusion of monomer through the polymer bulk is adequate for the

Table 3. Threshold Condensation Temperatures T_{tc} for Substituted *p*-Xylylene Monomers

Monomer	T_{tc} , °C
<i>p</i> -Xylylene	30
2-Methyl- <i>p</i> -xylylene	60
2-Ethyl- <i>p</i> -xylylene	90
2-Chloro- <i>p</i> -xylylene	90
2-Acetyl- <i>p</i> -xylylene	130
2-Cyano- <i>p</i> -xylylene	130
2-Bromo- <i>p</i> -xylylene	130
Dichloro- <i>p</i> -xylylene	130

participation of diffusive transport in the mechanism of VDP (ca 10^{-10} cm²/s at room temperature). This can be confirmed in swelling-rate experiments with solvents having similar physical properties, such as *p*-xylylene.

The monomer is consumed by two chemical reactions: initiation, in which new polymer molecules are generated, and propagation, in which existing polymer molecules are extended to higher molecular weight. In steady-state VDP, both reactions proceed continuously inside polymeric coating, in the reaction zone just behind the growth interface.

The first step of the initiation reaction is the coupling of two monomer molecules to form the dimer diradical (5). The formation of this diradical is energetically uphill, ie, the energy of two benzyl radicals is greater than that of two starting *p*-xylylene systems. The rate of destruction greatly exceeds the rate of formation. Only a trace concentration of the dimer diradical species exists at equilibrium. Further reaction of the dimer diradical with monomer gives more stable diradicals. In these subsequent transformations, a *p*-xylylene is converted into a benzene with a net stabilizing effect. At some stage of oligomerization, the resulting *n*-mer diradical becomes more stable than the *n* *p*-xylylene molecules from which it was constructed. At this point, the new polymer molecule is formed. Thus the overall order of the initiation reaction, the reaction in which new polymer molecules are generated, is some $n > 2$. Initiation chemistry requires no species other than monomer, another unusual aspect of the polymerization chemistry of *p*-xylylene.

The order n of the initiation reaction has an important influence on the manner in which the VDP occurs. Because monomer molecules, even in solution at low concentration, are closer together in the condensed phase than they are in the gaseous phase, the rate of initiation is greater in the condensed phase than in the gaseous phase. The higher the order n , the more the condensed phase is favored. The order n , according to the mathematical model (37) of *p*-xylylene VDP, at the same time governs the effect of monomer pressure on growth rate at a given deposition temperature. The model predicts that growth rate should vary with the pressure raised to the power $(n + 3)/4$. Thus, if $n = 3$, the growth rate should be proportional to $p^{1.5}$. In an early attempt to determine the pressure dependence of parylene growth rate γ , an expression of $\gamma = kp^2$ was reported (38). A pressure exponent of 2 would be interpreted as an initiation order of $n = 5$. Although such a high order would favorably deemphasize "snow," consideration

of the energetics of oligomeric *p*-xylylene diradicals would seem to place the order nearer to 3. Perhaps the early investigators did not anticipate a nonintegral order for pressure dependence. A more recent report (39) places n at 3 for Parylenes N and C, and 4 for Parylene D. Thus, with $n \geq 3$, the parylenes are more likely to form a continuous coating than a dust or a snow, the physical form of the product of a gas-phase polymerization. To the extent that snow is included in the formation of a coating (ie, dual-phase polymerization), haze develops.

In the propagation reaction, the monomer molecule reacts with an existing free-radical polymer chain end to make the chain one repeat unit longer. The polymer chains have two active ends, and they grow from both ends at the same time. Under normal coating conditions, the consumption of monomer by propagation must be much higher than its consumption by initiation to obtain high molecular weight polymer. In fact, the number-average molecular weight is determined by the proportion of monomer consumed by the two reactions, and is diminished by increases in deposition temperature or monomer partial pressure.

The concentration of monomer within the coating decreases approximately exponentially with distance from the growth interface. With this decrease in monomer concentration, the rates of initiation and propagation reactions also decrease. Moving back into the polymer from the growth interface, through the reaction zone where polymer is being manufactured, a region in which the polymer formation is essentially complete is gradually entered. Because initiation is of higher order in monomer concentration, it tends to occur closer to the growth interface than does propagation. Under conditions prevailing during a typical deposition, the characteristic depth of the reaction zone is a few hundred nanometers, and the maximum concentration of monomer, ie, the concentration at the growth interface, is of the order of a few tenths percent by weight. Thus the parylene polymerization takes place just behind the growth interface in a medium that is best described as a slightly swollen, solid polymer.

During the vapor deposition process, the polymer chain ends remain truly alive, ceasing to grow only when they are so far from the growth interface that fresh monomer can no longer reach them. No specific termination chemistry is needed, although subsequent to the deposition, reaction with atmospheric oxygen, as well as other chemical conversions that alter the nature of the free-radical chain ends, is clearly supported experimentally.

Polymer Properties. The single most important feature of the parylenes, that feature which dominates the decision for their use in any specific situation, is the VDP process by which they are applied. VDP provides the room-temperature coating process and produces the films of uniform thickness, having excellent thickness control, conformality, and purity. The engineering properties of commercial parylenes once they have been formed are given in Table 4. As crystalline polymers, the parylenes retain useful physical integrity up to temperatures approaching their crystalline melting points. However, their glass-transition temperatures, T_g , the temperature spans over which the continuous amorphous phase, usually the minority phase, changes from a rigid, vitreous condition to a more flexible, rubbery condition, are probably in the vicinity of ambient temperature. In the case of PPX (Parylene N), careful measurements have established the T_g to be centered at 13°C, the range over which T affects heat capacity measurements extending from 240 to 330 K (−33 to + 57°C) (27). Because they

Table 4. Typical Engineering Properties of Commercial Parylenes

Property	Parylene N	Parylene C	Parylene D	ASTM method
<i>General</i>				
Density, g/cm ³	1.110	1.289	1.418	D1505
Refractive index, n_D^{23}	1.661	1.639	1.669	
<i>Mechanical</i>				
Tensile modulus, GPa ^a	2.4	3.2	2.8	D882
Tensile strength, MPa ^b	45	70	75	D882
Yield strength, MPa ^b	42	55	60	D882
Elongation to break, %	30	200	10	D882
Yield elongation, %	2.5	2.9	3	D882
Rockwell hardness	R85	R80		D785
Coefficient of friction				D1894
Static	0.25	0.29	0.35	
Dynamic	0.25	0.29	0.31	
<i>Thermal</i>				
Melting point, °C	420	290	380	
Linear coefficient of expansion to 25°C × 10 ⁵ , K ⁻¹	6.9	3.5		
Heat capacity at 25°C, J/(g · K) ^c	1.3 ^d	1.0 ^e		
Thermal conductivity at 25°C, W/(m · K)	0.12	0.082		
<i>Electrical</i>				
Dielectric constant				D150
60 Hz	2.65	3.15	2.84	
1 kHz	2.65	3.10	2.82	
1 MHz	2.65	2.95	2.80	
Dissipation factor				D150
60 Hz	0.0002	0.020	0.004	
1 kHz	0.0002	0.019	0.003	
1 MHz	0.0006	0.013	0.002	
Dielectric strength at 25 μm, MV/m				D149
Short time	275	220	215	
Step-by-step	235	185		
Volume resistivity at 23°C, 50% RH, Ω	1.4 × 10 ¹⁷	8.8 × 10 ¹⁶	2 × 10 ¹⁶	D257

(Continued)

have similar backbone structures, other parylenes are expected to have similar T_g s, although no measurements taken with equal care exist. Earlier reports have quoted a somewhat higher (60–90°C) range for the entire family (5). In either case, the parylenes as prepared by their VDP process are further distinguished from conventional polymers in having been generated in a medium that is at least to some extent vitreous.

During formation, the motions of the parylene polymer chains in the vitreous medium are restricted. The properties of freshly deposited parylenes,

Table 4. (Continued)

Property	Parylene N	Parylene C	Parylene D	ASTM method
Surface resistivity at 23°C, 50% RH, Ω	1×10^{13}	1×10^{14}	5×10^{16}	D257
<i>Barrier</i>				
Water absorption, %	< 0.1	< 0.1	< 0.1	D570
Water vapor transmission at 37°C, ng/(Pa · s · m) ^f	0.0012	0.0004	0.0002	E96
Gas permeability at 25°C, amol/(Pa · s · m) ^g				D1434
N ₂	15.4	2.0	9.0	
O ₂	78.4	14.4	64.0	
CO ₂	429	15.4	26.0	
H ₂ S	1590	26.0	2.9	
SO ₂	3790	22.0	9.53	
Cl ₂	148	0.7	1.1	

^aTo convert GPa to psi, multiply by 145,000.

^bTo convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

^cTo convert J to cal, divide by 4.184.

^dRefs. 25 and 30.

^eRef. 34.

^fTo convert ng/(Pa · s · m) to g·mil/(100 in² · day) at 90% RH, 37°C, multiply by 1240.

^gTo convert amol/(Pa · s · m) to cm³ (STP) mil/(100 in² · day · atm), multiply by 0.498.

therefore, generally differ from those that have been aged or annealed. Restricted polymer chain motion during VDP severely limits their ability to organize into crystallites, and consequently freshly deposited parylenes are metastable. With the passage of time, and sooner if heated, they will reorganize into a thermodynamically more satisfactory configuration, increasing crystallinity. Certain physical properties of freshly deposited parylenes therefore can be expected to change upon aging or annealing. Of the commercial materials, Parylene C, perhaps as a result of the asymmetry of its repeat unit, is particularly subject to modifications subsequent to its initial formation.

Mechanical Properties. Many of the mechanical properties of the parylenes are similar to those of other conventional plastics. The values in Table 4 are typical of those quoted for the parylenes, but in any particular case can vary with aging or annealing. In an outstanding instance of this effect, the 200% elongation quoted for Parylene C is the value commonly observed on the freshly deposited material. It drops dramatically as crystallinity builds. In general, an increase in crystallinity with aging or annealing results in a lowering of elongation to break and an increase in modulus and strength. The variation in mechanical rigidity of the parylenes as temperature increases is shown in Figure 5, which plots the logarithm of the secant modulus, a measure of stiffness, vs temperature. Generally, a small decrease in rigidity occurs near ambient temperature as the glass transition is traversed. Significant rigidity is then retained up to the point where the crystallites begin to melt.

It has been reported that Parylene N is deposited in a state of compressive stress (40). The inherent stress is 18 MPa (2300 psi) and is invariant with

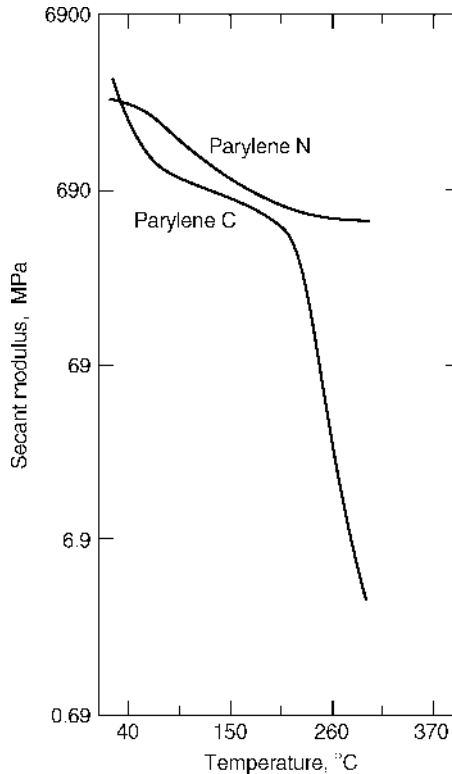


Fig. 5. Stiffness–temperature behavior of Parylenes N and C. To convert MPa to psi, multiply by 145.

thickness. This congenital compressive stress can be removed and rendered tensile by a thermal cycle.

Electrical Properties. The bulk electrical properties of the parylenes make them excellent candidates for use in electronic construction. The dielectric constants and dielectric losses are low and unaffected by absorption of atmospheric water. The dielectric strength is quoted for specimens of 25 μm thickness because substantially thicker specimens cannot be prepared by VDP. If the value appears to be high in comparison with other materials, however, it should be noted that the usual thickness for such a measurement is 3.18 mm. Dielectric strength declines with the square root of increasing thickness. Viewed in this light, the dielectric strength of the parylenes is good, but not outstandingly high. The bulk resistivities are advantageously high because of the purity of the parylenes, their low moisture absorption, and in particular their freedom from the trace ionic impurities present in conventional polymers as residues. Such impurities might be the residues of the catalysts necessary for their formation. The surface resistivities are advantageously high in part because of their low affinity for atmospheric water. The experimental dependence of the electrical properties on temperature is shown in Figure 6.

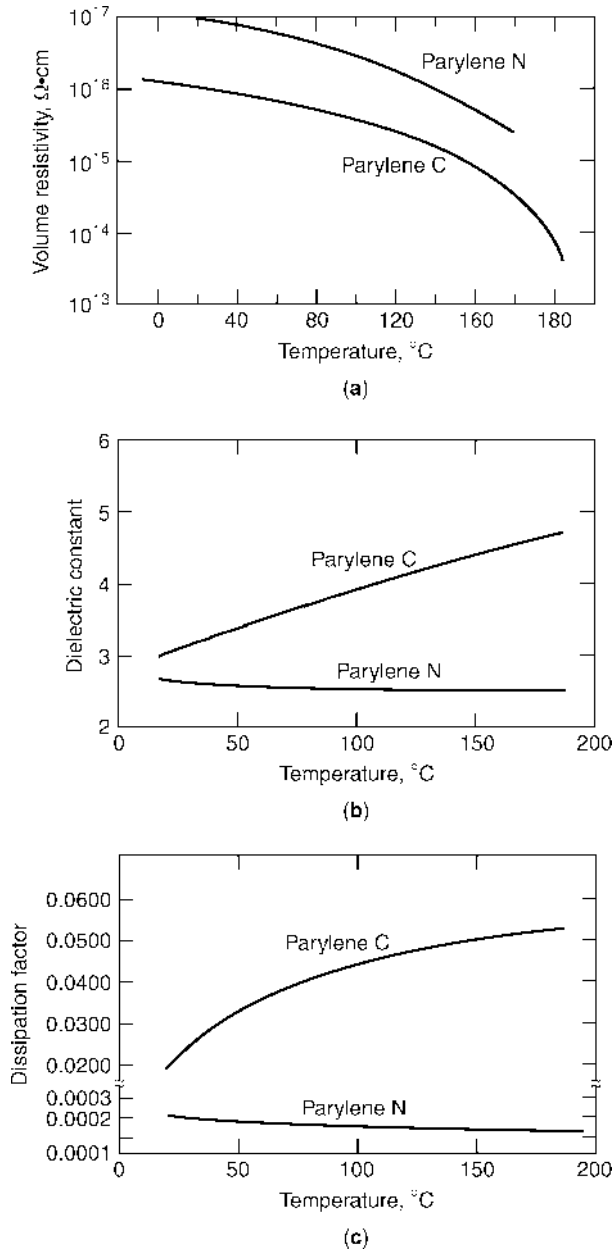


Fig. 6. Variation of electrical properties of Parylenes N and C with temperature.

The question of the value of the dielectric constant of the parylenes in the gigahertz range of frequencies is often of interest to designers of high frequency circuitry. Making such measurements on low loss, low dielectric constant, thin films is experimentally difficult, and no reliable data exist as of this writing (ca 1997). Fortunately, however, an indicator is available. For nonabsorbing,

Table 5. Dielectric Constants and Refractive Indexes of Parylenes

Parameter	Parylene N	Parylene C	Parylene D
Dielectric constant			
60 Hz	2.65	3.15	2.84
1 kHz	2.65	3.10	2.84
1 MHz	2.65	2.95	2.80
Refractive index			
n_D line	1.661	1.639	1.669
Squared	2.76	2.69	2.79

nonmagnetic materials such as the parylenes, the well-known Maxwell relation applies: at any particular frequency, the square of the index of refraction equals the relative permittivity, or dielectric constant (41). The refractive indices for the parylenes at the sodium D line (589 nm), a visible wavelength that corresponds to a frequency of 510 THz (5.1×10^{14} Hz), are shown in Table 5, along with their squares and the lower frequency measurement of dielectric constant. Because by virtue of the Maxwell relation the dielectric constants of the parylenes at the much higher frequency of visible light are close to those observed by conventional means, it seems likely that when reliable gigahertz dielectric constant measurements on the parylenes become available, similar values will be obtained.

Thermal Properties and Endurance. The heat capacity or specific heat, C_p is a quantity of theoretical thermodynamic significance as well as of practical importance. It has been determined for Parylene N over the temperature range of 220 to 620 K (-53 to $+347^\circ\text{C}$) (27,32).

Figure 7 gives the results of an experiment in which free-standing films were exposed to constant elevated temperatures in air-circulating ovens for periods of weeks to months; the failure criterion was a 50% loss in tensile strength. Because the test is destructive, each data point (failure time at a given temperature) required many specimens. In the degradation of many polymers, including the parylenes, tensile strength is maintained until chain scission has reduced molecular weight to the point at which entanglement is no longer a factor in determining physical properties. Beyond that point it drops abruptly. Thus despite the relatively large variance in tensile strength measurements, the 50% loss criterion allows a reasonably precise location of end of useful life on a log time scale (Fig. 8). The data of Figure 7 suggest that Parylenes N, C, and D perform in air without significant loss of physical properties for 10 years at 60, 80, and 100°C , respectively. Clearly, these data can justifiably be made to serve only as a guide for considering the parylenes for a specific application. Questions of thermal endurance tend to have no clear-cut answers. In situations where performance may be marginal, there is no substitute for retesting under conditions more directly relatable to the application.

Degradation. The most important mode of degradation for parylenes is oxidative chain scission. Significantly, hydrolytic degradation is chemically impossible. Oxidative degradation limits the use of parylenes at elevated temperatures in many common applications. Figure 9 shows the effect of exposure to elevated

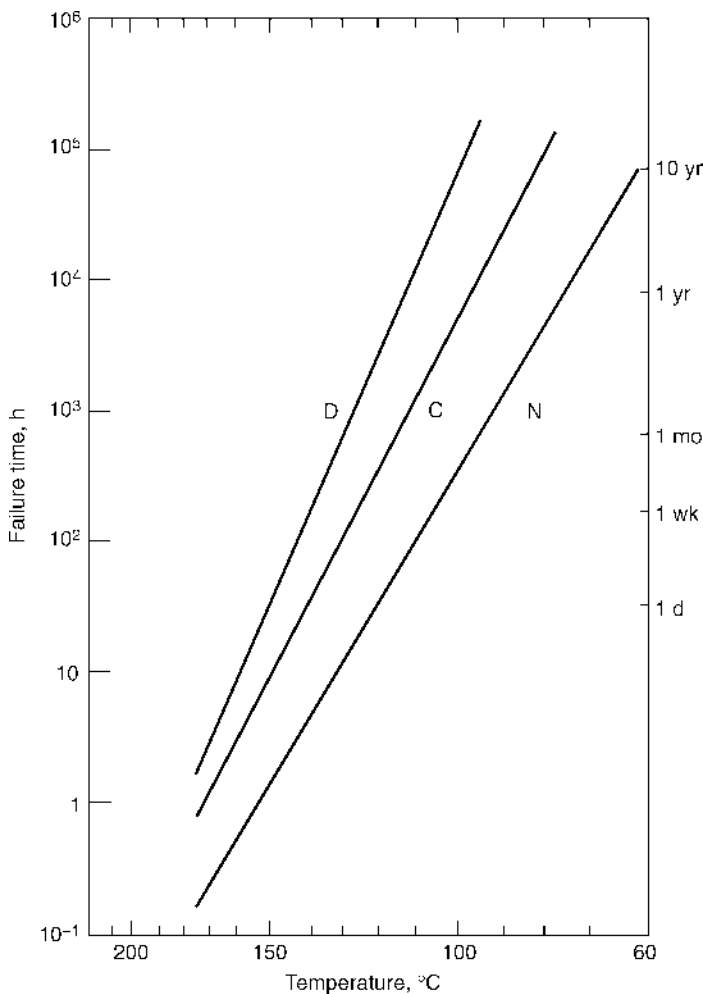


Fig. 7. Useful lifetime of Parylenes N, C, and D as a function of temperature in air. Failure = 50% loss in tensile strength.

temperature in air or in vacuum on elongation to break, an indicator of toughness or lack of brittleness. The data are given for Parylene C, which suffers substantial change in mechanical properties as the freshly deposited material is annealed. Aging in air at 150°C for ca 100 h causes the elongation to break to drop from its initially very high value to 0, at which point the specimen is mechanically useless. Aging in vacuum at yet higher temperatures (265°C) for a similar length of time gives a stronger, more rigid, stabilized material with 15% elongation at break, the result of annealing.

For applications where oxygen can be excluded, eg, in outer space, Figure 10 shows that 10-year-use projections exceed 200°C for Parylenes N, C, and D. Conventional antioxidants, incorporated during or after VDP, can extend the life of the parylenes at elevated temperatures (42,43).

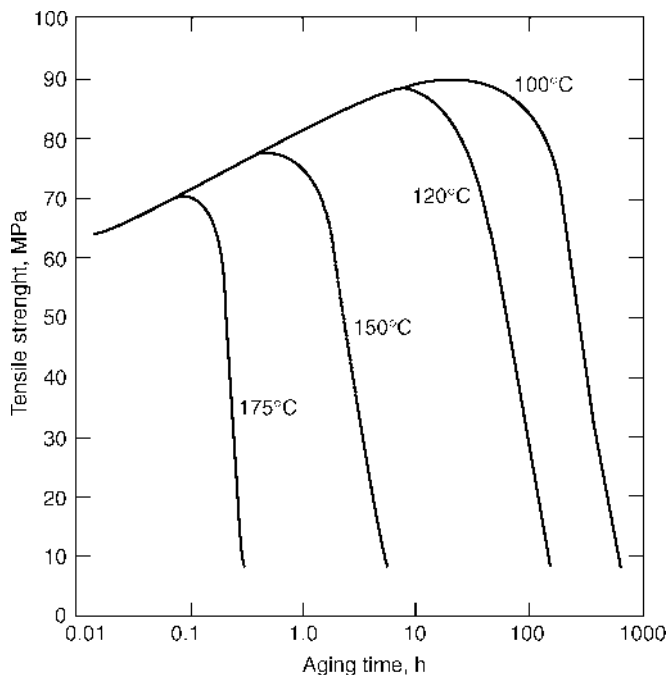


Fig. 8. Tensile strength of Parylene C on aging at elevated temperature. To convert Pa to psi, multiply by 0.145×10^3 .

Another factor in oxidative degradation is ultraviolet radiation, of which sunlight is a rich source. The oxidation of parylene appears to be enhanced by ultraviolet radiation. Ozone may play a mechanistic role in the ambient-temperature exposure of parylenes to ultraviolet radiation in the presence of oxygen. For the best physical endurance, exposure of the parylenes to ultraviolet light must be minimized.

Barrier Properties. The bulk barrier properties of parylenes are among the best of organic polymeric coatings. The data in Table 4 are the results of tests conducted some time ago, and certain entries seem unaccountably high, particularly the values for the permeability of Parylene N by SO_2 and H_2S . Because film damage might have been the cause of these high test values, experimental confirmation is advisable. More recent values for water transport rates in Parylene C films are available over the temperature range of 20–55°C in a comparative study which includes Mylar A and Kapton H (44). Similar information is provided for Parylene D in a study over the temperature range of 30–80°C (45).

Spectral and Optical Properties. The parylenes do not absorb visible light, and absorb only at the shorter wavelength, high energy end of the ultraviolet range (Fig. 11). Such absorption is expected for the electronic system of the parylenes' benzene ring. Films and coatings are colorless in the visible, becoming opaque to sufficiently short wavelength uv light.

The infrared transmission spectra of Parylenes N, C, and D are compared in Figure 12. Infrared spectra can be used to distinguish among sample films of

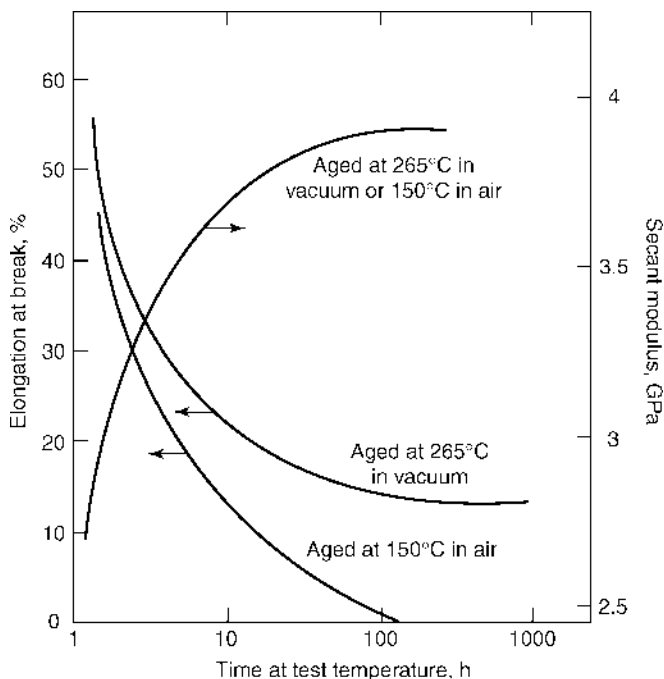


Fig. 9. Effect of temperature on the flexibility of Parylene C in air and vacuum. To convert GPa to psi, multiply by 145,000.

the three commercial materials should a practical question of identity arise. The spectra in Figure 12 are taken on films of ca $18 \mu\text{m}$ thickness, which gives a good picture of a typical organic film in the standard infrared presentation format. It is, however, thicker than normally encountered in a typical parylene application. The amount of incident light absorbed at any given wavelength is predictably less than that indicated by the ordinate of Figure 12.

Interference effects, which arise because of the extraordinary uniformity of thickness of the film over the spectrometer sample beam, superimposed on the absorption of incident light by parylene films, can be observed. Experimentally, a sinusoidal undulation of the baseline of the spectrum is seen, particularly in the spectral regions where there is little absorption by the sample. These so-called "interference fringe" excursions can amount to some 15–20% transmission and are uniformly spaced in frequency. Larger excursions indicate greater uniformity in thickness. Such fringes are seen toward the left side of the experimental spectra of Figure 12. Although interference phenomena are also encountered experimentally in the visible and ultraviolet regions, their effects have been removed in the consolidation and replotting of the data of Figure 11. In transmission spectra, at the top of the interference fringes (the wavelengths of the sinusoidal maxima), constructive interference occurs in which all incident light that is not absorbed appears for detection. At the fringe troughs (the wavelengths of the sinusoidal minima), a condition of destructive interference exists, at which a portion of the incident beam is reflected back toward the source, thereby escaping detection

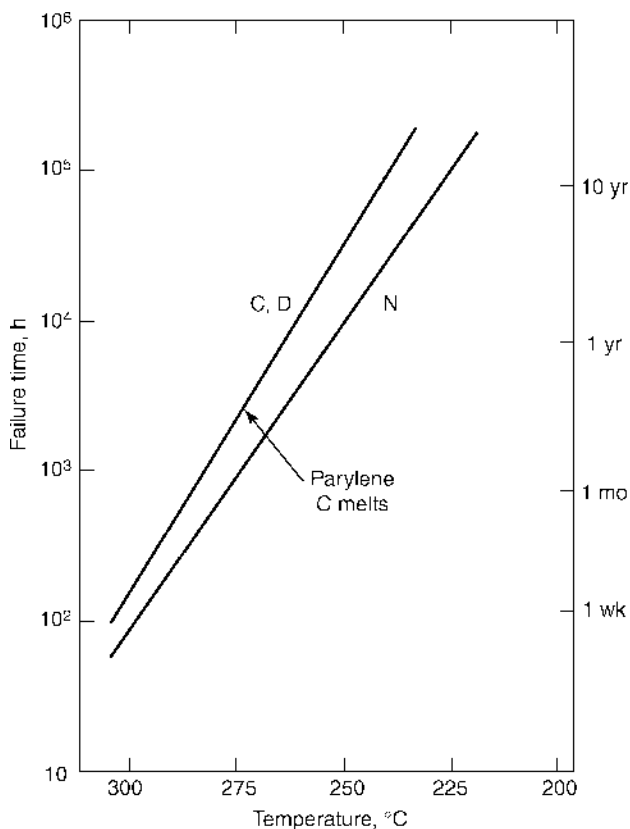


Fig. 10. Long-term effect of aging in vacuum on flexibility of Parylenes C, D, and N at elevated temperature. Failure = 50% loss in tensile strength.

even though it is not absorbed by the sample. By observing the wavelengths at which constructive interference occurs, the approximate thickness of the sample can be determined by using the expression

$$d = \frac{m\lambda_1\lambda_2}{2R(\lambda_1 - \lambda_2)}$$

where λ_1 and λ_2 are any two wavelengths at which interference transmission maxima (ie, constructive fringes) exist, separated by $m-1$ intervening constructive fringes; R is the refractive index of the sample film. The thickness d takes the units of wavelength used for λ . At any condition of constructive interference (fringe), twice the thickness times the refractive index equals an integral number of wavelengths of the incident light. That integer is known as the order of the fringe. Much more precise and accurate thicknesses may be computed from the experimental optical spectra if the order of the fringe is known and if any variation of refractive index with wavelength is taken into consideration.

Unstretched PPX films exhibit an inherent negative birefringence, the optical axis of which is perpendicular to the plane of the film. The refractive index

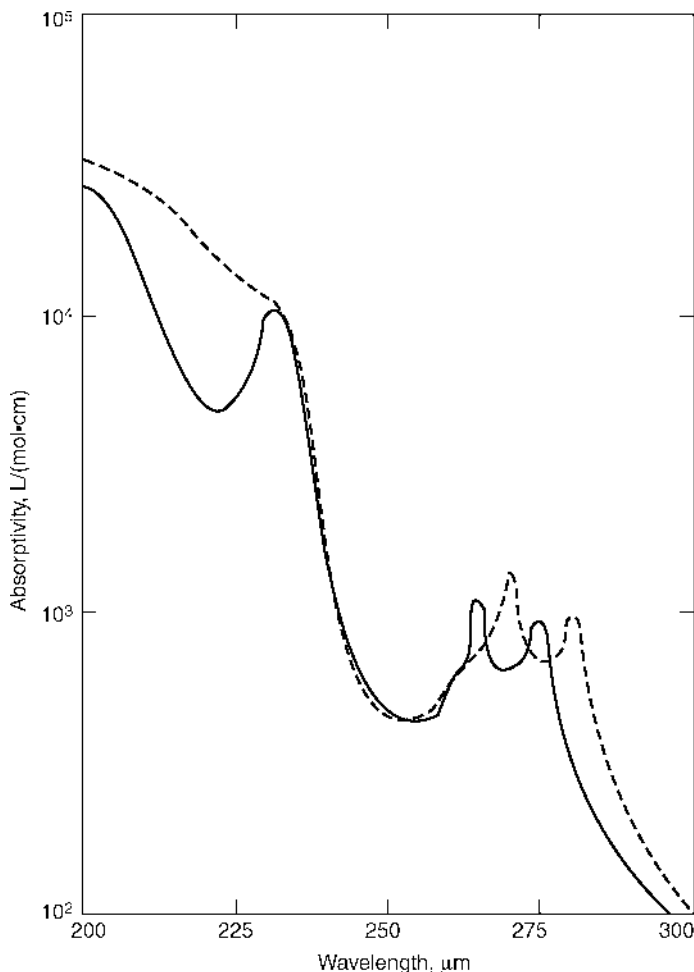


Fig. 11. Ultraviolet absorption spectra of Parylenes N (—) and C (---).

along the optical axis is lower than the refractive index observed in the plane of the film, the difference being $n_e - n_0 = -0.075 \pm 0.001$ (46). Where they are observed from the direction normal to the film plane, the films appear to be isotropic. Birefringence is observable only when the films are tilted, or observed in cross section. When stretched, PPX films exhibit a much greater birefringence. The stretch birefringence has an optical axis in the direction of stretch and is positive: $n_z - n_0 = +0.2$.

Surface Energy. The surface energies of Parylenes N, C, and D were measured by observing the contact angles for several standard probe liquids. All three have surface energies of approximately 45 mJ/m^2 ($= \text{dyn/cm}$), ie, all test liquids having less than 45 mJ/m^2 surface tension completely wet the as-deposited parylene surfaces (47).

Plasma treatments using reactive gases (N_2 , O_2) as well as inert gases (Ar, He) seemed universally to lower the contact angle for water, an observation that

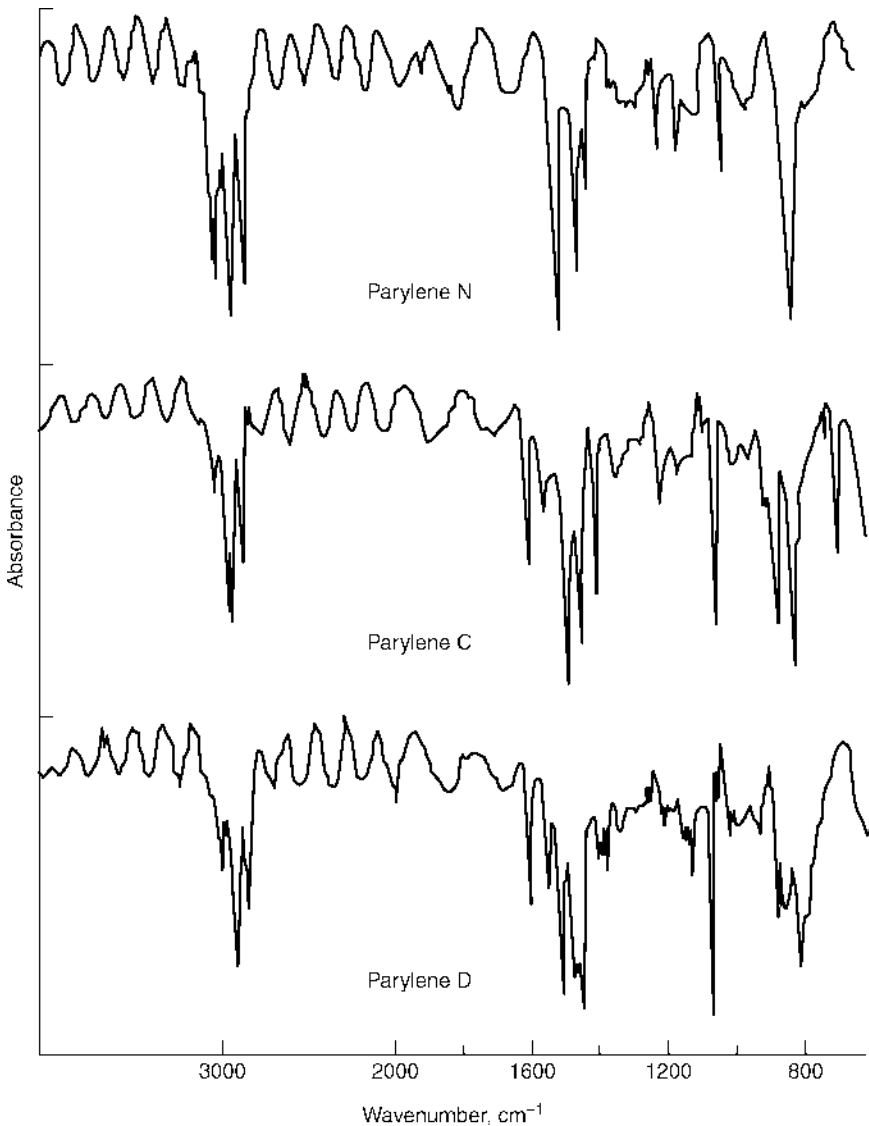


Fig. 12. Infrared absorption spectra of Parylenes N, C, and D films of 18- μm thickness.

would imply that all such treatments raise the surface energy. Reflectance spectroscopy confirmed the presence of carbonyl in all plasma-treated specimens. Surprisingly, the inert-gas-plasma treatments affected the surface energies of the parylenes more than the reactive gas plasmas did, as indicated by a water contact angle. However, the surface energies of the plasma-treated specimens universally dropped toward the original value on standing in air, but stabilized in about 1 day, without recovering the original value. Plasma treatment of parylene surfaces markedly improves the adhesion of polyurethanes, a result that could be in part, at least, the result of the surface energy change.

Crystallinity. The crystallinity of the parylenes determines two of their most important practical characteristics: mechanical strength at elevated temperatures (see Fig. 5) and solvent resistance.

In a manner typical of crystalline polymers, the crystallinity of parylenes is confined to small-submicrometer domains that are randomly dispersed throughout an amorphous continuum. Adjacent polymer chains, in order to acquire greater overall system stability, exhibit a preference to be close to one another, but the extent to which they actually can be is limited by the tangles already present. Because a given polymer chain is long enough to participate successively in several crystallites, these crystallites function as cross-links to strengthen the bulk polymer. This structural role of the crystallites is retained as temperature rises, giving the bulk polymer physical strength even above its glass-transition temperature, where the amorphous phase is changed to a low modulus, rubbery consistency. Because the crystalline domains are much more resistant to permeation than the amorphous phase, they retain their reinforcing structural role even in the presence of permeants in the amorphous phase, thus giving the parylenes their resistance to solvent attack. The crystalline content increases in freshly deposited polymer as it ages, particularly when it is heated.

Parylene N (PPX) possesses a singularly complex crystalline morphology in which two distinct crystalline modifications are recognized. When deposited in the usual VDP fashion, the crystallites tend to be mostly of the α modification. On annealing at a temperature of about 220°C, the α form is converted to the β modification. This transition was originally thought to be irreversible, but studies have demonstrated that it can be made reversible (48). The crystalline phase undergoes further modifications at higher temperatures before reaching its melting point of 420°C; these modifications have not been fully explored. The detailed crystal structures of the α ($a = 592$ pm, $b = 1060$ pm, $c = 655$ pm, $\beta = 134.7^\circ$ for two monomer repeat units per cell) (49) and β ($a = b = 2052$ pm, $c = 655$ pm, $\gamma = 120^\circ$, for 16 monomer repeat units per cell) (50) modifications have been determined.

In Parylene C, the single crystalline form observed is very similar to the α form of Parylene N. Its detailed crystal structure has been determined [$a = 596$ pm, $b = 1269$ pm, c (chain axis) = 666 pm, $\beta = 135.2^\circ$] (51). X-ray studies on the crystal structure of Parylene D have not been reported.

The diffraction pattern produced where X-rays or electrons are directed perpendicularly at the film is the familiar pattern of concentric rings (a powder pattern) produced where the crystallites within the sample are randomly oriented. When the incident beam is directed at an angle to the plane, however, the uniform rings break up into bands or spots, indicative of a preferred orientation of unit cells. Tilted electron diffraction results (52) demonstrate that in Parylene N there is a preference for the (100) face of the unit cell to lie in the film plane. Because the polymer chain is oriented along the c axis of the unit cell with the benzene rings lying approximately in the plane of the (100) face, it follows that, at least among molecules within crystallites, there is a preference for the polymer chains and benzene rings to be oriented in the film plane. Within the film plane, however, the direction of the chains is random. That benzene rings are preferentially oriented in the plane of the film is supported by negative birefringence and by the Raman spectrum of the polymer (53).

Table 6. Swelling on Immersion in Various Solvents for the Commercial Parylenes at Room Temperature

Solvent	Volume change, %		
	Parylene N	Parylene C	Parylene D
Dichlorobenzene	0.2	3.0	1.8
Mixed xylenes	1.4	2.3	1.1
Monochlorobenzene	1.1	1.5	1.5
2,4-Pentanedione	0.6	1.2	1.4
Trichloroethylene	0.5	0.8	0.8
Acetone	0.3	0.9	0.4
Pyridine	0.2	0.5	0.5
Isopropyl alcohol	0.3	0.1	0.1
Freon	0.2	0.2	0.2
Water, deionized	0.0	0.0	0.0

Solvent Resistance. At temperatures below the melting of the crystallites, the parylenes resist all attempts to dissolve them. Although the solvents permeate the continuous amorphous phase, they are virtually excluded from the crystalline domains. Consequently, when a parylene film is exposed to a solvent a slight swelling is observed as the solvent invades the amorphous phase. In the thin films commonly encountered, equilibrium is reached fairly quickly, within minutes to hours. The change in thickness is conveniently and precisely measured by an interference technique. As indicated in Table 6, the best solvents, specifically those chemically most like the polymer (eg, aromatics such as xylene), cause a swelling of no more than 3%.

Applications

Although there is ample evidence in the literature that several industrial groups had a research interest in the PPXs during the 1950s, industrial exploitation was for the most part prevented by the obstacle the parylenes present to conventional fabrication technologies. Because they are generally insoluble in most solvents, even at elevated temperatures, they cannot be used as solvent-based coatings; neither can they be cast as films nor spun as fibers from solution. Because of their high crystalline melting points, melt-working (molding, extrusion, calendaring, etc) is also difficult. Yet it is often just these features of solvent resistance and high temperature mechanical strength that constitute the advantages of PPX materials.

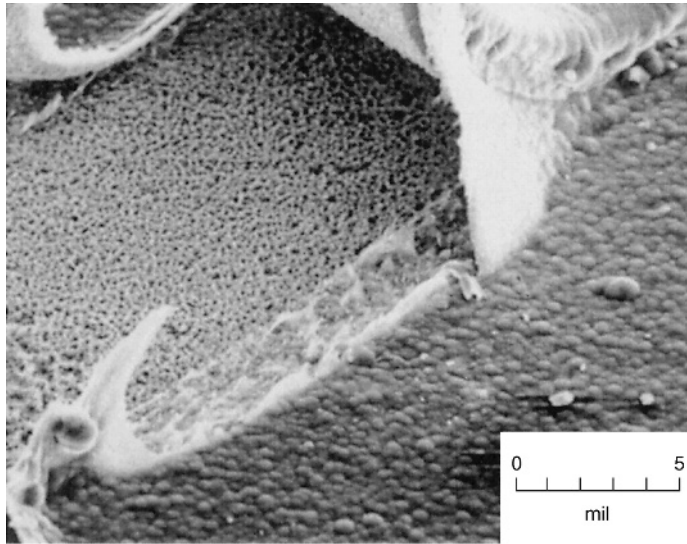
It had been recognized from the outset that polymer forms spontaneously on surfaces exposed to the gaseous monomer PX, but the recognition of VDP as an industrially viable process was not immediate. The public announcement, in 1965, of the convenient generation of pure monomer by the Gorham process from the dimer marked the beginning of a period of a gradually increased understanding and acceptance of the unique features of the parylenes.

As a coating technique, VDP offers certain advantages over other coating techniques such as brushing, dipping, or spraying. These advantages stem principally from the fact that the solid coating is formed from the gaseous monomer directly, without an intermediate liquid stage. As a result, the forces of surface tension, which would cause a pulling away from sharp edges and a filling in of troughs in conventional methods, are not operative and therefore do not affect the cross-sectional profile of VDP coatings. Coatings of PPX grow from the substrate surface outward, producing a conformal layer of uniform thickness. Extensive tests (54) demonstrate that the coating so formed is pinhole-free at thicknesses well below those achievable with conventional coating techniques (see COATINGS).

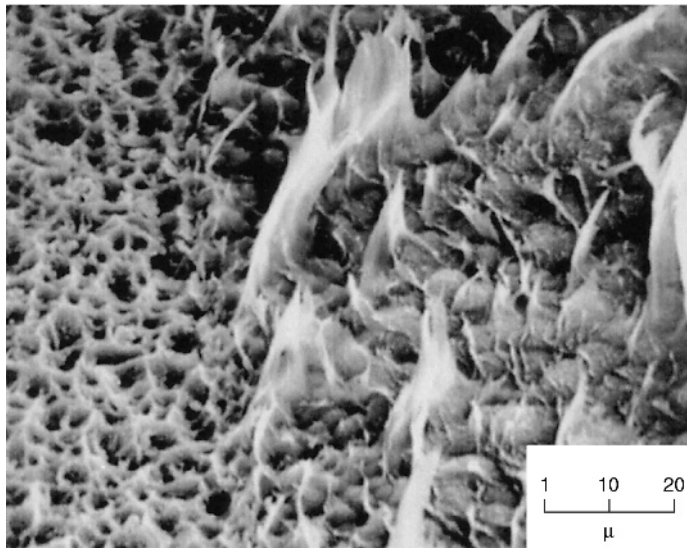
The PPX coatings are formed spontaneously on substrates at or near room temperature; a cure cycle at elevated temperature is not necessary to complete the polymerization chemistry. The substrate need not be subjected to any temperatures above ambient, and no further time is required beyond that needed for the growth of the film. Because the polymerization is spontaneous, no catalyst is necessary. Catalysts that promote other polymerizations are often ionic or ionogenic and, to the extent that they remain in the coating after cure, their residues are capable of participating in charge mobilization, with resulting detrimental effects in electrical properties. Because the coating is formed at room temperature, stresses that might be induced by differential thermal expansion between the temperature of cure and room temperature are avoided. Because PPX coatings are generally much thinner than conventional coatings, any stress that they impart on the substrate is proportionately less.

Circuit Boards. The most important application of parylenes is as a conformal coating for printed wiring assemblies. The parylene VDP process has the ability to produce a continuous, thin, truly conformal coating on geometrically complex, delicate articles. These coatings provide excellent chemical resistance, especially to solvent attack, and resistance to fungal attack. In addition, they exhibit stable dielectric properties over the wide range of temperatures in which military boards are expected to perform, as well as low dielectric constants, which together with thinness minimize the undesirable loading of high frequency tuned circuits. The reliability with which the process operates substantially reduces labor-intensive touch-up and inspection operations otherwise required for conventional coatings.

Parylene C was included among the earliest MIL-I-46058 (55) qualified coatings (as type XY) and has since enjoyed a reputation for superior performance in protecting and preserving the operation of electronic circuits against the detrimental effects of their operating environments. Environmental water is, of course, chief among these adverse factors. Although the rate of water transport through a parylene coating is finite and well documented, the hydrophobic nature of the parylenes makes them excellent barriers to penetration by ionic species. Once the circuit board is clean to the extent that surface ionic contamination is minimized and weak surface layers are eliminated, the parylene coating adheres well to the organic substrate material between the conductors. Ionic conduction along the coating-substrate interface, which would otherwise impair electrical performance in the short run and promote galvanic corrosion and dendritic growths in the long term, is minimized.



(a)



(b)

Fig. 13. Scanning electron microscope (SEM) photographs of Parylene C-coated printed circuit conductor peeled to demonstrate the adhesion of the coating to the substrate. To convert mil to meters, multiply by 2.54×10^{-5} .

The SEM photographs of Figure 13 show a conventional FR-4 printed wiring board, coated with an $8\text{-}\mu\text{m}$ film of Parylene C, on which the copper conductor trace has been peeled back. The peeling reveals the rough texture of the epoxy gel coat produced during the original lamination against etched copper in order to achieve maximum laminate peel strength. The region covered with Parylene

C in Figure 13 was of the same texture before coating, a fact that, along with parylene's conformality, accounts for much of the texture in the upper surface. Of particular interest is the mode of Parylene C failure as the conductor is peeled. There is evidence of substantial yield prior to failure in the filamentous nature of the failed regions and the web of stretched Parylene C at the apex of the peel. Furthermore, all tensile failure is cohesive, ie, the adhesion of Parylene C to the underlying epoxy gel coat is greater than the cohesive strength within the coating material. The higher magnification (Fig. 13b) shows the line of demarcation between the regions covered with copper and with Parylene C prior to the peel, revealing that the breadth of the failed Parylene C exceeded by far its original thickness.

The circuit board with all its components attached presents a variety of surface types for the conformal coating, ranging from plastics through ceramics and glass to metals, in particular aluminum and tin-lead solder. No single mechanism for adhesion can serve all sites effectively. Of particular importance for the epoxy board are the surfaces between conductor traces. Because epoxy is an organic material that is permeable to PX monomer, the growth mechanism of the parylene coating provides adhesion by the interpenetrating network it produces. Care must be taken in cleaning the board surface before coating of leakage-producing ionic contamination as well as organic soils, which interfere with a secure xylylene interpenetration lock. In the cases of ceramic and metal surfaces, monomer penetration is impossible, and other adhesion mechanisms must be engaged. Adhesion to metals is often not essential to the performance of the board, but it is usually desirable. Adhesion to ceramics or glasses is vital in situations where electrical leakage across their surfaces is to be minimized, and is particularly necessary in hybrids. Because the outside surface of common metals is an adherent coating of native oxide, adhesion to metals, ceramics, and glasses can often be achieved using the same approach, ie, treatment with a compatibilizing layer of an organosilane (56). γ -Methacryloxypropyltrimethoxysilane (A-174) is the organosilane most commonly used for the purpose. In action, the trialkoxysilane end of the molecule hydrolyzes and bonds covalently with the oxide on the substrate surface. The methacrylic end of the molecule provides a hydrophobic surface to accommodate parylene deposition, as well as the opportunity to form covalent bonds with the *p*-xylylene polymer through its double bond. It is, of course, essential to provide no more than a monolayer of the organosilane. Water plays an important role in the bonding chemistry between the organosilane and the oxide, and the treatment is often applied from aqueous solution. An alternative treatment is by exposure of the substrate circuit boards to pure gaseous organosilane (57), a process which often takes several days to develop optimum adhesion.

Fluorescence is frequently required in a circuit-board coating to assist inspection of the board after it is coated. Fluorescent parylene coatings can be prepared by admixing a fluorescent agent into the dimer charge. The agent must have just the right volatility to pass through the process and deposit with the polymer, yet it must be sufficiently stable that it survives the conditions it encounters during the process. Agents that have been used in this manner are anthracene and certain fluorescent whiteners of the Calcofluor family, the 7-dialkylamino-4-methylcoumarins.

Hybrid Circuits. The use of parylenes as a hybrid circuit coating is based on much the same rationale as its use in circuit boards. A significant distinction lies in obtaining adhesion to the ceramic substrate material, the success of which determines the eventual performance of the coated part. Adhesion to the ceramic must be achieved using adhesion promoters, such as the organosilanes.

In the coating of hybrid circuits, parylene provides certain other advantages. In certain technologies, chips are mounted with substrate clearances of as little as 10 μm . The parylene VDP process penetrates this narrow space, coating the underside of the chip as well as the substrate opposite it. Conventional coatings cannot flow into such a narrow space and must rely on simply sealing it off, leaving an air pocket under the chip. Where the fabrication technology uses wire bonds to connect the chips with substrate conductor patterns electrically, the fine (25- μm dia) wires are coated by the parylene VDP process to the same thickness as all other surfaces. A marked increase in wire-bond strength in pull tests on coated hybrids is observed. The increase in strength can be attributed to the strengthening effect of the coating on the wire (which typically exceeds in cross section the amount of metal in the wire) or to a reinforcement of the welded junction to the chip pad or substrate conductor.

A hybrid solid-state relay needed for a NASA space experiment underwent redesign to provide 2500-V dc isolation, input-to-output, while undergoing temperature cycling from -120 to $+180^\circ\text{C}$, as detailed in an instructive published case history (58). The electrical isolation requirement was met only by using a conformal coating, although several conventional coatings were evaluated along with parylene. These stresses in the thicker conventional coatings associated with temperature excursions resulted, in all cases other than parylene, in the rupture of the circuitry and the functional failure of the relay.

During the manufacture of hybrid circuits, it is possible to generate small metallic fragments such as wire chips and solder balls. If they are not removed before hermetic packaging, they can disrupt performance of the unit at some future time. In certain aerospace or military applications where no physical replacement of the unit is possible, such a failure could mean the loss of a mission. A program intended to improve the reliability of hermetic packages in critical systems concluded by finding a solution to this problem by applying a parylene coating to the inside of the hybrids. The coating confers electrical insulation to all surfaces and tends to anchor any loose particles; it also confers nonconductance should they break loose from their moorings. From the standpoint of coating technology, the most interesting part of this solution to the particle-immobilization problem is the throwing power, demonstrated by the fact that the entire internal surface of the hybrid is coated through a 0.5–1.0-mm hole in the lid of the hermetic package (59).

Semiconductors. The distinctive conformality of parylene is often regarded as a handicap for meeting the requirements of an interlayer dielectric (ILD) in large-scale integration (LSI) multilevel interconnection systems. After many layers of successive patterning, a planarizing procedure is very much needed, not a procedure that would replicate the existing lumpiness. A polyimide, the first organic compound to be used in a commercial semiconductor structure, was selected for this application (60), because of the planarization inherent in its spinning application procedure. However, because parylene offers distinct advantages in purity and thickness control and low moisture absorption (particularly

in comparison to the polyimides), it receives continued attention in the search for new fabrication techniques (61–63). Recognition of the need to lower the dielectric constant of ILD insulating materials as a means of improving device performance has generated a renewed interest in organics in general, and the parylenes in particular. To meet this opportunity, the intent to produce the dimer of the per- α -fluorinated version known as Parylene AF4, poly($\alpha, \alpha, \alpha', \alpha'$ -tetrafluoro-*p*-xylylene) [74952-03-7], has been announced (64). In addition to offering a dielectric constant in the vicinity of 2.35, its thermal stability is such that it can withstand back-end-of-line processing steps at temperatures up to 450°C without perceptible weight loss.

In an interesting extension of the conventional solid-state device concept, where a thin film covers the channel of a field-effect transistor (FET), the electron current in the channel may be made to respond to changes in the chemical environment on the opposite side of the film. Thus a silicon nitride film on a channel gives an ion-selective FET (ISFET) that responds to the pH of a solution with which it is in contact. The hydrophobic nature of parylene, on the other hand, enables the channel it covers to be independent of solution composition, and such a channel can be used as a reference electrode. An important advantage of parylene in this context is the thinness with which it can be deposited as a continuous film. The gate coatings are 0.1 μm thick, a thinness required if the sensor is to have a speedy response. An experimental probe-type all-solid-state pH sensor has been demonstrated (65). It was also demonstrated that chemically modifying the parylene surface with crown ether compounds can give an ISFET (known as a CHEMFET) that responds to potassium ion concentration.

Sensors for physical effects are also fabricated using standard semiconductor technology. A notable example is a silicon membrane pressure transducer, which, among its many other uses, is currently employed as a manifold pressure transducer in automobiles (66). The thin membrane of single-crystal silicon was prepared by etching most of the wafer thickness away, into which a resistive Wheatstone Bridge network that enables an electrical readout of the membrane's physical strain while flexing had previously been diffused. Although it is desirable to insulate the membrane electrically from the medium it measures, it is also desirable to do so without affecting the elasticity of the membrane, so that it retains its calibration of electrical output vs input pressure. A thin coating of Parylene C easily accomplishes both. In an inversion of roles, these same pressure transducers were used to sense the stresses imparted to coated substrates by a variety of MIL-I-46058C qualified coating materials (67). Whereas all other coatings, as a result of their cure shrinkages acting through their greater thicknesses modified by their assorted elastic moduli, affected sensor calibration in all cases, the presence of 13 μm of Parylene C was barely detectable.

Capacitors. The outstandingly low dielectric loss of parylenes make them superior candidates for dielectrics in high quality capacitors. Furthermore, their dielectric constant and loss remain constant over a wide temperature range. In addition, they can be easily formed as thin, pinhole-free films. Kemet Flatkaps are fabricated by coating thin aluminum foil with Parylene N on both sides and winding the coated foils in pairs (68).

Parylenes are also used to coat the rotor and stator plates of miniature variable-air-gap tuning capacitors (69). Coating the plate raises the voltage that must be applied between two parallel plates for a discharge to occur in the air

gap. Thus, a closer plate spacing is permitted, and a smaller unit having the same electrical function can be built. This is also beneficial in improving design capacitance per unit volume. Compared to the alternative of interleaving dielectric films between the plates, the coated-plate technique offers the advantages of simplicity in assembly as well as reliability of the unit. Uniformity and thickness control are of paramount importance in this case.

The Bathythermograph. The thermistor sensing probe of a disposable bathythermograph is coated with parylene. This instrument is used to chart the ocean water temperature as a function of depth. Parylene provides the needed insulation resistance and is thin and uniform enough to permit a rapid and accurate response to the temperature of the surrounding salt water (70).

Miniature Electrical Components. In the manufacture of miniature transformers and motor armatures, it is often necessary that the winding be electrically isolated from the bobbin. The insulating varnish of fine copper wire often does not survive the rigors of the winding operation, and, particularly in the case of the smaller devices, the bobbin requires insulation. However, a thicker insulation than is absolutely necessary takes up space that otherwise could be used for more turns of wire. Thus, thickness control in the coating of the bobbin means better performance of the finished device. Parylene is used in the manufacture of high quality miniature stepping motors, such as those used in wristwatches, and as a coating for the ferrite cores of pulse transformers, magnetic tape-recording heads, and miniature inductors, where the abrasiveness of the ferrite is particularly damaging. In the coating of complex, tiny objects such as these, the VDP process has an extra labor-saving advantage. It is possible to coat thousands of such articles simultaneously by tumbling them during the VDP operation (71).

Medical Uses. Under the auspices of the National Institutes of Health Artificial Heart program (72), Parylene C received considerable attention as a component of a novel scheme for achieving blood compatibility in a flexible pump chamber wall by anchoring the endothelial tissue of the host to it. A microfiber nonwoven fabric anchored to the flexible wall by an overcoating of Parylene C provides scaffolding for cellular ingrowth (73). Although the scheme is not used today, the program contributed a significant amount of favorable biocompatibility data on Parylene C, particularly in the area of cytotoxicity (74). Parylene's minimal perturbation of cells growing in its vicinity can be ascribed to its high purity and its ability to slow down impurity species that might otherwise diffuse out of a substrate material. The corrosive biological environment does not affect parylene, which cannot be hydrolytically degraded.

Parylene's use in the medical field is linked to electronics. Certain pacemaker manufacturers use it as a protective conformal coating on pacemaker circuitry (75). The coated circuitry is sealed in a metal can, so that the parylene coating serves only as a backup should the primary barrier leak. There is also interest in its use as an electrode insulation in the fabrication of miniature electrodes for long-term implantation to record or to stimulate neurons in the central or peripheral nervous system, as the "front end" of experimental neural prostheses (76). One report describes the 3-year survival of functioning parylene-coated electrodes in the brain of a monkey (77).

Artifact Conservation. As books age, the paper of their pages becomes brittle. A relatively thin coating of parylene can make these embrittled pages

stronger (78). Parylene coats the fibers conformally and welds them together at crossing points, providing added structural strength. Although parylene does little to retard the chemical processes that make the paper brittle, it restores some physical strength. Furthermore, the parylene coating can be applied to the existing book without disturbing the binding, thus saving the labor of disassembly. The concept has been extended to other fragile artifacts, such as fabrics.

Laser Fusion Targets. In the search for new energy sources, some research is directed toward the thermonuclear fusion of deuterium–tritium (DT) mixtures. In laser-driven inertial confinement fusion, a single laser pulse crushes a target containing the DT fuel to one thousandth of its normal volume and achieves a temperature of 10^8 K. The energy per pulse in current lasers is small, which limits the experimental targets to a diameter of about $100\ \mu\text{m}$. The outer layer of the spherical target absorbs the omnidirectionally incident laser energy and ablates as it is thermally destroyed, imparting a reactive compressive force on the inner portions of the target, thus compressing it. The dimensions of the outer layer are central to achieving hydrodynamic stability during the implosion process. Concentricity, sphericity, and thickness (ca $10\ \mu\text{m}$) must be better than 5%, and surface roughness must be no greater than $0.1\ \mu\text{m}$. Parylene is a leading contender for the outer layer, and considerable ingenuity has been applied in several methods for experimental target fabrication (79,80).

Contamination Control. In a number of developing technologies, contamination by small particles is a serious problem. To the extent that the generation of freely mobile particles is reduced by securing them to their initial locations, parylene coating of critical system components can be useful. In the manufacture of Winchester disk drive units, large magnesium castings are coated with parylene. This increases system reliability (81), presumably because the large surface within the sealed unit, if not coated, is capable of producing particles of the same destructive potential that the system seal is supposed to prevent from entering.

Barrier Coating. The bulk permeabilities of parylenes, although finite, are generally lower than those of most other types of plastic materials. The further advantage of coating continuity inherent in the VDP process allows the parylenes to realize the benefits of their low permeabilities to the fullest, without leakage of the permeant through coating defects such as cracks or pinholes. Thus the parylenes are uniquely suited as protective encapsulants or barrier coatings (see BARRIER POLYMERS).

Where pieces of lithium metal are coated with Parylene C, and their subsequent reaction to water vapor follows, the steady-state generation of hydrogen can be controlled exactly by the rate of water transport through the coating (82). Pellets of nitronium perchlorate, a potent oxidizer useful as a solid-rocket propellant component, can be rendered less moisture-sensitive and compatible with organic binders by applying a coating of Parylene C (83). The absorption of water by particulate ammonium nitrate could be reduced tenfold by as little as a 0.7% coating of Parylene C (84). Particles of ammonium nitrate remain free-flowing after long exposures to ambient conditions of temperature and moisture when coated with as little as 0.2% Parylene C. The thermal sensitivity of Parylene C-coated ammonium nitrate (time to explosion) is unaffected by the coating. On the other hand, the 1.5–8% coating of particulate military-grade RDX explosive,

cyclotrimethylene trinitramine, produced significant changes in physical and explosive properties. The changes were attributed to the chemical properties of the protective Parylene C coating and to the virtual absence of encapsulated agglomerates of RDX crystals (85).

In a recent report (86), a 150–200 mg/cm² Parylene C coating provided protection against moisture uptake by three-phase—polyimide, microballoons, and air—syntactic foams. In a previously reported coating of a similar foam, the stated purpose was strengthening (87).

Corrosion Control. The oxygen and water permeability and thinness of the parylene coatings notwithstanding, the rate of corrosion of a coated surface is often significantly reduced. In one case, the corrosion of a plated wire memory was reduced to the point where no bits were lost during 30 cycles of a MIL STD 202D-106C test by overcoating the permalloy plating, which had been previously coated with a Ni–P anticorrosive layer, with Parylene N (88).

Dry Lubricant. The static and dynamic coefficients of friction for the parylenes are low and virtually the same. This feature is an advantage in the use of a parylene coating as a dry lubricant on the bearing surfaces of miniature stepping motors. Coating a threaded ferrite core significantly reduces the abrasion to coil forms (89).

Pellicles and Membranes. By separating the coating from the substrate after deposition, the unique coating features of parylenes, especially continuity and thickness control and uniformity, can be imparted to a free-standing film. In practice, a sheet of smooth glass is coated with a layer of a hygroscopic substance before being coated with parylene. The film is then lifted from the glass by water immersion to activate the release agent. In this manner, uniform, continuous, free-standing parylene films with thicknesses of less than 0.1 μm can be prepared. Applications of such films include optical beam splitters (90), a window for a micrometeoroid detector (91), a detector cathode for an X-ray streak camera (92), windows for X-ray proportional counters (93), a charge stripper for converting a portion of the H⁺-output beam of a 50 MV LINAC to neutral H⁰ for diagnostic purposes (94), and a massless support for projectile abrasion testing (95); proposals have included the membrane structure for a solar sail (96).

Health and Safety

In a world increasingly conscious of the dangers of contact with chemicals, a process that is conducted within the walls of a vacuum chamber, such as the VDP process for parylene coatings, offers great advantages. Provided the vacuum pump exhaust is appropriately vented and suitable caution is observed in cleaning out the cold trap (trace products of the pyrolysis, which may possibly be dangerous, would collect here), the VDP parylene process has an inherently low potential for operator contact with hazardous chemicals.

To an experienced operator trained in the handling of industrial chemicals, the dimers present little cause for concern in handling or storage. The finished polymer coating presents even less of a health problem; contact with the reactive monomer is unlikely. In the ancillary operations, such as cleaning or adhesion promotion, the operator must observe suitable precautions. Before using the

process chemicals, operators must read and understand the current Material Safety Data Sheets, which are available from the manufacturers.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Xylylene Polymers” in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 15, pp. 98–124, by William F. Gorham and W. D. Niegisch, Union Carbide Corporation; in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 990–1025, by W. F. Beach, C. Lee, D. R. Bassett, and T. M. Austin, Union Carbide Corporation, and R. Olson, Nova Tran Corporation; in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 12, pp. 587–626, by W. F. Beach, Alpha Metals.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. L. A. Errede and M. Szwarc, *Q. Rev. Chem. Soc.* **12**, 301 (1958); M. Szwarc, *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **16**(7), 473 (1976).
2. W. F. Gorham and W. D. Niegisch, in N. M. Bikales, ed., *Encyclopedia of Polymer Science and Technology*, Vol. 15, Wiley-Interscience, New York 1989, 98–124.
3. U. S. Pat. 3,342,754 (Sept. 19, 1967), W. F. Gorham (to Union Carbide Corp.).
4. W. F. Gorham, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1* **4**, 3030 (1966).
5. W. F. Gorham, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1* **4**, 3027 (1966).
6. R. B. Woodward and R. Hoffmann, *The Conservation of Orbital Symmetry*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., Hoboken, N.J., Chapt. 6, pp. 70, 85, and reference 96 therein.
7. L. K. Montgomery and co-workers, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **108**, 6004 (1986).
8. P. G. Mahaffy, J. D. Wieser, and L. K. Montgomery, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **99**, 4514 (1977).
9. U. S. Pat. 4,532,369 (July 30, 1985), H. Hartner (to Merck); U. S. Pat. 4,769,505 (Sept. 6, 1988), C. Lee and D. R. Bassett (to Union Carbide Corp.).
10. D. J. Williams, J. M. Pearson, and M. Levy, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **92**, 1436 (1970).
11. S. K. Pollak, B. C. Raine, and W. J. Hehre, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **103**, 6308 (1981).
12. M. J. S. Dewar, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **104**, 1449 (1982).
13. H. G. Gilch, *J. Polym. Sci. A-1* **4**, 438–439 (1966).
14. V. V. Korshak and S. L. Sosin, *Vysokomol. Soyed.* **7**, 232–238 (1965).
15. U. S. Pat. 3,787,382 (Jan. 22, 1974), A. N. Wright, W. R. Burgess, and E. V. Wilkus (to General Electric Co.).
16. M. Inoue, H. Fujioka, T. Sorita, and T. Tanaka, *ACS Polym. Prepr.* **28**, 332 (1987).
17. Y. Takai, Y. Hayase, T. Mizutani, and M. Ieda, *J. Phys. D.* **17**, 399 (1984).
18. J. R. Salem, F. O. Sequeda, J. Duran, W. Y. Lee, and R. M. Yang, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol.* **A4**, 369 (1986); Y. Takahashi, M. Iijima, K. Inagawa, and A. Itoh, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol.* **A5**, 2253 (1987).
19. F. E. Arnold and L. S. Tan, *31st Int. SAMPE Symp.* **31**, 1185 (1986).
20. U. S. Pat. 4,711,964 (Dec. 8, 1987), L. S. Tan and F. E. Arnold (to University of Dayton).
21. Y. Ito, S. Miyata, M. Nakatsuka, and T. Saegusa, *J. Org. Chem.* **46**, 1043 (1981).
22. Eur. Pat. 220,743 (May 6, 1987), R. Ungarelli, M. A. Baretta, and L. Sogli (to Montedison SpA).
23. Eur. Pat. 226,255 (June 24, 1987), R. Ungarelli, M. A. Baretta, and A. Malacrida (to Montedison SpA).
24. Eur. Pat. 220,744 (May 6, 1987), G. F. Pregaglia, M. A. Baretta, and A. Malacrida (to Montedison SpA).
25. C. J. Brown, *J. Chem. Soc.* 3265 (1953).
26. R. H. Boyd, *Tetrahedron* **22**, 119 (1966); D. L. Rodgers, E. F. Westrum, Jr., and J. T. S. Andrews, *J. Chem. Thermodyn.* **5**, 733–739 (1973).

27. D. E. Kirkpatrick, Ph.D. dissertation, Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, Troy, N.Y., 1984.
28. M. Gazicki, G. Surendran, W. James, and H. Yasuda, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **23**, 2255 (1985).
29. H. Sawada, *Thermodynamics of Polymerization*, Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York, 1976.
30. M. Souders and co-workers, *Ind. Eng. Chem.* **41**, 1048 (1949).
31. D. R. Stull, E. F. Westrum Jr., and G. C. Sinke, *The Chemical Thermodynamics of Organic Compounds*, Krieger, Malabar, Fla., 1987, p. 699.
32. D. E. Kirkpatrick, L. Judovits, and B. Wunderlich, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **24**, 45 (1986).
33. R. W. Warfield and M. C. Petree, *J. Polym. Sci.* **55**, 497 (1961).
34. S. Y. Lazareva, *Vysokomol. Soedin.* **A21**, 1509 (1979).
35. B. L. Joesten, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **18**, 439 (1974).
36. W. A. Alpaugh and D. R. Morrow, *Thermochim. Acta* **9**, 171 (1974).
37. W. F. Beach, *Macromolecules* **11**(1), 72 (1978).
38. F. E. Cariou, D. J. Vally, and W. E. Loeb, *IEEE Trans. Parts Mater. Packag.* **PMP-1**(1), 54 (1965).
39. J. F. Gaynor, S. B. Desu, and J. J. Senkevich, *Macromolecules* **28**, 7343–7348 (1996).
40. B. J. Bachman, in *Proceedings of the 1st International SAMPE Electronics Conference*, Santa Clara, Calif., June 23–25, 1987, 431–440.
41. A. von Hippel, in E. U. Condon and H. Odishaw, eds., *Handbook of Physics*, 2nd ed., McGraw-Hill Book Co., Inc., New York, 1968, Part 4, p. 104.
42. U. S. Pats. 4,163,828 (Aug. 7, 1979); 4,173,664 (Nov. 6, 1979), both to G. S. Cieloszyk (to Union Carbide Corp.); and U. S. Pat. 4,176,209 (Nov. 27, 1979), T. E. Baker, G. L. Fix, and J. S. Judge (to Raytheon).
43. T. E. Nowlin, D. F. Smith, and G. S. Cieloszyk, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem. Ed.* **18**(7), 2103 (1980). T. E. Baker, G. L. Fix, and J. S. Judge, *J. Electrochem. Soc.* **127**, 1851 (1980).
44. W. H. Hubbel Jr., H. Brandt, and Z. A. Munir, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **13**, 493 (1975).
45. E. Sacher, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **28**, 1535 (1983).
46. R. S. Corley, H. C. Haas, M. W. Kane, and D. I. Livingston, *J. Polym. Sci.* **13**, 137 (1954).
47. T. E. Nowlin and D. F. Smith, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **25**, 1619 (1980).
48. D. E. Kirkpatrick and B. Wunderlich, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **24**, 931 (1986).
49. R. Iwamoto and B. Wunderlich, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys. Ed.* **11**, 2403 (1973).
50. S. Isoda, M. Tsuji, M. Ohara, A. Kawaguchi, and K. Katayama, *Polymer* **24**, 1155 (1983).
51. S. Isoda, T. Ichida, A. Kawaguchi, and K. Katayama, *Bull. Inst. Chem. Res. Kyoto Univ.* **61**, 222 (1983).
52. W. D. Niegisch, *J. Appl. Phys.* **38**, 4110 (1967).
53. M. S. Mathur and G. C. Tabisz, *J. Cryst. Mol. Struct.* **4**, 23 (1973).
54. M. A. Spivack and G. Ferrante, *J. Electrochem. Soc.* **119**, 1592 (1969).
55. *MIL-I-46058C(6): Insulating Compound, Electrical (for Coating Printed Circuit Assemblies)*, U.S. Dept. of Defense, Washington, D.C., Nov. 8, 1982.
56. U. S. Pat. 3,600,216 (Aug. 17, 1971), D. D. Stewart (to Union Carbide Corp.).
57. Ger. Pat. 2,737,792 (Mar. 2, 1978), D. M. Mahoney and W. F. Beach (to Union Carbide Corp.).
58. B. L. Slater, T. J. Riley, and W. Janssen, *Proceedings of the IEEE Power Electronics Specialists Conference*, Pasadena, Calif., June 11–13, 1973, 163–169.

59. V. S. Kale and T. J. Riley, *IEEE Trans. Parts Hybrids Packag.* **PHP-1**(3), 273 (1977).
60. D. L. Bergeron, J. P. Kent, and K. E. Morrett, *22nd Proceedings of the International Reliability Physics Symposium*, Las Vegas, Nev., 1984, 229–233.
61. J. M. Baker, J. H. Magerlein, and M. J. Palmer, *IBM Tech. Disel. Bull.* **27**, 4382 (Dec. 1984).
62. Jpn. Pat. 62 106456 (Nov. 1, 1986), M. Kanazawa and S. Kawanako (to Fujitsu, Ltd.).
63. W. F. Beach and T. M. Austin, *Hybrid Circ. Technol.*, 33–36 (Jan. 1990).
64. J. Wary, R. A. Olson, and W. F. Beach, in *2nd International Dielectrics for VLSI/ULSI Multilevel Insulation Conference (DUMIC)*, Santa Clara, Calif., Feb. 20–21, 1996, 207–213.
65. T. Matsuo, H. Nakajima, T. Osa, and J. Anzai, *Sens. Actuat.* **9**(2), 115 (1986).
66. R. Olson, *Electron. Packag. Prod.*, 213 (May 1980).
67. R. Olson, *Circuits Mfg.* 57 (Jan. 1986).
68. U. S. Pat. 3,327,184 (June 20, 1967), D. J. Valley (to Union Carbide Corp.); U. S. Pat. 3,319,141 (May 9, 1967), F. E. Cariou, W. E. Loeb, and D. J. Valley (to Union Carbide Corp.).
69. U. S. Pat. 3,949,280 (Apr. 6, 1976), S. Odagiri, M. Nuka, N. Shinba, M. Baba, and Y. Iizuka (to Mitsumi Electric Co., Ltd.); Ger. Pat. 2,546,332 (Apr. 29, 1976), J. Lefeber and J. deJonge (to N. V. Philips Gloeilampenfabriken).
70. U. S. Pat. 3,389,604 (June 25, 1968), G. B. Williams (to Buzzards Corp.).
71. Ger. Pat. 2,329,186 (Jan. 3, 1974), F. R. Tittmann (to Union Carbide Corp.); U. S. Pat. 3,300,332 (Jan. 27, 1967), W. F. Gorham and H. L. Willard (to Union Carbide Corp.).
72. *Contract No. N01-HV-8-1388*, National Heart, Lung and Blood Institute, Division of Heart and Vascular Diseases, Bethesda, Md.
73. F. R. Tittmann and W. F. Beach, in M. Szycher and W. J. Robinson, eds., *Synthetic Biomedical Polymers: Concepts and Applications*, Technomic Publishing Co., Inc., Westport, Conn., 1980, 117–132.
74. R. H. Kahn and W. E. Burkel, *In Vitro* **8**, 451 (1973).
75. R. Olson, *Electron. Packag. Prod.*, 213 (May 1980).
76. E. M. Stemmed, *J. Electrophysiol. Tech. Eng.* **10**(1), 19 (1983); G. E. Loeb, M. Salcman, and E. M. Schmidt, *IEEE Trans. Biond. Eng.* **BME-24**(2), 121 (1977).
77. E. M. Schmidt, J. S. McIntosh, and M. J. Bak, *Med. Biolog. Eng. Comput.*, 96 (Jan. 1988).
78. B. J. Humphrey, *J. Am. Inst. Conserv.* **25**, 15 (1986); C. J. Shahani and W. K. Wilson, *Am. Sci.* **75**, 240 (1987).
79. D. F. Peiffer, T. J. Corley, G. M. Halpern, and B. A. Brinker, *Polymer* **22**, 450 (1981); R. Q. Gram, H. Kim, J. F. Mason, and M. Wittman, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol.* **A4**(3), 1145 (1986); K. W. Beig, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol.* **18**, 1231 (1981).
80. U. S. Pat. 4,381,963 (May 3, 1983), I. S. Goldstein, F. D. Kalk, and H. W. Deckman (to The University of Rochester).
81. R. Olson and R. Veague, *Microcontamination*, 57 (Jan. 1985).
82. M. A. Spivack, *Corrosion (Houston)* **26**, 371 (1970).
83. U. S. Pat. 3,523,839 (Aug. 11, 1970), L. Shechter and W. E. Loeb (to Union Carbide Corp.); U. S. Pat. 3,556,881 (Jan. 19, 1971), W. F. Gorham and W. E. Loeb (to Union Carbide Corp.).
84. T. C. Castorina and A. F. Smetana, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **18**, 1373 (1974).
85. A. F. Smetana and T. C. Castorina, in *Proceedings of the Propellants, Explosives and Pyrotechnics Conference*, Dec. 3–4, 1974, Picatinny Arsenal, Dover, N.J.
86. A. Calahorra, O. Gara, and S. Kenig, *J. Cell. Plast.* **23**, 383 (1987).
87. R. J. McWhirter, *Report from Bendix Corp., BDX-613-2358*, Bendix Corp., Kansas City, Mo., Sept. 1980.

88. K. Makino, S. Kawakami, and S. Orihara, *Fujitsu Sci. Tech. J.* **9**(4), 153 (1973).
89. R. Olson, *Electron. Packag. Prod.*, 213 (May 1980).
90. M. A. Spivack, J. N. Pike, and W. M. Jayne, in *Proceedings of the Electro-Optical Systems Design Conference*, New York, Sept. 18–20, 1973, 362–371.
91. N. Pailer and E. Grun, *Planet. Space Sci.* **28**, 321 (1980).
92. P. L. Tassano, *J. Vac. Sci. Technol.* **A3**, 2036 (1980).
93. P. H. Sheather, *J. Physics E.* **6**, 319 (1973).
94. S. L. Kramer and D. R. Moffett, *IEEE Trans. Nucl. Sci.* **NS-28**, 2174 (1981).
95. U. S. Pat. 3,940,530 (Feb. 24, 1976), W. E. Loeb and M. A. Spivack (to Union Carbide Corp.); U. S. Pat. 3,864,202 (Feb. 4, 1975), W. E. Loeb and M. A. Spivack (to Union Carbide Corp.).
96. U. S. Pat. 4,321,299 (Mar. 23, 1982), R. A. Frosch and R. A. Frazer (to NASA).

W. F. BEACH
Alpha Metals

Y

YIELD AND CRAZING IN POLYMERS

Introduction

Polymers serve increasingly in structural applications as lightweight replacements for more traditional materials such as metals and wood. In light of this it is important to understand and be able to characterize the engineering or mechanical properties over the likely service conditions. Typically when a material fails in service it is thought of in terms of a catastrophic brittle failure and these modes have been partially discussed elsewhere (see FRACTURE; FATIGUE). However, polymers (both thermoplastics and thermosets) can also fail by yielding, and while generally this is not necessarily a catastrophic event (ie the material remains intact) it does mean the material retains a degree of permanent deformation and is usually considered a failure criterion in terms of structural integrity. Furthermore, the yield response of polymers affects the plastic zone at the crack tip and this is important in fracture events.

Another deformation mechanism common to many polymers is that of crazing. Crazes are generally a precursor to brittle failure, though on the local scale they are the result of highly localized yielding phenomena. As such they provide a significant source of energy absorption and, further, since the crazes remain load bearing, the time for their initiation and growth can be a significant portion of the overall lifetime of the material.

The present article focuses on yield and crazing in polymers and does not deal directly with the viscoelastic response, though it is recognized that yield and viscoelasticity share many of the same features—strain rate and temperature dependence (1) and even concepts such as time–temperature superposition (2) (see VISCOELASTICITY; AGING, PHYSICAL). We first present a summary of conventional yield criteria, these being methods to quantify the yield stress as a function of the applied stress field, ie uniaxial vs biaxial. Following this the phenomenology of yield is addressed by considering a number of models of the yield process in polymers, including the observation of strain softening and strain hardening. A brief overview of craze structure and morphology is

given and several criteria for the initiation, growth, and failure of crazes are described.

Yield

A general definition of yield is the point at which a material ceases to deform elastically in a recoverable manner and undergoes permanent (irreversible) plastic deformation. Historically, the study of yield and the theories describing it were developed for metals (3) and, there, this definition works well, with elastic deformation arising from lattice distortions and plastic deformation from the motion of dislocations. In polymers the molecular processes involved in deformation cannot be so easily split into such distinct mechanisms. Further, it has long been recognized that polymers exhibit a viscoelastic response to deformation (4–7) and consequently the general mechanical properties are both rate and temperature dependent. Such a viscoelastic response is evidenced not only on deformation but also on recovery. The time-dependent nature of the recovery means that for polymers the determination of permanent (plastic) deformation can depend on how long one is prepared to conduct the relevant measurements. That said, general aspects of the large deformation behavior of amorphous glassy and semi-crystalline polymers can be usefully discussed in terms of conventional yield criteria.

We begin by examining general stress (load per unit area)–strain (fractional change in length) responses for polymers under uniaxial tensile loading and develop what is essentially an elastic–plastic analysis of the material behavior. Loading under compressive and shear forces is then considered. This is followed by general yield criteria: these can be considered macroscopic criteria relating the applied stress to some critical value for yielding (generally a critical shear stress) and their modification to introduce pressure dependence. While such criteria are useful engineering concepts, it is perhaps more satisfying to be able to describe yielding from a microscopic perspective, and this is addressed in the section on yield theories. Subsequent to the discussion of yield phenomena we present a section on another important aspect of polymer mechanical behavior, that of crazing. Crazing is a localized yielding process that may be dilatational in nature. It results in essentially load-bearing cracks that are generally a precursor to macroscopically brittle failure when the craze density is low.

Before describing the yield response of polymers in the next section, we remark here that polymer mechanical behavior depends strongly not only on the time (rate) and temperature, but also on the morphology of the material (8,9). Hence the yield phenomenology described below will approximately describe the behavior, but the details of the behavior will depend strongly on the morphology and where one is relative to the glass-transition temperature, T_g . For example, above the T_g , an amorphous polymer such as polystyrene does not yield but undergoes viscous flow. On the other hand, a material such as polyethylene, which is semi-crystalline, will undergo a yield process above the glass transition. Below T_g , both glassy amorphous and glassy semi-crystalline polymers can undergo yielding, though the processes may differ between the two types of materials. Much of the development of the present article deals with yield of glassy

amorphous polymers, though some discussion of yielding in semi-crystalline materials is also presented.

General Stress–Strain Curves under Uniaxial Tensile Loading. In uniaxial extension or compression, the true axial stress, σ_T , is given by the current load (P) divided by the current cross sectional area (A):

$$\sigma_T = P/A \quad (1)$$

If it is assumed that the deformation takes place at constant volume (a reasonable assumption under most conditions of plastic deformation where the volume changes are small compared to the total strain), then the instantaneous area (A) and length (l) are related to the original cross sectional area and length (A_0 , l_0 respectively) by

$$Al = A_0l_0 \quad (2)$$

We now define the engineering (or nominal) stress, σ_E , as

$$\sigma_E = P/A_0 \quad (3)$$

and the engineering strain, ε , as

$$\varepsilon = (l - l_0)/l_0 \quad (4)$$

so that

$$l/l_0 = (1 + \varepsilon) \quad (5)$$

From equations 1–5 we find that

$$\sigma_E = \sigma_T/(1 + \varepsilon) \quad \sigma_T = \sigma_E(1 + \varepsilon) \quad (6)$$

The deformation response of a material to a given loading regime is described by generalized equations known as constitutive relations. For uniaxial loading in the limit of small strains, the simplest of these is known as Hooke's Law and linearly relates the stress to the strain:

$$E = \frac{\sigma}{\varepsilon} \quad (7)$$

where E is Young's modulus.

The extreme temperature and rate sensitivity of polymers means that they can display a wide range of mechanical behaviors depending on the precise conditions under which they are tested. Figure 1 shows a set of typical engineering stress–strain curves that an amorphous polymer might be expected to exhibit as a function of rate or temperature in a uniaxial tensile test (10,11). At low temperatures or high rates polymers tend to fail in a brittle manner (Curve A)—the strain to failure is low (of the order of a few percent) and the modulus high (of the order

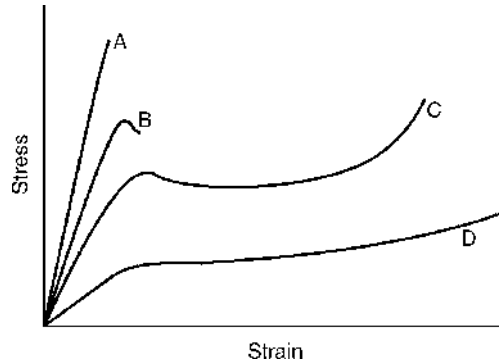


Fig. 1. Typical engineering stress–strain curves for an amorphous polymer as a function of temperature or strain rate.

of a few GPa). As the temperature increases (or the strain rate decreases) the curves progress such that the material passes through a softening regime (Curve D), characterized by low moduli, an indistinct (or nonexistent) yield point, and large strains to failure (>100 percent). Ultimately, at a sufficiently high temperature (or low enough strain rate), the material may show a pure rubbery response with a modulus some orders of magnitude lower than those indicated in Figure 1 (curve omitted for clarity).

Of particular interest in this discourse is the behavior shown in Curves B and C. At small strains (typically <1%), the stress rises approximately linearly with increasing strain, i.e. the material displays Hookean-like behavior (note that this is not strictly true for polymers because of viscoelastic effects; however if the applied strain rate is faster than the relaxation time for the material then little relaxation will occur and it is a reasonable approximation). At larger strains (above the proportional limit) the engineering stress will continue to rise with strain, though less rapidly. Eventually, at a certain strain, the stress reaches a maximum and then falls with increasing strain. It is this peak stress which is generally taken to be the yield stress, σ_y , and the strain at which it occurs as the yield strain, ϵ_y . The nature of the load drop and the postyield behavior are discussed subsequently. Here it is sufficient to note that the peak in engineering stress is normally accompanied by macroscopic changes to the sample geometry. The plastic deformation is concentrated locally to a small portion of the specimen. This section is seen to reduce in width and to form what is called a “neck.” Because of the change in cross-sectional area, the local stresses in the neck region can be significantly higher than the engineering stress and indeed may be rising while the load or engineering stress is falling (12,13). Accordingly it is instructive to look at the true stress–strain behavior. This is important because while strain localization is often associated with yield behavior, such localization is not necessary for yielding to occur.

Considère Construction (14). Referring back to equation 6 for the true and engineering stresses,

$$\sigma_E = \sigma_T / (1 + \epsilon); \quad \sigma_T = \sigma_E (1 + \epsilon)$$

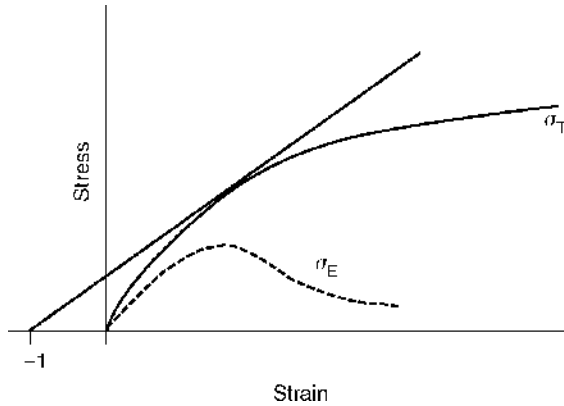


Fig. 2. Engineering (σ_E) and true stress (σ_T) as a function of strain in uniaxial tension. The Considère criterion for necking, that is the ability to draw a tangent to the true stress curve from $\varepsilon = -1$, is also shown.

we see that for all finite strains under uniaxial tensile loading, the true stress is greater than the engineering stress (for uniaxial compressive loading, the true stress is always lower than the engineering stress).

Figure 2 compares the engineering stress, σ_E , and true stress, σ_T , as a function of engineering strain for uniaxial tensile loading. As noted above, the neck is seen to form at the point where the load (or engineering stress) ceases to rise, ie where

$$\frac{d\sigma_E}{d\varepsilon} = 0 = \frac{1}{(1+\varepsilon)} \frac{d\sigma_T}{d\varepsilon} - \frac{\sigma_T}{(1+\varepsilon)^2} \quad (8a)$$

or

$$\frac{d\sigma_T}{d\varepsilon} = \frac{\sigma_T}{(1+\varepsilon)} \quad (8b)$$

In practice then, the point at which a polymer will form a neck is given by drawing a tangent to the true stress–strain curve from the point $\varepsilon = -1$, as illustrated in Figure 2. [We note here that in this condition, yielding is a localization phenomenon. It is also possible that yielding can be a material property unrelated to localization and this is touched upon in a subsequent section.]

Necking and Cold Drawing. Before further discussion of the Considère construction it would be useful to discuss the phenomenology of the yield and necking processes. As discussed above, yield in a material under uniaxial tensile loading is characterized by highly localized plastic deformation within the specimen and a corresponding decrease in the engineering stress. The exact position at which yield occurs on a nominally isotropic and uniform sample is impossible to predict. However, a small change in the local properties at some segment in the sample can lower the local yield stress such that yield will initiate there first. Alternatively, a flaw or inclusion can cause a stress concentration such that the

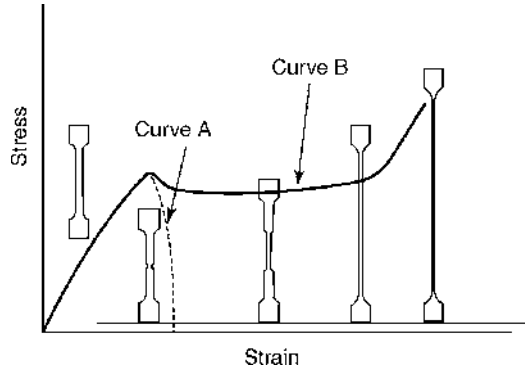


Fig. 3. Engineering stress–strain curves for a material showing, with increasing strain, strain localization (necking), cold drawing, and strain hardening. Also shown are schematics of the sample geometry at each stage.

local stress is higher than the yield stress. After this point one of two things may happen (refer to Fig. 3).

- (1) The material in the neck may continue to draw down. As it does so, the true stress continues to rise in the segment, which leads rapidly to failure. This is the case shown in Curve A in Figure 3.
- (2) The yielded material can undergo strain hardening. As the material yields and draws down, the polymer chains align along the stress direction, increasing the local stiffness (hence strain hardening is also known as orientation hardening). If the rate of strain hardening is greater than linear, this is sufficient to offset the increase in local stress due to area reduction, and the neck can stabilize. This is the case shown in Curve B in Figure 3. Also shown in Figure 3 are sketches of the deformation that would be seen in a typical tensile specimen as a function of cross-head displacement. Once the yielded material has hardened sufficiently to offset the increase in local stress, the stress (load) stabilizes to a constant value (the draw stress, σ_D) and the neck is seen to propagate along the remaining gage length of the sample until the whole sample has yielded. This process is known as cold drawing.

The oriented material in the strain-hardened section draws down to a characteristic extent under any given conditions and is known as the natural draw ratio, λ_D , and is given by the ratio of the length of the drawn section to its length before deformation. Further deformation can cause additional extension and hence further orientation and strain hardening, and the stress is seen to once again rise until eventually it exceeds the ultimate strength of the material and failure occurs.

In terms of the Considère construction, the criterion for a material to neck and cold draw is indicated by the ability to draw a second tangent to the true stress–strain curve from the point $\varepsilon = -1$ (Fig. 4). Another important aspect of yielding is that, while there is a clear drop in the engineering stress at (or near)

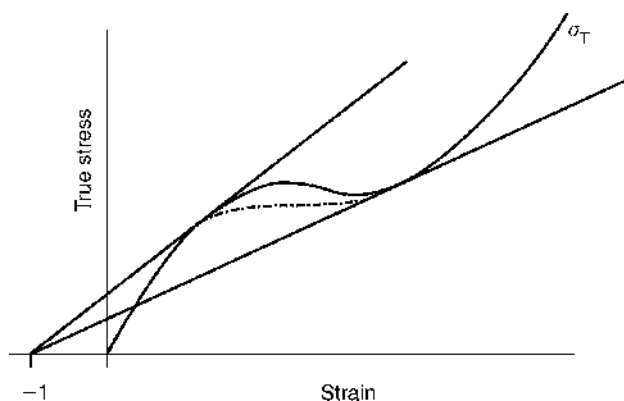


Fig. 4. True stress (σ_T) as a function of strain in uniaxial tension. The Considère criterion for cold drawing, that is the ability to draw a second tangent to the true stress curve from $\varepsilon = -1$, is also shown.

the yield point, there may also, though not necessarily, be a drop in the true stress after yield (Fig. 4). This drop in true stress is commonly referred to as strain softening. At the point of the second tangent, molecular orientation is sufficient to stiffen the material and strain hardening occurs.

Compressive Loading. The discussion above has been developed specifically for uniaxial tensile loading conditions, and this is still the most widely used method for testing of polymers. However, the formation of a localized neck means that it is difficult to measure the true strain at any given point and hence determine the true stress–true strain behavior. Moreover, because tests are generally carried out at a constant cross-head displacement rate, the spatially varying strain means the strain rate is poorly defined. G'Sell and co-workers (15,16) have gone some way to resolving this difficulty by using an optical system to monitor the local strain and a feedback mechanism to adjust the imposed deformation rate to perform constant true strain rate experiments. Alternatively, others (17,18) have used a video system to monitor the neck profile and so back-calculate the true stress–true strain rate profile in the neck region.

Some of the shortcomings of tensile testing are mitigated by the use of compressive loading, typically performed on cylindrical specimens. Since the localization seen when the sample necks is suppressed in this geometry it is experimentally easier to ensure a more uniform strain field; however, some care needs to be exercised to prevent buckling or barreling of the specimens. Barreling is caused by lateral constraint on the cylinder ends due to friction with the loading plates. A suitable (inert) lubricant or a thin PTFE film applied to the cylinder ends is often sufficient to prevent barreling. Buckling will occur if the aspect ratio of the cylinder (height-to-diameter) is too large—aspect ratios of 0.5 to 1 are typically used.

From tests conducted on polymer glasses under both tension and compression (19–23) the true stress versus true strain rate response can be determined and typical plots are shown in Figure 5 (19). As can be seen, qualitatively the true stress–true strain behaviors are similar for both deformation modes.

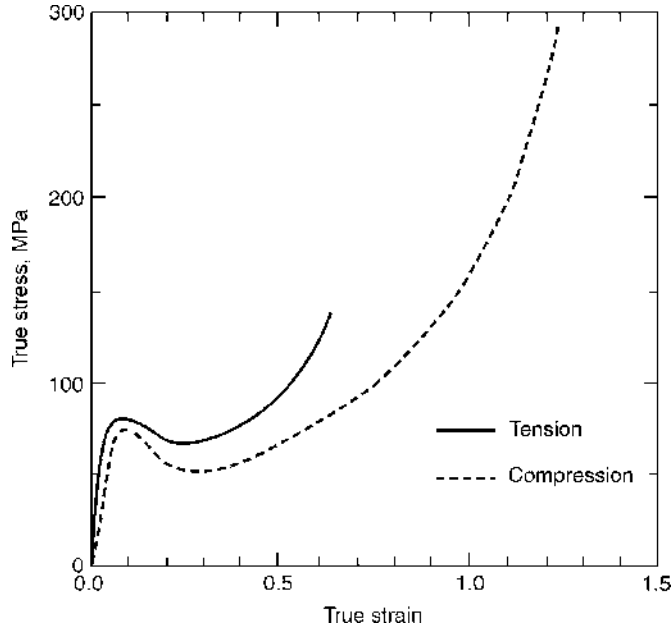


Fig. 5. True stress–strain curves for a polycarbonate under tension and compression. After Boyce and Arruda (19) with permission.

Importantly they both show a drop in true stress at the yield point. The observation of a drop in true stress without the localization (necking) seen in tensile tests confirms that the material is undergoing intrinsic strain softening. Importantly this shows that localization is not a necessary requirement for yield and further that the load drop seen in tensile tests is not necessarily simply the result of geometric changes.

While the true stress–true strain response is qualitatively similar in both compression and tension, the resulting deformation states are very different. Tensile loading leads to uniaxial molecular orientation along the loading axis. Compression on the other hand results in a biaxial orientation state in a plane perpendicular to the loading direction and so it is expected that quantitatively different stress–strain curves are seen. In addition, as discussed below, the hydrostatic pressure difference between tension and compression leads to differences in yield strength because yield in polymers is pressure dependent.

The preceding is a general overview of the main features of yield in polymers. From a practical point of view, structures are rarely subjected to simple uniaxial or shear loads and it is instructive to be able to determine when a material might yield under more complicated stress states. The following yield criteria attempt to do this from a phenomenological point of view, that is they do not address the fundamental mechanisms of yield but rather provide yield criteria for multiaxial loading conditions.

Yield Criteria. A practical yield criterion needs to describe the conditions under which yield will occur for a general stress state (eg tension, compression, shear, or some combination). Before we consider the various yield criteria which

have been proposed, it is useful to very briefly recap the definition of the principal stress components as these are generally the terms which are used to define the yield criteria (see VISCOELASTICITY for a more thorough introduction to the generalized stress and strain definitions).

If we take a small representative cube within a body, then the general stress state is given by the stress tensor of the forces acting on the faces of the cube:

$$\sigma_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_{11} & \sigma_{12} & \sigma_{13} \\ \sigma_{21} & \sigma_{22} & \sigma_{23} \\ \sigma_{31} & \sigma_{32} & \sigma_{33} \end{bmatrix} \quad (9)$$

and the generalized strain tensor as

$$\varepsilon_{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} \varepsilon_{11} & \varepsilon_{12} & \varepsilon_{13} \\ \varepsilon_{21} & \varepsilon_{22} & \varepsilon_{23} \\ \varepsilon_{31} & \varepsilon_{32} & \varepsilon_{33} \end{bmatrix} \quad (10)$$

where i refers to the axis normal to the plane on which the stress is acting and j the direction in which the stress acts.

For an isotropic, elastic material two elastic constants are sufficient to describe the material response, the elastic modulus E (eq. 7) and the Poisson's Ratio (ν), defined as the ratio of the axial to the (negative) transverse strain ($-\varepsilon_{11}/\varepsilon_{22}$).

Other mechanical functions such as the bulk modulus, K , and the shear modulus, G are interrelated by the following expressions:

$$\begin{aligned} G &= \frac{E}{2(1+\nu)} \\ K &= \frac{E}{(1-2\nu)} \\ E &= \frac{9KG}{3K+G} \end{aligned} \quad (11)$$

From equation 9, it is seen that the general stress state is described by nine independent components. However, if we assume that the sample is not undergoing rigid body rotation, then the shear components must give a net torque of zero, that is,

$$\sigma_{12} = \sigma_{21}; \sigma_{13} = \sigma_{31}; \sigma_{23} = \sigma_{32}; \quad (12)$$

Thus the stress state is defined by six independent components. Further, if the body is in equilibrium, then it is possible to define a set of orthogonal axes such that the shear components are zero. Such axes are termed the "principal axes"

and the resulting stress components the “principal stresses”:

$$\sigma_i = \begin{bmatrix} \sigma_1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \sigma_2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \sigma_3 \end{bmatrix} \quad (13)$$

The sum of the three principle stresses is known as the first stress invariant (or trace), I_1 ,

$$\sigma_1 + \sigma_2 + \sigma_3 = \text{constant}$$

and the related quantity, the mean stress, σ_M

$$\sigma_M = \frac{\sigma_1 + \sigma_2 + \sigma_3}{3}$$

Tresca Yield Criterion. The earliest proposal for a yield criterion in metals is due to Tresca (24), and it stated that yield occurs when the maximum shear stress reaches a critical value. With $\sigma_1 > \sigma_2 > \sigma_3$ the criterion can be written as

$$1/2(\sigma_1 - \sigma_3) = \tau_s \quad (14)$$

For the simplest loading situation of a tensile test at a stress level of σ_1 , with $\sigma_2 = \sigma_3 = 0$ we have

$$\tau_s = \sigma_1/2 \quad (15)$$

so that yield occurs when the applied tensile stress reaches twice the shear yield stress.

Von Mises Yield Criterion. The Von Mises yield criterion (also known as the maximum distortional energy criterion or the octahedral stress theory) (25) states that yield will occur when the elastic shear-strain energy density reaches a critical value. There are a number of ways of expressing this in terms of the principal stresses, a common one being

$$(\sigma_1 - \sigma_2)^2 + (\sigma_2 - \sigma_3)^2 + (\sigma_3 - \sigma_1)^2 = \text{constant} \quad (16)$$

If we again look at the case of simple tension, then we have $\sigma_2 = \sigma_3 = 0$. Defining the tensile yield stress as σ_Y , we see that the constant in equation 16 is $2\sigma_Y^2$.

If we look now at the case of pure shear, where we have $\sigma_1 = -\sigma_2 = \tau$ and $\sigma_3 = 0$, we find that

$$4\sigma_1^2 + \sigma_1^2 + \sigma_1^2 = 6\sigma_1^2 = 6\tau^2 = \text{constant} = 2\sigma_Y^2$$

ie

$$\tau = \frac{\sigma_Y}{\sqrt{3}} \quad (17)$$

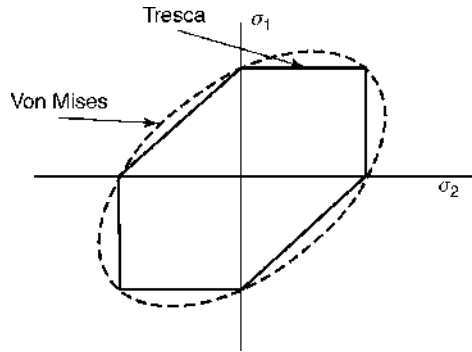


Fig. 6. The Tresca and von Mises yield criteria for plane strain conditions ($\sigma_3 = 0$).

Compare this to the prediction of $\sigma_Y/2$ from the Tresca criterion. The yield criteria for both the Tresca and Von Mises theories are shown graphically in Figure 6. For simplicity, the plots are shown for conditions of plane stress (ie $\sigma_3 = 0$). We can see that the Von Mises criterion describes an ellipse in stress space, with the Tresca criterion consisting of a series of straight lines bounded by the Von Mises limits.

Coulomb Yield Criterion. In 1773, Coulomb (26) identified two components important in the strength of building stone—cohesion and friction. He observed that the shear stress, τ , necessary to cause shear failure across a plane is resisted by the cohesion of the material S_0 and by the product, $\mu\sigma_N$, across that plane, where the constant μ is called the coefficient of internal friction and σ_N is the force normal to the shear plane:

$$\tau = S_0 + \mu\sigma_N \quad (18)$$

This criteria is often expressed in the form

$$\tau = \tau_c + \sigma_N \tan \phi \quad (19)$$

where τ_c is now the critical shear stress for yield and

$$\phi = 2\theta - \frac{\pi}{2} \quad (20)$$

and θ is the angle between the normal to the shear plane and the direction of the applied stress. Data from tensile, compressive, and torsional tests on a range of polymers under imposed hydrostatic pressure (20,27) have been successfully described by the Coulomb criterion, though it should be noted that the modified Von Mises criteria (see below) was equally successful.

Pressure-Modified Criteria. One major shortcoming of the criteria described above is that they predict that the yield stresses in tension and compression are the same. However, in practice it is generally found for polymers that the yield stress in compression is higher than that in tension. This effect is usually considered to be a consequence of the fact that the yield stress depends on

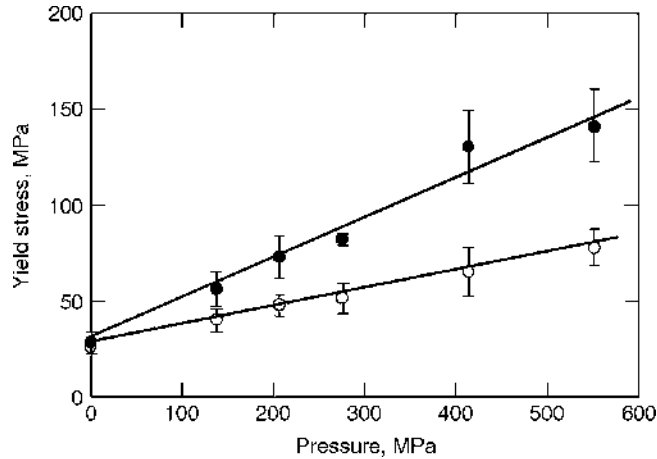


Fig. 7. Yield stress as a function of imposed hydrostatic pressure for polyethylene and polypropylene. Data from Ref. 28. ○, polyethylene, ●, Polypropylene.

the hydrostatic pressure that develops under load. The hydrostatic pressure component of the load in tension is negative, while in compression it is positive. In fact, experiments in which measurements were made under imposed hydrostatic pressures exhibit a strong pressure dependence of the yield stress in polymers (27–29 see also the extensive review in Reference 30). In general it was seen that the yield stress increased linearly with imposed hydrostatic compression (Fig. 7).

Modified Tresca Criterion. A simple way to modify the Tresca criterion to allow for a pressure dependence is to make the critical shear yield stress a linear function of hydrostatic pressure:

$$\tau_T = \tau_T^0 + \mu_T P \quad (21)$$

where τ_T^0 is the critical shear stress with no hydrostatic pressure, P is the hydrostatic pressure, given by $P = -(\sigma_1 + \sigma_2 + \sigma_3)/3$ and μ is a constant. Substituting into equations 14 and 15, we find that the yield stresses in tension σ_{Yt} and compression σ_{Yc} are given by

$$\sigma_{Yt} = 2\tau_T^0 / (1 + 2\mu/3) \quad (22)$$

$$\sigma_{Yc} = 2\tau_T^0 / (1 - 2\mu/3) \quad (23)$$

Modified Von Mises Criterion. In the same manner as the modification to the Tresca yield criterion one can modify the Von Mises criterion by introducing a linear dependence of the critical shear stress on the hydrostatic pressure:

$$\tau_M = \tau_M^0 + \mu_M P \quad (24)$$

where τ_M^0 is the critical shear stress with no hydrostatic component, P is the hydrostatic pressure, and μ_M is a material constant.

It can be seen from the above criteria that for polymers under uniaxial loading, yield is essentially characterized as a shear-controlled process. There is good experimental evidence for this being the case, and is shown most clearly by the observation of the formation of shear bands on uniaxially loaded specimens. These are regions of locally strained material running at an angle to the applied load, typically at approximately 45° . For isochoric deformation in an isotropic material the angle is precisely 45° , which corresponds to the angle of maximum shear stress. Any preorientation in the material (which introduces an anisotropy to the material) or dilatation during deformation can cause the angle to change. Dilatation generally causes the angle to decrease in the loading direction, while the change due to preorientation depends on the direction of the applied load to the orientation direction.

The criteria discussed above are certainly useful from an engineering point of view and offer a method to estimate the likelihood of failure for a given loading situation. However, from a fundamental viewpoint, they are lacking as they provide no insight into the microscopic or molecular mechanisms that give rise to yield. The following section examines a number of theories that seek to explain yield to varying degrees of complexity.

Theories of Yield

Adiabatic Heating. As far back as 1949 (31–33) it was postulated that local adiabatic heating in polymers causes a temperature rise in the neck region, thereby lowering the local yield stress. While this may be a factor at high rates of deformation where the heat generated cannot be dissipated, experiments using, for example, thermal imaging techniques have shown that the temperature rise is not sufficient to account for yielding. In addition, experiments conducted at rates low enough such that the system is essentially under quasi-isothermal conditions still show yield behavior (34) and therefore simple heating is not an adequate explanation for polymer yield.

Strain-Induced Dilatation. An alternative view of yield in polymers comes from the fact that a tensile strain induces a hydrostatic tension in the material and a corresponding increase in the sample volume. This in turn translates to an increase in the free volume, which increases the polymer mobility and effectively lowers the glass-transition temperature (T_g) of the polymer (alternatively it can be looked upon as increasing the free volume to the value it would have at the normal measured T_g). The increased mobility results in a lowering of the yield stress. Knauss and Emri (35) used an integral representation of nonlinear viscoelasticity with a state-dependent variable related to free volume to model the yield behavior, with the free volume a function of temperature, time, and stress history. This model uses the concept of reduced time (see VISCOELASTICITY), where application of a tensile stress causes a volume dilatation and consequently causes the material time scale to change by a shift factor related to the magnitude of the applied stress. Yield occurs because the free-volume shift factor causes the molecular mobility to increase in such a way that yield can occur.

However yield and plastic deformation are also observed in uniaxial compression and shear (19–23). In the former case the hydrostatic component of

stress is compressive and this leads to a reduction in free volume. Further, as was shown above when discussing the yield criteria, yielding in either tension or compression seems, for polymers, to be associated with the deviatoric (shear) component of the stress tensor, and this intrinsically involves no volume change. Thus, it seems unlikely that strain-induced changes in volume are the underlying cause of yield.

Models of Yield Based on Activated Processes

Models put forward in the in the late 1960s and early 1970s (eg Robertson (36), Haward and Thackray (37), Argon (38)) suggested that for yield and large-strain plastic deformation to occur two distinct sources of resistance must be overcome. First, yield is thought to occur when the polymer is stressed sufficiently to be able to overcome intermolecular resistance to segmental motion. Once the material has started to flow, molecular alignment occurs and changes the configurational entropy of the system. This change in entropy of the system causes the second resistance and is seen physically as a strain-hardening effect.

Yield is generally taken to be an activated process, and the first three of the following theories address this aspect. Models are then presented which address not only the yield of the material but the subsequent strain-softening and strain-hardening events that are observed. The first of these is the Haward and Thackray (37) one-dimensional model, which, while not physically realistic, laid the groundwork for many of the theories that followed it. This is followed in some detail by the BPA model of Boyce, Parks, and Argon (39), which addresses the rate, temperature, and pressure dependence of the intermolecular resistance and also the temperature dependence of entropic hardening. The model proposed by Tervoort and co-workers (40) is then discussed as this addresses some of the shortcomings of the BPA model, specifically the omission of a spectrum of relaxation times to describe the material behavior. The section is finished by examining the model of Caruthers and co-workers (41,42), which approaches yield from the framework of Rational Thermodynamics and seeks to explain a range of behaviors using a set of unified constitutive equations.

Internal Viscosity Model (Eyring Model). If we think of amorphous polymers as essentially viscous fluids then it is reasonable to think of yield and plastic deformation as viscous flow. Eyring (43) in 1936 developed a theory for flow in viscous fluids based on transition-state theory and it is instructive to look at this in more detail as it shows the temperature and rate dependency of the flow process. The Eyring model treats segmental motion as an activated process in which for a given segment to “jump” to an alternative position it needs to cross an energy barrier of height E^* . In the unstrained state the likelihood of either a forward jump or backward jump is equal, ie the stable states on either side of the barrier are at the same energy level (Fig. 8). The rate at which the segments cross the barrier is given by the Arrhenius equation:

$$\nu_0 = A \exp \left[- \frac{E^*}{kT} \right] \quad (25)$$

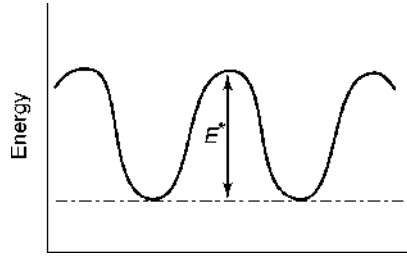


Fig. 8. Schematic of the energy landscape for an unstrained polymer for Eyring's model of viscous flow.

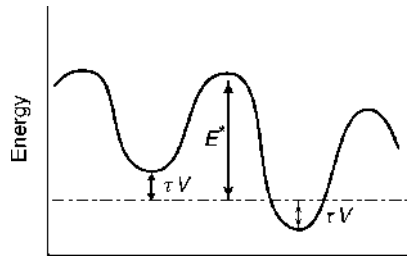


Fig. 9. Schematic of the energy landscape for a strained polymer for Eyring's model of viscous flow.

where A is a constant, E^* is the energy barrier height, k is Boltzmann's constant, and T the absolute temperature. According to the theory, application of a stress causes an asymmetric change in the stable energies on either side of the barrier of $+\tau V$ and $-\tau V$ for the forward and backward motions, respectively (Fig. 9). V is the Eyring activation volume and τ the applied shear stress. It is difficult to relate the activation volume V to a physical volume in the polymer, though the term τV in the model notionally represents the work required to move a polymer segment during flow. Under applied stress then, the frequency with which the segments jump in the forward direction is given by

$$\nu_f = A \exp\left(-\frac{E^* - \tau V}{kT}\right) \quad (26)$$

and the frequency they jump in the reverse direction is given by

$$\nu_b = A \exp\left(-\frac{E^* + \tau V}{kT}\right) \quad (27)$$

So, the net rate at which the segments jump is simply the difference in the forward and backward rates:

$$\nu_f - \nu_b = A \exp\left(-\frac{E^*}{kT}\right) \left[\exp\left(\frac{\tau V}{kT}\right) - \exp\left(-\frac{\tau V}{kT}\right) \right] \quad (28)$$

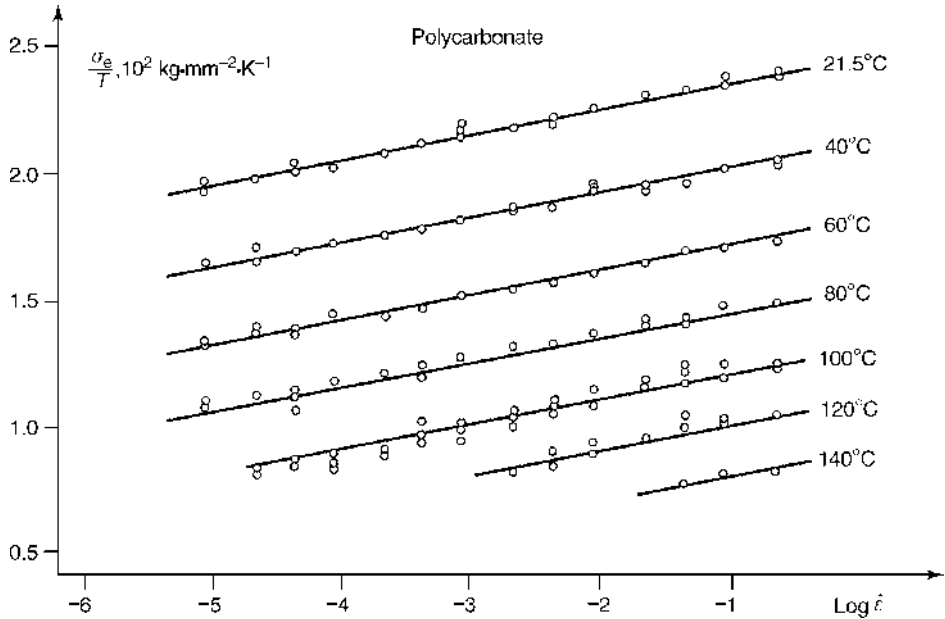


Fig. 10. Yield stress normalized to temperature as a function of logarithmic strain rate for polycarbonate. After Bauwens-Crowet and co-workers (44) with permission.

In a solid, the backward jump rate is negligible in comparison to the forward jump rate (the term τV being sufficiently large such that the term $e^{-\tau V/kT}$ becomes small), and taking the net jump rate ($\nu_f - \nu_b$) to be proportional to the strain rate, $\dot{\epsilon}$, then

$$\dot{\epsilon} = A^* \exp\left(-\frac{E^*}{kT}\right) \exp\left(\frac{\tau V}{kT}\right) \quad (29)$$

As shown earlier, a simple criterion for yield is that the maximum shear stress reaches a critical value given by $\tau = \sigma_y/2$, where σ_y is the tensile yield stress (ie the Tresca yield criterion). Substituting and rearranging equation 29 gives

$$\sigma_Y = \left[k \ln\left(\frac{\dot{\epsilon}}{A^*}\right) + \frac{E^*}{T} \right] \frac{2T}{V} \quad (30)$$

Equation 30 shows that the yield stress is both rate and temperature dependent, hence it captures some important features of yield in polymers. For example, Figure 10 (44) shows a plot of σ_Y/T (or σ_e/T in the notation of Reference (44)) as a function of log strain rate and, as predicted by equation 30, a linear relationship is seen at each temperature. It is worth noting that the Eyring equation (typically in the form of two activated processes acting in parallel) has been successfully applied not only to the yield behavior of polymers but also to the creep rupture behavior of isotropic and oriented polymers (45–48).

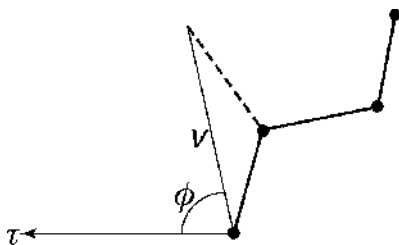


Fig. 11. Schematic of the Robertson (36) model for a shear-induced conformation change.

Robertson Model. The model developed by Robertson in 1966 (36) is also based on an activated process. He stated that the rigidity of a glass is a result of the intermolecular forces between adjacent chains, though for polymer glasses they suppose that the intramolecular forces are also important. Thus, to cause a glassy polymer to move into the liquid state it is necessary to reduce the effect of either the intramolecular or intermolecular forces. Robertson posited that a shear stress alone could achieve this and so induce Newtonian flow in the material. A shear stress field set up in the material can increase the number of flexed bonds (conformations) to a level above the preferred level of the equilibrium glass and may increase to the level that would be typically seen in a polymer liquid.

The model introduces the strain energy as a bias on the energy difference between bonds in the preferred (trans) and flexed (cis) conformations, with the simplifying assumption that the bonds can only exist in one of these two stable states. A polymer below the glass-transition temperature has a fixed, or “frozen-in,” distribution of bond conformations in either the high energy (cis) or low energy (trans) states, with the difference in energy between the two states denoted as ΔE . Application of a stress causes conformations to shift from the trans to the cis state, effectively increasing the mobility to liquid-like levels. At sufficiently high stress levels the mobility is sufficiently increased such that yield can occur. More specifically the shear component of the stress (τ) causes a change in the energy difference between the two states by an amount $\tau v \cos \phi$, where v is the “flex volume” and is approximately the average volume of chain segments containing two bonds, and ϕ is the angle between the applied stress and vector displacement of the flexed bond (Fig. 11). The resulting energy difference between the two states (ΔE^*) is now given by

$$\Delta E^* = \Delta E - \tau v \cos \phi \quad (31)$$

An assumption is then made that the material can be described by a term θ_g , which is the temperature at which the polymer structure in the glass would be an equilibrium structure and can be conveniently set to T_g . By performing a statistical average, the maximum number of flexed bonds for a given applied stress can be calculated and the current structure related to an “equivalent temperature,” θ_1 .

Using the WLF (49) equation to model the effect of temperature on the material viscosity Robertson went on to derive an equation for the maximum shear

strain rate, $\dot{\gamma}_{\text{MAX}}$, induced by the shear stress, τ , as

$$\dot{\gamma}_{\text{MAX}} = \frac{\tau}{\eta_g} \exp \left\{ -2.303 \left[\left(\frac{c_1^g c_2^g}{\theta_1 - T_g + c_2^g} \right) \left(\frac{\theta_1}{T} \right) - c_1^g \right] \right\} \quad (32)$$

where c_1^g and c_2^g are the “universal” constants from the WLF equation, η_g is the “universal viscosity” at T_g , and θ_1 is as discussed above.

The model can be used to predict the shear rate as a function of shear stress for a range of temperatures. In the original paper a lack of shear stress data meant that the predictions were compared to tensile stress–strain data by decomposing the tensile data into shear and biaxial components. The point on the tensile stress–strain data that Robertson took to be the most appropriate stress to compare with the computed strain rate was the yield point. The model gives values for the yield stress and the temperature dependence of the yield stress that agree well with experiment for a number of polymers.

The model is attractive since the six parameters required above can be obtained independently and thus no fitting to the data is required. Of these six parameters, only two relate directly to the individual polymer, namely the glass-transition temperature, T_g , and the parameter v , the average volume of chain segments containing two bonds (though in practice Robertson took this to be the volume of a monomer unit in the glassy state at room temperature).

The Robertson model was extended by Duckett and co-workers in 1970 (29) to account for the pressure dependence of the yield stress. By their argument, if the two states are trans and cis and the effect of stress is to increase the number of cis conformations, then this implies a lower resulting density since the packing is less efficient. This in turn implies the change in conformations has an impact on the hydrostatic component of the applied stress. They further suggest that the hydrostatic component of the stress, p , will do work during the activation process leading to an overall energy difference between the two states of

$$\Delta E - \tau v + p\Omega \quad (33)$$

where p is positive in compressive loading and negative in tensile loading. The term Ω has units of volume. Using this modification they successfully correlated the torsional yield stress dependence of PMMA under hydrostatic pressure with the variation in the yield stress under compressive and tensile stresses as a function of temperature and strain rate.

Argon Model. Argon in 1973 (38) developed a molecular model for the initial yield based on the Gibbs free energy of the system. Again it considers that yield does not occur until the resistance to segmental rotation can be overcome by the application of stress. Strain in the sample is proposed to occur by the rotation of small molecular segments from an initially random orientation to a preferential orientation along the load axis. Such a process is modeled by introducing a “kink pair” into the molecule. The resistance to this kink formation is primarily from the surrounding molecular chains, and is modeled as an equivalent elastic medium. Argon derived an expression for the change in free energy, dG^* , required

to produce segmental rotation:

$$dG^* = \frac{3\pi G\omega^2\alpha^3}{16(1-\nu)} \left[1 - \left(\frac{\tau}{\frac{0.077G}{1-\nu}} \right)^{5/6} \right] \quad (34)$$

where G is the temperature-dependent shear modulus, ν is Poisson's ratio, ω is the net angle of rotation between the two configurations, α is the mean molecular radius, and τ is the applied shear stress. This leads to an energy maximum as a function of the distance between molecular kinks and defines an energy barrier for kink formation. The rate of transfer between the ground and activated states is then modeled in a manner similar to that of a thermally activated Arrhenius process.

This leads to a plastic strain rate given by

$$\dot{\gamma}_P = \dot{\gamma}_0 \exp\left(\frac{-dG^*}{kT}\right) \quad (35)$$

where $\dot{\gamma}_0$ is a pre-exponential factor having the units of s^{-1} , k is Boltzmann's constant, and T the absolute temperature.

Equation 35 can be rewritten as

$$\dot{\gamma}_P = \dot{\gamma}_0 \exp\left\{-\frac{As_0}{T} \left(1 - \left(\frac{\tau}{s_0}\right)^{5/6}\right)\right\} \quad (36)$$

where

$$A = 39\pi\omega^2\alpha^3/16\kappa$$

and

$$s_0 = 0.077G/(1-\nu)$$

s_0 is termed the athermal shear yield strength and is the value of the shear yield strength as the temperature approaches absolute zero (and assuming finite strain rates). The above equation can be rearranged to give

$$\tau = s_0 \left[1 - \frac{T}{As_0} \ln\left(\frac{\dot{\gamma}_0}{\dot{\gamma}_P}\right) \right]^{6/5} \quad (37)$$

Equation 37 thus captures both rate and temperature dependencies of the shear yield stress.

Haward and Thackray Model. In 1968 Haward and Thackray (37) developed a one-dimensional model for yield using a spring in series with a parallel arrangement of a spring and dashpot (Fig. 12). The dashpot, rather than being Newtonian as with the standard Maxwell/Kelvin models, was instead an Eyring

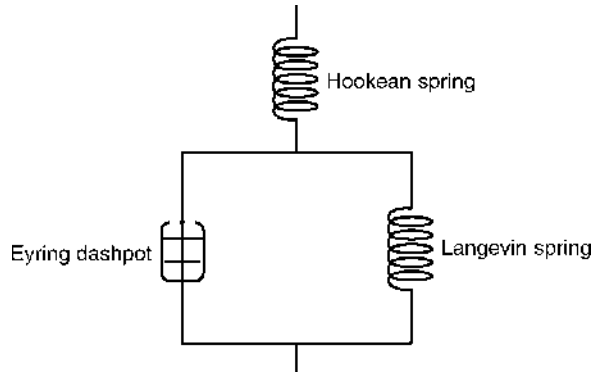


Fig. 12. Schematic of the one-dimensional model of Haward and Thackray.

dashpot. The standard Hookean-type spring was replaced with a Langevin (finite extensible) spring to account for the strain hardening (entropic resistance) observed at larger strains. The initial elastic response remains modeled with a Hookean spring in series. While the model correctly gives the dependence of the yield stress on strain rate it gives only a somewhat simple approximation to the realistic stress–strain response. Also, in common with all the previous models (Eyring, Robertson, and Argon), it does not address the issue of strain softening. However, the general principle of the model has been widely accepted and has been further refined and extended to address some of the shortcomings as discussed in the following sections.

Boyce, Parks, and Argon model (BPA Model). In a fashion that is conceptually the same as the Haward and Thackray (37) model, the BPA (39) model assumes that after an initial elastic response, the plastic resistance can be separated into a resistance to flow due to an activated process and an entropic resistance due to molecular alignment. The model builds on the Argon model to describe the initial yield in terms of the resistance to segmental motion and extends it to include pressure and strain-softening effects. It then goes on to model the second component of resistance to (large-strain) deformation, that of entropic resistance, in terms the “three chain” non-Gaussian (inverse Langevin) statistical model of Wang and Guth (50).

In the BPA model, it is the athermal shear strength given in the Argon model, s_0 , which is modified to explain the observed strain-softening behavior. The reasoning behind this is that as the material undergoes the initial stages of plastic flow some restructuring of the molecular chains is assumed to occur and these changes are in turn assumed to cause a reduction in the athermal shear resistance. The evidence for this is discussed in detail in the paper by Boyce and co-workers (39). Briefly, tests carried out on polycarbonate after different thermal treatments and tested under identical conditions give different peak yield stress levels. However, the post-yield strain softening generally brings the stress levels down to the same value and this is interpreted as the material achieving a “preferred structure” during plastic flow. The decrease in the athermal shear resistance with strain is modeled phenomenologically by the following

expression:

$$\dot{s} = h \left(1 - \frac{s}{s_{ss}} \right) \dot{\gamma}_P \quad (38)$$

where s is the current value for the athermal shear resistance and is a function of the instantaneous structure, s_{ss} is the value s reaches at steady state, ie in the preferred structure, and $\dot{\gamma}_P$ is the plastic strain rate. Note that s_{ss} can itself be temperature and rate dependent. h is the slope of the yield drop with respect to strain, with the yield drop defined as the difference in the maximum stress before softening and the lowest stress level after plastic flow. The yield drop depends on temperature and strain rate and varies with strain as a function of structure and strain rate.

As noted above in discussing yield criteria, the shear yield strength generally increases linearly with applied hydrostatic pressure. Similar to the modified Tresca or von Mises yield criteria, where the shear yield stress is modified by a term linearly dependent on pressure, the BPA model introduces a term to modify the current athermal shear yield strength, s :

$$\tilde{s} = s + \alpha P \quad (39)$$

where α is the pressure coefficient, P the hydrostatic pressure, and s the athermal shear resistance modified for strain softening.

Thus the term s_0 in the original Argon model for yield (eq. 36) is replaced by \tilde{s} to give

$$\dot{\gamma}_P = \dot{\gamma}_0 \exp \left\{ - \frac{A\tilde{s}}{T} \left[1 - \left(\frac{\tau}{\tilde{s}} \right)^{5/6} \right] \right\} \quad (40)$$

where the pressure and strain-softening effects are contained in the \tilde{s} term.

The second part of the BPA model concerns the entropic resistance resulting from molecular orientation and which leads ultimately to strain-hardening behavior. This is strictly a postyield phenomenon and indeed the physics of the development of chain orientation and subsequent material behavior alone is the subject of books (eg Ward I.M. (51)). The BPA model uses the development of three-dimensional entropic resistance as first modeled by Parks and co-workers (52). Consider an amorphous polymer that is plastically deformed below its glass-transition temperature (T_g). If this material is then heated to above T_g it will recover to its original undeformed state. In order to prevent the material returning to the undeformed state at temperatures above T_g , it would be necessary to impose a stress on the sample. This restraining force then acts to counteract the shrinkage force or 'back stress' B_i . For the plastically deformed material below T_g , this back stress can be considered to be frozen-in to the deformed polymer at temperatures below T_g and is the source of resistance to further deformation. The recovery of the material deformation above T_g clearly has parallels with rubber elasticity and the orientation hardening is modeled using the statistical mechanics theories of rubber elasticity (Treloar 1975 (53)). For low stretch ratios, the standard Gaussian statistical model of Treloar (53) is sufficient. However, the BPA model as originally developed used the non-Gaussian statistical mechanics

network (Three-chain model) of Wang and Guth (50). This gave an expression for the back stress, B_i , as a function of the number of statistical segments between entanglements, the plateau rubber modulus (through which the temperature effects are taken into account) and the change in entropy as a function of the principal plastic stretches. The reader is referred to the original paper (39) for the specific details and development of this aspect of the model. The model has since been incorporated into commercial finite element codes (ABAQUS).

The model has been subsequently refined (Arruda and co-workers (54)) to more accurately describe the three-dimensional spatial orientation of the stretched molecular network using the eight-chain model (though comparison of the predictions from the eight-chain model with experimental results from natural rubber and polydimethylsiloxane has called into question the physics of that model (55)). The BPA model has been further developed (56) to account for aging effects (see, eg Reference 57). A model using the same underlying concepts, but again developed to improve the description of the strain hardening (entropic resistance), has been given by Wu and van der Giessen (58) using a “full chain” model.

Tervoort and co-workers Model. While the above models make reasonable predictions of the stress–strain behavior in monotonic loading conditions, a main drawback to them is that they use only a single stress-dependent characteristic (relaxation) time. As a consequence, the predicted behavior tends to show a sharp transition between elastic (solid-like) and plastic (fluid-like) behavior. However, it is found in practice that all polymers exhibit behavior consistent with a spectrum of relaxation times and this is clearly going to affect the stress–strain response at constant strain rate. In an effort to address this inconsistency Tervoort and co-workers (40) have developed a “modified compressible Leonov model.”

The model is based on an earlier one by the same authors, the “compressible Leonov model” (59). In this, the behavior is modeled with a single Maxwell element where the dashpot and spring now have a relaxation time that is a function of the applied shear stress. This is similar in principle to the change seen in the relaxation time with a change in temperature (time–temperature superposition, (see VISCOELASTICITY), leading to the concept of time–stress superposition and a “stress clock” within the material. The model is developed with thermodynamically consistent constitutive equations by assuming that the free energy of the system (a measure of the stored energy) is given by two state variables, the relative volume deformation and the isochoric strain tensor. The volume deformation is coupled to the hydrostatic component of stress while the isochoric strain is determined by the deviatoric stress. It is assumed that the volume deformation remains elastic, whereas the accumulated isochoric elastic strain is reduced over time because of a plastic strain rate. This plastic strain rate is described by a three-dimensional Eyring equation. The single-element model is essentially an elastic–plastic model and still exhibits a sharp transition between the two behaviors. To make the model more realistic, it was extended (40) to include a discrete relaxation spectrum by using an array of 18 Leonov modes, each with a unique relaxation time.

Tervoort and co-workers tested the multimode model using polycarbonate since it could be described with a single relaxation mechanism having a distribution of relaxation times at the temperature of interest. The model parameters for

the Eyring term were determined from plateau creep rates and the linear Leonov parameters from a linear shear relaxation curve (obtained from inversion of the creep compliance curves). The resulting model predictions agreed excellently with stress-strain curves over a range of strain rates up to approximately 8% strain. However, the model lacks any term to account for the entropic resistance (strain hardening) and so is valid only up to the yield point.

In subsequent work, Govaert and co-workers (60,61) specifically address the postyield large-strain phenomenon of strain hardening, again for a polycarbonate. In an effort to minimize the effects of a localized, inhomogeneous strain deformation (neck), they adopted a technique of mechanical preconditioning. This technique aims to reduce the strain-softening characteristics of the material by conditioning the material through plastic deformation (61,62). The resulting true stress-true strain curves show a markedly reduced yield drop, while maintaining the same large-strain response. Interestingly, the authors found that the large-strain data could be modeled as simple neo-Hookean behavior and this was true up to the failure point (at a draw ratio of approximately 3). As the authors observed, this is in contrast with the results of eg Arruda and co-workers (63) for a different grade of polycarbonate where there was a deviation from neo-Hookean behavior indicating finite extensibility effects (ie a rapid upturn in the true stress-true strain response).

Caruthers and co-workers Model. The group of J.M. Caruthers at the Chemical Engineering Department of Purdue University has, over the last decade or so, been developing a set of unified constitutive equations that aim to realistically model a wide range of rheological and mechanical properties (41,42). A detailed description of the model is beyond the scope of this article and we mention here only the main ideas behind the development of the model (see also VISCOELASTICITY). The model addresses the time, temperature, and history (thermal and mechanical) dependence of the material behavior using a set of thermo-viscoelastic constitutive equations based on Rational Thermodynamics (64,65). The model introduces a material (or reduced) time, where the material timescale is determined by the instantaneous thermodynamic state of the material, using the Adam-Gibbs (66) model, which relates the relaxation time to configurational entropy. This is a potentially important development in the context of this article, as it allows the prediction of nonlinear mechanical behavior including yield. The model is still in development, but has successfully predicted a range of behaviors including specifically isobaric volume relaxation, yielding under uniaxial extension, shear thinning, and stress overshoot in transient shear (42).

A particularly appealing aspect of the model is that all the model parameters can be determined from independent experiments and further that they are relatively few in number. Thus a material can be characterized in a relatively short period of time, though the mathematical framework of the model is somewhat intensive.

Dislocation Plasticity

The observation of microscopic shear bands in polymeric materials, coupled with the highly successful application of dislocation theory to plasticity in ductile

metals, has led to the concept of dislocation plasticity in polymeric materials. The first application of dislocation mechanisms was, not surprisingly, to semi-crystalline polymers (67). Predeki and Statton (68,69) looked at the effect of chain ends on crystalline regions and introduced the idea of screw and edge dislocations occurring in nylon-6,6 (68). They further examined the effect of shear stress on such dislocations in polyethylene (69). Direct evidence for the presence of dislocations in polymer crystals was obtained by Petermann and Gleiter (70) from the electron microscopy of single crystals of polyethylene. Gilman (71,72) further suggested that dislocation mechanisms can be applied to amorphous solids such as glasses and polymers. Bowden and Raha (73) developed a model of yield in which micro-shear bands are created by the formation and growth of dislocation loops, the energetics of which are influenced by the shear stress and the thermal energy. Unlike metals, where the dislocations or defects are inherent, the dislocations in polymers are formed under the action of an applied stress. Once formed, they may grow with the aid of thermal activation, ultimately leading to yield. The authors emphasize that the dislocation process they envision as occurring in an amorphous solid is not the same as in the classic concept of crystal plasticity, though it is a close analogy.

The energy U of a dislocation loop of radius R is

$$U = (2\pi R) \frac{Gb^2}{4\pi} \ln \left(\frac{2R}{r_0} \right) - (\pi R^2) \tau b \quad (41)$$

where r_0 is the radius of the dislocation core, τ the applied shear stress, G the shear modulus and b the Burgers vector (essentially equal to the magnitude of the shear displacement). The first term in equation 41 is the elastic strain energy associated with a loop of length $2\pi R$ and the second term the work done by the applied stress to expand the loop to radius R (of the order of 1 nm). As the loop expands the energy at first increases then reaches a maximum at some critical radius (R_c), then will monotonically decrease. As expected, the height of this energy barrier decreases with increasing shear stress. The Bowden and Raha model is thus a thermally activated model whereby both the rate and temperature dependence are captured in the term U/kT . Interestingly, the model also implicitly accounts for strain softening—as the dislocation loop overcomes the peak in the energy barrier, further growth leads to a lower energetic state with the implication of reduced resistance to further extension. As the model is presented, the reduction in resistance (and hence the degree of strain softening) is monotonic, that is there is no limit to the extent to which the material will strain soften. This is clearly a major limitation of the model, though the authors have suggested a number of mechanisms that may limit the degree of strain softening.

The above model based on dislocation-type defects in polymer glasses is attractive in that it allows one to put some order and physical interpretation to the (obviously complicated) processes occurring during deformation. Care must be exercised though in taking the analogy with dislocations in metals too far—the ordered structure of metals is not seen in polymers, hence the meaning of a defect such as a dislocation is unclear.

Ultimate Shear Strength

The maximum theoretical strength of a crystal had been estimated by Frenkel as far back as 1926 (74), and the same general ideas have been applied to amorphous polymers (73,75,76). Briefly, if an equilibrium crystal lattice is sheared to a strain of 1, each atom will have moved to a new equilibrium position. At a strain of 0.5, the atoms will be between one equilibrium position and the next and the shear stress required to hold it in position will be zero (albeit in an unstable state). Consequently, the maximum shear stress is assumed to occur at a shear strain of approximately 0.25. Since the initial slope of the stress–strain curve is the shear modulus G , this gives an estimate of the maximum shear stress to be approximately $G/6$. While the structure of an amorphous polymer is far from that of an ideal crystal it is reasonable to suppose that the molecular segments are at some equilibrium position and at a high enough shear stress most, if not all, will fall into a new equilibrium position (though the energy landscape, and hence equilibrium potentials, will not be as uniform as those in a crystal). The model as proposed did not allow for thermal fluctuations (ie it was effectively for a material at 0 K) and it is expected that taking account of such fluctuations would reduce the theoretical strength.

Other estimates of the ultimate shear strength of amorphous polymers have been made by a number of authors and generally all fall within a factor of 2 of each other (38,77,78). Stachurski (79) has expressed doubt as to the validity of the concept of an intrinsic shear strength based on the value of the shear modulus, G , for an amorphous solid. He questions which modulus is the correct value to use—the initial small strain value or the value at higher strain (the yield point or the ultimate extension). Further, the temperature and strain-rate dependence of both the yield strength and modulus (however defined) suggests that perhaps the ratio of yield strength to modulus is not a true intrinsic material property. We remark however that the temperature and strain-rate dependence of both the yield stress and the shear modulus are often similar.

A related issue is that the modulus is a viscoelastic property, as evidenced by the temperature/strain-rate dependence, and that for most polymers (at least those without a large beta transition near the alpha transition) time–temperature superposition of, for example, the shear relaxation modulus is valid (80). Further, G'Sell and McKenna (81) have shown that the yield stress vs strain rate also seems to obey time–temperature superposition. Hence there is a correlation between the viscoelastic properties and the yield response of polymers, though one that is not generally stated explicitly. We note that some of the models mentioned previously, such as those of Caruthers' group (41,42), Tervoort and co-workers (40), and Knauss and Emri (35), are (nonlinear) viscoelastic models that have yield arising due to the nonlinear response induced by the material clock (see VISCOELASTICITY).

Calorimetry and Dilatometry

When a polymer is deformed, work is necessarily done in the material. On subsequent unloading, the stress–strain curve does not generally follow the loading

curve and the difference in the areas under the two curves gives the net work done on the material (W). This work can be subdivided into work done in changing the internal energy of the material (dU) and heat liberated (Q):

$$W = dU + Q \quad (42)$$

By measuring both the heat flow generated during deformation (Q) and the engineering stress–strain data (and from this the quantity W) it is possible to estimate the change in the internal energy of the sample. A pioneer in this field of study is Oleinik (also spelled Oleynik) (82). In a series of experiments, samples of polystyrene placed in a calorimeter were compressed to varying levels of strain (up to approximately 40%) and unloaded, and the W and Q were calculated. The total work (W) rises somewhat linearly with applied stress while the amount of heat liberated (Q) rises at an initially slower rate then increases to become parallel to the W curve at a strain of approximately 25%. This means that the stored internal energy (dU) rises at lower strains then plateaus out at strains above 25%, with an inflection point at or near the yield strain of 12%.

The same effect can be observed by performing DSC tests on previously strained samples. Hasan and Boyce (83) subjected annealed polystyrene to compressive strains up to 170% followed by DSC scans up to and through the glass-transition temperature (T_g). Comparing the results to freshly annealed samples, it was seen that for samples that had been strained, a pre- T_g exotherm appeared that increased with increasing compressive strain. This pre- T_g exotherm increases in magnitude up to a strain of 25% and remains constant thereafter up to the maximum strain of 170%, in excellent agreement with the data of Oleinik. They also note that the exotherm is spread over a wide temperature range (starting at approximately $T_g - 35^\circ\text{C}$), which they attribute to the distributed nature of the structural state. In addition, there appears to be a similar inflection point at a strain near the yield strain (within the range 10–15%).

The exact nature of the storage mechanism that is reflected in the increase in internal energy remains unclear. Indeed it is not clear that the energy term dU can be considered simply as a storage term, especially at the higher strains where energy could be expended on chain scission or processes akin to phase changes occurring at and above yield.

Polymers are inherently viscoelastic, compressible materials and under conditions of dilatational deformation (eg uniaxial tension or compression) a full description of their behavior needs to take into account the volume changes due to, at least, the hydrostatic component of the stress (84). One of the earliest works on volume effects on yielding in glassy polymers was by Whitney and Andrews (85), who examined a range of polymers under uniaxial compression. In the study, the authors observed a volume contraction upon loading up to the yield point, after which the volume remained approximately constant. More recently (86), subyield tension and compression tests were performed on two commercial grades of polycarbonate (PC). These tests were performed under stress relaxation conditions and showed that under tension the volume increased somewhat monotonically with strain while under compression the reverse was true, ie the volume decreased monotonically. While the volume at a small strain was found to recover toward the initial state, at strains approaching yield and in tension the material

actually densified to a state of higher density than the undeformed polymer. It was postulated that the mobility that allowed the material to densify was related to its propensity to yield rather than fail in a brittle manner. A number of studies have been performed on the volume evolution during mechanical deformation [eg (87–89)]. Also studies on the changes in “free volume” with deformation using positron annihilation spectroscopy (PALS) (90–92), have been carried out. The reader is referred to the texts for further details.

Computer Modeling

With the advent in recent years of increasingly powerful and cheap computing power, molecular modeling of the deformation response of polymers has come to be of increasing importance (76). Molecular mechanics uses the Newtonian equations of motion to calculate the step-wise displacement of individual atoms within a molecule in small time intervals (typically of the order of femtoseconds). On each step, the atom's position is modified with reference to its previous state (position, velocity, etc) and taking into consideration, for example, its bond length and bond angle (bonded interactions) and Van der Waals forces (nonbonded interactions) with its nearest neighbor. The system as a whole is then optimized using potential energy functions to determine the equilibrium conformation. Molecular mechanics calculations are performed on systems that are generally considered to have little, if any, thermal energy (ie at low temperature). As such, the optimization procedure may only find the conformation representing the *local* minimum in the energy landscape and this will not necessarily (indeed rarely) be the lowest possible energy. Molecular dynamics, on the other hand, considers not only the force interactions but also the thermal motions of the molecule. By doing so, the molecule is allowed to overcome energy barriers and so explore its surroundings more effectively, assisting in finding the *global* energy minimum. Importantly, in molecular dynamics the thermal motion is always active and the molecules tend to oscillate about the energy minimum, giving additional information about the time-dependent motion of the molecules.

As noted, the field of molecular simulation is relatively new, and a detailed review of it is beyond the scope of this text and we introduce here a few of the more relevant references. One of the first applications of molecular mechanics to polymers was by Theodorou and Suter (93,94), who modeled atactic polypropylene as an amorphous cell subjected to a range of stress conditions (hydrostatic pressure, pure strain, and uniaxial strain). Such modeling generally gives reasonable estimates of the elastic constants of a material [within 15% (79)], providing the density of the glass is correctly modeled.

Argon and co-workers (95,96) have developed an atomistic mechanics model of polypropylene and related it to experiments performed at a temperature of 10°C below the glass-transition temperature. Stress–strain curves calculated after small strain increments showed a series of generally monotonically increasing stress versus applied strain sections (elastic response), interspersed with sudden step-wise drops in the load (plastic events). Significantly, the authors note that the plastic events are not associated with any deformation process invoked by many of the molecular theories discussed above (ie a sudden conformation or

configuration change, a dislocation motion or kink propagation). However, because this was an athermal model, the meaning of these events for a real viscoelastic or viscoplastic polymer is unclear.

Computer modeling can clearly help in the understanding of the deformation and yield behavior of polymeric systems by giving an insight into the individual molecular, indeed atomic, movements that occur. However, the simulations are typically run over a few tens of picoseconds at most and in a volume of a few cubic nanometers—such scales of time and dimensions cannot fully capture the processes involved in yield at the present state of development.

Semicrystalline Materials

The propensity of a polymer to crystallize is chiefly determined by its molecular architecture, specifically the regularity of the polymer chain. Polymers consisting of the same repeat unit, the simplest example being linear polyethylene, can fit together neatly to form the ordered crystalline phase and typically have 70–80% crystallinity. For polymers where a hydrogen from the ethylene monomer is replaced by a bulky side group [for example the methyl group ($-\text{CH}_3-$) in polypropylene or the phenyl group ($-\text{C}_6\text{H}_5$) in polystyrene], the polymer chain can exist in one of three forms of handedness, or tacticity. If all the side groups lie on the same side of the main chain the material is called isotactic; if they lie in a regularly alternating fashion left and right of the main chain the material is termed syndiotactic; and finally, if they occur randomly positioned along the main chain they are termed atactic. The least regular, atactic form generally does not crystallize to any degree, while both the isotactic and syndiotactic forms can crystallize, though the degree to which either form does so depends on the structure, polarity of the side group, etc.

Early X-ray studies on the structure of Semicrystalline Polymers (qv) showed that the longest dimension of the crystallites was typically of the order of a few tens of nanometers. This is a small fraction of the length of a typical polymer chain, which may be of the order of several thousands of nanometers, and it was originally thought that the polymer chain moved successively between different regions of amorphous and ordered crystalline phases in what is termed the “fringed micelle model.” However, later work on single crystals grown from dilute solutions revealed that the polymer backbone was perpendicular to the longest dimensions of the crystal. Such a structure could only be produced if the polymer chains were folding back upon themselves.

The current prevailing view is that the crystalline regions in semicrystalline polymers are made up of plate-like structures formed from mostly chain-folded molecules. These plate-like structures are termed lamella and are typically some 10–20 nm thick. As the molecules forming the lamella chain fold, they may either reenter adjacent to the current position, reenter at some position farther along the lamella, or stay in the amorphous region. Ultimately, farther along the molecular chain, such molecules may enter another lamella thus forming “tie molecules,” akin to entanglements in amorphous polymers. These lamellae may in turn form supramolecular structures called spherulites—aggregations of lamellae forming and growing from a central nucleation point.

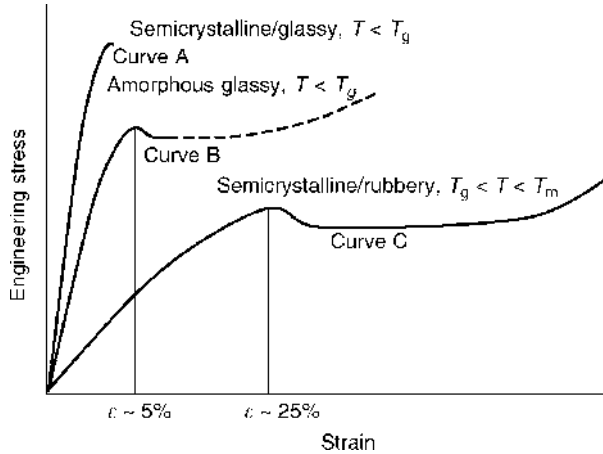


Fig. 13. Representative engineering stress–strain curves for a semicrystalline polymer as a function of temperature.

Below the crystalline melting point, semi-crystalline polymers are then essentially two-phase systems consisting of a stiff, rigid crystal phase embedded in a more flexible amorphous phase. The amorphous phase may be either above its glass-transition temperature (semi-crystalline/rubber) or below it (semi-crystalline/glass). The yield behavior of semi-crystalline polymers depends critically on a number of factors, eg the degree of crystallinity, the lamellar thickness and interlamellar spacing, spherulite size, the number of tie molecules and, of course, temperature. That said, however, they still show the same general behavior as depicted in Figure 1: brittle at low temperatures, yield and possible strain hardening at intermediate temperatures, and rubbery or viscous flow behavior at higher temperatures.

At temperatures below the T_g of the amorphous phase, the crystallites and associated tie molecules can severely reduce the mobility of the polymer chains and thus tend to embrittle the material. This generally leads to a brittle-like failure (Fig. 13, curve A) though at slow enough rates yielding and drawing may be observed (Fig. 13, curve B).

At temperatures above the T_g of the amorphous phase, the crystallite regions still act to prevent the free movement of the amorphous region and the material does not behave in a rubber-like fashion as would be expected for a pure amorphous polymer. Under these conditions, where the amorphous fraction would not be expected to show a yield point, yield is associated purely with the crystallites. On initial deformation, the crystallites act as hard inclusions, and the strain in the material is carried predominantly within the amorphous fraction. Given that the yield strain in these materials is typically of the order of 0.25 it is unlikely that the (rubbery) network has been sufficiently stretched and strain hardened to load the crystallites to yield. However, it is expected that the network has been sufficiently stretched, such that the tie molecules associated with the lamellae have become taut and so are able to transfer the load to the crystallites. The precise mechanisms associated with the subsequent yield of the

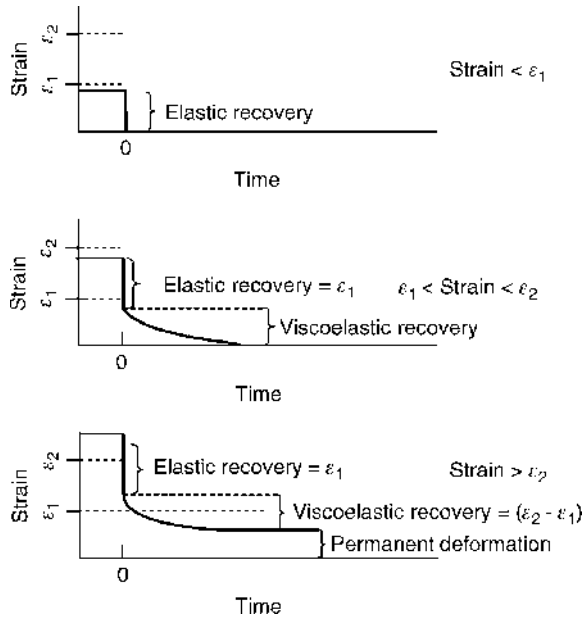


Fig. 14. Schematic of the strain recovery with respect to the double yield point observed in some semicrystalline materials (stress removed at time 0).

crystallites are still not well understood. However, the observation of two yield points (double yield) in polyethylene (97–99) has provided some insight into the molecular processes at work. Up to the first yield point, the material is elastic and deformations are fully recoverable (Fig. 14). The first yield point occurs at low strains ($\sim 5\%$) and marks the onset of recoverable deformation. This process has been associated with an interlamellar shear process or martensitic transformation within the lamellae and leads to a reorientation of the lamellae, with little or no destruction of the lamellae themselves. The second yield point occurs at a higher strain (20–50%) and marks the onset of permanent plastic deformation and is generally associated with the formation of a neck. At this point coarse slip occurs within the lamellae leading to fragmentation and destruction of the lamellae themselves. The post-yield behavior is largely associated with the amorphous regions and, like a pure amorphous polymer, is controlled by the entangled network. As such, phenomena such as strain hardening and cold drawing are commonly observed as discussed previously (Fig. 13, curve C).

Phenomenologically, the rate and temperature dependence of the yield stress of semi-crystalline polymers can be described by the Eyring activated state model, as discussed earlier, with either one (100,101) or two (46,102) activated processes. However, developing a theory for the yield of semi-crystalline polymers is clearly complicated by the presence of two distinct phases. It is unclear at present whether the models discussed above are even applicable to the amorphous phase present in semi-crystalline polymers because of the topological constraints that the crystalline regions impose. Nevertheless, in light of the fact that above the T_g of the amorphous region, it is the crystallites that dominate the yield behavior the ideas of classical crystal plasticity are obviously attractive.

Young (103) developed a theory along such lines in which the energy required to initiate a screw dislocation in the crystal lamellae determines the yield stress. The model correctly predicts the observed linear relation between yield stress and lamellar thickness, though the quantitative agreement with experiment is controversial (104–107). A model has been recently developed (108) wherein the driving force for the screw dislocations are thermally activated “chain twist” defects that transfer along the chain backbone.

In the early 1990s Bartczak, Argon, and Cohen conducted a series of tests on what they termed “single-crystal textured high density polyethylene” (109,110). These were samples that had been compressed under plain strain conditions, producing an axisymmetric texture that approximated to a macroscopic single crystal. X-ray scattering studies were conducted on the material at various stages of deformation (up to a strain of 1.86, after recovery) to monitor the structural evolution. The resulting material showed distinct crystallographic features indicating unique crystallographic planes, with the *c*-axis of the crystallites aligned along the flow direction (indicating that the lamellae are, broadly speaking, oriented perpendicular to the flow direction). Samples were then cut from the textured samples at particular orientations in order to investigate specific deformation mechanisms. Significant differences in the stress–strain response of samples tested at differing angles to the chain axis were observed under both tension and compression. The papers offer considerable insight into the contribution from different crystallographic deformation mechanisms. Interestingly, when such mechanisms could be isolated, it was found that the Coulomb criterion was an adequate description of the yield surface. The specifics of the various deformation mechanisms and their relation to the specific crystallographic planes is beyond the scope of this article, and the reader is referred to the original papers (109,110) for details.

Crazing

The previous section was concerned with what may be termed “macroscopic yield,” which is the shear yield over an entire sample ligament area (albeit localized in the case of neck formation). Another mode of deformation that is commonly observed in thermoplastics is that of crazing. Unlike the shear yielding discussed above, crazing is a microscopically localized phenomenon. The crazes that result from the localized process can be looked upon as load-bearing cracks, where the load-bearing capacity is provided by highly drawn fibrils of material spanning the two interfaces. This is a unique aspect of crazing in polymers as the fibrils can support the crack and help prevent or delay failure.

Crazing generally occurs where the stress on the sample has become highly concentrated owing to, for example, surface defects such as flaws, scratches, or inclusions within the material such as dust or other contaminants. Crazes can also occur in homogenous polymers, ie those without any contaminants or additives and which are flaw-free. An elegant series of experiments by Argon and co-workers (111) using samples carefully prepared from single pellets has shown that crazing can still occur without any tell tale origins relating to contaminants, a behavior denoted as “intrinsic crazing.” While no obvious cause for the craze

nucleation may be evident, it must nevertheless originate at a particular point because of an intrinsic local heterogeneity in the molecular structure, such as a local density variation. The stress required to craze such samples is higher than that observed in bulk (and implicitly contaminated) samples and indicates that while flaws or inclusions are not a necessary condition for crazing, they do lead to premature crazing.

The appearance of crazes in a material is generally a precursor to brittle failure. While such a mode is normally to be avoided, the presence of crazes can provide some beneficial effects. Because the crazes contain highly drawn fibrils of material, considerable plastic deformation and hence energy goes in to their formation and this can be a major source of fracture toughness. Indeed, the deliberate inclusion of small, typically rubber, particles into inherently brittle polymers is commonly undertaken to produce tough materials (112–115), because the presence of the particles dramatically increases the craze density.

The following is a brief overview of the subject matter which introduces the reader to the main features of craze morphology and current theories on their initiation, growth, and failure. The reader is pointed in particular to excellent reviews on many aspects of crazing by Kramer (116), Kramer and Berger (117), Kambour (118), and Donald (119,120), and much of the subsequent discussion follows the development in those reviews.

Crazing in polymers follows three distinct stages: craze initiation where the craze is nucleated, craze growth where the craze continues to grow in a direction perpendicular to the applied stress, and finally craze failure, the precursor to ultimate failure. Before discussing these three aspects of crazing, a general overview of craze morphology is given to familiarize the reader with the structure of the craze and the salient features involved in craze growth. The specific details and evolution of the structures are discussed in the relevant subsequent sections.

Craze Morphology. Figure 15 shows a schematic of craze nucleation and growth. The presence of an intrinsic or extrinsic heterogeneity causes the bulk stress to be locally modified. This results in an increase in the local triaxial stress field and forms a localized plastic zone (Fig. 15a). Small voids form in this plastic zone and, as the voids grow, they eventually coalesce with the original material between the voids forming the fibrils (Fig. 15b). The final craze structure (Fig. 15c) consists of the two surfaces bridged by a network of fibrils of drawn (highly anisotropic) polymer with a voided region at the craze tip from which craze growth may continue. Such fibrils typically have a diameter of a few tens of nanometers and a length (craze thickness) of the order of a micron. As the craze continues to grow, the fibrils extend by either a creep mechanism or by drawing in additional material from the bulk–fibril interface (Fig. 16) under the influence of the local stress at the craze boundary (σ_{CR}), which is typically slightly lower ($\sim 5\%$) than the applied bulk stress (σ_B) (Fig. 17, after Reference 121—the data shown is for an isolated craze in an “infinite” sheet, points on the x -axis denoting the distance from the centerline of the craze and is of course symmetrical about that line). Eventually a failure criterion is reached and the fibrils fail. The loss of the load-bearing capacity of the failed fibrils means the neighboring fibrils are subjected to an additional load and this can, under certain circumstances, lead to a runaway failure of the fibrils, true crack formation, and ultimately brittle failure.

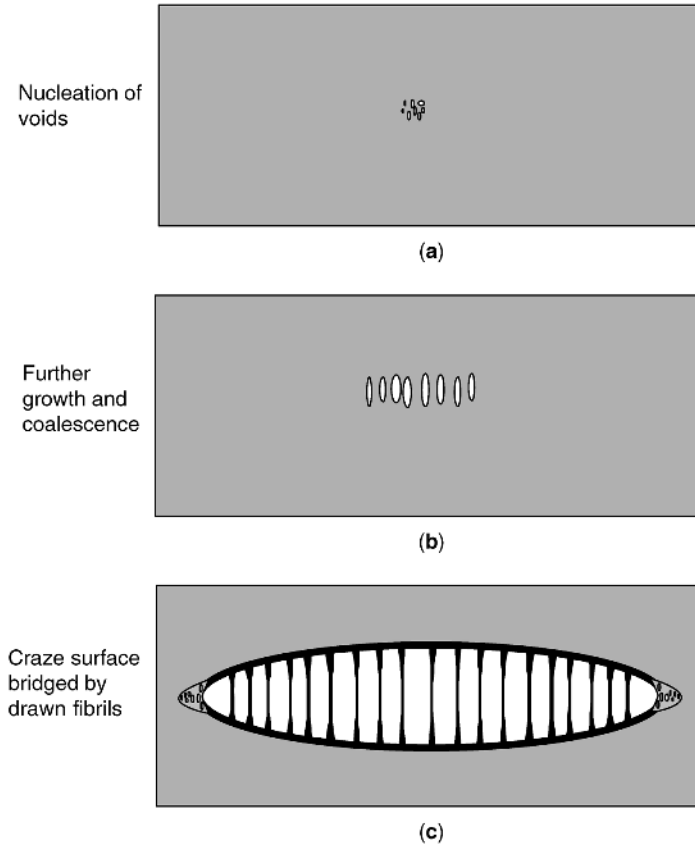


Fig. 15. Schematic of (a) void formation, (b) craze initiation, and (c) craze growth.

Crazes also normally occur at surface crack tips. The presence of a crack causes a geometrically imposed increase in the local stress (stress concentration), which results in a dilatational stress field. This in turn leads to the formation of a local plastic zone and, in a manner similar to the above, to cavitation and the formation of a craze. The general features of a surface craze are the same as those of an internal craze (Fig. 15), though with the obvious lack of symmetry owing to the presence of the crack. Such crazes tend to stabilize a crack by blunting the crack tip, reducing the stress concentration while retaining a load-bearing capacity.

We now look in more detail at the individual stages of craze formation and subsequent growth.

Craze Initiation

Unlike the shear yield process, crazing is an inherently non-isovolume event. Cavitation of the material requires a dilatational component of the stress tensor, such as occurs in triaxial stress systems that may be found in samples subjected to plane strain conditions. In addition, it is found in practice that there is a time

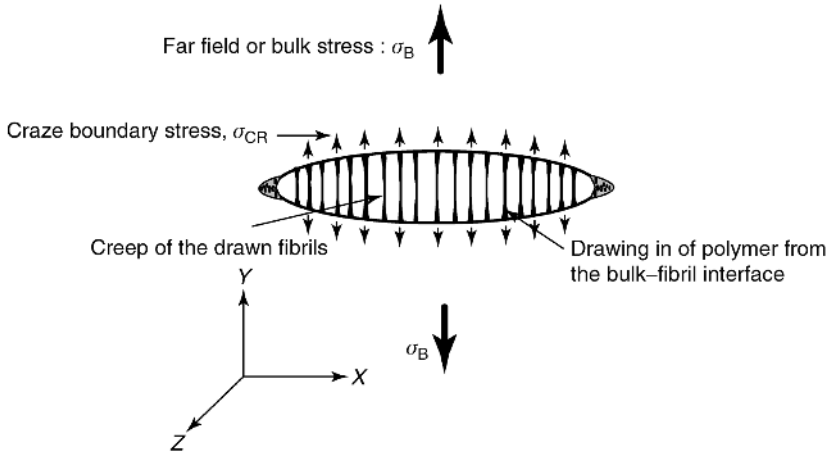


Fig. 16. Craze morphology and possible growth mechanisms.

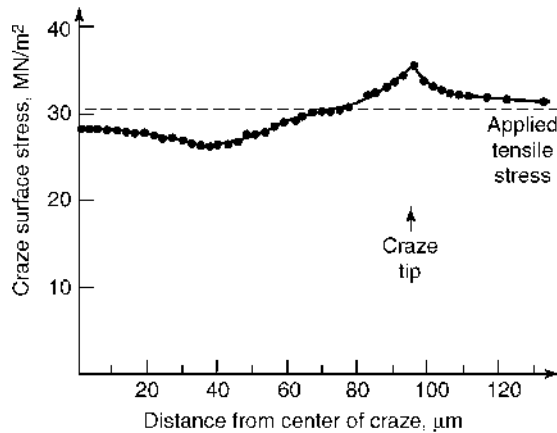


Fig. 17. Craze surface stress as a function of position from the craze centre for polystyrene. After Lauterwasser and Kramer (121), with permission of Taylor and Francis Ltd., <http://www.tandf.co.uk/journals>.

dependency on the appearance of crazing. That is, there is generally a time delay between application of the load and the first visible appearance of a craze. A number of models have been proposed which require either a critical cavitation stress, a critical strain, or the presence of inherent microvoids, which can grow under the applied local stress or strain.

Sternstein and Ongchin (1969). Considering that cavitation was required for craze nucleation, Sternstein and Ongchin (122) postulated that it is the dilatational component of the stress tensor along with a stress bias σ_b (flow stress) that controls craze initiation:

$$\sigma_b = A + \frac{B}{I_1} \tag{43a}$$

where for plane stress, $\sigma_b = \sigma_1 - \sigma_2$, and

$$I_1 = \sigma_1 + \sigma_1 + \sigma_1 = 3p > 0 \quad (43b)$$

where I_1 is the first stress invariant ie the dilatational component of the stress tensor. A and B are temperature-dependent constants. We note that under this criterion, crazing will not occur under pure hydrostatic tension ($\sigma_1 = \sigma_2 = \sigma_3$), pure shear stress [$(\sigma_1 + \sigma_2 + \sigma_3)/3 = 0$, $I_1 = 0$], or compressive stress states ($I_1 < 0$). The model was extended beyond the specific case of plane (or biaxial) stress conditions to a general three-dimensional case by Sternstein and Meyers (123). Because they are essentially empirical, the Sternstein et al models have several shortcomings: (1) the stress bias, $\sigma_1 - \sigma_2$, is related to the shear stress and it is difficult to reconcile a shear stress component controlling initiation of a craze in a direction perpendicular to the principal stress component σ_1 , (2) the parameters A and B have no direct or obvious physical interpretation, (3) no time dependency for the initiation of crazes.

Gent (1970). Gent (124) proposed a model in which the hydrostatic tensile stress at an inclusion or local heterogeneity increases the free volume and therefore effectively reduces the T_g of the material. At a sufficiently high stress concentration, the reduction in T_g is sufficient to reduce the local T_g to the test temperature. The reduced yield stress of the material in this rubber-like phase and the hydrostatic tensile stress then leads to cavitation and craze initiation. Implicit in this free-volume approach is that an imposed hydrostatic pressure will tend to prevent the formation of crazes in accordance with experimental observation. The criterion is summarized in the equation for the critical applied stress for initiation, σ_c :

$$\sigma_c = \frac{\beta(T_g - T) + P}{k} \quad (44)$$

where T_g is the glass temperature of the material, T is the test temperature, P is the bulk hydrostatic pressure, k is the stress concentration, and β is a constant related to the pressure dependence of T_g , and has a value of approximately 5 MPa/K. However, the inferred stress concentrations, k , required to induce crazing at room temperature were unrealistically large (of the order of 20) and the authors acknowledge it is a factor not easily accessible to experimental techniques. In addition, Lauterwasser and Kramer (121) calculated the reduction in T_g at the crack tip due to the imposed hydrostatic stress. Using the data in Figure 15 they calculated the hydrostatic pressure term to be one third of the bulk stress ($\sigma_{\text{bulk}} = \text{approximately } 30 \text{ MPa}$) plus the additional surface stress at the craze tip of approximately 5 MPa, giving a total of 15 MPa. Using a value of $1^\circ\text{C}/5 \text{ MPa}$ for the pressure dependence of T_g , they estimated the reduction in T_g at the crack tip to be a modest 3°C , certainly not enough to reduce the local T_g to the test temperature.

Oxborough and Bowden (1973). Addressing the lack of generality in terms of the usable stress states in the original Sternstein and Ongchin paper (122), which was limited to plane stress conditions, and concerns as to the physical interpretation of the critical stress (stress bias $\sigma_b = \sigma_1 - \sigma_2$) Oxborough and

Bowden (125) proposed a criterion for craze initiation based on a critical strain. The form of the criterion is identical to that in the Sternstein and Ongchin paper, with the critical stress σ_b replaced by a critical strain ε_c :

$$\varepsilon_c = X' + \frac{Y'}{I_1} \quad (45)$$

where I_1 is again the first stress invariant and X' and Y' are time- and temperature-dependent variables. Noting that under a general stress state the maximum strain is in the direction of the principal stress and is given by

$$\varepsilon_1 = \frac{1}{E}(\sigma_1 - \nu\sigma_2 - \nu\sigma_3) \quad (46)$$

ν is the Poisson's ratio and assuming that crazing occurs at the critical strain given by equation 45, they derived a criterion for crazing that is written in terms of the principal stresses:

$$\sigma_1 - \nu\sigma_2 - \nu\sigma_3 = \frac{X}{\sigma_1 + \sigma_2 + \sigma_3} + Y \quad (47)$$

where $X = EX'$ and $Y = EY'$.

Using this criterion, Bowden and Oxborough could successfully fit the crazing data of Sternstein and Ongchin as well as their own data on four grades of polystyrene. Further, their data showed that the critical strain for crazing decreased with an increasing component of tensile hydrostatic stress and also decreased with increasing load time. Both the X and Y fitting parameters were shown to decrease with increasing temperature. The Y parameter also decreased with increasing load time, though the X parameter appeared to be relatively insensitive to loading time. Ultimately however, the X and Y parameters remain curve-fitting variables and offer little insight into the mechanisms or underlying structural parameters controlling craze initiation/growth.

Argon and Hannoosh (1977). The apparent time dependence for craze initiation after initial loading suggests the possibility that a thermally activated process may control initiation. Argon and co-workers (111,126,127) suggested a mechanism which considered that craze initiation occurs when a critical porosity is reached. The initial microscopic pores are formed when thermally activated micro-shear bands are blocked, the resulting local strain energy being sufficient to provide the surface energy for the formation of a microcrack. Allowing for additional free energy to form a stable pore, Argon and co-workers (111,126) derived the following expression for the free energy required for pore formation:

$$\Delta G_{\text{pore}}^* = (0.15)^2 \pi (G/\tau) (\mu\phi^3) + \alpha L^3 \sigma_Y \quad (48)$$

where G is the shear modulus at the test temperature, τ the shear stress, ϕ a dimension related to the size of the sheared region (typically of the order of a molecular diameter), σ_Y the yield strength, L a length scale related to the

spacing of molecular inhomogeneities, and α a factor of the order of 0.1. By considering the local stress field at an inclusion or groove and by taking the deviatoric stress, s , to be largest for a groove perpendicular to the maximum principal tensile stress, an expression was derived for the increase in the local porosity β as a function of time t , given by

$$\beta = \dot{\beta}_0 t \exp(-\Delta G_{\text{pore}}^*(s)/kT) \quad (49)$$

where $\dot{\beta}_0$ is a pre-factor characteristic of the vibrational frequency of the sheared region. Following these arguments, two criteria for the negative pressure p and the critical initial porosity β_i required for the expansion of the pores was determined (126):

$$p = \left(\frac{2\sigma_Y}{3}\right) \ln\left(\frac{1}{\beta}\right) Q \quad (50a)$$

$$\beta_i < \frac{1}{(1+2G/\sigma_Y)} \quad (50b)$$

where σ_Y is the yield stress, and Q a normalization factor. By further considering the negative pressure required to expand the porous region, an expression was derived for the initiation time, t_{in} , of craze nucleus formation (111):

$$t_{\text{in}} = \frac{1}{\dot{\beta}_0} \exp\left(\frac{\Delta G_{\text{pore}}^*}{kT} - \frac{\xi}{Q}\right) \quad (51)$$

where ξ is $(\sigma_1 + \sigma_2)/2 \sigma_Y$, with σ_1 and σ_2 the principal stresses and σ_Y and Q are as before. The authors also recognized that while the craze may have initiated, it requires additional time for the craze to grow before it becomes visible (this is an inherent problem when discussing initiation times for crazes as it almost inevitably includes a period of craze growth for the crazes to be detectable). An estimate for the growth time, Δt_{growth} was derived based on a power law relationship between effective strain rate, $\dot{\epsilon}_e$, and effective stress, σ_e :

$$\left(\frac{\dot{\epsilon}_e}{\dot{\epsilon}_{e0}}\right) = \left(\frac{\sigma_e}{\sigma_{e0}}\right)^m \quad (52)$$

where $\dot{\epsilon}_{e0}$, σ_{e0} , and m are temperature-dependent material constants.

Thus, the total time for craze nucleation is the sum of the time to initiation and the growth time to the point where the crazes are visible:

$$t_{\text{craze nucleation}} = t_{\text{in}} + \Delta t_{\text{growth}}$$

For small negative pressures, the growth time can be a significant proportion of the total time for nucleation. The model also predicts that under pure shear stress (an isovolume deformation), though considerable pore formation is present, no craze nucleation will occur because of the lack of a dilatational component of

the stress. The authors went on to derive expressions to model the time dependence of the density of pore formation and subsequent craze saturation density (where the crazes have relieved the stress sufficiently that further craze nucleation is stopped) and expressions for biaxial craze nucleation. A set of such data from reference (111) is shown in Figure 18, where the surface density of crazes is plotted as a function of initiation time for polystyrene samples subjected to a combination of deviatoric stresses and negative pressures. The general features under each set of conditions are the same, with an increase in the craze density with time followed by saturation. It is also seen that the saturation density increases with increasing deviatoric stress and also with increasing negative pressure. The solid lines are the results from the model developed in reference (111). While the model captures the broad features of the material response, it should be noted that a number of parameters in the model cannot be easily determined from independent experiments. Consequently, a number of the parameters have been determined by optimizing the fit to experimental data such as that shown in Figure 18. These parameters, however, compare favorably with the expected ranges for such values. The reader is referred to the original paper for further discussions (111).

Kambour [1978]. Kambour, one of the pioneers in the area of crazing from as early as the mid-60's, has made significant contributions to the field and his thorough review article has already been mentioned (118). In 1978 Kambour and Gruner (128) reported a set of data for eight resins which showed a correlation between the critical strain for crazing in air, ε_c , and a combination of three factors, σ_y , the yield stress in tension, ΔT , the difference in the glass-transition temperature and the test temperature ($T_g - T_{\text{test}}$), and the solubility parameter (δ_p), [reported here in terms of the cohesive energy density, CED ($=\delta_p^2$)]:

$$e_c \propto \left[\frac{\text{CED} \cdot \Delta T}{\sigma_Y} \right] \quad (53)$$

In a follow-up paper in 1983 (129) it was shown that the correlation held for a further 29 polymers and copolymers, though in this case an additional correlation was used:

$$e_c \propto \left[\frac{\text{CED} \cdot \Delta T}{E} \right] \quad (54)$$

where E is the elastic modulus, and an implicit correlation between E and σ_Y is assumed. Figure 19 shows the data from the 1983 paper (129) and, while the correlations are shown to be satisfactory, the author acknowledges that the underlying source of the correlation is open to interpretation. [Note: In the 1983 paper (129), it appears that the abscissa labels have been inadvertently swapped between Figures 1 and 2, though the captions are correct. The abscissa has been corrected here.] Experimental craze growth studies as a function of temperature and aging time are compared with the general predictions of this and two of the models discussed above (Sternstein et al and Argon et al) in Reference (130).

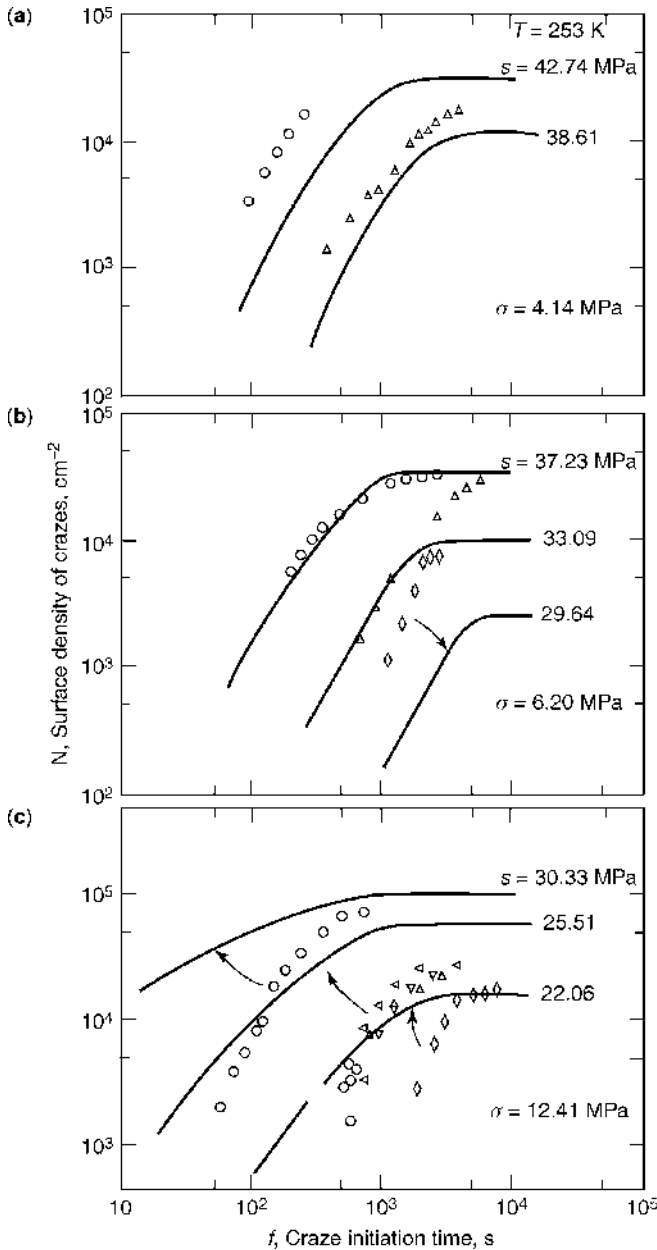


Fig. 18. Craze density as a function of initiation time for polystyrene subjected to a combination of deviatoric stresses (s) and negative pressures (σ). After Argon and Hannoosh (111), with permission of Taylor and Francis Ltd., <http://www.tandf.co.uk/journals>.

Craze Growth

After initiation the craze starts to grow. There are two aspects to consider when considering craze growth:

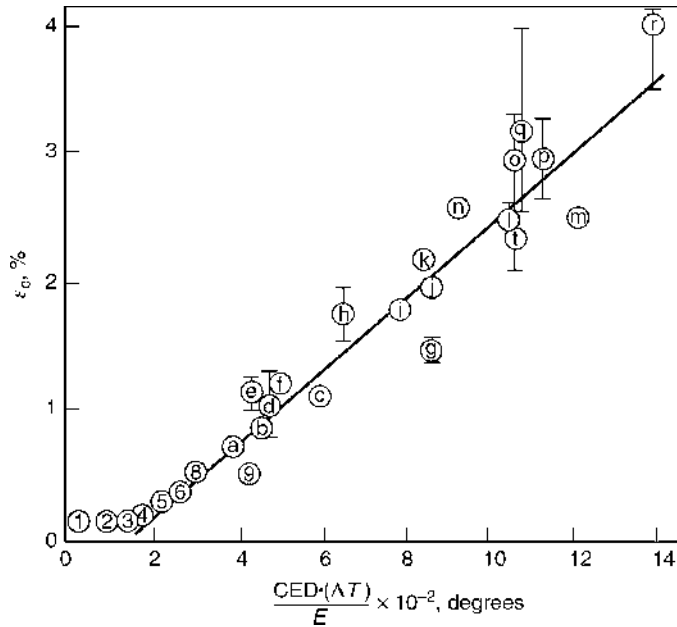


Fig. 19. Correlation between the critical strain for crazing, ϵ_c , and the product of the cohesive energy density (CED), the difference between the test temperature and the glass-transition temperature ΔT , and the elastic modulus E . Reprinted from Ref. 129, with permission from Elsevier.

- (1) Growth of the craze in the plane perpendicular to the load direction and in the direction of the craze tip (direction X in Fig. 16).
- (2) Craze thickening, ie opening of the craze–bulk interfaces and extension of the fibrils in the Y direction (Fig. 16).

Craze Tip Advance. The earliest explanation for the advance of the craze tip was the continued nucleation of isolated voids ahead of the craze tip and their subsequent expansion (127).

However, experimentally it has been observed that craze growth occurs faster than craze initiation and so it is difficult to explain growth with such a model as it is essentially the same mechanism as initiation. Also, some of the features of the craze predicted from such a mechanism, such as a closed cell structure formed from the formation of isolated voids, are inconsistent with experiments that clearly show that the craze has an open structure.

The currently accepted model for craze tip advance is that proposed by Argon and Salama (131) and based on the Taylor meniscus instability mechanism (132,133). This is the same phenomenon that is observed when two wetted plates are pulled apart and is shown schematically in Figure 20. In this scenario, the craze–bulk interface is treated as the solid boundary, and the plastically deformed, strain-softened matter at the craze tip is the liquid. As the boundary layers separate an instability is set up owing to a negative pressure gradient in the “fluid.” Small fingers propagate into the craze tip at a characteristic spacing

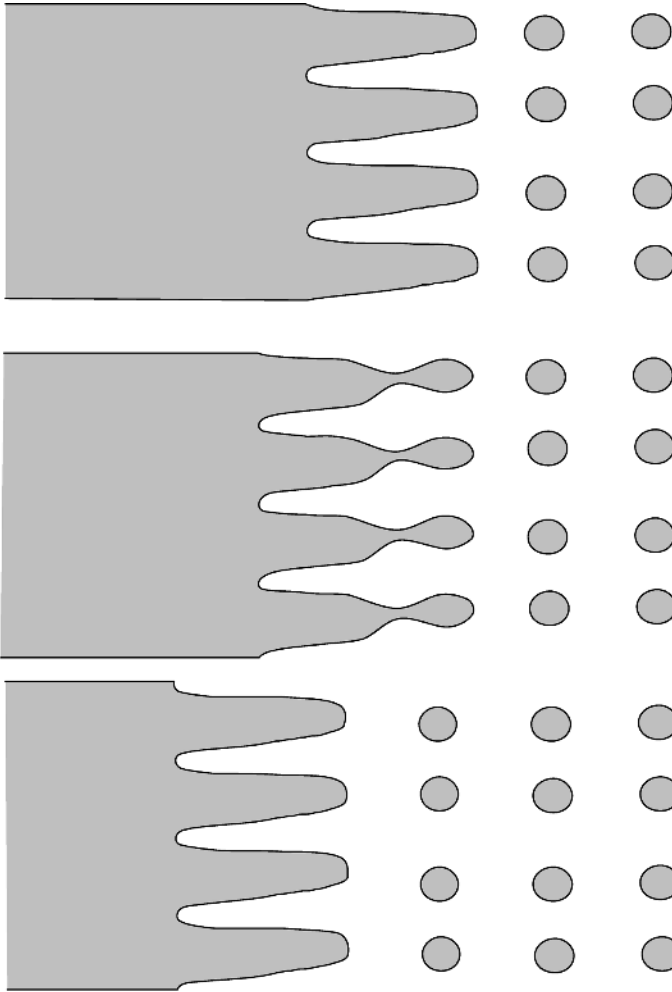


Fig. 20. Schematic for the Taylor meniscus instability mechanism for craze front advance. After Argon and Salama (131)

of λ_c . The fingers expand as shown in Figure 20, eventually joining up to leave isolated columns of polymer. It is possible to calculate the minimum spacing, λ_M , necessary for the instability to grow (116):

$$\lambda_M = 2\pi \sqrt{\frac{\Gamma}{d\sigma_0/dx}} \quad (55)$$

where $d\sigma_0/dx$ is the hydrostatic stress gradient ahead of the craze and Γ is the surface energy. The fastest growing wavelength, λ_c , is given by (131,134)

$$\lambda_c = \sqrt{3}\lambda_M \quad (56)$$

Though a somewhat idealized picture of craze growth, the basic premise of the Taylor meniscus instability model has been verified by Donald and Kramer (135), who measured a critical wavelength in polystyrene crazes that was in close agreement with the interfibrillar distance. Further, following the procedure of Fields and Ashby (134) a steady-state craze tip velocity may be estimated by assuming a non-Newtonian fluid of the form

$$\left(\frac{\dot{\epsilon}}{\dot{\epsilon}_F}\right) = \left(\frac{\sigma}{\sigma_F}\right)^n \quad (57)$$

where $\dot{\epsilon}_F$, σ_F , and n are material constants, leading to the expression for the tip velocity V_0 :

$$V_0 = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} \frac{\dot{\epsilon}_F h}{(n+2)} \left[\frac{\sqrt{3}h(\beta^*S_t)^2}{8\sigma_F\Gamma} \right]^n \left(1 - \frac{2\Gamma}{\beta^*S_t h}\right)^{2n} \quad (58)$$

where h is the thickness of the craze at the crack front and β^*S_t is the hydrostatic pressure between the void fingers.

The (relatively) simple form of equation 58 leading to a constant craze growth rate belies the complicated nature of craze growth in practice. While a linear growth in the craze length has been observed (136), equally a linear growth of the craze has been observed with logarithmic time (137–139). Undoubtedly the complicated, and possibly changing, nature of the stress field at the craze tip and even subtle differences in the morphology of the polymer can dramatically affect craze growth.

Craze Thickening. As indicated in Figure 16, two mechanisms exist for craze thickening:

- (1) Drawing in of isotropic material from the bulk–craze interface
- (2) Creep of the fibrillar material

Both processes can of course occur simultaneously, though it is generally accepted that it is the drawing in of fresh material that dominates the thickening of the craze in amorphous polymers. Evidence for this comes from a number of experiments aimed at examining either the volume fraction of craze material or the draw ratio of the fibrils as a function of position in the craze. If fibril creep occurred to any significant extent, then the fibrils farther from the craze tip, which are naturally older and hence have been subjected to the interface stress for longer, would have a higher draw ratio. Evidence from crazes in PS (121) and poly-*tert*-butylstyrene (140) show an essentially constant draw ratio along the craze length, rising slightly at the craze tip owing to the locally high craze stresses present when they form (117)—this actually leads to a narrow band along the center line of the craze where the draw ratio is higher and volume fraction lower (127). Hence, the main mechanism of craze thickening is from material drawing in at the craze–fibril interface in a manner analogous with that of cold drawing under tensile loading. The material that is drawn in comes from what is termed the “active zone,” a thin layer of material at the bulk–craze interface

consisting of strain-softened material and which is typically of the order of a fibril diameter in size.

As noted, once the material has been drawn into the craze it appears to stabilize, and little, if any, further extension takes place. As with cold drawing, the fibrillar material is seen to take on a natural draw ratio, λ_N , the value of which is characteristic of the individual polymer. Kramer (116,141) found that the natural draw ratio correlated well with the maximum theoretical extension expected for an entangled network, λ_{\max} :

$$\lambda_{\max} = \frac{L_c}{k(M_e)^{1/2}} \text{ and } L_c = \frac{L_M M_e}{M_{m0}} \quad (59)$$

where M_e is the molecular weight between entanglements, L_M the monomer unit length, M_{m0} the monomer molecular weight, and k a constant. The molecular weight between entanglements, M_e , is a characteristic of any given polymer and can be determined experimentally from

$$M_e = \rho RT / G_N \quad (60)$$

where G_N is the measured rubbery plateau shear modulus, ρ the density, T the temperature, and R the gas constant. It is interesting to note that in polymers with a molecular weight less than approximately half the entanglement molecular weight, stable crazes are not seen to form and it seems then that entanglements are a necessary feature for stabilizing the craze-fibril structure.

During the surface drawing process in the active zone, it is inevitable that material that is destined to go into two neighboring fibrils can share a common molecule. Thus, as the fibrils form, the molecule must either disentangle such that the molecule flows into only one fibril or the chain must break. As we noted above, entanglements appear to be necessary for the formation of stable fibrils and, if the molecule is unable to disentangle, then it is inevitable that chain scission must occur during craze growth. On this basis Kramer (116,117) suggests that the energy required to create new surface (Γ) is given by the standard surface energy plus a component due to the energy required for chain scission:

$$\Gamma = \gamma + \frac{Uvd}{4} \quad (61)$$

where γ is the Van der Waals surface energy, U the polymer backbone bond energy, v the network strand density, and d is the root mean square end-to-end distance between entanglements. Kramer also estimated the force required to break a molecule, f_b , given approximately by

$$f_b = \frac{U}{2a} \quad (62)$$

where a is the bond length. If, during the fibril formation, the force should rise above this level breakage will obviously occur. If the force remains below this level then fibril formation can proceed via disentanglement.

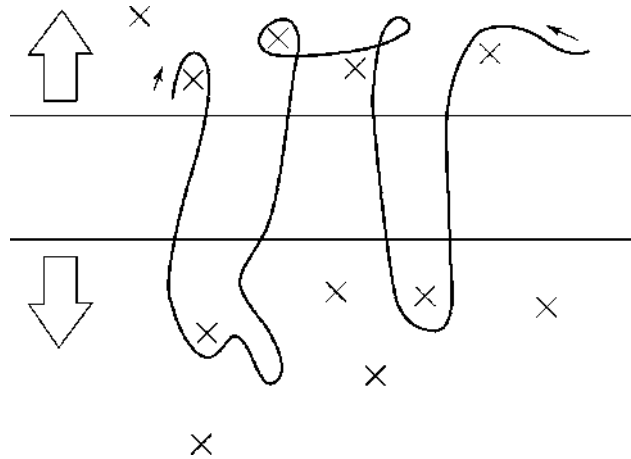


Fig. 21. Block-and-tackle arrangement for disentanglement at the craze boundary as proposed by McLeish and co-workers. Reprinted from Ref. 142, and 144, with permission from Elsevier.

Disentanglement of the polymer chains is generally accepted to occur by the mechanism of reptation as proposed by Doi and Edwards (142) and by deGennes (143). In this model, the movement of the chain is taken to be confined to a tube, the confinement coming from neighboring chains. The molecule moves through this tube in a snake-like motion by a series of cooperative steps. McLeish (144) has introduced the concept of “forced reptation” with regards to craze formation. Here, one end of the molecule is locked into a formed fibril and as material continues to be drawn in to the fibril, the molecule is pulled through its confining tube at a velocity v_f . From such considerations they determined that the maximum force acting on the molecule, f_d , is given by

$$f_d = v_f \xi \frac{M}{M_0} \quad (63)$$

where ξ is a monomeric friction coefficient, M the molecular weight, and M_0 the monomer molecular weight. Thus, if $f_d < f_b$ disentanglement will occur in preference to chain scission. It is worth noting also that if we assume that the velocity of the chain through the confining tube, v_f , is proportional to the applied strain rate and further that the monomeric friction coefficient is a thermally activated process (proportional to $e^{(1/T)}$) then equation 63 indicates that disentanglement is favored by low molecular weights, low strain rates, and high temperatures. However, while this approach correctly accounts for the dependence of craze growth on these parameters, in practice the majority of polymers are of a sufficiently high molecular weight (and hence chain length) that a single molecule will cross between the prefibril regions several times. Again, following the argument of McLeish this results in the polymer chain being pinned at several points along its length in what has been described as a ‘block and tackle’ arrangement (Fig. 21). This has the effect of increasing the velocity the chain must move at through the confining tube for a given macroscopic strain rate. On the basis of

these concepts, Kramer (117) derived an expression for the maximum force on the chain (at its center) of

$$f_{\max} = \xi v_f \frac{M^2}{16M_0M_e} \quad (64)$$

where M_e is the average molecular weight between the entanglements. It is seen then that the maximum force on the chain is proportional to the square of the molecular weight. During the formation of the fibril the chain is assumed to break randomly along its length, thereby reducing M , until the maximum force in the chain falls below the level required for scission. The concept of entangled molecules and the competition between chain scission and disentanglement is important not only for the growth kinetics but also, as we will see in the following section, for the ultimate failure of the fibrils/craze.

Craze Failure

Craze breakdown is obviously of fundamental importance since it is the mechanism by which the crack grows and so leads ultimately to failure. However, the mechanism of craze failure is still unclear. The two main mechanisms that have been proposed are

- (1) Failure in the fibril, or
- (2) Failure at the active zone

It is likely that both occur depending on the conditions and morphology of the material. The first step in considering the likelihood of fibril failure is to look at the stress levels within the fibril. Because of the reduced cross-sectional area in the craze region, the true stress on the fibrils (σ_{CT}) can be considerably higher than the stress at the craze boundary (σ_{CR}) by a factor given by the draw ratio of the fibril (λ):

$$\sigma_{CT} = \lambda\sigma_{CR} \quad (65)$$

λ is typically of the order of 2 to 4 for amorphous polymers and as noted above can be somewhat higher at the midrib of the fibril. Though at these stresses the creep contribution to the fibril length is minor, any small inhomogeneities in the local structure can lead to localized creep. Further, as discussed above, the material which forms the fibril has passed through the active zone at the craze-bulk boundary and has undergone chain scission. This results in the fibrillar material having a lower molecular weight and a reduced entanglement density. These conditions can then lead to chain disentanglement by essentially plastic flow. Such a mechanism can be facilitated by the small diameter of the fibrils leading to a reduction in the constraints that a polymer chain might otherwise see in the bulk. However, if fibril failure were the dominant mechanism in the breakdown of the craze, then it would be reasonable to expect failure to occur at the fibril midpoint where the fibril is oldest and has been subjected to the highest stresses

for the longest length of time. While this has indeed been observed (145,146), it is more generally seen that the point of failure is at the craze–bulk interface, ie at the active zone. This in turn would imply that, for the majority of polymers, the reduction in entanglement density on traversing the active zone during fibril formation is not sufficient to destabilize the fibril.

We saw above that the material that flows into the active zone, and which may go on to form fibrils, has to undergo a degree of disentanglement or chain scission. This results in the material within the active zone having a lower entanglement density than the bulk material. Further the material in the active zone is in a strain-softened state, characterized by more liquid-like dynamics. If the entanglement density is low enough and the polymer strands dwell within the active zone for a sufficiently long period of time then the strands may fully disentangle. The material then loses its load-bearing capacity, and that particular fibril element will fail. In practice, because polymers generally have a broad distribution of molecular weights, there is a chance that the material destined to form a fibril will consist of relatively short chains with a low entanglement density. Thus, the likelihood of a given fibril failing is ultimately governed by a statistical distribution (note that, although not included in this analysis, the presence of inhomogeneities, inclusions, flaws etc can also lead to a breakdown in the active zone owing to a decreased load-bearing capacity). Kramer and Berger (117) developed such a statistical model and the reader is referred to the original paper for the full mathematical development. In brief, they based their calculations on the number of effectively entangled strands, n_e , that survive during the formation of the active zone, ie those which do not undergo chain scission. From this they formulated an expression for the probability that a given fibril would fail, P_F , given by the product of the probability that a strand survives fibril formation, P_{survive} , and the probability that it then disentangles, P_{dis} , summed over the total number of chains which go into fibril formation. The probability of a chain i surviving, $P_{\text{survive}}(i)$, is given by a normal distribution:

$$P_{\text{survive}}(i) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi n_e(1-q)}} \exp\left(-\frac{(i-n_e)^2}{2(1-q)n_e}\right) \quad (66)$$

and where q is the fraction of originally entangled strands which do not undergo chain scission. The probability of disentanglement P_{dis} is given by

$$P_{\text{dis}}(i) \approx \exp\left(-\frac{t_{\text{dis}}(i)}{\tau_{\text{res}}}\right) \quad (67)$$

τ_{res} is a measure of the time the strand spends within the active zone and t_{dis} is the time for disentanglement, and is a function of strand molecular weight, the molecular weight between entanglements, the force on the strand, and the monomeric friction coefficient. Though the τ_{res} term is a fitting parameter, the model captures many of the features observed with craze stability such as the molecular weight dependence (117).

Other Considerations for Crazing

The preceding sections only touch upon the main characteristics of crazing and many of the additional factors that go into determining the initiation, growth, and failure of the craze have been omitted. Without elaboration, we mention several such factors and refer the reader to the relevant references.

The structure of the craze as discussed above has been idealized as a uniform array of isolated fibrils bridging the boundaries of the craze. In reality it is found that the main fibrils are connected to their neighbors by small "cross-tie" fibrils (117,147). The formation of these cross-tie fibrils has been modeled by Tijssens and van der Giessen (148), interestingly using many of the concepts presented in the section on yield. The presence of such cross-tie fibrils gives the craze some tangential load-bearing capacity, and a modeling of such a structure shows that their presence can lead to an increase in the stress on the main fibril, at times sufficient to cause failure of the polymer backbone (149,150).

A common, and potentially serious, drawback of polymers is their susceptibility to environmental factors, causing a greater likelihood to form crazes. Indeed, it has been estimated that environmental-stress cracking is responsible for as much as 30% of failures in engineering polymers in service (151). Environmental stress cracking (ESC), as the phenomenon is known, occurs predominately (though not exclusively) in amorphous polymers in contact with organic solvents. The other prerequisite for ESC is the presence of a stress since ESC is a result of the *physical* interaction of the polymer and solvent and is not due to a *chemical* interaction (ie no chemical degradation occurs).

One view of how the ESC agents act on the polymer is that they can diffuse into the polymer and cause it to swell. This in turn will increase the polymer chain mobility and so cause an effective decrease in the local T_g , leading to an increase in the propensity to craze ie crazing occurs at lower stresses or strain. An alternative view is that the liquid can wet the surface, reducing the energy required to create new surfaces and so aiding the formation of voids. This latter effect may be important in the early stages of craze initiation. The reviews by Kambour (118), Volynskii (152), Wright (153), and the work of, for example, Arnold (154–156) cover this area in detail and are briefly discussed in the chapter Fracture (qv)Fracture in this encyclopedia.

Just as crazing tends to be a precursor to failure under static loading, it is also seen to develop under cyclic loading conditions. The area of cyclic or fatigue failure of polymers has been extensively investigated, with much of the early work carried out by Hertzberg and co-workers (157–160) and Döll and co-workers (161–163). The reader is referred to the chapter Fatigue (qv)Fatigue in this encyclopedia for a detailed review.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

"Crazing" in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 4, pp. 294–307, by R. W. Raetz, Catalin Corp.; in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 4, pp. 299–323, by R. P. Kambour, General Electric Co.; "Mechanical Properties" in *EPST* 1st ed., Vol. 8, pp. 445–516, by V. A. Kargin and G. L. Slonimsky; Akademii Nauk

SSSR; in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 9, pp. 379–466, by D. W. Hadley, University of Reading, U.K., and I. M. Ward, University of Leeds, U.K.; in *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 12, pp. 627–681, by P. A. O'Connell and G. B. McKenna, Texas Tech University.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. G. Langford, W. Whitney, and R. D. Andrews, *Materials Research Laboratory Research Report No. R63-49*, MIT School of Engineering, Cambridge, 1963.
2. J. D. Ferry, *Viscoelastic Properties of Polymers*, 3rd ed., John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1980.
3. R. A. Hill, "A Theory of the Yielding and Plastic Flow of Anisotropic Materials", *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **193**, 281–297 (1948).
4. W. Weber, "Über die Elastizität der Seidenfäden", *Pogg. Ann. Phys.* **4**, 247–257 (1835).
5. L. Boltzmann, "Zur Theorie der Elastischen Nachwirkung", *Sitzungsber Akad. Wiss. Wien. Mathem-Naturwiss Kl.* **70**, 275–300 (1874).
6. B. Bernstein, E. A. Kearsley, and L. J. Zapas, "A Study of Stress Relaxation with Finite Strains", *Trans. Soc. Rheol.* **7**, 391–410 (1963).
7. R. A. Schapery, "On the Characterization of Nonlinear Viscoelastic Materials", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **9**, 295–310 (1969).
8. N. W. Brooks, M. Ghazli, R. A. Duckett, R. A. Unwin, and I. M. Ward, "Effects of Morphology on the Yield Stress of Polyethylene", *Polymer* **40**, 821–825 (1999).
9. R. O. Sirotkin and N. W. Brooks, "The Effects of Morphology on the Yield Behaviour of Polyethylene Copolymers", *Polymer* **42**, 3791–3797 (2001).
10. I. M. Ward, *Mechanical Properties of Solid Polymers* 2nd ed., John Wiley & Sons, Inc., Chichester, U.K., 1983.
11. I. M. Ward and D. W. Hadley, *An Introduction to the Mechanical Properties of Solid Polymers*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1993.
12. A. Nadai, *Theory of Flow and Fracture of Solids*, McGraw-Hill, New York, 1950.
13. E. Orowan, "Fracture and Strength of Solids", *Rep. Prog. Phys.* **12**, 185–232 (1949).
14. A. Considère, "Memoire sur l'Emploi du Fer et de l'Acier dans les Constructions", *Ann. Ponts et Chaussées* **9**, 574–775 (1885).
15. C. G'Sell and J. J. Jonas, "Yield and Transient Effects During the Plastic Deformation of Solid Polymers", *J. Mater. Sci.* **16**, 1956–1974 (1981).
16. C. G'Sell, J. M. Hiver, A. Dahouin, and A. Souahi, "Video-Controlled Tensile Testing of Polymers and Metals beyond the Necking Point", *J. Mater. Sci.* **27**, 5031–5039 (1992).
17. A. R. Haynes and P. D. Coates, "Semi-automated image analysis of the true tensile drawing behavior of polymers to large strains", *J. Mater. Sci.* **31**, 1843–1855 (1996).
18. S. Nazarenko, S. Bensason, A. Hiltner, and E. Baer, "The Effect of Temperature and Pressure on Necking of Polycarbonate", *Polymer* **35**, 3883–3892 (1994).
19. M. C. Boyce and E. M. Arruda, "An Experimental and Analytical Investigation of the Large Strain Compressive and Tensile Response of Glassy Polymers", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **30**, 1288–1298 (1990).
20. W. Whitney and R. D. Andrews, "Yielding of Glassy Polymers: Volume Effects", *J. Polym. Sci., Part C* **16**, 2981–2990 (1967).
21. N. Brown and I. M. Ward, "Load Drop at the Upper Yield Point of a Polymer", *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **2**, 607–620 (1968).
22. M. C. Boyce, E. M. Arruda, and R. Jayachandran, "The Large Strain Compression, Tension and Simple Shear of Polycarbonate", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **34**, 716–725 (1994).
23. M. Kitagawa, D. X. Zhou, and J. H. Qiu, "Stress–Strain Curves for Solid Polymers", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **35**, 1725–1732 (1995).
24. H. Tresca, "Sur l'écoulement des corps solides soumis à des fortes pressions" *C. R. Acad. Sci. (Paris)* **59**, 754–758 (1864).

25. R. von Mises, "Die Mechanik der festen Körper im plastischen deformablen Zustand", *Göttinger Nachrichten, Math-Phys. Klasse* 582–592 (1913).
26. C. A. Coulomb, "Sur une application des regles de Maximis et Minimis à quelques Problèmes de Statique, relatifs à l'Architecture", *Mem. Math et Phys.* **7**, 343–382 (1773).
27. S. Rabinowitz, I. M. Ward, and J. S. C. Parry, "The Effect of Hydrostatic Pressure on the Shear Yield Behavior of Polymers", *J. Mater. Sci.* **5**, 29–39 (1970).
28. D. R. Mears, K. D. Pae, and J. A. Sauer, "Effects of Hydrostatic Pressure on the Mechanical Behavior of Polyethylene and Polypropylene", *J. Appl. Phys.* **40**, 4229–4237 (1969).
29. R. A. Duckett, S. Rabinowitz, and I. M. Ward, "The Strain-rate, Temperature and Pressure Dependence of Yield of Isotropic Poly(Methyl Methacrylate) and Poly(Ethylene Terephthalate)", *J. Mater. Sci.* **5**, 909–915 (1970).
30. K. D. Pae and Bhateja, "The Effects of Hydrostatic Pressure on the Mechanical Behavior of Polymers", *J. Macromol. Sci., Chem.* **13**(1), 1–75 (1975).
31. F. H. Muller, "Zum Problem der Kaltver Streckung hochpolymerer Substanzen", *Kolloid Zeitschrift* **114**, 59–61 (1949).
32. F. H. Muller, "Zur Kaltver Streckung hochmolekularer Stoffe", *Kolloid Zeitschrift* **115**, 118–123 (1949).
33. F. H. Muller, "Weitere Versuche und Betrachtungen zur Kaltver Streckung", *Kolloid Zeitschrift* **126**, 65–72 (1956).
34. P. I. Vincent, "Necking and cold-drawing of rigid plastics", *Polymer* **1**, 7–19 (1960).
35. W. G. Knauss and I. Emri, "Volume Change and the Nonlinearly Thermoviscoelastic Constitution of Polymers", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **27**(1), 86–100 (1987).
36. R. E. Robertson, "Theory of the Plasticity of Glassy Polymers", *J. Chem. Phys.* **44**, 3950–3956 (1966).
37. R. N. Haward and G. Thackray, "The Use of a Mathematical Model to Describe Isothermal Stress–Strain Curves in Glassy Polymers", *Proc. R. Soc., London, Ser. A* **302**, 453–472 (1968).
38. A. S. Argon, "A Theory for the Low-Temperature Plastic Deformation of Glassy Polymers", *Philos. Mag.* **28**, 839–865 (1973).
39. M. C. Boyce, D. M. Parks, and A. S. Argon, "Large Inelastic Deformation of Glassy Polymers. Part I: Rate Dependent Constitutive Model", *Mech. Mater.* **7**, 15–33 (1988).
40. T. A. Tervoort, E. T. J. Klompen, and L. E. Govaert, "A Multi-Mode Approach to Finite, Three-Dimensional, Nonlinear Viscoelastic Behavior of Polymer Glasses", *J. Rheol.* **40**, 779–797 (1996).
41. R. M. Shay and J. M. Caruthers, "A New Nonlinear Viscoelastic Constitutive Equation for Predicting Yield in Amorphous Solid Polymers", *J. Rheol.* **30**, 871–827 (1986).
42. S. R. Lustig, R. M. Shay, and J. M. Caruthers, "Thermodynamic Constitutive Equations for Materials with Memory on a Material Time Scale", *J. Rheol.* **40**, 69–106 (1996).
43. H. Eyring, "Viscosity, Plasticity and Diffusion as Examples of Absolute Reaction Rates", *J. Chem. Phys.* **4**, 283–291 (1936).
44. C. Bauwens-Crowet, J. C. Bauwens, and G. Homes, "Tensile Yield-Stress Behavior of Glassy Polymers", *J. Polym. Sci., Part A* **2**, 735–742 (1969).
45. J. S. Foot, R. W. Truss, I. M. Ward, and R. A. Duckett, "The Yield Behavior of Amorphous Polyethylene-terephthalate—An Activated Rate Theory Approach", *J. Mater. Sci.* **22**, 1437–1442 (1987).
46. Y. Liu and R. W. Truss, "A Study of Tensile Yielding of Isotactic Polypropylene", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **32**, 2037–2047 (1994).
47. M. Bonner, R. A. Duckett, and I. M. Ward, "The Creep Behaviour of Isotropic Polyethylene", *J. Mater. Sci.* **34**, 1885–1897 (1999).

48. I. M. Ward, "Creep and Yield Behavior of Polyethylene", *Macromol. Symp.* **98**, 1029–1041 (1995).
49. M. L. Williams, R. F. Landel, and J. D. Ferry, "The Temperature Dependence of Relaxation Mechanisms in Amorphous Polymers and Other Glass-Forming Liquids", *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **77**, 3701–3706 (1955).
50. M. C. Wang and E. J. Guth, "Statistical Theory of Networks of Non-Gaussian Flexible Chains", *J. Chem. Phys.* **20**, 1144–1157 (1952).
51. I. M. Ward, *Structure and Properties of Oriented Polymers*, 2nd ed. Chapman and Hall, London, 1997.
52. D. M. Parks, A. S. Argon, and B. Bagepalli, "Large Elastic–Plastic Deformation of Glassy Polymers", *Program in Polymer Science and Technology*, Technical Report, MIT, 1984.
53. L. R. G. Treloar, *The Physics of Rubber Elasticity*, 3rd ed., Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1975.
54. E. M. Arruda and M. C. Boyce, "A 3-Dimensional Constitutive Model for the Large Stretch Behavior of Rubber Elastic Materials", *J. Mech. Phys. Solids* **41**, 389–412 (1993).
55. W. H. Han, F. Horkay, and G. B. McKenna, "Mechanical and Swelling Behaviors of Rubber: A Comparison of Some Molecular Models with Experiment", *Math. Mech. Solids* **4**(2), 139–167 (1999).
56. O. A. Hasan, M. C. Boyce, X. S. Li, and S. Berko, "An Investigation of the Yield and Post-Yield Behavior and Corresponding Structure of Poly(Methylmethacrylate)", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **31**(2), 185–197 (1993).
57. C. G'Sell and G. B. McKenna, "Influence of Physical Ageing on the Yield Response of Model DGEBA/Poly(Propylene Oxide) Epoxy Glasses", *Polymer* **33**, 2103–2113 (1992).
58. P. D. Wu and E. van der Giessen, "On Improved Network Models for Rubber Elasticity and Their Applications to Orientation Hardening in Glassy Polymers", *J. Mech. Phys. Solids* **41**, 427–456 (1993).
59. A. Leonov, "Nonequilibrium Thermodynamics and Rheology of Viscoelastic Polymer Media", *Rheol. Acta* **15**, 85–98 (1976).
60. T. A. Tervoort and L. E. Govaert, "Strain Hardening Behavior of Polycarbonate in the Glassy State", *J. Rheol.* **44**, 1263–1277 (2000).
61. L. E. Govaert, P. H. M. Timmermans, and W. A. M. Brekelmans, "The Influence of Intrinsic Strain Softening Localization in Polycarbonate: Modeling and Experimental Validation", *J. Eng. Mater. Tech., Trans ASME* **122**(2), 177–185 (2000).
62. M. Aboulfaraj, C. G'Sell, D. Mangelinck, and G. B. McKenna, "Physical Aging of Epoxy Networks after Quenching and/or Plastic Cycling", *J. Non-Cryst. Solids* **172–174**, 615–621 (1994).
63. E. M. Arruda and M. C. Boyce, "Evolution of Plastic Anisotropy in Amorphous Polymers during Finite Straining", *Int. J. Plast.* **9**, 697–720 (1993).
64. B. D. Coleman, "Thermodynamics of Materials with Memory", *Arch. Ration. Mech. Anal.* **17**, 230–254 (1964).
65. W. Noll, "Mathematical Theory of the Mechanical Behavior of Continuous Media", *Arch. Ration. Mech. Anal.* **2**, 197–226 (1958).
66. G. Adam and J. H. Gibbs, "On the Temperature Dependence of Cooperative Relaxation Properties in Glass Forming Liquids" *J. Chem. Phys.* **43**, 139–146 (1965).
67. D. A. Zaukelies, "Observation of Slip in Nylon 66 and 610 and Its Interpretation in Terms of a New Model", *J. Appl. Phys.* **33**, 2797–2803 (1962).
68. P. Predecki and W. O. Statton, "Dislocations Caused by Chain Ends in Crystalline Polymers", *J. Appl. Phys.* **37**, 4053–4059 (1966).
69. P. Predecki and W. O. Statton, "A Dislocation Mechanism for Deformation of Polyethylene", *J. Appl. Phys.* **38**, 4140–4144 (1967).

70. J. Petermann and H. Gleiter, "Direct Observation of Dislocations in Polyethylene Crystals", *Philos. Mag.* **25**, 813–816 (1972).
71. J. J. Gilman, in A. R. Rosenfield, G. T. Hahn, A. L. Bement and R. I. Jaffee, eds., *Dislocation Dynamics*, John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1968.
72. J. J. Gilman, in A. S. Argon, ed., *Physics of Strength and Plasticity*, MIT, 1969.
73. P. B. Bowden and S. Raha, "A Molecular Model for Yield and Flow in Amorphous Glassy Polymers Making Use of a Dislocation Analogue", *Philos. Mag.* **29**, 149–166 (1974).
74. J. Frenkel, "Zur Theorie der Elastizitätsgrenze und der Festigkeit Kristallinischer Körper", *Z. Physik* **37**, 572–609 (1926).
75. P. B. Bowden in R. N. Haward, ed. *The Physics of Glassy Polymers*, 1st ed., John Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York, 1973.
76. B. Crist, in R. N. Haward and R. J. Young, eds., *The Physics of Glassy Polymers*, 2nd ed., Chapman and Hall, London 1997.
77. A. Kelly and N. H. MacMillen, *Strong Solids*, 3rd ed., Oxford University Press, New York, 1986.
78. N. Brown, "A Theory of Yielding of Amorphous Polymers at Low Temperature—A Molecular Viewpoint" *J. Mater. Sci.* **18**, 2241–2254 (1983).
79. Z. H. Stachurski, "Deformation Mechanisms and Yield Strength of Amorphous Polymers", *Prog. Polym. Sci.* **22**, 407–474 (1997).
80. P. A. O'Connell and G. B. McKenna, "Large Deformation Response of Polycarbonate: Time–Temperature, Time–Aging Time and Time–Strain Superposition", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **37**, 1485–1495 (1997).
81. C. G'Sell and G. B. McKenna, "Influence of Physical Ageing on the Yield Response of Model DGEBA/Poly(Propylene Oxide) Epoxy Glasses", *Polymer* **33**, 2103–2113 (1992).
82. E. Oleynik, "Plastic Deformation and Mobility in Glassy Polymers", *Prog. Colloid Polym. Sci.* **80**, 140–150 (1989).
83. O. A. Hasan and M. C. Boyce, "Energy Storage During Inelastic Deformation of Glassy Polymers", *Polymer* **34**, 5085–5092 (1993).
84. Y. C. Yung, *Foundations of Solid Mechanics*, Prentice-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs, N.J., 1965.
85. W. C. Whitney and R. D. Andrews, "Yielding of Glassy Polymers: Volume Effects", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B* **16**, 2981–2990 (1967).
86. D. M. Colucci, P. A. O'Connell, and G. B. McKenna, "Stress Relaxation Experiments in Polycarbonate: A Comparison of Volume Changes for Two Commercial Grades", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **37**, 1469–1474 (1997).
87. W. G. Knauss and I. Emri, "Volume Change and Nonlinearly Thermo-Viscoelastic Constitution of Polymers", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **27**(1), 86–100 (1987).
88. C. G'Sell, J. M. Hiver, and A. Dahoun, "Experimental Characterization of Deformation Damage in Solid Polymers under Tension, and Its Interrelation with Necking", *Int. J. Solids. Struct.* **39**, 3857–3872 (2002).
89. R. S. Duran and McKenna, "A Torsional Dilatometer for Volume Change Measurements on Deformed Glasses: Instrument Description and Measurements on Equilibrated Glasses", *J. Rheol.* **34**, 813–839 (1990).
90. L. Xie, D. W. Gidley, H. A. Hristov, and A. F. Yee, "Evolution of Nanometer Voids in Polycarbonate under Mechanical Stress and Thermal Expansion using Positron Spectroscopy", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B* **33**(1), 77–84 (1995).
91. O. A. Hasan, M. C. Boyce, X. S. Li, and S. Derko, "An Investigation of the Yield and Post-Yield Behavior and Corresponding Structure of Poly(Methyl Methacrylate)", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B* **31**, 185–197 (1993).

92. M. Y. Ruan, H. Moaddel, A. M. Jamieson, R. Simha, and J. D. McGervey, "Positron Annihilation Lifetime Studies of Free Volume Changes in Polycarbonate under Static Tensile Deformation", *Macromolecules* **25**, 2407–2411 (1992).
93. D. N. Theodorou and U. W. Suter, "Detailed Molecular Structure of a Vinyl Polymer Glass", *Macromolecules* **18**, 1467–1478 (1986).
94. D. N. Theodorou and U. W. Suter, "Atomistic Modeling of Mechanical Properties of Polymeric Glasses", *Macromolecules* **19**(1), 139–154 (1986).
95. P. H. Mott, A. S. Argon, and U. W. Suter, "Atomistic Modeling Cavitation of Glassy Polymers", *Philos. Mag.* **67**, 931–978 (1993).
96. P. H. Mott, A. S. Argon, and U. W. Suter, "Atomistic Modeling of Plastic Deformation of Glassy Polymers", *Philos. Mag.* **68**, 537–564 (1993).
97. N. W. Brooks, R. A. Duckett, and I. M. Ward, "Investigation into Double Yield Points in Polyethylene", *Polymer* **33**, 1872–1880 (1992).
98. N. W. Brooks, A. P. Unwin, R. A. Duckett, and I. M. Ward, "Double Yield Points in Polyethylene—Structural Changes under Tensile Deformation", *J. Macromol. Sci., Phys.* **B34**(1–2), 29–54 (1995).
99. R. Seguela and O. Darras, "Phenomenological Aspects of the Double Yield of Polyethylene and Related Copolymers under Tensile Loading", *J. Mat. Sci.* **29**, 5342–5352 (1994).
100. P. A. Botto, R. A. Duckett, and I. M. Ward, "The Yield and Thermoelastic Properties of Oriented Poly(Methyl-Methacrylate)", *Polymer* **28**, 257–262 (1987).
101. J. P. Chen, A. F. Yee, and E. J. Moskala, "The Molecular Basis for the Relationship between the Secondary Relaxation and Mechanical Properties of a Series of Polyester Copolymer Glasses", *Macromolecules* **32**, 5944–5955 (1999).
102. R. W. Truss, P. L. Clarke, and R. A. Duckett, "The Dependence of Yield Behavior on Temperature, Pressure and Strain Rate for Linear Polyethylenes of Different Molecular Weight and Morphology", *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys.* **22**, 191–209 (1984).
103. R. J. Young, "A Dislocation Model for Yield in Polyethylene", *Philos. Mag.* **30**, 85–94 (1974).
104. M. A. Kennedy, A. J. Peacock, M. D. Failla, J. C. Lucas, and L. Mandelkern, "Tensile Properties of Crystalline Polymers—Random Copolymers of Ethylene", *Macromolecules* **28**, 1407–1421 (1995).
105. B. Crist, C. J. Fisher, and P. R. Howard, "Mechanical Properties of Model Polyethylenes—Tensile Elastic Modulus and Yield Stress", *Macromolecules* **22**, 1709–1718 (1989).
106. O. Darras, and R. Seguela, "Tensile Yield of Polyethylene in Relation to Crystal Thickness", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **31**, 759–766 (1993).
107. N. W. J. Brooks and M. Mukhtar, "Temperature and Stem Length Dependence of the Yield Stress of Polyethylene", *Polymer* **41**, 1475–1480 (2000).
108. R. Seguela, "Dislocation Approach to the Plastic Deformation of Semicrystalline Polymers: Kinetic Aspects for Polyethylene and Polypropylene", *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Phys.* **40**, 593–601 (2002).
109. Z. Bartczak, R. E. Cohen, and A. S. Argon, "Evolution of the Crystalline Texture of High-Density Polyethylene during Uniaxial Compression", *Macromolecules* **25**, 4692–4704 (1992).
110. Z. Bartczak, A. S. Argon, and R. E. Cohen, "Deformation Mechanisms and Plastic Resistance in Single Crystal Textured High Density Polyethylene", *Macromolecules* **25**, 5036–5053 (1992).
111. A. S. Argon and J. G. Hannoosh, "Initiation of Crazes in Polystyrene", *Philos. Mag.* **36**, 1195–1216 (1977).
112. A. Lazzeri and C. B. Bucknall, "Dilatational Bands in Rubber Toughened Polymers", *J. Mater. Sci.* **28**, 6799–6808 (1989).

113. C. B. Bucknall and A. Lazzeri, "Rubber Toughening of Plastics. Part XIII: Dilatational Yielding in PA6.6/EPR Blends", *J. Mater. Sci.* **35**, 427–435 (2000).
114. M. Todo, K. Takahasi, P. Y. B. Jar, and P. Beguelin, "Toughening Mechanisms of Rubber Toughened PMMA", *JSME Int. J., Ser. A: Solid. Mech. Mater. Eng.* **42**, 585–591 (1999).
115. Y. Huang and A. J. Kinloch, "Modeling of the Toughening Mechanisms in Rubber Modified Epoxy Polymers. Part I: Finite Element Analysis Studies", *J. Mater. Sci.* **27**, 2753–2762 (1992).
116. E. J. Kramer, "Microscopic and Molecular Fundamentals of Crazing" in *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **52/53**, 1–56 (1983).
117. E. J. Kramer and L. L. Berger, "Fundamental Processes of Craze Growth and Fracture" in *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **91/92**, 1–68 (1990).
118. R. P. Kambour, "A Review of Crazing and Fracture in Thermoplastics", *J. Polym. Sci., Macromol. Rev.* **7**, 1–154 (1973).
119. A. M. Donald, in W. Brostow, ed., *Performance of Plastics*, Hanser Publishers, Munich, pp. 283–296, 2000.
120. A. M. Donald, in R. N. Haward and R. J. Young, eds., *The Physics of Glassy Polymer*, Chapman and Hall, London, 1997.
121. B. D. Lauterwasser and E. J. Kramer, "Microscopic Mechanisms and Mechanics of Craze Growth and Fracture", *Philos. Mag. A* **39**, 469–495 (1979).
122. S. S. Sternstein and L. Ongchin, "Yield Criteria for Plastic Deformation of Glassy High Polymers in General Stress Fields", *Polym. Prepr.* **10**, 1117–1124 (1969).
123. S. S. Sternstein and F. A. Myers, "Yielding of Glassy Polymers in the Second Quadrant of Principal Stress Space", *J. Macromol. Sci., Phys.* **B8**, 539–571 (1973).
124. A. N. Gent, "Hypothetical Mechanism of Crazing in Glassy Plastics", *J. Mater. Sci.* **5**, 925–932 (1970).
125. R. J. Oxborough and P. B. Bowden, "A General Critical–Strain Criterion for Crazing in Amorphous Glassy Polymers", *Philos. Mag.* **28**, 547–559 (1973).
126. A. S. Argon, "Role of Heterogeneities in the Crazing of Glassy Polymers", *Pure Appl. Chem.* **43**, 247–272 (1975).
127. A. S. Argon, "Physical Basis of Distortional and Dilatational Plastic Flow in Glassy Polymers", *J. Macromol. Sci., Phys.* **B8**, 573–596 (1973).
128. R. P. Kambour and C. L. Gruner, "Effects of Polar Group Incorporation on Crazing of Glassy Polymers: Styrene–Acrylonitrile Copolymer and a dicyano Bisphenol Polycarbonate", *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys.* **16**, 703–716 (1978).
129. R. P. Kambour, "Correlations of the Dry Crazing Resistance of Glassy Polymers with Other Physical Properties", *Polym. Commun.* **24**, 292–296 (1983).
130. G. M. Gusler and G. B. McKenna, "The Craze Initiation Response of a Polystyrene and a Styrene–Acrylonitrile Copolymer during Physical Aging", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **37**, 1442–1448 (1997).
131. A. S. Argon and M. M. Salama, "The Mechanics of Fracture in Glassy Materials Capable of Some Inelastic Deformation", *Mater. Sci. Eng.* **23**, 219–230 (1977).
132. G. I. Taylor, "The Instability of Liquid Surfaces When Accelerated in the Direction Perpendicular to Their Planes", *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **201**, 192–196 (1950).
133. P. G. Saffman and G. I. Taylor, "The Penetration of Liquid into Porous Medium or Hele–Shaw Cell Containing a More Viscous Liquid", *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **245**, 312–329 (1958).
134. R. J. Fields and M. F. Ashby, "Finger-Like Crack Growth in Solids and Liquids", *Philos. Mag.* **33**, 33–48 (1976).
135. A. M. Donald and E. J. Kramer, "The Mechanisms for Craze Tip Advance in Glassy Polymers", *Philos. Mag. A* **43**, 857–870 (1981).

136. A. S. Argon and M. M. Salama, "Growth of Crazes in Glassy Polymers", *Philos. Mag. B* **36**, 1217–1234 (1977).
137. N. Verheulpen-Heymans, and J. C. Bauwens, "Effect of Stress and Temperature on Dry Craze Growth Kinetics during Low-Stress Creep of Polycarbonate", *J. Mater. Sci.* **11**, 1–6 (1976).
138. J. L. S. Wales, "Surface Crazing in PVC and Other Polymers", *Polymer* **21**, 684–690 (1980).
139. M. Delin and G. B. McKenna, "The Craze Growth Response in Stress Relaxation Conditions for a Styrene–Acrylonitrile Copolymer during Physical Aging", *Mech. Time Dep. Mater.* **4**, 231–255 (2000).
140. A. M. Donald, E. J. Kramer, and R. A. Bubeck, "The Entanglement Network and Craze Micromechanics in Glassy Polymers", *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys.* **20**, 1129–1141 (1982).
141. A. M. Donald and E. J. Kramer, "Effect of Molecular Entanglements on Craze Microstructure in Glassy Polymers", *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Phys.* **20**, 899–909 (1982).
142. M. Doi and S. F. Edwards, "Dynamics of Concentrated Polymer Systems. Part I: Brownian Motion in the Equilibrium State", *J. Chem. Soc., Faraday Trans. 2* **74**, 1789–1801 (1978).
143. P. G. deGennes, "Reptation of a Polymer Chain in the Presence of Fixed Obstacles", *J. Chem. Phys.* **55**, 572–579 (1971).
144. T. C. B. McLeish, C. J. G. Plummer, and A. M. Donald, "Crazing by Disentanglement–Non-Diffusive Reptation", *Polymer* **30**, 1651–1655 (1989).
145. R. Schirrer, J. Le Masson, and B. Tomatis, "The Disentanglement Time of the Craze Fibrils under Cyclic Load", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **24**, 820–824 (1984).
146. W. Doll, "Optical Interference Measurements and Fracture Mechanics Analysis of Crack Tip Craze Zones", *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **52/53**, 105–168 (1983).
147. P. Behan, M. Bevis and D. Hull, "Fracture Processes in Polystyrene", *Proc. R. Soc. London, Ser. A* **343**, 525–535 (1975).
148. M. G. A. Tijssens and E. van der Giessen, "A Possible Mechanism for Cross-Tie Fibril Generation in Crazing of Amorphous Polymers", *Polymer* **43**, 831–838 (2002).
149. H. R. Brown, "A Molecular Interpretation of the Toughness of Glassy Polymers", *Macromolecules* **24**, 2752–2756 (1991).
150. Y. Sha, C. Y. Hui, A. Ruina, and E. J. Kramer, "Detailed Simulation of Craze Fibril Failure at a Crack Tip in a Glassy Polymer", *Acta. Mater.* **45**, 3555–3563 (1997).
151. D. C. Wright, *Environmental Stress Cracking of Plastics*, ChemTec, Ontario, 1996.
152. A. L. Volynskii and N. F. Bakeev, *Solvent Crazing of Polymers*, Elsevier, New York, 1995.
153. W. A. Woishnis and D. C. Wright, "Select Plastics to Avoid Product Failure", *Adv. Mater. and Proc.* **12**, 39–40 (1994).
154. J. C. Arnold, "Environmental Stress Crack Initiation in Glassy Polymers", *Trends Polym. Sci.* **4**, 403–408 (1996).
155. J. C. Arnold, "Craze Initiation during the Environmental Stress Cracking of Polymers", *J. Mater. Sci.* **30**, 655–660 (1995).
156. J. C. Arnold, "Environmental Stress Cracking Behavior of Urethane Methacrylate Based Resins. Part I: Environmental Crazing and Cracking under Bending Conditions", *J. Mater. Sci.* **29**, 3095–3101 (1994).
157. R. W. Hertzberg and J. A. Manson, *Fatigue in Engineering Plastics*, Academic Press, New York, 1980.
158. C. Rimnac, R. W. Hertzberg and J. A. Manson, "On the Nature of Craze Development and Breakdown During Fatigue", *J. Mater. Sci. Lett.* **2**, 325–328 (1983).
159. C. Rimnac, R. W. Hertzberg, and J. A. Manson, "Craze Development and Breakdown in PVC during Cyclic Loading", *J. Mater. Sci.* **19**, 1116–1124 (1984).

160. R. W. Lang, J. A. Manson, and R. W. Hertzberg, "Craze Development in Poly(Methyl-Methacrylate) during Stable Fatigue Crack Propagation", *Polym. Eng. Sci.* **24**, 833–842 (1984).
161. W. Döll and L. Könczöl, "Micromechanics of Fracture under Static and Fatigue Loading: Optical Interferometry of Crack Tip Craze Zones" *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **91/92**, 137–214 (1990).
162. R. Schirrer, M. G. Schinker, L. Konczol, and W. Döll, "Interference Optical Studies on Crack Propagation during Cyclic Loading in PMMA", *Colloid Polym. Sci.* **259**, 812–817 (1981).
163. W. Döll, L. Kinczol, and M. G. Schinker, "Size and Mechanical Properties of Craze Zones at Propagating Crack Tips in Poly(Methyl Methacrylate) during Fatigue Loading", *Polymer* **24**, 1213–1219 (1983).

PAUL A. O'CONNELL
GREGORY B. MCKENNA
Texas Tech University

Z

ZIEGLER–NATTA CATALYSTS

Introduction

Ziegler–Natta catalysts have had enormous impact on the polymer industry in the past 50 years, with current world production of polyolefins using Ziegler–Natta catalysis amounting to more than 50 million tons per annum. The vast advances made during the past decades stem from breakthrough discoveries made by Karl Ziegler and Giulio Natta in the early 1950s. It was in 1953 that Ziegler and co-workers, at the Max Planck Institute in Mülheim, were investigating the “Aufbau” reaction in which triethylaluminum reacts with ethylene to give higher aluminum trialkyls (1). Unexpectedly, one experiment led not to the oligomerization of ethylene via the Aufbau reaction, but to the formation of 1-butene. It turned out that this dimerization reaction had been catalyzed by traces of nickel present as a contaminant in the reactor. Soon afterwards, a revolutionary breakthrough was achieved when combinations of transition-metal compounds and aluminum alkyls were found that could polymerize ethylene under mild conditions, yielding high density polyethylene (2,3). In 1954 Giulio Natta and co-workers at Milan Polytechnic succeeded not only in polymerizing propylene with the Ziegler catalyst combination $\text{TiCl}_4/\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$, but also in fractionating the resulting polymer to obtain and characterize isotactic polypropylene (4–6). This demonstration of stereoregular polymerization led to an explosive growth of new polymers and industrial applications as the full scope of Ziegler–Natta catalysis was realized (7–9); Ziegler and Natta were jointly awarded the Nobel Prize for Chemistry in 1963.

Ziegler–Natta catalysts for polyethylene and polypropylene have progressed from first-generation titanium trichloride catalysts, used in the manufacturing processes of the late 1950s and the 1960s, to the high activity magnesium chloride supported catalysts used today. Improvements in catalyst performance have facilitated the development of efficient gas-phase and bulk processes for polyethylene and polypropylene, and at the same time have led to ever-increasing control over polymer composition and properties.

Early Catalysts

Titanium Trichloride. One of the first catalysts found by Ziegler to be effective in ethylene polymerization was the product of the reaction of titanium tetrachloride with triethylaluminum. At low Al/Ti ratios, this reaction yields titanium trichloride as a solid precipitate. TiCl_3 exists in four crystalline modifications, the α , β , δ , and γ forms, of which the β -modification has a linear (chain-like) structure and the α , δ , and γ forms have a layered structure (10,11). The reaction product of TiCl_4 and AlR_3 is β - TiCl_3 , which can be converted to the γ form by heating. The latter catalyst has much higher stereoregulating ability in propylene polymerization, while β - TiCl_3 is an effective catalyst for the production of *cis*-1,4-polyisoprene. α - TiCl_3 can be prepared by reduction of TiCl_4 with hydrogen or with aluminum powder. The δ form can be prepared by prolonged grinding of γ - or α - TiCl_3 and has a more disordered structure as a result of sliding of Cl–Ti–Cl triple layers during mechanical activation (12).

The first-generation Ziegler–Natta catalysts used in early manufacturing processes for polypropylene (PP) comprised TiCl_3 and cocrystallized AlCl_3 , resulting from reduction of TiCl_4 with Al or an aluminum alkyl. The cocatalyst used in the polymerization process was $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_2\text{Cl}$ (DEAC). Catalyst activity was relatively low, giving polymer yields of around 1 kg PP/g cat., necessitating removal (deashing) of catalyst residues from the polymer. In many cases, extractive removal of atactic polymer was also required.

Other Early Developments. In addition to the breakthrough by Ziegler, two other discoveries of ethylene polymerization catalysts were made in the early 1950s. A patent by Standard Oil of Indiana, filed in 1951, disclosed reduced molybdenum oxide or cobalt molybdate on alumina (13). At the same time, Phillips discovered supported chromium oxide catalysts, prepared by impregnation of a silica–alumina support with CrO_3 (14–16). Both the Phillips catalyst and titanium chloride based Ziegler catalysts are widely used in the production of high density polyethylene (HDPE).

The various discoveries made independently by different industrial research groups in the early 1950s resulted in intensive patent litigations (8,17,18), which in the case of PP continued up to the 1980s, when a composition of matter patent on PP was awarded in the United States to Phillips, because a fraction of crystalline PP was found to be present in a polymer prepared using a $\text{CrO}_3/\text{Al}_2\text{O}_3/\text{SiO}_2$ catalyst (19). However, despite the importance of the Phillips catalyst for HDPE, it was unsuitable for PP, which is produced entirely using Ziegler–Natta catalysts and (to a much smaller extent) metallocene-based catalysts.

Second-Generation Catalysts. In the 1970s, an improved TiCl_3 catalyst for PP was developed by Solvay (20). Catalyst preparation involved reduction of TiCl_4 using DEAC, followed by treatment with an ether and TiCl_4 . The ether treatment results in removal of AlCl_3 from $\text{TiCl}_3 \cdot n\text{AlCl}_3$, while treatment with TiCl_4 effects a phase transformation from β - to δ - TiCl_3 at a relatively mild temperature ($<100^\circ\text{C}$) (21). Using catalysts of this type, it was possible to obtain PP yields in the range 5–20 kg/g cat. in 1–4 h of polymerization in liquid monomer (22). Commercial implementation of second-generation catalysts was, however,

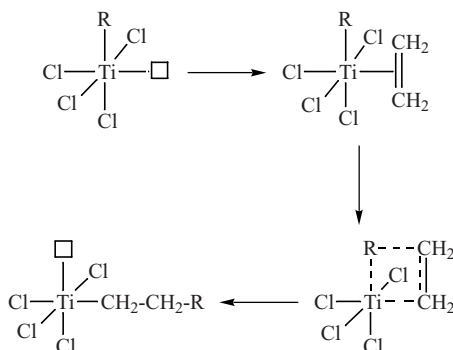


Fig. 1. Cossee–Arlman mechanism for polymerization.

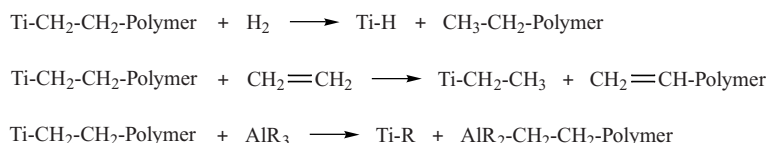


Fig. 2. Chain transfer in ethylene polymerization.

overshadowed by the advent of third- and later-generation magnesium chloride supported catalysts (discussed under Ziegler–Natta Catalysts for Polypropylene).

Polymerization and Particle Growth

Polymer Chain Growth. The essential characteristic of Ziegler–Natta catalysis is the polymerization of an olefin or diene using a combination of a transition-metal compound and a base-metal alkyl cocatalyst, normally an aluminum alkyl. The function of the cocatalyst is to alkylate the transition metal, generating a transition-metal–carbon bond. It is also essential that the active center contains a coordination vacancy. Chain propagation takes place via the Cossee–Arlman mechanism (23), in which coordination of the olefin at the vacant coordination site is followed by chain migratory insertion into the metal–carbon bond, as illustrated in Figure 1.

Regulation of polyolefin molecular weight is effected by the use of hydrogen as chain-transfer agent. Chain transfer can also occur via β -hydrogen transfer from the growing chain to the transition metal or to the monomer, and to a lesser extent via alkyl exchange with the cocatalyst (Fig. 2).

In propylene polymerization using titanium chloride catalysts, chain propagation takes place via primary (1,2-) insertion of the monomer. For isospecific propagation, there must be only one coordination vacancy and the active site must be chiral. Corradini and co-workers have demonstrated that the asymmetric environment of the active site forces the growing chain to adopt a particular orientation so as to minimize steric interactions with (chlorine) ligands present on the catalyst surface (24). This in turn leads to one particular prochiral face of the

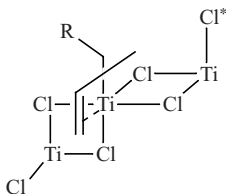


Fig. 3. Model for stereospecific polymerization of propylene. The orientation of the growing chain is influenced by the chlorine atom marked with an asterisk.

incoming monomer being preferred, as illustrated in Figure 3, leading to isotactic polymer.

An elegant demonstration of the above mechanism has been provided by Zambelli and co-workers (25), who showed that the first insertion of propylene into a Ti–CH₃ bond generated by chain transfer with Al alkyl using the system TiCl₃/Al(CH₃)₃ is *not* stereospecific, whereas the second insertion (ie into Ti–isobutyl) *is* stereospecific. The importance of the combined effects of the steric bulk of the Ti–alkyl group and the halide ligand is apparent from the very high stereospecificity observed using TiI₃ (26). Particularly high stereospecificity (but low activity) was also found by Natta when TiCl₃ was used in combination with Al(C₂H₅)₂I (27).

In contrast to the isospecific titanium-based catalysts, vanadium-based catalysts give predominantly syndiotactic PP. At very low polymerization temperature (–78°C), living polymerization can be obtained using homogeneous catalysts obtained by reaction of a vanadium compound (eg VCl₄ or a V(III) β-diketonate) with R₂AlCl (28,29). With these catalysts, syndiospecific propagation occurs via secondary (2,1-) insertion of the monomer. The overall stereo- and regioregularity of the polymer is poor, comprising not only syndiotactic blocks resulting from secondary insertions but also short, atactic blocks arising from sequences of primary insertions. This polymer has not been developed commercially, but vanadium catalysts are used in ethylene (co)polymerization (outlined under Ziegler–Natta Catalysts for Ethylene (Co)polymerization). C_s-symmetric metallocene catalysts (30) have been developed for the production of syndiotactic polypropylene having significantly higher chain regularity.

Polymer Particle Growth. A very important feature of any heterogeneous catalyst used in slurry and gas-phase processes for polyolefin production is particle morphology. Heterogeneous Ziegler–Natta catalysts are microporous solids, with particle sizes typically in the range 10–100 μm. Each particle comprises millions of primary crystallites with sizes of up to about 15 nm. On contacting the catalyst components, at the start of polymerization, cocatalyst and monomer diffuse through the catalyst particle and polymerization takes place on the surface of each primary crystallite within the particle. As solid, crystalline polymer is formed, the primary crystallites are pushed apart as the particle grows, analogous to the expanding universe. The particle shape is retained, and this phenomenon is therefore referred to as replication (Fig. 4). Ideally, the catalyst particle should have spherical morphology and controllable porosity. It is important that the mechanical strength of the catalyst is high enough to prevent

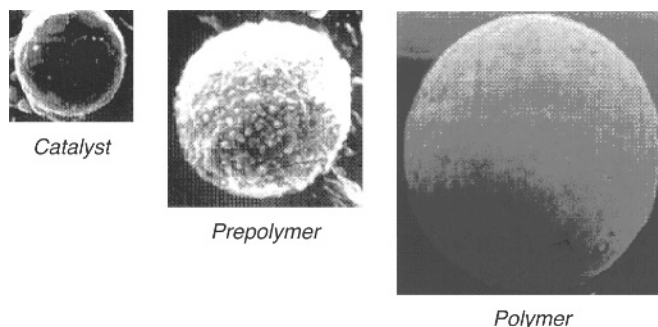


Fig. 4. “Replication” phenomenon during polymerization.

disintegration but low enough to allow progressive expansion as polymerization proceeds (31). Further implications of particle morphology and porosity are discussed under Ziegler–Natta Catalysts for Ethylene (Co)polymerization and also under Reactor Granule Technology.

Ziegler–Natta Catalysts for Ethylene (Co)polymerization

Ziegler–Natta catalysts are widely used in the production of high density and linear low density polyethylene (HDPE and LLDPE). More than half the world production of HDPE is based on Ziegler–Natta catalysts, chromium catalysts also being widely used. Less than 1% of HDPE production utilizes metallocene or other single-site catalysts. In LLDPE production, Ziegler–Natta catalysts occupy a dominant position, accounting for more than 90% of the total production. Single-site catalysts currently account for less than 10% of this market, but increased use of such catalysts is expected throughout the next decade.

The most important titanium-based catalysts for HDPE and LLDPE are those comprising a titanium component on magnesium chloride or on a magnesium chloride containing support. Toward the end of the 1960s, catalysts obtained by reaction of TiCl_4 or a derivative thereof with a magnesium compound such as $\text{Mg}(\text{OH})\text{Cl}$, $\text{Mg}(\text{OH})_2$, or MgCl_2 were found to give very high activity in ethylene polymerization, eliminating the need for deashing of the polymer (31,32). The most effective support was found to be active magnesium chloride, prepared by co-milling of MgCl_2 and titanium halides or by chlorination of organomagnesium compounds (32). Numerous catalyst systems and methods of preparation have been disclosed (33), and the characteristics of magnesium chloride as a support for Ziegler–Natta catalysts are discussed in depth under Ziegler–Natta Catalysts for Polypropylene. Magnesium chloride can also be used in combination with a silica support, for example by impregnation of the porous support with a solution of MgCl_2 and TiCl_4 in tetrahydrofuran (34).

An important manufacturing process for HDPE that makes use of high mileage catalysts is the cascade process, in which polymerization reactors in series are used to give reactor blends with improved properties for film and

pipe applications (35). Broad molecular weight distribution (MWD) can be obtained by the use of different hydrogen concentrations in each reactor. In addition, the process can be designed to give low molecular weight homopolymer in the first reactor and a high molecular weight copolymer in the second. The high molecular weight copolymer chains function as tie molecules linking the crystalline, homopolymer domains, thereby leading to high stress crack resistance of the polymer. This process allows an “inverse” comonomer distribution to be obtained, in the sense that the comonomer is in the high molecular weight fraction, counteracting the general tendency of Ziegler–Natta catalysts to incorporate the comonomer mainly in the low molecular weight chains. The latter feature is an important consideration in Ziegler–Natta catalyst design for LLDPE. Comonomer incorporation is highest at the most open catalytic centers, whereas sterically hindered centers will tend to give polyethylene chains with little or no comonomer. The best catalysts for LLDPE are therefore those that have relatively uniform active center distribution, lacking excessively hindered or unhindered active sites.

Vanadium catalysts have also been developed for polyethylene and ethylene-based copolymers, particularly ethylene–propylene–diene rubbers (EPDM). Homogeneous (soluble) vanadium catalysts produce relatively narrow MWD polyethylene, whereas supported vanadium catalysts give broad MWD (36). Polymerization activity is strongly enhanced by the use of a halogenated hydrocarbon as promoter in combination with a vanadium catalyst and aluminum alkyl cocatalyst (36,37).

Ethylene polymerization, in contrast to the polymerization of propylene and other alpha-olefins, is often affected by diffusion limitations, which occur if the monomer reactivity in polymerization is high relative to diffusivity through the catalyst particle. This can result in the formation of an “onion” particle structure as polymerization first takes place at the external surface of the particle, particle growth occurring step by step as the monomer reaches the inner parts of the catalyst particle. This mechanism of particle growth is associated with a kinetic profile in which an initial induction period is followed by an acceleration period, after which, in the absence of chemical deactivation, a stationary rate is obtained.

Ziegler–Natta Catalysts for Polypropylene

Worldwide manufacture of PP, currently around 30 million tons per annum, is dominated by high activity MgCl_2 -supported Ziegler–Natta catalysts. The first- and second-generation TiCl_3 catalysts have all but disappeared, and the recently developed metallocene catalysts still account for less than 1% of all PP produced, although they are likely to grow in importance. The development and implementation of MgCl_2 -supported catalysts in bulk (liquid monomer) and gas-phase processes has led to the advent of simple, low-cost (nondeashing, nonextracting) manufacturing processes for PP (18).

The basis for the development of the high activity supported catalysts lay in the discovery, in the late 1960s, of “activated” MgCl_2 able to support TiCl_4 and give high catalyst activity, and the subsequent discovery, in the mid-1970s, of electron donors (Lewis bases) capable of increasing the stereospecificity of the

catalyst so that (highly) isotactic PP could be obtained (32,38,39). A further feature that has contributed greatly to the commercial success of MgCl_2 -supported catalysts is the development of spherical catalysts with controlled particle size and porosity (40), which not only replicate their morphology during polymerization as the polymer particle grows, but which have now opened the way to a broad range of homo- and copolymers and multiphase polymer alloys via what has been termed Reactor Granule Technology (41).

Catalyst Structure and Composition. In the early stages of MgCl_2 -supported catalyst development, activated magnesium chloride was prepared by ball milling in the presence of ethyl benzoate, leading to the formation of very small (≤ 3 nm thick) primary crystallites within each particle (21). Nowadays, however, the activated support is prepared by chemical means such as complex formation of MgCl_2 and an alcohol or by reaction of a magnesium alkyl or alkoxide with a chlorinating agent or TiCl_4 . Many of these approaches are also effective for the preparation of catalysts having controlled particle size and morphology. For example, the cooling of emulsions of molten $\text{MgCl}_2 \cdot n\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OH}$ in paraffin oil gives almost perfectly spherical supports, which are then converted into the catalysts (18). A typical catalyst preparation involves reaction of the $\text{MgCl}_2 \cdot n\text{C}_2\text{H}_5\text{OH}$ support with excess TiCl_4 in the presence of an "internal" electron donor. Temperatures of at least 80°C and at least two TiCl_4 treatment steps are normally used, in order to obtain high performance catalysts in which the titanium is mainly present as TiCl_4 rather than the $\text{TiCl}_3\text{OC}_2\text{H}_5$ generated in the initial reaction with the support. Catalysts obtained via chemical routes generally have a BET surface area of around $300\text{ m}^2/\text{g}$ and pore volumes in the range $0.3\text{--}0.4\text{ cm}^3/\text{g}$ (18).

High activity Ziegler–Natta catalysts comprising MgCl_2 , TiCl_4 , and an internal donor are typically used in combination with an aluminum alkyl cocatalyst such as $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ and an "external" electron donor added in polymerization. The first catalyst systems containing ethyl benzoate as internal donor were used in combination with a second aromatic ester such as methyl *p*-toluate as external donor (39). These were followed by catalysts containing a diester (eg diisobutyl phthalate) as internal donor, used in combination with an alkoxy silane external donor of type $\text{RR}'\text{Si}(\text{OCH}_3)_2$ or $\text{RSi}(\text{OCH}_3)_3$ (42). The combination $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{phthalate ester-}\text{AlR}_3\text{-alkoxysilane}$ is currently the most widely used catalyst system in PP manufacture. The most effective alkoxy silane donors for high isospecificity are methoxy silanes containing relatively bulky alkyl groups branched at the position alpha to the silicon atom (43–46). Typical examples include cyclohexyl(methyl)dimethoxy silane and dicyclopentyl dimethoxy silane (47). Of these, the latter gives particularly high stereospecificity (48) and broader MWD (49). High PP stereoregularity and broad MWD have also been obtained by the use of dimethoxy silanes containing polycyclic amino groups (50,51).

The function of the internal donor in MgCl_2 -supported catalysts is twofold. One function is to stabilize small primary crystallites of magnesium chloride; the other is to control the amount and distribution of TiCl_4 in the final catalyst. Activated magnesium chloride has a disordered structure comprising very small lamellae. Giannini (32) has indicated that, on preferential lateral cleavage surfaces, the magnesium atoms are coordinated with four or five chlorine atoms, as opposed to six chlorine atoms in the bulk of the crystal. These lateral cuts correspond to (110) and (100) faces of MgCl_2 , as shown in Figure 5.

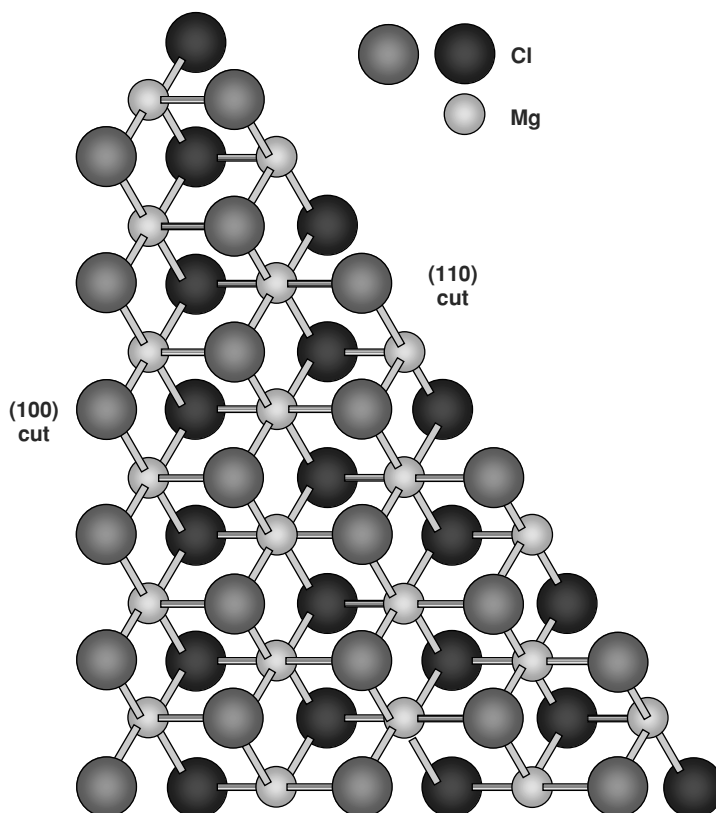


Fig. 5. Model of a MgCl_2 layer showing the (100) and (110) lateral cuts. Based on Ref. 31.

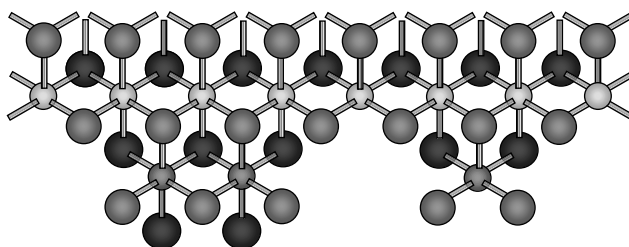


Fig. 6. Model showing dimeric and monomeric Ti species on a (100) lateral cut of MgCl_2 . Based on Ref. 31.

It has been proposed that bridged, dinuclear Ti_2Cl_8 species can coordinate to the (100) face of MgCl_2 and give rise to the formation of chiral, isospecific active species (Fig. 6), it being pointed out that Ti_2Cl_6 species formed by reduction on contact with $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ would resemble analogous species in TiCl_3 catalysts (52, 53). Accordingly, it has been suggested (18) that a possible function of the internal donor is preferential coordination on the more acidic (110) face of MgCl_2 , such

that this face is prevailingly occupied by donor and the (100) face is prevailingly occupied by Ti_2Cl_3 dimers.

Analytical studies (54) have indicated that a monoester internal donor such as ethyl benzoate is coordinated to MgCl_2 and not to TiCl_4 . In the search for donors giving catalysts having improved performance, it was considered (55) that bidentate donors should be able to form strong chelating complexes with tetracoordinate Mg atoms on the (110) face of MgCl_2 , or binuclear complexes with two pentacoordinate Mg atoms on the (100) face. This led to the development of the $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4$ /phthalate ester catalysts, used as indicated above in combination with an alkoxy silane as external donor. The requirement for an external donor when using catalysts containing a benzoate or phthalate ester is due to the fact that, when the catalyst is brought into contact with the cocatalyst, a large proportion of the internal donor is lost as a result of alkylation and/or complexation reactions. In the absence of an external donor, this leads to poor stereospecificity because of increased mobility of the titanium species on the catalyst surface. When the external donor is present, contact of the catalyst components leads to replacement of the internal donor by the external donor, as has been shown (56,57) with $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4$ /ethyl benzoate- $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ -methyl *p*-toluate and with $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4$ /dibutyl phthalate- $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ - $\text{C}_6\text{H}_5\text{Si}(\text{OC}_2\text{H}_5)_3$. The most active and stereospecific systems were those which allowed the highest incorporation of external donor (58), the effectiveness of a catalyst system depending more on the combination of donors rather than on the individual internal or external donor. For example, the use of a monoester rather than an alkoxy silane as external donor with a phthalate-containing system is ineffective (59), as in this case very little of the external donor is adsorbed (58). Further studies (60,61) showed that a phthalate-containing catalyst adsorbed alkoxy silanes to a greater extent than a catalyst without internal donor.

Recently, research on MgCl_2 -supported catalysts has led to systems not requiring the use of an external donor. This required the identification of bidentate internal donors that not only had the right oxygen-oxygen distance for effective coordination with MgCl_2 but that, unlike phthalate esters, were not removed from the support on contact with $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ and that were unreactive with TiCl_4 during catalyst preparation. It was found (55,62-64) that certain 2,2-disubstituted 1,3-dimethoxypropanes met all these criteria. The best performance was obtained when bulky substituents in the 2-position resulted in the diether having a most probable conformation (65) with an oxygen-oxygen distance in the range 2.8-3.2 Å. The successive "generations" of high activity MgCl_2 -supported catalyst systems for PP are summarized below:

- (1) $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4$ /ethyl benzoate- AlR_3 -aromatic ester
- (2) $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4$ /phthalate ester- AlR_3 -alkoxy silane
- (3) $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4$ /diether- AlR_3

Catalyst performance has improved considerably with each generation. The PP yield obtained under typical polymerization conditions (liquid monomer, in the presence of hydrogen, 70°C, 1-2 h) has increased from 15-30 kg/g cat. for the third-generation ethyl benzoate containing catalysts to 30-80 kg/g cat. for

the fourth-generation phthalate-based catalysts. With the recently developed fifth-generation catalysts containing a diether as internal donor, yields of 80–160 kg/g cat. can be achieved. These different catalysts also display different kinetic profiles in propylene polymerization. The catalysts containing a diether as internal donor exhibit very stable activities during polymerization. A low rate of catalyst decay during polymerization is also obtained with the catalyst system $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{phthalate ester-AlR}_3\text{-alkoxysilane}$, whereas the system $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{ethyl benzoate-AlR}_3\text{-aromatic ester}$ has a very high initial polymerization activity but also a high decay rate, limiting the final polymer yield. The rapid decay in activity can at least partially be ascribed to the use of an ester as external as well as internal donor, the ester being able to react with titanium-hydrogen bonds formed in chain transfer with hydrogen, generating Ti–O bonds inactive for chain propagation (66).

Most recently, a further family of MgCl_2 -supported catalysts has been developed (67,68), in which the internal donor is a succinate rather than a phthalate ester. As is the case with the phthalate-based catalysts, an alkoxysilane is used as external donor. The essential difference between these catalysts is that the succinate-based systems produce PP having much broader MWD (discussed under Catalyst/Polymer Relationship).

Mechanistic Aspects. It is well established that effective external donors not only increase the isotactic index of the polymer (the proportion of polymer insoluble in boiling heptane or in xylene at 25°C), but can also increase in absolute terms the amount of isotactic polymer formed. This has been demonstrated by Kashiwa (69) for the catalyst system $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4\text{-Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$. An increase in the molecular weight and stereoregularity of the isotactic fraction was also noted. Similar trends are apparent with catalyst systems of type $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{phthalate ester-AlR}_3\text{-alkoxysilane}$ (70). Kakugo (71) has used elution fractionation to demonstrate that the external donor not only decreases “atactics” formation but also increases the degree of steric control at isospecific sites. Soga has reported that an almost aspecific $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_3$ catalyst, with a very low content of (probably isolated, monomeric) Ti species, could be rendered isospecific by the addition of ethyl benzoate as external donor (72) or by using $\text{Cp}_2\text{Ti}(\text{CH}_3)_2$ as cocatalyst (73). It was suggested (74) that in both cases aspecific sites having two coordination vacancies could be converted to isospecific sites by blocking one of the two vacancies.

A powerful technique to study the effects of electron donors on site selectivity in Ziegler–Natta catalysts is the determination of the stereoregularity of the first insertion step in propylene polymerization. Sacchi and co-workers (60,75) have investigated the effect of Lewis bases on the first-step stereoregularity resulting from propylene insertion into a Ti– C_2H_5 bond formed via chain transfer with ^{13}C -enriched $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$. First-step stereoregularity is particularly sensitive to the steric environment of the active center, because the stereospecificity of the first monomer insertion is always lower than that of the following propagation steps. For example, with a $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{diisobutyl phthalate}$ catalyst it was found (60) that the mole fraction of erythro (isotactic) placement in the isotactic polymer fraction was 0.67 with no external donor, 0.82 with $\text{CH}_3\text{Si}(\text{OC}_2\text{H}_5)_3$, and 0.92 with $\text{C}_6\text{H}_5(\text{OC}_2\text{H}_5)_3$. It could be concluded that the alkoxysilane external donor was present in the environment of at least part of the isospecific centers (Fig. 7).

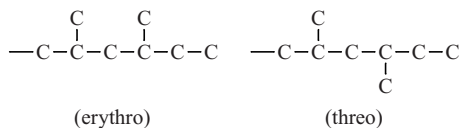


Fig. 7. Erythro (isotactic) and threo (syndiotactic) placement resulting from insertion into a Ti-ethyl unit.

Subsequent studies (76,77) indicated that similar considerations apply to diether donors.

Recently, significant advances have been made in understanding the fundamental factors determining the performance of state-of-the-art MgCl_2 -supported catalysts. Studies by Busico and co-workers (78) have shown that the chain irregularities in isotactic PP prepared using heterogeneous catalysts are not randomly distributed along the chain but are clustered. The chain can therefore contain, in addition to highly isotactic blocks, sequences that can be attributed to weakly isotactic (isotactoid) and to syndiotactic (syndiotactoid) blocks. This implies that the active site can isomerize very rapidly (during the growth time of a single polymer chain, ie in less than a second) between three different propagating species. The same sequences are present, but in different amounts, in both the soluble and the insoluble fractions. The polymer can therefore be considered to have a stereoblock structure in which highly isotactic sequences alternate with defective isotactoid and with syndiotactoid sequences. A mechanistic model has been formulated in which the relative contributions of these sequences can be related to site transformations involving the presence or absence of steric hindrance in the vicinity of the active species. ^{13}C NMR studies have indicated (79) the presence of C_1 -symmetric active species in MgCl_2 -supported catalysts, with a mechanism of isotactic propagation which is analogous to that for certain C_1 -symmetric metallocenes, in the sense that propylene insertion at a highly enantioselective site tends to be followed by chain "back-skip" rather than a less regio- and stereoselective insertion when the chain is in the coordination position previously occupied by the monomer. The probability of chain "back-skip" will increase with decreasing monomer concentration, and it has indeed been confirmed that increased polymer isotacticity is obtained at low monomer concentration. It is proposed (78) that a (temporary) loss of steric hindrance from one side of an active species with local C_2 -symmetry, giving a C_1 -symmetric species, may result in a transition from highly isospecific to moderately isospecific propagation. Loss of steric hindrance on both sides can lead to syndiospecific propagation in which chain-end control becomes operative. The model is illustrated in Figure 8.

If it is considered that the steric hindrance in the vicinity of the active species can result from the presence of a donor molecule, and that the coordination of such a donor is reversible, the above model provides us with an explanation for the fact that strongly coordinating, stereorigid donors typically give stereoregular polymers in which the highly isotactic sequences predominate. Several types of active species in which the presence of a donor in the vicinity of the active Ti atom is necessary for high isospecificity have been proposed (80), although the exact structure of the active species is still by no means resolved. Isospecific

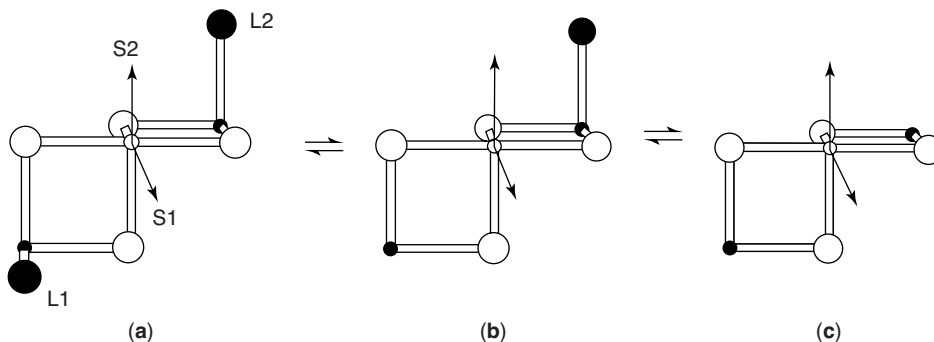
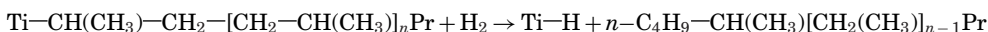
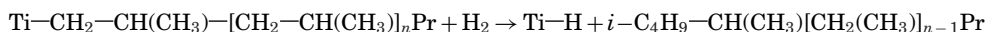


Fig. 8. Model of possible active species for (a) highly isotactic, (b) isotactoid, and (c) syndiotactic propagation (78).

active species not requiring the presence of a donor for high stereospecificity have also been proposed (81).

In PP production, hydrogen is used as a chain-transfer agent for polymer molecular weight (melt-flow rate) control. The effect of hydrogen (concentration) on polymer molecular weight is dependent on the catalyst system. An advantage of catalysts containing a diether donor, in addition to very high activity, is high sensitivity to hydrogen, so that relatively little hydrogen is required for molecular weight control. This effect can be ascribed to chain transfer after the occasional secondary (2,1-) rather than the usual primary (1,2-) insertion, a 2,1-insertion slowing down a subsequent monomer insertion and therefore increasing the probability of chain transfer (82). Reactivation of "dormant" (2,1-inserted) species via chain transfer with hydrogen also explains the frequently observed activating effect of hydrogen in propylene polymerization, giving yields which may be around three times those observed in the complete absence of hydrogen. These conclusions have been based on the ^{13}C NMR determination of the relative proportions of *i*-C₄H₉ and *n*-C₄H₉ terminated chains, resulting from chain transfer with hydrogen after primary and secondary insertion respectively:



Other studies have demonstrated that chain transfer is dependent not only on regio- but also on stereoselectivity (48). This is in keeping with the tendency that, with catalyst systems of type MgCl₂/TiCl₄/phthalate ester- AlR_3 -alkoxysilane, the silanes that give the most stereoregular isotactic polymer also give relatively low hydrogen response.

Catalyst/Polymer Relationship. By varying the catalyst composition, and in particular the nature of the electron donors (esters, silanes, diethers) present in the catalyst system, it is possible to control the PP tacticity, molecular weight, and MWD to produce a range of polymers having the processing and end-use properties required for very different applications. Ziegler-Natta catalysts typically give broader MWDs than are obtained with homogeneous

(metallocene) catalysts. This is because Ziegler–Natta catalysts contain a range of different active centers, each center giving different relative rates of chain propagation and chain transfer. Each individual site produces a Schulz–Flory distribution with $M_w/M_n = 2$ and $M_z/M_w = 1.5$, and the overall polymer MWD represents a combination of these individual distributions. The dominant effect of active center distribution has been demonstrated by the use of stopped-flow polymerization (83), where the polymer MWD was shown to be unaffected by the polymerization time. Stopped-flow polymerization has also been used to determine active site concentration (C^*) and propagation rate constants, k_p . For $MgCl_2$ -supported catalysts, C^* values of around 4% (of total Ti present) have been obtained from stopped-flow experiments (84). C^* values obtained by other techniques, notably ^{14}CO quenching of propylene polymerization, have ranged from 1% or less (85) to more than 20% (86). Clearly, there are large differences in C^* values obtained by different groups, but it is consistently found that the major proportion of the Ti present in Ziegler–Natta catalysts is inactive. The k_p values for isospecific active sites are around an order of magnitude greater than those for weakly specific sites (85,86). The value of k_p increases significantly in the presence of hydrogen (87), in accordance with the reactivation of “dormant” (2,1-inserted) centers by chain transfer.

Recent work by Terano and co-workers (88) has shown that, under stopped-flow conditions, hydrogen is only effective as chain-transfer agent when catalyst and cocatalyst have been precontacted. These and subsequent (89,90) results indicated that effective chain transfer with hydrogen requires the presence of species able to promote the dissociation of H_2 to atomic hydrogen.

The donors present in the catalyst system play an active role in the formation or modification of isospecific sites, and the polymer MWD depends on the relative contribution and hydrogen response (ie sensitivity to chain transfer with hydrogen) of each type of active site. The incorporation of an external donor into the catalyst system generally leads to an increase in molecular weight, the magnitude of the MW increase depending on the nature of the donor. The characteristics of different catalyst systems with regard to PP MWD are as follows (68):

Internal donor	External donor	M_w/M_n
Diether	—	5–5.5
Phthalate	Alkoxysilane	6.5–8
Succinate	Alkoxysilane	10–15

It can be seen that the diether-based catalysts give relatively narrow MWD. A narrow MWD, and relatively low molecular weight, is advantageous in fiber spinning applications. In contrast, extrusion of pipes and thick sheets requires high melt strength, and therefore relatively high molecular weight and broad MWD. A broad MWD, along with high isotactic stereoregularity, is also beneficial for high crystallinity and therefore high rigidity. The new succinate-based catalysts enable very broad MWD PP homopolymers to be produced in a single reactor and are also of interest for the production of heterophasic copolymers having an improved balance of stiffness and impact strength, taking into account that the incorporation of a rubbery (ethylene/propylene) copolymer phase into a

PP homopolymer matrix increases impact strength but leads at the same time to decreased stiffness.

The relatively narrow PP molecular weight distributions obtained using diether-based catalysts can be attributed to the fact that in these systems even the most highly stereospecific active sites are not totally regiospecific. A proportion of approximately one secondary insertion for every 2000 primary insertions at highly isospecific sites has been noted for the system $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{diether-AlR}_3$ (82). The probability of chain transfer with hydrogen after a secondary insertion is such that this is sufficient to prevent the formation of very high molecular weight chains, taking into account that the highest molecular weight fraction of the polymer is formed on the active species having the highest isospecificity. The broader MWDs obtained with catalysts containing ester internal donors are likely to be due to the presence of (some) isospecific active sites having very high regiospecificity and therefore lower hydrogen sensitivity. Such results illustrate the profound effect of catalyst regio- and stereospecificity distribution on both molecular weight control and polymer MWD and properties.

Reactor Granule Technology. As indicated in the section Polymer Particle Growth, particle morphology and porosity are very important features of a Ziegler-Natta catalyst used in modern bulk (liquid monomer or gas-phase) polymerization processes. Under appropriate polymerization conditions, polymer particles can be obtained that have an internal morphology that can range from a compact to a porous structure (91). In what is termed Reactor Granule Technology (RGT), porous polymer particles can be produced, which can then function as a microreactor for the polymerization of other monomers within the solid matrix. A polypropylene skin encloses the second polymer phase, thereby preventing coalescence of particles in which the second phase is an amorphous, low-melting material (92). RGT has been defined as “controlled, reproducible polymerization of olefinic monomers on an active MgCl_2 -supported catalyst, to give a growing, spherical granule that provides a porous reaction bed within which other monomers can be introduced and polymerized to form a polyolefin alloy” (93).

Today, RGT is able to provide products ranging from superstiff, high fluidity PP homopolymers to stiff/impact or clear/impact heterophasic copolymers and supersoft alloys, produced using the *Catalloy* process (31,68). The feasibility of producing heterophasic alloys containing up to 70% of multimonomer copolymers arises from the use of a controlled porosity catalyst and the ability to control the porosity of the growing polymer particle during the early stages of polymerization. Prepolymerization is applied to give the particles sufficient heat capacity to withstand injection into a gas-phase polymerization step.

Several models have been put forward to explain the mechanism of particle growth during polymerization. One of the most popular models is the “multigrain model,” put forward by Ray and co-workers (94), in which the monomer diffuses into the catalyst macroparticle and polymerizes on the surface of the microparticles within, causing the macroparticle to expand progressively as polymerization proceeds. An investigation by Kakugo and co-workers (95) of nascent polymer morphology obtained using a TiCl_3 catalyst showed that the polymer particle comprised numerous globules, each of which contained some tens of much smaller primary particles. Recently, a model for particle growth with MgCl_2 -supported catalysts has been proposed by Cecchin (68,96), who has also provided evidence for polymer “subglobule” formation within the growing particle. Again,

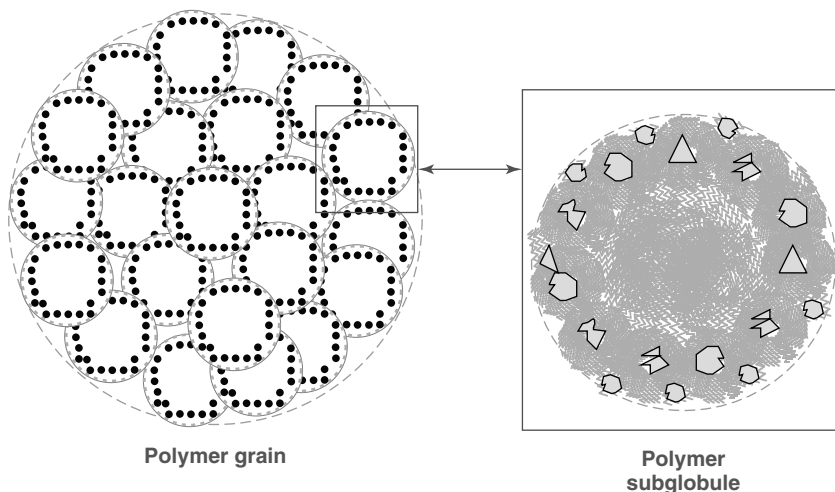


Fig. 9. Particle growth model for propylene polymerization with a MgCl_2 -supported catalyst (96).

these subglobules originate from clusters of primary crystallites, but the crystallites themselves are pushed to the surface of each subglobule as the polymer forms. This model, illustrated in Figure 9, explains the fact that, in the preparation of heterophasic copolymers via propylene homopolymerization followed by ethylene/propylene copolymerization, the rubbery ethylene/propylene copolymer is formed at the surface of the homopolymer subglobules, gradually filling up the pores within the particle. Clearly, the higher the porosity of the homopolymer matrix, the greater the proportion of (rubbery) copolymer that can be incorporated into the particle without running into problems of stickiness if the rubber phase blooms to the surface. Evidence for drifting of catalyst microparticles to the surface of polymer (sub)globules has been provided by scanning electron microscopy studies of prepolymerized catalyst particles (97).

Polymerization of Other Monomers Using Ziegler–Natta Catalysts

In addition to their widespread use in the production of polyethylene and polypropylene, Ziegler–Natta catalysts play an important role in the production of poly-1-butene and are also widely used in the manufacture of synthetic rubbers such as *cis*-1,4-polybutadiene and *cis*-1,4-polyisoprene, the synthetic equivalent of natural rubber. Ziegler–Natta catalysts for the manufacture of butadiene rubber, based on titanium, cobalt, nickel, or neodymium systems, are described elsewhere (see BUTADIENE POLYMERS). Isoprene rubber is produced using $\beta\text{-TiCl}_3$ (98), typically prepared by reaction of approximately equimolar quantities of TiCl_4 and $\text{Al-}i\text{-(C}_4\text{H}_9)_3$ in the presence of a small quantity of an ether. Increased catalyst activity can be obtained by incorporation of a sterically hindered phenoxyaluminum cocatalyst component (99). The latter component also gives increased activity in propene polymerization using TiCl_3 (100); in both cases the improvement in catalyst performance can be attributed to selective complexation of the catalyst

poison AlCl_2 . In addition to aluminum alkyls, poly(*N*-alkylaluminoxanes) have been found to be effective cocatalysts in isoprene polymerization (101). These components have cage structures (eg $[\text{HAlN-}i\text{-C}_3\text{H}_7]_6$) in which both Al and N atoms are tetracoordinated (102).

Cis-1,4-polymerization of conjugated dienes requires the presence of two coordination vacancies on the transition-metal atom, allowing bidentate coordination of the diene. $\beta\text{-TiCl}_3$ has a fiber-like structure in which the titanium atoms in the lattice are octahedrally coordinated to six chlorine atoms. The terminal titanium atoms are, however, incompletely coordinated and are linked to four or five chlorine atoms. Alkylation of the tetracoordinated titanium atoms will generate the double-vacancy species active in isoprene polymerization. Stereospecificity in diene polymerization can change dramatically if one of the coordination vacancies is blocked by a Lewis base. An interesting illustration of this (103) is that the addition of an external donor in isoprene polymerization with $\text{TiCl}_4\text{-Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ or $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4\text{-Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3$ changes the catalyst stereospecificity to give mainly *trans*-1,4- rather than *cis*-1,4-polyisoprene. At the same time, a notable increase in isospecificity in propylene polymerization is observed.

TiCl_3 -based and MgCl_2 -supported catalysts have been developed for the production of poly-1-butene. TiCl_3 catalysts are used with dialkylaluminum halide cocatalysts, $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_2\text{I}$ giving higher isotacticity than $\text{Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_2\text{Cl}$ (104). Very high isotacticity has been obtained using TiCl_3 in combination with $\text{Cp}_2\text{Ti}(\text{CH}_3)_2$ (105). Much higher polymerization activity, as well as high isotacticity and broad MWD, is obtained using MgCl_2 -supported catalysts, for example the catalyst system $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{diisobutyl phthalate-Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3\text{-alkoxysilane}$ (106).

Ziegler–Natta catalysts have also been developed for the polymerization of 4-methyl-1-pentene (107) and higher alpha-olefins. Polymerization activity decreases with increasing steric bulk of the monomer. For example, with the catalyst system $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{ethyl benzoate-Al}(\text{C}_2\text{H}_5)_3\text{-ethyl benzoate}$ the relative activities in propylene, 1-butene, and 4-methyl-1-pentene polymerization were 100:80:15 (108). For catalyst systems of type $\text{MgCl}_2/\text{TiCl}_4/\text{phthalate ester-}(\text{AlR}_3)\text{-alkoxysilane}$, the type of silane required is dependent on the steric bulk of the monomer. An active center having high stereospecificity in propylene polymerization may be too sterically hindered for effective polymerization of a bulkier monomer, propylene/1-butene copolymerization studies having shown (109) that the incorporation of 1-butene into the polymer chain decreases with increasing site stereospecificity. This phenomenon is also illustrated by the fact that non-bulky alkoxysilanes such as $(\text{CH}_3)_3\text{SiOCH}_3$ are effective donors in 4-methyl-1-pentene polymerization (110), whereas such donors are relatively ineffective in propylene polymerization.

Concluding Remarks

The dominant position of Ziegler–Natta catalysts in the manufacture of polyolefins, in particular PP, is likely to continue for a considerable length of time, despite the many developments taking place in the field of metallocene and other single-site catalysis. Indeed, the range of polymer types and grades is so varied that there is ample scope for further development and implementation of both Ziegler–Natta and single-site catalysts.

It will be clear that the composition and characteristics of a Ziegler–Natta catalyst must be tailored such that the required polymer molecular structure and properties are obtained. Different catalysts are required for different polymer applications, and the recent development and implementation of $MgCl_2$ -supported catalysts containing diether and succinate donors, for the production of narrow and broad MWD PP respectively, illustrates the ongoing activity in Ziegler–Natta catalyst research. The ability to control catalyst particle size, morphology, and porosity has allowed the development of advanced and versatile polymerization process technologies, so that the characteristics of the catalyst can be tuned to both process and product requirements.

Ziegler–Natta catalysts are complex systems and are still by no means fully understood, but significant advances in basic understanding have recently been made. This will continue, with both experimental and molecular modeling studies providing additional mechanistic insight, which in turn can be applied in the further development and implementation of these catalysts.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

In *EPST* 3rd ed., Vol. 8, pp. 517–536, by J. C. Chadwick, Eindhoven University of Technology.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. G. Wilke, in G. Fink, R. Mülhaupt, and H. H. Brintzinger, eds., *Ziegler Catalysts. Recent Scientific Innovations and Technological Improvements*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995, p. 1.
2. Ger. Pat. 973626 (Filed Nov. 17, 1953), K. Ziegler, H. Breil, E. Holzkamp, and H. Martin; *Chem. Abstr.* **54**, 14794b (1960).
3. K. Ziegler, E. Holzkamp, H. Breil, and H. Martin, *Angew. Chem.* **67**, 541 (1955).
4. Ital. Pat. 535712 (Filed June 8, 1954), G. Natta (to Montecatini).
5. G. Natta, *J. Polym. Sci.* **16**, 143 (1955).
6. G. Natta, P. Pino, P. Corradini, F. Danusso, E. Mantica, E. Mazzanti, and G. Moraglio, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **77**, 1708 (1955).
7. P. Pino and R. Mülhaupt, *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed. Engl.* **19**, 857 (1980).
8. P. Pino and G. Moretti, *Polymer* **28**, 683 (1987).
9. P. Corradini, *Macromol. Symp.* **89**, 1 (1995).
10. G. Natta, P. Corradini, and G. Allegra, *J. Polym. Sci.* **51**, 399 (1961).
11. J. Boor, *Ziegler–Natta Catalysts and Polymerizations*, Academic Press, Inc., New York, 1979.
12. G. Guidetti, R. Zannetti, D. Ajo, A. Marigo, and M. Vidali, *Eur. Polym. J.* **16**, 1007 (1980).
13. U. S. Pat. 2692257 (Filed Apr. 28, 1951), A. Zletz (to Standard Oil of Indiana).
14. Belg. Pat. 530617 (Filed Jan. 27, 1953), J. P. Hogan and R. L. Banks (to Phillips Petroleum Co.).
15. H. R. Sailors and J. P. Hogan, *J. Macromol. Sci., Chem. A* **15**, 1377 (1981).
16. M. P. McDaniel, in D. D. Eley, H. Pines, and P. B. Weisz, eds., *Advances in Catalysis*, Vol. **33**, Academic Press, Inc., New York, 1985, p. 47.
17. H. Martin, in G. Fink, R. Mülhaupt, and H. H. Brintzinger, eds., *Ziegler Catalysts. Recent Scientific Innovations and Technological Improvements*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995, p. 15.

18. E. P. Moore, *Polypropylene Handbook. Polymerization, Characterization, Properties, Processing, Applications*, Hanser Publishers, Munich, 1996.
19. U.S. Pat. 4376851 (Filed Jan. 11, 1956), J. P. Hogan and R. L. Banks (to Phillips Petroleum Co.).
20. U.S. Pat. 4210738 (Filed Mar. 21, 1972), J. P. Hermans and P. Henriouille (to Solvay).
21. B. L. Goodall and S. van der Vens, *Polypropylene and Other Polyolefins. Polymerization and Characterization*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1990, Chapt. "1".
22. A. Bernard and P. Fiasse, in T. Keii and K. Soga, eds., *Catalytic Olefin Polymerization*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1990, p. 405.
23. E. J. Arlman and P. Cossee, *J. Catal.* **3**, 99 (1964).
24. P. Corradini, V. Busico, and G. Guerra, *Comprehensive Polymer Science*, Vol. 4, Pergamon Press, Oxford, U.K., 1988, p. 29.
25. A. Zambelli, M. C. Sacchi, P. Locatelli, and G. Zannoni, *Macromolecules* **15**, 211 (1982).
26. I. Tritto, M. C. Sacchi, and P. Locatelli, *Makromol. Chem.* **187**, 2145 (1986).
27. G. Natta, I. Pasquon, A. Zambelli, and G. Gatti, *J. Polym. Sci.* **51**, 387 (1961).
28. Y. Doi, S. Suzuki, and K. Soga, *Makromol. Chem., Rapid Commun.* **6**, 639 (1985).
29. A. Zambelli, I. Sessa, F. Grisi, R. Fusco, and P. Accomazzi, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **22**, 297 (2001).
30. J. A. Ewen, R. L. Jones, A. Razavi, and J. D. Ferrara, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **110**, 6255 (1988).
31. T. Simonazzi and U. Giannini, *Gazz. Chim. Ital.* **124**, 533 (1994).
32. U. Giannini, *Makromol. Chem., Suppl.* **5**, 216 (1981).
33. K.-Y. Choi and W. H. Ray, *J. Macromol. Sci., Rev. Macromol. Chem. Phys. C* **25**, 1 (1985).
34. Eur. Pat. 4647 (Filed Mar. 30, 1979), G. L. Goerke, B. E. Wagner, and F. J. Karol (to Union Carbide Corp.).
35. L. L. Böhm, D. Bilda, W. Breuers, H. F. Enderle, and R. Lecht, in G. Fink, R. Mülhaupt, and H. H. Brintzinger, eds., *Ziegler Catalysts. Recent Scientific Innovations and Technological Improvements*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995, p. 387.
36. F. J. Karol, K. J. Cann, and B. E. Wagner, in W. Kaminsky and H. Sinn, eds., *Transition Metals and Organometallics as Catalysts for Olefin Polymerization*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1988, p. 149.
37. H. L. Hsieh, M. P. McDaniel, J. L. Martin, P. D. Smith, and D. R. Fahey, in R. B. Seymour and T. Cheng, eds., *Advances in Polyolefins*, Plenum Press, New York, 1985, p. 153.
38. P. Galli, L. Luciani, and G. Cecchin, *Angew. Makromol. Chem.* **94**, 63 (1981).
39. P. C. Barbè, G. Cecchin, and L. Noristi, *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **81**, 1 (1987).
40. P. Galli, P. C. Barbè, and L. Noristi, *Angew. Makromol. Chem.* **120**, 73 (1984).
41. P. Galli, *Macromol. Symp.* **78**, 269 (1994); *Macromol. Symp.* **112**, 1 (1996).
42. Eur. Pat 45977 (Filed Aug. 13, 1981), S. Parodi, R. Nocchi, U. Giannini, P. C. Barbè, and U. Scatà (to Montedison).
43. J. V. Seppälä, M. Härkönen and L. Luciani, *Makromol. Chem.* **190**, 2535 (1989).
44. M. Härkönen, J. V. Seppälä, and T. Väänänen, in T. Keii and K. Soga, eds., *Catalytic Olefin Polymerization*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1990, p. 87.
45. A. Proto, L. Oliva, C. Pellecchia, A. J. Sivak, and L. A. Cullo, *Macromolecules* **23**, 2904 (1990).
46. T. Okano, K. Chida, H. Furuhashi, A. Nakano, and S. Ukei, in T. Keii and K. Soga, eds., *Catalytic Olefin Polymerization*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1990, p. 177.
47. Eur. Pat. 350170 (Filed June 13, 1989), N. Ishimaru, M. Kioka, and A. Toyota (to Mitsui).
48. J. C. Chadwick, G. M. M. van Kessel, and O. Sudmeijer, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **196**, 1431 (1995).

49. J. C. Chadwick, *Macromol. Symp.* **173**, 21 (2001).
50. Eur. Pat. 841348 (Filed Nov. 3, 1997), S. Ikai, H. Ikeuchi, H. Satoh, T. Inoue, and H. Sano (to Grand Polymer).
51. S. Yao and Y. Tanaka, *Macromol. Theory Simul.* **10**, 850 (2001).
52. P. Corradini, V. Busico, and G. Guerra, in W. Kaminsky and H. Sinn, eds., *Transition Metals and Organometallics as Catalysts for Olefin Polymerization*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1988, p. 337.
53. V. Busico, P. Corradini, L. De Martino, A. Proto, V. Savino, and E. Albizzati, *Makromol. Chem.* **186**, 1279 (1985).
54. M. Terano, T. Kataoka, and T. Keii, *Makromol. Chem.* **188**, 1477 (1987).
55. E. Albizzati, U. Giannini, G. Morini, C. A. Smith, and R. C. Zeigler, in G. Fink, R. Mülhaupt, and H. H. Brintzinger, eds., *Ziegler Catalysts. Recent Scientific Innovations and Technological Improvements*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995, p. 413.
56. V. Busico, P. Corradini, L. De Martino, A. Proto, and E. Albizzati, *Makromol. Chem.* **187**, 1115 (1986).
57. L. Noristi, P. C. Barbè, and G. Baruzzi, *Makromol. Chem.* **192**, 1115 (1991).
58. M. C. Sacchi, I. Tritto, C. Shan, R. Mendichi, G. Zannoni, and L. Noristi, *Macromolecules* **24**, 6823 (1991).
59. R. Spitz, C. Bobichon, and A. Guyot, *Makromol. Chem.* **190**, 707 (1989).
60. M. C. Sacchi, F. Forlini, I. Tritto, R. Mendichi, G. Zannoni, and L. Noristi, *Macromolecules* **25**, 5914 (1992).
61. M. Kioka and N. Kashiwa, *J. Mol. Catal.* **82**, 11 (1993).
62. Eur. Pat. 361494 (Filed Sept. 29, 1989), E. Albizzati, P. C. Barbè, L. Noristi, R. Scordamaglia, L. Barino, U. Giannini, and G. Morini (to Himont).
63. Eur. Pat. 728724 (Filed Feb. 21, 1996), G. Morini and A. Cristofori (to Montell).
64. E. Albizzati, U. Giannini, G. Morini, M. Galimberti, L. Barino, and R. Scordamaglia, *Macromol. Symp.* **89**, 73 (1995).
65. L. Barino and R. Scordamaglia, *Macromol. Symp.* **89**, 101 (1995).
66. E. Albizzati, M. Galimberti, U. Giannini, and G. Morini, *Makromol. Chem., Macromol. Suppl.* **48/49**, 223 (1991).
67. Int. Pat. WO 00/63261 (Filed Apr. 12, 2000), G. Morini, G. Balbontin, Y. Gulevich, H. Duijghuisen, R. Kelder, P. A. Klusener, and F. Korndorffer (to Basell).
68. G. Cecchin, G. Morini, and A. Pelliconi, *Macromol. Symp.* **173**, 195 (2001).
69. N. Kashiwa, J. Yoshitake, and A. Toyota, *Polym. Bull. (Berlin)* **19**, 333 (1988).
70. J. C. Chadwick, in G. Fink, R. Mülhaupt, and H. H. Brintzinger, eds., *Ziegler Catalysts. Recent Scientific Innovations and Technological Improvements*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995, p. 427.
71. M. Kakugo, T. Miyatake, Y. Naito, and K. Mizunuma, *Macromolecules* **21**, 314 (1988).
72. K. Soga, J. R. Park, T. Shoino, and N. Kashiwa, *Macromol. Chem., Rapid Commun.* **11**, 117 (1990).
73. K. Soga, J. R. Park, H. Uchino, T. Uozumi, and T. Shiono, *Macromolecules* **22**, 3824 (1989).
74. K. Soga, *Makromol. Chem., Macromol. Symp.* **66**, 43 (1993).
75. M. C. Sacchi, C. Shan, P. Locatelli, and I. Tritto, *Macromolecules* **23**, 383 (1990).
76. M. C. Sacchi, F. Forlini, I. Tritto, P. Locatelli, G. Morini, G. Baruzzi, and E. Albizzati, *Macromol. Symp.* **89**, 91 (1995).
77. G. Morini, E. Albizzati, G. Balbontin, I. Mingozzi, M. C. Sacchi, F. Forlini, and I. Tritto, *Macromolecules* **29**, 5770 (1996).
78. V. Busico, R. Cipullo, G. Monaco, G. Talarico, M. Vacatello, J. C. Chadwick, A. L. Segre, and O. Sudmeijer, *Macromolecules* **32**, 4173 (1999).
79. V. Busico, R. Cipullo, G. Talarico, A. L. Segre, and J. C. Chadwick, *Macromolecules* **30**, 4786 (1997).

80. L. Barino and R. Scordamaglia, *Makromol. Theory Simul.* **7**, 407 (1998).
81. M. Boero, M. Parrinello, S. Hüffer, and H. Weiss, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **122**, 501 (2000).
82. J. C. Chadwick, G. Morini, E. Albizzati, G. Balbontin, I. Mingozzi, A. Cristofori, O. Sudmeijer, and G. M. M. van Kessel, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **197**, 2501 (1996).
83. T. Keii, M. Terano, K. Kimura, and K. Ishii, *Makromol. Chem., Rapid Commun.* **8**, 583 (1987).
84. B. Liu, H. Matsuoka, and M. Terano, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **22**, 1 (2001).
85. G. D. Bukatov and V. A. Zakharov, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **202**, 2003 (2001).
86. P. J. Tait, G. H. Zohuri, A. M. Kells, and I. D. McKenzie, in G. Fink, R. Mülhaupt, and H. H. Brintzinger, eds., *Ziegler Catalysts. Recent Scientific Innovations and Technological Improvements*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1995, p. 343.
87. G. D. Bukatov, V. S. Goncharov, and V. A. Zakharov, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **196**, 1751 (1995).
88. H. Mori, K. Tashino, and M. Terano, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **16**, 651 (1995).
89. H. Mori, K. Tashino, and M. Terano, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **197**, 895 (1996).
90. H. Mori, T. Iizuka, K. Tashino, and M. Terano, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **198**, 2499 (1997).
91. P. Galli, *Prog. Polym. Sci.* **19**, 959 (1994).
92. J. C. Chadwick, *Encyclopedia of Materials: Science and Technology*, Elsevier, 2001, p. 7703.
93. P. Galli and J. C. Haylock, *Makromol. Chem., Macromol. Symp.* **63**, 19 (1992).
94. R. A. Hutchinson, C. M. Chen, and W. H. Ray, *J. Appl. Polym. Sci.* **44**, 1389 (1992).
95. M. Kakugo, H. Sadatoshi, M. Yokoyama, and K. Kojima, *Macromolecules* **22**, 547 (1989).
96. G. Cecchin, E. Marchetti, and G. Baruzzi, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **202**, 1987 (2001).
97. J. T. M. Pater, G. Weickert, J. Loos, and W. P. M. van Swaaij, *Chem. Eng. Sci.* **56**, 1 (2001).
98. E. Schoenberg, H. A. Marsh, S. J. Walters, and W. M. Saltman, *Rubber Chem. Technol.* **52**, 526 (1979).
99. Eur. Pat. 107871 (Filed Sept. 30, 1983), J. C. Chadwick and B. L. Goodall (to Shell).
100. B. L. Goodall, in W. Kaminsky and H. Sinn, eds., *Transition Metals and Organometallics as Catalysts for Olefin Polymerization*, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1988, p. 361.
101. A. Mazzei, S. Cucinella, and W. Marconi, *Makromol. Chem.* **122**, 168 (1969).
102. A. Balducci, M. Bruzzzone, S. Cucinella, and A. Mazzei, *Rubber Chem. Technol.* **48**, 736 (1975).
103. K. Soga, T. Sano, K. Yamamoto, and T. Shiono, *Chem. Lett. (Japan)* 425 (1982).
104. S. van der Ven, *Polypropylene and other Polyolefins. Polymerization and Characterization*, Elsevier, Amsterdam, 1990, Chapt. 11.
105. K. Soga and H. Yanagihara, *Makromol. Chem.* **189**, 2839 (1988).
106. U. S. Pat. 6306996 (Filed Mar. 4, 1999), G. Cecchin, G. Collina, and M. Covezzi (to Basell).
107. L. C. Lopez, G. L. Wilkes, P. M. Stricklen, and S. A. White, *J. Macromol. Sci., Rev. Macromol. Chem. Phys. C* **32**, 301 (1992).
108. N. Kashiwa and J. Yoshitake, *Polym. Bull. (Berlin)* **11**, 485 (1984).
109. M. C. Sacchi, Z.-Q. Fan, F. Forlini, I. Tritto, and P. Locatelli, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **195**, 2805 (1994).
110. U. S. Pat. 4659792 (Filed Dec. 23, 1985), N. Kashiwa and K. Fukui (to Mitsui).

JOHN C. CHADWICK
Dutch Polymer Institute,
Eindhoven University of Technology

ZWITTERIONIC POLYMERIZATION

Introduction

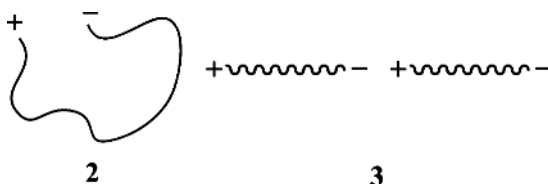
Zwitterionic polymerization is defined (1–4) as an ionic polymerization (or copolymerization) in which both cationic and anionic sites are located at each of the two chain ends of one propagating species (1).



Zwitterionic
propagating
species

1

It is assumed that the zwitterionic propagating species in the reaction mixture takes an intramolecular cyclic form (2) or a form of intermolecular association (3).



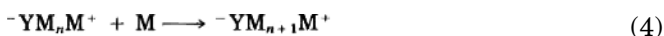
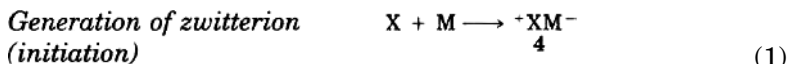
There are two possibilities for the propagating reactivities of the cationic and anionic sites. In the first case, propagation takes place at only one site, either cationic or anionic. In the second case, propagation is achieved by the cation–anion reaction between two zwitterions. It is often that these two patterns take place simultaneously. There is an additional pattern that zwitterion is formed to activate a monomer successively. The types of monomers involved in zwitterionic polymerization include polar olefinic, heterocyclic, and divalent carbon group element compounds.

The category of spontaneous polymerization covers the wider range of combinations of donor and acceptor monomers, since it involves not only the zwitterion but also the biradical mechanisms (5). It is sometimes difficult to distinguish between these two mechanisms.

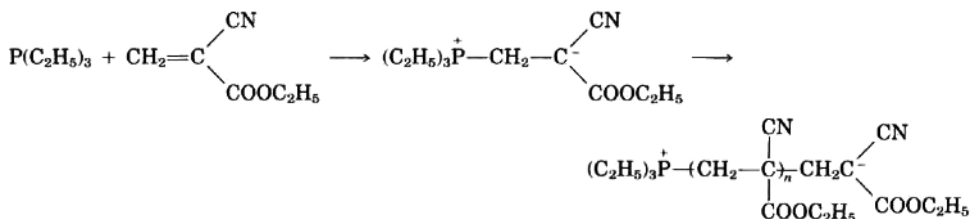
Propagation via One Site

An initiating zwitterion, (4) or (5), is generated by the reaction between the initiator and monomer (eqs. 1 and 2). In the zwitterion (4) (eq. 1), only the anionic

site is directly involved in causing anionic propagation (eq. 3). The zwitterion (5) (eq. 2), on the other hand, causes cationic propagation (eq. 4).



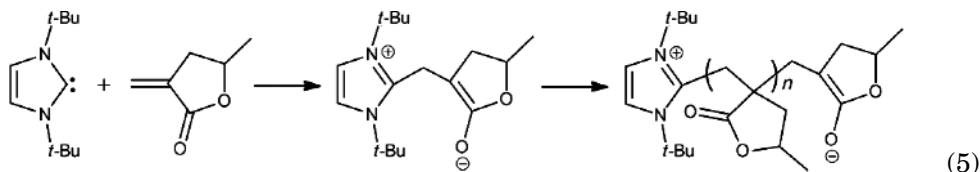
Propagation via the Anionic Site. Vinyl monomers having electron-withdrawing substituents, such as acrylonitrile (6–10), methacrylonitrile (11),(12), nitroethylene (13),(14), 2,4,6-trinitrostyrene (15), methylenemalonate (16),(17), and α -cyanoacrylate (18–21), have been polymerized by phosphine, phosphite, and tertiaryamine initiators; for example



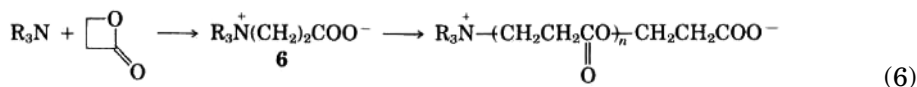
In some of these polymerization systems, mechanisms of propagation via the anionic site of zwitterions have been established. The cationic sites of these zwitterions are phosphonium or quaternary ammonium structures that do not add to the monomer. Poly(ethylene oxide) end-functionalized with a triphenylphosphine group acts as the macroinitiator for the polymerization of α -cyanoacrylate to yield the block copolymer ($M_n = 10,000$ – $20,000$) (22).

The polymerization of the less electron-deficient olefin, that is, methyl methacrylate (MMA), requires sterically hindered aluminum Lewis acid as the monomer activator in the combination with enamine ($M_n < 16,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.2$ – 1.9) or phosphine ($M_n < 40,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.4$ – 2.3) as the initiator (23,24a). *N*-Heterocyclic carbene (NHC) initiates the anionic addition polymerization of not only exomethylene lactone ($M_n < 90,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.5$ – 2.1), which is more reactive, but also MMA in dimethylformamide as the crucial solvent ($M_n = 33,000$, $M_w/M_n = 2.0$) (24b). Equation 5 shows the polymerization mechanism involving

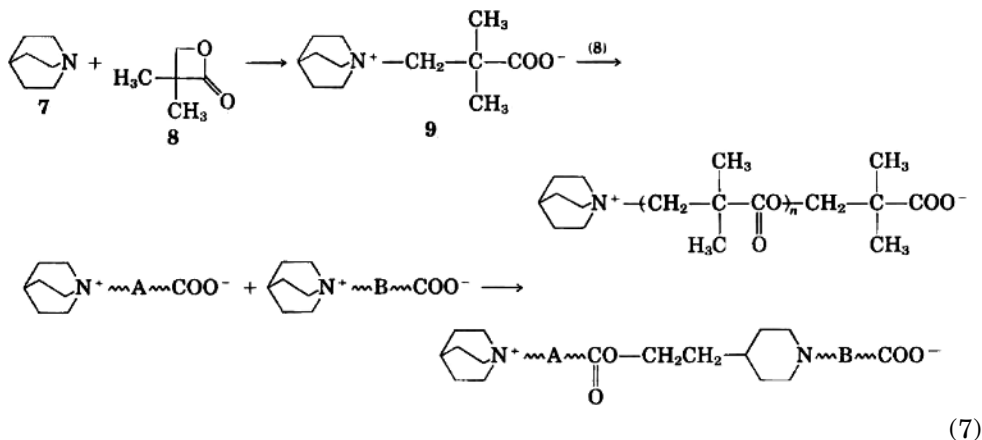
the zwitterion.



Ring-opening polymerizations also take place via zwitterion mechanisms. For the lactone monomer, tertiary amines are used as an initiator (25–27). An ammonium carboxylate zwitterion (**6**) is the growing species (eq. 6).



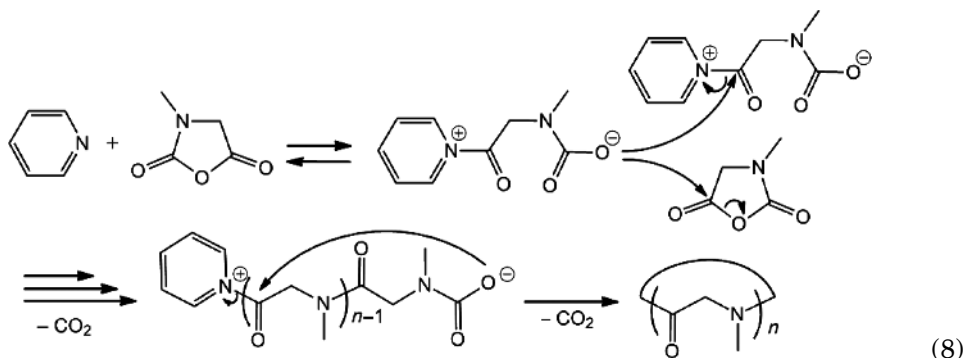
When the initiator is a cyclic tertiary amine such as quinuclidine (**7**), *N*-alkylaziridine, and *N*-methylazetidide, the ammonium site is no longer inactive; that is, it participates in the ring-opening polymerization with the lactone monomer to produce a copolymer. For example, a zwitterion (**9**) from (**7**) and pivalolactone (**8**) is responsible for the copolymerization (eq. 7) (28).



The reaction of equation 7 corresponds to the key step of “No Catalyst Copolymerization via Zwitterion Intermediates” to be described later. As mentioned below in the section of Polymerization of Isolated Zwitterions, analogous zwitterions having the quinuclidinium cation are isolated and polymerized.

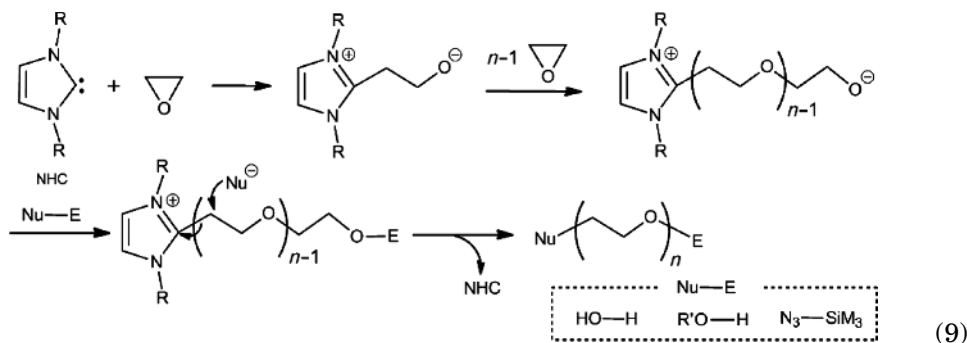
Amino acid *N*-carboxyanhydride (NCA) shows various kinds of polymerization mechanisms depending on the initiator. Sarcosine NCA with pyridine forms the zwitterion, and there are two ways for the polymer formation (eq. 8) (29). One is the chain growth where the anionic site attacks the NCA for the propagation along with CO₂ liberation, and the other is the step growth where the reaction between the zwitterions takes place liberating pyridine and CO₂. Under the appropriate conditions, cyclic polysarcosine is almost exclusively produced by the backbiting attack of the anionic site to the carbonyl group adjacent to the

pyridinium cation in the macro zwitterion.



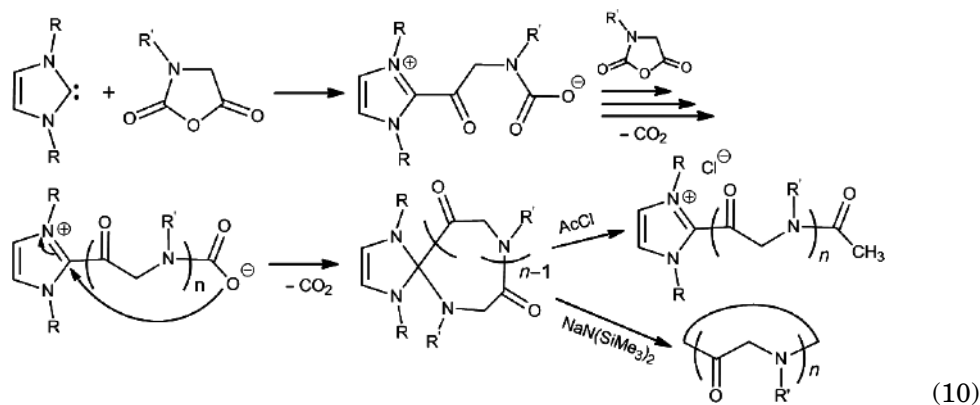
Analogous reactions are also proposed for the spontaneous polymerization of sarcosine NCA without any additive in DMF, which promotes the zwitterionic dissociation of NCA (29). Also in the thermal polymerizations of NCA as well as dithiolane-2,4-dione, there are proposed the zwitterion intermediates generated by the reactions between two monomer molecules (29).

N-Heterocyclic carbenes (NHCs) initiate the ring-opening polymerizations of ethylene oxide (30), propylene oxide (31), lactide (32), ϵ -caprolactone (33), and *N*-alkylglycine *N*-carboxyanhydride (*N*-RNCA) (34). The polymerizations of ethylene and propylene oxides show the living nature, producing α,ω -heterodifunctionalized polymers ($M_n < 13,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.02\text{--}1.18$) by the *in situ* treatment with Nu-E (eq. 9) as well as forming the block copolymer with ϵ -caprolactone by the sequential addition.



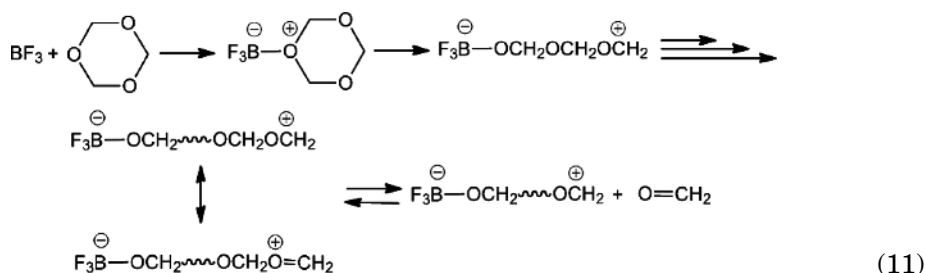
The cyclic polymers are exclusively obtained by the NHC-initiated polymerizations of lactide, ϵ -caprolactone, and *N*-RNCA. In a similar manner with a scheme presented in equation 8, the propagation end of the alkoxy anion back-bites the carbonyl group of the initiating end, giving high molecular weight cyclic polylactide ($M_n = 4200\text{--}15,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.15\text{--}1.35$) or poly(ϵ -caprolactone) ($M_n = 41,000\text{--}114,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.4\text{--}2.2$) and simultaneously releasing NHC. On the other hand, the backbiting reaction in the polymerization of the cyclic *N*-RNCA does not liberate NHC but produces cyclic poly(α -peptide) incorporating the NHC residue ($M_n = 3000\text{--}27,000$, $M_w/M_n = 1.04\text{--}1.12$) (eq. 10). The

treatment of this cyclic polymer with acetyl chloride gives the linear polymer, whereas NHC residue is excluded from the cyclic polymer by the reaction with sodium hexamethyldisilazide (34e). In addition, the living nature allows the preparation of cyclic block copoly(α -peptide) (34c, f).



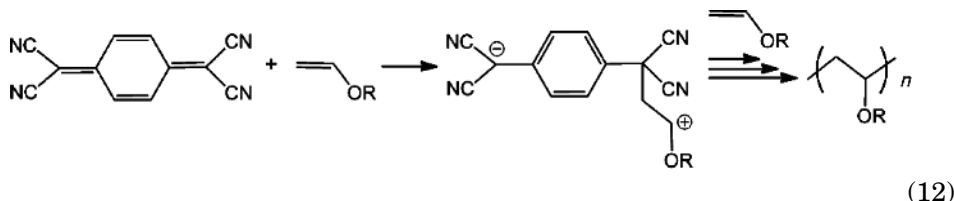
DBU (1,8-diazabicyclo[5.4.0]undec-7-ene) is also an effective initiator to produce cyclic polylactide ($M_n = 32,000\text{--}53,000$, $M_w/M_n < 1.6$) by the ring-opening polymerization and the subsequent backbiting reaction (35). As mentioned above from the old literature (eq. 6), amines are known to initiate the ring-opening polymerization of lactone. Cyclic polyester may also be produced in these cases. Recent progress in polymer structure analyses can make it possible to study that. The one site propagation process from the zwitterion, which is generated by the reaction of an initiator with a monomer, would be generally an effective tool to prepare cyclic polymers.

Propagation via the Cationic Site. An example for a zwitterion mechanism where a cationic site works for the propagation (eq. 4) is the polymerization of trioxane with BF_3 initiation, which may be shown as equation 11. The cation produced by ring opening is stabilized by the resonance between two canonical forms. The propagation is not simple, however, because the polyoxymethylene cation at the growing end is in equilibrium with the significant concentration of formaldehyde; that is, a formaldehyde monomer splits from the cationic growing end (36).



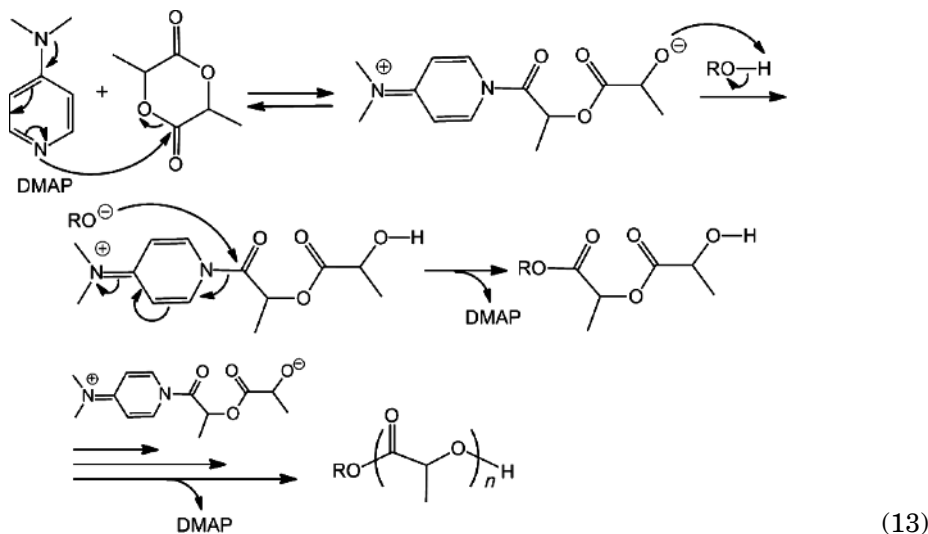
Highly electron-deficient olefins such as tetracyanoethylene, dimethyl 2,2-dicyanoethylene-1,1-dicarboxylate, and tetracyanoquinodimethane initiate the

cationic polymerization of cyclohexene oxide ($M_n < 17,000$) (37) or of electron-rich olefins such as *N*-vinylcarbazole and alkyl vinyl ether (38) by forming the zwitterionic species (eq. 12). This topic is discussed again in the section No Catalyst Copolymerization.



Monomer Activation

Some of ionic polymerizations proceed via the reaction of a neutral propagating end with an ionic species generated from monomer, that is, a monomer activation mechanism. Zwitterion is one of such species (29,39). The typical example is the ring-opening polymerization of lactide (LA) in the presence of 4-(dimethylamino)pyridine (DMAP) and alcohol (eq. 13) (40). LA is activated by forming 4-(dimethylamino)pyridinium alkoxide in equilibrium and reacts with alcohol to give the insertion product into the RO–H bond, releasing DMAP, which activates another LA. The successive reactions of the zwitterion with the hydroxyl group at the polymer end give poly-LA ($DP_n < 120$, $M_w/M_n = 1.06$ – 1.19).

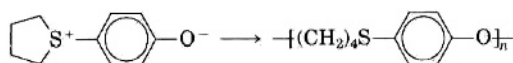


Phosphine and NHC also conduct similar mechanisms for the polymerization of LA and produce the well-defined linear polymer. In contrast, as mentioned in the above section for NHC, cyclic poly-LA is obtained in the absence of alcohol. In addition, it is noteworthy that NHC with alcohol performs the stereoselective polymerizations of racemic and meso LA, respectively, at low temperatures.

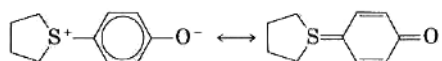
Racemic LA yields the stereoblock copolymer of *L*- and *D*-LA, whereas meso LA yields heterotactic poly-LA (39). An analogous monomer activation mechanism is also proposed for the NHC-catalyzed polymerizations of propylene oxide, cyclic carbonate, and cyclic siloxane in the presence of alcohol or trimethylsilyl ether (31,39).

Propagation by Cation–Anion Reactions

Polymerization of Isolated Zwitterions. A group of polymerizable zwitterions consisting of cyclic sulfonium cations and arene oxide anions has been prepared and isolated; they polymerize on heating ($M_n = 6300\text{--}46,000$) (41–44). For example,

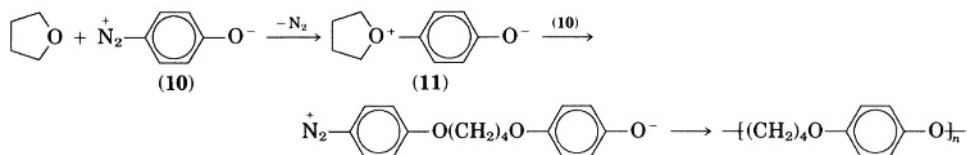


The isolation of the above zwitterion is possible due to the decreased reactivities (stabilization) of both cyclic sulfonium and phenoxide anions.

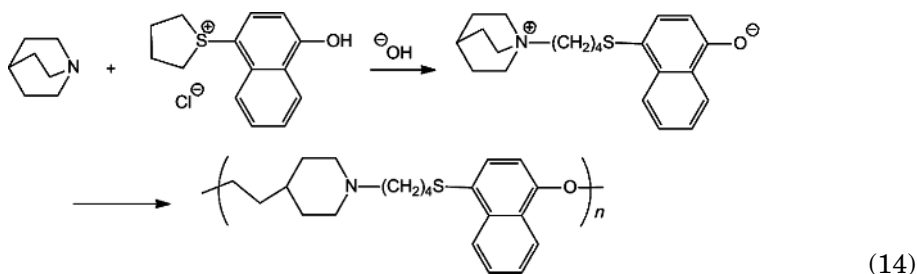


Several substituted phenoxides (41–43) and 4-naphthoxide (44) have been employed as arene oxide anions.

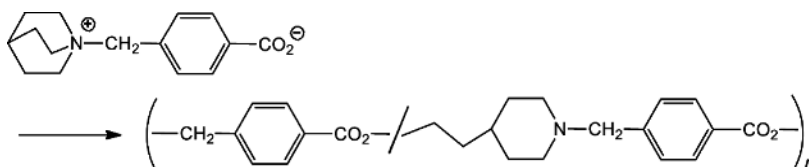
A reaction similar to the above polymerization is the alternating copolymerization between benzene-1,4-diazo-oxide (**10**) and tetrahydrofuran (45,46), although the zwitterion (**11**) directly involved in propagation is not isolated.



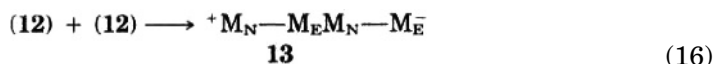
The combination of sulfonium naphthoxide with quinuclidine affords the new zwitterion, quinuclidinium naphthoxide, which is isolable (eq. 14) (47). The thermal polymerization yields the three-component polymer ($M_n = 8,500\text{--}13,000$).



Quinuclidinium carboxylate is also isolable, and its thermal polymerization involves not only ring opening but also elimination reactions of the quinuclidine moiety ($M_n = 4,000\text{--}17,000$) (48).



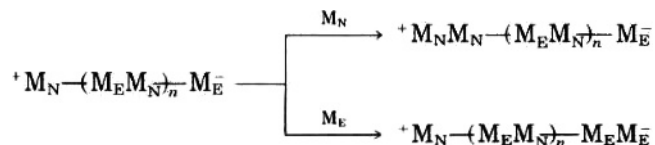
No Catalyst Copolymerization via Zwitterion Intermediates. A large number of zwitterionic copolymerizations that proceed without any added catalyst have been explored (1,4,49–57). A monomer having nucleophilic reactivity M_N is mixed with another monomer electrophilic reactivity M_E to generate a zwitterion $^+M_N - M_E^-$ (**12**) called a genetic zwitterion, “Two molecules of (**12**) react with each other to produce the first propagating zwitterion (“macrozwitterion”) (**13**) that grows by successive reactions with (**12**).



As the reaction proceeds, the concentration of macrozwitterions of various sizes (**13**) and (**14**) is increased and reactions among macrozwitterions take place to increase the molecular weight sharply.

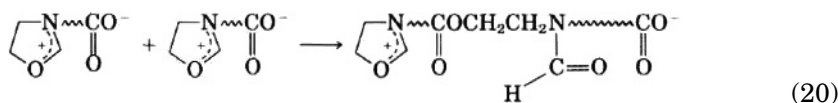
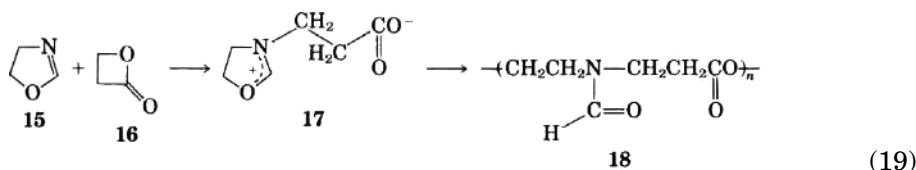


Intramolecular cation–anion reactions in a single zwitterion sometimes occur to produce “macrocycles,” although this contribution is small or at least minor. A series of the consecutive reactions, equations 15–18, leads to the formation of so-called “1:1 alternating copolymers”. In addition to the above elementary reactions, the reaction of a free monomer, M_N or M_E , with the ionic growing site of a zwitterion may sometimes occur, disturbing the alternating arrangement of the two monomeric units.



When the functional groups of the monomers are highly polarizable, dipole–dipole reactions between two monomers occur, in preference to the ion–dipole reactions between monomers and zwitterions, producing 1:1 alternating copolymerization.

On the basis of the above concept, many combinations of copolymerizations have been explored. A typical example is the copolymerization between 2-oxazoline (**15**) and β -propiolactone (**16**) ($M_n = 1100\text{--}4000$) (58), which proceeds at room temperature to produce an alternating copolymer (**18**) in an almost quantitative yield. A zwitterion (**17**) is the key intermediate (eq. 19). Opening of the oxazolinium ring by the nucleophilic attack of the carboxylate anion in the reaction between zwitterion molecules is the elementary step of propagation (eq. 20).


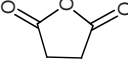



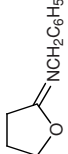
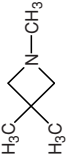



When the **15:16** feed ratio is less than 1.0, the composition of the product copolymer is not 1:1. Homopropagation of **16** at the anionic site takes place to produce a **16**-rich copolymer. Copolymerizations of 2-oxazoline (M_N) with other substituted β -propiolactones have been found to proceed in a similar way (59,60).

Table 1 shows combinations between representative M_N and M_E . The characteristics and scope of this copolymerization may be taken from the table.

Copolymerization of M_E monomers of acrylic acid and acrylamide with some M_N monomers presented in Table 1 is of vital interest. Copolymerization ($M_n < 13,000$) between acrylic acid (**19**) and 2-oxazoline (**15**) proceeds through a genetic

Table 1. M_N and M_E monomers and results of copolymerization^{a-c}

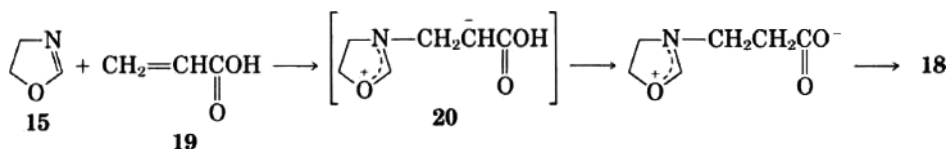
M_E	M_N				$CH_2=CHCOOH$	$CH_2=CHCONH_2$	$CH_2=CHCOOCH_2CH_2OH$	$CH_2=CHSO_2NH_2$
		R=H ^b R=CH ₃ ^c Ref. 58	R=H ^c R=CH ₃ ^c Ref. 61-65	R=H ^c R=CH ₃ ^b Ref. 66	R=H ^a R=CH ₃ ^a Ref. 67-69	R=H ^a R=CH ₃ ^a Ref. 70	R=CH ₃ ^a Ref. 71	R=CH ₃ ^b Ref. 72
		R=H ^b R=CH ₃ ^c R=C ₆ H ₅ ^c Ref. 73			R=H ^a R=CH ₃ ^a R=C ₆ H ₅ ^a Ref. 73	R=H ^a Ref. 70	R=H ^a Ref. 71	
		b Ref. 74				a Ref. 74		
		c Ref. 75				a Ref. 75		
		a Ref. 77		a Ref. 78	a Ref. 77	a Ref. 77		a Ref. 79
	$C_6H_5CH=NC_6H_5$	c Ref. 80	a Ref. 80		b Ref. 80			

^a Alternating copolymerization under a wide range of reaction conditions.

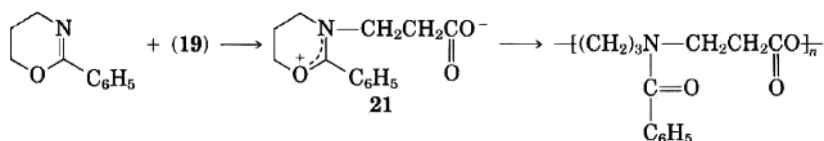
^b Alternating copolymerization under certain conditions.

^c Copolymerization occurred, but conditions for alternating copolymerization were not found.

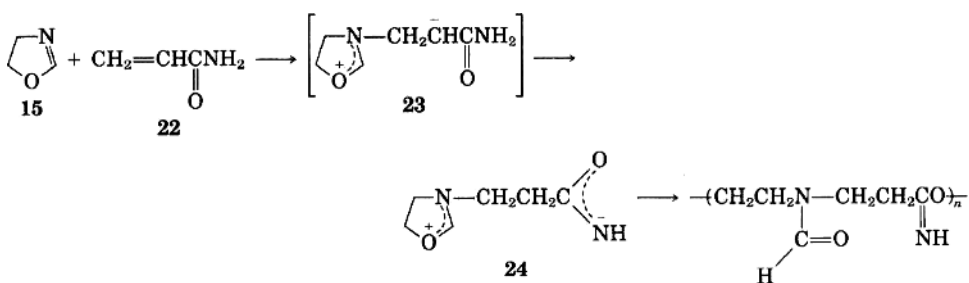
zwitterion (**20**) that is a tautomer of excluded **17** in the copolymerization between 2-oxazoline and β -propiolactone (see eq. 19). The addition of **15** to the electron-deficient olefinic bond of acrylic acid produces a transient species that is quickly converted by hydrogen transfer into a zwitterion (**17**). Since the key intermediate is common to both copolymerizations of **15** + **16** and **15** + **19**, the structures of the product copolymers are identical.



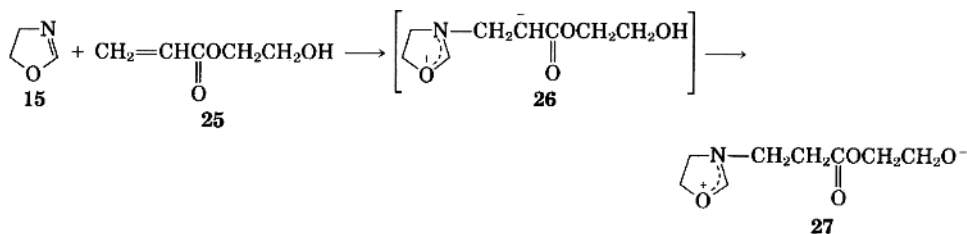
The above scheme showing **15** + **19** copolymerization is supported by the successful isolation of a zwitterion (**21**) in a related system of copolymerization.



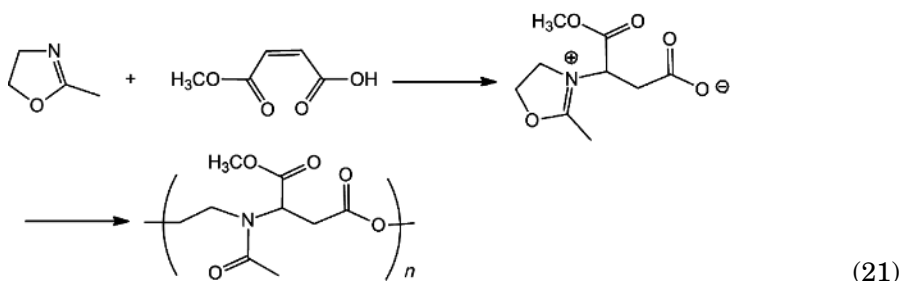
Copolymerization ($M_n < 1500$) of acrylamide (**22**) with 2-oxazoline (**15**) takes place similarly (70), that is, by the addition of **15** to the electron-deficient olefinic bond of **22** followed by hydrogen transfer to form a transient species of **23**. The anionic site of **24** is of ambident character: The oxygen atom reacts.



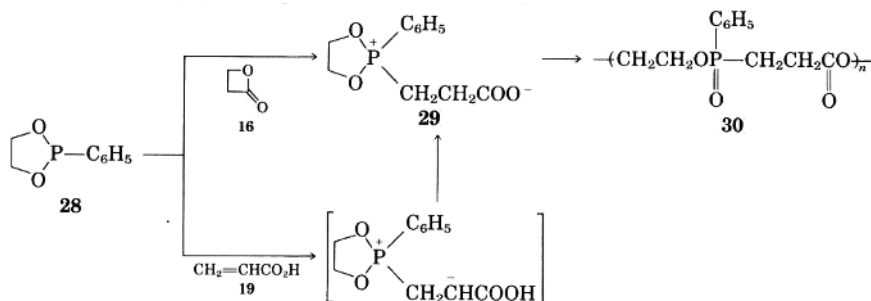
Similar behavior of β -hydroxyethyl acrylate (**25**) as the M_E monomer in the copolymerization with 2-oxazoline (**15**) has been observed ($M_n < 2400$), that is the addition of **15** to **25** followed by hydrogen transfer from the hydroxy group to the enolate anion (71). An oxazolinium-alkoxide zwitterion (**27**) is the key intermediate of copolymerization.



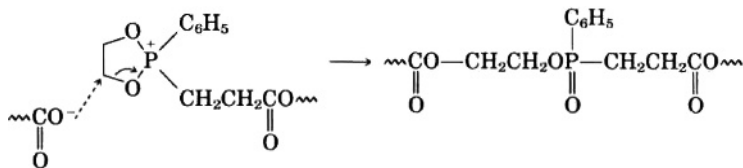
Spontaneous copolymerization ($M_n = 30,000$, $M_w/M_n = 3.0$) between 2-methyl-2-oxazoline and methyl maleate takes place, involving the proton transfer process, at room temperature in DMF, whereas the zwitterion intermediate is isolable in the reaction in acetone and characterized well (eq. 21) (76).



The cyclic trivalent phosphorus compound, 2-phenyl-1,3-dioxaphospholane (**28**), has been successfully copolymerized with several M_E monomers such as β -propiolactone (**16**) (77), propanesulfolactone (78,79), acrylic acid (**19**) (77), acrylamide (77), ethylenesulfonamide (79), alkyl acrylates (81), vinyl ketones (81), β -hydroxyethyl acrylate (82), *o*- and *p*-formylbenzoic acids (83,84), and vinylphosphonic acid (85) to give the corresponding 1:1 alternating copolymers ($M_n < 4400$). Copolymerization of **28** with **16** and with **19** gives copolymers of an identical structure (**30**), as explained in the following by the common zwitterion (**29**).

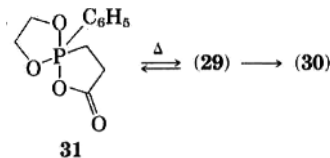


Propagation proceeds by the nucleophilic attack of the carboxylate anion of one zwitterion on the phosphonium ring of another zwitterion according to the pattern of the Arbusov reaction.

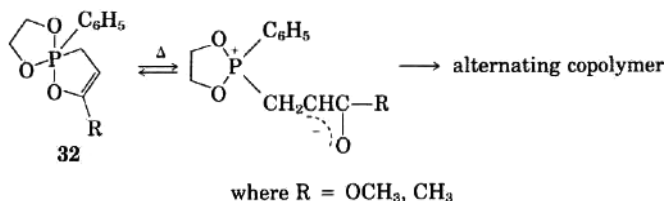


The trivalent phosphorus atom in the monomer (**28**) is converted into the pentavalent state during the above examples of copolymerization. This is also the case when the monomer (**28**) is copolymerized with other M_E monomers.

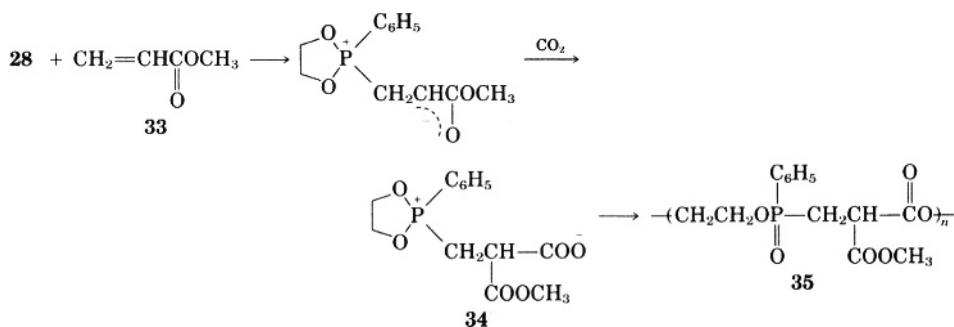
The copolymerization of **28** with **19** takes place only at temperatures higher than 100°C (77). At room temperature, these two monomers yield a pentavalent phosphorus compound of the spiro-ring structure (**31**) in an almost quantitative yield (86). On heating, **31** polymerizes to **30**. This result has been taken to support the above scheme involving a zwitterion (**29**).



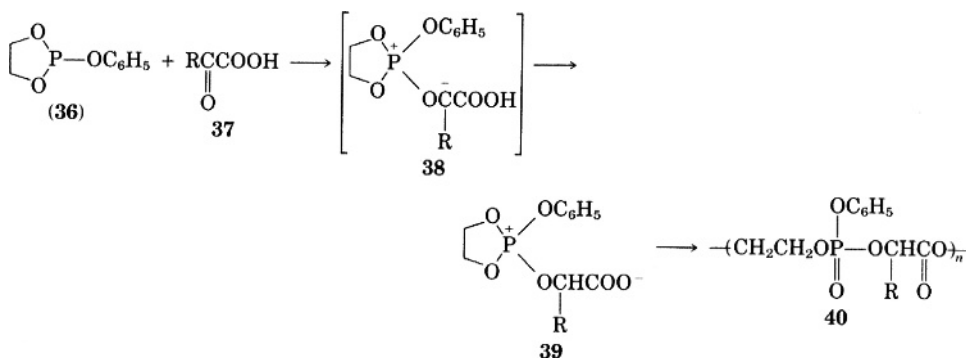
In the cases of combinations of **28** with the M_E monomers acrylate and vinyl ketone, the corresponding spiro-ring compounds (**32**) are formed instead of linear polymers at lower temperatures (room temperature to 50°C) (81).



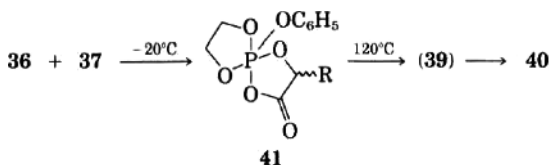
When the copolymerization of **28** with methyl acrylate (**33**) is carried out under CO_2 , a 1:1:1 periodic terpolymer (**35**) ($M_n < 2800$) is produced (87). The following scheme explains this sequence-regulated terpolymerization, in which a zwitterion of a 1:1:1 three-component adduct is the key intermediate. Two outstanding points should be mentioned concerning the periodic terpolymerization: Copolymerization of carbon dioxide and the sequence regulation of three different monomeric units occur. An isolated sample of a spiro-ring compound (**32**) (R = OCH₃) dissolved in acetonitrile has been copolymerized with CO_2 at room temperature to produce **35**.



The cyclic phosphite of 2-phenoxy-1,3,2-dioxaphospholane (**36**), not included in Table 1, has exhibited an interesting polymerization behavior; that is, it readily copolymerized with ketoacid (**37**) at temperatures above 120°C without any added catalyst ($M_n < 7500$) (88).

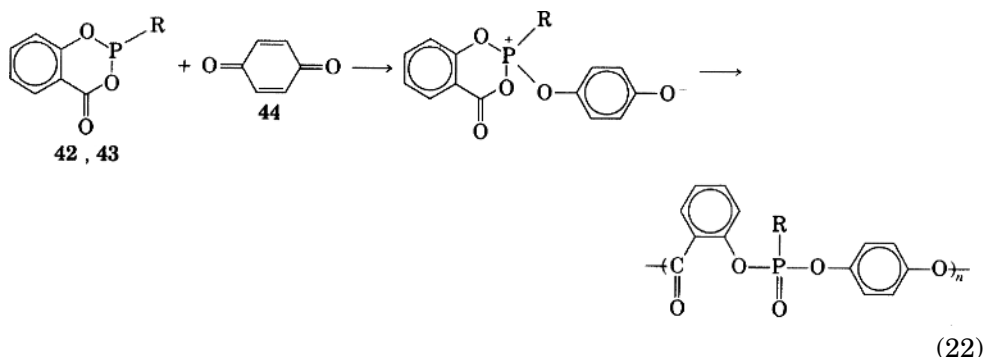


The trivalent phosphorus in **36** has been oxidized to the pentavalent state in the unit of copolymer (**40**), and correspondingly the ketoacid has been reduced to an ester of a hydroxyacid in the copolymer. The term "redox copolymerization" has been proposed to express this copolymerization in which one monomer is reduced, and the other is oxidized. In the binary mixture of **36** and **37** at a lower temperature, for example, -20°C, a pentaoxyphosphorane (**41**) has been isolated as a crystalline material, which is polymerized to **40** at a higher temperature, for example, 120°C (89). Thus, the intermediacy of a zwitterion (**39**) has been supported.

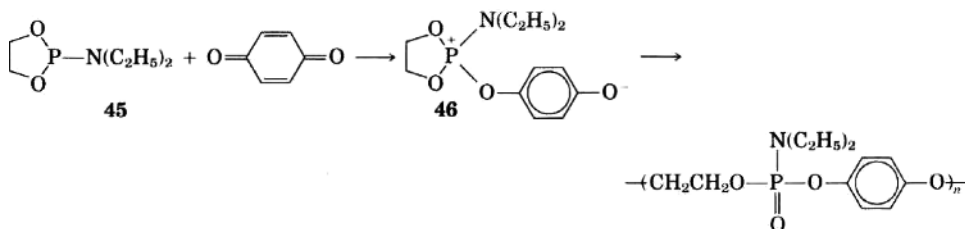


Cyclic acylphosphonite (**42**) ($\text{R} = \text{C}_6\text{H}_5$) and acylphosphite (**43**) ($\text{R} = \text{OC}_6\text{H}_5$) have been found to copolymerize with electron-deficient olefinic monomers such as vinyl ketone (**90**), acrylate (**90**), and acrolein (**90**), benzoquinone (**44**) (**91**), and

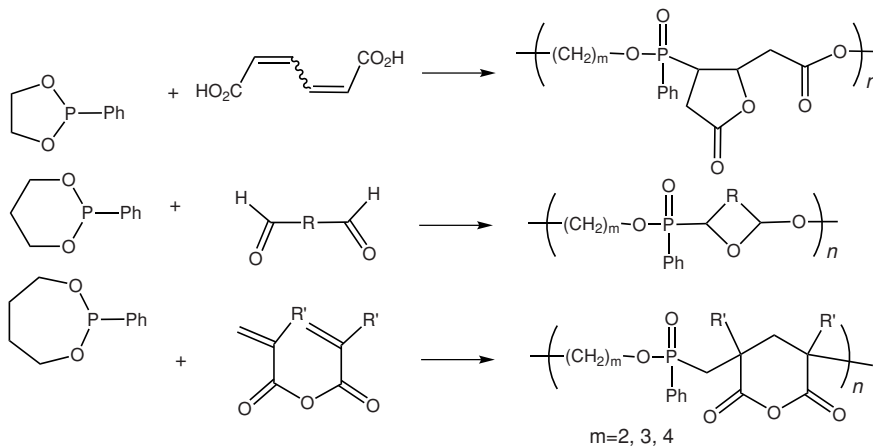
4,4'-diphenoquinone (92) ($M_n < 8600$). One of their reactions is shown in equation 22, which affords another example of redox copolymerization.



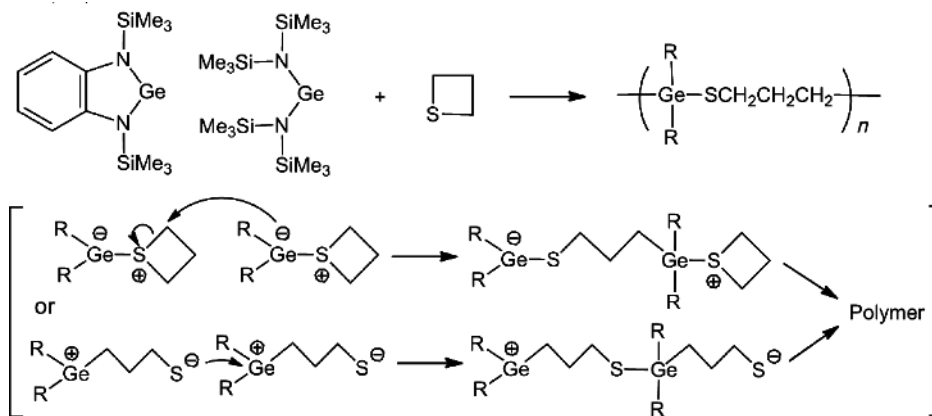
A patent (93) describes the alternating copolymerization of a cyclic phosphorus compound (45) with benzoquinone that is well explained by the intermediate zwitterion (46).



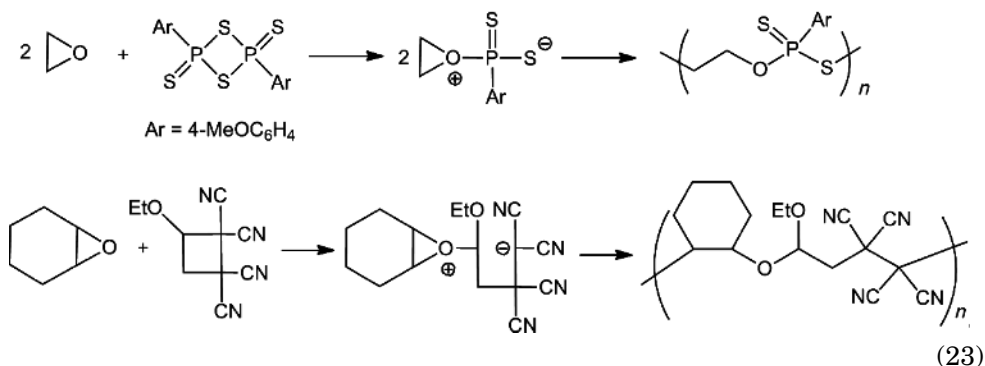
The combination of a cyclic trivalent phosphorus compound as M_N with M_E possessing two electrophilic sites performs ring-opening-closing alternating copolymerization ($M_n < 6500$). *Cis*, *trans*- and *cis,cis*-muconic acids (94), α,ω -dialdehydes (95), and methacrylic and acrylic anhydrides (96) are such as M_E s.



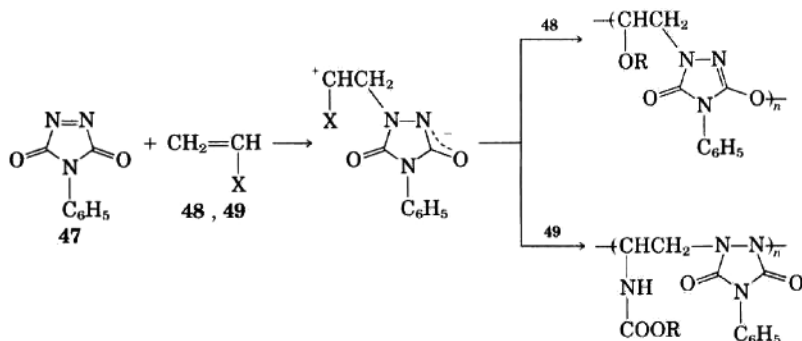
From divalent tin or germanium compounds, that is, stannylene (97) or germylene (98,99), with benzoquinone (97,98) or thietane (99) are formed the alternating copolymers ($M_n < 780,000$), involving redox processes. The copolymerization with benzoquinone is proved to proceed via the biradical intermediate (98), whereas two kinds of zwitterion mechanisms are proposed for the copolymerization of germylene with thietane (99).



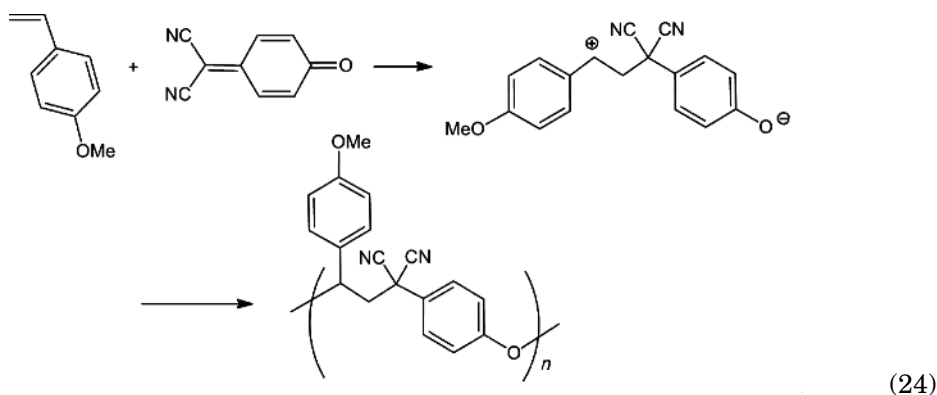
There are only two examples for cyclic ether, which is less nucleophilic than nitrogen or phosphorus compounds, to act as M_N (eq 23). Ethylene oxide or oxetane with 2,4-bis(4'-methoxyphenyl)-1,3,2,4-dithiadiphosphetane-2,4-disulfide (Lawesson's reagent) produces the copolymer ($M_n = 5,000-20,000$) having the 1:1/2 (cyclic ether : Lawesson's reagent) composition in the alternating arrangement, regardless of the feed ratio (100). The combinations of oxiranes with 1,1,2-tetracyano-3-ethoxycyclobutane give the copolymers ($M_n < 70,000$) having the alternating structure or the higher content of the unit from the cyclobutane, depending on the oxirane employed and the reaction conditions (101).



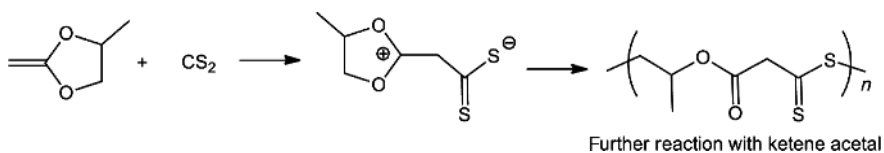
There are reported other interesting copolymerization reactions that proceed through zwitterion intermediates, for example, triazoline (47) with vinyl ethers (48) ($X = OR$) and with vinyl carbamates (49) ($X = NHCOOR$) ($M_n < 4400$) (102-104). Therein electron-rich olefins behave as M_N .



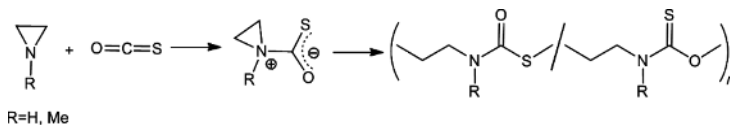
Similarly, the combinations of electron-rich olefins with highly electron-deficient olefins conduct spontaneous polymerization (5). It is proposed that polymerization mechanisms are governed by electron disparity between the donor and acceptor monomers; the very small electron disparity conducts a biradical mechanism for alternating copolymerization, and the enlarging electron disparity promotes a zwitterionic initiation of homopolymerization (see the section “Propagation via One Site”), finally leading the zwitterionic alternating copolymerization. The combination of *p*-methoxystyrene with 7,7-dicyanobenzoquinone methide produces the alternating copolymer ($M_n = 7200\text{--}9500$) via the zwitterion intermediate (105) (eq. 24). On the other hand, the biradical mechanism is proposed for the alternating copolymerization, when cyclohexadiene is the partner for 7,7-dicyanobenzoquinone methide (106).



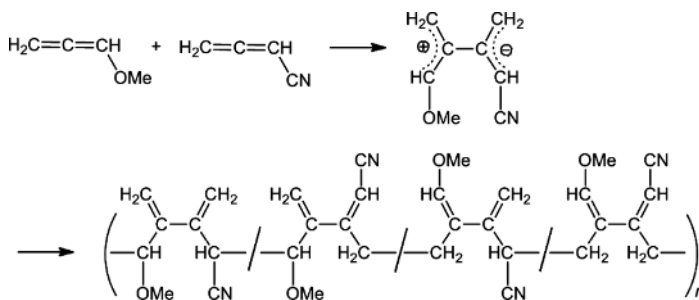
A more electron-rich olefin, cyclic ketene acetal, has enough nucleophilicity for generating the zwitterion intermediate with carbon disulfide and producing the alternating copolymer, which reacts further with cyclic ketene acetal (107).



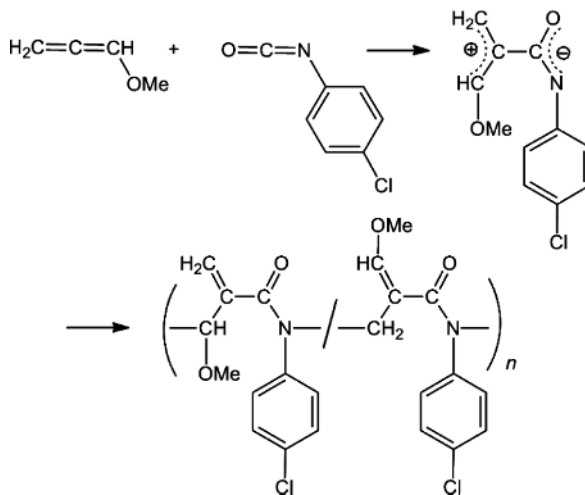
Aziridine and carbonyl sulfide also gives the alternating copolymer (108).



Electron-rich and electron-deficient allenes work as M_N and M_E , respectively. The zwitterion intermediate, which is detected as the methanol adduct, is formed by the reaction between methoxy- and cyano-allenes, and the alternating copolymer ($M_n = 50,000$) composed of four isomeric units is obtained (109). It is noteworthy that an excess amount of one of two monomers remains to be unreacted.



The combination of methoxyallene with aryl isocyanates gives the copolymer via the zwitterion intermediate (110). The copolymer compositions are dependent on the reaction conditions; 4-chlorophenyl isocyanate produces the alternating copolymer with methoxyallene ($M_n < 1300$) (eq. 25). In contrast, the reactions in DMF promote the formation of the cyclic trimers of aryl isocyanates, which are given by the backbiting of the homopropagating terminals of aryl isocyanates from the anionic sites of the zwitterions (111).



(25)

There is the report that these zwitterionic polymerizations are applied for the cross-linking reactions. When polystyrene having allenyl ether groups as the pendants is treated with cyanoallene or 4-chlorophenyl isocyanate, the cross-linking polymers are spontaneously obtained (112)

BIBLIOGRAPHY

“Zwitterionic polymerization” in *EPSE* 2nd ed., Vol. 17, pp. 1028–1039, by Takeo Saegusa and Masato Suzuki, Kyoto University, Japan.

CITED PUBLICATIONS

1. T. Saegusa, *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed.* **16**, 826 (1977).
2. D. S. Johnston, *Adv. Polym. Sci.* **42**, 51 (1982).
3. H. K. Hall, Jr., *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed.* **22**, 440 (1983).
4. I. J. McEwen, *Prog. Polym. Sci.* **10**, 317 (1984).
5. H. K. Hall, Jr. and A. B. Padias, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **47**, 6735 (2009).
6. T. Ogawa and T. Tanikawa, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-1: Polym. Chem.* **10**, 2005 (1972).
7. T. Ogawa and J. Romero, *Eur. Polym. J.* **13**, 419 (1977).
8. Ye. V. Kotchetov, A. A. Berlin, and N. S. Enikolopyan, *Polym. Sci. USSR* **8**, 1122, 1127 (1966).
9. Ye. V. Kotchetov, A. A. Berlin, Ye. M. Masal'skaya, and N. S. Enikolopyan, *Polym. Sci. USSR* **12**, 1264 (1970).
10. M. A. Markevich, Ye. V. Kolchetov, and N. S. Enikolopyan, *Polym. Sci. USSR* **13**, 1163 (1970).
11. H. Klippert and H. Ringsdorf, *Makromol. Chem.* **153**, 289 (1972).
12. F. Ranogayets, Ye. V. Kotchetov, M. A. Markovich, and N. S. Enikolopyan, *J. Polym. Sci. Polym. Symp.* **42**, 531 (1973).
13. D. Vofsi and A. Katchalsky, *J. Polym. Sci.* **26**, 127 (1957).
14. J. Grodzinsky, A. Katchalsky, and D. Volsi, *Makromol. Chem.* **44–46**, 591 (1961).
15. G. B. Butler and K. N. Sivaramakrishnan, *Polym. Prepr. Am. Chem. Soc. Div., Polym. Chem.* **17** (2), 608 (1976).
16. H. Hopf, H. Lussi, and S. Allison, *Makromol. Chem.* **44–46**, 95 (1961).
17. V. Jaacks and G. Franzmann, *Makromol. Chem.* **143**, 283 (1971).
18. E. F. Donnelly, D. S. Johnston, D. C. Pepper, and D. J. Dunn, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Lett. Ed.* **15**, 399 (1977).
19. D. C. Pepper, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Symp.* **62**, 65 (1978).
20. D. S. Johnston and D. C. Pepper, *Makromol. Chem.* **182**, 393, 407, 421 (1981).
21. J. P. Cronin and D. C. Pepper, *Makromol. Chem.* **189**, 85 (1988).
22. Y. K. Choi, Y. H. Bae, and S. W. Kim, *Macromolecules* **28**, 8419 (1995).
23. M. Miyamoto and S. Kanetaka, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **37**, 3671 (1999).
24. (a) Y. Zhang, G. M. Miyake, and E. Y.-X. Chen, *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed.* **49**, 10158 (2010); (b) Y. Zhang and E. Y.-X. Chen, *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed.* **51**, 2465 (2012).
25. Y. Etienne and R. Soulas, *J. Polym. Sci., Part C: Polym. Symp.* **4**, 1061 (1963).
26. V. Jaacks and N. Mathes, *Makromol. Chem.* **131**, 295 (1970).
27. N. Mathes and V. Jaacks, *Makromol. Chem.* **142**, 209 (1971).
28. D. R. Wilson and R. G. Beaman, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-1: Polym. Chem.* **8**, 216 (1970).
29. H. R. Kricheldorf, *Macromol. Rapid Commun.* **30**, 1371 (2009).
30. J. Raynaud, C. Absalon, Y. Gnanou, and D. Taton, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **131**, 3201 (2009).
31. J. Raynaud, W. N. Ottou, Y. Gnanou, and D. Taton, *Chem. Commun.* **46**, 3203 (2010).

32. (a) D. A. Culkun, W. Jeong, S. Csihony, E. D. Gomez, N. P. Balsara, J. L. Hedrick, and R. M. Waymouth, *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed.* **46**, 2627 (2007); (b) W. Jeong, E. J. Shin, D. A. Culkun, J. L. Hedrick, and R. M. Waymouth, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **131**, 4884 (2009).
33. E. J. Shin, W. Jeong, H. A. Brown, B. J. Koo, J. L. Hedrick, and R. M. Waymouth, *Macromolecules* **44**, 2773 (2011).
34. (a) L. Guo and D. Zhang, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **131**, 18072 (2009); (b) S. H. Lahasky, W. K. Serem, L. Guo, J. C. Garno, and D. Zhang, *Macromolecules* **44**, 9063 (2011); (c) C.-U. Lee, T. P. Smart, L. Guo, T. H. Epps, III, and D. Zhang, *Macromolecules* **44**, 9574 (2011); (d) L. Guo, J. Li, Z. Brown, K. Ghale, and D. Zhang, *Biopolym.: Peptide Sci.* **96**, 596 (2011); (e) L. Guo, S. H. Lahasky, K. Ghale, and D. Zhang, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **134**, 9163 (2012); (f) S. H. Lahasky, X. Hu, and D. Zhang, *ACS Macro Lett.* **1**, 580 (2012).
35. H. A. Brown, A. G. De Crisci, J. L. Hedrick, and R. M. Waymouth, *ACS Macro Lett.* **1**, 1113 (2012).
36. W. Kern and V. Jaacks, *J. Polym. Sci.* **48**, 399 (1960).
37. M. Abdelkader, A. B. Padias, and H. K. Hall, Jr., *Macromolecules* **20**, 949 (1987).
38. (a) T. Gotoh, A. B. Padias, and H. K. Hall, Jr., *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **108**, 4920 (1986); (b) H. K. Hall, Jr., T. Itoh, S. Iwatsuki, A. B. Padias, and J. E. Mulvaney, *Macromolecules* **23**, 913 (1990).
39. N. E. Kamber, W. Jeong, and R. M. Waymouth, *Chem. Rev.* **107**, 5813 (2007).
40. F. Nederberg, E. F. Connor, M. Moller, T. Glauser, J. L. Hedrick, *Angew. Chem., Int. Ed.* **40**, 2712 (2001).
41. M. J. Hatch, M. Yoshimine, D. L. Schmidt, and H. B. Smith, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **93**, 4617 (1971).
42. M. J. Hatch, M. Yoshimine, D. L. Schmidt, and H. B. Smith, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-1: Polym. Chem.* **10**, 2951 (1972).
43. D. L. Schmidt, Ring-Opening Polymerization, in T. Saegusa and E. Goethals, eds., *Am. Chem. Soc. Symp. Ser.* **59**, 318–331 (1977).
44. P. Gunatillake, G. Odian, and D. L. Schmidt, *Macromolecules* **19**, 1779 (1986).
45. T. Kunitake and C. C. Price, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **85**, 761 (1963).
46. J. K. Stille and P. Cassidy, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Lett.* **1**, 565 (1963).
47. D. L. Cangiano, G. Odian, and D. L. Schmidt, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.*, **34**, 801 (1996).
48. C. Lu, P. Gunatillake, and G. Odian, *Macromolecules* **25**, 4464 (1992).
49. T. Saegusa, *Chem. Technol.* **5**, 295 (1975).
50. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, Y. Kimura, and H. Ikeda, *J. Macromol. Sci. Chem.* **9**, 641 (1975).
51. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **48**, 307 (1976)
52. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, Y. Kimura, and T. Yokoyama, in T. Saegusa and E. Goethals, eds., *Am. Chem. Soc. Symp. Ser.* **59**, 332–343 (1977).
53. T. Saegusa and S. Kobayashi, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **50**, 281 (1978).
54. T. Saegusa and S. Kobayashi, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Symp.* **62**, 79 (1978).
55. T. Saegusa, *Makromol. Chem. Suppl.* **3**, 157 (1979).
56. T. Saegusa, *Pure Appl. Chem.* **53**, 691 (1981).
57. T. Saegusa, *Top. Curr. Chem.* **100**, 75 (1981).
58. T. Saegusa, H. Ikeda, and H. Fujii, *Macromolecules* **5**, 354 (1972).
59. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *Macromolecules* **7**, 1 (1974).
60. B. L. Rivas, G. S. Canessa, and S. A. Pooley, *Makromol. Chem.* **187**, 71 (1986).
61. S. Kobayashi, M. Isobe, and T. Saegusa, *Macromolecules* **15703** (1982).
62. B. L. Rivas, G. S. Canessa, and S. A. Pooley, *Polym. Bull.* **9**, 417 (1983).
63. G. S. Canessa, S. A. Pooley, M. Parra, and B. L. Rivas, *Polym. Bull.* **11**, 465 (1984).
64. B. L. Rivas, G. S. Canessa, and S. A. Pooley, *Polym. Bull.* **13**, 65 (1985).

65. B. L. Rivas, G. S. Canessa, and S. A. Pooley, *Polym. Bull.* **13**, 519 (1985).
66. T. Saegusa, H. Ikeda, S. Hirayanagi, Y. Kimura, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **8**, 259 (1975).
67. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *Macromolecules* **7139** (1974).
68. G. Odian and P. A. Gunatillake, *Macromolecules* **17**, 1297, 2236 (1984); **18**, 605 (1985).
69. S. Kobayashi, M. Miyamoto, and T. Saegusa, *Macromolecules* **14**, 1582 (1981).
70. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *Macromolecules* **8**, 374 (1975).
71. T. Saegusa, Y. Kimura, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **10**, 239 (1977).
72. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and J. Furukawa, *Macromolecules* **9**, 728 (1976).
73. T. Saegusa, Y. Kimura, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **10**, 236 (1977).
74. T. Saegusa, Y. Kimura, K. Sano, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **7**, 546 (1974).
75. T. Saegusa, Y. Kimura, S. Sawada, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **7**, 956 (1974).
76. K. I. Lee and M.-H. Lee, *Polymer* **34**, 650 (1993).
77. T. Saegusa, Y. Kimura, N. Ishikawa, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **9**, 724 (1976).
78. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and J. Furukawa, *Macromolecules* **10**, 73 (1977).
79. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and J. Furukawa, *Macromolecules* **11**, 1027 (1978).
80. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and J. Furukawa, *Macromolecules* **8**, 703 (1975).
81. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *Macromolecules* **10**, 64 (1977).
82. T. Saegusa, M. Niwano, and S. Kobayashi, *Polym. Bull.* **2**, 249 (1980).
83. T. Saegusa, T. Kobayashi, and S. Kobayashi, *Polym. Bull.* **1**, 259 (1979).
84. T. Saegusa, T. Yokoyama, Y. Kimura, and S. Kobayashi, *Polym. Bull.* **1**, 91 (1978).
85. J. Kadokawa, I.-F. Yen, S. Shoda, H. Uyama, and S. Kobayashi, *Polym. J.* **11**, 1205 (1992).
86. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *J. Chem. Soc., Chem. Commun.* 443 (1976).
87. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, and Y. Kimura, *Macromolecules* **10**, 68 (1977).
88. T. Saegusa, T. Yokoyama, Y. Kimura, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **10**, 791 (1977).
89. T. Saegusa, S. Kobayashi, Y. Kimura, and T. Yokoyama, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **98**, 7843 (1976).
90. T. Saegusa, T. Kobayashi, and S. Kobayashi, *Polym. Bull.* **1**, 535 (1979).
91. T. Saegusa, T. Kobayashi, T. Y. Chow, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **12**, 533 (1979).
92. S. Kobayashi, M. Okawa, M. Niwano, and T. Saegusa, *Polym. Bull.* **5**, 331 (1981).
93. Jpn. Pat. 71 02352 (1971), Asahi Chem. Ind. H. Kobayashi, H. Ohama and Y. Kodaira.
94. S. Kobayashi, J. Kadokawa, H. Uyama, S. Shoda, and S. Lundmark, *Macromolecules* **25** 5862 (1992).
95. S. Kobayashi, S. Lundmark, J. Kadokawa, and A.-C. Albertsson *Macromolecules* **25**, 5867 (1992).
96. S. Lundmark, J. Kadokawa, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromolecules* **25**, 5873 (1992).
97. S. Kobayashi, S. Iwata, and S. Shoda, *Acta Polym.* **46**, 471 (1995).
98. S. Kobayashi, S. Iwata, M. Abe, and S. Shoda, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **117**, 2187 (1995).
99. S. Shoda, S. Iwata, H. J. Kim, M. Hiraiishi, and S. Kobayashi, *Macromol. Chem. Phys.* **197**, 2437 (1996).
100. S. Kobayashi, T. Y. Chow, and T. Saegusa, *Polym. Bull.* **10**, 491 (1983).
101. T. Yokozawa and T. Suzuki, *Macromolecules* **29**, 22 (1992).
102. G. B. Butler, L. J. Guilbault, and S. R. Turner, *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Lett.* **9115** (1971).
103. L. J. Guilbault, S. R. Turner, and G. B. Butler, *J. Polym. Sci., Part B: Polym. Lett.* **10**, 1 (1972).
104. K. B. Wagener and G. B. Butler, *J. Org. Chem.* **38**, 3070 (1973).

105. Y. Mitsuda, S. Kawaguchi, T. Uno, M. Kubo, and T. Itoh, *Macromolecules* **37**, 1251 (2004).
106. S. Kawaguchi, Y. Mitsuda, T. Uno, M. Kubo, and T. Itoh, *Kobunshi Ronbunshu* **61**, 263 (2004).
107. T. Endo, H. Fukuda, and M. Hirota, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **106**, 4035 (1984).
108. H. Yokota and M. Kondo, *J. Polym. Sci., Part A-1: Polym. Chem.* **9**, 13 (1971).
109. J. Mizuya, T. Yokozawa, and T. Endo, *J. Am. Chem. Soc.* **111**, 743 (1989).
110. (a) J. Mizuya, T. Yokozawa, and T. Endo, *Chem. Lett.* 479 (1989); (b) J. Mizuya, T. Yokozawa, and T. Endo, *Macromolecules* **24**, 2299 (1991).
111. J. Mizuya, T. Yokozawa, and T. Endo, *J. Polym. Sci., Polym. Chem.* **29**, 1545 (1991)
112. J. Mizuya, T. Yokozawa, and T. Endo, *Macromolecules* **23**, 4724 (1990).

MASATO SUZUKI
Nagoya Institute of Technology
Nagoya, Japan

CONTENTS OF VOLUMES 1–15 OF THE ENCYCLOPEDIA

VOLUME 1

- Acetal Resins, 1
- Acetylenic Polymers, 20
- Acoustic Properties, 61
- Acrolein Polymers, 107
- Acrylamide Polymers, 118
- Acrylic (and Methacrylic)
 - Acid Polymers, 156
- Acrylic Elastomers, Survey, 173
- Acrylic Ester Polymers, 195
- Acrylic Fibers, 224
- Acrylonitrile and Acrylonitrile
 - Polymers, 261
- Acrylonitrile–Butadiene–Styrene
 - Polymers, 312
- Addition Polymerization, 341
- Additives, 343
- Adhesion, 362
- Adhesive Compounds, 400
- Adsorption, 434
- Aging, Physical, 452
- Alkyd Resins, 480
- Aminimide Polymers, 502
- Amino Resins and Plastics, 515
- Amorphous Polymers, 547
- Anionic Polymerization, 596
- Annealing, 649
- Antifoaming Agents, 662
- Antioxidants, 687
- Atom Transfer Radical
 - Polymerization, 720
- Atomic Force Microscopy, 746
- Automotive Plastics and
 - Composites, 787
- Azo Compounds, 817

VOLUME 2

- Barrier Polymers, 1
- Belting, 66
- Biodegradable Plastics, 72
- Biodegradable Polymers, Medical
 - Applications, 100
- Bioinspired Polymers, 122
- Biomedical Materials, 142
- Block Copolymer Hydrogels, 161
- Block Copolymers, 190
- Blow Molding, 215
- Blowing Agents, 259
- Bottle Design, Plastic, 271
- Bulk and Solution Polymerizations
 - Reactors, 283
- Butadiene Polymers, 293
- Butene Polymers, 332
- Butyl Rubber, 349
- Calendering, 375
- Carbocationic Polymerization, 390
- Carbon Black, 426
- Carbon Fibers, 466
- Casein, 487
- Casting, 495
- Cellular Materials, 511
- Cellulose, 566
- Cellulose Esters, Inorganic, 600
- Cellulose Esters, Organic, 617
- Cellulose Ethers, 647
- Cellulose Fibers, Regenerated, 672
- Cement Additives, 710
- Chain Transfer, 714
- Chain-Reaction Polymerization, 717
- Characterization of Polymers, 732
- Chemical Vapor Deposition of
 - Polymer Films, 762

VOLUME 3

- Chiral Polymers, 1
Chitin and Chitosan, 33
Chloroprene Polymers, 43
Chromatography, HPLC, 88
Chromatography, Size
 Exclusion, 102
Classification of Polymerization
 Reactions, 124
Clathrates, 128
“Click” Chemistry in Macromolecular
 Synthesis, 186
Coating Methods, Powder
 Technology, 230
Coating Methods, Survey, 264
Coatings, 299
Coextrusion of Multilayer Structures,
 Interfacial Phenomena, 372
Colloids, 436
Colorants, 468
Coloring Processes, 490
Composite Foams, 499
Composite Materials, 513
Compounding, 550
Compression and Transfer
 Molding, 565
Computational Quantum
 Chemistry for Free-Radical
 Polymerization, 591
Condensation Polymerization, 644
Conductive Polymer Composites, 646
Conformation and Configuration, 688
 π -Conjugated Furan-Based
 Polymers, 701
Controlled Release Formulation,
 Agricultural, 714
Controlled Release Technology, 736
Copolymerization, 760

VOLUME 4

- Cotton, 1
Critical Phase Polymerizations, 47
Cross-Linking, 63
Cryogenic Properties, 113
Crystallinity Determination, 148
Crystallization Kinetics, 167
Cyclodextrin Polymers,
 Applications, 200
Cyclohexanedimethanol
 Polyesters, 214
Cyclopentadiene and
 Dicyclopentadiene, 221
Degradable Polymers and Plastics
 in Landfill Sites, 239
Degradation, 250
Degree of Polymerization, 298
Degree of Substitution, 299
Dendrimers, 300
Dendrimers, Molecular
 Recognition, 321
Dendronized Polymers,
 Stimuli-Responsive, 361
Dental Applications, 383
Depolymerization, 419
Diacetylene and Triacetylene
 Polymers, 445
Dielectric Heating, 458
Dielectric Relaxation, 479
Diels–Alder Polymers, 493
Diffusion, 510
Dilatometry, 522
Drag Reduction, 535
Dyes, Macromolecular, 579
Dynamic Mechanical Analysis, 610
Elasticity, Rubber-like, 638
Electrical Properties, 674
Electrically Active Polymers, 741
Electrochromic Polymers, 789

VOLUME 5

- Electron Spin Resonance, 1
Electronic Circular and
Linear Dichroism, 39
Electronic Packaging, 62
Electrooptical Applications, 93
Electropolymerization, 118
Electrospinning, 144
Emulsion Polymerization, 163
Engineering Thermoplastics,
Overview, 200
Enzymatic Polymerization, 221
Epoxy Resins, 293
Ethylene Acrylic Elastomers, 419
Ethylene Copolymers, 429
Ethylene Oxide Polymers, 444
Ethylene Polymers,
Chlorosulfonated, 467
Ethylene Polymers, HDPE, 484
Ethylene Polymers, LDPE, 515
Ethylene Polymers, LLDPE, 543
Ethylene–Norbornene
Copolymers, 584
Ethylene–Propylene Elastomers, 593
Ethylenesulfonic Acid Polymers, 611
Extrusion, 618
Fabrics, Coated, 680
Fatigue Behavior of Polymers, 694
Ferroelectric Liquid Crystalline
Elastomers, 748
Fibers, Elastomeric, 768
Fillers, 784
Films, Manufacture, 803
Filtration Membranes, 826

VOLUME 6

- Flame Retardancy, 1
Flammability, 34
Flash Devolatilization, 100
Floor Polishes, 106
Flooring Materials, 114
Fluorinated Copolymers, 128
Fluorocarbon Elastomers, 161
Forensic Analysis, 174
Foundry Resins, 195
Fractals, 203
Fractionation, 223
Fractography, 279
Fracture, 299
Fullerene Polymers, 338
Furniture, 361
Gel Point, 367
Genetic Methods of Polymer
Synthesis, 380
Glass Transition, 432
Glycogen, 461
Graft Copolymers, 467
Group-Transfer Polymerization, 527
Hardness, 544
Heat Stabilizers, 561
Heterophase Polymerization, 585
High Performance Fibers, 702
Hydrogels, 734
Hydrogenation, 768
Hyperbranched Polymers, 781
Impact Resistance, 803
Initiators, Free-Radical, 838

VOLUME 7

- Injection Molding, 1
Inorganic Polymers, 33
Intercalation Polymerization, 71
Interfacial Polymerization, 93
Interpenetrating Polymer
Networks, 110
Ion-Exchange Technology, 150
Ionic Liquids, Polymerization
in, 194
Ionomers, 208
Isocyanate-Derived Polymers, 253
Isoprene Polymers, 270

- Kinetics of Radical Polymerization, 349
- Langmuir–Blodgett Films, 424
- Laser Light Scattering, 437
- Latex Technology, 457
- Leather, 478
- Leatherlike Materials, 496
- Light-Emitting Diodes, 508
- Lignin, 525
- Liquid Crystalline Block Copolymers, 549
- Liquid Crystalline Polymers, Main-Chain, 564
- Lithographic Resists, 579
- Living Polymers, 625
- Living Radical Polymerization, 648
- Macrocyclic Polymers, 674
- Magnetic Polymers, 692
- Mass Spectrometry, 703
- Melamine–Formaldehyde Resins, 727
- Membrane Technology, 743

VOLUME 8

- Membranes for Energy Applications, 1
- Metal-Containing Polymers, 39
- Metallocenes, 81
- Metathesis Polymerization, 149
- Methacrylic Ester Polymers, 206
- Methylene Butyrolactone Polymers, 235
- Micelles, 272
- Microcellular Plastics, 300
- Microdevices, 317
- Microemulsion Polymerization, 366
- Microencapsulation, 376
- Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles, 402
- Microgels for Catalysis, 439
- Micromechanical Properties, 469
- Microspheres, 503
- Microstructure, 510
- Miscibility, 526
- Modeling of Polymer Processing and Properties, 548
- Molecular Modeling, 572
- Molecular Self-Assembly, 639
- Molecular Weight Determination, 659
- Molecularly Imprinted Polymers, 684
- Morphology, 704
- Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly, 735
- Nanocomposites, Metal-Filled, 748
- Nanocomposites, Polymer–Clay, 767
- Nanocrystals Surface Functionalization, 785
- Nanoreactors, 810

VOLUME 9

- Networks, Elastomeric, 1
- Neutron Scattering, 46
- Nomenclature of Polymers, 69
- Nondestructive Testing, 101
- Nonlinear Optical Properties, 123
- Nonwoven Fabrics, Spunbonded, 177
- Nonwoven Fabrics, Staple Fibers, 213
- Nuclear Magnetic Resonance, 237
- N-Vinylamide Polymers, 315
- Olefin Fibers, 345
- Optical Fibers, 367
- Optical Properties, 386
- Oxetane Polymers, 413
- Oxidative Polymerization, 432
- Oxygen Scavenging Systems, 456
- Packaging Material, Molecular Weight, 466
- Packaging, Flexible, 469
- Pelletizing, 479
- Perfluorinated Polymers, Perfluorinated Ethylene–Propylene Copolymers, 487
- Perfluorinated Polymers, Polytetrafluoroethylene, 502

- Perfluorinated Polymers,
Tetrafluoroethylene–Ethylene
Copolymers, 526
- Perfluorinated Polymers,
Tetrafluoroethylene–
Perfluorodioxole Copolymers, 542
- Perfluorinated Polymers,
Tetrafluoroethylene–
Perfluorovinyl Ether
Copolymers, 547
- Phase Transformation, 560
- Phenolic Resins, 578
- Phosgene, 623
- Phospholipid Polymers, 635
- Phosphorus-Containing Polymers
and Oligomers, 659
- Photopolymerization, Cationic, 695
- Photopolymerization, Free
Radical, 718
- Photorefraction, 748
- Piezoelectric Polymers, 776

VOLUME 10

- Plasma Processing, 1
- Plasticizers, 42
- Plastics Processing, 68
- Poly(3-hydroxyalkanoates), 96
- Poly(arylene sulfide)s, 115
- Poly(ethylene naphthalate)
(PEN), 139
- Poly(lactic acid), 165
- Poly(*P*-phenylenevinylene), 175
- Poly(trimethylene
terephthalate), 198
- Polyamides, Aromatic, 211
- Polyamides, Fibers, 237
- Polyamides, Plastics, 272
- Polyampholytes, 297
- Polyanhydrides, 326
- Polyarylates, 351
- Polycarbonates, 354
- Polycarbosilanes, 386
- Polycondensation, 398
- Polycyanoacrylates, 426
- Polyelectrolytes, 435
- Polyester Films, 501
- Polyesters, Fibers, 512
- Polyesters, Thermoplastic, 538
- Polyetheretherketones, 563
- Polyethers, Aromatic, 571
- PolyHIPEs, 595
- Polyimides, 618
- Polyketones, 649
- Polymer Blends, 674
- Polymer Brushes, 732
- Polymeric Drugs, 762

VOLUME 11

- Polymers of Intrinsic Microporosity, 1
- Polymer-Supported Reagents, 17
- Polypeptide Synthesis, Ring Opening
Polymerization, 47
- Polypeptide Synthesis, Solid-Phase
Method, 61
- Polyphosphazenes, 97
- Polyrotaxanes, 119
- Polysilanes, 149
- Polysulfides, 167
- Polysulfones, 179
- Polyurethanes, 204
- Positron Annihilation
Spectroscopy, 266
- Pressure-Sensitive Adhesives, 288
- Propylene Oxide and Higher
1,2-Epoxy Polymers, 310
- Propylene Polymers, 347
- Protein-Polymer Conjugates, 418
- Radiation Chemistry of Polymers, 446
- Radical Polymerization, 501
- Radiopaque Polymers, 615
- Reactive Extrusion of Polymers, 630
- Recycling, Plastics, 657
- Reinforcement, 679
- Release Agents, 700
- Reversible Addition–Fragmentation
Chain Transfer Polymerization, 709

VOLUME 12

- Rheological Measurements, 1
Rigid-Rod Polymers, 50
Ring Opening Polymerization, 137
Rotational Molding, 156
Rubber Chemicals, 168
Rubber Compounding, 203
Rubber, Guayule, 262
Scanning Force Microscopy,
 Block Copolymers, 291
Scratch Behavior, 319
Self-Healing Polymers, 338
Semicrystalline Polymers, 371
Shape-Memory Polymers, 409
Silane Coupling Agents, 419
Silicon-Containing Preceramic
 Polymers, 432
Silicones, 464
Silk, 542
Single-Site Catalysts, 551
Smart Polymers—Biotechnological and
 Biomedical Applications, 603
Solar Cells, 626
Solid-State Circular Dichroism
 Spectroscopy, 655
Solid-State Extrusion, 685
Solid-State Polymerization, 700
Solubility of Polymers, 732

VOLUME 13

- Stabilization, 1
Starch, 51
Statistical Thermodynamics, 75
Step-Reaction Polymerization, 82
Stereoregular Polymers, 88
Stereoselective Polymerization
 of Conjugated Dienes, 126
Structural Representation of
 Polymers, 151
Styrene Polymers, 179
Styrene–Butadiene Copolymers, 268
Sulfur-Containing Polymers, 286
Superabsorbent Polymers, 352
Supercritical Fluids, 369
Superhydrophobic Polymers, 404
Supramolecular Polymers, 440
Surface Analysis, 469
Surface Mechanical Damage
 and Wear, 502
Surface Modification of Polymers, 528
Surface Properties, 575
Suspension Polymerization
 Processes, 600
Syndiotactic Polystyrene, 631
Tacticity in Vinyl Polymers, 650
Telechelic Polymers, 671
Template Polymerization, 744
Test Methods, 756
Thermal Analysis of Polymers, 789

VOLUME 14

- Thermal Properties, 1
Thermochromic Polymers, 38
Thermodynamic Properties
 of Polymers, 61
Thermoforming, 103
Thermoplastic Elastomers, 133
Thermosets, 160
Tissue Engineering, 214
Toys, 245
Transitions and Relaxations, 251
Transport Properties, 291
Two-Dimensional Correlation
 Spectroscopy, 381
Ultrasound-Induced Radical
 Polymerization, 414
Urethane Coatings, 433
UV Stabilizers, 452
Vegetable Fibers, 494
Vesicles, 511
Vibrational Spectroscopy, 563

Vinyl Acetal Polymers, 633
Vinyl Acetate Polymers, 651
Vinyl Alcohol Polymers, 686

Vinyl Chloride Polymers, 725
Vinyl Fluoride Polymers (PVF), 765

VOLUME 15

Vinylidene Chloride Polymers
(PVDC), 1
Vinylidene Fluoride Polymers
(PVDF), 54
Viscoelasticity, 77
Water-Soluble Polymers, 173
Weathering of Polymeric
Materials, 243

Wood Composites, 281
Wool, 306
Xanthan, 348
X-ray Microscopy, 367
Xylylene Polymers, 409
Yield and Crazing in Polymers, 449
Ziegler–Natta Catalysts, 504
Zwitterionic Polymerization, 524

Contents of Volumes 1–15 of the Encyclopedia, 547
Contributors to Volumes 1–15 of the Encyclopedia, 555
Cumulative Index, Volumes 1–15, 569

CONTRIBUTORS TO VOLUMES 1–15 OF THE ENCYCLOPEDIA

- Alaa S. Abd-El-Aziz**, *University of Prince Edward Island, Charlottetown, Canada; University of British Columbia Okanagan, Kelowna, Canada, Metal-Containing Polymers*
- W. Wade Adams**, *Rice University, Houston, Texas, Rigid-Rod Polymers*
- H. Ade**, *North Carolina State University, Raleigh, North Carolina, X-Ray Microscopy*
- Josh C. Agar**, *School of Materials Science and Engineering, Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia, Conductive Polymer Composites*
- Suk-kyun Ahn**, *Institute of Material Science, University of Connecticut, Storrs, Connecticut, Liquid Crystalline Block Copolymers*
- Fadi Aldeek**, *Florida State University, Tallahassee, Florida, Nanocrystals Surface Functionalization*
- Michael W. Allsopp**, *Independent PVC Technology Consultant, Heswall, Wirral, England, Vinyl Chloride Polymers*
- S. Al-Malaika**, *Aston University, Birmingham, England, United Kingdom, Stabilization*
- Bruno Ameduri**, *Institut Charles Gerhardt, Montpellier, France, Fluorinated Copolymers*
- R. Amin-Sanayei**, *Atofina Chemicals Inc., King of Prussia, Pennsylvania, Vinylidene Fluoride Polymers (PVDF)*
- H. Magnus Andersson**, *Autonomic Materials, Inc, Champaign, Illinois, Self-Healing Polymers*
- James H. Andrews**, *Youngstown State University, Youngstown, Ohio, Nonlinear Optical Properties; Photorefractive*
- Stephen M. Andrews**, *BASF Corporation, Additives*
- Steve Andrzejewski**, *Ashland Distribution, Parkway Dublin, Ohio, Rotational Molding*
- Anthony Anton**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, Inc., Wilmington, Delaware, Polyamides, Fibers*
- Nicolas Anton**, *Laboratory of Design and Application of Bioactive Molecules (CAMB), Faculty of Pharmacy, University of Strasbourg, France, Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles*
- Fátima Aparicio**, *Universidad Complutense de Madrid, Madrid, Spain, Supramolecular Polymers*
- Valeria Arrighi**, *Heriot-Watt University, Edinburgh, United Kingdom, Miscibility*
- Ayse Asatekin**, *Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, Massachusetts, Filtration Membranes*
- Rafael Auras**, *Michigan State University, East Lansing, Michigan, Poly(lactic acid)*
- Neil Ayres**, *Department of Polymer Science, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Mississippi, Water-Soluble Polymers*
- Darlene M. Back**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Piscataway, New Jersey, Ethylene Oxide Polymers*
- David G. Bailey**, *Eastern Regional Research Center, U.S. Department of Agriculture, Leather*
- Bennett R. Baird**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, Inc., Wilmington, Delaware, Polyamides, Fibers*
- John K. Baird**, *Kelco Division of Merck & Co., Inc., Xanthan*
- Madhab P. Bajgai**, *Centre for Blood Research, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada; Department of Pathology & Laboratory Medicine, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada, Polymer Brushes*
- Richard W. Baker**, *Membrane Technology & Research, Inc., Menlo Park, California, Membrane Technology*
- Edward Balizer**, *U.S. Naval Surface Warfare Center, West Bethesda, Maryland, Acoustic Properties*
- Florence Bally**, *ICPEES, University of Strasbourg, Strasbourg, France, Microdevices*
- George Barany**, *The University of Minnesota, Minneapolis, Minnesota, Polypeptide Synthesis, Solid-Phase Method*
- Christopher Barner-Kowollik**, *The University of New South Wales, Sydney, New South Wales, Australia, Copolymerization; Radical Polymerization*
- Edward G. Bartick**, *Counterterrorism and Forensic Science Research Unit, FBI Academy, Quantico, Virginia, Forensic Analysis*
- D. C. Bassett**, *University of Reading, Reading, United Kingdom, Morphology*
- Catia Bastioli**, *Novamont SpA, Novara, Piedmont, Italy, Starch*
- Subhadeep Basu**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts, Dendrimers, Molecular Recognition*
- Giuseppe Battaglia**, *Department of Engineering Materials, University of Sheffield, Sheffield, United Kingdom; The Kroto Research Institute, Sheffield, United Kingdom, Bioinspired Polymers*
- W. F. Beach**, *Alpha Metals, Bridgewater, New Jersey, Xylylene Polymers*
- Sam Belcher**, *Consultant, Moscow, Ohio, Blow Molding*
- V. A. Beloshenko**, *Donetsk Physics and Technology, Institute of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Donetsk, Ukraine, Solid State Extrusion*
- James N. BeMiller**, *Purdue University, Glycogen*
- Elizabeth Benham**, *Chevron Phillips Chemical Company, Kingwood, Texas, Ethylene Polymers, HDPE*
- Noelie R. Bertoniere**, *Southern Regional Research Center, USDA, Cellulose*
- D. E. Beyer**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Vinylidene Chloride Polymers (PVDC)*
- Y. E. Beygelzimer**, *Donetsk Physics and Technology, Institute of the National Academy of Sciences of Ukraine, Donetsk, Ukraine, Solid State Extrusion*

- Jozef Bicerano**, *Bicerano & Associates Consulting, Inc., Midland, Michigan*, Glass Transition
- N. C. Billingham**, *University of Sussex, Brighton, United Kingdom*, Degradation
- Kurt Binder**, *Institut für Physik, Johannes Gutenberg Universität, Mainz, Germany*, Phase Transformation
- Wolfgang H. Binder**, *Institute of Applied Synthetic Chemistry, Technical University of Vienna, Vienna, Austria; Martin-Luther University Halle-Wittenberg, Halle (Saale), Germany*, "Click" Chemistry in Macromolecular Synthesis; Melamine-Formaldehyde Resins
- J. D. Birchall**, *Imperial Chemical Industries*, Cement Additives
- Frank D. Blum**, *University of Missouri-Rolla, Rolla, Missouri*, Silane Coupling Agents
- B. Blümich**, *Institut für Technische Chemie und Makromolekulare Chemie, Rheinisch-Westfälische Technische Hochschule, Worringerweg, Aachen, Germany*, Nuclear Magnetic Resonance
- Christophe Boisson**, *Université de Lyon, Laboratoire de Chimie Catalyse Polymères et Procédés, Villeurbanne, France*, Single-Site Catalysts
- John E. Boliek**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc., Wilmington, Delaware*, Fibers, Elastomeric
- Armen Boranian**, *Consultant*, Flooring Materials
- Uwe Borchert**, *University of Hamburg, Hamburg, Germany*, Vesicles
- Sara C. Bourke**, *University of Toronto, Toronto, Ontario*, Inorganic Polymers
- John W. Bozzelli**, *Injection Molding Solutions, Midland, Michigan*, Injection Molding
- Mark Bradley**, *University of Southampton, Southampton, United Kingdom*, Polymer-Supported Reagents
- D. G. Brady**, *Phillips Petroleum Company*, Poly(arylene sulfide)s
- Paul V. Braun**, *University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, Urbana, Illinois*, Self-Healing Polymers
- Martin Brehmer**, *Institute of Organic Chemistry, University of Mainz, Mainz, Germany*, Ferroelectric Liquid Crystalline Elastomers
- David S. Breslow**, *D. S. Breslow Associates*, Ethylene-sulfonic Acid Polymers
- Victoria A. Briand**, *University of Connecticut*, Protein-Polymer Conjugates
- David Briggs**, *University of Nottingham, University Park, Nottingham, United Kingdom*, Surface Analysis
- B. J. Briscoe**, *Imperial College, London, UK*, Surface Mechanical Damage and Wear
- Donald E. Brooks**, *Centre for Blood Research; Department of Chemistry; Department of Pathology & Laboratory Medicine, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada*, Polymer Brushes
- Paul D. Brothers**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc., Wilmington, Delaware*, Perfluorinated Polymers, Tetrafluoroethylene-Ethylene Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Tetrafluoroethylene-Perfluorodioxole Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Tetrafluoroethylene-Perfluorovinyl Ether Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Perfluorinated Ethylene-Propylene Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Polytetrafluoroethylene
- R. Malcolm Brown**, *The University of Texas at Austin*, Cellulose
- Yefim Brun**, *Waters Corporation, Milford, Massachusetts*, Chromatography, HPLC
- Daniel J. Brunelle**, *GE Corporate R&D, Niskayuna, New York*, Macrocylic Polymers; Polycarbonates
- Andreas J. Brunner**, *Center for Nondestructive Testing, EMPA, Swiss Federal Laboratories for Materials Testing and Research, Dübendorf, Switzerland*, Non-destructive Testing
- Robert G. Bryant**, *NASA Langley Research Center, Hampton, Virginia*, Polyimides
- Fredric L. Buchholz**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, Michigan*, Superabsorbent Polymers
- Peter M. Budd**, *University of Manchester, Manchester, United Kingdom*, Polymers of Intrinsic Microporosity
- Matthew Butts**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- Israel Cabasso**, *Polymer Research Institute, State University of New York-ESF*, Radiopaque Polymers
- Joao Cabral**, *Imperial College London, London*, Miscibility
- Ying Cai**, *University of Iowa, Iowa City, Iowa*, Photopolymerization, Free Radical
- F. J. Baltá Calleja**, *Instituto de Estructura de la Materia, CSIC, Madrid, Spain*, Hardness
- Neil R. Cameron**, *Durham University, Durham, United Kingdom*, PolyHIPEs
- Frank A. Cangelosi**, *Cytec Industries, Stamford, Connecticut*, UV Stabilizers
- Adam S. Cantor**, *3M Drug Delivery Systems Division, St. Paul, Minnesota*, Pressure-Sensitive Adhesives
- Gary J. Capone**, *Solutia, Inc., Decatur, Alabama*, Acrylic Fibers
- G. Carotenuto**, *Institute for the Composite Material Technology, National Research Council, Piazzale Tecchio, Napoli, Italy*, Nanocomposites, Metal-Filled
- James Cella**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- John C. Chadwick**, *Dutch Polymer Institute, Eindhoven University of Technology, The Netherlands*, Ziegler-Natta Catalysts
- Ling Chang**, *National Cheng Kung University, Tainan, Taiwan*, Tacticity in Vinyl Polymers
- Henri Chanzy**, *CNRS-CERMAV, Grenoble, France*, Cellulose
- Sung-Hsuen Chao**, *Dow Corning Europe S.A., Senefte, Belgium*, Antifoaming Agents
- Roger Chapman**, *Texon UK Limited, Leicester, United Kingdom*, Nonwoven Fabrics, Staple Fibers
- Richard P. Chartoff**, *University of Arizona, Tucson, Arizona*, Thermal Analysis of Polymers
- Ananda M. Chatterjee**, *Shell Development Company*, Butene Polymers
- M. Chatzichristidi**, *University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Graft Copolymers
- Mahesh Chaubal**, *Drugdel.com, Columbia, Maryland*, Controlled Release Technology
- K. K. Chawla**, *University of Alabama at Birmingham, Birmingham, Alabama*, Composite Foams
- Eugene Y.-X. Chen**, *Colorado State University, Fort Collins, Colorado*, Methylene Butyrolactone Polymers
- Si-Xue Cheng**, *Institute of Materials Research and Engineering, Singapore; National University of*

- Singapore, Singapore, Liquid Crystalline Polymers, Main-Chain
- Stephen Z. D. Cheng**, *The University of Akron, Akron, Ohio*, Semicrystalline Polymers
- Chorng-Shyan Chern**, *National Taiwan University of Science and Technology, Taipei, Taiwan*, Microemulsion Polymerization
- T. T. Peter Cheung**, *Phillips Petroleum Company, Bartlesville, Oklahoma*, Cyclopentadiene and Dicyclopentadiene
- Y. Wilson Cheung**, *Polyolefins R&D, The Dow Chemical Company, Freeport, Texas*, Ethylene Copolymers
- John R. Christoe**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Hoe H. Chuah**, *Shell Chemical Company, Houston, Texas*, Poly(trimethylene terephthalate)
- Tai-Shung Chung**, *Institute of Materials Research and Engineering, Singapore; National University of Singapore, Singapore*, Liquid Crystalline Polymers, Main-Chain; Membranes for Energy Applications
- A. William M. Coaker**, *Consultant*, Calendaring
- Edward D. Cohen**, *Technical Consultant, Fountain Hills, Arizona*, Coating Methods, Survey
- Martin P. Cohen**, *The Goodyear Tire & Rubber Company, Akron, Ohio*, Rubber Chemicals
- Brian Condon**, *U.S. Department of Agriculture, ARS, New Orleans, Louisiana*, Cotton
- Robert P. Conger**, *Consultant*, Flooring Materials
- Kay Cooksey**, *Clemson University Clemson, South Carolina, East Lansing, Michigan*, Oxygen Scavenging Systems
- Anthony R. Cooper**, *Lockheed Martin Space Systems, Los Altos, California*, Molecular Weight Determination
- Michelle L. Coote**, *Australian National University, Canberra ACT, Australia*, Computational Quantum Chemistry for Free-Radical Polymerization; Copolymerization
- Cajetan F. Cordeiro**, *Air Products and Chemicals, Inc., Vinyl Acetate Polymers*
- Katrina Cornish**, *United States Department of Agriculture, Agricultural Research Service, Western Regional Research Center, Albany, California*, Rubber, Guayule
- Bruno Cortese**, *Micro Flow Chemistry/Chemical Reaction Engineering Groups, Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles
- John M.G. Cowie**, *Heriot-Watt University, Edinburgh, United Kingdom*, Miscibility
- Henri Cramail**, *Université de Bordeaux; CNRS, Laboratoire de Chimie des Polymères Organiques, Pessac Cedex, France*, Single-Site Catalysts
- Bill M. Culbertson**, *Ashland Chemical Co.; The Ohio State University, Columbus, Ohio*, Dental Applications; Aminimide Polymers
- Mark D. Dadmun**, *University of Tennessee, Knoxville, Tennessee*, Neutron Scattering
- Larry R. Dalton**, *University of Washington, Seattle, Washington*, Electrooptical Applications
- Alberto D'Amore**, *The Second University of Naples—SUN, Aversa, Italy*, Composite Materials
- Daniel Ayuk Mbi Egbe**, *Linz Institute for Organic Solar Cells (LIOS), Johannes Kepler University Linz, Linz, Austria*, Solar Cells
- Thierry Darmanin**, *Laboratoire de Physique de la Matière Condensée, Université de Nice—Sophia Antipolis, Nice, France*, Superhydrophobic Polymers
- Leonard H. Davis**, *Cytec Industries, Stamford, Connecticut*, UV Stabilizers
- Thomas P. Davis**, *The University of New South Wales, Sydney, New South Wales, Australia*, Radical Polymerization; Copolymerization
- John V. Dawkins**, *Loughborough University, Loughborough, United Kingdom*, Chromatography, Size Exclusion
- Mart H. J. M. de Croon**, *Micro Flow Chemistry/Chemical Reaction Engineering Groups, Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles
- D. E. Demco**, *Institut für Technische Chemie und Makromolekulare Chemie, Rheinisch-Westfälische Technische Hochschule, Worringerweg, Aachen, Germany*, Nuclear Magnetic Resonance
- Mehmet Demirors**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, Michigan*, Styrene–Butadiene Copolymers
- Stacy A. Denney**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc., Waynesboro, Virginia*, Fibers, Elastomeric
- Ron J. Denning**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Prashant Deshmukh**, *University of Connecticut, Storrs, Connecticut*, Liquid Crystalline Block Copolymers
- Joseph M. DeSimone**, *University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, Chapel Hill, North Carolina*, Critical Phase Polymerization
- Martin Dexter**, *Ciba Specialty Chemicals, Tarrytown, New York*, Antioxidants
- Pradeep K. Dhal**, *GelTex Pharmaceuticals, Inc., A Genzyme General Business, Waltham, Massachusetts*, Polymeric Drugs
- Sushil N. Dhoot**, *University of Texas at Austin, Austin, Texas*, Barrier Polymers
- Günter Dlubek**, *ITA Institute Köthen/Halle, Lieskau (bei Halle/S.), Germany*, Positron Annihilation Spectroscopy
- Phillip T. Dodge**, *Lyondell Chemical Company's Cincinnati Technology Center, Cincinnati, Ohio*, Rotational Molding
- Thomas J. Dolce**, *Celanese Engineering Resins Company, Acetal Resins*
- Abraham J. Domb**, *The Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Jerusalem, Israel*, Polyanhydrides; Controlled Release Technology; Biodegradable Polymers, Medical Applications
- E. Drent**, *Shell International Chemicals B.V., Amsterdam, Netherlands*, Polyketones
- M. P. Dreyfuss**, *Michigan Molecular Institute, Oxetane Polymers*
- P. Dreyfuss**, *Michigan Molecular Institute, Oxetane Polymers*
- P. Driva**, *University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Graft Copolymers
- Jianzhong Du**, *Tongji University, Shanghai, People's Republic of China*, Micelles

- Etienne Duguet**, *Institut de Chimie de la Matière Condensée de Bordeaux, CNRS & Université des Sciences et Technologies de Bordeaux, Pessac, France, Intercalation Polymerization*
- Manfred Dunky**, *Dynea Austria GmbH, Krems an der Donau, Austria, Melamine-Formaldehyde Resins*
- Kenneth L. Dunlap**, *Bayer Corporation, New Martinsville, West Virginia, Phosgene*
- William R. Dunnivant**, *Ashland Chemical Company, Foundry Resins*
- Anthony J. East**, *Consultant, Madison, New Jersey, Polyesters, Thermoplastic*
- Sina Ebnesajjad**, *FluoroConsultants Group, LLC, Vinyl Fluoride Polymers (PVF)*
- Anja Eckelt**, *University of Mainz—Institute of Physical Chemistry, Mainz, Germany, Solubility of Polymers*
- John Eckelt**, *University of Mainz—Institute of Physical Chemistry, Mainz, Germany; WEE-Solve GmbH, Mainz, Germany, Solubility of Polymers*
- Kevin J. Edgar**, *Eastman Chemical Company, Kingsport, Tennessee, Cellulose Esters, Organic*
- Christoph Edlinger**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Basel, Basel, Switzerland, Nanoreactors*
- Tirtsa Ehrenfroind**, *The Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Jerusalem, Israel, Biodegradable Polymers, Medical Applications*
- G. W. Ehrenstein**, *University of Erlangen – Nuremberg, Erlangen, Germany, Fractography*
- B. E. Eichinger**, *Accelrys, Inc., San Diego, California, Molecular Modeling*
- M. Jamal El-Hibri**, *BP Amoco Polymers, Inc., Alpharetta, Georgia, Polysulfones*
- Royce Ennis**, *Consultant, Silsbee, Texas, Ethylene Polymers, Chlorosulfonated*
- Paquita E. Erazo-Majewicz**, *Hercules Inc., Wilmington, Delaware, Cellulose Ethers*
- B. Erman**, *Department of Chemical and Biological Engineering, Koc University, Sariyer, Istanbul, Turkey, Networks, Elastomeric*
- David J. Evans**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia, Wool*
- Aviva Ezra**, *The Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Jerusalem, Israel, Biodegradable Polymers, Medical Applications*
- Raymond S. Farinato**, *Cytec Industries Inc., Stamford, Connecticut, Acrylamide Polymers*
- Jeffrey J. Fedderly**, *U.S. Naval Surface Warfare Center, West Bethesda, Maryland, Acoustic Properties*
- Ozana Fischer-Onaca**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Basel, Basel, Switzerland, Nanoreactors*
- Cynthia Flanigan**, *Materials & Processes R&A, Ford Motor Company, Dearborn, Michigan, Automotive Plastics and Composites*
- A. Flores**, *Instituto de Estructura de la Materia, CSIC, Madrid, Spain, Hardness*
- G. Floudas**, *University of Ioannina, Ioannina, Greece; Foundation for Research and Technology-Hellas, Institute of Electronic Structure and Laser, Heraklion, Crete, Greece, Amorphous Polymers*
- Stephan Förster**, *University of Hamburg, Hamburg, Germany, Vesicles*
- Ivan Fortelný**, *Institute of Macromolecular Chemistry, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Prague, Czech Republic, Polymer Blends*
- Frank Fowler**, *SUNY, Stony Brook, New York, Diacetylene and Triacetylene Polymers*
- Benny D. Freeman**, *University of Texas at Austin, Austin, Texas, Barrier Polymers*
- Alfred D. French**, *Southern Regional Research Center, USDA, Cellulose*
- Ulrich Frenzel**, *LANXESS Elastomers B.V., Geleen, The Netherlands, Metathesis Polymerization*
- Barbara J. Furches**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, Michigan, Test Methods*
- S. K. Gaggar**, *GE Plastics, Technology Center, Washington, West Virginia, Acrylonitrile-Butadiene-Styrene Polymers*
- Steven D. Gagnon**, *BASF Corporation, Propylene Oxide and Higher 1,2-Epoxy Polymers*
- I. Yu. Galaev**, *DSM Food Specialties B.V., Delft, The Netherlands, Smart Polymers, Biotechnological and Biomedical Applications*
- Nicola Galaffu**, *University of Southampton, Southampton, United Kingdom, Polymer-Supported Reagents*
- Vassilios Galiatsatos**, *Equistar Chemicals, L.P., Cincinnati, Ohio, Optical Properties*
- J. Gallini**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, Inc., Richmond, Virginia, Polyamides, Aromatic*
- Erik Grann Gammelgaard**, *FiberVisions, Varde, Denmark, Olefin Fibers*
- Subhash V. Gangal**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Co., Inc., Wilmington, Delaware, Perfluorinated Polymers, Tetrafluoroethylene-Ethylene Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Tetrafluoroethylene-Perfluorodioxole Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Tetrafluoroethylene-Perfluorovinyl Ether Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Perfluorinated Ethylene-Propylene Copolymers; Perfluorinated Polymers, Polytetrafluoroethylene*
- Guang Hui Gao**, *Department of Polymer Science and Engineering, Theranostic Macromolecules Research Center, Sungkyunkwan University, Suwon, Korea, Block Copolymer Hydrogels*
- Fabio Garbassi**, *EniChem SpA Research Center, Novara, Italy, Engineering Thermoplastics, Overview*
- Fátima García**, *Universidad Complutense de Madrid, Madrid, Spain, Supramolecular Polymers*
- Dhiraj K. Garg**, *ICUBE, University of Strasbourg, Strasbourg, France, Microdevices*
- Jerry D. Gargulak**, *LignoTech USA, Inc., Rothchild, Wisconsin, Lignin*
- A. N. Gent**, *The University of Akron, Akron, Ohio, Adhesion*
- Francesco Giacalone**, *Università degli Studi di Palermo, Palermo, Italy, Fullerene Polymers*
- Gregory Gillette**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York, Silicones*
- Ray Giornelli**, *Shell Chemical Company, Furniture*
- Gary M. Gladysz**, *Los Alamos National Laboratory, Los Alamos, New Mexico, Composite Foams*
- Wolfgang Glasser**, *Virginia Polytechnic Institute and State University, Cellulose*
- Furman E. Glenn**, *DuPont Dow Elastomers L.L.C., Louisville, Kentucky, Chloroprene Polymers*

- Patricia L. Golas**, *Carnegie Mellon University, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania*, Atom Transfer Radical Polymerization
- Xiangjun Gong**, *The Chinese University of Hong Kong, Shatin, New Territories, Hong Kong, People's Republic of China*, Laser Light Scattering
- Jeffrey Gotro**, *Ablestik Laboratories, Rancho Dominguez, California*, Thermosets
- Ravikumar R. Gowda**, *Colorado State University, Fort Collins, Colorado*, Methylene Butyrolactone Polymers
- Michael C. Grady**, *DuPont Company, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania*, Latex Technology
- John A. Grates**, *Celanese Engineering Resins Company, Acetal Resins*
- Vera-Maria Graubner**, *Technische Universität München, Garching, Germany*, Telechelic Polymers
- Charles A. Gray**, *Cabot Corporation, Billerica, Massachusetts*, Carbon Black
- Derek Gray**, *Pulp and Paper Research Centre, McGill University, Canada*, Cellulose
- Robert L. Gray**, *Cytec Industries, Stamford, Connecticut*, UV Stabilizers
- John E. Greenleaf**, *Lafayette College, Easton, Pennsylvania*, Ion-Exchange Technology
- Gordon K. Gregory**, *S. C. Johnson & Son, Inc., Floor Polishes*
- Werner Grootaert**, *Dyneon, 3M Company, Oakdale, Minnesota*, Fluorocarbon Elastomers
- Martin J. Guest**, *Polyolefins R&D, The Dow Chemical Company, Freeport, Texas*, Ethylene Copolymers
- Frédéric Guittard**, *Laboratoire de Physique de la Matière Condensée, Université de Nice-Sophia Antipolis, Nice, France*, Superhydrophobic Polymers
- Dirk M. Guldi**, *University of Notre Dame, Notre Dame, Indiana*, Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly
- Serap Günes**, *Yildiz Technical University, Istanbul, Turkey*, Solar Cells
- Malancha Gupta**, *Mork Family Department of Chemical Engineering and Materials Science, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, California*, Chemical Vapor Deposition of Polymer Films
- J. T. Guthrie**, *University of Leeds, United Kingdom*, Dyes, Macromolecular
- Edgar B. Guttoff**, *Consulting Chemical Engineer, Brookline, Massachusetts*, Coating Methods, Survey
- Charles M. Guttman**, *Polymers Division, National Institute of Standards and Technology (NIST), Gaithersburg, Maryland*, Mass Spectrometry
- Kimberly A. Guzan**, *Youngstown State University, Youngstown, Ohio*, Nonlinear Optical Properties
- Erwin Hack**, *Center for Nondestructive Testing, EMPA, Swiss Federal Laboratories for Materials Testing and Research, Dübendorf, Switzerland*, Nondestructive Testing
- Narges Hadjesfandiari**, *Centre for Blood Research; Department of Chemistry, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada*, Polymer Brushes
- N. Hadjichristidis**, *University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Graft Copolymers
- Stephen F. Hahn**, *The Dow Chemical Company*, Hydrogenation
- G. R. Hamed**, *The University of Akron, Akron, Ohio*, Adhesion
- I. W. Hamley**, *University of Leeds, Leeds, United Kingdom*, Block Copolymers
- Akira Harada**, *Osaka University, Osaka, Japan*, Polyrotaxanes
- Takunori Harada**, *Department of Chemical Engineering, Fukuoka University, Fukuoka, Japan*, Solid State Circular Dichroism Spectroscopy
- William C. Harbison**, *Swedlow, Inc.*, Casting
- J. S. Harrison**, *NASA Langley Research Center, Hampton, Virginia*, Piezoelectric Polymers
- Bradley R. Hart**, *University of California, Irvine, California*, Molecularly Imprinted Polymers
- G. Hartwig**, *Kernforschungszentrum, Karlsruhe*, Cryogenic Properties
- Akihito Hashidzume**, *Osaka University, Osaka, Japan*, Polyrotaxanes
- Kazuyuki Hattori**, *Kitami Institute of Technology, Japan*, Cellulose
- Rhomie L. Heck III**, *Uniroyal Chemical Group*, Blowing Agents
- Patricia A. Heiden**, *Michigan Technological University, Houghton, Michigan*, Wood Composites
- Scott Heitzman**, *Sun Chemical Corporation, Cincinnati, Ohio*, Colorants; Coloring Processes
- Carin A. Helfer**, *The University of Akron, Akron, Ohio*, Conformation and Configuration
- Steven Henning**, *Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company, Akron, Ohio*, Butadiene Polymers
- Volker Hessel**, *Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Microdevices; Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles
- Bertrand Heurtefeu**, *Université de Bordeaux; CNRS, Laboratoire de Chimie des Polymères Organiques, Pessac Cedex, France*, Single-Site Catalysts
- H. Heuts**, *Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Emulsion Polymerization
- Tomoya Higashihara**, *Tokyo Institute of Technology, Tokyo, Japan*, Polycondensation
- Hideyuki Higashimura**, *Sumitomo Chemical Company Ltd., Tsukuba, Japan*, Oxidative Polymerization
- Alain Hilberer**, *Dow Corning Europe S.A., Seneffe, Belgium*, Antifoaming Agents
- David J. T. Hill**, *The University of Queensland, Brisbane, Queensland, Australia*, Radiation Chemistry of Polymers
- H. Wayne Hill Jr.**, *Hill Associates*, Poly(arylene sulfide)s
- W. D. Hinsberg**, *Columbia Hill Technical Consulting, Fremont, California*, Lithographic Resists
- Andreas Hirsch**, *Universität Erlangen-Nürnberg, Henkestraße, Erlangen, Germany*, Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly
- Drahomira Hlavatá**, *Institute of Macromolecular Chemistry, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Prague, Czech Republic*, Polymer Blends
- David Hoagland**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts*, Polyelectrolytes
- Yannick Hoarau**, *ICUBE, University of Strasbourg, Strasbourg, France*, Microdevices
- Jamie K. Hobbs**, *University of Bristol, Bristol, United Kingdom*, Crystallization Kinetics
- Geoffrey Holden**, *Holden Polymer Consulting, Incorporated, Prescott, Arizona*, Thermoplastic Elastomers

- S. Randall Holmes-Farley**, *GelTex Pharmaceuticals, Inc., A Genzyme General Business, Waltham, Massachusetts*, Polymeric Drugs
- Zdeněk Horák**, *Institute of Macromolecular Chemistry, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Prague, Czech Republic*, Polymer Blends
- B. A. Howell**, *Central Michigan University*, Vinylidene Chloride Polymers (PVDC)
- Shaw Ling Hsu**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts*, Vibrational Spectroscopy
- Sun-Yi Huang**, *Cytec Industries Inc., Stamford, Connecticut*, Acrylamide Polymers
- Samuel M. Hudson**, *North Carolina State University, Raleigh, North Carolina*, Chitin and Chitosan
- John L. Hull**, *Hull Corporation*, Compression and Transfer Molding
- Anders Hult**, *Royal Institute of Technology, Stockholm, Sweden*, Hyperbranched Polymers
- J. S. Humphrey**, *Atofina Chemicals Inc., King of Prussia, Pennsylvania*, Vinylidene Fluoride Polymers (PVDF)
- Mikey G. Huson**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- H. Iatrou**, *University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Graft Copolymers
- Daniel D. Imeokparia**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, Michigan*, Cellular Materials
- Emanuel Ionescu**, *Institut für Materialwissenschaft, Technische Universität Darmstadt, Darmstadt, Germany*, Silicon-Containing Pre ceramic Polymers
- Jennifer Irvin**, *Naval Air Warfare Center Weapons Division (NAWCWD), China Lake, California*, Electrically Active Polymers
- Kazuhiko Ishihara**, *The University of Tokyo, Tokyo, Japan*, Phospholipid Polymers
- Michael Jaffe**, *The State University of New Jersey, New Jersey*, Liquid Crystalline Polymers, Main-Chain
- Dennis J. Jakiela**, *Cytec Industries, Stamford, Connecticut*, UV Stabilizers
- Marc L. Janssens**, *Southwest Research Institute, San Antonio, Texas*, Flammability
- Jacek Jarzynski**, *Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia*, Acoustic Properties
- David W. Jenkins**, *North Carolina State University, Raleigh, North Carolina*, Chitin and Chitosan
- R. Jérôme**, *University of Liège, Sart-Tilman, Liège, Belgium*, Ring Opening Polymerization
- Gunnar Jeschke**, *Max Planck Institute for Polymer Research, Mainz, Germany*, Electron Spin Resonance
- Julie L. P. Jessop**, *University of Iowa, Iowa City, Iowa*, Photopolymerization, Free Radical
- Hao Jiang**, *GDIT, Dayton, Ohio*, Rigid-Rod Polymers
- Charles A. Jones III**, *University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, Chapel Hill, North Carolina*, Critical Phase Polymerization
- Leslie N. Jones**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Toyaji Kakuchi**, *Hokkaido University, Sapporo, Japan*, Chiral Polymers
- Mantana Kanchanasopa**, *The Pennsylvania State University, University Park, Pennsylvania*, Crystallinity Determination
- E.T. Kang**, *National University of Singapore, Singapore*, Surface Modification of Polymers
- David L. Kaplan**, *Tufts University, Medford, Massachusetts*, Silk
- Rajeswari M. Kasi**, *University of Connecticut, Storrs, Connecticut; Institute of Material Science, University of Connecticut, Storrs, Connecticut*, Liquid Crystalline Block Copolymers; Protein-Polymer Conjugates
- Gabor Kaszas**, *Rubber Division, Bayer Inc., Sarnia, Ontario, Canada*, Carbocationic Polymerization
- Hans-Henning Kausch**, *École Polytechnique Fédérale de Lausanne, Lausanne, Switzerland*, Fracture
- Steffen Kelch**, *Deutsches Wolforschungsinstitut, Aachen, Germany*, Shape-Memory Polymers
- Maartje F. Kemmere**, *Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Ultrasound-Induced Radical Polymerization
- Rachid Kerboua**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- Ronald E. Kerby**, *The Ohio State University, Columbus, Ohio*, Dental Applications
- Michael Kerns**, *Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company, Akron, Ohio*, Butadiene Polymers
- Jos T. F. Keurentjes**, *Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Ultrasound-Induced Radical Polymerization
- K. Khait**, *Northwestern University, Evanston, Illinois*, Recycling, Plastics
- Ikram Ullah Khan**, *Group for the Intensification and Integration of Polymer Processes (G2IP), Institute of Chemistry and Processes for Energy Environment and Health (ICPEES), Ecole de Chimie Polymères et Matériaux (ECPM), University of Strasbourg, France; Laboratory of Design and Application of Bioactive Molecules (CAMB), Faculty of Pharmacy, University of Strasbourg, France; College of Pharmacy, Government College University, Faisalabad, Pakistan*, Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles
- Rajesh Khare**, *Accelrys, Inc., San Diego, California*, Molecular Modeling
- Kristi L. Kiick**, *University of Delaware, Newark, Delaware*, Genetic Methods of Polymer Synthesis
- Joon-Seop Kim**, *Chosun University, Gwangju, Korea*, Ionomers
- Roswell E. King III**, *Ciba Specialty Chemicals, Tarrytown, New York*, Antioxidants
- Jayachandran N. Kizhakkedathu**, *Centre for Blood Research; Department of Chemistry; Department of Pathology & Laboratory Medicine, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada*, Polymer Brushes
- William Klingensmith**, *Akron Rubber Consulting, Akron, Ohio*, Rubber Compounding
- Harm-Anton Klok**, *Ecole Polytechnique Fédérale de Lausanne, Lausanne, Switzerland*, Polypeptide Synthesis, Ring Opening Polymerization
- Philipp Klokke**, *Institute of Polymer Engineering, University of Paderborn, Paderborn, Germany*, Compounding
- Bert Klumperman**, *Eindhoven University, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Living Radical Polymerization
- Nancy Kneib-Cordonier**, *The University of Minnesota, Minneapolis, Minnesota*, Polypeptide Synthesis, Solid-Phase Method

- Shiro Kobayashi**, *R&D Center for Nanomaterials and Devices, Kyoto Institute of Technology, Kyoto, Japan; Kyoto University, Kyoto, Japan, Oxidative Polymerization; Enzymatic Polymerization*
- Jeffrey T. Koberstein**, *Columbia University, New York, New York, Surface Properties*
- Kotaro Koike**, *Keio Photonics Research Institute, Keio University, Kawasaki, Japan; Polymer Research Institute, Polytechnic Institute of New York University, Brooklyn, New York, Optical Fibers*
- Yasuhiro Koike**, *Keio Photonics Research Institute, Keio University, Kawasaki, Japan, Optical Fibers*
- Chie Kojima**, *Nanoscience and Nanotechnology Research Center, Osaka Prefecture University, Osaka, Japan, Dendrimers*
- Jan Kolařík**, *Institute of Macromolecular Chemistry, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Prague, Czech Republic, Polymer Blends*
- William Koonce**, *Polyurethanes R&D, The Dow Chemical Company, Polyurethanes*
- Peter W. Kopf**, *TIAX, LLC, Cambridge, Massachusetts, Phenolic Resins*
- William J. Koros**, *Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia, Transport Properties*
- James Kostka**, *General Electric Company, East Cleveland, Ohio, Light-Emitting Diodes*
- Nicholas A. Kotov**, *University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan, Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly*
- Cezary A. Kozłowski**, *Institute of Chemistry, Environment Protection and Biotechnology, Jan Długosz University of Czeszochowa, Czeszochowa, Poland, Cyclodextrin Polymers, Applications*
- Michal Y. Krasko**, *The Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Jerusalem, Israel, Biodegradable Polymers, Medical Applications*
- Inan Kucukkaya**, *University of British Columbia Okanagan, Kelowna, Canada, Metal-Containing Polymers*
- Sarkyt E. Kudaibergenov**, *Institute of Polymer Materials and Technology, Almaty, Kazakhstan, Polyampholytes*
- William C. Kuhlke**, *Shell Chemical Company, Furniture*
- Martijn W. A. Kuijpers**, *Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands, Ultrasound-Induced Radical Polymerization*
- D. M. Kulich**, *GE Plastics, Technology Center, Washington, West Virginia, Acrylonitrile-Butadiene-Styrene Polymers*
- Anna Kultys**, *Maria Curie-Skłodowska University, Lublin, Poland, Sulfur-Containing Polymers*
- Challa V. Kumar**, *University of Connecticut, Protein-Polymer Conjugates*
- Majeti N. V. Ravi Kumar**, *University of Saarland, Saarbrücken, Germany, Controlled Release Technology*
- Neeraj Kumar**, *The Hebrew University of Jerusalem, Jerusalem, Israel; University of Tennessee Health Science Center, Memphis, Tennessee, Controlled Release Technology; Biodegradable Polymers, Medical Applications; Putanhydrides*
- Yakov Kutsovsky**, *Cabot Corporation, Billerica, Massachusetts, Carbon Black*
- Jacky W. Y. Lam**, *The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology, Kowloon, Hong Kong, Acetylenic Polymers, Substituted*
- Peter R. Lamb**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia, Wool*
- Khalid Lamnawar**, *Université de Lyon, Lyon, France; Laboratoire de Mécanique des Contacts et des Structures, INSA-Lyon, Villeurbanne, France, Coextrusion of Multilayer Structures, Interfacial Phenomena*
- Heimo J. Langer**, *Ashland Chemical Company, Foundry Resins*
- Stuart E. Lebo Jr.**, *LignoTech USA, Inc., Rothchild, Wisconsin, Lignin*
- Ph. Lecomte**, *University of Liège, Sart-Tilman, Liège, Belgium, Ring Opening Polymerization*
- Christine M. Lee**, *Unilever Research US, Edgewater, New Jersey, Langmuir-Blodgett Films*
- Doo Sung Lee**, *Department of Polymer Science and Engineering, Theranostic Macromolecules Research Center, Sungkyunkwan University, Suwon, Korea, Block Copolymer Hydrogels*
- Ellen Lee**, *Materials & Processes R&A, Ford Motor Company, Dearborn, Michigan, Automotive Plastics and Composites*
- Gilbert Lee**, *U.S. Naval Surface Warfare Center, West Bethesda, Maryland, Acoustic Properties*
- Jean-Marc Lefebvre**, *Université Lille 1, Science and Technology, Unité Matériaux et Transformations, Villeneuve d'Ascq, France, Nanocomposites, Polymer-Clay*
- D. G. LeGrand**, *General Electric Company, Annealing*
- Reko Leino**, *Laboratory of Organic Chemistry, Åbo Akademi University, Åbo, Finland, Single-Site Catalysts*
- John Leman**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York, Silicones*
- Andreas Lendlein**, *Deutsches Wollforschungsinstitut, Aachen, Germany, Shape-Memory Polymers*
- Alan J. Lesser**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts, Fatigue Behavior of Polymers*
- Sergei V. Levchik**, *Israel Chemical Ltd. - Industrial Products, Tel Aviv, Israel, Phosphorus-Containing Polymers and Oligomers*
- Larry Lewis**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York, Silicones*
- Christopher Y. Li**, *Drexel University, Philadelphia, Pennsylvania, Semicrystalline Polymers*
- Wen Li**, *Shanghai University, Shanghai, People's Republic of China, Dendronized Polymers, Stimuli-Responsive*
- Yi Li**, *Department of Polymer Science and Engineering, Theranostic Macromolecules Research Center, Sungkyunkwan University, Suwon, Korea, Block Copolymer Hydrogels*
- Richard Lieberman**, *Basell R&D Center, Elkton, Maryland, Propylene Polymers*
- David W. Lipp**, *Cytec Industries Inc., Stamford, Connecticut, Acrylamide Polymers*
- Jianzhao Liu**, *The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology, Kowloon, Hong Kong, Acetylenic Polymers, Substituted*
- Robert B. Login**, *Sybron Chemicals Inc., N-Vinylamide Polymers*

- D. Lohse**, *ExxonMobil Research and Engineering Company, Annandale, New Jersey*, Graft Copolymers
- Caterina LoPresti**, *Department of Engineering Materials, University of Sheffield, Sheffield, United Kingdom; The Kroto Research Institute, Sheffield, United Kingdom*, Bioinspired Polymers
- Detlef Löttsch**, *Fraunhofer-Institut für Angewandte Polymerforschung, Berlin-Adlershof, Germany*, Thermochromic Polymers
- Bee Ting Low**, *National University of Singapore, Singapore*, Membranes for Energy Applications
- Andrew B. Lowe**, *Department of Chemistry and Biochemistry, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Mississippi*, Water-Soluble Polymers
- V. Lowry**, *GE Plastics, Technology Center, Washington, West Virginia*, Acrylonitrile-Butadiene-Styrene Polymers
- Hang Lu**, *Tongji University, Shanghai, People's Republic of China*, Micelles
- Mohammad Luqman**, *King Saud University, Riyadh, Saudi Arabia*, Ionomers
- Donald J. Lyman**, *University of Utah, Salt Lake City, Utah*, Biomedical Materials
- Richard E. Lyon**, *W. J. Hughes Technical Center, Federal Aviation Administration, Atlantic City Airport, New Jersey*, Flammability
- Peter X. Ma**, *University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan*, Tissue Engineering
- Abderrahim Maazouz**, *Université de Lyon, Lyon, France; Ingénierie des Matériaux Polymères, INSA Lyon, Villeurbanne, France; Hassan II Academy of Science and Technology, Rabat, Morocco*, Coextrusion of Multilayer Structures, Interfacial Phenomena
- W. A. MacDonald**, *DuPont Teijin Films UK Limited, Wilton, Middlesbrough, United Kingdom*, Polyester Films
- Fabricio Machado**, *Universidade de Brasília, Brasília, Brazil*, Suspension Polymerization Processes
- William C. Madden**, *Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia*, Transport Properties
- S. M. Magami**, *University of Leeds, United Kingdom*, Dyes, Macromolecular
- Duane Mahan**, *Lyondell Chemical Company's Cincinnati Technology Center, Cincinnati, Ohio*, Rotational Molding
- Khaled Mahmud**, *Cabot Corporation, Billerica, Massachusetts*, Carbon Black
- Thomas G. Majewicz**, *Hercules Inc., Wilmington, Delaware*, Cellulose Ethers
- Arif A. Mamedov**, *University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan; Nomadics, Inc., Stillwater, Oklahoma*, Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly
- Andrea S. Mandel**, *Andrea S. Mandel Associates, Princeton Junction, New Jersey*, Bottle Design, Plastic
- W. Harry Mandeville**, *GelTex Pharmaceuticals, Inc., A Genzyme General Business, Waltham, Massachusetts*, Polymeric Drugs
- Ian Manners**, *University of Toronto, Toronto, Ontario*, Inorganic Polymers
- Charalampos Mantelis**, *École Polytechnique Fédérale de Lausanne, Lausanne, Switzerland*, Supercritical Fluids
- Norma Maraschin**, *Equistar Chemicals, LP, Cincinnati, Ohio*, Ethylene Polymers, LDPE
- J. E. Mark**, *Department of Chemistry and the Polymer Research Center, University of Cincinnati, Cincinnati, Ohio*, Networks, Elastomeric; Elasticity, Rubber-like
- Maurice J. Marks**, *Dow Chemical, Freeport, Texas*, Epoxy Resins
- F. L. Marten**, *Air Products and Chemicals, Inc., Allentown, Pennsylvania*, Vinyl Alcohol Polymers
- Nazario Martín**, *Universidad Complutense, Madrid, Spain*, Fullerene Polymers
- James C. Masson**, *JCM Consulting, Mooresville, North Carolina*, Acrylic Fibers
- Kenneth N. Mathes**, *Consultant*, Electrical Properties
- Kozo Matsumoto**, *Kyoto University, Kyoto, Japan*, Polycarbosilanes
- Wayne L. Mattice**, *The University of Akron, Akron, Ohio*, Conformation and Configuration
- Hedi Mattoussi**, *Florida State University, Tallahassee, Florida*, Nanocrystals Surface Functionalization
- Laurent M. Matuana**, *Michigan State University, East Lansing, Michigan*, Wood Composites
- Krzysztof Matyjaszewski**, *Carnegie Mellon University, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania*, Atom Transfer Radical Polymerization; Copolymerization; Radical Polymerization
- Rennie May**, *ICI Americas, Inc.*, Polyetheretherketones
- Anne M. Mayes**, *Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, Massachusetts*, Filtration Membranes
- Jimmy W. Mays**, *University of Tennessee, Knoxville, Tennessee; Oak Ridge National Laboratory, Oak Ridge, Tennessee*, Ionic Liquids, Polymerization in
- Charles L. McCormick**, *Department of Polymer Science, University of Southern Mississippi, Hattiesburg, Mississippi*, Water-Soluble Polymers
- Max McDaniel**, *Chevron Phillips Chemical Company, Kingwood, Texas*, Ethylene Polymers, HDPE
- Matthew McGreer**, *Atlas Material Testing Technology, LLC, Chicago, Illinois*, Weathering of Polymeric Materials
- Gregory B. McKenna**, *Texas Tech University, Lubbock, Texas*, Viscoelasticity; Yield and Cracking in Polymers
- Neil B. McKeown**, *Cardiff University, Cardiff, United Kingdom*, Polymers of Intrinsic Microporosity
- Donal McNally**, *Ticona, Summit, New Jersey*, Ethylene-Norbornene Copolymers
- Timothy J. McNally**, *LignoTech USA, Inc., Rothchild, Wisconsin*, Lignin
- Paul Meakin**, *Idaho National Laboratory, Idaho Falls, Idaho*, Fractals
- Elizabeth Meehan**, *Polymer Laboratories Limited, Shropshire, United Kingdom*, Chromatography, Size Exclusion
- Kevin P. Menard**, *University of North Texas, Materials Science Department, Denton, Texas*, Dynamic Mechanical Analysis
- Vinod P. Menon**, *3M Skin and Wound Care Division, St. Paul, Minnesota*, Pressure-Sensitive Adhesives
- Gabriela Mera**, *Institut für Materialwissenschaft, Technische Universität Darmstadt, Darmstadt, Germany*, Silicon-Containing Preceramic Polymers

- Keith A. Mesch**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Cincinnati, Ohio*, Heat Stabilizers
- Thierry Meyer**, *École Polytechnique Fédérale de Lausanne, Lausanne, Switzerland*, Supercritical Fluids
- Goerg H. Michler**, *Martin-Luther-Universität, Halle-Wittenberg, Merseburg, Germany*, Micromechanical Properties
- A. Milella**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Bari, Bari, Italy*, Plasma Processing
- Keith R. Millington**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- Graeme Moad**, *CSIRO Molecular and Health Technologies, Clayton, Victoria, Australia*, Reversible Addition-Fragmentation Chain Transfer Polymerization
- Mónica Pérez**, *ICTP-CSIC*, Plasticizers
- Jeffrey S. Moore**, *University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, Urbana, Illinois*, Self-Healing Polymers
- Paul W. Morgan**, *Consultant*, Interfacial Polymerization
- Hiroshi Moriyama**, *Department of Chemistry, Toho University, Funabashi, Japan*, Solid State Circular Dichroism Spectroscopy
- Roger J. Mortimer**, *Department of Chemistry, Loughborough University, Loughborough, Leicestershire, United Kingdom*, Electrochromic Polymers
- Eldridge M. Mount III**, *EMMOUNT Technologies, Fairport, New York*, Films, Manufacture
- Laura A. Mueller**, *Carnegie Mellon University, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania*, Atom Transfer Radical Polymerization
- W. P. Mul**, *Shell International Chemicals B.V., Amsterdam, Netherlands*, Polyketones
- Daniel G. Mullen**, *The University of Minnesota, Minneapolis, Minnesota*, Polypeptide Synthesis, Solid-Phase Method
- Marcus Müller**, *Institut für Physik, Johannes Gutenberg Universität, Mainz, Germany*, Phase Transformation
- Liubov P. Myasnikova**, *Ioffe Physical Technical Institute of Russian Academy of Science, St. Petersburg, Russia*, Transitions and Relaxations
- Terry N. Myers**, *Atofina Chemicals, Inc., King of Prussia, Pennsylvania*, Initiators, Free-Radical
- K. Nagoshi**, *Kuraray Company, Ltd.*, Leatherlike Materials
- E. Bruce Nauman**, *Rensselaer Polytechnic Institute, Troy, New York*, Bulk and Solution Polymerizations Reactors; Flash Devolatilization
- Rodrigo Navarro**, *ICTP-CSIC*, Plasticizers
- Thomas X. Neenan**, *GelTex Pharmaceuticals, Inc., A Genzyme General Business, Waltham, Massachusetts*, Polymeric Drugs
- K.G. Neoh**, *National University of Singapore, Singapore*, Surface Modification of Polymers
- Jürg Neuenschwander**, *Center for Nondestructive Testing, EMPA, Swiss Federal Laboratories for Materials Testing and Research, Dübendorf, Switzerland*, Nondestructive Testing
- James A. Newell**, *Rowan University, Glassboro, New Jersey*, Carbon Fibers
- K. L. Ngai**, *Naval Research Laboratory, Washington, DC*, Amorphous Polymers
- L. Nicolais**, *Institute for the Composite Material Technology, National Research Council, Piazzale Tecchio, Napoli, Italy*, Nanocomposites, Metal-Filled
- Hiroyuki Nishide**, *Waseda University*, Magnetic Polymers
- Jacobus W. M. Noordermeer**, *DSM Elastomers, R&D, Geleen, the Netherlands*, Ethylene-Propylene Elastomers
- Oskar Nuyken**, *Wacker-Lehrstuhl für Makromolekulare Chemie, Technische Universität München, München, Germany; Technische Universität München, Garching, Germany*, Telechelic Polymers; Metathesis Polymerization
- George Odian**, *The College of Staten Island, The City University of New York*, Chain-Reaction Polymerization
- Fumio Ohama**, *Unitika Corporation Ltd., Japan*, Polyarylates
- Kunio Oka**, *Osaka Prefecture University, Osaka, Japan*, Polysilanes
- Tsutomu Ono**, *Department of Applied Chemistry, Graduate School of Natural Science and Technology, Okayama University, Okayama, Japan*, Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles
- Yoshitsugu Oono**, *University of Illinois, Urbana-Champaign*, Statistical Thermodynamics
- Z. Ounaies**, *Virginia Commonwealth University, Richmond, Virginia*, Piezoelectric Polymers
- Michael J. Owen**, *Dow Corning Corporation, Midland, Michigan*, Release Agents
- Skip Palenik**, *Microtrace, Elgin, Illinois*, Forensic Analysis
- Cornelia G. Palivan**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Basel, Basel, Switzerland*, Nanoreactors
- Robert J. Palmer**, *Du Pont de Nemours International S.A., Geneva, Switzerland*, Polyamides, Plastics
- Goutam Palui**, *Florida State University, Tallahassee, Florida*, Nanocrystals Surface Functionalization
- C. D. Papaspyrides**, *National Technical University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Solid-State Polymerization
- Dambarudhar Parida**, *ICPEES, University of Strasbourg, Strasbourg, France*, Microdevices
- Costas S. Patrickios**, *University of Cyprus, Nicosia, Cyprus*, Group-Transfer Polymerization
- Paul A. O'Connell**, *Texas Tech University, Lubbock, Texas*, Yield and Cracking in Polymers
- Svetlana Pavluchina**, *Stevens Institute of Technology, Hoboken, New Jersey*, Adsorption
- Warren J. Peascoe**, *Uniroyal Chemical Group*, Blowing Agents
- Richard A. Pethrick**, *University of Strathclyde, Glasgow, Scotland, United Kingdom*, Characterization of Polymers; Diffusion
- Francis P. Petrocchi**, *Air Products and Chemicals, Inc.*, Vinyl Acetate Polymers
- Ha Q. Pham**, *Dow Chemical, Freeport, Texas*, Epoxy Resins
- David G. Phillips**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology, Belmont, Victoria, Australia*, Wool
- George E. Pickering**, *Arthur D. Little, Inc.*, Toys

- Anthony P. Pierlot**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology*, Belmont, Victoria, Australia, Wool
- Jessica L. Pilfold**, *University of British Columbia Okanagan*, Kelowna, Canada, Metal-Containing Polymers
- Peter P. Pintauro**, *Case Western Reserve University*, Cleveland, Ohio, Polyphosphazenes
- José Carlos Pinto**, *Universidade Federal do Rio de Janeiro*, Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, Suspension Polymerization Processes
- Martina C. C. Pinto**, *Universidade Federal do Rio de Janeiro*, Rio de Janeiro, Brazil, Suspension Polymerization Processes
- Stergios Pispas**, *Theoretical and Physical Chemistry Institute, National Hellenic Research Foundation*, Athens, Greece, Living Polymers
- M. Pitsikalis**, *University of Athens*, Athens, Greece, Graft Copolymers
- D. J. Plazek**, *University of Pittsburgh*, Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, Amorphous Polymers
- John F. Plummer**, *Emerson & Cuming, Inc.*, Microspheres
- Riccardo Po**, *EniChem SpA Research Center*, Novara, Italy, Engineering Thermoplastics, Overview
- Thomas J. Podlas**, *Hercules Inc.*, Wilmington, Delaware, Cellulose Ethers
- J. C. Poler**, *University of North Carolina*, Charlotte, North Carolina, Atomic Force Microscopy
- Malcolm Polk**, *Georgia Institute of Technology*, Decatur, Georgia, High Performance Fibers
- Stefan Polowiński**, *Technical University of Łódź*, Łódź, Poland, Template Polymerization
- Maurizio Prato**, *Università di Trieste*, Piazzale Europa, Trieste, Italy, Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly
- Duane Priddy**, *The Dow Chemical Company*, Midland, Michigan, Styrene Polymers
- R. Bruce Prime**, *IBM/Prime Thermosets.com*, San Jose, California, Thermosets
- Judit E. Puskas**, *The University of Western Ontario*, London, Ontario, Canada, Carbocationic Polymerization
- R. Puthiyottil**, *NIT-Calicut*, Kerala, India, Dyes, Macromolecular
- Marek Pyda**, *University of Tennessee*, Knoxville, Tennessee; *Chemical Sciences Division of Oak Ridge National Laboratory*, Oak Ridge, Tennessee, Thermodynamic Properties of Polymers
- J. P. Queslel**, *Manufacture Michelin, CERL – GPA*, Clermont Ferrand Cedex, France, Elasticity, Rubber-like
- Roderic P. Quirk**, *The University of Akron*, Akron, Ohio, Anionic Polymerization
- Michael Rachita**, *Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company*, Akron, Ohio, Butadiene Polymers
- Suresh Rajaraman**, *GE Silicones*, Waterford, New York, Silicones
- Bruce A. Ramsay**, *Polyferm Canada*, R.R. #1, Harrow-smith, Ontario, Canada, Poly(3-hydroxyalkanoates)
- Juliana A. Ramsay**, *Queen's University*, Kingston, Ontario, Canada, Poly(3-hydroxyalkanoates)
- J. C. Randall**, *Steamboat Springs*, Colorado, Microstructure
- F. Raue**, *University of Erlangen – Nuremberg*, Erlangen, Germany, Fractography
- Chris Rauwendaal**, *Rauwendaal Extrusion Engineering, Inc.*, Los Altos Hills, California, Extrusion
- Paramita Ray**, *CSIR-Central Salt and Marine Chemicals Research Institute*, Bhavnagar, India, Cross-Linking
- Glen Reese**, *Kosa*, Charlotte, North Carolina, Polyesters, Fibers
- Helmut Reinecke**, *ICTP-CSIC*, Plasticizers
- Stéphanie Rey**, *Institut de Chimie de la Matière Condensée de Bordeaux*, CNRS & *Université des Sciences et Technologies de Bordeaux*, Pessac, France, Intercalation Polymerization
- Steve R. Reznick**, *Cabot Corporation*, Billerica, Massachusetts, Carbon Black
- Richard M. D'Sidocky**, *The Goodyear Tire & Rubber Company*, Akron, Ohio, Rubber Chemicals
- Douglas S. Richart**, *D.S. Richart Associates*, Reading, Pennsylvania, Coating Methods, Powder Technology
- Carson Riche**, *Mork Family Department of Chemical Engineering and Materials Science*, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, California, Chemical Vapor Deposition of Polymer Films
- Maria Rikkou-Kalourkoti**, *University of Cyprus*, Nicosia, Cyprus, Group-Transfer Polymerization
- John A. Rippon**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology*, Belmont, Victoria, Australia, Wool
- A. K. Rizos**, *University of Ioannina*, Ioannina, Greece; *Foundation for Research and Technology-Hellas*, Institute of Electronic Structure and Laser, Heraklion, Crete, Greece; *University of Crete*, Heraklion, Crete, Greece, Amorphous Polymers
- Ezio Rizzardo**, *CSIRO Molecular and Health Technologies*, Clayton, Victoria, Australia, Reversible Addition-Fragmentation Chain Transfer Polymerization
- Josephina Maria Merida Robles**, *Institut de Chimie de la Matière Condensée de Bordeaux*, CNRS & *Université des Sciences et Technologies de Bordeaux*, Pessac, France, Intercalation Polymerization
- Alison Rodger**, *University of Warwick*, Coventry, United Kingdom, Electronic Circular and Linear Dichroism
- Brendan Rodgers**, *ExxonMobil Chemical Company*, Baytown, Texas, Rubber Compounding
- Vincent M. Rotello**, *Department of Chemistry*, University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts, Molecular Self-Assembly
- Stephen M. Rowland**, *OrbusNeich Medical*, Ft. Lauderdale, Florida, Biomedical Materials
- Slawomir Rubinsztajn**, *GE Global Research Center*, Niskayuna, New York, Silicones
- George Rugman**, *BFGoodrich Co.*, Belting
- James Runt**, *The Pennsylvania State University*, University Park, Pennsylvania, Crystallinity Determination
- Gregory T. Russell**, *University of Canterbury*, Christchurch, New Zealand, Kinetics of Radical Polymerization
- Ian M. Russell**, *CSIRO Textile and Fibre Technology*, Belmont, Victoria, Australia, Wool

- Gregory C. Rutledge**, *Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, Massachusetts*, Electrospinning
- Ryosuke Sakai**, *Hokkaido University, Sapporo, Japan*, Chiral Polymers
- S. L. Sakellarides**, *BP Amoco Chemical Company, Naperville, Illinois*, Poly(ethylene naphthalate) (PEN)
- G. Sakellariou**, *University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Graft Copolymers
- Luis Sánchez**, *Universidad Complutense de Madrid, Madrid, Spain*, Supramolecular Polymers
- Britto S. Sandanaraj**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts*, Dendrimers, Molecular Recognition
- Jorge G. F. Santos Jr.**, *Universidade Federal do Rio de Janeiro, Rio de Janeiro, Brazil*, Suspension Polymerization Processes
- A. Sezai Sarac**, *Istanbul Technical University, Istanbul, Turkey*, Electropolymerization
- Niyazi Serdar Sariçiftçi**, *Linz Institute for Organic Solar Cells (LIOS), Johannes Kepler University Linz, Linz, Austria*, Solar Cells
- Hideo Sawada**, *Biodegradable Plastics Society, Tokyo, Japan*, Depolymerization
- Florian Schattenmann**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- D. A. Schiraldi**, *KoSa, Spartanburg, South Carolina*, Atomic Force Microscopy
- Shulamith Schlick**, *University of Detroit Mercy, Detroit, Michigan*, Electron Spin Resonance
- William W. Schloman Jr.**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Akron, Akron, Ohio*, Rubber, Guayule
- Claude J. Schmidle**, *Congoleum Corporation, Flooring Materials*
- Robert L. Schmitt**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Piscataway, New Jersey*, Ethylene Oxide Polymers
- Martin Schneider**, *Lanxess Deutschland GmbH, Dormagen, Germany*, Metathesis Polymerization
- Volker Schöppner**, *Institute of Polymer Engineering, University of Paderborn, Paderborn, Germany*, Compounding
- Laurier L. Schramm**, *Saskatchewan Research Council, Saskatoon, Saskatchewan, Canada*, Colloids
- R. R. Schrieke**, *Ballarat C.A.E., Victoria, Casein*
- John L. Schultz**, *E.I. Du Pont de Nemours, Wilmington, Delaware*, Structural Representation of Polymers; Nomenclature of Polymers
- Rolf Christian Schulz**, *University of Mainz, FRG*, Acrolein Polymers
- Alec B. Scranton**, *University of Iowa, Iowa City, Iowa*, Photopolymerization, Cationic
- Norma D. Searle**, *Consultant in Weathering of Materials*, Weathering of Polymeric Materials
- Arno Seeboth**, *Fraunhofer-Institut für Angewandte Polymerforschung, Berlin-Adlershof, Germany*, Thermochromic Polymers
- Scott Seidel**, *Mork Family Department of Chemical Engineering and Materials Science, University of Southern California, Los Angeles, California*, Chemical Vapor Deposition of Polymer Films
- Arup K. SenGupta**, *Lehigh University, Bethlehem, Pennsylvania*, Ion-Exchange Technology
- Michael L. Senysek**, *The Goodyear Tire and Rubber Co., Isporene Polymers*
- Mike Sepe**, *Michael P. Sepe, LLC, Sedona, Arizona*, Injection Molding
- Christophe A. Serra**, *Group for the Intensification and Integration of Polymer Processes (G2IP), Institute of Chemistry and Processes for Energy Environment and Health (ICPEES), Ecole de Chimie Polymères et Matériaux (ECPM), University of Strasbourg, France*, Microdevices; Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles
- Robert W. Seymour**, *Eastman Chemical Company, Kingsport, Tennessee*, Cyclohexanedimethanol Polyesters
- Timothy D. Shaffer**, *ExxonMobil, Baytown, Texas*, Butyl Rubber
- Kenneth J. Shea**, *University of California, Irvine, California*, Molecularly Imprinted Polymers
- Michael C. Shelton**, *Eastman Chemical Company, Kingsport, Tennessee*, Cellulose Esters, Inorganic
- C. S. Sheppard**, *Pennwalt Corporation, Azo Compounds*
- Yutaka Shirahama**, *Unitika America Corporation, Georgetown, Kentucky*, Polyarylates
- Antonín Sikora**, *Institute of Macromolecular Chemistry, Academy of Sciences of the Czech Republic, Prague, Czech Republic*, Polymer Blends
- Michael S. Silverstein**, *Technion, Israel Institute of Technology, Haifa, Israel*, PolyHIPEs
- D. H. Silvey**, *BFGoodrich Co., Belting*
- Sindee L. Simon**, *Texas Tech University, Lubbock, Texas*, Aging, Physical
- D. M. Simpson**, *Exxon Mobil Chemical Company, Baytown, Texas*, Ethylene Polymers, LLDPE
- Ram Prakash Singh**, *Indian Institute of Technology, Kharagpur, West Bengal, India*, Drag Reduction
- S. K. Sinha**, *National University of Singapore, Singapore*, Surface Mechanical Damage and Wear
- Vishal Sipani**, *University of Iowa, Iowa City, Iowa*, Photopolymerization, Cationic
- Anil K. Sircar**, *University of Dayton, Dayton, Ohio*, Thermal Analysis of Polymers
- Wanda Sliwa**, *Institute of Chemistry, Environment Protection and Biotechnology, Jan Dlugosz University of Czestochowa, Czestochowa, Poland*, Cyclodextrin Polymers, Applications
- Robert V. Slone**, *The Dow Chemical Company*, Methacrylic Ester Polymers; Acrylic Ester Polymers
- A. A. Smaardijk**, *Shell International Chemicals B.V., Amsterdam, Netherlands*, Polyketones
- Thomas W. Smith**, *Eastman Chemical Company, Kingsport, Tennessee*, Cyclohexanedimethanol Polyesters
- Ronald S. Smorada**, *Versacore Industrial Corporation, Kennett Square, Pennsylvania*, Nonwoven Fabrics, Spunbonded
- Joao B. P. Soares**, *University of Waterloo, Waterloo, Ontario, Canada*, Fractionation
- Ju-Myung Song**, *Korea Atomic Energy Research Institute, Jeollabuk-do, Korea*, Ionomers
- Mark F. Sonnenschein**, *Fellow, The Dow Chemical Company, Corporate Research and Development*, Polyurethanes
- Nancy R. Sottos**, *University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, Urbana, Illinois*, Self-Healing Polymers

- L. H. Sperling**, *Lehigh University, Bethlehem, Pennsylvania*, Interpenetrating Polymer Networks
- Philip H. Starmer**, *The BFGoodrich Company, Acrylic Elastomers, Survey*
- Judith Stein**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- R. Stepien**, *GE Plastics, Technology Center, Washington, West Virginia*, Acrylonitrile-Butadiene-Styrene Polymers
- E. S. Stevens**, *Binghamton University, Binghamton, New York*, Biodegradable Plastics
- Constantine Stewart**, *Basell R&D Center, Elkton, Maryland*, Propylene Polymers
- Mark A. Stewart**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, Inc., Wilmington, Delaware*, Ethylene Acrylic Elastomers
- Mark E. Stewart**, *Eastman Chemical Company, Kingsport, Tennessee*, Barrier Polymers
- William G. Stobby**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, Michigan*, Cellular Materials
- Benjamin C. Streifel**, *Department of Chemistry, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Maryland*, π -Conjugated Furan-Based Polymers
- Joseph A. Stretanski**, *Cytec Industries, Stamford, Connecticut*, UV Stabilizers
- Sudipta Sarkar**, *Lehigh University, Bethlehem, Pennsylvania*, Ion-Exchange Technology
- Hung-Jue Sue**, *Texas A&M University, College Station, Texas*, Scratch Behavior; Impact Resistance
- Takeo Suga**, *Waseda University*, Magnetic Polymers
- Kyung W. Suh**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Midland, Michigan*, Cellular Materials
- Nam P. Suh**, *Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, Massachusetts*, Microcellular Plastics
- Svetlana Sukhishvili**, *Stevens Institute of Technology, Hoboken, New Jersey*, Adsorption
- Shengtong Sun**, *Fudan University, Shanghai, People's Republic of China*, Two-dimensional Correlation Spectroscopy
- Masato Suzuki**, *Nagoya Institute of Technology, Nagoya, Japan*, Zwitterionic Polymerization
- Graham Swift**, *GS Polymer Consultants, Chapel Hill, North Carolina*, Acrylic (and Methacrylic) Acid Polymers; Degradable Polymers and Plastics in Landfill Sites
- Yoshinori Takashima**, *Osaka University, Osaka, Japan*, Polyrotaxanes
- Daisuke Takeuchi**, *Tokyo Institute of Technology, Yokohama, Japan*, Stereoregular Polymers; Stereoselective Polymerization of Conjugated Dienes
- Daniel R. Talham**, *University of Florida, Gainesville, Florida*, Langmuir-Blodgett Films
- Ben Zhong Tang**, *The Hong Kong University of Science and Technology, Kowloon, Hong Kong*, Acetylenic Polymers, Substituted
- Oreste Tarallo**, *Università degli Studi di Napoli Federico II, Naples, Italy*, Clathrates
- Klaus Tauer**, *Max Planck Institute of Colloids and Interfaces, Golm, Germany*, Heterophase Polymerization
- Takaya Terashima**, *Graduate School of Engineering, Kyoto University, Kyoto, Japan*, Microgels for Catalysis
- Yves Termonia**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours, Inc., Wilmington, Delaware*, Modeling of Polymer Processing and Properties
- Fred M. Teumac**, *Reeves Brothers, Inc.*, Fabrics, Coated
- San H. Thang**, *CSIRO Molecular and Health Technologies, Clayton, Victoria, Australia*, Reversible Addition-Fragmentation Chain Transfer Polymerization
- S. Thayumanavan**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts*, Dendrimers, Molecular Recognition
- Raymond J. Thibault**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts*, Molecular Self-Assembly
- Devron P. Thibodeaux**, *U.S. Department of Agriculture, ARS, Clemson, South Carolina*, Cotton
- Curt Thies**, *Thies Technology, Inc., Henderson, Nevada*, Microencapsulation
- Richard W. Thomas**, *Ciba Specialty Chemicals, Tarrytown, New York*, Antioxidants
- Edward V. Thompson**, *University of Maine*, Thermal Properties
- James L. Throne**, *Sherwood Technologies, Inc., Dunedin, Florida*, Thermoforming
- D. B. Todd**, *Polymer Processing Institute, Newark, New Jersey; Baker Perkins, Inc.*, Pelletizing; Plastics Processing
- Norio Tomotsu**, *Idemitsu Kosan Co. Ltd., Chiba, Japan*, Syndiotactic Polystyrene
- John D. Tovar**, *Department of Chemistry, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Maryland; Department of Materials Science and Engineering, Johns Hopkins University, Baltimore, Maryland*, π -Conjugated Furan-Based Polymers
- L. Tsarkova**, *Aachen University, Aachen, Germany*, Scanning Force Microscopy, Block Copolymers
- Constantinos Tsitsilianis**, *Department of Chemical Engineering, University of Patras, Patras, Greece*, Hydrogels
- Andy H. Tsou**, *ExxonMobil Chemical Co., Baytown, Texas*, Fillers; Butyl Rubber
- Albin F. Turbak**, *Falcon Consultants, Inc., New York; University of Georgia, Sandy Springs, Georgia*, High Performance Fibers
- S. Richard Turner**, *Eastman Chemical Company, Kingsport, Tennessee*, Cyclohexanedimethanol Polyesters
- Costas Tzoganakis**, *University of Waterloo, Waterloo, Ontario, Canada*, Reactive Extrusion of Polymers
- Mitsuru Ueda**, *Tokyo Institute of Technology, Tokyo, Japan*, Polycondensation
- Henri Ulrich**, *Consultant, Guilford, Connecticut*, Isocyanate-Derived Polymers
- A. van Herk**, *Eindhoven University of Technology, Eindhoven, The Netherlands*, Emulsion Polymerization
- Philipp Vana**, *Georg-August-Universität Göttingen, Göttingen, Germany; University of Göttingen, Göttingen, Germany*, Radical Polymerization; Copolymerization
- Thierry Vandamme**, *Laboratory of Design and Application of Bioactive Molecules (CAMB), Faculty of Pharmacy, University of Strasbourg, France*, Microfluidic Production of Micro- and Nanoparticles

- Mason S. Vandell**, *University of British Columbia Okanagan, Kelowna, Canada*, Metal-Containing Polymers
- G. A. Vaughan**, *Exxon Mobil Chemical Company, Baytown, Texas*, Ethylene Polymers, LLDPE
- Florent Vaultier**, *Université de Lyon, Laboratoire de Chimie Catalyse Polymères et Procédés, Villeurbanne, France*, Single-Site Catalysts
- Giovanni Vianello**, *European Vinyls Corporation (IT)*, Vinyl Chloride Polymers
- David Vietti**, *Rohm and Haas Company, Woodstock, Illinois*, Polysulfides
- Tyrone L. Vigo**, *U.S. Department of Agriculture, New York*, High Performance Fibers
- S. N. Vouyiouka**, *National Technical University of Athens, Athens, Greece*, Solid-State Polymerization
- Walter H. Waddell**, *ExxonMobil Chemical Company, Baytown, Texas*, Rubber Compounding; Fillers
- Bruce Wade**, *Solutia, Inc., Springfield, Massachusetts*, Vinyl Acetal Polymers
- H. D. Wagner**, *Weizmann Institute of Science, Rehovot, Israel*, Reinforcement
- Phillip J. Wakelyn**, *Wakelyn Associates, LLC, Washington, D.C.*, Cotton
- G. M. Wallraff**, *IBM Almaden Research Center, San Jose, California*, Lithographic Resists
- David H. Wang**, *UES, Inc., Dayton, Ohio*, Rigid-Rod Polymers
- Meng-Jiao Wang**, *Cabot Corporation, Billerica, Massachusetts*, Carbon Black
- Wentao Wang**, *Florida State University, Tallahassee, Florida*, Nanocrystals Surface Functionalization
- Yan Wang**, *National University of Singapore, Singapore*, Membranes for Energy Applications
- Eric Paul Wasserman**, *Dow Chemical Company, Piscataway, New Jersey*, Metallocenes
- Robert N. Webb**, *ExxonMobil, Baytown, Texas*, Butyl Rubber
- William D. Weber**, *Arch Chemicals, East Providence, Rhode Island*, Electronic Packaging
- Owen W. Webster**, *Glen Mills, Pennsylvania, Pennsylvania*, Group-Transfer Polymerization
- Christoph Weder**, *Adolphe Merkle Institute, University of Fribourg, Fribourg, Switzerland*, Light-Emitting Diodes
- Edward D. Weil**, *Polymer Research Institute, Polytechnic University, Brooklyn, New York; Polytechnic Institute of NYU, Brooklyn, New York*, Phosphorus-Containing Polymers and Oligomers; Flame Retardancy
- Shari A. Weinberg**, *BP Amoco Polymers, Inc., Alpharetta, Georgia*, Polysulfones
- Jeffrey Wengrovius**, *GE Silicones, Waterford, New York*, Silicones
- Scott R. White**, *University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign, Urbana, Illinois*, Self-Healing Polymers
- Andrew K. Whittaker**, *The University of Queensland, Brisbane, Queensland, Australia*, Radiation Chemistry of Polymers
- Denyce Wicht**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- Zeno W. Wicks Jr.**, *Louisville, Kentucky*, Urethane Coatings; Alkyd Resins; Coatings
- James Wicksted**, *Oklahoma State University, Stillwater, Oklahoma*, Nanocomposites, Layer-by-Layer Assembly
- David M. Wiles**, *Plasticchem Consulting, Victoria, British Columbia, Canada*, Degradable Polymers and Plastics in Landfill Sites
- Richard Wilkins**, *University of Newcastle, Newcastle upon Tyne, United Kingdom*, Controlled Release Formulation, Agricultural
- Edward S. Wilks**, *E.I. Du Pont de Nemours, Hockessin, Delaware*, Structural Representation of Polymers; Nomenclature of Polymers
- Graham Williams**, *University of Wales, Swansea, United Kingdom*, Dielectric Relaxation
- J. G. Williams**, *Imperial College of Science Technology and Medicine, London, United Kingdom*, Fracture
- Laurence L. Williams**, *Cytec Industries, Stamford, Connecticut*, Amino Resins and Plastics
- Gerald O. Wilson**, *Autonomic Materials, Inc, Champaign, Illinois*, Self-Healing Polymers
- T. Lamont Wilsom**, *Consultant*, Dielectric Heating
- G. Winter**, *University of Melbourne*, Casein
- H. Henning Winter**, *University of Massachusetts, Amherst, Massachusetts*, Gel Point
- Bernhard Wolf**, *University of Mainz - Institute of Physical Chemistry, Mainz, Germany*, Solubility of Polymers
- Fred R. Wolf**, *The BFGoodrich Company*, Acrylic Elastomers, Survey
- Michael O. Wolf**, *The University of British Columbia, Vancouver, British Columbia, Canada*, Poly(*p*-phenylenevinylene)
- Mélanie Wolfs**, *Laboratoire de Physique de la Matière Condensée, Université de Nice-Sophia Antipolis, Nice, France*, Superhydrophobic Polymers
- C. P. Wong**, *School of Chemistry and Biochemistry, Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia; School of Materials Science and Engineering, Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia*, Conductive Polymer Composites
- Janet S. S. Wong**, *University of Illinois, Urbana, Illinois*, Scratch Behavior
- Eamor M. Woo**, *National Cheng Kung University, Tainan, Taiwan*, Tacticity in Vinyl Polymers
- Christina Darkangelo Wood**, *GE Global Research Center, Niskayuna, New York*, Silicones
- Calvin Woodings**, *Calvin Woodings Consulting Ltd., Warwickshire, United Kingdom*, Cellulose Fibers, Regenerated
- John Woods**, *Loctite Corporation, Rocky Hill, Connecticut*, Polycyanoacrylates
- Jeffrey J. Wooster**, *The Dow Chemical Company, Freeport, Texas*, Packaging, Flexible
- Allan T. Worm**, *Dyneon, 3M Company, Oakdale, Minnesota*, Fluorocarbon Elastomers
- Chi Wu**, *The Chinese University of Hong Kong, Shatin, New Territories, Hong Kong, People's Republic of China*, Laser Light Scattering
- Michael M. Wu**, *BP Chemicals, Naperville, Illinois*, Acrylonitrile and Acrylonitrile Polymers

- Peiyi Wu**, *Fudan University, Shanghai, People's Republic of China*, Two-dimensional Correlation Spectroscopy
- Yun-Tai Wu**, *E. I. du Pont de Nemours & Company, Inc., Wilmington, Delaware*, Ethylene Acrylic Elastomers
- Bernhard Wunderlich**, *University of Tennessee, Knoxville, Tennessee; Chemical Sciences Division of Oak Ridge National Laboratory, Oak Ridge, Tennessee*, Thermodynamic Properties of Polymers
- Carl J. Wust**, *FiberVisions, Covington, Georgia*, Olefin Fibers
- Ryszard Wycisk**, *Case Western Reserve University, Cleveland, Ohio*, Polyphosphazenes
- M. Xanthos**, *Polymer Processing Institute, Newark, New Jersey*, Plastics Processing
- Yusuf Yagci**, *Istanbul Technical University, Maslak, Turkey*, Telechelic Polymers
- Kit L. Yam**, *Rutgers University, New Brunswick, New Jersey*, Packaging Material, Molecular Weight
- Hiroyasu Yamaguchi**, *Osaka University, Osaka, Japan*, Polyrotaxanes
- Gary Yeager**, *General Electric Company, Schenectady, New York*, Polyethers, Aromatic
- Albert F. Yee**, *University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Michigan*, Impact Resistance
- E. M. Yorkgitis**, *3M Company, Mendota Heights, Minnesota*, Adhesive Compounds
- Naoko Yoshie**, *The University of Tokyo, Tokyo, Japan*, Diels-Alder Polymers
- Raymond A. Young**, *University of Wisconsin, Madison, Wisconsin*, Vegetable Fibers
- Jian H. Yu**, *Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Cambridge, Massachusetts*, Electrospinning
- Kai Yu**, *Centre for Blood Research; Department of Pathology & Laboratory Medicine, University of British Columbia, Vancouver, Canada*, Polymer Brushes
- Wei Yu**, *Advanced Rheology Institute, Shanghai Jiao Tong University Shanghai, People's Republic of China*, Rheological Measurements
- Peter Zarras**, *Naval Air Warfare Center Weapons Division (NAWCWD), China Lake, California*, Electrically Active Polymers
- Mauro Zarrelli**, *Italian Aerospace Research Center, Capua, Italy*, Composite Materials
- Rudolf Zentel**, *Institute of Organic Chemistry, University of Mainz, Mainz, Germany*, Ferroelectric Liquid Crystalline Elastomers
- Afang Zhang**, *Shanghai University, Shanghai, People's Republic of China*, Dendronized Polymers, Stimuli-Responsive
- Hongwei Zhang**, *University of Tennessee, Knoxville, Tennessee*, Ionic Liquids, Polymerization in
- Huangui Zhang**, *Université de Lyon, Lyon, France; Ingénierie des Matériaux Polymères, INSA Lyon, Villeurbanne, France*, Coextrusion of Multilayer Structures, Interfacial Phenomena
- Rongwei Zhang**, *School of Chemistry and Biochemistry, Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia; School of Materials Science and Engineering, Georgia Institute of Technology, Atlanta, Georgia*, Conductive Polymer Composites
- Xiaoyan Zhang**, *Department of Chemistry, University of Basel, Basel, Switzerland*, Nanoreactors
- Zhong Zhao**, *Guilford Pharmaceuticals, Inc., Baltimore, Maryland*, Polyanhydrides
- Yuxiang Zhou**, *University of Connecticut, Storrs, Connecticut*, Liquid Crystalline Block Copolymers
- Shuihan Zhu**, *University of Waterloo, Waterloo, Ontario, Canada*, Reactive Extrusion of Polymers
- Allen Zielnik**, *Atlas Material Testing Technology, LLC, Chicago, Illinois*, Weathering of Polymeric Materials
- Ronald Zirbs**, *Martin-Luther University Halle-Wittenberg, Halle (Saale), Germany*, "Click" Chemistry in Macromolecular Synthesis
- Paul Zoller**, *University of Colorado, Boulder, Colorado*, Dilatometry
- Karen Zrebiec**, *Youngstown State University, Youngstown, Ohio*, Photorefraction

CUMULATIVE INDEX, VOLUMES 1–15

- AAA Yellow, 3:477, 478
AABB polyamides, 10:237
AADMCA Yellow, 3:477, 478
AAMX Yellow, 3:477, 478
AAOA Yellow, 3:477, 478
AAOT Yellow, 3:477, 478
AATP, 13:39
Ab initio molecular orbital theory, 3:595–597
AB polyamides, 10:237
AB-polymer network structure, with shape-memory, 12:418
AB_x-monomers, in hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:785, 786
ABA block polymers
 α -methylstyrene-isoprene- α -methylstyrene, 7:319
 thermoplastic-elastomeric behavior, 7:316
ABA-type AP, 6:739
ABA-type block copolymers, 8:178
 synthesis of, 8:180
ABA/acetoxyl acetanilide (AAA)/IA system, 7:568
73/27 ABA/ANA copolymer, 7:567
73/27 ABA/ANA polymerization reaction system, 7:566
Abaca, 14:495
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:504, 505
 uses of, 14:508
ABC terpolymer architecture, 6:763
ABC triblock copolymer gelators, 6:761–763
 pH-responsive gelators, 6:762
ABC triblock copolymers, 2:194, 195. *See also* Ternary triblock copolymers
Abherents, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
Abhesives, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
Ablative coatings, 8:507
Abrasion
 and scratch behavior, 12:319, 320
Abrasion resistance
 acrylic fibers, 1:248
 Abrasion resistance, of acrylic elastomers, 1:182
Abrasive wear tests, specific wear rate, 13:505
Abrasives
 phenolic resin applications, 9:608, 609
Abrascivity
 fillers, 5:786
ABS copolymers, 1:283
ABS materials, 5:203. *See also* ABS polymers
 producers and trademarks of, 5:207
ABS polymers, 13:202–204, 206. *See also* ABS materials
 stress-strain properties of, 13:182, 183
ABS resins, 13:203, 204, 232
ABS. *See* acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene (ABS) polymer
 polymer manufacture, 10:720
 Absolute degree of crystallinity, 4:151, 152
 Absorbance, 5:40
 Absorbency. *See* Superabsorbent polymers
 Absorption
 heterophase polymerization, 6:603
 Absorption spectrum, 5:40
 Absorptivity (*D*) of lignins, 7:533
 Abuse resistance, 9:469
 Abutilon, 14:495
 processing, 14:504, 505
 AC detection techniques, 1:752
 A/C system
 geometry and coordinates for, 5:44
 geometry of biphenyl, 5:43
 Acceleration shift factor (ASF)
 Accelerators, 5:87
 epoxy resins, 5:366–368
 for polychloroprene latex, 3:77
 in SBR processing, 13:276, 277
 Accord
 physical properties, 9:181
 ACE. *See* Activated chain end (ACE) mechanism
 Acenaphthene
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:473
 Acetal resins, 1:1–17
 chemical resistance, 1:11, 12
 economic aspects, 1:15
 electrical properties, 1:11, 13
 extrusion blow-molding techniques, 1:13
 fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:727
 fatigue crack propagation, 5:721
 fatigue thermal history effect, 5:741, 742
 fatigue resistance, 1:9
 foam-molding processing, 1:13, 14
 grades of, 1:14, 15
 health and safety factors, 1:16, 17
 injection molding, 1:11, 13
 mechanical properties, 1:9, 10
 melting temperature, 10:69
 monomers, 1:2–4
 overview, 1:1, 2
 polymerization, 1:4–8
 properties, 1:8–13
 rotational molding, 1:14
 specifications and standards, 1:15, 16
 thermal properties, 1:10, 11
 uses, 1:17
 Acetaldehyde
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
 2-Acetamido-2-deoxyglucose, 15:188
 Acetate
 mechanical properties, 9:216
 Acetate fibers
 properties, 9:346

- Acetic acid
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Acetoacetoxy-functional acrylic solution resins, 3:339, 340
- Acetobacter xylinum*
 cellulose from, 2:570–572
- Acetoguanamine, 1:520
- Acetone
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 and polystyrene polymerization, 13:191
 solubility of cellulose acetates in, 2:623
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
 swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Acetone cyanohydrin, 1:159
- Acetone-water mixtures, pervaporation separation of, 7:800
- Acetonitrile
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Acetoxy acetanilide (AAA), 7:569
- m*-Acetoxybenzoic acid (mABA), 7:568
- Acetoxypropylcellulose, 2:591
- Acetoxy silanes, 12:470
- Acetyl bromide method, for determining lignin content, 7:532
- 2-*O*-Acetyl- β -D-xylopyranose, 15:188
- 2-Acetyl-*p*-xylylene
 threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
- Acetylene
 commercial acrylonitrile from, 1:267
 feedstock for acetylene black process, 2:449
 polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:744–747
- Acetylene black process, 2:449
- Acetylene blacks, 2:427, 438
 composition, 2:429
- Acetylene cyclotrimerization, 1:46
- Acetylenic carbon-carbon triple bond, 1:23, 24
- Acetylenic polymers, 1:20–61
 acetylenic carbon-carbon triple bond, 1:23, 24
 from diynes, 1:32–48
 from monoynes, 1:24–32
 from triynes, 1:48–54
 functionalized, polymerizations of, 1:28
 linear alkyne polymerizations, 1:22
 nonlinear alkyne polymerizations, 1:23
 overview, 1:20–23
 polymerization reactions, 1:20
 syntheses, structures, and functions of, 1:24
- ACGIH. *See* American Conference of Governmental Industrial Hygienists (ACGIH)
- Achiral chomophores, circular dichroism, 5:42–46
- Acid anhydrides
 coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:350–353
- Acid-base reactions
 intercalation through, 7:75
- Acid catalysts, 1:418
- Acid cleaners
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
- Acid etching. *See also* Chemical etching;
 Electrochemical etching; Etchants; Reactive ion etching (RIE) techniques
 surface treatment with, 1:374
- Acid gases, 6:39
- Acid hydrolysis lignin, 7:545
- Acid-modified PCT (PCTA), 4:214
- Acid-modified PET, 4:220
- Acid or base-bearing star polymer catalysts, 8:460
- Acid pasting process, 3:483
- Acid phosphate monomers, 9:672
- Acid polymers, poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:198–209
- Acid swelling process, 3:483
- Acidic polymers
 acrylic- and methacrylic-acid, 1:156–167
 alternative syntheses of, 1:161
- Acoustic and optical phonons, 9:749
- Acoustic emission (AE), investigating micromechanical properties via, 8:476
- Acoustic emission sensor, 12:364
- Acoustic lenses, 1:293
- Acoustic microscopy, 9:111
 investigating micromechanical properties via, 8:476
- Acoustic properties, 1:61–102
 additive properties, 1:74–76
 applications, 1:85–93
 biopolymers, 1:84, 85
 curing, sound as probe of, 1:81, 82
 density, sound as probe of, 1:82
 elastic constants, 1:63–65
 equation of state, 1:70
 hysteresis absorption, 1:71, 72
 inhomogeneous media, 1:72, 73
 Kramers-Kronig relations, 1:69, 70
 molecular probe applications, 1:76–85
 nonlinear wave propagation, 1:73, 74
 sound absorption, 1:65–69
 test methods, 1:95–102
 transitions, 1:70, 71, 76–81
 underwater acoustics, 1:92, 93
- Acoustic waves, 1:61
- Acousto-ultrasonics, 9:114
- Acpol, 7:139
- Acri-Pulp, 1:253
- Acrilan, 1:225
- Acrilan Pil-Trol™, 1:248
- Acrolein
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
- Acrolein polymers, 1:107–117
 analytical and test methods for, 1:113, 114
 anionic homopolymerization and copolymerization, 1:110, 111
 cationic homopolymerization and copolymerization, 1:111
 chemical properties of monomer, 1:108, 109
 economic aspects of, 1:113
 health and safety factors, 1:114
 manufacturing of monomer, 1:109

- overview, *I*:107, 108
 physical properties of monomer (table), *I*:108
 polyacrolein as reactive polymer, *I*:112
 polymerization of, *I*:110, 111
 properties of, *I*:111, 112
 radical homopolymerization and copolymerization, *I*:110
- Acrylamide (AA)-bearing CT, 8:458
- Acrylamide (AMD), *I*:518, 520
 cationic copolymers of, *I*:131–135
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, *I4*:654
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:731
 heterophase polymerization, 6:676
 microemulsion polymerization, 8:368
 polymerization, *I*:118
 RAFT polymerization, *II*:727
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, *II*:574
 synthesis by RAFT polymerization, 7:658
 transfer coefficient to, *II*:526
- Acrylamide copolymers
 chemistry of, *I*:131–135
- Acrylamide polymerization, *I*:124–126, 5:276, 277
- Acrylamide polymers, *I*:118–148
 applications of, *I*:118, 119
 nomenclature of, *I*:118
- Acrylamide, sodium ethylenesulfonate copolymer, 5:615
- Acrylamide-co-acrylic acid
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- 2-Acrylamido-2-methylpropanesulfonic acid, 5:615
- Acrylate esters, RAFT polymerization of (table), *II*:725
- Acrylate resins, hyperbranched polymers and, 6:792
- Acrylate-styrene-acrylonitrile (ASA)
- Acrylated oligomers, 3:339
- Acrylates, 7:387–390, *I4*:172–174
 backbiting, 7:388
 butyl acrylate (BA) polymerization, 7:388
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:695
 chain transfer to polymer (CTP), 7:388
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:728, 729
 midchain radical (MCR), 7:388
 RAFT polymerization, *II*:724–726
 secondary propagating radical (SPR), 7:389
- Acrylic acid copolymers, dental applications for. *See also* Acrylic copolymers
- Acrylic acid polymers, *I*:156–167
 block and graft, *I*:167
 characteristics of, *I*:163–167
 inverse emulsion polymerization and, *I*:167
 monomers of, *I*:156–160
- Acrylic acid, *I*:156–160
 as polyethylene comonomer, 5:517, 518
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, *I4*:654
 copolymerization with styrene, *I3*:193
 handling and storage of, *I*:159, 160
 heat and entropy of polymerization, *I4*:97
 history of, *I*:157, 158
 manufacture of, *I*:158, 159
 physical properties of (table), *I*:157
 polymerization, *I*:160–162
 RAFT polymerization of (table), *II*:725
 superabsorbent polymers from, *I3*:353, 354
 template polymerization monomer, *I3*:748
- Acrylic acid, sodium ethylenesulfonate copolymer, 5:615, 616
- Acrylic acid, sodium styrenesulfonate
 template polymerization monomer, *I3*:748
- Acrylic adhesives, *I*:419–422, *II*:303, 304
- Acrylic copolymers. *See also* Ethylene-acrylic elastomers
- Acrylic elastomers, *I*:173–191. *See* Ethylene-acrylic elastomers
 abrasion resistance of, *I*:182
 additives in, *I*:183–187
 antioxidants in, *I*:187
 backbone monomers, *I*:176, 177
 bonding characteristics of, *I*:189
 chlorine cure sites, *I*:174, 175
 compound storage stability of, *I*:188
 core systems for U.S.-produced (table), *I*:184, 185
 corrosion resistance of, *I*:182
 cure-site monomers, *I*:174–176
 dual cure sites, *I*:176
 economic aspects of, *I*:189, 190
 electrical properties of, *I*:182
 emulsion polymerization, *I*:178, 179
 extrusion and calendering in, *I*:188, 189
 flame resistance of, *I*:183
 flexibility, *I*:182
 gas permeability in, *I*:183
 health and safety factors for, *I*:190
 heat resistance of, *I*:181
 hot properties of, *I*:181
 low temperature resistance of, *I*:181, 182
 mill-mixing of, *I*:188
 monomers, *I*:173–177
 oil and chemical resistance of (table), *I*:181, 182
 overview, *I*:173
 ozone and UV light resistance of, *I*:182
 plasticizers in, *I*:187
 polymerization, *I*:177–179
 process aids, *I*:187
 processing of, *I*:188, 189
 properties of (table), *I*:179–183, 180
 radiation resistance of, *I*:183
 reinforcing agents in, *I*:186, 187
 resilience characteristics of, *I*:183
 standards for, *I*:190
 survey, *I*:173–195
 suspension polymerization, *I*:179
 unsaturated cure sites, *I*:174
 uses of, *I*:190, 191
 vulcanization, *I*:183–186
- Acrylic emulsion polymers, *I*:163
- Acrylic and methacrylic acid polymers, *I*:156–167
- Acrylic ester monomers, *I*:201–204
 functional monomers for copolymerization with (table), *I*:207
 physical properties of (table), *I*:202
 polymerization data for (table), *I*:204
 structure of, *I*:196
 toxicities of (table), *I*:203, 204
- Acrylic ester polymers, *I*:195–224
 acrylic ester monomers, *I*:201–204

- adhesives, *I:217*
analytical tests for, *I:215*
anionic polymerization, *I:214*
applications, *I:215–218*
bulk polymerization, *I:206*
chain-transfer constants (table), *I:208*
chemical resistance, *I:200, 201*
coatings of, *I:215, 216*
emulsion polymerization, *I:209–211*
emulsion polymers, *I:215*
environmental health and safety factors, *I:215*
functional monomers for copolymerization with (table), *I:207*
glass-transition temperature, *I:196–198*
graft copolymerization, *I:213*
living polymerization, *I:213*
lower acrylates, *I:210*
mechanical properties of (table), *I:198–200*
molecular weight, *I:198*
overview, *I:195, 196*
paper, *I:217*
photoresists, *I:217*
physical properties of (table), *I:197*
properties of, *I:196–201*
radiation-induced polymerization, *I:213, 214*
radical polymerization, *I:204–206*
solubility (table), *I:200, 201*
solution polymer, *I:215*
solution polymerization, *I:207–209*
suspension polymerization, *I:211–213*
textiles, *I:216, 217*
thermal properties of, *I:198–200*
- Acrylic fibers, *I:224–257, 272. See also*
Polyacrylonitrile
air-gap spinning, *I:246*
analysis, *I:232, 233*
characterization, *I:233*
chemical properties, *I:230, 231*
commercial products, *I:248–247*
dry spinning, *I:241–243*
economic aspects, *I:225, 226, 257, 258*
limiting oxygen index, *I:232*
melt spinning, *I:247*
physical properties, *I:226–230*
physical properties of staple, *I:229*
properties, *9:346*
property modification, *I:248*
solution spinning, *I:241–248*
wet spinning, *I:243–246*
world production (table), *I:254–256*
- Acrylic filament yarns, *I:249*
- Acrylic polyols, *11:225*
- Acrylic powder coatings, *3:237, 238, 247*
- Acrylic resins, *3:328–330*
in interpenetrating network, *7:143*
- Acrylic rubber
compounding, *12:215, 216*
- Acrylic sheet, manufacture of, *2:495, 496. See also*
Casting
air bubbles and voids in, prevention of, *2:504*
annealing conditions for, *2:506*
casting formulation, *2:501–504*
chain depolymerization in, *2:505*
polymerization control in, *2:505*
polymerization rate and sheet thickness, *2:505*
- Acrylic tow, *I:248, 249*
- Acrylic weak base resins, *7:157*
- Acrylics
casting, *10:89*
mechanical properties, *9:216*
monomers for rubber compounding, *12:204, 240*
physical properties, *12:207*
processing, *10:69*
wood flooring, *6:125, 126*
- Acrylonitrile, *I:161*
analytical and test methods for, *I:269*
aqueous solubility, *7:467*
azeotrope compositions of (table), *I:264*
chloroprene reactivity ratios, *3:47*
contribution of disproportionation to termination, *11:544*
copolymerization with styrene, *13:233, 234*
exports of (table), *I:269*
health and safety factors for, *I:270–274*
heat and entropy of polymerization, *14:97*
heterophase polymerization, *6:601*
homopolymer properties of, *I:277–283*
manufacture of, *I:265–268*
monomer for rubber compounding, *12:204*
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, *I:602*
obsolete manufacturing processes for, *I:267*
percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, *13:674*
in poly(acrylamide) polymerization, *I:118*
polymerization, *I:234–241*
producers of (table), *I:269*
RAFT polymerization, *7:658, 11:726, 727*
standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, *11:574*
storage and transport of, *I:270*
transfer coefficient to, *11:526*
uses for, *I:272–274*
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, *6:629*
world production of, *I:261*
- Acrylonitrile and acrylonitrile polymers, *I:261–301*
- Acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene (ABS) polymers, *I:312–341*
air and water treatment of, *I:325*
analytical investigations of, *I:327, 328*
applications of, *I:333, 334*
blow molding, *I:331, 332*
calendering, *I:331*
chemical properties of, *I:318–321*
chemical resistance of, *I:318, 319*
cold forming, *I:332*
color of, *I:318*
compounding operation for, *I:327*
dispersed rubber phase, effect of, *I:312–315*
economic aspects of, *I:334, 335*
effect of rubber content on, *I:316*
emulsion process for, *I:322–324*
extrusion in, *I:330, 331*
fastening, bonding, and joining in, *I:333*
flammability, *I:321*

- grades (table), material properties of, 1:313
graft chemistry of, 1:322
graft process for, 1:324, 325
grafting, 1:324, 325
injection molding in, 1:329, 330
markets for (table), 1:333
mass polymerization, 1:325, 326
material handling and drying, 1:328, 329
metallizing, 1:332
photo-oxidative degradation of, 1:320, 321
physical properties of, 1:312–318
polymerization of, 1:321–328
price of, 1:335
processing of, 1:328–333
processing stability in, 1:319
resin recovery process for, 1:325
rheological properties of, 1:317, 318
rubber chemistry of, 1:321, 322
rubber substrate process for, 1:324
structural and compositional effects, 1:315–317
surface gloss values of, 1:318
suspension process for, 1:326
thermal oxidative stability in, 1:319, 320
thermal properties of, 1:318
thermoforming, 1:332
transmission electron micrograph of, 1:314, 315
transparency of, 1:318
worldwide capacity of, 1:334
- Acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene (ABS), 1:261, 15:246.
See also ABS polymers
activation spectra of, 15:247
antioxidant applications, 1:711
blow molding of, 13:248, 254
elastic constants, 1:89–92
fatigue crack speed, 5:724
fatigue in rubber-toughened, 5:743
foams and, 13:254
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
impact resistance improvement, 6:823–828
impact strength *vs.* notch tip radius, 6:818
load-deflection behavior, 6:819
manufacture of toughened, 13:232
mechanical properties of, 13:181
moisture, 15:248
oxidative degradation, 4:280, 281
photo-oxidation of, 13:9, 10
sound speeds, 1:85–88
strain-energy release rates, 6:824
temperature, 15:247, 248
temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
thermoforming, 14:121, 125
thermoforming of, 13:247
UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- Acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene copolymers
processing, 10:69
1-D and 2-D spectral-spatial ESRI, 5:27, 28
- Acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene resins, 1:262, 288
- Acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene, cellular
physical properties of commercial, 2:529
- Acrylonitrile copolymer fiber, 1:280
- Acrylonitrile copolymers, 1:283–288
uses for, 1:299–301
- Acrylonitrile emissions, 1:271
- Acrylonitrile-EPDM-styrene (AES), 1:298
- Acrylonitrile-ethylene-styrene (AES) materials, 13:204
- Acrylonitrile-methyl methacrylate copolymers
monomer reactivity ratios, 3:801
- Acrylonitrile monomer, 1:262–274
chemical properties of, 1:262–265
economic aspects of, 1:268, 269
physical properties of (table), 1:263, 264
- Acrylonitrile multipolymers, 1:286
- Acrylonitrile polymers, 1:274–288. *See also*
Poly(styrene-*co*-acrylonitrile) (SAN); SAN
copolymers
economic aspects of, 1:298, 299
- Acrylonitrile-styrene-acrylate (ASA), 1:298, 13:204
- Acrylonitrile-styrene copolymers
permeability temperature effect, 2:13
- Acrylonitrile-vinyl acetate copolymers, 1:279
- 3-Acryloxypropyltrimethoxysilane (APMS)
coupling agent, 12:421, 424
- 2-(acryloylamino)-2-methylpropane-1-sulfonic acid
(AMPS), 13:309, 310
- Activated carbon fibers, 2:480, 481
- Activated chain end (ACE) mechanism, in
hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:787
- Activated halides, as ATRP initiators, 13:228
- Activated monomer mechanism (AMM), in
hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:787
- Activated polyolefins
degradation processes in landfills, 4:246, 247
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:76, 77
- Activated state theory, 14:301–305
- Activation
metallocenes, 8:105, 106
- Activation energy, 6:44
thermal free-radical initiation, 6:839
- Activation volume, 11:549, 550
- Activators generated by electron transfer (AGET),
1:727
- Activators regenerated by electron transfer (ARGET),
1:728
- Activators. *See also* Kaminsky activator
discrete, 5:562
in SBR processing, 13:276, 277
for vulcanization, 12:244, 245
- Active agent, 8:384
- Active barrier, 2:58
- Active sites, in single-site catalysts, 6:418, 419
- Actuators
electrically active polymers for, 4:773
- Acylic diene metathesis (ADMET), 6:770, 771
- Acylic diene methathesis polymerization
telechelic polymers, 13:714, 715
- Adam-Gibbs relationship, for solid-like polymers,
15:163
- Adamantane
from tetrahydrocyclopentadiene, 4:236
- Addition-fragmentation agents, 13:680
- Addition-fragmentation chain transfer, 11:537, 538
- Addition polymerization, 1:341–343
isocyanate-derived polymers, 7:262, 263
olefinic polymerization, 1:341
radical trap studies, 6:839
vinyl polymerization, 1:341

- Addition polymers, 8:511
degradation processes in landfills, 4:244–248
- Additives, **1:343–360**
effect on expansion in cellular materials, 2:514
films, 5:805, 807, 808
hyperbranched polymers in, 6:794, 795
in coagulant, 8:560, 561
in plastics compounding, 3:551
in PVC production, 14:730–735
liquid dispersion, 1:345
lubricants, 1:358, 359
migration modeling into packaged foods and beverages, 2:32, 33
overview, 1:343
performance enhancers, 1:343, 344
PET fibers and, 10:512
plastics, 1:344
processing aids, 1:344, 345, 358–360
property extenders, 1:350–358
slip/antiblock agents, 1:359, 360
stress-relief, 5:88
test methods, 13:760, 761
to polyamide plastics, 10:283–285
to styrene polymers, 13:248, 249
to fiber, 10:255, 256
wet-end, 1:538
- Additives, for plastics compounding
antistatic agents, 3:552
colorants, 3:552
flame retardants, 3:552
processing aids, 3:551
stabilizers, 3:551
- Additives, for rubber compounding, 3:552
plasticizers, 3:553
small chemicals, 3:553
- Additivity principle, 6:68
- Adducts, dehydrocoupling of, 7:46
- Adherends, 1:400
- Adhesion, **1:362–396**
atomic force microscopy and, 1:780, 781
bond classification and, 1:365–372
defined, 1:362
epoxy resins, 5:375
fiber, 10:523
interfaces, interphases, and boundary layers and, 1:364, 365
intermolecular forces of, 11:703
intrinsic, 1:385–388
of LDPE copolymers, 5:518
strength of, 1:388–396
surfaces and, 1:363, 364
surface treatment and, 1:374–378
tack and, 1:378–385
theories of, 1:404, 405
thermodynamics of, 1:372–374
work of, 11:703
- Adhesion promoters, 5:635
in plastics compounding, 3:551
- Adhesion science, 1:404
- Adhesive bond failure, 1:405
- Adhesive bond testing, 1:408
- Adhesive bonding, 1:0, 401
classification of, 1:365–372
of polysulfones, 11:198
- Adhesive compounds, **1:400–431**. *See also* Adhesion; Adhesives
direct bonding and, 1:430
market economics of, 1:402, 403
principles related to, 1:403–408
- Adhesive die attach, 5:65
- Adhesive dispensers, 1:403
- Adhesive formulation, principles of, 1:403–408
- Adhesive hardening, 1:410
- Adhesive joints, 1:362, 363
defined, 1:362
- Adhesive laminations, 9:472
- Adhesive layers, shear failure of, 1:391, 392
- Adhesive systems, reactive, 1:410
- Adhesive transfer processes, release agents in, 11:706, 707
- Adhesives industry, 1:401, 402
- Adhesives. *See also* Glue; Pressure-sensitive adhesives
bulk properties of, 1:405
cellulose nitrate applications, 2:609
classification of, 1:409
cyanoacrylate, 1:422, 10:432, 433
defined, 1:400–401
die attach, 5:82–85
epoxy resin applications, 5:407, 408
failure modes of, 1:388–396
forms and types of, 1:410
formulation and design of, 1:430, 431
free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:742
high performance, 1:426, 427
hot-melt, 1:412–414
made from natural products, 1:427–429
melamine-formaldehyde resin applications, 7:735
methods of applying, 1:403, 404
phenolic resins, 9:604, 605
polychloroprene latex applications, 1:415, 416, 3:77, 78
poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:457
poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:714, 715
processes for thermoset, 14:205, 206
silicone application, 12:465, 506, 507
strength of, 1:388–396
testing, 1:406–408
vinyl acetal polymers, 14:646
vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:673–678
wood adhesives, 15:283–290
- Adiabatic
calorimeter, 14:23
calorimetry, 14:23
- Adiabatic calorimetry (AC), 2:743
- Adiabatic heating
and yield, 15:461
- Adjacent phase separation, 8:416
- Adjustable grooved feed extruder (AGFE), 5:645
- ADMET
-block and graft copolymers, 8:166
polycarbosilane, 8:168
polymerization, 8:161, 166
reaction, 8:165
- Adsorbed polymer layers, 1:435
dynamics of, 1:439–441
structure of, 1:437–439
surface charge, 1:441
thickness of, 1:439

- Adsorption, *I:434–452*
adsorbed layer, *I:435*
adsorbed monolayers to multilayers, *I:445*
adsorption isotherms, *I:437*
applications of, *I:448, 449*
at liquid-liquid and air-liquid interfaces, *I:445*
at solid-liquid interfaces, *I:437–443*
biomedical applications, *I:448, 449*
bioselective and chemiselective, *3:44*
bound fraction, *I:436*
concentration measurements, *I:446*
conformations and, *I:436*
definition, *I:434, 435*
dispersions, measurements on, *I:446*
ellipsometry, *I:447*
ESR technique, *I:446*
evanescent wave/spectroscopic techniques, *I:447*
flat surfaces, measurements on, *I:446, 447*
flocculation, *I:448*
friction and lubrication, *I:448*
measurements at liquid-liquid and liquid-air interfaces, *I:447, 448*
NMR technique, *I:446*
of biomacromolecules, *I:444*
of block copolymers, *I:443*
of copolymers, *I:443, 444*
of homopolymers, *I:437–443*
of neutral polymers, *I:437–441*
of polyelectrolytes, *I:441–443*
on complex-surface-topography substrates, *I:366*
on planar substrates, *I:365, 366*
optical reflectivity and, *I:447*
scattering techniques, *I:446*
stabilization of colloids, *I:448*
surface excess and, *I:435*
surface force measurements, *I:447*
techniques to study, *I:446–448*
- Adsorption isotherms, *I:437*
high affinity, *I:438*
- Advanced fiber information system (AFIS), *4:15*
- Advanced light source, *15:377*
- Advanced recycling technologies, *11:667*
- Advancement process, for solid epoxy resins, *5:307*
- ADVN (2,2'-azobis[2,4-dimethylvaleronitrile]),
acrylamide copolymers with, *I:134*
- Aerosol series, *5:175*
- Aerosol spray adhesives, *I:410*
- Aerospace
high performance fiber applications, *6:726*
- Aerospace industry adhesives, *I:427*
- AES materials. *See* Acrylonitrile-ethylene-styrene (AES) materials
- AES. *See* Acrylonitrile-EPDM-styrene (AES)
- AETAC (acryloyloxyethyltrimethylammonium chloride)
acrylamide copolymers with, *I:131–134*
economic aspects of, *I:145*
- Affine network model, *9:17, 4:655–659, 662*
- Affine shear modulus, *4:659. See also* Shear modulus
- Affinity chromatography, *3:44*
- AFIS. *See* Advanced fiber information system (AFIS)
- AFM cantilever, *I:750*
- AFM imaging
Langmuir-Blodgett films and, *I:761–763*
of biopolymers, *I:763, 764*
of block copolymers, *I:777*
of filled composites, *I:772, 773*
of gels, *I:778, 779*
of hybrid organic-inorganic polymers, *I:777, 778*
of hyperbranched polymers and dendrimers, *I:771, 772*
of IPNs, *I:774, 775*
of latexes, *I:777*
of liquid crystalline polymers, *I:770, 771*
of microporous membranes, *I:773*
of monolayers, *I:763*
of polyethylene, *I:765, 766*
of polymer blends, *I:773–777*
of polypropylene and polystyrene, *I:766–768*
of thermoplastics, *I:764–770*
of thermosets, *I:764*
- AFM. *See* AFM imaging
- Afterglowing durations, *6:88*
- Afterglow (AG) PE-CVD, *10:9*
optimum plasma-substrate distance, *10:10*
- Aftertreated polymers
structural representation, *13:164*
- AFWAL. *See* Air Force Wright Aeronautical Laboratories (AFWAL)
- AG chain-oriented Teflon-like coatings, *10:11*
- Ag-containing polyethyleneoxide (PEO)-like films,
10:26
- AG Teflon-like coatings, *10:10*
- Ag/PEO-like coatings
X-ray photoelectron spectroscopy (XPS) C1s signal,
10:26
- Agar, *4:385*
- Ageless oxygen absorber, *2:58*
- Agents, *11:713*
- AGET. *See* Activators generated by electron transfer (AGET)
- Aggregation
emulsions, *6:626*
molecular modeling, *8:600*
- Aggregation nucleation
heterophase polymerization, *6:598*
- Aging
chloroprene polymers, *3:69–71*
epoxy resins, *5:372*
physical, *I:452–476. See also* Physical aging
and tire compounding, *12:258*
viscose rayon, *2:680, 681*
- Agitation. *See* Mixing
- Agostic complex, *8:112*
- Agricultural applications
for chitin and chitosan, *3:40*
- Agricultural controlled release formulation, *3:714–733*
- Agriculture
drug reduction application, *4:569–571*
high performance fiber applications, *6:722*
- Agrochemicals, *8:396*
- A Guide to IUPAC Nomenclature of Organic Compounds*, *9:73*
- Ahagon-Kent analysis, of adhesion, *I:387*
- AIBN-initiated reactions, *4:50, 51, 53*
- AIBN. *See* 2,2'-Azobis(isobutyronitrile) (AIBN)
- Air
acrylonitrile in, *I:271*
metal oxide surface layer created from, *I:377*

- Air drag, in fiber spinning, 10:525–527
- Air filters
phenolic resin applications, 9:611
- Air flotation dryers, 3:291
- Air Force Wright Aeronautical Laboratories (AFWAL)
- Air-gap spinning
acrylic fibers, 1:246
- Air impingement dryers, 3:290–293
- Air-knife coater, 3:273
- Air-knife coating
nonwoven fabrics, 9:231
- Air knife, 5:635
- Air-set binders, 6:201
- Airbags, nylon in, 10:264
- Aircraft components
boron fiber in, 11:697
- Aircraft sealants, polysulfide, 11:177
- Alane-type catalysts, 7:302
- Alanine
chemical structure, 15:186
composition in silk, 12:543
percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Albumin
controlled release, 3:753
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:114
- Alcaligenes eutrophus*, 10:102
- Alcaligenes faecalis*, 10:103
- Alcaligenes latus*, 10:97, 109, 110
- AlCl_3 -1-ethyl-3-methylimidazolium chloride [EMIM]Cl, 7:196
- Alcohol and water separation, 8:18
- Alcohols
nitrile group reactions with, 1:262
phosgene reactions with, 9:626
- Alcoholysis, 10:658
of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:262
- Alcotex A55, 14:731
- Aldehyde, 8:173
nitrile group reactions with, 1:262
poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:129, 130
- Aldehyde termination, 8:174
- Aldol group transfer polymerization (AGTP), 7:630
- Algal polysaccharides, 15:191, 192
- Alginate-poly(L-lysine), 8:392
- Alginates, 4:385
- Alginic acid, 15:191
biodegradable natural polymer, 2:112
- Aliphatic amines
advantages, disadvantages, and applications, 5:338
as epoxy curing agent, 5:338
coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:340–342
curing agents, 5:337
- Aliphatic-aromatic polyesters, 7:93
- Aliphatic fluorocarbons, as release agents, 11:704
- Aliphatic isocyanates, 11:211–213
- Aliphatic poly(monosulfide)s, 13:287–289
- Aliphatic polyamides, 9:664
moisture effects, 13:839, 840
producers of, 5:208
- Aliphatic polyester polyols, 11:224
- Aliphatic polyesters
blending of starch, 13:64
hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:778
radiation chemistry, 11:464, 465
- Aliphatic polyketones, 10:649, 663, 664, 667, 669
flame-retardant, 10:664, 666, 667
types of (table), 10:662
- Aliphatic Polysulfides, 11:168
- Aliphatic Polysulfones, 11:179
radiation chemistry, 11:465
- Aliphatic polyurethane, 9:794, 795
- Aliphatic resins
synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:419
- Alk-cell mercerizing, 2:677
- Alkali lignins, 7:542, 543
- Alkali metals
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:601–603
- Alkali-soluble polymers, 1:156
acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:165, 166
- Alkaline earth metals
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:601–603
- n*-Alkanes
low frequency Raman spectra, 14:580
normal vibrations, 14:569
- Alkenes
modeling parameterizations, 8:580
metallocene-based coupling with alkynes, 8:133–135
metallocene-based dimerization and trimerization, 8:136, 137
- Alkoxyamine initiator, universal, 13:232
- Alkoxyamine initiator, *in situ* in styrene polymerization, 13:228–230
- Alkoxysilane dye
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Alkoxysilanes, 12:470
- Alkyd-isocyanate no-bake binders, 6:201
- Alkyd resins, 1:480–502, 3:332, 333
applications of, 1:499, 500
epoxy esters, 1:498, 499
fatty acid process, 1:494
fatty acids, synthesis from, 1:493–497
long oil, 1:480
medium oil, 1:480
modified alkyds, 1:491, 492
monoglyceride process, 1:493, 494
nonoxidizing alkyds, 1:492, 493
overview, 1:480, 481
oxidizing alkyds, 1:481–489
phenolic-modified alkyds, 1:492
polyamide-modified alkyds, 1:492
synthesis of, 1:493–497
urethane derivatives, 1:497
waterborne alkyds, 1:489–491
- Alkyl-amine, 8:788, 795
- Alkyl amines, phosgene reactions with, 9:625
- Alkyl-carboxy, 8:788
- Alkyl halides
chain transfer agents, 11:533, 534
- tert*-Alkyl hydroperoxide free-radical initiators, 6:851–853
- Alkyl lithium initiator, in cold SBR production, 13:273
- Alkyl methacrylates
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
- Alkyl peroxide radicals, scavenging of, 13:22

- tert*-Alkyl peroxyester free-radical initiators, 6:846
- Alkyl phosphite esters, as melt stabilizers, 13:26, 27
- Alkyl-substituted fumaramate, 9:641
- Alkylated hindered phenol
oxidant used in rubber, 12:192
- Alkylation, 1:523
cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:228
metallocene-based, 8:138
- Alkylcarboxy ligands, 8:795
- Alkylidene groups, 8:149
- Alkyl lithium catalysts, 7:332, 333
- Alkyl lithium compounds
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:604–607
- Alkyl lithium-initiated homopolymerization, 7:333
- Alkylperoxy radicals, 13:28
- Alkylphenol disulfide oligmer, 12:176
- Alkyltin stabilizers. *See* Organotin-based heat stabilizers
- Alkyne-silane polyhydrosilylation, 1:44
- Alkynes
metallocene-based coupling with alkenes, 8:133–135
metallocene-based dimerization and trimerization, 8:136, 137
metathesis polymerization of, 8:153
- All-C₆₀ polymers, 6:338, 339
- All-optical signal processing, 5:93
- All-optical switching, 5:93
- Allophanates, 11:215
- Alloy rayons, 2:688, 689
- Alloys. *See* Polymer alloys
- Allyl coupling reactions
metallocene-based, 8:138
- Allyl methacrylate (AMA), 13:310
- Allyl resins, 14:169
- Allyltrimethylsilane (ATMS)-oxygen plasmas, 10:23
- Alpha-Olefins
metallocene-based copolymerization with ethylene, 8:107–111
- Alpha polymorph, of PVDF, 15:63
- Alpha-relaxation, 15:98
- Alternating copolymers, 3:791
ATRP and, 1:733, 734
acrylonitrile, 1:276
structural representation, 13:164–166
- Alternating-current (a-c) characteristics, of plastics, 4:714–737
correlation of physical and electrical properties, 4:726, 727
engineering applications and, 4:734–736
measurement techniques for, 4:736, 737
moisture, effect of, 4:727–731
temperature and frequency effect on, 4:721–726
theoretical aspects, 4:714–721
thermal aging, effect of, 4:734
voltage and time, effect of, 4:731–734
- Alternating shear, 12:34–36
- Alternative polymerization technique, 8:349
- Alumina
specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Alumina fibers
filler material, 5:785
- Alumina membrane/support, 7:765
- Alumina polycrystalline filaments, 11:697
- Alumina trihydrate, 5:797
- Aluminates
filled silicone networks, 12:486
- Aluminosilicates
spontaneous polymerization, 7:79, 80
- Aluminoxane metallocene cocatalysts, 8:84–91
- Aluminum
bonding and, 1:377, 378
SiC-fiber-reinforced, 11:697
specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Aluminum alkoxides
ring opening polymerization by, 12:140, 141
- Aluminum alkyl cocatalyst, 5:559, 560
- Aluminum alloys
fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
- Aluminum blow molds, 2:240
- Aluminum bonding, 1:406
- Aluminum catalysts
for Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:504–519
- Aluminum chloride, phosgene reactions with, 9:625
- Aluminum phosphate, 5:489
- Aluminum pigments, 3:473
- Aluminum powder
filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
filler properties, 5:380
- Aluminum sulfate
use in water treatment, 3:455
- Aluminum trihydrate (ATH)
- Aluminum trihydrate, 1:355, 356
- Amalgam restorative sealants, 4:408, 409
- AMBER model, 8:580
- AMD. *See* Acrylamide (AMD)
- American Conference of Governmental Industrial Hygienists (ACGIH), 5:534
- American Society for Testing and Materials (ASTM), 4:639, 675
- American Society for Testing and Materials International, 9:102
- Amide and ether linkages, 8:510
- Amide group, of poly(acrylamide), 1:121
- Amides
hydrogen bonded, 4:447, 448
phosgene reactions with, 9:626
- Amido-ferrocene dendrimers, 7:51, 52
- Amidoamines
advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:338
coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:347
curing agents, 5:337
- Amine-functional coupling agents, 12:421
- Amines
coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:337–348
curing agents, 5:337
hindered, 13:14
- Aminimide monomers
for chain-growth polymerizations (table), 1:504, 505
preparation of, 1:503–507
properties of, 1:508
reactivity ratios for (table), 1:510
for step-growth polymerizations (table), 1:506, 507
- Aminimide polymers, 1:502–515
applications of, 1:513
monomers, properties of, 1:508

- overview, 1:502, 503
 polymerization of, 1:509–511
 preparation of monomers, 1:503–507
 properties of, 1:511–513
- Amino acid containing polymers, 8:168
- α -Amino acid *N*-carboxyanhydrides (NCAs), 11:47, 50
- Amino acids
 chemical structures, 15:186
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, multisite, 6:381
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, wild-type biosynthetic apparatus, 6:407–411
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, via heterologous aaRS/tRNA pairs, 6:411–416
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, via overexpression of mutant aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases, 6:420–422
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, via overexpression of wild-type aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases, 6:418–420
 phosgene reactions with, 6:416, 417, 9:626
 side-chain protected for peptide synthesis (table), 11:68–79
 in solid-phase peptide synthesis, 11:62, 63
- Amino formaldehyde
 curing agents, 5:337
- Amino plastics, 1:517. *See also* Amino resins
- Amino resin molding compounds, properties of, 1:529
- Amino resins, 1:515–544, 3:321, 322, 14:168
 chemistry of formation of, 1:521–524
 coatings from, 1:528–531
 cured, 1:528
 economic aspects of, 1:544
 history of, 1:516, 517
 laminating resins, 1:526, 527
 manufacture of, 1:524–526
 molding compounds from, 1:527, 528
 in the paper industry, 1:538–543
 raw materials for, 1:517–521
 regulatory concerns for, 1:543
 as textile finishes, 1:531–538
 uses of, 1:515, 516
- Amino resins, cross linking of, 4:78–80
 melamine formaldehyde resins, 4:80
 urea-formaldehyde resins, 4:78–80
- Aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, via heterologous aaRS/tRNA pairs, 6:381, 382
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, via overexpression of mutant, 6:420–422
 nonnatural amino acid incorporation, via overexpression of wild-type, 6:418–420
- Aminoalcohols, 6:416, 417
- o*-Aminobenzylamine (OABA)
- 4-Aminobutyltriethoxysilane (ABS)
 coupling agent, 12:421, 429
- 2-Aminoethanethiol hydrochloride
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- 4-(2'-Aminoethyl)-2-methoxy-5-nitro-phenoxypropionic acid, 11:78
- N*- γ -(Aminoethyl)- γ -aminopropylmethyldimethoxysilane, 12:187
- N*-2-Aminoethyl-3-aminopropyltrimethoxysilane (AEAPS)
 coupling agent, 12:421
- N*-Aminoethylpiperazine
 curing agent, 5:345
- 5-(4-Aminomethyl-3,5-dimethoxyphenoxy)valeric acid, 11:78
- 3-Aminopropyltriethoxysilane (APS)
 coupling agent, 12:421, 423, 424, 429
- γ -Aminopropyltriethoxysilane, 12:187
- 5-(9-Aminoxanthen-3-oxy)valeric acid (XAL), 11:79
- AMM mechanism. *See* Activated monomer mechanism (AMM)
- Ammonia separation, from ammonia reactor purges, 5:836
- Ammonia, phosgene reactions with, 9:625
- Ammonium perfluorooctanoate (APFO), applications, 6:148
- Amoco chemicals, 9:458
- Amorphous block copolymers, 7:318–321
- Amorphous Carbon Treatment on Internal Surface (ACTIS) technology, 2:53
- Amorphous cell module, Materials Studio modeling package, 8:585
- Amorphous cellulose, 2:576, 579
- Amorphous ductile polymers, yielding in, 8:480–482
- Amorphous halo, 1:562
- Amorphous homopolymers, plastic deformation processes in, 8:477–482
- Amorphous materials
 sub-yield behavior of, 15:146
- Amorphous matrix, toughened polymers with, 8:486–490
- Amorphous phenylene polymers
 β -relaxations, effect of moisture on, 13:842, 843
- Amorphous piezoelectric polymers
 examples of, 9:791–795
 structure, polarization, and glass transition temperature of, 9:792, 795
- Amorphous poled polymer, 9:796
- Amorphous polyacrylonitrile, 1:278
- Amorphous polyesters, 4:218–220
- Amorphous polymers, 1:547–590, 2:733, 5:202, 8:523
 density fluctuations, 1:556–561
 dielectric spectroscopy, 1:584, 585
 effects of plasticizers and moisture, 13:839
 enthalpy and heat capacity relaxation, 1:588
 fractionation by molecular weight, 6:229–237
 and glass transition temperature, 1:582, 583
 isochronal experiments, 13:838
 low frequency vibrational spectroscopy, 14:590, 591
 molecular weight dependence, 1:572–574
 NMR, 1:586–588
 order in and associated dynamics, 1:561–566
 photon correlation spectroscopy, 1:586
 piezoelectricity in, 9:788–795
 positron annihilation lifetime spectroscopy, 1:588
 pressure dependence of dynamics, 1:589, 590
 quasi-elastic neutron scattering, 1:547, 588
 scattering methods for studying, 1:547–556
 solid-state extrusion, 12:694, 695
 temperature dependence, 1:566–568, 570–572
 thermal characterization methods, 2:744, 745

- thermal conductivity, 14:28–30
thermoforming, 14:121, 122
ultrasonic attenuation, 1:586
viscoelastic behavior, 1:568–570
viscoelastic behavior and chemical structure, 1:583, 584
viscoelastic behavior of narrow molecular weight distribution polymers, 1:574–581
- Amorphous PVDF regions, 15:63
Amorphous rubbery polymers
 transport properties, 14:298–313
Amorphous silica, 5:797, 798, 12:464
 for rubber compounding, 12:224–226
Amorphous state, polymer behavior in, 15:93–103
Amorphous thermoplastics, 6:320, 321, 10:69
Amorphous, glassy polymers, crazing in, 8:478–480
Amorsorb oxygen absorber, 2:59
 amphiphilic macro-RAFT agents, 11:743
Amphiphiles
 critical micelle concentration (CMC), 14:516
Amphiphilic antifoams, 1:666, 667
 calcium/magnesium salts of organic acids, 1:667
 long-chain fatty alcohols, acids, and esters, 1:667
 molecular defoamers, 1:667
 surfactant antifoams, 1:666, 667
Amphiphilic block addition, for fouling prevention, 5:849
Amphiphilic block copolymer micelle, 8:272
 application of, 8:273
 self-assembly of block copolymer, 8:273, 274
 structure of, 8:272
Amphiphilic block copolymer molecule, 8:281
Amphiphilic block copolymers, 8:159, 282, 274, 786, 790
 gold nanoparticles, encapsulation of, 8:790
 ligand exchange, 8:795, 796
 magnetic nanoparticles and quantum dots, 8:792–795
Amphiphilic molecules, 8:790
Amphiphilic polymers, 8:187
Amphoteric macromolecules, 10:297
Amphoteric metal oxides, tuning sorption behaviors, 7:186–188
Amphoteric surfactants. *See* Surfactants
Amyloidosis, peptides in the condensed phase, 12:670
Amylopectin, 6:462, 15:190
 polyacrylamide grafted, turbulent drag reduction, 4:561
Amylopectin molecules, submicronic layers, 13:63
Amylose, 2:82, 3:155–158, 5:229, 15:190
 A-form of, 3:156
 with alcohols and fatty acids, 3:158
 B-form of, 3:156
 with carbon nanotubes, 3:158, 159
 chemical structure of, 3:156
 and iodine clathrate, 3:157, 158
 V-form of, 3:156, 157
ANA/AAA/3-fluorophthalic acid (FPA), 7:570
ANA/AAA/IA system, 7:569, 570
ANA/AAA/PA system, 7:569, 570
Anaerobic acrylic adhesives, 1:419, 420
Anaerobic pyrolysis, in mesophase, 6:43, 44
Analog-to-digital (A/D) conversion, 5:110
Analytical electron microscopy (AEM)
 forensics applications, 6:178
Analytical methods. *See also* Testing
 acrylonitrile, 1:269, 270
 aromatic polyamides, 10:217
 chitin and chitosan, 3:39
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:456, 457
 forensic analysis, 6:177–181
 hyperbranched polymers, 6:790, 791
 LLDPE, 5:574–577
 melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:737–739
 phosgene, 9:628, 629
 polyacrylamides, 1:141–144
 polycyanoacrylates, 10:432
 SAN copolymers, 1:290
 silicones, 12:512–516
Anatase titanium dioxide pigment, 3:470
Andrade creep, 1:582
Andrews-Kinloch analysis, of adhesion, 1:387
Anechoic coatings, 1:93
Angle-ply composites, 4:132
Anharmonic oscillator model, 9:124–126
Anhydrides
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:338
 curing agents, 5:337
3,6-Anhydro- α -L-galactopyranose, 15:188
Anhydrous aluminum chloride, phosgene reactions with, 9:625
Aniline, 1:520
 oxidative polymerization, 9:444, 445
 polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:757
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
Aniline-formaldehyde resins, 1:518
Aniline, polymerization of, 5:273, 274
Anion-exchange membrane, 7:747, 788
Anion exchangers, with quaternary ammonium functional groups, 7:188
Anionic acrylamide polymers, 1:118
 mineral processing with, 1:119
Anionic catalysts
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 curing agents, 5:337
Anionic copolymers of acrylamide, 1:132
Anionic homopolymerization, of acrolein polymers, 1:110, 111
Anionic latexes
 anionic and cationic compared (table), 3:73
Anionic PAM (acrylamide-co-acrylic acid 30%)
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
Anionic polyacrylamide
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
Anionic polyelectrolytes
 water-soluble polymers, 15:203–207
Anionic polymerization of styrene, 8:350
Anionic polymerization, 1:596–644, 2:191, 726, 727. *See also* Living polymerization
 in cold SBR production, 13:273, 274
 copolymerization, 1:639–644
 in hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:787
 initiation by electron transfer, 1:601–604
 initiation by nucleophilic addition, 1:604–608
 living, 1:596, 597

- living polymerization as, 13:227, 228
 macromers, 13:724
 for macromonomers synthesis, 6:489
 monomers, 1:599
 polar monomers, 1:620–628
 and polybutadiene macrostructure, 2:304
 polybutadiene synthesis, 2:313–316
 silicones, 12:475, 476
 solvents, 1:600, 601
 stereochemistry, 1:628–639
 of styrene, 8:350, 13:189, 193, 195, 223–226
 styrene and diene monomers, 1:609–620
 telechelic polymers, 13:689–694
- Anionic surfactants. *See* Surfactants
- Anions, noncoordinating, 5:562
- Anisole
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Anisole solvent coagulation
 bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:292
- Anisotropic micelles, 8:280, 281
- Anisotropically conductive adhesives/films (ACA/ACF), 3:646, 647
- Anisotropy, 9:387–389
 aramid fibers, 11:694
 assessment with vibrational spectroscopy, 14:607–612
 in polystyrene injection molding, 13:246
- “Annealed” polyampholytes, 10:297, 298
- Annealing, 1:649–662
 bisphenol A polycarbonate, 1:658, 659
 economic aspects of, 1:659
 effectiveness of, 1:658
 equipment for, 1:655, 656
 examples of, 1:658, 659
 failure modes of, 1:653
 growth of nuclei, 1:654, 655
 medium for, 1:657, 658
 methods of, 1:656, 657
 overview, 1:649, 650
 of polysulfones, 11:197
 principles of, 1:653–655
 stress distribution and, 1:652
 theoretical background of, 1:650–653
 volume-temperature behavior, 1:651
- Annular dies, 5:672–674
- ansa*-Cs-symmetric metallocene catalysts, 13:94
- Antagonism, among antioxidants, 1:703, 13:42–45
- Anthracene
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Anthraquinone dyes, 3:488
- Anti-deposition coatings, 11:705
- Anti-redeposition agents, 11:705
- Anti-Stokes Raman scattering, 14:567
- Antiblock agents, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
 films, 5:807, 808
- Antiblocking agents, in plastics compounding, 3:551
- Antibodies
 artificial, 8:684, 699–702
 molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:699–702
- Antibody enzyme catalysis, 5:223
- Anticlined atoms, in semicrystalline polymers, 12:374, 375
- Antidegradants
 nonstaining and persistent for rubber, 12:191–200
 rubber compounding, 12:230–235
- Antiflammability, of fibers, 10:524. *See also* Fire retardants; Flame retardants
- Antifoaming agents, 1:662–684
 amphiphilic antifoams, 1:666, 667
 applications, 1:675–681
 basic requirements for, 1:663, 664
 categories (table), 1:665
 components, 1:664–669
 delivery systems, 1:667–669
 droplets, 1:668
 fermentation, 1:675–677
 foam stabilization, 1:662, 672
 Gibbs-Marangoni effect, 1:662, 669
 health and safety factors, 1:683, 684
 hydrophobic, 1:664–666
 in adhesives and sealants, 1:680
 in chemical processes, 1:680
 in construction industry, 1:679
 in fertilizer industry, 1:679
 in food and beverages, 1:679, 680
 in jet dyeing of textiles, 1:679
 in leather processing, 1:680
 in medical/pharmaceuticals, 1:680, 681
 in metal working industry, 1:678
 in oil and gas, 1:677
 in pulp and paper industry, 1:675
 laundry and automatic dishwashing, 1:677, 678
 mechanisms of action, 1:669–675
 organic-based, 1:665, 666
 paints, coatings, and inks, 1:677
 plateau borders, 1:669
 pneumatic methods, 1:681
 polymerization/latices, 1:678, 679
 pour methods, 1:681, 682
 recirculation method, 1:682
 reduced gas diffusion, 1:670
 shaking methods, 1:681
 silicone-based, 1:666
 stirring and blending methods, 1:682
 surface tensions of (table), 1:671
 testing methods, 1:681, 682
 wastewater treatment, 1:678
- Antifoams
 for polychloroprene latex, 3:75, 76
- Antimicrobial acrylic fibers, 1:253
- Antimicrobial agents
 for fiber, 10:257
 films, 5:808
- Antimicrobial peptides (AMPs), 10:753, 754
- Antimicrobials, 1:350, 351
- Antimony, 1:355
- Antimony mercaptide stabilizers, 6:583
- Antimony oxide
 filler material, 5:785
- Antioxidant blends, 1:702, 703
- Antioxidants, 1:351–353, 687–718, 13:1, 2
 in ABS polymers, 1:320
 in acrylic elastomers, 1:187
 antagonistic mixtures, 1:703
 applications, 1:703–714

- biological, 13:39–42
 chain-breaking, 13:11, 13, 14, 22–26, 30, 31
 chloroprene polymers, 3:64, 65
 color stability, 1:717
 commercial (table), 13:12–15
 commonly used by class (table), 1:705–709
 compatibility, 1:716, 717, 13:19, 20
 cost effectiveness, 1:717, 718
 diffusion, volatility, and leachability of, 13:20
 effective temperatures for, 1:701, 702
 films, 5:807
 health and safety factors, 1:717
 higher molar mass, 13:36, 37
 metal deactivators, 1:700
 mixing in extruders, 10:71
 nylon, 10:257
 performance of, 13:18–20
 peroxide decomposers, 1:697, 698
 physical form, 1:717
 for polychloroprene latex, 3:76
 in polymer stabilization, 13:11–18
 as polystyrene additives, 13:249
 preventive, 13:16–18
 for propylene polymers, 11:405
 radical scavengers, 1:689, 690
 reactive, 13:37–39
 rubber compounding, 12:191–200
 in SBR processing, 13:276, 277
 synergism and antagonism among, 13:42–45
 synergistic mixtures, 1:703
 taste and odor, 1:717
 test methods, 1:714–716, 13:760
 uninhibited autoxidation, 1:687–689
 use with UV stabilizers, 14:452
 volatility, 1:716
- Antiozants**
 for chloroprene polymers, 3:65, 66
- Antiozonants**, in SBR processing, 13:276, 277. *See also*
 Rubber chemicals
- Antiplasticization**, 6:453, 10:44, 13:846
- Antiplasticization effect**, 13:841
- Antiplasticizers**, 13:844–846
- Antirads**, 11:484, 485
- Antirestenotic agents**
 controlled release from stent coatings, 3:754
- Antisoil fibers**, 10:520
- Antistatic agents**
 films, 5:807, 808
 nylon, 10:257
 as polystyrene additives, 13:249
- Antistatic agents**, 3:552
- Antistatic fibers**, 10:520
- Antistatic polystyrene**, 13:188
- Antistats**, 1:353, 354
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
- Antistick agents**, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
- Antox**, 5:479
- AOTP**, 13:39, 40
- Aperture angle**, 8:110
- Apparel applications**
 of nylon, 10:265
 of polyester fibers, 10:510, 511
- Aprotic polar solvents**, 5:838
- APTAC** (acrylamidopropylacrylamide), acrylamide
 copolymers with, 1:134
- Aqueous-developed materials**, 5:78–82
- Aqueous dispersion polymerization**
 acrylonitrile, 1:234–237
- Aqueous dispersions**
 polysulfide, 11:178
- Aqueous emulsion polymerization**
 fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:166
- Aqueous formaldehyde**, 1:520
- Aqueous phase kinetics**, 5:174
- Aqueous size exclusion chromatography**
 columns for, 3:112
 secondary interactions in, 3:109
- Arabidopsis**, 4:7, 10:106
 cellulose biosynthesis, 2:572, 573
- β -D-Arabinofuranose**, 15:188
- Arabinose**, 15:188
- Arachidic acid**
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:426
- Aramid fiber reinforcement**, 11:693, 694
- Aramid fibers**, 6:701, 10:212
 chemical resistance of (table), 10:231
 consumption of, 10:234
 D_k and D_f at 1 MHz, 5:403
 economic aspects of, 10:232, 233
 filler material, 5:785
 properties of, 9:346, 10:229, 230, 11:693–695
 specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Aramid films**
 properties of, 10:233
- Aramid honeycombs**
 phenolic resins, 9:578
- Aramidides**, lyotropic liquid crystalline, 7:65
- Arbuzov Cyclopolycondensation**, 9:670
- Arc-detection systems**, 4:462
- Arc resistance**, 4:704, 13:780
 and electric breakdown, 4:695, 696
 of several plastics (table), 4:697
- Aregic linkages**, 11:518
- ARGET**. *See* Activators regenerated by electron transfer (ARGET)
- Arginine** (2,2,4,6,7-pentamethyldihydrobenzofuran-5-sulfonyl protected), 11:71
- Arginine** (4-toluenesulfonyl protected), 11:68
- Arginine** (mesitylene-2-sulfonyl protected), 11:68
- Arginine**
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- ArgoGel**, 11:27, 28, 31
- Argon-Hannoosh model**, of craze initiation, 15:484–486
- Argon model**, of yield, 15:466, 467
- ArgoPore**, 11:23
- Arm-first star polymers**, 6:540
- Aroma compounds**
 permeation, 2:25, 26
 transport in various high and moderate barrier polymers, 2:36
- Aromatic amines**
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:338

- as antioxidants, 13:13
- coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:343, 344
- radical scavengers, 1:692–694
- Aromatic compounds, oxidative coupling of, 11:186
- Aromatic diamine monomers, chemical structures of, 5:70
- Aromatic dianhydride monomers, chemical structures of, 5:70
- Aromatic dihalide intermediates, in polysulfone polymerization, 11:185
- Aromatic glycidyl amine resins, 5:318–320
- Aromatic hydrocarbons
 - oxidative polymerization, 9:447, 448
- Aromatic main-chain polymers, yields of formation of free radicals (table), 11:478, 479
- Aromatic monomers, hyperbranched polyester synthesized from, 6:780
- Aromatic nucleophilic displacement, for polyarylene ethers synthesis, 10:626
- Aromatic nucleophilic substitution, in polysulfone polymerization, 11:185
- Aromatic poly(ether-ketone)s, hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:782
- Aromatic polyamides, 10:211–234
 - commercial polymerization processes for, 10:219, 220
 - commercial products based on (table), 10:220
 - economic aspects of, 10:232, 233
 - examples of, 10:215
 - fiber and film properties of, 10:224–226
 - health and safety of, 10:233–235
 - history of, 10:211, 212
 - ingredient sources for, 10:213, 214
 - laboratory synthesis of, 10:217–219
 - nomenclature of, 10:213
 - photodegradation, 4:283
 - polymer properties of, 10:214–217
 - processing of, 10:220–224
 - uses for, 10:226–232
- Aromatic polyamines
 - curing agents, 5:337
- Aromatic polycarbonates, 9:664
- Aromatic polyester polyols, 11:223
- Aromatic polyesters
 - dielectric properties, 4:480
 - hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:778–781
 - photodegradation, 4:281, 283
 - polyarylates, 10:351
 - radiation chemistry, 11:482, 483
- Aromatic polyethers, 10:571–591
 - photodegradation, 4:283
- Aromatic polyimide (PI), 5:68, 8:23
- Aromatic polyketones
 - photodegradation, 4:283
- Aromatic polyamides, 10:211–235
- Aromatic polymers, 11:475–483
- Aromatic polysulfones, 11:179
 - key attributes of, 11:188
 - mechanical properties of, 11:187
 - photodegradation, 4:283
 - radiation chemistry, 11:477–480
- Aromatic resin
 - mesophase pitch-based carbon fibers, 2:475, 476
 - synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:419
- Aromatic ring in polystyrene, hydrogenation of, 6:771
- Aromatic rings, conversion to nonaromatic cyclic structures, 7:529
- Aromatics
 - SIMS spectra, 13:484
- AROMP, 8:192
- Arrhenius activation energy
 - of styrene polymer scission, 13:208, 209
- Arrhenius equation
 - radiolysis reactions, temperature dependence, 11:485, 486
- Arrhenius expression, 3:619
- Arrhenius temperature dependence, 1:472
- Arthropoda, 3:33
- Artifact conservation
 - xylylene polymer applications, 15:442, 443
- Artifact-free CPL spectra, 12:662
- Artificial antibodies, 8:684, 699–701
- Artificial proteins
 - representative consensus sequences for genetically synthesized protein polymers, 6:403–407
- Artificial silk, 2:673–674, 6:389
- Artificial skin
 - biodegradable polymers for, 2:116
- Artificial urushi, 9:437
- Aryl amines, phosgene reactions with, 9:625
- Aryl benzobisoxazole, 12:96
- Aryl phosphite esters, as melt stabilizers, 13:26, 27
- Arylamines, 9:760
- Aryldimethoxyboranes, 7:45
- Arylenedynes, cross-coupling polymerization of, 1:36
- Arylyl amines
 - coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:344
- ASA. *See* Acrylonitrile-styrene-acrylate (ASA)
- Asbestos
 - filler material, 5:785
- Asia
 - plastics recycling, 11:659, 660
- Asparagine (9-xanthenyl protected), 11:68
- Asparagine (triphenylmethyl protected), 11:71
- Asparagine
 - chemical structure, 15:186
 - composition in silk, 12:543
- Aspartic acid
 - allyl protected, 11:74
 - cyclohexyl protected, 11:68
 - chemical structure, 15:186
 - composition in silk, 12:543
 - (*N*-[1-(4,4-dimethyl-2,6-dioxocyclohexylidene)-3-methylbutyl]-amino-benzyl protected), 11:74
 - fluorenylmethyl protected, 11:74
 - percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
 - tert*-butyl protected, 11:71
- Aspergillus flavus*, 4:9
- Aspergillus niger*
 - biodegradation by, 2:100
- Asphalts
 - blends with styrenic thermoplastic elastomers, 14:154, 155
- Assembly
 - nylons, 10:290

- “Associative” polymers (APs), 6:735
 3D reversible network, intermolecular association, 6:736
 critical micelle concentration (CMC), 6:735
 flexible chains, 6:736
 hydrophilic central chain, 6:736
 macromolecular architecture (topology), 6:736
 stickers (ABA-type block copolymers), 6:735
- ASTM C1126-00, 9:617
ASTM C177, 5:374
ASTM D1003, 13:770
ASTM D1238, 13:770, 771
ASTM D1238E, 5:804
ASTM D1435, 13:770, 777, 14:457
ASTM D149, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D1499, 14:457
ASTM D150, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D1505, 3:543, 13:770
ASTM D1525, 13:769, 770, 776
ASTM D1693, 13:776
ASTM D1709, 6:801, 809
ASTM D1729, 13:778, 779
ASTM D1755, 14:756
ASTM D1765, 2:427
ASTM D1783-01, 9:600
ASTM D1822, 6:800, 801, 809, 13:770
ASTM D1929, 13:770
ASTM D2132, 13:780
ASTM D2244, 13:770, 779
ASTM D228-95, 4:625
ASTM D2289, 6:801
ASTM D2302, 13:780
ASTM D2344, 5:374
ASTM D2444, 6:801
ASTM D2457, 13:779
ASTM D256, 5:374, 6:800, 801, 13:770, 773
ASTM D257, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D2583, 5:374
ASTM D2656-92A, 14:457
ASTM D2734, 5:374
ASTM D2857, 13:770
ASTM D2863, 13:770, 781
ASTM D296, 5:374
ASTM D2990, 13:770
ASTM D3029, 6:801
ASTM D3123, 13:771
ASTM D3132, 13:770
ASTM D3379, 3:544
ASTM D3386, 4:625
ASTM D3410, 5:374
ASTM D3433, 5:374
ASTM D3638, 13:780
ASTM D3763, 13:770
ASTM D3795, 13:771
ASTM D3800, 3:543
ASTM D3801, 13:770, 781
ASTM D3814, 13:770, 780
ASTM D3835, 13:770, 781
ASTM D3985, 2:24
ASTM D4018, 3:544
ASTM D4065, 4:625, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D4092, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D4255, 5:374
ASTM D4362-94, 14:457
ASTM D4364, 13:770, 777
ASTM D4440, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D4473, 4:625
ASTM D4617-96, 9:606
ASTM D4639-86, 9:600
ASTM D4674, 13:770
ASTM D4706-93, 9:598
ASTM D495, 13:780
ASTM D5023, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D5024, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D5026, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D5045, 5:374, 6:801, 821, 13:770, 775
ASTM D5071, 13:770
ASTM D5209, 13:770
ASTM D5210, 13:770
ASTM D5229, 5:374
ASTM D523, 13:779
ASTM D5247, 13:770
ASTM D5271, 13:770
ASTM D5272, 13:770
ASTM D5279, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D5338, 13:770
ASTM D5417, 13:770
ASTM D5418, 4:625, 13:770
ASTM D5420, 13:770
ASTM D5422, 13:770, 771
ASTM D543, 13:770, 776
ASTM D5509, 13:770
ASTM D5510, 13:770
ASTM D5511, 13:770
ASTM D5512, 13:770
ASTM D5525, 13:770
ASTM D5526, 13:770
ASTM D5528, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D560, 13:770
ASTM D568, 13:781
ASTM D570, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D578, 3:543
ASTM D579, 3:544
ASTM D5934, 4:625
ASTM D5988, 13:770
ASTM D6003, 13:770
ASTM D6058, 13:770
ASTM D6110, 6:800, 801, 806, 13:770
ASTM D6290, 13:770
ASTM D635, 13:770, 781
ASTM D6360, 13:770
ASTM D638, 5:374, 695, 702, 13:770, 772
ASTM D6382, 4:625
ASTM D6400, 2:74, 75
ASTM D648, 5:374, 13:770, 776
ASTM D671-71, 5:695
ASTM D695, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D696, 5:374, 13:775, 824
ASTM D731, 13:771
ASTM D746, 6:801
ASTM D7729, 13:770
ASTM D785, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D790, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D792, 3:543, 5:374, 13:770
ASTM D903, 5:374
ASTM E1027, 13:770, 777

- ASTM E1363–97, 4:625
 ASTM E1545–91(a), 4:625
 ASTM E1640–99, 4:625
 ASTM E176, 13:770, 780
 ASTM E1824–96, 4:625
 ASTM E1867–01, 4:625
 ASTM E2254–03, 4:625
 ASTM E381, 5:374
 ASTM E473–94, 4:625
 ASTM E831, 13:825
 ASTM E831–86, 13:824, 825
 ASTM E831–93, 4:625
 ASTM E96, 2:24
 ASTM F1249, 2:24
 ASTM G152, 13:770
 ASTM G153, 13:770
 ASTM G21, 13:770, 777
 ASTM G22, 13:770, 777
 ASTM G24, 13:776, 14:457
 ASTM G26, 13:770, 14:475
 ASTM G53–93, 14:457
 ASTM G90, 91, 14:457
 ASTM international, 6:86
 ASTM methods, 11:188
 LDPE and, 5:531
 summary of, 13:770
 ASTM UL94, 13:770
 ASTM. *See* American Society for Testing and Materials (ASTM)
 Asymmetric block copolymers, 2:199
 Asymmetric field from helical chirality, 3:23–25
 Asymmetric hydrogenation (reduction), 8:449
 Asymmetric membranes, 7:746, 747
 preparation and uses of, 7:752–768
 Asymmetric PEO-PDMS-PMOX vesicles, 14:530
 Asymmetric polymerization technique, 3:4, 5
 Asymmetric porous membranes, 5:828, 829. *See also*
 Symmetric porous membranes
 Asymmetric SBS triblock copolymer, 12:295
 Asymmetric triblock copolymer PAA-PS-P4VP vesicles,
 14:530
 Asymmetry parameter, 2:193
 Asymptotic stability, 3:395
 Asynchronous, 2*D* Raman correlation, 14:395
 Atactic-isotactic stereoblock polypropylene, 13:104, 105
 Atactic poly(methyl methacrylate)
 conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta
 solvent, 9:56
 Atactic poly(propylene oxide), 11:330, 331
 Atactic polyketones, 10:652
 Atactic polymers, 13:650
 Atactic polyoxypropylene, 11:331, 332, 350
 moderate barrier polymer, 2:46, 47
 molecular modeling, 8:583
 temperature dependence of terminal zone of
 response, 1:571
 Atactic polystyrene (aPS)
 conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta
 solvent, 9:56
 modulation spectroscopy, 14:626
 Atactic *trans*-poly(methylene-1,3-cyclopentane) (PMCP)
 ATCO oxygen absorber, 2:59
 ATH. *See* Aluminum trihydrate (ATH)
 Athermal mixing, 8:527, 528
 Atlas Weathering Services Group, 15:254
 Atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP),
 1:720–745, 3:4, 195–197, 5:257, 6:480, 482, , 7:416,
 653–656, 8:166, 339,445, 9:648, 11:534–537
 activators generated by electron transfer, 1:727
 alternating/periodic copolymers, 1:733, 734
 ARGET, 1:728
 azoinitiators, 11:506, 507
 biodegradable nanogel, formation of, 1:736
 block copolymers, 1:734
 catalyst concentration, decreasing, 1:728
 catalytic activity, 1:724–726
 chain end functionality and, 1:731
 chain end functionality of, 1:731
 components of, 1:721, 722
 conducting, 1:728, 729
 of cyclic polymers, 1:737
 DBCPs synthesis by, 4:373, 374
 development of, 7:650
 free energy change in, 1:723
 functional initiators for (table), 1:731, 732
 functionality of, 1:729–732
 functional monomers and, 1:730, 731
 fundamentals of, 1:720, 721
 graft or brush copolymer and, 1:735, 736
 “green,” 1:737
 hyperbranched/cross-linked networks in, 1:737
 ICAR, 1:728
 initiation systems of, 1:726–728
 initiators for, 6:858, 859
 materials for, 1:729–737
 mechanism of transition metal complex-mediated,
 1:721
 mechanistic considerations in, 1:722–728
 (meth)acrylate, 1:731
 modification of polymer chain, 1:733
 overview, 1:720
 polymer composition and microstructure, 1:732–735
 random/gradient copolymers, 1:732, 733
 rate constants of activation and, 1:725
 rate of activation in Cu-based, 1:725
 rate of polymerization in, 1:721
 rational catalyst selection, 1:724–726
 relative K_{ATRP} values, 1:722, 723
 reverse and normal, 1:726, 727
 side reactions during, 1:726, 727
 simultaneous reverse and normal initiation, 1:727
 star copolymer and, 1:736, 737
 of styrene, 13:228
 subequilibria, 1:723, 724
 surface-initiated, 9:650
 tacticity/stereoblocks, control of, 1:735
 telechelic polymers, 13:261–687
 topology, 1:735–737
 transition metal complex mediates, 1:722
 Atomic force and scanning probe microscopy, 9:105
 Atomic force microscopy, 1:746–783, 2:752, 10:734,
 13:757
 for composition and structure determination, 13:760,
 761
 design of, 1:748–753
 developing techniques for, 1:757–761
 mechanical analysis via, 1:753–757
 poly(ethylene-*co*-styrene) blends, 5:438

- polymer system analysis and, *1:747–761*
 surface characteristics and, *1:779–782*
 systems in, *1:761–779*
 use in forensic analysis, *6:181*
- Atomic polarization, *4:480*
- Atomic spacing, in determining tensile strength, *11:682, 683*
- Atomization, *8:425*
- ATRP. *See* Atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP)
- ATRP initiators, *8:344, 9:649*
- ATRP subequilibria, *1:723, 724*
- Attenuated total reflectance
 use in forensic analysis, *6:181*
- Attenuation
 and sound absorption, *1:62*
- Attenuation spectra, comparison of, *9:381*
- Attractive force microscope, *1:751*
- Attractive forces
 polymer dispersions, *6:641–644*
- Aufbau reaction, *15:504*
- Auger spectroscopy
 forensics applications, *6:179*
- AuNR surfaces, *8:798*
- Autocatalysis, *1:689*
- Autocatalytic polyols, *11:221*
- Autoclave processing
 composite materials, *3:517, 518*
- Autoclave reactors
 for LDPE, *5:519*
 stirred, *5:519*
- Autoclaving
 thermosets, *14:206, 207*
- Autohesion, *1:367, 368, 382–385*
 rate and temperature effects on, *1:382–385*
- Autohesive tack, *1:379*
- Automatic folding machines, *3:584–588*
- Automobile airbags, nylon in, *10:265*
- Automobile electrocoat paint, ultrafiltration and, *7:780*
- Automobile tires
 nylon reinforcing fibers in, *10:265*
 recycling of, *13:278*
 SBR used in, *13:276, 277*
- Automobiles, use of coated fabrics, *5:692*
- Automotive applications
 phenolic resin applications in air and oil filters, *9:612*
 for polyamide plastics, *10:290, 291*
 polyarylates, *10:353*
 for polyketones, *10:664, 665*
 recycling, *11:670, 671*
- Automotive coatings
 composite material test programs, *3:547*
 epoxy resins, *5:395–397*
- Automotive plastics and composites, *1:787–817*
- ABS polymers, *1:798, 799*
- automotive polymers, types of, *1:793*
- biobased thermoplastic resins, *1:812, 813*
- biobased thermoset resins, *1:813, 814*
- copolymers and blends, *1:798, 799*
- design considerations and, *1:791–793*
- directional price comparison for (table), *1:792*
- elastomers, *1:803–806*
- foam, *1:802, 803*
- global trends for, *1:787, 788*
- material selection for automotive applications, *1:792*
- molding compounds, *1:799, 800*
- natural fibers and fillers, *1:814*
- plastic resin costs, *1:791*
- polyamides, *1:797*
- polybutylene terephthalate, *1:798*
- polycarbonate, *1:798*
- polyesters, *1:797, 798*
- polyethylene terephthalate, *1:797, 798*
- polymeric composites, *1:801, 802*
- polymethyl methacrylate, *1:798*
- polyolefins, *1:793–797*
- polyurethanes, *1:800, 801*
- polyvinyl chloride, *1:798*
- processing considerations for, *1:792, 793*
- processing of, *1:806–811*
- recycled plastics, *1:815*
- reinforcement preparation for, *1:802*
- reinforcing agents for, *1:801, 802*
- styrene maleic anhydride, *1:799*
- sustainable materials, *1:811–815*
- thermoplastics, *1:793–799*
- thermosets, *1:799–801*
 usage of, *1:788–791*
 vehicle systems using, *1:790, 791*
- Automotive thermoplastics (table), and applications, *1:794–796*
- Autonomic healing, *12:340–367*
 dual-capsule systems, *12:355–362*
 ideal one-capsule self-healing system, *12:340, 341*
 one-capsule systems, *12:340*
- Autophotosensitive polyimides, structure of, *5:80*
- Autophotosensitive preimidized polyimides, *5:78*
- Autostepwise TGA, *13:821*
- Autosynergism, *13:44*
- Autoxidation, *1:687–689, 13:2–5*
- Autoxidation curve, *13:3*
- AvaSpire, *10:563*
- Average (dielectric) relaxation time, *4:480*
- Average molar mass
 polymer characterization methods, *2:739, 740*
- (Z+1)-Average molecular weight, *8:660*
- Average stress, in fibers, *11:687*
- Avogadro's number, *5:172*
- Avril, *2:685, 687*
- Awnings, *14:57*
- Axial ratio, *2:253*
- Axial stress, *15:451*
- Axis crossing, *2:381, 383*
- Azelaic acid
 comonomer with diisocyanates, *7:254*
- Azeotrope compositions, of acrylonitrile (table), *1:264*
- Azide-bearing styrene, *8:459*
- Azide/alkyne click reaction, *3:187*. *See also* Click reactions
 amino-ligands for, *3:192*
 catalysts for, *3:190–194*
 mechanism of, *3:188–190*
 side reactions, *3:192, 193*
- Azidodiyne, click polymerization of, *1:46*
- 3-Azidopropyl methacrylate (AzMA), *6:473*
- Azine dyes, *3:489*

- Azo chromophore, 3:474
- Azo compound reactions, of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:265
- Azo compounds, 1:817–832
- alkyl branching (table), effect of, 1:822
 - alpha-substituent (table), effect of, 1:822
 - applications of, 1:828–830
 - commercial initiators (table), 1:818, 819
 - economic aspects of, 1:827, 828
 - free-radical initiators, 6:855–857
 - health and safety factors, 1:828
 - in polystyrene production, 13:217
 - overview, 1:817–820
 - preparation of, 1:824–827
 - properties of, 1:820–824
 - ring size (table), effect of, 1:822
 - solubility rating of (table), 1:821
- Azo dye-glycidyl methacrylate systems, 4:587, 588
- Azo dyes, 3:488
- Azo pigments, 3:474, 475
- metallized reds, oranges, and yellows, 3:475–477
- Azobenzene, 4:313
- use in molecular self-assembly, 8:644, 645
- 2,2'-Azobis(2,4,4-trimethyl valeronitrile)
- transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- 2,2'-Azobis(isobutyronitrile) (AIBN), 1:204, 4:50, 9:639, 11:506, 510. *See also* AIBN-initiated reactions
- efficiency, 11:515, 516
 - transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- Azodicarbonamide (ADC), 2:264–266
- isothermal gas evolution curves for, 2:268
 - thermal decomposition of, 2:265, 266
 - thermogravimetric analysis graph of, 2:269
- Azoinitiators, 11:506, 507
- Azoisobutyronitrile (AIBN), 8:441
- Azophosphorine, 11:98
- Azotobacter beijerinckii*, 10:102
- Azotobacter vinelandii*, 10:109
- B-10 life, 5:632
- B-DNA dinucleotide
- circular dichroism of, 5:49
 - geometry and CD signs for, 5:50
 - idealized structure of, 5:42
- Bacillus amyloliquefaciens*, 6:387
- Bacillus megaterium*, 10:102
- Bacillus thuringiensis*, 4:2
- Back relieving, 5:671, 672
- Back stress, 15:469
- Backbiting reaction, 8:161
- Backbiting, in LDPE synthesis, 5:524
- Backbone
- introduction of kinks into, 7:568–570
 - oxidative degradation of, 6:330
- Backbone monomers, 1:176, 177
- Bacteria
- biodegradation of plastics in landfills by, 4:241
- Baffles, vents in, 2:243
- Bakelite, 3:565
- Baker-Williams fractionation, 3:88
- Bakery product packaging, 9:474
- Balance, of energy, 6:299
- Ball mills, 3:493
- Banbury mixer, 3:494
- Bancroft's rule, emulsion stabilization, 6:640
- Band gap, 9:148–150
- Banded LCP texture, 7:567
- Banded spherulites, 8:723–725
- Bandwidth of device, 5:102
- Barex resins, 1:284, 285, 2:37
- Barium ferrite
- filler material, 5:785
- Barium lithol red, manufacture of, 3:474
- Barium sulfate
- in lithapones, 3:472
 - thermosetting powder coating filler, 3:241
- Barrel coolers, 5:624
- Barrel heaters, 5:624
- Barrel temperature, in extruders, 5:644
- Barreling, 15:455
- Barrier coatings
- xylylene polymer applications, 15:443, 444
- Barrier Enhanced Silica Coated PET (BESTPET), 2:53
- Barrier flight, helix angle of, 5:663
- Barrier polymers, 2:1–61
- barrier structures, 2:49–58
 - chain orientation effects, 2:18, 19
 - chemical structure effects, 2:14–16
 - chemical structures and properties of high barrier, 2:33–44
 - chemical structures and properties of moderate barrier, 2:44–49
 - crystallinity effects, 2:16–18
 - factors affecting permeability, diffusivity, and solubility, 2:8–21
 - free volume, 2:8–11
 - humidity effects, 2:20, 21
 - migration modeling of polymer additives into packaged foods and beverages, 2:32, 33
 - oxygen-scavenging systems, 2:58–60
 - penetrant concentration effects, 2:19, 20
 - penetrant transport in dense polymers, 2:5–9
 - permeation in polymers, 2:2–5
 - predicting transport properties of gases and condensable vapors, 2:26–32
 - property improvement, 2:49–60
 - temperature effects, 2:11–14
 - transport measurement techniques, 2:21–26
- Barrier properties. *See also* Permeability
- acrylonitrile copolymer, 1:274
 - glass-clear resins, 2:254
 - PET and PEN films, 10:506
 - polyacrylonitrile, 1:281
 - xylylene polymers, 15:430
- Barrier screw, 5:650
- Barrier structures, 2:49–58
- Barytes, 5:793
- effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
 - effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- BASF
- anionic styrene polymerization research by, 13:224, 225
- Bashforth-Adams equation, 13:595
- Bast fibers, 2:569, 573, 14:496
- processing, 14:498–504
 - supramolecular structure, 2:586
- Batch emulsion copolymerization, 5:181, 192

- Batch fractionation, 6:229–239
- Batch reactors, 8:320
- Bathymograph
xylylene polymer applications, 15:442
- Batteries
electrically active polymers for, 4:773
poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
- Bayer process, 1:119
- Bayer reactor, 5:190, 191
- BCB. *See* Benzocyclobutene (BCB)
- BCF yarns. *See* Bulked continuous-filament (BCF) yarns
- BCMU. *See* 5,7-Dodecadiyne-1,12-bis(butylcarboxymethylurethane) (BCMU)
- BCMU crystal structures, 4:449
- BCP micelles, 3:214, 215
- BCP microphase-separated nanostructures
nanolithography, 7:557
direct thermal annealing, 7:557
- Bead-roll coater, 3:274
- Bead vacuum, 3:283
- Beads-on-string, 5:153, 155
- Beam-bending problem, viscoelastic theory and, 15:91
- Beam fanning, 9:767
- Beam steering, 5:109
- Beard formation, 5:647
- Beech lignin, 7:528
- Beer-Lambert Law, 5:40, 14:465
- Benenic acid
Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:426
- Bell tunneling correction, 3:621
- Bellows-type dilatometer, 4:530
- Below-ground sealants, polysulfide, 11:177
- Belting, 2:66–72
conveyor belts, 2:66–68
design and selection of, 2:71
elastomers in, 2:70, 71
flat belting, 2:68, 69
overview, 2:66
power transmission belts, 2:68–70
rubber compositions in, 2:70, 71
synchronous belts, 2:69
testing of, 2:71
V-belts, 2:69, 70
- Belts
PEN fibers, 10:153
- Bemliese nonwoven fabrics, 2:690
- Bench-scale calorimeters, 6:92–95
- Bench-top coater, 3:267
- Bending, three-point, 6:314, 315
- Bennett/Gibson/Brookhart single-site catalyst, 5:564
- Benzaldehyde, 8:173
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Benzenamine N-[4-(1,3-dimethyl(butyl)imino)]-2,5-cyclohexadien-1-ylidene (6-QDI)
oxidant used in rubber, 12:198
- Benzene
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
oxidative polymerization, 9:447, 448
solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
vapor deposition of carbon fibers from, 2:469, 482, 483
- Benzenesulfonyl chloride
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Benzenethiol
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Benzimidazolone orange pigments, 3:478, 479
- Benzimidazolone yellow pigments, 3:478, 479
- Benzocyclobutene (BCB), 5:78
polystyrene polymerization and, 13:192
- Benzocyclobutene cure reaction, 5:81
- Benzodifurans (BDFs), 3:711
- Benzofuran, acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:283
- Benzofuranones, 13:26
radical scavengers, 1:696, 697
- Benzoguanamine, 1:518
- Benzoguanamine-formaldehyde (BF) resins, 1:523
- Benzoguanamine resins, 1:530
- Benzoic acid (SL11) (67), 8:445
- Benzophenone (SL10), 8:445
- Benzophenone tetracarboxylic acid dianhydride, 5:77
comonomer with diisocyanates, 7:254
- Benzophenone UV stabilizers, 14:452, 455
- Benzophenonetetracarboxylic dianhydride
curing agent, 5:354
- Benzoquinone
retarder for radical polymerization, 11:580
- Benzothiazyl disulfide (MBTS), 5:478
- Benzotriazole UV stabilizers, 14:452
- Benzoxazine phenolic resins
manufacture, 9:591
- Benzoyl peroxide, 14:776, 9:639, 11:507
cure agent for silicone rubber, 12:495
transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- Benzthiazole sulphonamide accelerators, 4:70
- Benzyl alcohol, 5:255
- Benzyl butyl phthlate, 8:391
- Bergman cyclization, 13:219, 220
- Berkovich indenter, 6:556
- Berlin blue, 3:471
- Bernoullian distributions, 8:519, 520
- Bernstein-Kearsley-Zapas (BKZ) constitutive equation, 1:468. *See also* K-BKZ model
- Bernstein-Shokooh stress-clock model of solid-like polymers, 15:157, 159, 161
- Beryllium oxide
filler material, 5:785
- BESP. *See* 1,4-Bis-(triethoxysilyl) benzene (BESP)
- BESP aerogels, 4:60
- Beta gauges, 2:385, 386
- Beta irradiation, of polystyrene, 13:244
- Beta polymorph, of PVDF, 15:63
- Beta-relaxation, 15:98
- Beta-Scission of polymer radicals, chain termination by, 5:526
- Beta transition, 4:619
- Bethge-Lindstrom procedure, 7:534
- Beveled blade coater, 3:271
- BF resins. *See* Benzoguanamine-formaldehyde (BF) resins
- BF₃-Et₂O initiation system, 7:202
- BHET. *See* Bis(hydroxyethyl) terephthalate (BHET)

- BHT, antioxidants and, 13:22, 23, 25. *See also*
Butylated hydroxytoluene (BHT)
- Biaxial extension flow, 12:2, 3
- Biaxial extension studies, 9:12
- Biaxial-orientated PLA bottles, 10:172
- Biaxial orientation
films, 5:816–820
- Biaxially oriented cast films, 5:590
- Biaxially oriented nylon-6
permeability humidity effect, 2:21
- Biaxially oriented polypropylene, 11:360, 403, 404
- Bicomponent (Bico) fibers, 10:259, 260, 521, 522
- Bicomponent acrylic fibers, 1:250
- Bicomponent fibers
olefin fibers, 9:360, 361
- Biconstituent fibers, 10:259, 260
- Bidentate ligands, 10:655, 656
- Bidim
physical properties, 9:181
- Bifunctional epoxides, 5:293
- Bilayer formation, thermodynamics of, 14:512, 513
- Bilayer heterojunction solar cell, 12:632
- Billow forming, 14:112, 113
- Bimodal distributions of network chain lengths, 9:10
- “Bimodal” elastomers, 9:7
- Bimodal PDMS elastomers, 9:13, 14
- Bimodal reactor technology, for manufacturing HDPE,
5:506, 507
- Bimodality
ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:604
- Bimolecular photoinitiators
cationic photopolymerization, 9:700–703
free radical photopolymerization, 9:721–723
- Binary chromophore organic glasses, 5:98
- Binary copolymerization, 5:180
termination, 3:782–785
- Binary heterogeneous blends, moduli of, 10:705, 706
- Binary lanthanide catalyst system, 7:303
- Binary mixtures, phase diagrams of, 8:536
- Binary polyisoprene, 7:286
- Binary polymer blends, 10:687–691
A/B + A-*block*-B blends, 10:694
blend microrheology, effect of compatibilizer, 10:691,
692
compatibilization efficiency, 10:692
compatibilizer architecture, effect of, 10:692–696
containing a compatibilizer, 10:691–696
flow-induced coalescence, 10:688, 689
*i*PS-*i*PP diblock copolymer, 10:693
phase structure evolution during annealing, 10:691
- Binder resins, 6:196–202
- Binders
based on isocyanates, 3:322–326
latex applications, 7:462
polychloroprene latex applications, 3:78
poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:459
vinyl acetate polymers, 14:646
- Bioalcohol dehydration, 8:22, 23
- Bioalcohol purifications, 8:20, 21
membrane materials, biobutanol, 8:20
membrane pervaporation, bioalcohol, 8:18
- Bioalcohol recovery, 8:21
inorganic membranes, 8:22
membranes for, hydrogen bonds, 8:21
- Bioalcohol treatment, 8:30, 31
membrane process design, 8:30, 31
- Bioanalytical agents, 8:427
- Biobased polymer, 5:261
- Biobased polyurethane foams, 1:813, 814
- Biobased thermoplastic resins, 1:812–814
- Biobased thermoset polyesters, 1:813
- Biochemical applications
inorganic cellulose esters, 2:613
- Biocides, 1:350, 351
for polychloroprene latex, 3:77
- Biocompatibility
biodegradable polymers for medical applications,
2:112–114
controlled release technology, 3:743
- Bioconjugation, 8:801
- Biodegradability
PHA, 10:102
poly(acrylamide), 1:127
- Biodegradable materials, preparation by reactive
extrusion, 11:639–645
- Biodegradable mulch, 2:93
- Biodegradable nanogel, formation of, 1:736
- Biodegradable oils, acrylamide polymerization and,
1:138
- Biodegradable plastics, 2:72–96, 4:442, 5:534, 11:673,
674
- Biodegradable polyacrylamides, 1:138
- Biodegradable polymer networks, with shape-memory,
12:418
- Biodegradable polymers, 1:812, 2:100–117, 4:291–293
in landfill sites, 4:239–248
medical applications, 2:100–117
natural biodegradable, 2:110–112
synthetic biodegradable, 2:102–110
toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:112–114
- Biodegradation
effect of molecular weight, 2:101, 102
effect of polymer morphology, 2:100, 101
effect of polymer structure, 2:100
effect of radiation and chemical treatment, 2:102
hydro-biodegradation, 4:291–293
in landfills, 4:241, 242
oxy-biodegradation, 4:293
poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:701, 702
styrene polymers, 13:213
- Bioelastomers, 9:31
filled elastomers, 9:32
fillers with controlled interfaces, 9:33
layered fillers, 9:35
miscellaneous fillers, 9:35
polyhedral oligomeric silsesquioxanes, 9:34
porous particles, 9:35
silicification and biosilicification, 9:33
sol-gel reactions within elastomers, 9:32, 33
spherical particles and their reinforcing properties,
9:33
- Biofeedstocks, conventional polymers from, 1:812,
813
- Biofilm (temporary skin substitute), 2:570
- Biofoams, 6:365
- Bioform, 7:139
- BioFresh, 1:252
- Biofueling, in membranes, 5:847

- Bioinspired gecko nanohair superhydrophobic polymeric surfaces, 13:407–409
 anodic aluminum oxide (AAO) template, 13:407
 direct templating, 13:408
 template-assisted polymerization, 13:408, 409
- Bioinspired polymers, 2:122–142
 ABC block copolymers, 2:129
 “artificial snail,” 2:132
 biological systems *vs.* biomimetic analogues, 2:126
 biomimetic molecular machines, 2:131–134
 biomimetic motion in, 2:131, 132
 biomimicking of biological membranes, 2:124–129
 “dendrimers,” 2:123
 dielectric elastomers, 2:132, 133
 globular proteins and, 2:123
 hydrogels, 2:123, 124
 hydrophobic effect, 2:125
 interdigitation of, 2:126, 127
 intrinsically conductive polymers, 2:133, 134
 molecular motors, 2:131
 overview, 2:122–124
 polyelectrolyte gels, 2:134
 protein-like polymers, 2:129–131
 self-assembling system in, 2:124–131
 supramolecular assemblies, 2:130
- Biological antioxidants, 13:39–42
- Biological properties, of chitin and chitosan, 3:37, 38
- Biological recycling, 4:442
- Biological sensors. *See* Biosensors
- Biologically influenced polymer surface modification, 13:560, 561
- Biomass, separation of PHA from, 10:107–109
- Biomaterials
 free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:742, 743
 with low thromogenicity, poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:458
- Biomaterials, ionomers in, 7:235
- Biomediated polymerization
 electrically active polymers, 4:759
- Biomedical applications
 biodegradable polymers, 2:100–117
 composite foams, 3:512
 electrically active polymers for, 4:771, 772
 high performance fibers, 6:725, 726
 inorganic cellulose esters, 2:611–613
 interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:139–141
 molecularly imprinted polymers, 8:684
 phosphazenes, 11:108, 109
 polysulfones, 11:201
- Biomedical devices, Ag/PEO-like coatings, 10:26
- Biomedical materials, 2:142–161
 applications of, 2:143, 144
 biocompatibility of, 2:144, 145, 155, 156
 biomedical polymers, 2:145–147
 biosurface science of, 2:155
 blood-clotting system and, 2:151–153
 combination products, 2:156
 complement system and, 2:154
 endotoxins and, 2:149
 immune system and, 2:153, 154
 implantation response, 2:149–155
 implant design and application of, 2:155
 ionizing radiation dosages and, 2:148
 kinin system and, 2:153
 mutagenesis and carcinogenesis and, 2:154, 155
 overview, 2:142, 143
 physiological defense mechanisms for, 2:149–155
 plasma glow discharge and, 2:148
 sterilization, 2:147–149
 surface engineering of, 2:155, 156
 tissue engineering and, 2:156
 wound healing and inflammation, 2:149–151
- Biomedical polymers, 2:145–147
 applications of, 2:143, 144
 characterization and evaluation of, 2:146, 147
 fabrication for, 2:145
 mechanical properties of, 2:145
 purity, 2:145
 stability of, 2:145, 146
 tolerability of, 2:146
- Biomimetic dendritic amphiphiles, 4:347, 348
- Biomimetic molecular machines, 2:131–134
- Biomimetics, 11:679
- Biomimicking, of biological membranes, 2:124–129
- Biomolecules, 8:417
- Biopesticides, 8:397
- Biopol, 2:87, 10:110
- Biopolymer blends, 8:544
- Biopolymers, 4:300
 acoustic properties, 1:84, 85
 AFM imaging of, 1:763
 piezoelectricity in, 9:787
- Bioselective adsorption, 3:44
- Biosensors
 cellulose nitrate applications, 2:613
 electrically active polymers for, 4:771, 772
 molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:693–696
 smart polymers in, 12:620
- Bioseparation processes, smart polymer in, 12:609, 610
- Biotoning, 6:423
- Biosynthesis. *See also* Chemical synthesis
 callose, 2:571
 cellulose, 2:570–573
 chitin and chitosan, 3:33–35
 lignin, 7:525
 MCL PHAs, 10:105, 106
 natural rubber, 6:618, 621
 rubber in *Hevea brasiliensis* tree, 12:263–270
 SCL PHAs, 10:101, 104, 105
- Biphenol-based polysulfones, room-temperature
 mechanical properties of, 11:190
- Biphenyl-4,4'-diyl dimethanethiol (BDMT), 13:288
- 4,4'-Biphenyldithiol (BDT), 13:288
- Bipolar membranes, 5:834
- Birefringence, 9:402–409, 10:244
 basis for experimental setup, 9:408
 Kuhn and Grün theory, 9:405, 406
 measurements of, 9:408, 409
 of phantom networks, 9:406, 407
 of polymer networks, 9:404–408
 of semicrystalline polymers, 9:404
 real network, 9:407, 408
 single-chain and rotational isomeric state model, 9:403, 404
 stress field visualization through, 9:409
- Birefringent modulator, 5:108, 109

- Bis-MPA, hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:779
- Bis-RAFT agent, 11:735
- N,N'*-Bis(1,4-dimethylpentyl)-*p*-phenyldiamine oxidant used in rubber, 12:197
- Bis(2,4-di-*tert*-butylphenyl)pentaerythritol diphosphite antioxidant, 1:704
- Bis(2-iodoethoxy)ethane (BIEE), 8:276, 278
- Bis(3,4-epoxycyclohexylmethyl) adipate, 5:326
- Bis(3-triethoxysilylpropyl)tetrasulfane, 12:176, 182
- Bis(4-aminocyclohexyl) methane curing agent, 5:345
- 1,3-Bis(aminomethyl cyclohexane) curing agent, 5:346
- Bis(carboxyethyl)alkylphosphine oxide, 9:678
- 1,3-Bis(citraconimidomethyl) benzene, 12:182
- Bis(cyclopentadienyl) complexes, 5:562, 8:92, 93. *See also* Metallocenes
- Bis(cyclopentadienyl)zirconium complexes, 8:81
- Bis(diphenylphosphino)-1,1'-binaphthyl (BINAP), 3:17
- Bis(hydroxyethyl) terephthalate (BHET), 4:59
- Bis(thioacyl) disulfide, radical-induced decomposition, 11:721
- Bis(triethoxysilylpropyl)disulfide, 12:188
- Bis(triethoxysilylpropyl)tetrasulfide, 12:188
- Bis(trimethoxysilyl)ethane (BTSE), 3:314
- 1,6-Bis(*N,N*-dibenzylthiocarbonyldithio)hexane, 12:182
- Bis(*N,N*-dihydroxyethyl)adipamide, 3:246
- Bis(*O,O*-di-2-ethylhexyl-thiophosphoryl)polysulfide, 12:176
- 1,4-Bis-(triethoxysilyl) benzene (BESP), 4:60
- 1,3-Bisdiphenylene-2-phenylallyl, 11:579
- 2,2-Bis(hydroxymethyl)- propanoic acid (bis-MPA), 4:315
- Bismaleimide resins, 14:171, 172
- Bismuth oxychloride, 3:472
- Bisphenol
melt-phase polymerization, 4:58, 59
in polysulfone synthesis, 11:181–184, 186, 187
- Bisphenol-A polycarbonate
phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
polyarylates from, 10:351
chemical structure, 6:75
- Bisphenol A bischloroformate (BPA-BCF), 7:680
- Bisphenol A epoxy novolac, 5:317
- Bisphenol A polycarbonate (Bis-A PC), 4:54
annealing of, 1:658, 659
blends, 10:381, 382
copolymers, 10:378–381
density fluctuations, 1:557, 558
flame behavior, 10:362, 365, 366
glass-transition temperature and melt behavior, 10:362
health and safety factors, 10:376, 377
hydrolytic behavior, 10:362, 365, 366
mechanical properties, 10:367, 368
melt viscosity, 10:366
molecular weight and viscosity, 10:358, 359
NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
optical properties, 10:366, 367
permeability temperature effect, 2:13
preparation, 10:368–375
processing, 10:375, 376
production, 10:376
properties of (table), 10:360, 361
radiation chemistry, 11:481, 482
solubility and solvent resistance, 10:356–358
spectroscopy and analysis, 10:359
structure and crystallinity, 10:359, 361, 362
synthesis of cyclic by anionic polymerization, 1:626
thermal behavior, 10:362, 365, 366
uses, 10:377, 378
- Bisphenol A. *See also* Epoxy resins
epoxy resins from, 5:294
liquid epoxy resins from, 5:300–302
preparation, 5:302
solid epoxy resins from, 5:305–307
aromatic polycarbonates from (table), 10:363–365
polycarbonate properties (table), 10:360, 361
- Bisphenol F epoxy resin, 5:315, 316
average U.S. price, 5:299
- Bisphenol/onium cure systems, for fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:167
- Bispicolylamine functional groups, chelating polymers, 7:184
- Black iron oxide pigment, 3:470
- Black pigments, 3:470
- Blade coating, 3:270–273
nonwoven fabrics, 9:231
- Blanc fixe
thermosetting powder coating filler, 3:241
- Bleaching
wool, 15:337, 338
- Bleeding process, 1:363
of dyes and pigments, 3:468
- Blends. *See* Polymer blends
- Blister ring, 5:662
- Block copolymer films, 2:197–200
“defect structure-chain mobility” relationship, 12:301
SFM studies 12:301
- Block copolymer hydrogels, 2:161–190
biomedical applications of, 2:178–184
future prospective, 2:184
overview, 2:161, 162
pH-responsive, 2:172–174
pH-thermoreponsive, 2:174–178
stimuli-responsive, 2:162–178
thermoreponsive, 2:162–172
- Block copolymer into micelles, self-assembly of, 8:272–274
organic-solvent-free method, 8:272
solvent-switch method, 8:272, 273
- Block copolymer melts, 2:192–197
- Block copolymer micelles, 2:202
- Block copolymer microdomains, 12:293
- Block copolymer microstructures, investigating, 2:193
- Block copolymer nanostructures under annealing
in situ AFM imaging, 12:304
in situ SFM imaging, 12:304–306
- Block copolymer rubbers, 11:301, 302
- Block copolymer vesicles, 14:534
surface shear viscosity, 14:538
stability, 14:538–540
- Block copolymers, 2:190–210, 3:792–794, 5:165, 7:549–560
acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:167

- acrylonitrile, 1:276
 AFM imaging of, 1:777
 anionic, 1:598, 641–643
 blends containing, 2:206–210
 chloroprene polymers, 3:49
 crystallization in, 2:203
 economic aspects and use of, 13:283, 284
 elastomeric, 13:283
 GTP, 6:539
 as homopolymer compatibilizers, 2:206, 207
 manufacturing styrene-butadiene, 13:280–282
 morphology of, 2:199
 NEXAFS of thin films, 15:391, 392
 nylon, 10:261
 phase behavior of, 2:202
 polyphosphazenes, 11:101, 102
 polysilanes, 11:158, 159
 with polyurethane shape-memory polymers, 12:417
 preparation of, 3:204, 205
 processing, 13:283
 properties of styrene-butadiene, 13:279, 280
 pulsed ESR studies in ionically end-functionalized, 5:21–27
 RAFT polymerization, 11:734–737
 RAFT synthesis of, 13:233
 reaction extrusion, 11:648, 649
 ring opening polymerization, 12:137
 in solution, 2:200–203
 self-assembly, 7:549, 550
 structural representation, 13:166, 167
 styrene-butadiene, 13:278–283, 198
 synthesis of, 2:191, 192
 tensile properties of, 8:500
 thermoplastic, 13:282, 283
 thermoplastic elastomers, 14:134–157
 water-soluble polymers, 15:222–229
 weakly segregated, 8:497
 yielding in, 8:496–501
- Block copolymers, ATRP and, 1:734
 Block copolymer, SFM, 12:293
 Block copolymerization
 anionic, 1:598, 641–643
 bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:288
 heterophase, 6:587
 metallocene-based, olefins with non-olefins, 8:131, 132
- Block graft copolymers, 6:472, 485
 Block ionomers, 7:225, 226
 Block polyampholytes, 10:300
 cationic polyelectrolyte, 10:307
 Blocked isocyanates, 11:213
 Blockiness, 8:107
 Blood oxygenator, 7:804
 Blooming process, 1:363
 of dyes and pigments, 3:468
 Blow-mold tool materials, 2:257
 Blow molding, 2:215–257
 of ABS polymers, 1:331, 332
 coloring during, 3:496, 497
 extrusion, 2:230–249
 guidelines for, 2:257
 injection, 2:218–230
 of LDPE, 5:541
 of LLDPE, 5:571
 metals used in, 2:240, 241
 of nylons, 10:289, 290
 of polysulfones, 11:197
 process compared to other thermoplastic processes (table), 14:108
 processes in, 2:217, 218
 propylene polymers, 11:404
 related operations in, 2:256–258
 of resins, 2:216, 217
 shrinkage in, 2:241
 stretch, 2:250–255
 of styrene polymers, 13:248
 of thermoplastics, 1:807
 thermoplastic resin processing, 10:85, 86
 venting in, 2:241–247
- Blow-molding machines
 coextrusion, 2:249
 manufacturers of, 2:235
- Blow-molding resins, comparison of, 5:580
- Blow molding, HDPE application in, 5:507, 508
- Blow-up ratios (BURs), 2:237, 5:556
 of polyethylene films, 5:553
- Blowers, for extruder cooling, 5:624
- Blowing agents, 2:259–271
 chemical, 2:262–267. *See also* Chemical blowing agents
 expansion process by, 2:260
 overview, 2:259
 physical, 2:260–262. *See also* Physical blowing agents
 properties of physical (table), 2:261
 qualities of, 2:259
 test methods for, 2:268–270
 thermal analysis for, 2:269
 thermomechanical analysis for, 2:270
 thermoset polyester, 2:267, 268
- Blowing agents. *See also* Cellular materials
 environmental effects of, 13:213
- Blown film
 LDPE and LLDPE properties, 5:516, 517
- Blown film dies, 5:571
- Blown-film extrusion, 10:77
 die geometry for, 5:675
 of LLDPE, 5:569, 570
- Blown film lines, 5:638
- Blown film, from HDPE, 5:508–510
- BLOX, 5:312
- BLOX Adhesive and Barrier Resins, 2:42
- Blue pigments, 3:471
 phthalocyanine, 3:483, 484
- Blunting growth, 6:315
- BMCs. *See* Bulk molding compounds (BMCs)
- [BMIM]PF₆
 heterogeneous ATRP, 7:197
 methyl methacrylate (MMA) in, 7:197
 chlorine-end-capped PMMA, 7:200
 dendritic polyarylether 2-bromoisobutyrate, 7:200
 heterogeneous ATRP in, 7:198, 199
 reversible atom transfer radical polymerization of MMA, 7:199
- Boc group. *See* *N*^α-*tert*-Butyloxycarbonyl (Boc) group
- Body force, 12:3
- Bolaamphiphiles, 14:530

- Boltorn, 6:778, 779
- Boltzmann constant, 5:96
- Boltzmann equation, 4:650
modified, 15:155
- Boltzmann superposition principle, 15:80, 86–92
and acoustic properties, 1:67
- Bombyx mori*
silk from, 12:542, 543, 547
- Bond-angle restrictions on polymer chains, 4:648–650
- Bond dissociation energy
free-radical initiators, 6:835, 838
- Bond failure, 1:405
- Bond fluctuation method, 8:597
applications, 8:601
- Bond formation, adhesive, 1:404–406
- Bond functionalities, in lignin, 7:530
- Bond models, 8:577–579
- Bond pads, 5:65
- Bond vectors, sum of, 3:694–696
- Bonding
direct, 1:430
involving diffusion and chemical reaction, 1:370–372
in ABS polymers, 1:333
methods of, 1:400–402
nonwoven fabrics, spun bonded, 9:193–196
technological compatibilizer, 1:370, 371
- Bone
biodegradable polymers for fixation devices, 2:115
natural reinforcement of, 11:679
- Bonse-Hart camera, 6:382
- “Boomerang fixation”, 8:157
- Bootstrap effect, 3:769, 770
- Borane-THF complex, 13:555
- Borazines
polymerization, 7:44
- Born-Oppenheimer approximation, 14:568
- Born repulsion, 6:645
- Boron-containing polymers, 7:44–46
- Boron-epoxy composites, 11:697
- Boron fiber reinforcement, 11:696, 697
- Boron fibers, 11:697
filler material, 5:785
- Borosilicate Glass Filtered Xenon Arc Radiation, 15:246
- Bottle blow molds, 2:245
- Bottle design, plastic, 2:271–282
aesthetic requirements, 2:273
bottle dimensions (table), 2:280, 281
bottle requirements, 2:272, 273
bottle stability, 2:276
child-resistant closures, 2:277
computer utilization in, 2:279
design and development, basic steps in, 2:272
dispensing closures, 2:278
distribution requirements, 2:273
drain-back closures, 2:277
embossed or debossed decorations, 2:276
environmental concerns and, 2:280, 281
extrusion blow molding, 2:273, 274
filling and packing requirements, 2:274, 275
injection blow molding, 2:274
labeling and decoration, 2:277
manufacturing requirements, 2:273, 274
materials and colorants for, 2:278
molded information, 2:276
overview, 2:271, 272
pressure differentials in, 2:276, 277
product end-use and, 2:272, 273
recycling and, 2:280, 281
reduce waste during, 2:280
reuse of bottles, 2:280
roll-on finish, special, 2:278
sealing area, 2:276
secondary packaging, 2:273
sharp edges, 2:275, 276
specialty design, 2:277, 278
specifications for, 2:279
stretch blow molding, 2:274
tamper bands, 2:278
testing, 2:279
undercuts, 2:276
wall thickness, 2:276
- Bottle reactors
for heterophase polymerization, 6:616
- Bottom-blow core rod, 2:221
- Bottom-spray or Wurster units, 8:387
- Bound fraction, 1:436
- Bound rubber, 2:438, 12:185
- Boundary conditions, in molecular modeling, 8:586, 587
- Boundary layer capacitors
carbon black applications, 2:460
- Boundary layers, adhesion and, 1:364, 365
- Bowden-Tabor model, of scratch behavior, 12:321
- Bowstring hemp, 14:495
- Box foams
rigid polyurethane, 2:551
- Boyce-Parks-Argon model, of yield, 15:468–470
- BPA-polycarbonate. *See* Bisphenol-A polycarbonate
- Br-PCLA-PEG-PCLA-Br, 2:175
- Brackish water reverse osmosis plant, 7:787, 788
- Bragg reflection
thermochromic polymers based on, 14:39–42
- Bragg's Law, 8:473
- Branch density, durability and, 6:328
- Branched polyethylene
P-V-T data, 14:79
- Branched polystyrene, 13:188–193
- Branching
chloroprene polymers, 3:54–56
degree of, 6:790, 791
dendrimers, 4:339
epoxies, 5:311
- Brass/rubber bonding, 1:371, 372
- Breakdown voltage
extreme value distribution for plastic film, 4:699
factors influence, 4:680
of poly(ethylene terephthalate) film, 4:698
of polytetrafluoroethylene films, 4:699
- Breaker plate, of an extruder, 5:625
- Breaking strength, of a fiber, 10:241, 242, 14:500
- Breathe-and-dwell cycles, 3:573, 574
- Brewster angle microscopy
Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:430
- Bricks, straw-reinforced, 11:679
- Bridged metallocenes, 8:93–96
mono(cyclopentadienyl) complexes, 8:96–98
- Bridged polysilsesquioxanes, 12:430

- Bridging mechanism, 8:484
Brillouin scattering
 for acoustic measurements, 1:99
Brinell hardness test, 6:556
Brittle failure, 15:450
Brittle fatigue fracture, genuine, 6:291
Brittle fracture, 6:288, 289, 300
 critical tensile stress for, 6:326
 dynamic, 6:292
 of PMMA, 6:319
Broad MMD homopolymers, 7:716–718
Broke, recovery of fiber from, 1:542
Brominated bisphenol A-based epoxy resins, 5:312, 313
Brominated butyl rubber, 2:349, 357–360, 366
Brominated epoxies, 1:416
 average U.S. price, 5:299
Brominated epoxy oligomers (BEOs), 1:321
Brominated epoxy-phenolic system, dynamic cure, 13:860
Brominated hydrocarbons, 1:355
Brominated poly(isobutylene-co-*p*-mehtylstyrene), 2:354
 curing, 2:366
 structure, 2:362
Bromine compounds, as flame retardants, 13:258
Bromine containing monomers, 6:39
2-Bromo-3-hexylthiophene, dehydrohalogenative polycondensation, 10:420, 421
2-Bromo-*p*-xylylene
 threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
 α -Bromophenacyl, 11:76
Bromotrifluoroethylene, 6:132
Bronsted acids
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:395
 bronze pigments, 3:474
Brookhart single-site catalyst, 5:564
Broom corn, 14:495, 507
Broom root, 14:495, 507
Brown iron oxide pigment, 3:471
Brownian dynamics, 8:589
Brownian force, in DE model, 15:129
Brownian motion, 4:653
Brush copolymer, ATRP for, 1:735, 736
Brushing
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:234
BS 2782, 6:802, 806, 807
BTSE. *See* Bis(trimethoxysilyl)ethane (BTSE)
Bubble jet technologies, 5:93
Bubble tear-offs, in LDPE production, 5:533
Bubbfl yarns, 2:687
Bubbling, devolatization via, 13:241–243
Buckminsterfullerene
 retarder for radical polymerization, 11:581
Budium, 2:317
Buffable polishes, 6:112
Building materials, 6:88
Building products
 polyarylates, 10:353
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:716
Bulk adhesive testing, 1:407, 408
Bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:283–292
 by-product removal, 2:286, 287
 copolymerization, 2:288
 kinetic models, 2:288
 managing reaction exotherm, 2:283–286
 solvent recovery, 2:292
 stirred-tank, 2:287, 288, 291, 292
 tubular, 2:286, 291, 292
Bulk density, 5:641, 642
Bulk heterojunction solar cells
 charge carrier mobility and recombination, 12:643
Bulk material deformation, 8:471
Bulk modulus, 4:639, 15:78–80
Bulk molding compounds (BMCs), 3:587, 10:90
 composite materials, 3:518
Bulk order-disorder temperature (ODT)
 microdomain size miniaturization for lithographic purposes, 12:302
Bulk polymerization, 3:126
 acrylonitrile, 1:238, 239, 275
 chloroprene, 3:44–47
 heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:595
 heterophase recipes, 6:620
 heterophase technique, 6:582
 polystyrene manufacturing, 13:179, 180, 241, 244
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:742, 743
 vinyl acetate polymers, 14:665
Bulked continuous-filament (BCF) yarns, 10:252
Bulky rayons, 2:686–688
Bun stock
 rigid polyurethane, 2:551
Buna 115, 2:293
Buna 32, 2:293
Buna S rubbers, 13:269
Bunsen Burner Ignition Test, 6:67
Buoyancy
 cellular polymers, 2:545
 for crystallinity determination, 4:159
 subsea applications for composite foams, 3:511, 512
Burgers model, of viscoelasticity, 15:83, 84
Burkholderia sp., 10:110
Burned polymers
 as evidence, 6:176
Burning temperatures, higher heat flux requirement, 6:60, 61
Burning velocity, in fuel active radicals, 6:37
Burning, of styrene polymers, 13:252, 254
BURs. *See* Blow-up ratios (BURs)
1,3-Butadiene, 2:293–296
 anionic copolymerization, 1:640
 anionic polymerization, 1:629–635, 2:312–317
 cationic polymerization, 2:316, 317
 free-radical polymerization, 2:304, 305
 health and safety factors, 2:299, 300
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 manufacture, 2:296–298
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:125
 physical and thermodynamic properties, 2:294, 295
 polymerization, 2:300–321
 purification, 2:297
 reactions, 2:295, 296
 solubility in organic solvents, 2:296
Butadiene
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
 copolymerization with styrene, 13:193, 194, 234

- monomer for rubber compounding, 12:204
 polymerization processes for, 13:269–276
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
 Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:518, 519
- Butadiene-isoprene-butadiene (B-I-B)
 block copolymers, 7:322, 323
 triblock copolymers, 7:323
- Butadiene-isoprene-styrene block copolymers, 7:322, 323
- Butadiene monomer, 13:268, 269
- Butadiene polymers, 2:293–391
 economic aspects, 2:319–321
 polybutadiene synthesis, 2:304–317
 polymerization processes, 2:317–319
 structure, 2:300–304
- Butadiene-styrene copolymer, 2:293
- n*-Butane
 C–C bond in, 3:690, 691
 dehydrogenation to produce butadiene, 2:297
Z for, 3:692, 693
- Butanediol diglycidyl ether, 5:324
- n*-Butanethiol
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- tert*-Butanol (TBA), 11:314
- n*-Butanol
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- 2-Butanone
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- 2-Butanone peroxide
 transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- n*-Butene
 dehydrogenation to produce butadiene, 2:297
- Butene copolymer LLDPE, 5:554
- Butene polymers, 2:332–345. *See* Polybutylene (PB)
- 1-Butene. *See also* Polybutylene (PB)
 health and safety factors, 2:345
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 manufacturing of, 2:333
 metallocene-based copolymerization with ethylene, 8:107
 physical properties of (table), 2:332, 333
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:518, 519
- t*-Butoxy radicals, in polystyrene manufacture, 13:190, 191
- Butter
 as colloid, 3:440
- n*-Butyl acetate
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- n*-Butyl acrylate
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 in biodegradable shape-memory polymer networks, 12:418
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Butyl acrylate, 6:569
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 activation parameter for termination, 11:549
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
- n*-Butyl alcohol
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- tert*-Butyl alcohol
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 polystyrene polymerization and, 13:191
- Butyl cellosolve
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Butyl elastomer. *See also* Butyl rubber
 physical properties, 12:207
- n*-Butyl glycidyl ether, 5:324
- tert*-Butyl hydroperoxide
 transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- Butyl lithium initiator, in cold SBR production, 13:273, 274
- n*-Butyl mercaptan
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
- n*-Butyl methacrylate
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Butyl methacrylate
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 activation parameter for termination, 11:549
 contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
- tert*-Butyl peroxide
 transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- Butyl rubber, 2:349–370, 725
 applications, 2:366, 367, 7:330
 blends with polypropylene, 14:137
 compounding, 12:211
 cure systems, 12:248, 249
 economic aspects, 2:368–370
 elastomeric vulcanizates, 2:364, 365
 halogenation, 2:358–360
 health and safety factors, 2:368
 manufacturing, 2:354–360
 modification, 2:352–354
 molecular structure, 2:360–362
 permeabilities, solubilities, and diffusivities of gas pairs in, 14:312
 physical properties, 2:362–364
 synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:390, 391, 417, 418
 for tire compounding, 12:254
 vulcanization, 2:366
- Butyl rubber, in belting, 2:71
- N*-*tert*-Butyl-2-benzothiazole sulfenamide (TBBS), 12:171
 accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
- Butylated hydroxytoluene (BHT)
- 4-*tert*-Butylcatechol (TBC), 13:221
- n*-Butyllithium (NBL), 13:223, 225
 anionic polymerization initiator, 1:605, 609
- Butyllithium-catalyzed *cis*-1,4-polyisoprene, 7:288
- N*^α-*tert*-Butyloxycarbonyl (Boc) group
 amino acid protecting group, 11:65–70
 cleavage, 11:85, 86
- p*-*t*-Butylphenol
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- p*-*tert*-Butylstyrene-isoprene-*p*-*tert*butylstyrene (bS-I-bS), 7:319
 linear ABA-type triblock copolymers, 7:319
- By-product removal
 bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:286, 287

- C-glass (chemical glass), properties of, 11:689, 690
- C polymers. *See* Crystalline (C) polymers
- C₄ stream
composition of typical crude, 2:297
- C/W HIPEs, 10:599
- C1-symmetric metallocene catalysts, 13:95, 105
- C12-C14 Aliphatic glycidyl ether, 5:324
- C16-IPDU-EO770-IPDU-C16 HEUR, 6:739, 740
- C₆₀-containing polymers, 6:338
- C₆₀-dispersed PPO-membranes, 6:349
- C₆₀-PEG copolymer, 6:350
- C₆₀-poly(1-phenyl-1-alkynes) star polymer, 6:345
- C₆₀-star-shaped polymers/flagellenes, 6:344, 345
- (C₆₀Pd)n polymers, 6:339
- [(C₆Pyr)[NTf₂]/methanol, 7:203
- CA *Chemical Substance Indexes*, 9:89
- Caa o-chu* (Mayan word for rubber), 6:583
- Cabinets, 15:281
- Cable coating, 10:81
- Cable coating, nylon, 10:289
- Cable insulation
LLDPE, 5:579, 580
- Cables
LDPE, 5:540
PPTA fiber, 10:228
- Cadillo, 14:495
- Cadiot-Chodkiewicz coupling reaction, 4:446
- Cadiot-Chodkiewicz-coupling reactions, 3:192
- Cadmium orange, 3:472
- Cadmium pigments, 3:472
- Cadmium selenide pigments, 3:472
- Cadmium sulfide pigments, 3:472
- Cadmium yellow, 3:472
- Cadmium red, 3:472
- Caffeic acid, 5:271
- Cahn electrobalance, 13:809
- Cahn-Hilliard theory, 8:600
- CA *Index Guide*, 9:89
- Cake fouling, 5:846, 847. *See also* Fouling; Organic fouling
- CalceneTM
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Calcite, 5:793
- Calcium carbonate, 5:793
filled silicone networks, 12:486
filler material, 5:785
for rubber compounding, 12:221, 222
in SBR processing, 13:277
thermosetting powder coating filler, 3:241
- Calcium methoxide
ring opening polymerization by, 12:148
- Calcium propionate, 8:394
- Calcium sulphate
filler material, 5:785
- Calcium-zinc soaps, 6:579
- Calcium/magnesium salts of organic acids, 1:667
- Calender-roll deflections, 2:380–383
- Calendering, 2:375–388, 10:88
of ABS polymers, 1:331
calender speed in, 2:386, 387
chloroprene polymers, 3:66–68
compensation for calender-roll deflections and, 2:381–383
definition, 2:375
embossing in, 2:387, 388
equipment for, 2:385, 386
films, 5:821, 822
for fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:171
finish in, 2:387
gauge products in, 2:387
health and safety factors, 2:388
nonwoven fabrics, 9:233
of elastomers and thermoplastics, 2:375–378
orientation in, 2:387
of paper and nonwoven fabrics, 2:378, 379
processing considerations, 2:386–388
progress in, 2:388
rolls-separating forces, estimation of, 2:383–385
specifications and standards, 2:388
temperature control in, 2:386
theory related to, 2:379–385
thickness control across web and, 2:379, 380
use of, 2:375
- Caliber, 10:354
- Calibration methods, in size exclusion chromatography, 3:121–123
- California technical bulletins, 6:86
- Calixarene, 11:134
based polyrotaxanes, 11:134
- Callose
biosynthesis, 2:571
- Calorimeter, 4:141, 142
- Calorimetry, 14:62. *See also* Differential scanning calorimetry
heterophase polymerization, 6:676–678
thermoset curing, 14:178–181
and yield, 15:473–475
- Cambridge Structural Database (CSD), 4:447
- Camphorsulfonic acid, 13:216
- CAMPUS. *See* Computer Aided Material Preselection by Uniform Standards (CAMPUS)
- Can process, in polystyrene manufacturing, 13:179
- Cancer treatment
controlled release technology, 3:755
- Candida Antarctica lipase (lipase CA), 7:203
- Candida rugosa*, 8: 458
- Candidate coating formulations, 8:388
- Candy packaging, 9:474
- Cannabis*
species with fiber potential, 14:497
- Cannizzaro reaction, 1:524
- Canonical distribution function, 13:76, 77
- Canonical ensembles, 13:77
in molecular dynamics modeling, 8:588
- Canonical partition function, 13:76
- Cantala, 14:495
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
mechanical properties, 14:499
processing, 14:505
uses, 14:508
- Caoutchouc*, 6:583
- Capacitance, 4:677
- Capacitive dilatometry, 4:530, 531
- Capacitors
xylylene polymer applications, 15:441, 442
- Capillary chromatography, microscale, 3:90
- Capillary instabilities, in coextrusion, 3:383, 384

- Capillary membranes, 5:829, 830
Capillary microreactors, 8:319
Capillary number, 3:276
Capillary rheometer, 12:8–10
Capillary-type microreactors, 8:319
Capillary-type thermal mass flow sensor, 8:355
Capping/trapping reaction, 8:352
Caprolactam disulfide, 12:176
Caprolactam, creation of, 10:238
Caprolactam, reaction extrusion, 11:646
 ϵ -Caprolactone
 anionic polymerization, 1:625
Capsule shell formation, 8:382
Capsule structures, 8:378
Capsules, 8:385, 386, 390
Car-Parinello method, 8:582
Carbamates, 4:450
Carbamide, 1:518
Carbazole
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
Carbazole dioxazine violet, 3:486
Carbenium ions, 2:391
 stability, 2:392
Carbitol
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
Carbocationic polymerization, 2:390–420
 controlled (living), 2:392, 413–416
 copolymerization, 2:410–413
 industrial processes, 2:416–420
 initiating systems, 2:394–399
 kinetics and mechanism, 2:402–410
 monomers for, 2:392–394
 polymerization media, 2:399–401
Carbocations, 4:56
Carbodiimides, 11:216
Carbohydrate-based adhesives, 1:428, 429
Carbon-13 (^{13}C) NMR, 2:737, 8:523
Carbon
 filler material, 5:785
Carbon-based nanostructured materials, 7:642
Carbon black dispersant, lignosulfonate, 7:541, 542
Carbon black, 2:426–463, 3:470, 553, 555
 acetylene black process, 2:449
 analytical test methods (table), 2:440, 441
 applications, 2:453–460
 atomic structure, 2:431
 butyl rubber filler, 2:364, 365, 428
 classification, 2:439–441
 effects on sound speed in rubber, 1:83
 environmental concerns, 2:463
 as filler, 5:798, 799
 filler for ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:601, 602
 formation, 2:441–444
 health and safety factors, 2:461–463
 impingement (channel, roller) process, 2:427, 450
 lampblack process, 2:450
 manufacture, 2:444–451
 oil-furnace process, 2:427, 428, 444–448
 production by grade in U.S. (table), 2:454
 properties and characterization, 2:428–439
 recycle blacks, 2:451
 for rubber compounding, 12:218–221
 in SBR processing, 13:276, 277
 silica-to-rubber coupling agent, 12:184, 185
 surface modification, 2:451–453
 thermal black process, 2:448, 449
 thermal stability and, 13:37
 as ultraviolet-screening pigment, 13:30, 31
 UV stabilizing effects, 14:481
Carbon-carbon bond cleavage, in lignin, 7:529, 530
Carbon-carbon composites
 phenolic resins, 9:578, 615
Carbon-carbon double bond addition, 6:835
Carbon-carbon double bonds, hydrogenation of, 6:775
Carbon-carbon free-radical initiators, 6:857, 858
Carbon-containing silicon dioxide-like films, 10:16
Carbon dioxide separation, from stack gases, 5:836
Carbon dioxide. *See also* Supercritical carbon dioxide
 acrylonitrile as barrier to, 1:281
 acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:284
 chain-growth polymerizations in supercritical,
 4:49–57
 diffusivity in polymers, 8:304
 dispersion and emulsion polymerizations in, 4:53
 molecular volumes (table), 14:301
 permeabilities of various high and moderate barrier
 polyhmers, 2:35
 permeation, 2:24
 polymerization in supercritical, 4:47–60
 surfactants for, 4:51, 52
 transport properties at 35°C in liquid crystalline
 polymer and polyacrylonitrile
Carbon fiber HTA-12K, 2:469
Carbon fiber K-11, 00
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber P-100S
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber P-120S
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber P-25
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber P-30X
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber P-55S
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber P-75S
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber reinforcement, 11:691–693
Carbon fiber T-101F
 physical properties, 2:473
Carbon fiber T-101S
 physical properties, 2:473
Carbon fiber T-201F
 physical properties, 2:473
Carbon fiber T-201S
 physical properties, 2:473
Carbon fiber T-300
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber T-650/35
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber T-650/42
 physical properties, 2:479
Carbon fiber-reinforced composites
 phenolic resins, 9:614
Carbon fibers, 2:466–484, 5:681
 acrylic fibers as precursor, 1:251, 252

- acrylonitrile in, 1:274
- cyclopentadiene as feedstock, 4:236
- electropolymerization on, 5:134–140
- high performance fibers, 6:712–714
- from high performance polymers, 2:469, 479
- mechanical properties of, 11:692, 693
- mesophase pitch-based, 2:469, 472–479
- PAN-based, 2:469–472
- production, 2:467
- properties, 9:346
- properties of commercial (table), 2:479
- rayon-based, 2:469, 480–482
- vapor-grown, 2:469, 482, 483
- Carbon fillers, 5:798, 799
- Carbon gel, 2:438
- Carbon-hydrogen bonds
 - dissociation energies, 1:689
- Carbon monoxide, 6:39. *See also* Polyketones
 - copolymerization with styrene, 13:195
 - in phosgene manufacture, 9:626–628
- Carbon monoxide/ethene copolymerization
 - catalyst performance in, 10:654
 - discovery of, 10:649
- Carbon monoxide/olefin terpolymers, 10:649, 652
- Carbon nanofiber nanocomposites, 14:177, 178
- Carbon nanohorns (CNHs), 7:642, 643
- Carbon-nanotube fibers, 6:714
- Carbon nanotubes (CNTs), 5:265, 7:642, 643, 11:698, 699, 14:177, 178
 - anionic and living free radical initiators, 7:643
 - covalent functionalization, 7:643
 - end-functionalized polymers, 7:643
 - filler material, 5:785, 799
- Carbon tetrabromide
 - transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Carbon tetrachloride
 - in CSM preparations, 5:476, 477
 - solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 - transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Carbon whiskers, 11:692
- Carbon/graphite fibers
 - filler material, 5:785
- Carbonate-ester transesterification reaction, 5:261
- Carbonate group
 - relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- Carbonium-imonium ion, 1:522
- Carbonium ions, 2:391
- Carbonization
 - mesophase pitch-based carbon fibers, 2:477
 - PAN-based carbon fibers, 2:471
 - rayon-based carbon fibers, 2:480–482
- Carbonized PAN fibers, 2:471
- Carbonizing
 - wool, 15:321
- Carbonless copy paper, 8:389
 - phenolic resins, 9:605
- Carbonyl compounds, 8:172
 - free-radical initiators, 1:688
- Carbonyl group
 - in lignin, 7:535
 - quantitative determination of, 1:114
- Carbonyl monomers
 - anionic polymerization, 1:599
- Carbonylamines condensation products
 - antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Carboranes
 - replacing cyclopentadienyl in metallocenes, 8:99, 100
- Carbosilane dendrimers, 10:394, 395
- Carboxy methylcellulose (CMC)
 - drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Carboxy-terminated butadiene nitrile
 - elastomer modifier for epoxies, 5:322, 323
- Carboxyl group
 - relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- Carboxyl group, in lignin, 7:535
- Carboxylic acids
 - curing agents, 5:337
 - phosgene reactions with, 9:626
- Carboxylic functional polyesters
 - coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:348–350
- Carboxylic terminated polyesters
 - advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
- Carboxymethyl cellulose, 2:649
 - applications, 2:655
 - economic aspects, 2:653–655
 - in interpenetrating network, 7:144
 - manufacture, 2:652, 653
 - properties, 2:651, 652
 - salt compatibility, 2:650
 - test methods, 2:654, 655
 - water-soluble polymer, 15:195, 196
- Carboxymethylhydroxyethylcellulose, 2:658, 659
- Cardanol, 5:268
- Carilon polymer, 10:650
- Carnahan-Starling equation, 2:201
- Carnauba wax, 6:106
- Caroa, 14:495
 - dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 - processing, 14:505
- Carothers principle, of functionality, 11:183
- Carothers, Wallace H., 10:238, 510
- Carpet fibers, nylon, 10:263, 264
- Carpets
 - PTT in, 10:207
 - recycling, 10:264, 11:671, 672
- Carr-Purcell-Meibom-Gill pulse sequences, 9:243
- Carrageenan, 15:191
- Carrier facilitated transport, 7:802
- Carrier mobility
 - polysilanes, 11:161
- Carriers
 - of colorants, 3:492
- Carry-out bags, 9:477, 478
- Cartesian coordinate system, for conformation geometry, 3:695–697
- Caruther model, 1:475, 476, 15:471
- CAS Registry file, 13:157
- CAS. *See* Chemical Abstracts Service (CAS)
- Cascade defects, 3:277
- Cascading, 9:132, 133

- Casein, 2:487–493
acid, 2:487
active groups in, 2:489
as adhesive, 2:492
amino acid content of, 2:488
chemical properties, 2:487, 488
for coatings, 2:492, 493
component fractions of, 2:489
cross-linking, 2:490, 491, 493
elemental composition of, 2:488
for fiber production, 2:493
in food processing, 2:492
health effects of, 2:493
manufacture of, 2:490, 491
for manufacture of plastics, 2:493
physical properties, 2:488–490
rennet, 2:487
for sizing of paper, 2:492
testing procedures, 2:492
uses, 2:492, 493
world production of, 2:492
- Casein adhesives, 1:427, 428
- Cashew nutshell liquid
phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- CASRN. *See* Chemical Abstract Service Registry Number (CASRN)
- CASSCF. *See* Complete active space self-consistent field (CASSCF)
- Cast film extrusion line, 5:635
- Cast film extrusion, 10:77, 78
of LLDPE, 5:570
- Cast films, 5:814
biaxially oriented, 5:590
propylene polymers, 11:403
- Casting, 2:495–507, 5:688, 10:89
acrylic sheet, manufacture of, 2:495, 496, 501, 503–506. *See also* Acrylic epoxy resin applications, 5:402–406
PET and PEN films, 10:503, 504
- Casting alloys in dentistry, 4:410, 411
- Casting knife, 7:748
- Casting lines, 5:691
- Casting operations, 11:701
- Casting solution, composition pathway of, 7:758
- Castor-oil-derived alkyds, 1:493
- Castor oil-based interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:133–136
- Castor oil-based polyurethane
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Catalysis. *See also* Single-site catalysts; Ziegler-Natta catalysts
biscyclopentadienyl, 5:562, 563
Chromox, 5:557, 558
constrained geometry, 5:562
embedded microgels, 8:439
evaluation/development, for polyketones, 10:653–655
for LLDPE production, 5:557–564
general aspects, 8:151
Grubbs-type catalysts, 8:155
homogeneous, 8:151
immobilization, 8:157
Katz-type catalyst, 8:153
metallocene, 5:544, 557, 560
molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:697–699
nickel(II)-based, 10:655
organochrome, 5:559, 560
polyketone, 10:653, 668
Piers-type, 8:158
prefunctionalization, 8:171
for propylene polymers, 11:368–373
Ruthenium-based catalysts, 8:155
single-site, 5:560–564
Standard of Indiana, 5:558
tantalum-based, 8:152
titanium-based, 8:152
tungsten-based, 8:153
with amphiphilic dendrimers, 4:353, 354
- Catalyst immobilization, 8:157
- Catalyst supports
metallocenes, 8:91, 92
- Catalytic chain transfer isomerization, 11:532
- Catalytic chain transfer, 11:531–533
- Catalytic chain-transfer agents, in emulsion polymerization, 5:175
- Catalytic cracker residue
feedstock for oil-furnace black process, 2:446
- Catalytic cure
epoxy resins, 5:358–362
- Catalytic dehydrogenation, polysilanes via, 7:41
- Catechin, 5:272, 273
- Catechol, 5:270
- Cation-exchange membranes, 5:834, 7:747, 788
- Cation exchange reaction
idealized equilibrium constant, 7:153
- Cation exchange resin, schematic structural view, 7:151
- Cation exchangers
dispersed amphoteric metal oxides, 7:186
- Cation pool technique, 8:345
- “Cation pool”, 8:335
- Cationic acrylamide polymers, 1:118
as dewatering aids, 1:119
- Cationic carbonyl polymers, from poly(acrylamide), 1:128, 129
- Cationic catalysts
advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
curing agents, 5:337
- Cationic copolymers, of acrylamide, 1:131–135
- Cationic grafting techniques, 6:479
- Cationic homopolymerization, of acrolein polymers, 1:111
- Cationic hydroxyethylcelluloses, 2:659, 660
- Cationic photopolymerization, 9:695–714
- Cationic polyelectrolytes
water-soluble polymers, 15:207–210
- Cationic polymerization, 2:191, 725, 726
carbocationic polymerization contrasted, 2:390
chloroprene, 3:50, 51
macromers, 13:725–728
for macromonomers synthesis, 6:491
polybutadiene synthesis, 2:316, 317
reactions pathways, 8:341
silicones, 12:476, 477
styrene, 13:214, 223, 226

- in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:54–56
 telechelic polymers, 13:694–701
- Cationic ring-opening photopolymerization, 9:703–705
 in hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:787
- Cationic surfactants. *See* Surfactants
- Cationic urea resins, 1:541
- Cationic wheat starch, reaction extrusion, 11:645
- Cauchy-Green deformation tensor, 15:112, 120
- Cauchy-Green strain tensor, for solid-like polymers, 15:162
- Caulkability, 9:470
- Cavitation-induced polymer scission, 14:429
 mechanism, 14:427, 428
 scission kinetics, 14:428
 ultrasonic scission of, 14:429
 antisolvent effect on, 14:429
- Cavities, formation of, 6:332
- Cavity mixers, 5:658, 659
- Cavity transfer mixer, 5:659
- CB-A antioxidants. *See* Chain-breaking acceptor (CB-A) antioxidants
- CB antioxidants. *See* Chain-breaking (CB) antioxidants
- CB-D antioxidants. *See* Chain-breaking donor (CB-D) antioxidants
- CCTP. *See* Coordinative chain transfer polymerization (CCTP)
- CD-based polyrotaxanes, of rotor-polyaxis systems, 11:138
- CD fluorocarbon plasmas, 10:7
- CD polarization modulation spectroscopy, 12:666
- CD polyrotaxanes, 11:128, 129
- α -CD polyrotaxanes, 11:129
- CD spectra
 geometry of biphenyl A/C system and, 5:43
 nondegenerate coupled oscillator, 5:46, 47
 for polymers, 5:47
 for proteins, 5:47–49
- CD spectroscopy, 12:657
 Jones and Stokes vectors, 12:657–659
 Stokes-Mueller formalism, 12:657
- CD. *See* Circular dichroism (CD)
- CdS, 8:785
- CDs
 and cationic polymers, complex formation, 11:122
 and polyamides and polyurethanes, complex formation (table), 11:127
 and polyamines, complex formation (table), 11:121
 and polyethers, complex formation (table), 11:121
 and polyolefins, complex formation (table), 11:126
 and π -conjugated polymers, complex formation (table), 11:124
 chemical structure and properties of (table), 11:120
 polypseudorotaxanes, 11:127, 128
- CDs. *See* Compact discs (CDs), 6:383–386
- CdSe, 8:785
- CdTe, 8:785
- CED. *See* Cohesive energy density (CED)
- Ceiling temperature, 4:254, 255, 14:95
- Celcon, 1:1
- Celcon GC-25A, 1:14
- Celcon LW90-SC, 1:14
- Celcon U10, 1:13
- Cell-cast acrylic sheet, 2:495
- Cellobiose, 2:575, 576
- Cellophane
 environmentally degradable plastic, 2:81, 84
 moisture proofing, 2:50
- Cellosolve
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Cellosolve acetate
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Cellotetraose, 2:567
- Cells, 12:645
- Cellular ebonite, 2:523
- Cellular materials, 2:511–559. *See also* Blowing agents
 acoustic properties, 1:73
 classification, 2:512
 commercial products and processes, 2:546–558
 decompression expansion processes, 2:520–524
 expandable formulations, 2:515–520
 expansion process, 2:512–514
 frothing process, 2:524, 525
 health and safety factors, 2:558, 559
 manufacturing processes, 2:514–526
 microcellular plastics, 8:300–315
 phase separation, 2:525, 526
 physical properties of selected commercial, 2:527, 528
 properties, 2:526–546
 syntactic, 2:525
 test methods, 2:512
- Cellular rubber, 2:512
 manufacture, 2:522, 523
- Cellulase, 2:568, 5:226
- Cellulase/surfactant (CS) complex, 5:227
- Celluloid, 2:609
- Cellulose, 2:570
- Cellulose, 2:566–592, 600, 617, 672
 amorphous, 2:576, 579
 biodegradable natural polymer, 2:111
 biosynthesis, 2:570–573
 blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
 as cellular material, 2:511
 chemical reactivity, 2:588, 589
 component of vegetable fibers, 14:494
 cross-linking, 2:587
 crystalline, 2:576, 579, 580
 direct dissolution, 2:691–694
 dissolution, 2:680
 environmentally degradable plastic, 2:80, 81
 filler material, 5:785
 irradiation degradation, 4:289
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:428
 microcrystalline, 2:579, 588
 physical properties, 2:620
 polymer-supported reagents, 11:40–42
 preparation, 2:573, 574
 solvents for, 2:589–591
 sources, 2:569, 570
 structural isomers, 2:618
 structure-property relationships, 2:575–588
 thermoforming, 14:127
 in viscose process, 2:676, 677
- β -Cellulose, 2:569
- γ -Cellulose, 2:569
- Cellulose acetate, 2:590, 617–619
 analytical and test methods, 2:632–637

- applications, 2:637–641
 decompression expansion processes, 2:520
 economic aspects, 2:632
 environmentally degradable plastic, 2:81
 fatigue thermal history effect, 5:742
 manufacture and processing, 2:621–631
 membranes, 7:755, 794
 physical properties, 2:527, 620, 621
- Cellulose acetate butyrate
 applications, 2:637, 639–641
 liquid crystalline, 2:620, 621
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose acetate butyrate succinate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose acetate isobutyrate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose acetate Loeb-Sourirajan reverse osmosis
 membranes, 7:759
- Cellulose-acetate membrane, 5:834
- Cellulose acetate methacrylate
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose acetate phthalate, 2:619
 manufacture, 2:624, 625
- Cellulose acetate propionate
 applications, 2:637, 638–641
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose acetate succinate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose acetate tape, 11:291
- Cellulose acetate valerate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose acetates maleates
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose acetates sorbates
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose adhesives, 1:428
- Cellulose aminoacetates
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose-binding domain (CBD)-deleted mutant
 cellulase, 5:228
- Cellulose butyrate
 manufacture, 2:622, 623
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose butyrate valerate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose caprate
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose-chitin hybrid polysaccharides, 5:235
- Cellulose chloroacetates
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose dansylate, 2:606
- Cellulose deoxysulfonates, 2:607
- Cellulose derivatives
 water-soluble polymers, 15:195, 196
- Cellulose diacetate
 liquid crystalline, 2:620
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose diacetate membranes, 7:784, 786
- Cellulose dinitrate, 2:602
- Cellulose esters, inorganic, 2:**600–613**
 applications, 2:608–613
 physical properties, 2:607, 608
 preparation, 2:601–607
- Cellulose esters, mixed, 2:619
- Cellulose esters, organic, 2:**617–641**
 analytical and test methods, 2:632–637
 applications, 2:637–641
 economic aspects, 2:632
 health and safety factors, 2:637
 liquid crystalline solutions, 2:620, 621
 manufacture and processing, 2:621–631
 physical properties, 2:619–621
- Cellulose ethers, 1:428, 2:**647–667**
 blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450, 451
 commercial, 2:651–667
 hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
- Cellulose fibers, regenerated, 2:**672–706**
 applications, 2:675, 676
 commercial aspects, 2:703–705
 cuprammonium rayon, 2:689–691
 direct dissolution processes, 2:691–694
 lyocell applications, 2:686, 694–697
 lyocell process, 2:692–694, 701, 702
 other solvent routes, 2:697–699
 production and consumption, 2:702, 703
 properties, 2:699, 700
 viscose process, 2:676–689
 viscose process, environmental issues, 2:700, 701
- Cellulose formate
 manufacture, 2:621
- Cellulose gum, 2:651
- Cellulose heptylate
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose hydrates, 2:585
- Cellulose I, 2:568, 580–583, 584
 biosynthesis, 2:571
 x-ray diffraction pattern, 2:578
- Cellulose II, 2:568, 583, 584
 biosynthesis, 2:571
 x-ray diffraction pattern, 2:578
- Cellulose III, 2:584
- Cellulose IV, 2:583, 585
 biosynthesis, 2:571
- Cellulose laurate
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose liquid crystals, 2:591, 592
- Cellulose mesylate, 2:606
- Cellulose methanesulfonate, 2:606
- Cellulose mononitrate, 2:602
- Cellulose morpholinobutyrate
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulose myristate
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose nanocrystals, 2:592
- Cellulose nitrate, 2:600, 601, 673
 applications, 2:608–613
 film formation, 2:608
 solubility, 2:608
- Cellulose palmitate
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose phosphate paper, 2:613
- Cellulose phosphate, 2:607, 608
 applications, 2:607, 608
 solubility, 2:607
 water-soluble polymers, 15:196
- Cellulose propionate
 manufacture, 2:623
 physical properties, 2:620

- Cellulose propionate isobutyrate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose propionate valerate
 manufacture, 2:624
- Cellulose sponges, 2:525
- Cellulose succinates, 2:619
- Cellulose sulfate, 2:602–606
 applications, 2:610–613
 solubility, 2:608
 water-soluble polymers, 15:196
- Cellulose sulfonates, 2:606
 applications, 2:611
 solubility, 2:608
- Cellulose synthase, 2:572
- Cellulose synthesis, 5:226–228
- Cellulose toluenesulfonate, 2:606, 607, 611
- Cellulose tosylate, 2:606, 607
 applications, 2:611
- Cellulose triacetate
 applications, 2:637
 film properties, 5:806
 liquid crystalline, 2:620
 NMR chemical shifts and coupling constants, 2:634
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose tributyrate
 NMR chemical shifts and coupling constants,
 2:634
- Cellulose trinitrate, 2:602
- Cellulose tripropionate
 NMR chemical shifts and coupling constants, 2:634
- Cellulose valerate
 manufacture, 2:623
 physical properties, 2:620
- Cellulose x, 2:579, 585
- Cellulose-xylan hybrid polysaccharide, 5:235
- Cellulose *N,N*-diethylaminoacetate
 manufacture, 2:623
- Cellulosic fibers, 14:494
- Cellulosics
 processing, 10:69
- Celquats, 2:659
- Cement additives, 2:710–713
 macrodefect-free cement products, 2:713
 polymer-impregnated concrete, 2:711, 712
 polymer portland-cement concrete, 2:712
- CEN, 6:86
- CENELEC, 6:86
- Centrifugal devolatilizer, for styrene polymerization,
 13:242, 243
- Centrifugal force, 8:385, 388
- Centrifugal pelletizers, 9:483, 484
- Ceramic fiber reinforcement, alumina polycrystalline
 filaments in, 11:698
- Ceramic fibers, strength variability in, 11:685
- Ceramic-like phases, sol-gel generation, 9:32
- Ceramic membranes, 7:747, 763–765
- Ceramic microspheres, 8:504
- Ceramic molding, 7:10
- Ceramics
 advanced, 11:697
 Poisson's ratio, moduli, and density of, 4:643
 silicon carbide in, 11:697
- Cerex
 physical properties, 9:181
- Cetyl trimethylammonium bromide (CTAB), 8:790
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- CF yarns. *See* Continuous filament
- CFx radicals, adsorption-desorption equilibrium, 10:9
- CFCs. *See* Chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs)
- CFF force field model, 8:578
- CFM. *See* Continuous filament mat (CFM)
- CFR. *See* Code of Federal Regulations (CFR)
- CGCs. *See* Constrained geometry catalysts (CGCs)
- CH₄, physical properties, 8:5
- Chain branching, in polymer oxidation, 13:4
- Chain-breaking (CB) antioxidants, 13:11–16, 22–24
- Chain-breaking acceptor (CB-A) antioxidants, 13:11,
 12, 25, 26
- Chain-breaking donor (CB-D) antioxidants, 13:11, 12,
 25, 26
- Chain configuration
 vibrational spectroscopy, 14:575, 576
- Chain conformation
 geometry of individual, 3:694–697
 neutron scattering studies, 9:55, 56
 stereochemical composition and, 3:700
 vibrational spectroscopy of disordered, 14:579–583
 vibrational spectroscopy of ordered, 14:576–579
- Chain copolymerization, 3:760
- Chain dynamics, PVDF, 15:68
- Chain effect
 in template polymerization, 13:745
- Chain end functionality, of ATRP, 1:731
- Chain-end functionalized polymers. *See* End
 functionalized chains
- Chain-end initiation, of styrene polymers, 13:208
- Chain extension and grafting, 8:511
 oxidative polymerization, 9:435–437
- Chain-folded lamellar structure, 5:549
- Chain folding, 2:203
 and crystal growth, 4:174
 and crystallization kinetics, 4:167
- Chain-growth polymerization, 13:82
 in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:49–57
- Chain-growth polymers, 8:511
- Chain initiation. *See* Initiation
- Chain length
 and phase transformation, 9:563
 radical polymerization, 11:560–573
- Chain-length-dependent termination (CLDT),
 7:353–355
 acrylates, 7:387
 molecular weight distribution, 7:364, 365
 number-average degree, 7:359, 360
 NSSP, 7:371
- Chain length distribution (CLD), 7:361
 polydispersity index (or dispersity), 7:365
- Chain-length-independent termination (CLIT), 7:355,
 356
 molecular weight distribution, 7:361–364
 number-average degree, 7:358, 359
 steady-state polymerization (SSP), 7:355, 356
- Chain orientation
 effects on permeation, 2:18, 19
- Chain propagation. *See* Propagation
- Chain-reaction polymerization, 2:717–730, 3:125, 8:523
 copolymerization, 2:728, 729
 ionic, 2:724–728

- products produced by, 2:717
 radical, 2:720–724
 and step-reaction polymerizations, 2:717, 718
 stereochemistry, 2:729, 730
 types and process of, 2:719, 720
 types of, by unsaturated monomers, 2:719
 utility of, 2:717
- Chain scission
 with depropagation, 4:254–258
 during high-temperature polyolefin processing, 13:7, 8
 telechelic polymers, 13:717–720
- Chain stiffness, 6:441
- Chain stopping events, 12:581
- Chain structure
 of LLDPE, 5:544
- Chain termination. *See* Termination
- Chain transfer agent, 1:164, 2:714. *See also* Chain transfer
 and chloroprene polymer branching, 3:54–56
 chloroprene polymerization, 3:46
 in emulsion polymerization, 5:175
 in free-radical polymerization, 13:221–223
 latexes, 7:470
 in LDPE synthesis, 5:525, 526
 phosphite, 1:164
 polyketone, 10:656–658
 telechelic polymers, 13:679, 680
- Chain transfer coefficient, 2:715
- Chain-transfer reactions
 butyl rubber synthesis, 2:351
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:406–408–410
 heterophase polymerization, 6:595
 styrene/diene anionic polymerization, 1:619, 620
- Chain transfer to solvent (CTS), in styrene polymerization, 13:224
- Chain transfer with chain-transfer agents/solvents, chain termination by, 5:525, 526
- Chain transfer with ethylene, chain termination by, 5:525, 526
- Chain transfer, 2:714–716
 applications, 2:716
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:706–708
 chain transfer agent in, 2:714
 chloroprene polymerization, 3:45–47
 degree of polymerization and, 2:714
 effect on rate and molecular weight, 2:715
 in free-radical polymerization, 13:221–223
 to initiator, 11:527, 528
 in ionic polymerizations, 2:715
 latex manufacture, 7:470
 to monomer, 11:525–527
 to polymer, 11:541, 542
 radical polymerization, 11:521–542
 in radical polymerizations, 2:714, 715
 telechelic polymers, 13:679–681
 to transfer agents and solvents, 11:528–541
 vinyl acetate polymerization, 14:668, 669
- Chain transitions, intramolecular energy changes from, 4:657
- Chain walking mechanism, 13:557, 565
- Chainfolded lamellae from solution, 8:706–711
 crystal habits, 8:706
 lamellar thickness, 8:709–711
 nonplanar geometries, 8:708, 709
 nonplanar habits, 8:709
 sectorization, 8:706–708
 truncated lozenge, 8:707
 uncollapsed polyethylene lamellae, 8:708, 709
- Chains. *See* Polymer chains
- Chalk, 5:793
- Chalk powder
 filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
 filler properties, 5:379
- Channel (impingement) process, for carbon black, 2:427, 450
- Channel blacks, 2:427, 450, 3:470
- Char yield
 of polycarbonate (PC), 6:75, 76
 polymers, 6:51–53
- Char yield calculation, under anaerobic condition, 6:75
- Characteristic heating rate, 6:45
- Characterization of polymers, 2:732–756
 density, 2:756
 electrical properties, 2:755
 epoxy curing and cured networks, 5:372–376
 flammability, 2:755
 molar mass and molar mass distribution, 2:739–742
 molecular dynamics, 2:752–754
 molecular organization and dynamic behavior, 2:742–749
 molecular structure, 2:736–739
 morphology visualization, 2:749–752
 permeability, 2:755
 sample preparation, 2:734–736
 solubility, 2:756
 stability, 2:755
 thermosetting polymers, 2:754–756
 uncured epoxy resins, 5:331–334
- Charge-coupled device (CCD) camera, 12:10, 11
- Charge-driven co-assembling hydrogels, 6:757–759
 polyelectrolyte complex micelles, 6:758
- Charge-driven coacervate hydrogels, 6:758, 759
- Charge-driven hydrogels, 6:755–759
 interpolyelectrolyte complex (IPEC), 6:756
- Charge-driven self-assembling hydrogels, 6:756, 757
- Charge extraction by a linear increase in voltage (CELIV), 12:643
- Charge-generation agents, 9:760
- Charge stabilization
 polymer dispersions, 6:645, 646
- Charge-transfer materials, 4:742
- Charge-transport agents, 9:761
- CHARMM modeling package, 8:578
- Charpy impact tester, 6:800, 803, 805, 806, 13:773
- Charpy test, 2:749, 5:210
- Charring polymers, 6:63
 of fuel gases, 6:70
- CHDM isomer ratio, 4:215
- CHDM-modified PCT, 4:218–220
- CHDM-modified PET, 4:218–220
- CHDM. *See* 1,4-Cyclohexanedimethanol
- Cheese packaging, 9:474, 479
- Chelating agents, in ethylene polymerization, 5:566
- Chemical
 effect on polyamide plastics, 10:282

- fractography and, 6:291–293
gel point, 6:370, 371
Chemical Abstract Service Registry Number (CASRN), 5:201, 202
Chemical abstracts nomenclature, 9:86–95
 source-based nomenclature, 9:91–93
 structure-based nomenclature, 9:93–95
Chemical Abstracts Service (CAS), 9:69
 structural representation of polymers, 13:152–176
Chemical Abstracts, 1:276, 9:69
 databases, 15:56
Chemical amplification (CA) concept, 7:587. *See also*
 Lithographic resists
Chemical and analytical test methods
 basic approaches, 9:112, 113
 molecular mass distribution, 9:112
 NDT monitoring, 9:113
Chemical blowing agents, 1:346, 2:262–267, 3:501, 502
 azodicarbonamide, 2:264–266
 decomposition range of commercial (table), 2:263
 diisopropylhydrazodicarboxylate, 2:267
 dinitrosopentamethylenetetramine, 2:263
 5-pheny-3,6-dihydro-1,3,4-oxadiazin-2-one, 2:267
 5-phenyltetrazole, 2:266, 267
 p-toluenesulfonyl semicarbazide, 2:266
 sodium bicarbonate, 2:263
 sodium borohydride, 2:267
 sulfonyl hydrazides, 2:263, 264
Chemical bonding
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:226–228
 spunbonded fabrics, 9:196
Chemical degradation
 and drag reduction, 4:558
Chemical effects, of stabilizers and antioxidants, 13:18, 19
Chemical environments, polysulfone resistance to, 11:193–195
Chemical etching, 1:377. *See also* Acid etching;
 Electrochemical etching; Etchants; Etching
Chemical exposure tests, 13:776
Chemical finishing
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:231–233
Chemical grafting, post polymer manufacture, 13:39
Chemical modification
 acrylic fiber, 1:248
 PET fiber, 10:518–523
Chemical netpoints, of shape-memory polymers, 12:410
Chemical properties
 acrylonitrile monomer, 1:264, 265
 chitin and chitosan, 3:37
 cyanoacrylate monomers, 10:426–428
 elastomeric fibers, 5:779, 780
 high barrier polymers, 2:33–44
 lignins, 7:537, 538, 543
 lignosulfonates, 7:540
 LLDPE, 5:548
 moderate barrier polymers, 2:44–49
 natural rubber fibers, 5:779, 780
 nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, 10:244, 245
 olefin fibers, 9:349
 organosolv pulping lignins, 7:544, 545
 polyamide plastics, 10:280–282
 poly(ethylene oxide), 5:451–451
 poly(phenylene oxide)s, 10:574–576
 polysulfides, 11:169–173
 polysulfones, 11:188–190
 propylene polymers, 11:362–364
 SAN copolymers, 1:290
 spandex fibers, 5:779, 780
 vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:695–701
 vinyl chloride polymers, 14:726, 727
Chemical reactions
 bonding and, 1:370, 371
Chemical recycling, 4:442
Chemical resistance
 of ABS polymers, 1:318, 319
 of aramid fibers, 10:231
 of engineering thermoplastics, 5:211, 217
 of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:163, 164
 PEN, 10:143, 144
Chemical retting, 14:500
Chemical sensors
 electrically active polymers for, 4:771, 772
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:434
 molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:693–696
Chemical shrinkage
 composite materials, 3:530–532
Chemical substitution, of a colorant, 3:468, 469
Chemical synthesis, of polynucleotides. *See also*
 Biosynthesis; Polymerization
Chemical tests
 composite materials, 3:543
Chemical treatment
 effect on biodegradation, 2:102
Chemical valves, 12:613–616
Chemical vapor deposition (CVD), 2:762–782, 11:697
 applications, 2:776–782
 antimicrobial coatings and, 2:779
 benefits of, 2:770–773
 biocompatible coatings and, 2:776–779
 capabilities, 2:773–776
 conductive coatings and, 2:779, 780
 functional parylene coatings and, 2:781, 782
 hydrophobic coatings and, 2:776
 initiated chemical vapor deposition, 2:765–768
 light-responsive coatings and, 2:781
 oxidative chemical vapor deposition, 2:768–770
 pH-responsive coatings and, 2:780, 781
 plasma enhanced chemical vapor deposition, 2:764, 765
 thermally-responsive coatings and, 2:780
 vapor deposition polymerization, 2:763, 764
Chemical wear, 13:516, 517
 tribochemical reaction, 13:516
Chemically bound radiopacifier, 11:621–624
 idio-polymer families, 11:624–626
 polycarbonate-organopolysiloxane terpolymer, 11:622
 spherical radiopaque hydrogel particles, 11:621
Chemically polymerized DC-polymer, 6:353
Chemically-resistant fibers, 6:718
Chemiluminescence
 for antioxidant testing, 1:715, 716
Chemiselective adsorption, 3:44
Chemisorbed molecules, 10:5
Chemistry, host-guest, 4:450, 451

- Chewing gums
vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:681
- Chill roll casting, 5:635
- Chill roll, 3:283
- Chimassorb 119, 14:470, 477
- Chimassorb 81, 13:40, 43
- Chimassorb 944, 14:470
- China clay, 5:794
- Chinese jute, 14:495
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
- Chips, 5:62
- Chipscale integration, 5:113
- Chiral catalyst, 3:17, 18
- Chiral chemistry, 12:655
- Chiral discrimination, 3:18, 19
- Chiral liquid crystalline (LC) materials, 5:749
- Chiral polymers, 3:1–25
asymmetric alternating copolymerization, 3:7
asymmetric coupling polymerization, 3:7, 8
asymmetric synthesis polymerization, 3:4, 5
chiral amplification, 3:13, 14
chirality induction, 3:5–7
with chirality on side group, 3:2–4
from chiral monomers, 3:2, 3
with configurational backbone chirality, 3:4–9
with conformational backbone chirality, 3:9–17
definition, 3:1
enantiomer-selective polymerization, 3:3, 4
function and application of, 3:17–25
helicity induction, 3:14–17
helix-sense-selective polymerization, 3:10–13
one-handed helical polymer, 3:9, 10
overview, 3:1, 2
synthesis by repeated asymmetric reaction, 3:8, 9
- Chiral Schrock-catalyst, 8:160
- Chiral stationary phases (CSPs), 3:1, 18, 19, 8:684
- Chirality, 8:514, 515
- Chirality induction, 3:5–7
- Chirality measurement, 12:656
chiroptical techniques, 12:656
circular birefringence (CB) spectroscopies, 12:656
circular dichroism (CD), 12:656
optical rotational dispersion (ORD) spectroscopies, 12:656
- Chiroptical switching, 3:20
- Chitin, 2:91, 3:33–41, 5:229, 230
biodegradable natural polymer, 2:111
biosynthesis of, 3:33–35
chemical properties of, 3:37
economic aspects of, 3:38, 39
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:92
health and safety factors for, 3:39
hydrolysis of, 3:38
isolation of, 3:35, 36
processing of, 3:38
properties of, 3:36–38
sources of, 3:34
specifications and analytical methods for, 3:39
unit cell parameters for, 3:36
uses for, 3:39–41
water-soluble polymer, 15:197
- Chitin-chitosan hybrid polysaccharide, 5:235, 236
- Chitin deacetylase, 3:35
- Chitin-xylan hybrid polysaccharide, 5:235
- Chitinase catalysis mechanism, 5:230, 231
- Chitosan, 3:33–42
biodegradable natural polymer, 2:105, 111
biosynthesis of, 3:33–35
chemical properties of, 3:37
economic aspects of, 3:38, 39
health and safety factors for, 3:39
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
isolation of, 3:33
processing of, 3:39
properties of, 3:36–38
sources of, 3:34
specifications and analytical methods for, 3:39
template for polymerization, 13:748
unit cell parameters for, 3:36
uses for, 3:39–41
water-soluble polymer, 15:197
- Chitosan polyurethane networks, self-repairing
oxetane-substituted, 12:369
- Chloranil
inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
- Chlorendic anhydride, 4:235
- Chlorinated butyl rubber, 2:349, 357–360, 366
- Chlorinated dodecahydrodimethanodibenzocyclooctene,
as nylon additive, 10:284
- Chlorinated hydrocarbons, 1:355
- Chlorinated poly(vinyl chloride), 14:754
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Chlorinated polyethylene
physical properties, 12:207
for rubber compounding, 12:204, 213
- Chlorine
content of chlorosulfonated polyethylene, 5:469–474
poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:131
- Chlorine-capped poly(methyl methacrylate) arms, 8:443
- Chlorine cure sites, of acrylic elastomers, 1:174, 175
- Chlorine-sensitive interfacial composite membranes,
7:787
- 4-Chloro-4'-hydroxydiphenylsulfone, 11:182
- 2-Chloro-*p*-xylylene
threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
- Chlorobutyl rubber, 7:330
- Chlorofluorinated telomers, applications, 6:148
- Chlorofluorocarbons (CFCs), 13:213, 11:258
phasing out of, 4:47
- Chloroform
in CSM preparations, 5:475, 476
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- 4-Chloromethyl resin, 11:76
- Chloroprene
aqueous solubility, 7:467
copolymerization, 3:47–50
copolymerization with 2,3-dichloro-1,3-butadiene,
3:59
health, safety and environmental factors, 3:79, 80
physical properties, 12:207
polymerization, 3:43–51
water solubility for heterophase polymerization,
6:628
- Chloroprene elastomers, 12:212, 213
- Chloroprene polymers, 3:43–80
antioxidants, 3:64, 65

- antiozants, 3:65, 66
 caldendering, 3:66–68
 commercial dry type, 3:71
 commercial polymers, 3:59–61
 compounding and processing, 3:63
 curing mechanism, 3:63, 64
 extrusion, 3:67, 68
 global polychloroprene grades, 3:59
 health, safety and environmental factors, 3:79, 80
 latex or liquid dispersion, 3:71–75
 manufacture, 3:56–59
 microstructure, 3:51–56
 mixing, 3:66
 molding, 3:68
 plasticizers, 3:66
 polymerization processes, 3:43–51
 properties, 3:68–71
 vulcanization, 3:61–63
 Chloroprene rubber, 3:43
 Chloroprene-sulfur copolymers, 3:47–49
 curing, 3:63, 64
 manufacture, 3:56–59
 3-Chloropropyltriethoxysilane, 12:187
 Chlorosilanes, 12:420
p-Chlorostyrene
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
o-Chlorostyrene
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 Chlorostyrene beads, foaming-in-place, 13:256
 Chlorosulfonated ethylene polymers, 5:467–483. *See also* Chlorosulfonated polyethylene (CSM); Chlorosulfonated polymers
 health and safety factors for, 5:481
 properties of, 5:468–474
 uses for, 5:482, 483
 Chlorosulfonated polyethylene (CSM), 5:467, 686. *See also* Chlorosulfonated ethylene polymers
 maleimide cure of, 5:478, 479
 processing, 5:477–481
 properties of, 5:469–474
 for rubber compounding, 12:204, 213
 Chlorosulfonated polymers, economic aspects of, 5:481
 Chlorosulfonated polyolefins, preparation of, 5:475–477
 Chlorosulfonation reaction, 5:475
 Chlorosulfonyl polyethylene
 physical properties, 12:207
 Chlorotrifluoroethylene (F2C CFCl), 6:131, 161. *See also* Fluorocarbon elastomers
 2-Chlorotriethyl chloride resin, 11:77
 CHO-terminated polymers, 8:173
 Cholesterol
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:428
 Chondroitin (Ch), 5:234
 Chondroitin
 in interpenetrating network, 7:143
 Chondroitin sulfate (ChS), 5:234, 235
 Chondroitin, 15:194
 Chondroitin sulfate, 15:194
 Chopped fiber glass, 8:504
 Chopped glass strand
 filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
 filler properties, 5:380
 Choro-selective polymerization, 5:228
 Christmas tree module design, 7:788
 Chromatograms, size-exclusion, 3:100
 Chromatographic critical point, 6:273
 Chromatographic software packages, 3:93
 Chromatography
 molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:689–693
 for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:671–675
 of SAN copolymers, 1:290
 Chromatography, affinity, 3:44
 Chromatography, HPLC, 3:88–103
 Chromatography, size exclusion, 3:103, 102–123, 264
 Chrome dyes, 15:332
 Chrome green pigment, 3:471
 Chrome yellow, 3:471, 472
 Chromic acid, surface treatment with, 1:376
 Chromism, polydiacetylene, 4:451
 Chromium catalysts, 5:559–506. *See also* Chromox catalysts; Organochrome catalysts
 for HDPE production, 5:487–489
 1,2-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:311
 Chromium oxide green pigment, 3:471
 Chromium rutile yellow, 3:471
 Chromocene, 8:102
 Chromocene catalyst, 5:560
 Chromophore dipole moment, 5:96
 Chromophores, 9:138–140, 14:453
 and photodegradation, 4:281–283
 photodegradation from impurity, 4:283, 284
 photodegradation from intrinsic, 4:279–281
 in styrene polymerization research, 13:231
 Chromotropism
 polysilanes, 11:150–154
 Chromox catalysts, 5:556, 558
 Chrysene
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
 Chymotrypsin-PEG conjugates, 11:436
 CIE Color System, 13:778, 779
 Circuit boards
 xylene polymer applications, 15:437–439
 Circular dichroism (CD), 5:39, 40
 absorption spectroscopy, 5:40, 41
 in achiral chromophores, 5:42–46
 of B-DNA dinucleotide, 5:49
 coupled oscillator of, 5:43, 44
 exciton coupling and, 5:42–46
 to follow kinetic processes, 5:58–60
 of helical peptides, 5:47
 nondegenerate coupled oscillator, 5:46, 47
 polymer, 5:47–49
 protein, 5:47–49
 in random sequence DNA polynucleotide, 5:49–51
 Circular dies, 5:628
 Circular hopper, 5:642
 Circulating-oil heating systems, 3:579
 Cis-to-trans isomeration, of poly(*tert*-butylacetylene)
cis-1,4-Microstructure, 7:303
cis-1,4-Polybutadiene, selective synthesis, 13:127–133
 cyclopentadienyl-phosphido samarium complex, 13:132

- lanthanocenes, 13:132
 organolanthanide complexes, 13:131
 $\text{VOCl}_3/\text{AlEt}_2\text{Cl}$, 13:132, 133
cis-1,4-Polybutadiene, 2:302
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:306–310, 15:518, 519
cis-1,4-Polyisoprene, 7:270, 271, 12:262. *See also*
 Natural rubber
 activation energy in clustering system with water, 14:321
 gel and branching, 7:288
 glass-transition temperature, 1:80
 uses, 7:337
 Ziegler catalyst, 7:300
cis-Isotactic (*cis*-meso, cm), 8:163
cis-Poly(1-butenylene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:65
cis-Poly-1,4-(2-methyl-butadiene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:65
cis-Polybutadiene, 8:190
cis-Syndiotactic (*cis*-racemic, cr), 8:163
Cis-trans helical conformation, of isotactic
 polythionylphosphazene, 7:49
 Civil engineering
 epoxy resin applications, 5:400, 401
 high performance fiber applications, 6:723
 Cladding layers, problems by, 5:104
 Clam shelling, 5:676
 Clamp tonnage, 2:237
 Clarity, 9:399–401
 Classical laminate theory, 3:544
 Classical mechanics, 8:574
 quantum mechanics contrasted, 8:590, 591
 Classical polymerization processes, 8:403
 Classical Rayleigh Mode, 5:148, 149
 Classification of polymerization reactions, 3:124–127
 Clathrates, 3:128–177
 in active packaging, 3:176, 177
 applications, 3:173–177
 in chromophore and fluorescent materials, 3:174, 175
 classification of, 3:128, 129
 crystalline polymer-inclusion complexes, 3:166–169
 crystalline-polymer molecular complex, 3:169, 170
 crystal structure of, 3:135
 definition, 3:128
 formation of, 3:129
 host and guest compounds in, 3:128
 as inclusion compounds, 3:128
 intercalates, 3:159–166. *See also* Polymer intercalates
 low molecular mass, 3:135
 in molecular sensors, 3:176
 in molecular separations, 3:176
 nanoporous polymer crystals, 3:170–173
 overview, 3:128–131
 in photoreactive materials, 3:175
 polymer clathrates, 3:135–159. *See also* Polymer clathrates
 polymers- and biopolymers-forming host-guest compounds, 3:132–134
 Clausius-Mossotti equation, 9:789
 Clay composites, reaction extrusion, 11:647
 Clay nanocomposite poly-HIPE, 10:608
 Clays
 butyl rubber filler, 2:365
 filled silicone networks, 12:486
 filler material, 5:785
 fillers, 5:794, 795
 in SBR processing, 13:277
 template polymerization on, 13:745
 thermosetting powder coating filler, 3:241
 CLD method, 11:590–592, 594–597
 CLDT, 7:375, 376
 molecular weight distribution, 7:379–382
 radical concentration, 7:377
 Cleaning, as a surface treatment, 1:405
 Clear poly(vinyl chloride) layer, 6:119
 Cleavage failure, 1:394
 Cleavage stops, 6:289
 “Click” chemistry in macromolecular synthesis, 3:186–220
 “Click” reaction, 8:801
 “Click” reactions, 3:186–220. *See also* Azide/alkyne click reaction
 azide/alkyne, 3:187
 basic principles, 3:187
 on biorelated polymers, 3:215–218
 and block copolymers, 3:204, 205
 cyclic polymers, synthesis of, 3:207, 210
 dendrimers/hyperbranched polymers, synthesis of, 3:208, 210–213
 examples of, 3:186, 189
 gels and networks, formation of, 3:213–215
 graft polymers, synthesis of, 3:207, 209
 on linear polymers, 3:194–204
 mechanism, 3:188–190
 polymeric architectures via, 3:188
 star polymers, synthesis of, 3:206–208
 on surfaces and interfaces, 3:218–220
 Closed-cell polyHIPE, 10:603
 Closed-celled cellular material, 2:512
 Closed-loop recycling, 11:674
 Clothing, PPTA fiber, 10:228
 Clustering effects, dendrimers and, 4:307
 CMC. *See* Critical micelle concentration
 CMOS. *See* Complementary metal oxide semiconductor (CMOS)
 CNS-drugs
 controlled release technology, 3:755
 Co-rotating twin screw extruders, 5:618
 Co-solvents (table), 14:514, 515
 glass-transition temperature, 14:524
 glassy polymers, 14:524
 leukocyte adhesion, 14:554, 555
 mechanical properties, 14:535–538
 membrane stability, 14:536
 membrane stretching moduli, 14:535
 organic co-solvents, 14:523, 524
 P2VP-PEO vesicle bilayers, 14:542
 packing parameter and curvature, 14:517, 518
 permeation coefficient, 14:540, 541
 permeation experiments, 14:541, 542
 phagocyte stability, 14:548
 phase diagram, 14:520
 pH-induced release, 14:551
 pH-triggered release, 14:551

- photopolymerization, 14:552
 polymerizable block copolymers, 14:544
 polymerizable counterions, 14:544
 polymersome bilayers, thickness of, 14:535
 preparation and size control, 14:523, 524
 pulsed field gradient nuclear magnetic resonance (PFG-NMR), 14:541
 reducing agents, 14:551
 self-assembled amphiphilic structures, 14:517
 shape transitions, 14:519, 520
 sialyl-Lewis^x, 14:555
 size control, 14:524
 stealth layers, 14:547
 sustained release, 14:550, 551
 synthetic double-tail amphiphiles, 14:542
 triggered release, 14:551
 unsaturated lipid DPPC, 14:536
 CO₂, physical properties, 4:5
 CO₂ density profile, 4:48
 CO₂-selective polymeric materials, 8:16
 CO₂/CH₄ selectivity, 8:6–9
 CO₂/CH₄ separation
 glassy polymeric membranes, 8:10
 natural gas, 8:3, 4
 poly(phenylene oxide) membranes, 8:6
 polymeric membranes, 8:5–10
 polymer-based membranes, 8:3–5
 cryogenic distillation, 8:4
 Coacervate capsule, 8:379
 Coacervate extraction, 6:236
 Coacervation process, 8:379
 simple coacervation, 8:380
 Coagulant diffusion, lattice model for, 8:556
 Coagulant-polymer interface, 8:558
 Coagulation, 3:440
 films, 5:821
 Coagulation section, of cold SBR production, 13:272, 273
 Coal mining
 acrylamide polymer applications in, 1:119
 Coal tar fractions
 feedstock for oil-furnace black process, 2:446
 Coal tar pitch
 graphite in composites from, 11:619
 Coanda effect, 3:291
 Coarse-grained chain, in DE model, 15:128, 132
 Coat hanger die, 5:676, 677
 Coatability, limits of, 3:269, 270
 Coated-back/front sheets
 phenolic resin applications, 9:605
 Coated fabrics, 5:680–693
 manufacture, 7:498
 applications, 5:692
 test methods, 5:693
 Coated gas separation membrane, 7:760
 Coating, 3:299–364. *See also* Coating methods; Stress
 buffer coatings (SBCs)
 abrasion and mar resistance, 3:307, 308
 adhesion, 3:313–317
 amino resin, 1:528–531
 anti-deposition, 11:705
 architectural, 3:299
 cellulose acetate applications, 2:639
 cellulose nitrate applications, 2:609
 commercial availability of, 3:297
 dirt retention, 3:312
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 3:306
 epoxy resin applications, 5:385–398
 extrusion, 5:637
 extensional flow, 3:304, 305
 exterior durability, 3:309–313
 films, 5:822
 free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:742
 film defects, 3:358–364
 film formation, 3:300–303
 flow properties, 3:303–305
 formability and flexibility, 3:306, 307
 gloss, 3:348–350
 hiding, 3:346
 hot-melt, 3:284
 hydrolytic degradation, 3:311
 hyperbranched polymers in, 6:792–794
 introduction, 3:299, 300
 latex applications, 7:462
 less solvent for, 3:300, 301
 marring, 3:308
 mechanical properties, 3:305–309
 metallic and interference colors, 3:346
 paper, 1:542
 phenolic resin applications, 9:602–604
 photoinitiated oxidative degradation, 3:309–311
 pigment dispersion, 3:350–355
 pigment volume relationships, 3:355–358
 polychloroprene latex applications, 3:78
 polyester films, 10:507, 508
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:458
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:715, 716
 polyurethane use in, 11:252, 253
 PVC plastisols, 14:753, 754
 resins and cross-linkers, 3:320–345
 scratch mechanisms, 12:328, 329
 scratch visibility, 12:327
 shear rates in, 3:295
 silicone, 11:705, 706
 silicone application, 12:465
 stress buffer, 5:64
 test methods for, 3:308, 309
 thermochromic polymer applications, 14:57
 transfer, 11:706
 UV stabilizers, 14:482–491
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:646
 viscosity, 3:303, 304
 volatile organic compound emissions, 3:299, 300
 waterborne, volatile loss from, 3:341, 342
 wire and cable, 10:289
 xylylene polymer applications, 15:443, 444
 Coating dryers, air impingement, 3:290–293
 Coating flow instabilities, predicting, 3:289
 Coating line components, 3:266
 Coating machines, 3:264, 265
 Coating mechanisms, 3:288, 289
 Coating methods, 3:230–258
 application methods, 3:250–254
 discrete surface-coating, 3:286, 287
 drying and solidification, 3:289–297
 dry blending, 3:250

- economic aspects, 3:254–256
 electrostatic fluidized-bed coating, 3:251
 electrostatic spray coating, 3:232
 environmental and energy considerations, 3:256
 fluidized-bed coating, 3:231, 250
 health and safety factors, 3:257, 258
 hot flocking, 3:254
 manufacture, 3:248–250
 melt mixing, 3:249, 250
 multilayer, 3:285, 286
 patch coating, 3:287, 288
 powder technology, 3:230–258
 test methods, 3:256
 thermoplastic coating powders, 3:233–236
 thermosetting coating powders, 3:234
 types of, 3:265–285
 Coating methods, 3:264–297. *See also* Coatings
 Coating powders
 thermoplastic, 3:233–236
 thermosetting, 3:234
 Coating process technology, industries based on, 3:264
 Coating solvents, 3:289
 Coating systems, storage stability of, 1:530
 Coaxial electrospinning, 13:425
 Coaxial jets, 8:408
 Cobalt
 metal-catalyzed oxidation by, 1:689
 Cobalt blue, 3:471
 Cobalt catalysts
 cis-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta
 polymerization, 2:306, 307
 trans-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta
 polymerization, 2:310, 311
 1,2-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta
 polymerization, 2:311, 312
 Cobalt green, 3:471
 Cobalt organic polymers, 7:64, 65
 Cocondensation resins
 melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:733, 734
 Cocrystallization, 10:98
 Code division multiplexing, 5:102
 Code of Federal Regulations (CFR), 1:271, 6:86, 11:708
 on paper additives, 1:140
 CODESSA method, 6:444
 Coefficient of thermal expansion, 1:759, 3:286, 5:67,
 13:767
 cellular polymers, 2:538
 composite materials, 3:514
 Coehn's rule, 6:645
 Coexisting phases, 9:560–563
 interfaces between, 9:573, 574
 Coextrusion, 2:249, 250, 5:636. *See also* Multilayer
 films
 films, 5:811–813
 flexible packaging via, 9:471, 472
 polyester films, 10:508
 PVDF, 15:70
 Coextrusion dies, 5:629
 Coextrusion of multilayer structures, 3:372–431
 capillary instabilities in, 3:383, 384
 compatible polymer system and, 3:373
 conclusions and perspectives, 3:428–431
 elastic instabilities in, 3:388, 389
 fundamental aspects, 3:397–420
 incompatible polymer system and, 3:373
 industrial studies on, 3:391, 392
 interdiffusion process, 3:398–409
 interfacial instabilities, 3:373
 interfacial phenomena in, 3:372–431
 interfacial reactions, 3:412–419
 interfacial slippage, 3:409–412
 interphase, role of, 3:374, 420–428
 linear stability theory, 3:392–396
 mechanical approaches, 3:374–397
 overview, 3:372–374
 physicochemical affinity and, 3:374
 viscous instabilities in, 3:384–388
 Coextrusion process, 9:375, 471
 Cofactor reconstitution, 11:439
 Cohesion
 forces of, 11:703
 intermolecular forces of, 11:703
 Cohesive bond failure, 1:405
 Cohesive energy density (CED), 6:331, 8:529, 14:302,
 303
 Cohesive fracture, adhesion and, 1:386
 Cohesive strength development, 5:186
 Cohesive term (abrasive wear), 13:503–510
 hard counterface, roughness of, 13:506, 507
 Coil coatings
 epoxy resins, 5:392–395
 Coining, 7:7
 Coinjection molding, 7:9, 10
 Coir, 14:495
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:506
 uses, 14:508
 Coke oven gas
 feedstock for thermal black process, 2:448
 Cokneader, 3:563
 Colback
 physical properties, 9:181
 Cold batch printing
 wool, 15:335
 Cold-box foundry cores, 6:199
 Cold curing, 15:288
 Cold drawing, 15:453–455
 of shape-memory polymers, 12:409, 410
 Cold emulsion process, for styrene-butadiene rubber,
 13:270–273
 Cold-emulsion SBR, 1:383
 Cold forming, of ABS polymers, 1:332
 Cold low-pressure plasma, 10:2
 Cold molding, 3:568
 Cold plasma treatments, 11:695
 Cold plasmas, 10:2, 13:528, 529
 Cold press molding
 thermosets, 14:206, 207
 Cold rolling, 2:375. *See also* Calendaring
 Cold SBR. *See* Cold emulsion process
 Cole-Davidson function, 1:585
 Collagen
 biodegradable natural polymer, 2:106
 structure, 6:382

- and tissue engineering, 14:222
- toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:114
- Collagen fibrils, 5:156, 157
- Collagen-like proteins, 6:394–398
- Colligative properties, 6:388, 389
 - for number-average molecular weight determination, 8:663, 664
- Collodion, 2:609
- Colloidal dispersants, 15:59
- Colloidal gas aphrons, 3:460
- Colloidal glass, 6:367
- Colloidal solids, 3:457, 458
- Colloids, 3:436–463. *See also* Heterophase polymerization
 - applications, 3:457–461
 - cellulose liquid crystals, 2:592
 - chemical and surface analysis, 3:461
 - dispersed species characterization and sedimentation, 3:441–444
 - and dispersity, 6:581
 - electrically active polymers, 4:759, 760
 - electrokinetics, 3:449–451
 - hazards, 3:461, 462
 - interfacial energy, 3:446–449
 - kinetic properties, 3:456, 457
 - preparation of dispersions, 3:437–441
 - PVC production additives, 14:730, 731
 - rheology, 3:444–446
 - stability, 3:451–456
 - stability of dispersions, 3:440, 441
 - steric stabilization of, 4:51–53
 - in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:51
 - thermochromic, 14:39, 41
 - various combinations of matter, 6:582
- Color blacks, 2:433, 439
 - applications, 2:456–458
- Color compounds, as colorants, 3:490
- Color concentrates
 - as colorants, 3:490
- Color-forming reactions, with lignin, 7:530
- Color houses, 3:490–492
- Color index, 3:488
- Color labs, 3:490, 491
- Color matching, 3:490
- Color mixing, 3:492, 493
- Color stability
 - antioxidants, 1:717
 - problems caused by irradiation, 4:288, 289
- Color. *See also* Chromism
 - of ABS polymers, 1:318
 - interference, 3:473
 - of polysulfones, 11:189
 - precompounded, 3:496
 - test methods, 13:778
- Colorants, 3:468–489. *See also* Dyes; Pigments
 - cost of, 3:469, 470
 - FDA, 3:470
 - fiber, 10:256
 - incorporation of, 3:491, 492
 - light stability of, 3:469
 - migration of, 3:468
 - mixing in extruders, 10:71
 - in plastics compounding, 3:552
 - thermal stability of, 3:468, 469
 - use with UV stabilizers, 14:452
- Colored cottons, 4:3, 4
- Coloring processes, 3:490–498
 - during molding, 3:495–497
- Coloumb yield criterion, 15:459
- Column extraction, 6:236
- Column packing materials, size exclusion chromatography, 3:112, 113
- Column performance parameters, size exclusion chromatography, 3:110
- Column technology, size exclusion chromatography, 3:111–113
- Comamonas* sp., 10:103
- Comb branched polystyrene, 13:188, 189
- Comb copolymers, 13:167, 168
- Combination
 - termination mode, 11:542–545, 600
- Combustibility. *See also* Antiflammability
 - of acrylonitrile, 1:271
 - fiber, 10:524
- Combustion energy, dynamics, 6:42
- Comfort cushioning
 - cellular polymers, 2:541, 542
- Commercial cottons, 4:3, 4
- Commercial drag reducer, 4:553
 - drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Commercial drawing processes, 10:532, 533
- Commercial emulsion polymers, 5:187
- Commercial fibers, strength of, 11:696
- Commercial fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:162
- Commercial polymerization. *See also* Bulk polymerization
 - for aromatic polyamides, 10:219, 220
 - of styrene, 13:238–248
- Commercial polymers
 - flame resistance, 6:79, 80
 - generic resistance, 6:79, 80
- Committee D20 on plastics, 6:86
- Common ion exchange resins, matrix structures, 7:154
- Commonwealth Scientific Industrial Research Organization (CSIRO), 9:456
- Comonomer uniformity, LLDPE, 5:553–555
- Comonomers. *See also* Monomers
 - in biodegradable shape-memory polymer networks, 12:418, 419
 - LDPE, 5:515, 516, 523
 - LLDPE, 5:543, 544
- Compact discs (CDs), ethylene-norbornene copolymer, 5:591
- Compact tension, 6:307
- Comparative tracking index, 13:780
- Comparison microscopes
 - use in forensic analysis, 6:180
- Comparison microscopy
 - fiber forensics applications, 6:186
 - forensics applications, 6:178
 - paint forensics applications, 6:189
- Compatibility
 - antioxidants, 1:716, 717
- Compatible polymer blend, 10:674
- Complement system, 2:154

- Complementary metal oxide semiconductor (CMOS) technology, 8:355
- Complete active space self-consistent field (CASSCF), 3:609, 610
non-full valence, 3:610
- Complete extrusion lines, 5:633–640
- Complex compliance, 1:569, 15:81
- Complex conductivity, 4:481
- Complex dielectric permittivity, 4:479, 481
- Complex electrical modulus, 4:481
- Complex modulus, 1:569
- Complexing agents, lignosulfonate, 7:542
- Composite fabrication
terminology for, 3:499
- Composite fibers, 5:158, 159
- Composite films
RF-powered electrode, 10:24
structure of, 10:26
- Composite foams, 3:499–512
applications, 3:510–512
cell size, 3:505
processing and microstructure, 3:500–505
properties, 3:505–510
- Composite ion exchangers (CIXs), 7:159
- Composite latex particles, preparation of, 5:182, 183
- Composite lumbers, 15:298–300
- Composite materials, 3:513–548
cure kinetics, 3:522–526
glass transition model, 3:522–526
manufacturing techniques, 3:517–519
mechanical tests, 3:542–548
process modeling, 3:519–522
resin flow model, 3:538, 539
shrinkage, 3:526–532
structural analysis, 3:541, 542
structural relaxation, 3:534–538
thermomechanical properties, 3:532–534
void growth model, 3:539–541
- Composite membranes
interfacial, 7:760, 761
multilayer, 7:762
solution-cast, 7:761, 762
- Composite metal/polymer films, 10:24–26
- Composite modulus, 11:686
- Composite PolyHIPEs, 10:608, 609
exfoliated montmorillonite, 10:608
- Composite polymer foams, 3:499
- Composite restoration sealants, 4:409
- Composite sample testing, 3:542
- Composites, 9:102. *See also* Reinforcement
- AFM imaging of, 1:772, 773
- boron-fiber-reinforced, 11:696, 697
- conducting electrochromic polymers, 4:807
- electrically active polymers, 4:759, 760
- environmentally degradable plastics, 2:87–91
- ethylene copolymers as fillers, 5:439
- fatigue, 5:742–744
- imaging vibrational spectroscopy, 14:599–607
- longitudinal Young's modulus for, 11:683
- natural fiber, 11:698
- NEXAFS of elastomeric, 15:400–403
- phenolic resins, 9:613–615
- PPTA reinforced, 10:228
- principles of reinforcement in, 11:683–687
- self-reinforcing, 11:698
- silane coupling agents, 12:419–430
- types of reinforcement in, 11:688–698
- wood composites, 15:281–303
- Composition test methods, 13:757–763
- Compositional uniformity, LLDPE, 5:553–555
- Compostable plastic, 2:74, 75
- Composting, 2:75, 76, 4:239
- Compounding, 3:550–563
additives in, use of, 3:551–553. *See also* Additives, for plastics
chloroprene polymers, 3:63
ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:601, 602
fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:167–170
latexes, 7:462
polyamide plastics, 10:282, 283
polychloroprene latex, 3:74, 75
rubber, 12:203–259
styrenic thermoplastic elastomers, 14:154
- Compounding extruders, 5:638–640
- Compounding operation, for ABS polymers, 1:327
- Compounding; Additives, for rubber compounding
aim of, 3:551
fillers and reinforcing agents in, use of, 3:553–555
machine concepts, 3:555–563. *See also* Machine technology
overview, 3:550, 551
- Comprehensive Descriptors for Structural and Statistical Analysis (CODESSA) method, 6:444
- Compressibility, of solid-like polymers, 15:149–153
- Compressible Leonov model, of yield, 15:470
- Compressible polymers
compressibility of solid-like polymers, 15:149–153
- Compression
of gases, 4:646
isotropic, 4:639
- Compression and transfer molding, 3:565–591
automatic machines for, 3:584–588
automatic mold changers for, 3:580
break-in procedures, 3:583
breathe-and-dwell cycles in, 3:573, 574
cavity design for, 3:581, 582
cold molding, 3:568
compression molding, 3:565
compression-molding presses for, 3:575–578
cure time in, 3:572, 573
economic aspects, 3:589, 590
ejector mechanisms for, 3:579, 580
elements of, 3:568–570
for encapsulation of electronic devices, 3:589
equipment for, 3:575–584
flash removal in, 3:580
hand tools for, 3:580, 581
heating devices for, 3:578, 579
machines in, 3:568, 570
maintenance process, 3:583, 584
material selection in, 3:568
for melamine dinnerware, 3:588, 589
mold design and construction in, 3:568
molding compounds, 3:570, 571
operators in, 3:570
outlook, 3:590, 591

- part design in, 3:568
 part size and design in, 3:574, 575
 postcure for, 3:580
 preheaters for, 3:579
 pressure for, 3:574
 processing variables, 3:570–575
 in screw closures, 3:589
 speed in, 3:575
 temperature and heat supply in, 3:572
 thermoplastics and elastomers and, 3:571
 transfer molding, 3:565–568
 transfer presses for, 3:578
 vacuum venting system for, 3:580, 581
- Compression injection molding (CIM), 3:588
- Compression molding
 composite materials, 3:517, 518
 of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:171
 thermosets, 14:207, 208
 thermosetting resin processing, 10:89, 90
- Compression-molding presses, 3:575
 control system, 3:577–378
 driving mechanism, 3:576–377
 frame, 3:575–376
- Compression set
 cellular polymers, 2:535, 536
- Compression-set resistance
 effect of cure system on, 6:169
 of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:164, 165
 long-term, 6:167, 168
- Compressive loading
 stress-strain curves, 15:455, 456
- Compressive strength
 cellular polymers, 2:532, 534
 composite materials, 3:546
- Compressive stress relaxation (CSR), 5:423, 424
- Computational chemistry, 8:573
- Computational fluid dynamics (CFD), 8:338
- Computational graphics, 8:572, 573
- Computational quantum chemistry for free-radical polymerization, 3:591–639
 “heavy hydrogen” approach, 3:631
 ab initio molecular orbital theory, 3:595–597
 absolute rate coefficients, prediction of, 3:631, 632
 applications of, 3:631–639
 barriers and enthalpies, 3:627, 628
 basic principles of, 3:593–595
 basis functions, 3:595
 basis sets, 3:597–601
 CBS procedures, 3:608, 609
 chain transfer, 3:633, 634
 chain-length effects in, 3:630, 631
 chemical models, applicability of, 3:628–631
 composite procedures, 3:605–609
 configuration interaction, 3:596, 602–604
 contracted Gaussians, 3:598
 controlled radical polymerization, 3:634
 copolymerization, 3:633
 curve-crossing model, 3:634–639
 density functional theory, 3:611–614
 diffuse functions, 3:600
 double zeta, triple zeta, and quadruple zeta basis sets, 3:599
 Dunning basis sets, 3:600, 601
 effective core potentials, 3:600
 eigenvalue problem, 3:593
 electronic Schrödinger equation, 3:593, 594
 extensions to transition-state theory, 3:620–624
 future perspective, 3:639
 G3 methods, 3:608
 geometry optimizations, 3:627
 Hartree-Fock method, 3:601, 602
 hydrogen abstraction, 3:627, 628
 LCAO scheme, 3:597–601
 Möller-Plesset perturbation theory, 3:605
 multireference methods, 3:609–611
 overview, 3:591, 592
 plane wave basis sets, 3:601
 polarization functions, 3:599, 600
 Pople basis sets, 3:600
 potential energy surface, 3:594
 primitive Gaussians, 3:598
 quantum and classical reaction dynamics, 3:614–616
 radical addition to bonds, 3:625–627
 rate coefficients, 3:626
 reaction rates from quantum-chemical data, 3:614–624
 relative rate coefficients, prediction of, 3:632–634
 semiempirical methods, 3:611
 software for, 3:624, 625
 solvent effects in, 3:628–630
 spin contamination, 3:602
 split-valence basis sets, 3:599
 state-correlation diagram, 3:636, 638
 theoretical procedures, accuracy and applicability of, 3:625–628
 transition-state theory, 3:616–620
 Wn methods, 3:608
- Computed toughness, 6:314, 315
 parameters, 6:313, 314
- Computer-aided design
 thermoforming parts, 14:124
- Computer Aided Material Preselection by Uniform Standards (CAMPUS), 10:294, 295
- Computer code, for conformation geometry, 3:698
- Computer-generated morphologies, 8:551
- Computer modeling, of the coating process, 3:288
- Computer simulations, 9:21, 22
 rigid-rod polymers and, 12:101–104
 single-chain simulations, 9:22
- Concentrate houses, 3:493
- Concentrated solutions, behavior of, 15:103, 104
- Concentration detectors, in size exclusion chromatography, 3:116
- Concentration polarization
 in membranes, 5:845, 846
 ultrafiltration and, 7:781
- Concrete additives
 vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:681
- Concrete, lightweight, 13:257. *See also* Cement
- Condensation cure
 silicones, 12:482, 483
- Condensation polymerization, 3:644–682, 7:203, 10:405
 isocyanate-derived polymers, 7:254, 263–265
 polyphosphazenes, 11:100, 101, 7:36–38
 principles of, 10:399–402

- quasi-living Grignard metathesis (GRIM)
 polymerization, 10:407
 rod-rod aromatic copolyamide, 10:405
 synthetic principles, 10:399
- Condensation polymers, 7:93
 degradation processes in landfills, 4:247, 248
- Condensation reaction, 9:7
 in lignin, 7:529
- Condensation silicone structure/reaction, 4:387
- Conductance, of polymers, 4:704–714
- Conducting electrochromic polymers, 4:798–808
- Conducting polymers, 5:118, 119, 14:394
 chemical structures, properties and applications (table), 5:121, 122
 conjugated, 5:119–124
- Conduction
 in electrically active polymers, 4:760–762
- Conduction coating dryers, 3:293
- Conductive acrylic fibers, 1:253, 257
- Conductive coatings
 electrically active polymers for, 4:773, 774
- Conductive filler powders, 3:650, 651
- Conductive polymer composites, 3:646–682
 adhesion improvements, 3:663–665
 adhesion mechanisms, 3:662, 663
 adhesion strength, enhancement of, 3:662–666
- Ag nanoparticles, sintering of, 3:657–661
- contact resistance, 3:666–669
- die attach applications, 3:676, 677
- electrical conductivity, improvement of, 3:654–661
- electrically conductive adhesives, 3:646–648
- flip chip applications, 3:677–681
- isotropically conductive adhesives, 3:648–654
- low cost, 3:671–676
- one-dimensional conductive fillers, 3:655, 656
- polymer matrix shrinkage, 3:654
- reliability improvements, 3:669–671
- short-chain diacids and reducing agents, 3:654, 655
- transient liquid-phase sintering, low temperature, 3:656, 657
- vs. solder (table), 3:648
- Conductrol, 1:253, 257
- Cone calorimeter, 6:92–94
- Configuration interaction (CI), 3:596, 602–604, 596
- Configuration, in K-BKZ model, 15:119, 120
- Confined plasticity, 6:309–313
- Confocal Raman microscopes, 14:565
- Conformation
 amorphous polymers, 1:548
 averages over all, 3:697, 698
- Conformation and configuration, 3:688–700. *See also* Chain conformations
- Conformation-dependent properties,
 temperature-dependence of, 3:700
- Conformational energy function, 3:689–691
- Conformational partition function, 3:689–694
- Conformational properties, effect of structural properties on, 3:700, 701
- Congealing, 8:386
- Coniferaldehyde, 7:535
- Coniferyl alcohol
 in lignin, 7:525
- Coniferyl alcohol, 5:269
- Conjugated dienes
cis-1,4-polybutadiene, 13:126, 127
 1,3-Butadiene (table), 13:126–129
 polyisoprene, 13:134–140
 polyisoprene, *Trans*-1,4 selective polymerization, 13:138
 polymers, 13:126
 stereoselective polymerization, 13:126–144
trans-1,4-Polybutadiene, selective synthesis, 13:132
 1,2-polybutadiene, selective synthesis of, 13:134
- Conjugated electroactive polymers, 13:550
- Conjugated ester, 8:357
- Conjugated organic semiconducting materials,
 3:701–711. *See also* Furan-based
- Conjugated polymer doping, 5:120
- Conjugated polymers
 furan and oligofuran as building blocks for, 3:702–704
 thermochromic, 14:39, 42, 43
- Consensus-based test standards, 6:85, 86
- Considère construction, of yield behavior, 15:452, 453
- Constant addition strategy, 5:181
- Constant particle number, 5:166
- Constant rate of deformation response, of entangled polymer melts, 15:108, 109
- Constant uniaxial load, times to fracture under, 6:330
- Constituent testing, 3:542
- Constitutional repeating unit, 13:152
- Constitutive law for linear viscoelasticity, 15:86–89
- Constitutive laws for nonlinear viscoelasticity, 15:105, 106
- Constitutive models, of solid-like polymers, 15:145–163
- Constrained-chain theory, 9:19, 20
- Constrained geometry catalysts (CGCs)
 CPSiNR ligand for, 5:562
- Constrained-junction theory, 9:19
- Constraint release (CR), 4:518
- Construction
 epoxy resin applications, 5:400, 401
 high performance fiber applications, 6:723
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
- Construction plywood
 characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Construction sealants, polysulfide, 11:177
- Consumer applications
 for polyamide plastics, 10:292
 for polyketones, 10:665–656
- Consumption, of polyacrylamides, 1:148
- Contact adhesives, 1:414, 415
- Contact angle, 1:372, 373
- Contact coating dryers, 3:293
- Contact lenses, hydrogels in. *See also* Hydrogels
- Contact mode atomic force microscopy, 1:751, 752
- Contact resistance shifts, 3:668, 669, 674, 675
- Contact resistance, 3:666–669
- Contaminants, in fractography, 6:295, 296
- Contaminated plastics (table), volume resistivity of, 4:712
- Contamination
 in polyacrylamide analysis, 1:142
 in polystyrene production, 13:217
- Contamination control
 xylylene polymer applications, 15:442, 443
- Contiguous solids melting (CSM), 5:647

- Continuous Boltzmann Biased Monte Carlo, 8:595
- Continuous bulk polymerization, of acrylonitrile, 1:275
- Continuous-cast acrylic sheeting, 2:496
- Continuous dispersed phase, in composites, 11:688
- Continuous extrusion blow molding, 2:231, 232, 253
- Continuous filament glass fibers, 11:689
- Continuous filament mat (CFM), for carbon composites, 11:692
- Continuous-filament yarns, 10:530, 533
spinning, 10:248–257
- Continuous-flow microprocess, 8:351
- Continuous-flow RAFT polymerization, 8:352
- Continuous heterophase polymerization, 6:678
- Continuous lamination
thermosets, 14:208
- Continuous loop reactors, 5:189
- Continuous mass polymerization, of SAN copolymers, 1:294–297
- Continuous mixer, 3:495
- Continuous plug flow reactor (CPFR), 13:189, 238, 239, 241
for styrene polymerization, 13:224, 225
- Continuous polymer fractionation, 6:267
- Continuous polymerization (CP) process, 10:524
- Continuous screen changers, 5:627
- Continuous slurry polymerization, of acrylonitrile, 1:275
- Continuous stiffness measurement (CSM) technique, 6:558
- Continuous stirred tank reactors (CSTRs), 5:187–189, 13:189, 238–241
for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:286, 291, 292
for heterophase polymerization, 6:621, 682
for styrene polymerization, 13:224–227
supercritical carbon dioxide polymerization in, 4:51
- Continuous tubular reactions, 5:190
- Continuum configuration bias, 8:594
- Continuum mechanics, 4:661
- Continuum models, 8:572
- Contour program, 3:778
- Controlled aggregation
heterophase polymerization, 6:670–672
- Controlled anionic polymerization, 8:349
- Controlled composition reactors, 5:181
- Controlled radical polymerization (CRP), 3:634, 7:627
techniques, 8:273
- Controlled rate thermogravimetry (TGA), 13:820, 821
- Controlled release formulation, 3:714–733
agricultural, 3:714–733
design and preparation, 3:722, 723
formulation, 3:719–722
microcapsule formulations, 3:727–730
reservoir-based formulations with membrane, 3:723–727
reservoir-based formulations without membrane, 3:730–733
- Controlled release system, 7:804, 805
- Controlled release technology, 3:736–757
antirestenotic agents from stent coatings, 3:754
cancer treatment systems, 3:754, 755
CNS-drug release, 3:755
degradation/erosion-based systems, 3:750, 751
design, 3:739–743
diffusion-controlled, 3:748, 749
dissolution-controlled, 3:749, 750
electrically stimulated systems, 3:753, 754
gene therapy, 3:755, 756
ion-exchange systems, 3:752
magnetically stimulated systems, 3:753
osmotic delivery systems, 3:751, 752
peptide and protein release, 3:754
photostimulated systems, 3:753
polymer fabrication and drug encapsulation, 3:745–747
polymeric prodrugs, 3:752, 753
polymers in formulations, 3:743–745
safety, 3:743–745
ultrasonically stimulated systems, 3:753
- Controlled-rheology polypropylene, 11:630
reaction extrusion (REX), 11:636
- Controlled/living polymerization, 8:349
- Convection, 8:321
- Convection drying, modeling, 3:294, 295
- Convective heat transfer at incipient ignition, 6:57
- Conventional dry-bright polishes, 6:110, 111
- Conventional electronic $\chi(3)$ effects, 9:757
- Convergent methods, of dendrimer synthesis, 4:301, 303, 304
- Conveying elements, 3:558
- Conveying solids, by extruders, 5:641–647
- Conveyor belt reactors
for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:291
- Conveyor belts, 2:66–68
breaker ply in, 2:68
carcass fabrics, 2:67, 68
fasteners and splicing of, 2:68
manufacturing of, 2:66, 67
surface of, 2:68
- Convolution integral, 15:80
in viscoelastic theory, 15:88
- Cookie packaging, 9:475
- Cool-melt adhesives, 1:413
- Cooling, 8:386
in blow molding, 2:255, 256
polymer precipitation by, 7:752, 753
- Coordinate polymerization, 3:126, 8:452
- Coordination macromolecular dyes, 4:590, 591
- Coordination polymers, 7:59–63. *See also*
Metal-containing polymers
- Coordinative chain transfer polymerization (CCTP), 12:581–583
- Copoly(styrene-butylene glycol), 11:31, 32
- Copoly(styrene-PEG), 11:29–31
- Copoly(*p*-phenylene/3,4'-diphenyl ether terephthalamide) (ODA/PPTA), 10:212, 213
polymerization process for, 10:220
- Copolyesters, PCT amorphous, 4:220
- Copolymer resins, low density, 5:539
- Copolymerization, 2:728, 729, 3:760–806, 7:390. *See also* Copolymers
of acrolein polymers, 1:110, 111
acrylic and methacrylic acids, 1:160, 161
acrylonitrile, 1:239–241, 276, 277
anionic, 1:639–644
of amine salts, 5:615
bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:287, 288

- butadiene and styrene, 13:269–276
 carbocationic, 2:410–413
 chain-end composition, 7:402
 chloroprene polymers, 3:47–50, 53, 54
 cross-linking, 3:804–806
 depropagation, 3:770
 electrocopolymerization, 5:133, 134
 explicit penultimate model, 7:398
 explicit penultimate unit effect (EPUE), 7:397, 399
 Fukuda's stabilization energy model, 7:399–401
 geometric mean relationship, 7:402
 heterophase, 6:653–659
 implicit penultimate model (IPM), 7:394
 implicit penultimate unit effect (IPUE), 7:394, 395
 ionic, 3:800, 801
 living radical, 3:786–800
 modeling, 3:761–777
 of monomers, 5:164, 614
 penultimate model (PM), 7:393
 polyketones, 10:650–655
 during polymer manufacture, 13:38
 propagation, 3:761, 762
 radiation, effect of, 11:483
 random, 7:567
 reactivity ratio measurement, 3:777, 778
 sodium ethylenesulfonate, 5:614
 solvent effects, 3:764–770
 of styrene/2-hydroxyethyl methacrylate (HEMA), 7:395
 styrene polymers, 13:233–238
 terminal model (TM), 7:391–394
 termination, 3:762–764, 780–786
 transition state theory (TST), 7:396
 Copolymerization effect, 6:446
 Copolymerization kinetics, 7:391
 Copolymers, 2:733, 6:471, 12:294. *See also*
 Copolymerization; Graft copolymers
 acrylonitrile, 1:283–288
 alternating acrylonitrile, 1:276
 aromatic polyamide, 10:219
 commercial overview of metallocene-based
 cycloolefins, 8:139, 140
 ethylene fillers, 5:439
 ethylene-norbornene, 5:584–591
 hexafluoropropylene, 4:50
 high barrier poly(vinylidene chloride), 2:37–39
 isocyanate-derived polymers, 7:260–262
 LDPE, 5:517, 518
 nonperfectly alternating, 10:653
 nylon, 10:260–263
 perfectly alternating, 10:650–653
 perfluoropropyl vinyl ether, 4:50
 PET fibers and, 10:512
 of poly(acrylamide), 1:121, 122
 poly(dichlorophosphazene), 11:101, 102
 polyphosphazenes, 11:101, 102
 poly(vinyl alcohol) (PVA), 14:708
 PVDF, 15:57
 rubber-modified styrene, 13:204
 sample preparation for polymer characterization, 2:734
 SAN, 1:288–290
 structural representation, 13:162, 163
 styrene, 13:193–195
 styrene-butadiene, 13:268, 194, 195
 styrene-butadiene block, 13:278–283, 198
 tetrafluoroethylene, 4:50
 vinyl acetate, 14:670, 671
 vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:708
 Copper
 bonding and, 1:378
 metal-catalyzed oxidation by, 1:689
 Copper pigments, 3:473
 Copper(II) chloride
 retarder for radical polymerization, 11:580, 581
 inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
Coprinus cinereus peroxidase (CiP), 5:267
 Cordage, 14:496
 PEN fibers, 10:153
 Cordage fibers, 14:504
 Core material, 8:376, 386
 Core-oil binders, 6:200
 Core-shell particles, 8:487, 488, 488, 490
 Coreactive curing agents
 for epoxy resins, 5:337–358
 Corey-Pauling-Koltun models, 8:572
 Cork
 filler material, 5:785
 Corn stover, 2:569
 Corn sweetener, 7:189
 Corona discharge, surface treatment with, 1:375, 376
 Corona extinction voltage (CEV), 4:690
 Corona start voltage (CSV), 4:690
 Corona tests, for electric breakdown, 4:700–702
 Corona treatment, 3:297
 Corovin
 physical properties, 9:181
 Corporate average fuel economy (CAFE) standards, 1:787
 Corrected grain leathers, 7:491
 Correlated intralamellar slip, 6:323
 Correlation functions
 amorphous polymers, 1:548
 Correlation hole effect, 9:571
 Corrosion control
 xylylene polymer applications, 15:444
 Corrosion inhibition
 electrically active polymers for, 4:775
 Corrosion inhibitors, 3:670
 Corrosion resistance, of acrylic elastomers, 1:182
 Corrosive stress cracking, 6:291, 292
 CORSEMP system, 8:359, 360
 Cosmetic bottles
 PEN application, 10:156
 Cossee-Arlman mechanism, 5:557, 558, 15:506
 Cost effectiveness. *See* Economic aspects
 Cotton, 4:1–38, 5:680, 14:495
 advanced fiber information system, 4:15
 air-jet spinning, 4:18
 application (table), 4:36
 cellulose biosynthesis, 4:6, 7
 cellulose ethers, 4:28
 cellulose from, 2:569, 570, 573
 chemical composition and morphology, 4:19–22
 chemical composition, 14:498

- chemical structure, 4:22, 23
classification, 4:13, 14
composites from, 4:33
conservation tillage systems, 4:7, 8
crop protection, 4:9, 10
cross-linking, 4:27
cyanoethylation, 4:29, 30
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
direct dissolution, 2:673
economic aspects of, 4:33–36
ELS cotton, 4:14
enzymatic modification, 4:32
esterification, 4:31, 32
etherification, 4:26–30
fabric manufacturing, 4:18, 19
fertilization, 4:8, 9
fiber biosynthesis, 4:5–7
fiber length, 4:15
fiber maturity, 4:16
fiber quality, 4:13–15
fiber strength, 4:15, 16
field preparation for, 4:7, 8
flame resistance, 4:28, 29
ginning, 4:11–13
grafting with acrylonitrile, 1:286
harvesting, 4:10, 11
health and safety factors, 4:36, 37
high volume instrument systems, 4:14, 15
highest purity pulp comes from, 2:677
hydroxyl groups (table), availability of, 4:25, 26
insect-resistant transgenic, 4:10
insolubilization, 4:30, 31
irradiation, 4:30
irrigation, 4:8
limiting oxygen index, 1:232
limiting oxygen value, 6:713
marketing/merchandizing raw, 4:33
mechanical harvesting systems, 4:12
mechanical properties compared to silk and other fibers, 12:547
mechanical properties, 9:216
mercerization, 4:26
metal content of (table), 4:20
Micronaire reading, 4:16
molecular and supramolecular structure, 4:23
new products, 4:32, 33
nonwoven manufacturing, 4:19
pest management, 4:9, 10
physical properties of staple, 1:229
physical properties, 4:15, 16
planting, 4:8
polyester displaces importance of, 2:672
pore structure and affinity for water, 4:23–25
practical objectives, reactions for, 4:25
production, 4:7–10
production, consumption, and exports, 4:33–36
reactive dyes, 4:28
resiliency, 4:27, 28
silicone lubricant as processing aid, 12:509
smart cotton-based wound dressings, 4:32, 33
supramolecular structure, 2:586
textile processing, 4:17–19
textile wet processing, 4:19, 20
textile-associated properties compared to polyester, 14:499
U.S. classification, 4:13, 14
water repellency, 4:29
weaving and knitting, 4:18, 19
world fiber production in 20th century, 2:704
yarn manufacturing, 4:17, 18
- Cotton bale (table), 4:36
Cotton cards, 9:217
Cotton culture, 4:1
Cotton fiber, 4:1, 2, 5:680. *See also* Nylon fibers
 biosynthesis, 4:5–7
 chemical modification of, 4:22
 computer-generated montage of, 4:21
 mature, 4:21
 quality, 4:13–15
 single, 4:4, 5
Cottonseed, 4:2
Couette geometry, 12:7
Couette, Taylor reactors, 5:189
Coulomb forces, release agents and, 11:703
Coulou, 2:24
Coulter counter, measuring rubber particle size with, 13:251
p-Coumaryl alcohol, in lignin, 7:525
Counter-rotating twin screw extruders, 5:618–620
Coupled cluster theory (CC), 3:604
Coupled oscillator, of normal vibrations, 14:570–573
Coupled pyrolysis techniques, 4:267–269
Coupled transport, 7:777
Coupling
 azo pigment manufacture via, 3:474
 chain termination by, 5:525
 oxidative, 4:59
Coupling agents, 1:347, 348
 SAM used as, 3:666
 silane (table), 1:371
 structures of, 3:662
 for styrene-butadiene block copolymers, 13:281
Covalent bonds
 in shape-memory polymers, 12:415
Covalent grafting, for polymer brushes synthesis, 10:738–746
Covalent imprinting, 8:686
Covalent-organic-frameworks (COFs), 11:1
Covalent-type photosensitive polyimides, 5:74
Cox-Merz rule, 4:626
Cp anions. *See* Cyclopentadienyl (Cp) anions
CP process. *See* Continuous polymerization (CP) process
CPFR. *See* Continuous plug flow reactor (CPFR)
CPSiNR ligand, 5:562
CPT. *See* Crystalline phase transition (CPT)
CR-39
Crack extension, energy release during, 6:302
Crack formation, special causes of, 6:294–296
Crack growth
 environmental, 6:334
 slow, 6:327–330
 testing geometries, 6:313
 viscoelastic creep, 6:311
Crack initiation, 6:308, 315, 318, 319
Crack layer theory, 5:721, 722

- Crack nucleation, 6:318
- Crack propagation, 5:719–732
unstable, 6:319
- Crack stop mechanisms, 8:484
- Crack tip opening displacement (CTOD), 6:310
- Crack tip, stresses around, 6:305–311
- Cracker packaging, 9:475
- Cracks. *See also* Fatigue
- Crammer feeders, 5:623, 641
- Crankshaft motion, 2:8
- Craze failure, 15:493, 494
- Craze growth, effects of physical aging on, 1:467
- Craze initiation, 6:331
- Craze structure, 8:479
- Craze thickening, 15:490–493
- Craze tip advance, 15:488–490
- Crazes. *See also* Crazing
formation of, 6:310
secondary, 6:327
- Crazing, 5:698, 6:287, 288, 293, 15:449, 479–482. *See also* Creep craze; Macrocrazes; Yield and Crazing
as affecting polystyrene strength, 13:184, 185
in amorphous, glassy polymers, 8:478–480
block copolymer, 8:497
fibrillated, 8:482, 484
growth, 15:487, 488
initiation, 5:713–718, 15:481–487
- CRD mixer, 5:665–667
- CRD-NRV mixer, 5:666
- Creep, 1:9
amorphous polymers, 1:569
Burgers model, 15:84
cellular polymers, 2:533
entangled polymer melts, 15:111, 112
and fatigue, 5:705
fiber, 10:242
olefin fibers, 9:348, 349
and recovery response of a fiber, 10:242
test methods, 13:774, 775
- Creep compliance, 1:461–464, 466, 15:100
- Creep constant, 6:550
- Creep craze, 6:329
- Creep curves, 1:462, 464
- Creep fracture
dynamic, 6:289
vibration-induced, 6:289–291
- Creep measurements, physical aging and, 1:461
- Creep-recovery measurements, 1:466
- Creep resistance
of PE fibers, 11:695
- Creep tensile modulus, 4:99–102
- Creep tests, 2:748, 12:17–19, 15:108
fully notched, 6:329
with solid-like polymers, 15:155
for styrene polymers, 13:183
- Cresol
phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- Cresol epoxy novolac, multifunctional
average U.S. price, 5:299
- o*-Cresol glycidyl ether, 5:323, 324
- Criminalistics, 6:175
- Crin vegetal, 14:495, 507
- Critical acoustic-emission event, 12:365
- Critical Assessment of Techniques for Protein Structure Prediction (CASP)
- Critical chain length, 5:167
- Critical coagulation concentration, 3:452, 454
- Critical diehead pressure, 5:669
- Critical gels, 6:367, 368
Nearly critical gels, 6:374, 375
rheology, 6:368–370
- Critical isobaric temperature rising elution fractionation (CITREF), 2:735
- Critical micelle concentration (CMC), 2:201, 3:448, 5:166, 167, 6:591, 8:275, 276
fluorescence spectroscopic method, 8:276
importance of, 8:275
measurement of, 8:275, 276
stabilization of, 8:276
surface tension method, 8:276
UV-absorption spectroscopy method, 8:276
- Critical overlap concentration, 5:153, 154
- Critical phase polymerization, 4:47–60. *See also* Chain-growth polymerization
- Critical point of adsorption (CPA), 3:94
- Critical point, 9:564–566
polymer solutions and blends, 9:568–573
- Critical shear stress, 6:331
- Critical stress intensity factor, 6:326
test methods, 13:775
- Critical surface tension of wetting, for fluorocarbons and hydrocarbons, 11:704
- Critical temperature, 9:561
- Cross-channel shear rate, 5:655, 656
- Cross-channel shear strain, total, 5:656, 657
- Cross equation, 15:107
- Cross-flow filtration membranes, markets, 5:827
- Cross-flow filtration, 7:779
- Cross-fractionation chromatography, 6:274–276
- Cross-hatching phenomenon, 12:390
- Cross-link density (XLD), 3:306, 307, 4:99–102
- Cross-linkable ferroelectric polysiloxanes, in FLCE preparation, 5:751, 753
- Cross-linkable resins, hyperbranching in, 6:794
- Cross-linked aromatic polyamide, 5:841
- Cross-linked block copolymer micelles, 8:272
- Cross-linked carbonaceous layer, 13:555
- Cross-linked ethoxylate acrylate resin (CLEAR), 11:39, 40
- Cross-linked polyethylene
physical properties, 12:207
relaxation exponent, 6:369
- Cross-linked polymers, DMA characterization, 13:847–851
glass transition, 13:847–849
thermoset vitrification, 13:850
thermoset cure, 13:849–851
- Cross-linked resins, 6:322
- Cross-linked rubbers, 6:433
transport properties, 14:324–331
- Cross-linked shape-memory networks, 12:412
- Cross-linked Star Polymer Networks, GTP, 6:540
- Cross-linked vesicles, 14:544, 545
- Cross-linked, in ATRP, 1:737
- Cross linking
cured epoxy resins, 5:363, 364

- Cross-linking bonds, 8:427
- Cross-linking effect, 6:445, 446
- Cross-linking reactions, reaction extrusion, 11:648
- Cross-linking, **4:63–104**
 and oxidative degradation, 4:279
 in branched polystyrene, 13:192, 193
 chemical, 4:64
 copolymerization, 3:804–806
 definition of, 4:63
 determination of the degree of, 4:666, 667
 effects of, on polymer properties, 4:63, 64, 99–104
 elastomer, 4:64–73. *See also* Elastomers/rubber
 cross-linking
 fatigue cracking effect, 5:729
 free radical photopolymerizations, 9:738–740
 general-purpose rubbers, 12:168
 initiators for, 6:836
 mechanical properties, effect on, 4:99–102
 origin of, 4:63
 overview, 4:63, 64
 peroxide, 4:71, 72
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:700
 in polymer blends, 4:95–97
 in polymer hydrogels, 4:97–99
 polymer modification by, 4:63
 polyphosphazenes, 11:102, 103
 property synergism in, 4:64
 radiation, 4:72, 73
 reactive group combinations for latex, 6:660
 solution properties, effect on, 4:103, 104
 structural representation, 13:169–171
 thermal behavior, effect on, 4:102, 103
 through polyaddition, 4:89–95. *See also*
 Thermoplastics
 through polycondensation, 4:73–88. *See also*
 Thermosetting resins
- Cross section
 of bicomponent nylon fibers, 10:260
 fiber forensics applications, 6:186
 of nylon fibers, 10:254, 255
 paint forensics applications, 6:189
- Cross-tie fibrils, 15:495
- Crosshead die, 5:674
- Crosslinked polyHIPEs, 10:608
- Crossover experiment, 1:456
- Crotalaria*
 species with fiber potential, 14:497
- Crotonaldehyde
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
- Crotonic acid
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate,
 14:654
- Crown-cored dendrons, 4:338
- Crown ethers (macrocyclic polyethers), 7:304,
 11:131–138
- Crown polysulfonic acid, 13:308
- CRRP. *See* Controlled-rheology polypropylene
- Crude beeswax, 6:106
- Crude oil transport
 drag reduction application, 4:568, 569
- Cryogenic device for static and dynamic testing, 4:138,
 139
- Cryogenic distillation, 8:14
- Cryogenic laser dilatometer with evaporator cryostat,
 4:140, 141
- Cryogenic properties, 4:113–145
 and applications, 4:113, 114
 of fibers and composites, 4:129–137. *See also*
 Polymeric composites
 nomenclature related to, 4:144, 145
 of polymers, 4:114–129. *See also* Polymer properties
 test methods and techniques, 4:137–143
- Cryogenic transmission electron microscopy
 (Cryo-TEM), 4:370
- Cryoscopy
 for average molar mass determination, 2:741
 for number-average molecular weight determination,
 8:665, 666
- Cryovac Division of Sealed Air, 9:458
- Cryovac OS1000 oxygen scavenging film, 9:459
- Crystaf, 6:239–244, 248, 249
- CRYSTAF. *See* Single-step crystallization fractionation
 (CRYSTAF)
- Crystal, 14:400
- Crystal growth
 of a colorant, 3:469
 kinetics, 4:174–184
- Crystal shift, of a colorant, 3:468, 469
- Crystal structure
 of BCMU, 4:449
 of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:203, 204
 of PTS, 4:448
- Crystal unit cells
 semicrystalline polymers, 12:376–383
- Crystalline block copolymers, 7:321, 322
 1,4-dithio-1,1,4,4-tetraphenylbutane, 7:321
- Crystalline cellulose, 2:576, 577, 579, 580
- Crystalline component, 8:512
- Crystalline epoxy resins, 5:320, 321
- Crystalline field splitting, 14:572
- Crystalline multicomponent systems
 thermodynamic properties, 14:92–94
- Crystalline PCT-based polymers, processing of, 4:216
- Crystalline phase transition (CPT), polyketone, 10:659
- Crystalline plastics, injection molding of, 4:217
- Crystalline-polymer molecular complex, 3:129–131,
 169, 170
- Crystalline polymer-inclusion complexes, 3:129–131,
 166–169
- Crystalline polymers, 2:733, 5:201, 202. *See also*
 Semicrystalline polymers
 glass-rubber relaxation, plasticizing effects, 13:839
 relaxations, 13:838
 CHDM-based, 4:215–218
 molecular modeling, 8:617–619
 thermal characterization methods, 2:745, 746
 thermal conductivity, 14:30
- Crystalline starch beads, 13:51
- Crystallinity
 effects on permeation, 2:16–18
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:445
 films, 5:804, 805
 of polyamide plastics, 10:274
 polyphosphazenes, 11:105
 polypropylene, 11:357, 358
 semicrystalline polymers, 12:396–401

- silk, 12:545
 xylylene polymers, 15:435, 436
 Crystallinity determination, 4:148–164
 solid-state nuclear magnetic resonance, 4:159–164
 thermal analysis, 4:153–156
 vibrational spectroscopy, 4:156–158
 volumetric methods, 4:158, 159
 x-ray diffraction, 4:148–153
 Crystallinity index, 4:148, 12:396
 Crystallization, 2:251
 in block copolymers, 2:203–206
 chloroprene polymers, 3:68, 69
 of LLDPE, 5:550
 of main-chain LCPs, 7:572
 PEN, 10:143, 149, 150
 of polyacrylonitrile, 1:278
 of polystyrene, 13:187
 of PVDF, 15:68
 Crystallization analysis fractionation (Crystaf), 6:239–244, 248, 249
 Crystallization kinetics, 4:167–196
 crystal growth, 4:174–184
 new approaches to, 4:190–194
 nucleation, 4:168–174
 of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:201, 202
 Crystallized block copolymers, morphology of thin films of, 2:206
 Crystallized PET, 4:217
 Crystallography
 polypropylene, 11:354–357
 Cs-symmetric zirconocene catalyst, 13:94
 CSD. *See* Cambridge Structural Database (CSD)
 CSM cure chemistry, 5:478
 CSM cure systems, comparison of, 5:480
 CSM polymers
 categorization of, 5:473
 commercial, 5:474
 dynamic properties of, 5:481
 flow behavior of, 5:471
 CSM. *See* Chlorosulfonated polyethylene (CSM);
 Contiguous solids melting (CSM)
 CSTR. *See* Continuous stirred tank reactors (CSTR)
 CT. *See* Compact tension (CT)
 CTA method, 8:176
 CTAs. *See* Chain-transfer agents (CTAs)
 CTE. *See* Coefficient of thermal expansion (CTE)
 CTOD. *See* Crack tip opening displacement (CTOD)
 CTS. *See* Chain transfer to solvent (CTS)
 Cucurbit[*n*]urils, 11:133
 Cumene hydroperoxide, 11:507
 Cumene
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
 Cumulative damage rule, 6:329
 Cumyl dithiobenzoate, RAFT polymerization, 11:741
 Cumyl potassium
 anionic polymerization initiator, 1:606
 Cuprammonium rayon, 2:689–691
 Cuprous ammonium acetate extraction
 butadiene, 2:298, 299
 Cuprous chloride-catalyzed polycondensation, in
 polysulfone polymerization, 11:184
 Curatives
 for polychloroprene latex, 3:76
 Curdlan, 15:193
 Cure accelerators, 5:87
 Cure characterization, DEA, 13:856, 857
 Cure monitoring
 thermosets, 14:202–204
 Cure-site monomers, 1:174–176
 Cure system, for fluorocarbon elastomer gum, 6:167
 Cured adhesives, testing, 1:408
 Cured EPDM coatings, 5:686
 Curie temperature, 9:779, 795
 Curing, 1:521. *See also* Vulcanization
 butyl rubber, 2:365, 366
 chloroprene polymers, 3:63, 64
 of coatings, 3:290
 composite materials, 3:522–526
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:629–632
 epoxy resins, 5:334–337, 369–376
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:604, 605
 fatigue cracking effect, 5:729, 730
 phenolic resins, 9:592–594
 in SBR processing, 13:276
 sound as probe of, 1:81, 82
 thermosets, 14:161, 162, 178–200
 Curing agents, 5:87
 acid anhydride, 1:418
 adhesive, 1:428
 coreactive for epoxy resins, 5:337–358
 epoxy/curing agent stoichiometric ratio, 5:366
 health and safety factors, 5:408, 409
 for polysulfides, 11:169–171
 selection, 5:365, 366
 substituted phenol, 1:418
 Curtain coating, 3:284, 285
 precision multilayer, 3:285
 Curved crystals, 12:391, 392
 Cut rubber fiber, 5:771
 CVD. *See* Chemical vapor deposition (CVD)
 Cyanate ester curing agents, 5:358
 Cyanate ester phenolic resins
 manufacture, 9:591
 Cyanatol-750
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
 2-Cyano-1,3-butadiene
 chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
 2-Cyano-*p*-xylylene
 threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
 Cyanoacrylate adhesives, 1:421, 422
 Cyanoacrylate monomers
 chemical properties of, 10:426–428
 manufacture of, 10:428, 429
 physical properties of, 10:426
 properties of, 10:426–428
 reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators
 for anionic polymerization, 1:602
 Cyanoacrylic ester polymers. *See* Polycyanoacrylates
 Cyanoethylation reactions, of acrylonitrile polymers,
 1:265
 Cyanoisopropyl dithiobenzoate (CPDB), 6:476
 α -Cyanoprene
 copolymerization, 3:47
 β -Cyanoprene
 copolymerization, 3:47
 Cyanurotriamide, 1:519

- CYASORB THT™ 4611, 14:474
 CYASORB UV-1084, 14:478–480
 CYASORB UV-1164, 14:458
 CYASORB UV-1164L, 14:482–491
 CYASORB UV-2337, 14:482
 CYASORB UV-2908, 14:479–481
 CYASORB UV-3346, 14:478
 CYASORB UV-3529, 14:471
 CYASORB UV-3581, 14:467, 483
 CYASORB UV-3638, 14:458
 CYASORB UV-3853, 14:475
 CYASORB UV-531, 14:458, 480, 481
 CYASORB UV-5411, 14:458
- Cyclic acetals
 telechelic polymers, 13:708, 709
- Cyclic acid anhydride, polymerization reaction, 5:259
- Cyclic amidine curing agents, 5:357, 358, 360
- Cyclic amines
 telechelic polymers, 13:710
- Cyclic carbonates
 anionic polymerization, 1:625, 626
- Cyclic ethers
 telechelic polymers, 13:702–708
- Cyclic molecules, 9:9
- Cyclic neopentyl hydrogen phosphonate, 9:680
- Cyclic olefin copolymers
 cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:233, 234
- Cyclic oligomeric carbonates, 7:681
- Cyclic oligomers, 7:674, 675, 681
- Cyclic polyarylether oligomers, 7:689, 690
 ether ketone macrocycle mixture via aryl-aryl coupling, 7:690
- Cyclic polybutadienes, 7:679
- Cyclic polycarbonates, 7:680, 681
 dual wavelength HPLC, 7:681
 ring-strained cyclic dimer carbonate, 7:682
- Cyclic polyesters, 7:682–687
- Cyclic polymers
 ATRP of, 1:737
 synthesis of, 3:207, 210
- Cyclic polystyrene, 7:679
- Cyclic siloxanes
 anionic polymerization, 12:475, 476
 cationic polymerization, 12:476, 477
- Cyclic sulfides
 telechelic polymers, 13:709
- Cyclic thermomechanical investigations, of
 shape-memory polymers, 12:413–416
- Cyclic thermomechanical tensile tests, 12:418
- Cyclic ureas, 1:533
- Cyclo diepoxy ERL-4221 (3',4'-epoxycyclohexylmethyl-3,4-epoxycyclohexanecarboxylate)
 viscosity, 5:325
- cyclo*-Di-*p*-xylylene (DPX), 15:409
 manufacture, 15:416, 417
- Cycloaddition reactions, and optical loss, 5:104
- Cycloaliphatic amines
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:338
 coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:342, 343
 curing agents, 5:337
- Cycloaliphatic epoxies
 average U.S. price, 5:299
- Cycloaliphatic epoxy resins, 5:324–327
- Cyclodextrin (CD) polymers, applications of, 4:200–211
 drugs, preparation of, 4:207, 208
 essential oil, preparation of, 4:208–210
 heavy metal ions from environment, removal of, 4:201–203
 organic contaminants from environment, removal of, 4:203–206
 preparation of, 4:200
- α -Cyclodextrin, 11:120
- Cyclohexane
 azeotrope with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Cyclohexanedimethanol polyesters, 4:214–220
 1,4-Cyclohexanedimethanol (CHDM), 4:214, 215
 crystalline polymers based on, 4:215–218
- Cyclohexene oxide reactions, in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:57
- Cyclohexyl-2-benzothiazole-sulfenamide
 accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
N-Cyclohexyl benzothiazole-2-sulfenamide, 12:171
- Cyclohexyl methacrylate
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
- Cyclohydrochlorination, 7:292, 293
- 1,4-Cyclooctadiene
 ring-opening metathesis polymerization, 7:679
 oxidation, 7:294
- 1,5-Cyclooctadiene, 8:168
- Cyclooctenes, 8:190
- Cycloolefins
 commercial overview of metallocene-based copolymers, 8:140
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:126, 127
- Cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:221–236
 alkylation, 4:228
 applications, 4:232–236
 condensation via methylene group, 4:226, 227
 Diels-Alder addition, 4:223, 224
 halogenation, 4:228
 health and safety factors, 4:231, 232
 hydrogenation, 4:227
 oxidation, 4:227, 228
 physical properties, 4:222, 223
 polymerization, 4:226
 reactions, 4:223–228
 source and production, 4:228–230
 storage and handling, 4:231
- Cyclopentadienyl compounds (metallocenes), 8:81–139, 135–140
- Cyclopentadienylamide ligands, linked, 5:557
- Cyclopentenes, 8:190
 from cyclopentadiene hydrogenation, 4:234
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:126, 127
- Cyclopolyphosphazenes, 11:110
- Cyclosiloxanes
 anionic polymerization, 1:627
- Cyclotene, 5:78
- Cycopac, 2:37
- Cylinder block copolymers, lateral spacings in thin films, 12:297, 298
- Cylindrical ion exchange fibers (IX-fibers), 7:174
- Cylindrical morphology polystyrene-*block*-poly(2-vinyl pyridine) (PS-PVP)

- Cysteine
 (acetamidomethyl protected), 11:74
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 (4-methylbenzyl protected), 11:69
 (*tert*-butylsulfenyl protected), 11:75
 (triphenylmethyl protected), 11:72
 (9-xanthenyl protected), 11:72
- Cystine
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- 2D correlation spectroscopy (2DCOS), 14:381–407
 4-methacryloyloxyazobenzene (PMAAz), 14:394
 perturbation correlation moving window (PCMW), 14:382
 bio- and natural polymers, 14:394–398
 photoinduced orientation, 14:393
 poly(hydroxyalkanoate) (PHA), 14:398
- 2D deep UV resonance Raman spectroscopy (2D DUVRR), 14:395
- D glass
 D_k and D_f at 1 MHz, 5:403
- 1D nanomaterials, 5:160
- 2D SERS (surface-enhanced Raman scattering), 14:396, 397
- 3D printing, 14:232
- 3D structure reconstruction
 QIS-SFM imaging technique, 12:310
- 3-D tissue scaffolds, 14:215, 223–240
- DAB-dendrimers, 4:312
- DABCO. *See also* Tertiary amine catalyst
- DADMAC (diallyldimethylammonium chloride) acrylamide copolymers with, 1:132
 economic aspects of, 1:145
- Damage
 and scratch behavior, 12:319, 320
 Damage mechanisms, of thermoplastic polymers, 6:322
- Damping
 and sound absorption, 1:62
- Damping function, 15:116
 in DE model, 15:139
- DAPI monomers. *See* Trimethylphenyl diaminophenylindane (DAPI) monomers
- Data analysis
 in HPLC chromatography, 3:93, 94
 in size exclusion chromatography, 3:120–123
- Database of Polymer Properties, 1:160
- Dative bonding, 8:640
- Daughter lamellae, 12:390
- Daughter polymer, 13:745
- Davankov resins, 11:2
- Davies ENDOR, 5:10
- DB HBPs, 10:410–412
- DBA. *See* 3,5-Dihydroxy benzoic acid (DBA)
- DC, 990A resin, 12:465, 466
- o*-DCB, 7:685
- DCB. *See* Dichlorobenzidine (DCB); Double-cantilever beam (DCB)
- DCDPS. *See* 4,4'-Dichlorodiphenylsulfone (DCDPS) (2DCOS), 14:403, 404
- DCPD. *See* Dicyclopentadiene (DCPD)
- DE constitutive equations, 15:133–140
- De Gennes dense packing*, 4:306
- DE model. *See* Doi-Edwards (DE) model
- DE-NIA equations, 15:142, 143
- DE tube model of reptation, 15:127–133
- De Vries phase, of material, 5:762
- Deacetylated chitosan, 3:37
- Deactivation
 metallocenes, 8:107
- Dead-end filtration, 7:777, 779
- Dead-end polymerization, 7:367, 11:555, 556, 584
- Deaeration
 viscose rayon, 2:680, 681
- Deborah number, 4:515, 5:153
- Debye approximation, 14:63, 64
- Debye function, 9:54
- Debye-Hückel relationship, 7:164
- Decamethylcyclopentasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Decamethyltetrasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Dechlorane plus, as nylon additive, 10:284
- Decitex, 10:522
- Decking, 15:281
- Decomposition products, of polyacrylonitrile, 1:282
- Decomposition temperature
 calculations, 6:74
 PBI, 6:74
- Decompression expansion processes, 2:520–524
- Decomps, 5:535
- Decorative coated fabrics, 5:692
- Decorative plywood
 characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Decortication, 14:496
- Deep dye fibers, 10:518, 519
- Deep Quest submersible, composite foam application, 3:499
- Defect-free membranes, preparation of, 5:840
- Defect sites, 6:562
- Defense
 high performance fiber applications, 6:726
- Deflagration. *See* Burning
- Deflection temperature under load (DTUL), 5:210
- Deflection, viscoelasticity and, 15:89–92
- Defoamers, 3:460. *See also* Antifoaming agents
 silicone application, 12:465
- Deformation, 15:114–125
 of bulk material, 8:471
 degrees of, 8:495
 elastic free energy of, 4:655
 half-step, 15:144, 145
 morphologies of, 8:550–552
 rubber, 4:638–642
 in solid-state extrusion, 12:691, 692
 thermoplastic polymers, 6:322–327
 transitions in, 8:482
 uniaxial, 15:152, 153
- Deformation dilatometers, 4:531, 532
- Deformation experiments, 8:492
- Deformation structures, 8:486, 491
- Deformation temperature, 8:481, 482, 482
- Deformation tensor, 15:112
 relative, 15:120, 121
- Deformation tests, 8:491
- Degassing, 5:640, 648, 667–669
- Degenerate four-wave mixing, 9:129, 130

- Degradable implants, 12:409
- Degradable plastic, 2:73, 4:441, 442
- Degradation, 2:73, 4:250–293
- of backbone chains, 6:330
 - chloroprene polymers, 3:69–71
 - and drag reduction, 4:558–562
 - high energy radiation, 4:287–290
 - hydro-biodegradation, 4:291–293
 - hydrolytic, 3:266, 4:290, 291
 - initiators for, 6:836
 - liquid crystalline polymers, 7:571
 - olefin fibers, 9:350
 - oxidative degradation analytical methods, 4:285–287
 - oxidative degradation chemistry, 4:270–277
 - oxidative degradation mechanical effects, 4:278–281
 - oxy-biodegradation, 4:293
 - photodegradation and photo-oxidation, 4:281–284
 - poly(acrylamide), 1:127
 - poly(3-hydroxyalkanoates), 10:102–104
 - poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:200, 201
 - poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:700, 701
 - spatially resolved degradation from 1-D and 2-D spectral-spatial ESRI, 5:27–33
 - styrene polymers, 13:208–213
 - telechelic polymers, 13:719, 720
 - thermal degradation analytical methods, 4:264–270
 - thermal degradation mechanistic studies, 4:251–264
 - xylylene polymers, 15:428–430
- Degradation-based controlled release technology, 3:750, 751
- Degradative chain transfer
- carbocationic polymerization, 2:410
- Degradative termination
- carbocationic polymerization, 2:410
- Degree of branching
- hyperbranched polymers, 6:790, 791
- Degree of crystallinity, 4:148, 8:704
- absolute, 4:151, 152
- Degree of dilution
- morphology and, 8:553
- Degree of polymerization (DP), 2:722, 4:298
- of LDPE, 5:526
 - and phase transformation, 9:563
- Degree of substitution (DS), 4:299
- cellulose ethers, 2:649
- DEHA. *See* Di-2-ethylhexyl adipate (DEHA)
- Dehumidification systems, for blow molding, 2:239
- Dehydration polycondensation, 5:238
- Dehydrocoupling, 7:42
- transition-metal-catalyzed, 7:46
- Dehydrogenation, polysilanes via, 7:41
- Delamination
- silane coupling agents, 12:419–430
- Delay rod technique
- for acoustic measurements, 1:97, 98
- Delayed gelation, 3:805
- Delrin 100ST, 1:14
- Delrin, 1:1
- stress-strain behavior, 6:814
- Delrin AF, 1:14
- Delusterants, fiber, 10:256, 257
- Demulsification, 3:459
- Dendrimer assemblies, 4:336–341
- Dendrimeric coordination polymers, 7:62, 63
- Dendrimers, 4:321–355. *See also* Dendronized polymers
- AFM imaging of, 1:771, 772
 - amido-ferrocene, 7:51
 - applications of, 4:306–309
 - as inverted micelles, 4:348–351
 - as micelles, 4:341–347
 - as nanoreactors, 4:307, 308
 - assembly based on hydrophobic interactions, 4:354, 355
 - biomimetic dendritic amphiphiles, 4:347, 348
 - catalysis with amphiphilic, 4:353, 354
 - clustering effects, 4:307
 - end-group analysis by neutron scattering, 9:56–58
 - for drug delivery and diagnosis in cancer therapies, 4:307
 - hierarchical, 4:309
 - host-guest interaction on amphiphilicity, 4:341–347
 - hydrogen bonding in dendritic periphery, 4:327–331, 351–353
 - hydrogen bonding with biomimetic materials, 4:331–335
 - hydrogen bonding with dendritic interiors, 4:325–327, 328
 - Janus, 4:304
 - and linear polymers, 4:306
 - light-harvesting, 4:308, 309
 - molecular recognition in, 4:321–355
 - molecularly imprinted, 4:328
 - nanoelement concept, 4:317, 318
 - photo-harvesting, 4:310
 - physicochemical properties, 4:305, 306
 - poly(aryl ether), 4:313
 - polyamidoamine, 4:309–311
 - polyester, 4:315, 316
 - polylysine, 4:313, 314
 - polypropyleneimine, 4:311–313
 - self-immolative, 4:308
 - sensors, 4:335, 336
 - structure, 4:301
 - synthesis of, 6:777
 - synthesis, 3:208–213, 4:301, 4:303, 304
 - synthesis, 4:322–324
 - synthetic polymers, 4:300–304
- Dendrites
- semicrystalline polymers, 12:392–396
- Dendritic, 8:340
- Dendritic box, 4:312, 330, 331
- Dendritic chain reaction, 4:308, 309
- Dendritic polymers, 6:783
- structural representation, 13:169
- Dendritic units, in hyperbranched polymers, 6:790
- Dendroleft, 4:327
- Dendronized block copolymers (DBCPs), 4:371–374
- Dendronized polymers, 4:300
- graft from route of synthesis of, 4:361, 362
 - ionic-responsive, 4:377–380
 - macromonomer route of synthesis of, 4:361, 362
 - stimuli-responsive, 4:361–380
 - structure of, 4:361
 - synthesis of, 4:361, 362
 - thermoreponsive dendronized copolymers, 4:371–374

- thermoreponsive dendronized homopolymers, 4:363–371
- thermoreponsive supramolecular dendronized homo- and copolymers, 4:374–377
- thickness of, 4:362
- types of, 4:361
- Dendronized polymers, **4:361–381**. *See also* Hyperbranched polymers
- Dendrons, 4:338
- Denisol cycle, 14:465–491, 563–592, 588–627, 633–635
- Dense symmetrical membranes, 7:748, 749
- Density
- cellular materials, 2:530
 - characterization methods, 2:756
 - composite foams, 3:506, 507
 - for crystallinity determination, 4:159
 - ethylene oxide polymers, 5:445
 - fillers, 5:787, 788
 - fluctuations in amorphous polymers, 1:556–561
 - LDPE, 5:532, 533
 - LLDPE, 5:552, 575
 - metals, ceramics, and polymers, 4:643
 - sound as probe of, 1:82
- Density detector, 3:92
- Density functional theory (DFT), 3:611–614, 8:602
- exchange functional-correlation functional, 3:612
 - gradient-corrected, 3:613, 614
 - Hohenberg-Kohn theorem, 3:612
 - hybrid methods, 3:613, 614
 - Kohn-Sham theory, unrestricted, 3:612, 613
- Density-gradient column
- for crystallinity determination, 4:159
- Density, of mesophase, 6:41, 41
- DENT. *See* Double-edge notched tension (DENT)
- Dental adhesives, 4:410–412
- Dental applications, **4:383–412**
- autopolymerizing resin formulation, 4:397
 - dental adhesives, 4:410–412
 - denture resins/prosthetic materials, 4:388–396
 - impression/duplicating materials, 4:384–388
 - maxillofacial prosthetic materials, 4:396, 397
 - overview, 4:383, 384
 - restorative materials, 4:398–406
 - root-canal sealants, 4:397
 - sealants, 4:406–410
- Dental ceramics, 4:411
- Dental composites
- free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:743
- Dental restorative sealants, 4:408
- Denture adhesives
- poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:457
- Denture resins/prosthetic materials, 4:388–396
- autopolymerizing resins, 4:390, 391
 - biocompatibility, 4:392, 393
 - crown and bridge temporary resins, 4:395, 396
 - denture liner materials, 4:394, 395
 - denture repair resins, 4:394
 - heat-cured methacrylate formulations, 4:389, 390
 - low-viscosity, chemically cured resins, 4:391
 - mechanical properties, 4:393
 - mixing/working properties, 4:391, 392
 - mouth protectors, 4:396
 - physical properties of (table), 4:392
 - polymeric teeth for dentures, 4:393, 394
 - tissue conditioners, 4:395
 - visible light-cured resins, 4:391
- Deoxyribonucleic acid. *See* DNA
- Depolarization ratio
- in Raman scattering, 14:567
- Depolymerization, **4:419–442**
- characteristics of, 4:419
 - energetics of, 4:432–441
 - environmental applications, 4:441, 442
 - kinetics of, 4:421–424
 - mathematical model of degradation process, 4:424–428
 - medical applications, 4:442
 - overview, 4:419–421
 - and recycling, 4:442
 - thermodynamics of, 4:428–432
- Depropagation
- chain scission with, 4:254–258
 - in copolymerization, 3:770
 - random scission without, 4:254–258
- Derivative fibers, 2:672
- Derivative thermogravimetry, 13:765
- Derivative TMA, 13:826, 827
- Derjaguin-Landau-Verwey-Overbeek (DLVO) theory, 7:459
- Dermatan sulfate, 15:194, 195
- Design
- adhesive, 1:430, 431
 - of atomic force microscope, 1:748–753
 - Design for disassembly, 11:671
 - Design for recycling, 11:671
 - Desolvation, 8:389
 - Destructured starch, 13:53–55
 - DETA. *See* Diethylenetriamine (DETA)
 - Detecting polyacrylamides, 1:144
- Detectors
- concentration, 3:115, 116
 - in HPLC chromatography, 3:91–93
 - molecular weight sensitive, 3:116, 117
 - size exclusion chromatography, 3:118
 - viscometric, 3:118
- Deuterated polystyrene-based polyHIPEs, 10:609
- Devolatilization, 1:295, 296, 5:622, 640, 667–669
- bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:292
 - of styrene polymers, 13:241–243
- Devolatilizer, centrifugal, 13:242, 243
- Devolatilizing extruders, 6:103–105
- Dew retting, 14:500
- Dewatering aids, acrylamide polymers as, 1:119
- Dewatering, polyacrylamides for, 1:139
- Dex-SS-PCL, 8:284
- Dextran, 15:193
- in controlled drug release system, 3:753
- Dextran-aldehyde polymer, 11:440
- Dfrc (derivatization followed by reductive cleavage)
- degradation method, 7:534
- DFT. *See* Density functional theory (DFT)
- DFWM experiment, 9:761
- DGEBA/DDS epoxy, isothermal cure, 13:859
- DGEBA/DDS resin, isothermal cure, 13:858
- DGEBA resins. *See* Diglycidyl ether of bisphenol A (DGEBA) resins
- DH intermediate, in free-radical polymerization, 13:215, 216

- DHLA-appended PEG, 8:796
- Di-methyl formamide (DMF), 5:838, 839
- 2,5-Di(*t*-butylperoxy)-2,5-dimethylhexane
cure agent for silicone rubber, 12:495
- 2,6-Di-*tert*-butyl-4-methylphenol (BHT), 7:325
- Di(2,4-dichlorobenzoyl) peroxide
cure agent for silicone rubber, 12:495
- Di(*tert*-alkyl) peroxide free-radical initiators, 6:849
- 2,6-Di-*tert*-butyl-*p*-cresol
antioxidant, 1:690
- Di-*n*-propyl peroxydicarbonate, 11:507
- Di-*o*-tolylguanidine, 12:175
- Di-*tert*-amyl peroxide (TAPO), 2:766
- Di-*tert*-butyl peroxyalate, 11:507
- Di-*tert*-butyl peroxide (TBPO), 2:764, 766, 11:507
- 1,1-Di(4'-methoxy-5'-methyl-phenyl)cyclohexane (BKDE)
density fluctuations, 1:559–561
- Diacetylene polymers, 4:445–456
monomer preparation, 4:446
topochemically controlled polymerization, 4:451, 452
- Diacetylenes, topopolymerization of, 1:37
- Diacyl peroxide free-radical initiators, 6:844–846
- Dialkyl aliphatic esters, 10:49
- Dialkyl peroxydicarbonate free-radical initiators, 6:849–851
- Dialkyl sulfides, as antioxidants, 13:27, 28
- Dialysis, 7:802
- Diamine modification approach, 8:15
- Diamine-modified PI membranes, 8:15
- Diamines, 8:276
as curing agents, 6:167
- 1,4-Diaminobutane (DAB), 4:312
- 1,2-Diaminocyclohexane
curing agent, 5:345
- 4,4-Diaminodiphenyl sulfone
curing agent, 5:345
- 4,4-Diaminodiphenylmethane
curing agent, 5:345
- 3,4'-Diaminophenyl ether (3,4'-ODA), 10:213
- Diaminotriazine
use in molecular self-assembly, 8:646
- Diamond-like carbon
multilayer barrier structure, 2:52
- Diamondback feed hopper, 5:642
- Diapers
spunbonded fabric application, 9:207, 208
- Diaryl-*p*-phenylenediamine
oxidant used in rubber, 12:196
- Diatomaceous earth, 5:794
- Diazepam
molecularly imprinted polymer-based assay, 8:701
- Diazonaphthaquinone-containing photoactive compounds (DNQ-PACs), 5:81
- Diazotization, azo pigment manufacture via, 3:474
- Dibasic lead phosphite, 6:582
- DiBenedetto equation, 3:525
- (Di)benzoyl peroxide (BPO), 7:349
- Dibenzyl disulfide
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- N,N*-Dibenzylhydroxylamine
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Diblock copolymers, 1:167
- Diblock copolymer membranes
electromechanical stability, 14:539
- Diblock copolymer, self-assembling structures for, 2:127
- Diblock copolypeptide hydrogels (DCHs), 11:434
- Diblock cotelomers, applications, 6:148
- Diblock SB copolymers, 13:281
- Dicationic CP, 11:134
- 2,3-Dichloro-1,3-butadiene
chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
copolymerization with chloroprene, 3:58
- 2-Dichloro-*p*-xylylene
threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
- Dichlorobenzene
swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
- Dichlorobenzidine (DCB), in pigments, 3:477, 479
- 2,3-Dichlorobutadiene
copolymerization, 3:47
health, safety and environmental factors, 3:79
- 4,4'-Dichlorodiphenylsulfone (DCDPS)
1,1-Dichloroethylene. *See also* Vinylidene chloride
in polysulfone synthesis, 11:181, 182, 184, 186, 187
- Dichloromethane, 8:414
solubility of cellulose acetates in, 2:623
- Dicumyl peroxide, 4:90
cure agent for silicone rubber, 12:495
- Dicy material, 1:417
- Dicyanate resins, 14:169–171
- Dicyandiamide
coreactive curing agent for epoxies, 5:347, 348
curing agents, 5:337
- Dicyandiamide epoxy coatings, 3:241–243
- Dicyano compounds, 7:45
- Dicyanodiamide (dicyandiamide), in 1K adhesives, 1:417
- Dicyclohexyl-18-crown-6 (DCHE), 7:304, 305
- Dicyclohexyl itaconate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
- N*-Dicyclohexyl-2-benzothiazole sulfenamide, 12:171
- Dicyclopentadiene (DCPD), 4:221–236, 8:188
ethylene-norbornene copolymers and, 5:586
ethylene-propylene elastomer monomer, 5:595, 596
polymerization, 4:225, 226
- Dicyclopentadiene dicarboxylic acid, 4:236
- Dicyclopentadiene diepoxide, 4:236
- Dicyclopentadiene dioxide, 4:236
- Dicyclopentadiene resins
synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:419
- Dicyclopentadiene, microencapsulation of, 12:341
- Die attach adhesives, 5:82–85
dispense methods for, 5:85
formulation, 5:65, 86
- Die attachment assembly, 3:679
- Die drool, 5:647
- Die-face pelletizers, 9:481, 482
- Die forming
in extrusion, 5:669–678
size and shape changes in, 5:669–672
- Die geometry, 5:675
- Die swell. *See also* Die/weight swell
- Die system, 3:376–379
feedblock systems, 3:377–379
multimanifold dies, 3:376

- Die/weight swell, 2:237. *See also* Die swell
- Dielectric analysis (DEA) methods, 13:779, 829–834
periodic (or alternating) electric field, 13:832
with thermoplastics, 13:834
thermoset curing, 14:191–199
- Dielectric applications, of rigid-rod polymers, 12:115–117
- Dielectric behavior, 4:486–490
- Dielectric breakdown. *See* Electric breakdown
- Dielectric constant, 4:714–719
contour maps of, 4:725, 726
definition, 4:738
frequency, effect of, 4:716
relative, 4:678
schematic representation of, 4:715
static, 4:720
- Dielectric constant, 5:209, 7:572
composite foams, 3:507–509
- Dielectric elastomers, 2:132, 133
- Dielectric-heating equation, 4:460
capacitance in, 4:463
dielectric constant in, 4:464
frequency in, 4:460, 461
loss tangent in, 4:464–467
voltage in, 4:461–463
- Dielectric heating, 4:458–478
amount of heat needed for, 4:459
applications, 4:474–478
applicator section in, 4:472–474
equation for, 4:460–467. *See also* Dielectric-heating equation
equipment, 4:471–474
generator section in, 4:471, 472
and microwave heating, 4:458
for preheating materials, 4:474, 475
process of, 4:458
shielding requirements, 4:469–471
theory related to, 4:458, 459
uniformity of heat generation in, 4:459, 460
for welding or sealing process, 4:475–477
woodworking application, 4:477, 478
- Dielectric loss index, schematic representation of, 4:715
- Dielectric loss, 4:479
- Dielectric permittivity, 4:479
- Dielectric properties, 4:479–483
aromatic polyesters, 4:480
glycerol, 4:481, 482
polycarbonates, 4:480
polyethylene, 4:479
poly(methyl methacrylate), 4:480
polyoxyethylene, 4:480
polyoxymethylene, 4:480
polypropylene, 4:479
polystyrene, 4:479
polytetrafluoroethylene, 4:479
poly(vinyl chloride), 4:480
test methods, 13:779, 780
- Dielectric relaxation spectroscopy (DRS), 2:753, 6:437
- Dielectric relaxation, 4:479–491
measurement techniques and applications, 4:490, 491
theory, 4:483–486
- Dielectric relaxation strength, 9:789
- Dielectric relaxation time, 4:716–718
addition of plasticizer and, 4:721
temperature effects on, 4:719
- Dielectric spectroscopy
amorphous polymers, 1:584, 585
applications, 4:486–488
- Dielectric strength. 13:779, 780. *See also* Electric strength
- Dielectric theory, of amorphous piezoelectric polymers, 9:788–790
- Dielectric thermal analysis, 13:765, 769, 779
- Dielectrically variable materials, 4:489, 490
- Diels-Alder (DA) polymers, 4:493–504
anthracene and maleimide, DA reaction between, 4:496, 497
cyclopentadiene, DA reaction of, 4:497, 498
DA reaction, 4:493, 494
dithioesters and dienes, hetero-DA reaction of, 4:498
functions of, 4:499–504
furan and maleimide, DA reaction between, 4:494–496
healing of, 4:500–503
network polymers from, 4:503, 504
reversibility of, 4:499, 500
- Diels-Alder condensation, ethylene-norbornene copolymers and, 5:587
- Diels-Alder dimer, 13:222
- Diels-Alder reactions, 1:264, 429, 13:215–217
- Diene monomers, RAFT polymerization, 11:729
- Dienes. *See also* Vinyl monomers
anionic polymerization, 1:600, 609–620
metallocene-based polymerization, 8:125, 126
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
- Dienophile, 7:273
- Dies
coextrusion, 5:629
design for microcellular plastics, 8:308–312
extrusion, 5:672
multimanifold, 5:636
- Diethyl fumarate
chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
- Diethyl L-aspartate, 5:262
- Diethyl maleate
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- Diethyl malonate, 14:441
- Diethylaminobenzaldehyde-diphenylhydrazone (DEH), 9:760
- Diethyldisulfide
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Diethylenetriamine (DETA), 1:418
curing agent, 5:345
shrinkage when used as curing agent, 3:531
- Diethyltoluenediamine
curing agent, 5:345
- Diethynyl disulfide, polybisthiolation of, 1:45
- Differential gravure coating, 3:277
- Differential refractive index (DRI) detector, 3:116
- Differential refractive index (DRI), 3:104
- Differential refractometer, 7:451

- Differential scanning calorimeter (DSC), 1:759, 2:743, 746, 4:102, 6:434, 568, 13:765, 789, 792–794, 14:24, 25
- for antioxidant testing, 1:715
- for crystallinity determination, 4:153–156
- described, 13:764–767
- instrumentation, 13:792–794
- phenolic resins, 9:597
- PVDF homopolymer, 15:70
- for *in situ* characterization of rate of cationic photopolymerization, 9:708–710
- Differential thermal analysis (DTA), 1:715, 2:743, 746, 4:102, 13:765, 789–792, 14:23, 24
- applications for polymers, 13:792
- described, 13:764
- phenolic resins, 9:597
- Diffraction efficiency, 9:756
- Diffraction techniques, for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:473, 474
- Diffuse functions, 3:600
- Diffused-constraints theory, 9:21
- Diffusion, 4:510–521, 8:321
- areas of importance, 4:519, 520
- barrier polymers, 2:2–5
- bonding and, 1:370–372
- branched polymers and, 4:519
- coefficient, 8:3
- cross-linked polymers and, 4:519
- crystalline polymers and, 4:519
- dense barrier polymers, 2:5–8
- diffusional coefficients, 4:516, 517
- diffusional transport, 4:515, 516
- gas, 4:511–515
- gases in polymers, 8:305
- Graham's law of, 7:790
- introduction, 4:510
- molecular modeling, 8:607–612
- polydisperse polymers and, 4:519
- in solids, theoretical modeling of, 4:520, 521
- of stabilizers and antioxidants, 13:20
- theory of, 4:517–519
- viscous, 4:510, 511
- Diffusion coefficients, 7:791–793
- in multicomponent systems, 14:296, 297
- mutual, 14:293–296
- self, 14:295, 296
- Diffusion-controlled drug release technology, 3:748, 749
- Diffusion-limited colloid aggregation (DLCA), 4:370
- Diffusion- and convection-based micromixers, 8:422
- Diffusional flux, 14:292
- Diffusivity
- barrier polymers, 2:8–21
- dependence on fiber volume fraction, 8:568
- normalized, 8:569
- Difunctional initiators
- anionic polymerization, 1:606, 607
- in polystyrene production, 13:218–220
- Digital data storage, 9:765
- Diglycidyl ether of bisphenol A (DGEBA), 1:416
- average U.S. price, 5:299
- epoxy acrylates based on, 5:329
- epoxy resins, 5:293, 296
- health and safety factors, 5:408, 409
- hydrogenated, 5:321
- liquid epoxy resins, 5:300–305
- solid epoxy resins, 5:305–312
- viscosity, 5:325
- Diglycidyl ether of tetramethyl bisphenol, 5:320
- 3,5-Dihydroxy benzoic acid (DBA), hyperbranched polymers from, 6:780
- α , ω -Dihydroxy polybutadiene-synthesis, 8:177
- Dihydroxyethylene urea, 1:518
- Diisocyanates, 7:45
- polymers from, 7:253–267
- polysulfide curing with, 11:171, 172
- N,N*-Diisopropylbenzothiazole-2-sulfenamide, 12:170
- Diisopropylhydrazodicarboxylate, 2:267
- Diisopropyl-naphthalene, 8:391
- β -Diketones, in stabilizer formulation, 6:577
- Diketopyrrolo pyrrole pigment, 3:486, 487
- Dilatant, 3:445
- Dilatometry, 4:522–533, 6:434, 14:25
- capacitive, 4:530, 531
- for crystallinity determination, 4:159
- deformation, 4:531, 532
- direct imaging, 4:532, 533
- equation of state, expansion coefficients, and compressibility, 4:522–526
- indirect imaging, 4:533
- linear, 4:526, 527
- noncontact, 4:532, 533
- overview, 4:522
- standards, 4:533
- volume, 4:527–530
- and yield, 15:473–475
- Dilithioferrocene, 7:56
- Diluents
- for epoxy resins, 5:376, 377
- fatigue effects, 5:736–740
- Dilute solution viscometry
- for average molar mass determination, 2:741
- Diluted LC-polysiloxanes, 5:761
- smectic elastomers, 5:761
- smectic layer thickness, 5:761
- Dilution, infinite, 8:557
- Dimension, strength as a function of, 11:679, 680
- Dimer contamination, in polystyrene production, 13:217
- 1,3-Dimercaptobenzene
- oxidative polymerization, 9:445
- Dimerization
- chloroprene, 3:43
- 4-(2,4'-Dimethoxyphenylaminomethyl)phenoxy-methyl resin, 11:78
- 4-(2,4'-Dimethoxyphenylhydroxymethyl)phenoxy-methyl resin, 11:77
- Dimethyl-2,6-naphthalenedicarboxylate (2,6-NDC)
- feedstock for PEN, 10:139
- polymerization, 10:147–150
- N,N*-Dimethyl acetamide (DMAc), 11:181
- acrylic fiber solution spinning solvent, 1:225, 241, 246
- N,N*-Dimethyl acetamide
- transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Dimethyl Cellosolve
- solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447

- N,N*-Dimethyl formamide
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Dimethyl itaconate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
- Dimethyl sulfoxide (DMSO), 7:540, 11:181
acrylic fibers solution spinning solvent, 1:241, 246
- Dimethyl terephthalate (DMT), 4:214, 216, 10:198
- 5,5-Dimethyl-1,3-diox-2-one
anionic polymerization, 1:625
- 4-(*N,N*-Dimethylamino)pyridine. *See* DMAP (4-[*N,N*-dimethylamino]pyridine)
- Dimethylaminoethanol, 1:531
- N*-Dimethylaminoethyl methacrylate
template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- 2-Dimethylaminoethyl methacrylate, acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:283
- 4-Dimethylaminopyridine (DMAP), 13:316
- 2,3-Dimethylbutadiene, 2:293
- N*-(1,3-Dimethylbutyl)-*N*-phenyl-*p*-phenylenediamine (6-PPD)
oxidant used in rubber, 12:197
- Dimethylene ether, 1:523
- N,N*-Dimethylformamide (DMF)
acrylic fiber solution spinning solvent, 1:224, 241
- Dimethylformamide, 5:684
solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Dimethylmethylene group
relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- Dimethylol propionic acid (DMPA)
- Dimethyloldihydroxyethyleneurea (DMDHEU), 1:535, 537
- Dimethylolurea, 1:532
- 2,6-Dimethylphenol
oxidative polymerization, 9:432–437
polymerization, 10:577–579
- Dimethylphenylene group
relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- Dimethylstyrene
aqueous solubility, 7:467
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Dimineralization
hydroxide-form ion exchanger, 7:176
weakly acidic resins, 7:176
- DIN 53453, 6:805
- DIN 54900, 2:75
- Dinitrosopentamethylenetetramine, 2:263
- Dinnerware molding, 3:588, 589
- Dinucleotide/intercalator system, geometry of, 4:51
- Diocetyl phthalate (DOP)
- Diol compounds, 9:643
- Diorthotolyl guanidine (DOTG), 5:421
- 1,4-Dioxane
solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Dioxazine violet pigment, 3:486
- Dip coating, 2:197, 5:840
dipping processes, 5:196
of irregular surfaces, 3:287
- Dip-pen nanolithography (DPN) method, 5:271
- DIP. *See* Dual in-line package (DIP)
- Diphenols, 10:351
- 1,1'-Diphenyl-2-picrylhydrazyl (DPPH), 13:215
- Diphenylamines
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Diphenyldisulfide
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Diphenylene oxide
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Diphenylenesulfone group, in polysulfones, 11:179
- Diphenylethylene
in living radical polymerization, 7:651, 668
- 1,1-Diphenylethylene
carbocationic polymerization monomer, 2:394
- Diphenylguanidine, 12:173
accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
- Diphenylmethane diisocyanate (MDI), 1:422
- 1,1-Diphenylmethylcarbanions
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:608
- Diphenylpicrylhydrazyl, 11:579
- Dipole-ion interactions
intercalation through, 7:75
- Dipole moment
of amorphous piezoelectric polymers, 9:791
of carbon dioxide, 4:48
in nitrile-substituted polyimide, 9:794
vibrational motions associated with change, 14:564
- Dipole moment vector, 3:696
- Dipole polarization, 4:480, 481, 483
- Dipped goods
latex applications, 7:462
polychloroprene latex applications, 3:78, 79
- Dipping, 5:405
PVC plastisols, 14:754
- Direct bonding, 1:430
- Direct-drive extruder, 5:630, 631
- Direct extraction, 6:235
- Direct gravure coating, 3:277
- Direct mass spectroscopy
thermal degradation studies, 4:269, 270
- Direct pyrolysis mass spectroscopy, 4:268
- Direct SSP, 12:702–705
- Directed self-assembly (DSA), 7:617
- Dirt retention, 3:312
- Disazo condensation pigments, 3:479, 480
- Disazo red pigment, 3:477, 478
- Disazo yellow pigment, 3:477
- Discharge-dependent breakdown, 4:680, 681
- Discharge extinction voltage (DEV), 4:690
- Discharge inception voltage (DIV), 4:690
- Discharge printing
wool, 15:335
- Discoloration
by antioxidants, 13:19, 22, 41, 42
of SAN copolymers, 13:233, 234
- Discontinuous dispersed phase, in composites, 11:688
- Disclotic liquid-crystalline elastomers, 9:30
- Discrete activators, 5:562
- Discrete surface-coating methods, 3:286, 287
- Discs
polystyrene supports, 11:33–36
- Disilanes, 12:468
- Disilyl chromate catalyst, 5:560
- Dislocation plasticity, 15:471, 472

- “Disorder formalism”, 9:757
- Dispersed material, in composites, 11:688, 699
- Dispersed rubber phase, of ABS polymers, 1:312–315
- Dispersed solids melting (DSM), 5:647–651
- Dispersion forces
- colloids, 3:451
 - of fluorocarbons and hydrocarbons, 11:705
 - release agents and, 11:704
- Dispersion mechanisms, in size exclusion chromatography, 3:109–111
- Dispersion medium, 6:583
- Dispersion methods
- for liquids, 3:493, 494
 - for solids, 3:494
- Dispersion polymerization, 5:163, 164, 186, 8:403
- of acrylamide, 1:138
 - heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
 - heterophase polymerization techniques with
 - continuous fluid phases, 6:619
 - heterophase technique, 6:582
 - in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:51–54
- Dispersions. *See also* Polymer dispersions
- chloroprene polymers, 3:71–75
 - filled polymers, 5:789, 790
- Dispersity, 6:581
- effect on heterophase polymerization, 6:607–610
- Dispersive materials, 1:69
- Dispersive mixers
- comparison of, 5:662
 - drawbacks of, 5:665
- Dispersive mixing, 3:496, 5:661–667
- Displacement-to-load ratio, 9:105
- Displacements, stress and strain and, 15:78–80
- Disproportionation
- termination mode, 11:542–545, 600
- Dissipation
- sound absorption, 1:62
- Dissipation factor, 4:678, 714, 715
- contour maps of, 4:725, 726
 - definition, 4:738
 - drying, effect of, 4:733
 - frequency-temperature contours of, 4:728
 - thermal breakdown and, 4:680
 - voids, effect of, 4:735
 - voltage stress, effect of, 4:734
 - vs.* frequency, 4:722, 724, 731
 - vs.* temperature, 4:723, 725
- Dissipative materials, fracture mechanics of, 6:313–318
- Dissipative particle dynamics, 8:599, 600
- Dissociation energies, of polymers, 4:440
- Dissolution-controlled drug release technology, 3:749, 750
- Dissolved gases
- in heterophase polymerization, 6:634
- Dissolving pulps, 2:574
- Distance of conformation, squared end-to-end, 3:106
- Distillation/pervaporation plant, 7:800
- Distortion temperature under load (DTUL), 6:435
- Distribution/rheological properties, of LLDPE, 5:574
- Distributive mixers, comparison of, 5:658
- Distributive mixing, 3:496, 5:654–661
- important characteristics for, 5:658
- 1,2-Disubstituted olefins, 8:169
- 2,6-Disubstituted phenols
- oxidative polymerization, 9:432–437
- Disulfide
- accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
- Disulfide reactions, 11:172, 173
- Dithiobenzoate RAFT agents, 11:743
- Dithiocarbamate (Z=N<) RAFT agents (table), 11:719
- Dithiocarbamates, 4:70
- 4,4'-Dithiodimorpholine, 12:175
- Dithioester (Z=Alkyl or Alkylaryl) RAFT agents (table), 11:716
- Dithioester (Z=Aryl) RAFT agents (table), 11:715
- Dithioic acids, as photostabilizers, 13:31, 32
- Dithiolates, as photostabilizers, 13:31, 32
- Ditopic Mebip ligands, chemical structure, 13:455
- Divergent methods, of dendrimer synthesis, 4:301, 303, 304
- Divinyl benzene (DVB), 7:157
- Divinyl sulfone (DVS), 8:276
- Divinylbenzene-styrene copolymers, 13:235
- alternative cross-linkers, 11:29–32
 - polymer-supported reagents, 11:17–25
- Divinylsiloxane-bis-benzocyclobutene (DVS-bis-BCB), 5:78
- Divinyltetramethyldisiloxane (DVTMDSO)-oxygen plasmas, 10:23
- Diyynes, 1:32–48
- 1,6-heptadiyne derivatives, 1:33
 - click polymerization of, 1:43
 - cross-coupling polymerization, 1:36
 - cyclopolymerization of, 1:34
 - Glaser-Hay coupling, 1:34
 - Grubbs-Hoveyda catalysts, 1:33
 - linear polymerizations, 1:32–42
 - metathesis polymerization of, 1:34
 - monomer structures, 1:32
 - nonlinear polymerizations, 1:42–48
 - polycoupling of, 1:44
 - polycoupling of terminal, 1:35
 - polycycloaddition of, 1:41
 - polycyclotrimerizations of, 1:46, 47
 - polyhydroboration of, 1:39
 - polyhydrosilylation of, 1:37, 38
 - polyhydrothiolation of, 1:40
 - Schrock tungsten-carbyne complex, 1:33
 - Sonogashira coupling, 1:35
 - structures of, 1:32
- DLVO theory, 6:645, 7:459
- and colloids, 3:451–454
- DMA experiments, linear viscoelastic range, 13:832
- DMA, determining T_g, 13:835–837
- DMAc. *See* N,N-Dimethyl acetamide (DMAc)
- DMAP (4-[N,N-dimethylamino]pyridine)
- DMDHEU. *See* Dimethyloldihydroxyethyleneurea (DMDHEU)
- DMF. *See* N,N-Dimethylformamide (DMF)
- DMF/water mixtures, PS-PAA, 14:517
- DMSO, 8:426
- DMSO. *See* Dimethyl sulfoxide (DMSO)
- DMT. *See* Dimethyl terephthalate (DMT)
- DMTZ, 13:33
- DNA double helix, 15:182, 183

- DNA replication
and template polymerization, 13:744, 744
- DNA strands, 8:323
- DNA. *See also* Polynucleotides
as evidence, 6:174, 175
irradiation degradation, 4:289, 6:383–386
role in protein synthesis, 6:381
semicrystalline, 12:392
structure, 15:182, 183
turbulent drag reduction, 4:560
- DNQ-novolac photoresists, 7:584
- DNQ-PACs. *See* Diazonaphthaquinone-containing photoactive compounds (DNQ-PACs)
- Docetaxel-encapsulated (Dtxl) nanoparticles, 8:428
- 5,7-Dodecadiyne-1,12-bis(butylcarboxymethylurethane) (BCMU), 4:447
- Dodecamethylcyclohexasiloxane
physical properties, 12:491
- Dodecamethylpentasiloxane
physical properties, 12:491
- n*-Dodecanethiol
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Dodecyl acrylate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
activation parameter for termination, 11:549
- n*-dodecyl methacrylate (DMA), 9:639
- Dodecyl methacrylate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
activation parameter for termination, 11:549
- Doi-Edwards (DE) model, 15:99, 101, 127–146
experimental predictions of, 15:140–146
- Doi Edwards theory, 4:517
- Dolanit, 1:251, 253
- Domain size theory, 7:119
- Domains, in LCPs, 7:573
- Dominant lamellae, 8:713
- Doolittle equation, 3:525
- DOP. *See* Dioctyl phthalate (DOP)
- Doping
conjugated polymers, 5:120
electrically active polymers, 4:762–764
polysilanes, 11:162
- Doppler-broadened annihilation radiation (DBAR)
method, 11:272
- Doppler effect, 1:551
- Double bond reactions, of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:264, 265
- Double-Cable Polymers, 6:353–356
- Double-cantilever beam (DCB), 6:304
- Double-edge notched tension (DENT), 6:317
- Double-emulsion precipitation, 8:417
- Double-ended polystyrene, 13:219, 220
- Double flighted screw, 5:649
- Double glass transition, 12:400
- Double metal cyanide (DMC) catalysis, 11:219
- Double modulation spectroscopy, 14:623–627
- Double networks, 9:5
structure, 9:4
- Double-sided tapes, 1:411
- Double-strand (ladder) polymers
structural representation, 13:173
- Double-stranded DNA
turbulent drag reduction, 4:560
- Double-torsion test, 6:311
- Double wave screw, 5:661
- Dow Chemical Corporation
anionic styrene polymerization research by, 13:224
polystyrene manufacturing by, 13:179, 180
- Down-channel shear rates, 5:655
- Down-channel shear strain, total, 5:656
- Down-channel velocity profiles, 5:655
- Down-jump volume recovery, 1:455
- Downstack mode, 5:635
- DOX-conjugated dendrimer, 4:314
- DOX-loaded Dex-SS-PCL micelles, 8:284
- DPPH. *See* 1,1'-Diphenyl-2-picrylhydrazyl (DPPH)
- Draft air oven, long-term stabilization of polymers in, 13:29
- Drag, 4:535
- Drag induced conveying, 5:641–643
- Drag induced melt removal, 5:648
- Drag-reducing additives, 4:553
- Drag reduction, 4:535–572
applications, 4:568–571
degradation and shear stability mechanisms, 4:558–562
mechanism, 4:555–558
methods, 4:546–550
mixed systems, 4:562–567
poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:458
polymeric, 4:550–555
turbulent, 4:539–555
turbulent by surfactants, 4:567, 568
- Drag, viscous, 5:651
- Dragline silk, 12:542, 544
properties, 12:547
- Dralon L930, 1:248
- Draw-down bar, 5:670, 7:748
- Draw ratio, 11:694, 695
high, 11:695
- Draw-twist spinning process, 10:249, 250
- Drawing, 8:548–556
commercial, 10:532, 533
new developments in, 10:250–252
olefin fibers, 9:356–358
PET and PEN films, 10:504
of shape-memory polymers, 12:409
of spun filaments, 10:531–534
- DRDS. *See* Thiophosphoryl disulfide (DRDS)
- DREIDING force field model, 8:578, 612, 619
- DRI detector. *See* Differential refractive index (DRI) detector
- Drilling fluids, ionomers in, 7:237, 238
- Drolet-Fredrickson molecular modeling method, 8:598
- Drop calorimetry, 14:23
- Droplets, 8:404
double emulsion droplets, 8:417
generator for the synthesis of core-shell particles, 8:410
in heterophase polymerization, 6:591
morphology, 8:407, 408
nonspherical, 8:410–412
size and distribution, 8:406, 407
- Drug delivery systems
biodegradable polymers for, 2:117
controlled, 7:804, 805

- controlled release. *See* Controlled release technology
- electrically active polymers for, 4:771, 772
- poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:457
- polyester dendrimers for, 4:316
- use of chitosan for, 3:40, 41
- Drug design, 8:573
- Drug-loaded nanoparticles, 8:425, 427
- Drug-loaded PLGA Nanoparticles, 8:428
- Drug-loaded resonates, 7:188, 8:428, 429
- Drugs, preparation of, cyclodextrin polymers in, 4:207, 208
- Drum dryers, steam-heated, 5:477
- Dry arc resistance, 4:704
- Dry bead process, for acrylamide polymerization, 1:137, 138
- Dry blending
- powder coatings, 3:250
- Dry-bright nonbuffable polishes, 6:111
- Dry cycle time, 2:219
- Dry die face pelletizers, 5:639
- Dry-film adhesives, 1:414
- Dry guayule rubber, 12:271, 272, 279, 280
- applications, 12:281–283
- Dry jet-wet spinning technique, 11:695, 12:64, 65
- Dry-laid processes, 9:214
- Dry-laid pulp, 9:222
- Dry poly(acrylamide)s
- degradation, 1:127
- physical properties, 1:119
- Dry prills, 3:468
- Dry spinning, 3:498
- acrylic fibers, 1:241–243
- of MPDI, 10:222
- Spandex, 5:773, 775–778
- Dry thin films, CD spectroscopy of proteins, 12:667
- Dry type chloroprene polymers, 3:71
- Dryers, coating, 3:289–297
- Drying
- coatings, 3:289–297
- poly(vinyl chloride), 14:748
- viscose rayon, 2:683, 684
- DSC. *See* Differential scanning calorimetry (DSC)
- DSC enthalpy determination, 13:799, 800
- DSC melting profiles, for ethylene polymers, 5:551
- DSC, modifications and simultaneous techniques, 13:807, 808
- DSM. *See* Dispersed solids melting (DSM)
- DTA. *See* Differential thermal analysis (DTA)
- DTUL. *See* Deflection temperature under load (DTUL)
- Dual-capsule systems, 12:355–362
- corrosion-resistance performance, 12:358
- hydroxyl end-functionalized poly(dimethylsiloxane) (HOPDMS), 12:355
- PDMS-based self-healing chemistries, 12:355
- microencapsulation, 12:356
- PDES, 12:355
- Dual cure sites, of acrylic elastomers, 1:176
- Dual in-line package (DIP), 5:63
- Ductile failure, 6:300
- Ductile fatigue fracture, genuine, 6:290
- Ductile fracture, 6:288, 289
- Ductile polymers, impact resistance of, 10:715
- Ductility, 5:704
- Dugdale model, 6:310
- Dulmage mixer, 5:660, 661
- Dunning basis sets, 3:600, 601
- Dunova, 1:226
- Durability
- fracture and, 6:327–330
- Durable biobased resins, 1:812
- Durham-route, 8:181
- Durimide™ materials, 5:74
- Dust
- as colloid, 3:437, 442
- in polyacrylamide analysis, 1:142
- Dust explosions, 3:461, 5:534
- DVS-bis-BCB. *See*
- Divinylsiloxane-bis-benzocyclobutene (DVS-bis-BCB)
- Dye dispersants, lignosulfonate, 7:541
- Dyeability
- ionic, 10:519
- of polyamide fiber, 10:257, 258
- Dyeing
- olefin fibers, 9:351
- PTT use in, 10:207, 208
- theory of, 15:331
- wool, 15:330–334
- Dyes, 3:488. *See also* Deep dye fibers
- anthraquinone, 3:489
- azine, 3:489
- azo, 3:488
- as colorants, 3:490
- defined, 3:469
- embedded in thermochromic hydrogel, 14:45
- fiber, 10:257, 258
- selectivity in fiber, 10:259, 260
- for wool, 15:330, 331
- xanthene, 3:489
- Dyes, macromolecular, 4:579–604. *See also*
- Macromolecular dyes
- Dynamic behavior
- characterization methods, 2:742–746
- Dynamic creep fracture, 6:289
- Dynamic damping
- butyl rubber, 2:362, 363
- Dynamic effects, in polymer chromatography, 3:98, 99
- Dynamic fatigue fracture
- in brittle polymer, 6:292
- propagation of, 6:292
- radially propagating, 6:290
- Dynamic fracture conditions
- healing efficiency, 12:345, 346
- mechanical characterization, 12:345–347
- TDCB specimen geometry, 12:346
- Dynamic heat extraction, 13:760
- Dynamic kinetic resolution (DKR), 5:243, 256, 257
- Dynamic light scattering, 2:201
- Dynamic mechanical (DMA) methods/properties, 13:789, 829–834
- thermoplastics, characterization of, 13:835–847
- Dynamic mechanical analysis (DMA), 7:220, 4:610–634, 13:250, 677, 765
- applications for polymer melts and solutions, 4:624–629

- applications for thermoplastic solids and cured thermosets, 4:616–624
 applications for thermosets, 4:629–634
 described, 13:764, 766–768
 forced frequency analyzers, 4:611–613
 free resonance analyzers, 4:613, 614
 frequency dependencies in transition studies, 4:624
 instrumentation, 4:615, 616
 for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:476
 phenolic resins, 9:598
 thermoset curing, 14:191–199
 Dynamic mechanical properties
 of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:204, 205
 Dynamic mechanical spectroscopy, 6:435
 amorphous polymers, 1:569, 570
 poly(ethylene-co-styrene) blends, 5:434–436
 Dynamic mechanical thermal analysis (DMTA), 2:748
 Dynamic modulus, 15:99
 Dynamic rebound test, 6:555
 Dynamic surface tension, 3:297
 Dynamic time sweep test, 12:24, 25
 Dynamic viscosity, 3:295
 Dynamically formed membranes, 7:763
 Dynel, 1:225, 251
 emulsion polymerization, 1:239
 E-beam irradiation. *See* Electron beam irradiation
 E-glass (electrical glass)
 D_k and D_f at 1 MHz, 5:403
 properties of, 11:689, 690
 E-Glass-epoxy, cross-ply
 specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
 E-Glass-epoxy, unidirectional
 specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
 EAA copolymer, 13:57, 58
 EAA-thermoplastic starch films, 13:55
 EAA. *See* Acrylic acid (EAA)
 Earthshell packaging, 2:88, 89
 EastarBio, 2:78–80
 Easy-care wool wovens, 15:329
 Easy-flow polystyrenes, 13:186
 Ebullient CSTR, 13:190
 Ebulliometry
 for average molar mass determination, 2:741
 for number-average molecular weight determination, 8:665
 ECA. *See* Electrically conductive adhesives (ECA)
 ECH. *See* Epichlorohydrin
 Eckart function, 3:621, 622
 Eckart tunneling correction, 3:622
 Eco-design, of plastics parts, 11:674, 675
 Ecoflex, 2:79
 EcoFoam, 2:83
 Economic aspects. *See also* Market economics
 of acrylonitrile monomer, 1:268, 269
 of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:298–301
 adhesive compounds, 1:402, 403
 of amino resins, 1:544
 antioxidants, 1:717, 718
 of aromatic polyamides and aramids, 10:232, 233
 butadiene polymers, 2:319–321
 butyl rubber, 2:368–370
 carboxymethylcellulose, 2:653, 654
 cellular poly(vinyl chloride), 2:557
 of chitin and chitosan, 3:38, 39
 of chlorosulfonated polymers, 5:481
 of colorants, 3:469
 of engineering thermoplastics, 5:213, 214
 epoxy resins, 5:296–300
 ethylcellulose, 2:665
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:455
 fibers, elastomeric, 5:780
 fillers, 5:800
 flexible polyurethane production, 2:549
 free-radical initiators, 6:863–865
 heterophase polymerization, 6:584–588
 hydroxyethylcellulose, 2:657
 hydroxypropylcellulose, 2:667
 of LDPE, 5:528–230
 of LLDPE, 5:571–574
 melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:739
 methylcellulose, 2:663
 olefin fibers, 9:362, 363
 phenolic resins, 9:601, 602
 plastics recycling, 11:662, 663, 674, 675
 of polyacrylamides, 1:118
 of polyamide plastics, 10:292–294
 of polycyanoacrylates, 10:431
 of polysulfides, 11:176
 powder coating methods, 3:254–256
 propylene polymers, 11:405–409
 of release agents, 11:707, 708
 rigid polyurethane production, 2:552
 silicones, 12:520
 of styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:283, 284
 of styrene polymers, 13:249–251
 superabsorbent polymers, 13:360, 361
 syndiotactic polystyrene, 13:646
 thermoplastic elastomers, 14:148
 vegetable fibers, 14:506–509
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:644, 645
 vinyl acetate polymers, 14:671
 vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:708, 709
 of vinylidene fluoride polymers, 15:71
 Ecostar additive, 13:52
 ECP. *See* Effective core potentials (ECP)
 Eddy-current testing (ET), 9:109
 Edge-effects, 6:317
 EDTA. *See* Ethylenediaminetetraacetic acid (EDTA), 6:419, 420
 Edwards tube model, 9:22
 EEA. *See* Ethyl acrylate (EEA)
 Effective coordination number, 9:571
 Effective core potentials (ECP), 3:600
 Effective heat of combustion
 at firepoint (table), 6:57, 57
 at flashpoint (table), 6:57, 57
 EG. *See* Ethylene glycol (EG)
 Egan mixing section, 5:663
 Eicosamethylnonasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
 Einstein equation, 3:444–446
 Ekkcel, 7:564
 Elastane, 5:768
 Elastic compliance, 15:81, 86, 91
 Elastic constants
 and acoustic properties, 1:63–65

- composite foams, 3:507
- measurements, 1:89–92
- Elastic diffusion, 4:515
- Elastic force, 4:653
- Elastic free energies, 9:18, 23
- Elastic instabilities in coextrusion, 3:388, 389
- Elastic limit, of a fiber, 10:241
- Elastic material functions, 15:78–80. *See also* Viscoelasticity
- Elastic modulus, 12:418, 15:89
 - and fatigue, 5:704
 - of a fiber, 10:241
 - of shape-memory polymers, 12:414
- Elastic recovery
 - of a fiber, 10:242
 - olefin fibers, 9:348, 349
 - of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:205
- Elastic sublayer, 4:542, 543
- Elastic-viscoelastic correspondence principle, 15:86, 89–91
- Elasticity, 4:638–668
 - conditions for rubber-like, 4:642–644
 - entanglements and rubber-like, 4:667, 668
 - of a fiber, 10:241
 - phenomenological theory of, 4:661–663
 - statistical treatment of rubber-like, 4:653–666
 - thermodynamics of rubber-like, 4:651–653
- Elasticity experiments
 - elongation results, 9:11, 12
 - mechanical properties, 9:11–14
 - optical and spectroscopic properties, 9:14, 15
 - scattering, 9:5
 - sorption and extraction of diluents, 9:14
 - swelling, 9:13, 14
- Elasticity theories, 9:15–17
 - phenomenological theory, 9:23, 24
 - stress-strain relationships, 9:24, 25
 - swelling and gel collapse, 9:25–27
 - theory vs. experiment, 9:27, 28
- Elasticizers
 - polychloroprene latex applications, 3:79
- Elastin
 - role in extracellular matrix, 6:382
- Elastin chains, 9:31
- Elastin-like polypeptides (ELPs), 11:434
- Elastin-like proteins, 6:398–403, 423
- Elastin-mimetic hybrid polymers (EMHPs), 11:434, 435
- Elastohydrodynamic (EHL) lubrication, 13:517
- Elastomer, 9:1
- Elastomer-modified epoxy resins, 5:322, 323
- Elastomeric adhesive formulations, 6:388
- Elastomeric adhesives
 - adhesives for wood composites, 15:290
- Elastomeric block polymers, 13:283
- Elastomeric composites
 - NEXAFS, 15:400–403
- Elastomeric fibers, 5:768–782
- Elastomeric network, structural features of, 4:644, 645, 9:1–36
- Elastomeric radial block copolymers, 7:321
- Elastomeric stereoblock polypropylene, 13:106
- Elastomeric vulcanizates
 - butyl rubber, 2:364, 365
- Elastomers, 5:684–686, 685
 - antioxidant applications, 1:712–714
 - commercial overview of metallocene-based, 8:139, 140
 - cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:233
 - extension of, 4:646
 - fluorocarbon, 6:161–172
 - IUPAC nomenclature for selected, 12:206
 - versus metals, 4:644, 645
 - nuclear magnetic resonance imaging, 9:299–309
 - open-pot analysis, 5:754
 - phosphazenes, 11:105
 - physical properties (table), 12:207
 - polymeric chains in, 4:642
 - for rubber compounding, 12:204–217
 - Schallamach waves, 13:513
 - shape-memory polymers as, 12:410
 - stretching of, 4:645
 - thermogravimetric analysis (table), 13:819
 - thermoplastic, 6:322
- Elastomers, automotive, 1:803–806
 - fluoroelastomers and perfluoroelastomers, 1:806
 - processing of, 1:810, 811
 - properties of (table), 1:805
 - rubber compounding for, 1:810
 - rubber molding for, 1:810, 811
 - saturated, 1:805, 806
 - thermoplastic, 1:805
 - vulcanized, 1:805
- Elastomers, in belting, 2:70, 71
- Elastomers, thermoplastic, 14:133–158
 - applications, 14:148–157
 - commercial production, 14:144–148
 - economic aspects, 14:148
 - elastomer phase, 14:141, 142
 - glass transition and crystal melting temperatures, 14:141
 - hard phase, 14:142
 - hard phase proportion, 14:140
 - health and safety factors, 14:157
 - molecular weight, 14:139
 - reprocessing, 14:157, 158
 - structure, 14:134–137
 - structure-property relationships, 14:137–142
 - synthesis, 14:142, 143
 - trade names of styrenic, 14:150
- Elastomers/rubber cross-linking, 4:64, 65
 - choice of modes of, 4:64
 - modes of, 4:64
 - modified sulfur vulcanization system, 4:68–71
 - stages and kinetics of, 4:64–67
 - sulfur vulcanization, 4:67, 68
 - vulcanization without sulfur, 4:71–73
- Electrets, 1:95, 4:737, 738
- Electric breakdown strength, 4:699, 700
- Electric breakdown time (table), under discharge, 4:698
- Electric breakdown, 4:679–704
 - arc resistance, 4:704
 - causes of, 4:681–699
 - corona tests for, 4:700–702
 - definition, 4:738
 - discharge-dependent breakdown, 4:680, 681
 - electrical discharge (corona) and, 4:689, 690

- electrical treeing, 4:681, 690
- electric breakdown strength, 4:699, 700
- electric strength, variability in, 4:696–699
- frequency, effect of rise in, 4:693
- geometry of plastics and, 4:681–684
- intrinsic breakdown, 4:680
- measurement techniques for, 4:699–704
- moisture degradation and, 4:693, 694
- physical defect caused, 4:680
- surface arcs (arc resistance) and, 4:695, 696
- temperature and, 4:690–692
- thermal aging and, 4:692, 693
- thermal breakdown, 4:680
- thickness and spacing, 4:684–688
- time and, 4:688, 689
- tracking from moisture and contamination, 4:694, 695
- tracking tests for, 4:703, 704
- wet-treeing test for, 4:702, 703
- Electric dipole transition moment, 5:40, 41
- absorbance and, 5:54
- degenerate transitions with, 5:44
- from in-phase coupling of transitions, 5:48
- nondegenerate coupled oscillator CD and, 5:46
- orientation of, 5:53
- Electric double layer
- colloids, 3:449, 450
- Electric-field-induced Birefringent materials, 9:759, 761
- Electric field poling, and optical loss, 5:103
- Electric field, in piezoelectric materials, 9:780–782
- Electric spin interactions, in NMR, 9:241, 242
- Electric strength
- definition, 4:738
- frequency effect on, 4:692
- intrinsic (table), 4:689
- moisture effect on, 4:694
- short-time, 4:686
- temperature effect on, 4:692, 691
- variability in, 4:696–699
- Electrical admittance, 4:481
- Electrical applications
- of LCPs, 7:574, 575
- for polyamide plastics, 10:292
- for polyketones, 10:666, 667
- Electrical conductivity
- typical insulators, semiconductors, metals, and electrically active polymers, 4:743
- Electrical discharge (corona) and, 4:689, 690
- Electrical field gradient field flow fractionation (EFFF), 2:735
- Electrical industry, chlorosulfonated polymers in, 5:482
- Electrical insulation
- cellular polymers, 2:545, 546
- silicone application, 12:465
- Electrical laminates
- epoxy resin applications, 5:401, 402
- Electrical product recycling, 11:671
- Electrical properties, of polymers, 4:674–739
- a-c characteristics of plastics, 4:714–737
- ASTM test methods and specifications for (table), 4:676
- characterization methods, 2:755
- dissipation factor, 4:678
- electric breakdown, 4:679–704. *See also* Electric breakdown
- electrical insulation of plastics, 4:674, 675
- engineering thermoplastics, 5:209, 210, 215, 216
- molecular modeling, 8:619
- nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, 10:243
- Ohm's law, 4:675
- PET and PEN films, 10:506
- piezoelectric effect and electrets, 4:737, 738
- poly(*p*-phenylenevinylene), 13:295
- polyamide plastics, 10:276
- polysilanes, 11:161, 162
- polysulfones, 11:193
- power loss, 4:678
- relative dielectric constant, 4:678
- relative loss index, 4:678
- resistance, conductance, 4:704–714
- resistivity (table), 4:677
- silicone fluids, 12:490
- silicone rubbers, 12:499
- static charge and triboelectrification, 4:738
- test methods, 13:769, 770, 779, 780
- theoretical aspects of, 4:675–679
- xylylene polymers, 15:426–428
- Electrical tapes, 11:291
- Electrical treeing, 4:681, 690
- Electrically active polymers, 4:741–774
- applications, 4:766–775
- conjugated ladder polymers, 4:757, 758
- conjugation and conduction, 4:759, 760
- doping, 4:762–764
- properties, 4:764, 765
- synthesis, 4:743–760
- transport theory, 4:760–764
- Electrically charged membranes, 7:746
- Electrically conducting polymers, 4:453
- Electrically conductive adhesives (ECA), 3:646–648
- advantages of, 3:647
- Electrically conductive blacks, 2:435, 439
- applications, 2:459, 460
- Electrically stimulated controlled release technology, 3:753, 754
- Electro-Magnetic Brush (EMB) Technology, 3:254
- Electro-optic Birefringent materials, 9:759
- Electro-optic response, 9:751
- Electroactive polymers, 6:416
- acoustic properties, 1:94
- Electrochemical etching, 7:763
- Electrochemical polymerization, 7:204
- X-ray photoluminescence spectroscopy, 7:204
- Electrochemical potential values (table), for metals, 3:667
- Electrochromic device, 4:791
- electrically active polymers for, 4:767–769
- Electrochromic polymers, 4:789–809
- based on transition metal coordination complexes, 4:791–797
- conducting, 4:798–808
- viologen, 4:797, 798
- Electrochromism, 4:797–769, 789, 790
- Electrocoat paint, 7:779, 780
- Electrocopolymerization, 5:133, 134

- Electrode sensor geometries, *13*:853, 854
- Electrodes, in dielectric-heating system, *4*:472–474
 dispersed-field electrode system, *4*:473, 474
 parallel-plate electrodes, *4*:472, 473
 stray-field system, *4*:473
- Electrodialysis, *5*:834, 835, 835, 7:745, 775, 786–788
- Electroinitiated polymerization, *11*:514
- Electrokinetics
 colloids, *3*:449–451
- Electroluminescence, *4*:766
 polysilanes, *11*:161
- Electroluminescent polymers, *7*:516–519
- Electrolytes, in emulsion polymerization, *5*:175
- Electromagnetic interference testing, *13*:780
- Electromagnetic radiation
 carbocationic polymerization initiation by, *2*:398, 399
 degradation by high energy, *4*:287–290
 initiation by, *6*:860–862
- Electromagnetic test methods
 CFRP laminates, *9*:109
 electrical conductivity measurements, *9*:109
 fractoluminescence, *9*:109, 110
 giant magnetoresistance (GMR), *9*:109
 superconducting quantum interference devices (SQUID), *9*:109
- Electromechanical coupling coefficient, *9*:781
- Electron beam curing of rubber, *4*:72
- Electron-beam processing
 polystyrene, *13*:244, 245
 thermosets, *14*:208–210
- Electron configuration, *3*:603, 602
- Electron confinement, *8*:751
- Electron-deficient metal alkyls, in styrene polymerization, *13*:225
- Electron diffraction, *2*:750, 751
- Electron microprobe analyzer
 fiber forensics applications, *6*:186
 forensics applications, *6*:179
 paint forensics applications, *6*:189
- Electron microscopy, *2*:750, 751
 for investigating micromechanical properties, *8*:471, 473
 of LDPE gel, *5*:533
 measuring rubber particle size with, *13*:251
 polymer interpenetrating networks, *7*:115–118
- Electron nuclear double resonance (ENDOR), *5*:9–11
- Electron paramagnetic resonance, *7*:533
- Electron scattering, for investigating micromechanical properties, *8*:473, 474
- Electron spectroscopy for chemical analysis (ESCA)
 forensics applications, *6*:179
 surface analysis applications, *13*:469
- Electron spin resonance (ESR) spectroscopy, *2*:753, *5*:2, 3
 anisotropic *g* and hyperfine interaction, *5*:3, 4
 chain propagation studies, *11*:517
 double resonance methods, *5*:9–11
 isotropic hyperfine analysis, *5*:4
 line shape analysis for nitroxide spin probes, *5*:4–8
 multifrequency and high field, *5*:7, 8
 pulsed studies in ionically end-functionalized block copolymers, *5*:21–27
 spatially resolved degradation from 1-D and 2-D spectral-spatial ESRI, *5*:27–33
 spin probes in ion-containing polymers, *5*:15–21
 stationary polymerization, *11*:585–587
 time domain methods, *5*:8, 9
- Electron spin resonance (ESR), *5*:1–35, 7:533
 for composition and structure determination, *13*:760, 761
 investigating micromechanical properties via, *8*:476
- Electron spin resonance imaging, *5*:2, 11–15
 with field gradients, *5*:13, 14
 intensity profiling from 1-D, *5*:14, 15
 line shape profiling from 2-D spectral-spatial, *5*:15
- Electronic dichroism, *5*:39–60
 Beer-Lambert law, *5*:40
 circular dichroism, *5*:39, 40
 linear dichroism, *5*:39, 40
- Electronic electrooptic chromophores, *5*:94
- Electronic Kerr materials, *5*:94
- Electronic materials
 polyester film application, *10*:509
- Electronic noses
 electrically active polymers for, *4*:771
- Electronic packaging, *5*:62–89. *See also* Stress buffer coatings (SBCs)
 hierarchy in, *5*:62, 63
 polymers in, *5*:63–90
- Electronic packaging materials, engineering uses for, *5*:64
- Electronic Pockels effect, *5*:93
- Electronic polyimides, *5*:68, 69
- Electronic product recycling, *11*:671
- Electronic tongues
 electrically active polymers for, *4*:771
- Electronics
 polysulfones in, *11*:201
- Electrooptic coefficient, *5*:95
- Electrooptic materials, stability of, *5*:105, 106
- Electrooptic operation, *5*:93
- Electrooptical applications, *5*:93–114
 bandwidth, *5*:102
 commercialization and cost, *5*:112, 113
 devices, *5*:108–112
 electrooptic activity, *5*:96–101
 future prognosis, *5*:113
 general theoretical principles, *5*:93–96
 mechanical properties, *5*:107
 optical loss, *5*:103–105
 processing and integration, *5*:107, 108
 related nomenclature, *5*:113, 114
 stability, *5*:105–107
- Electrophilic aromatic substitution
 in carbocationic polymerization, *2*:409
- Electrophilic substitution reactions
 lignin, *7*:526, 527
- Electrophoresis
 for molecular weight distribution determination, *8*:674
- Electropolymerization, *5*:118–140
 on carbon fiber and HOPG, *5*:134–140
 conjugated polymer doping, *5*:120
 electrocopolymerization, *5*:133, 134
 enzyme immobilization, *5*:120–124
 heteroaromatics, *5*:124, 125
 nonconducting polymers, *5*:119
 polyanilines, *5*:130–132

- poly(*p*-phenylenevinylene), 5:129, 130
 polypyrroles, 5:125, 126
 polythiophenes, 5:126–129
 in water, 5:132, 133
- Electropolymerized DC-polymer, 6:353
- Electrospinnability, 5:153
- Electrospinning, 5:144–160
 associated process, 5:145, 146
 associated process-dynamics, 5:153, 154
 devices, 5:150–153, 151
 devices-novel, 5:152, 153
 inorganic nanofibers, manufacture of, 5:158
 of fluids, in fibers, 5:153–155
 of polyacrylonitrile, 5:158
 of polymers, 5:152
 of synthetic polymers, 5:158
 physical activity, 5:147, 148
 solution, 5:152
 technology, 5:144, 145
- Electrospinning jet, 5:145, 146, 146, 153
 evolution of, 5:146, 146
 physical behavior, 5:147, 148
 fluid properties, 5:148
 terminal radius, 5:150
- Electrospray ionization (ESI) method, 7:703
 as soft ionization methods, 7:704, 705
- Electrospray mass spectroscopy (EMS), 2:739
- Electrospraying, 5:144, 8:414, 415
- Electrospun fibers, 5:145, 153
 applications, 5:156–160
 collagen fibers, 5:157
 as drug release agents, 5:159
 doping of, 5:159
 pyrolysis of, 5:158
 size and shape of, 5:153–156
- Electrospun mats, 5:157
 mechanical properties, 5:158
- Electrospun polymer fibers, morphology of, 13:424
 solvent nature and composition, 13:425
- Electrospun polymeric nanofiber mats, 5:158
- Electrospun products, 5:156–158
- Electrostatic charge repulsion, 5:148, 149
 conducting modes, 5:148, 149
- Electrostatic fiber spinning. *See* Electrospinning
- Electrostatic field impedimetric sensor, 8:355, 356
- Electrostatic fluidized-bed coating, 3:251
- Electrostatic forces, 8:640
 colloids, 3:451
- Electrostatic interaction, 9:332
 release agents and, 11:703
- Electrostatic layer-by-layer (ELBL), 5:274
- Electrostatic priming, 3:283
- Electrostatic spray coating, 3:231, 251–253
- Electrostatic stabilization
 latexes, 7:459, 460
 polymer dispersions, 6:649, 650, 652, 654
- Ellipsometry, 1:368, 447, 9:748, 763, 764, 10:734
- Elmendorf test, 5:576
- Elongatable carbonaceous fiber, 6:712–714
- Elongation-at-break
 of a fiber, 10:241
- Elongational viscosity, 15:108
- Elsinan
 biodegradable, 2:105
- Eluent selection, in size exclusion chromatography,
 3:113, 114
- Elution curves, 8:360
- Elution temperature, for ethylene polymers, 5:545
- EMA. *See* Poly(ethylene-co-methacrylic acid) (EMA)
- Emanation thermal analysis, 13:765
- Embossing
 films, 5:822–824
- Embrittlement
 and degradation, 4:251
- EMI shielding
 composite foams, 3:512
- Emissions. *See also* VOC emissions
 acrylonitrile, 1:272
- Emulsification, 8:416
 methods, 8:425
 of monomers, 5:164
 energy input, 5:192
- Emulsifier-free emulsion polymerization, 9:641
- Emulsifier micelles, 5:164, 165
 depletion of, 5:189
- Emulsifiers, 14:774
 heterogenous polymerization stabilization, 6:640–652
 in heterophase polymerization, 6:599–603
 in PVC production, 14:747
- Emulsion copolymerization, 5:176–179
 process strategies, 5:180, 181
- Emulsion copolymers, 5:186
- Emulsion degradation, 6:626–630
- Emulsion-free terpolymerization
 applications, 5:185
- Emulsion homopolymerization, 5:179
- Emulsion paints, 5:185
- Emulsion polymerization (EP), 1:167, 2:724, 5:163–196,
 7:402–416, 8:403, 14:419. *See also* Emulsion
 polymers; Inverse emulsion polymerization
 acrylonitrile, 1:239, 275
 applications, 5:164, 165, 185, 186
 characteristic particle size, 6:597, 598
 chloroprene, 3:44, 45, 5:189, 190
 compartmentalization effects, 7:409
 CSTRs, 5:189
 of acrylic elastomers, 1:178, 179
 heterophase polymerization initiators, 6:620–625
 heterophase polymerization particle size control,
 6:625–631
 heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
 heterophase polymerization techniques with
 continuous fluid phases, 6:619
 heterophase recipes, 6:616–618
 heterophase technique, 6:582
 ingredients, 5:174, 175
 instantaneous MWDs, 7:415
 kinetics, 5:165
 latexes, 7:457
 living radical polymerization, 7:667, 668
 Poisson distributions, 7:405, 406
 monomer partitioning, 5:176
 phases of, 5:163
 plants, 5:187, 188
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:715
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:743–754
 polybutadiene, 2:318, 319
 principles, 5:165, 166

- pseudo-bulk behavior, 7:408, 411
 pseudo-bulk equation, 7:414
 pseudo-first-order termination rate coefficient, 7:410
 rate per growing particle, 5:170, 171
 reactor types, 5:187, 188
 SAN copolymers, 1:292–294
 silicones, 12:477
 Smith-Ewart equations, 7:403–405, 411
 Smith-Ewart model, 7:411–413
 solution SBR process contrasted, 13:274–276
 stabilization of heterogenous, 6:640–652
 styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:270, 272
 in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:51–54
 three phases of, 13:270, 271
 vinyl acetate polymers, 14:662–665
 Emulsion polymerization reactions-Raman spectroscopy, 14:406
 Emulsion polymers, 1:162, 5:186
 acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:163
 alkali-soluble, 1:165
 Emulsion process, for ABS polymers, 1:322–324
 Emulsion terpolymerization, 5:179
 Emulsions
 applications, 3:458, 459
 colloids, 3:437, 447
 latex, 7:457
 EN, 13:432, 2:75
 Enantioselective polymerization. *See also*
 Stereoselective polymerization
 Encapsulated ammonium polyphosphate, 8:398
 Encapsulated nanoparticles, 8:430
 Encapsulation
 epoxy resin applications, 5:405–408
 Encapsulation phenomenon, in multiphase systems, 3:379–383
 Encapsulation processes, 8:378, 379, 382, 388
 flow diagram of, 8:379, 381
 Encapsulation resins, 5:65, 85–89
 Encapsulation technologies, 8:384, 389
Encyclopedia of Polymer Science, 7:714
 polymerization, 15:413–415
 threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
 End-capped C₆₀-polymers (EC-polymers), 6:342
 End-capped polymers, 6:341–343
 End-functional polymers, 13:589–591
 ω -functionalization route, 11:733
 RAFT polymerization, 11:732–734
 α -functionalization approach, 11:732
 End functionalized chains
 anionic polymerization, 1:598
 polybutadiene, 2:316
 End-functionalized polymers, synthesis of, 5:250
 initiator method, 5:250, 251
 terminator method, 5:251, 252
 End group analysis
 for average molar mass determination, 2:741
 dendrimers by neutron scattering, 9:56–58
 number-average molecular weight determination, 8:663–665
 End-linked elastomers, 9:3
 End-linked Polymer Networks, GTP, 6:540
 Endothermic overshoot, 1:458
 Endotoxins, 2:149
 Endurance
 xylylene polymers, 15:428
 Energetics
 in gasophase, 6:50, 51
 in gas phase combustion, 6:39–41
 Energy balance, 6:299
 Energy conservation
 high performance fiber applications, 6:726, 727
 Energy dispersive x-ray analysis
 forensics applications, 6:179
 Energy dispersive x-ray scanning, 6:296
 Energy-release rate
 in fracture, 6:301–304
 relation to stress-intensity factor, 6:307–309
 Engineered wood products, 15:298
 Engineering alloys and blends
 mixed waste streams, 11:670, 671
 Engineering polymers, 5:201, 202
 Engineering SSP polyamides, 12:701
 Engineering strain, 15:451
 Engineering stress, 15:451–453
 Engineering thermoplastics, 5:200–220
 chemical resistance of, 5:211, 217
 defined, 5:200–202
 electrical properties of, 5:208, 209
 future of, 5:218
 history of, 5:203, 204
 interpolymer competition among, 5:212–217
 mechanical properties of, 5:210, 211
 price of, 5:213, 214
 processing of, 5:211, 212
 producers and trade names of (table), 5:205, 206
 properties of, 5:212
 related articles concerning, 5:218
 rheological properties of, 5:209, 211
 tensile strength *versus* HDT of, 5:216
 thermal properties of, 5:208–210
 types of, 5:201, 202
 Engineering thermoplastics data sheets, WWW sites containing, 5:214
 Enhanced oil recovery, polyacrylamides for, 1:140, 141
 Enhanced permeability and retention (EPR) effect, 4:307
 Enroachment, 1:578
 Entangled polymer melts, behavior of, 15:106–111
 Entanglement, 8:479, 480
 polymer chain dynamics of, 15:103, 104
 rubber-like elasticity and, 4:667, 668
 Entanglement density, influence of, 8:481
 Entanglement network, 15:92
 Entanglement segment, in DE model, 15:130, 131
 Enthalpy, 14:75–77
 Enthalpy change, 4:651
 Enthalpy of gasification components
 for PMMA, 6:50
 for polyethylene, 6:50
 for polystyrene, 6:50, 50
 of polymers, 6:51–53
 Enthalpy recovery, 1:458–461. *See also* Relaxation
 Enthalpy relaxation, 1:458
 Entropic springs, in Burgers model, 15:83, 84
 Entropy, 4:651, 14:75–77

- and monomer structure in radical polymerization, 11:518–521
- Environment. *See also* Outdoor environment and chloroprene polymers, 3:79, 80
effect of blowing agents on, 13:213
and scratch velocity, 12:331, 332
styrene-butadiene rubber and, 13:278
- Environmental agents, 6:334
- Environmental aging
cellular polymers, 2:540
- Environmental crack growth, 6:334
- Environmental degradation, of styrene polymers, 13:209, 210
- Environmental effects tests, 13:770, 775–778
- Environmental effects, fracture and, 6:332–335
- Environmental issues
acrylonitrile as, 1:272
cellular material manufacture, 2:558
LDPE, 5:534–536
lyocell process, 2:701, 702
phenolic resins, 9:598–600
poly(vinyl chloride), 14:755
powder coating methods, 3:256, 257
viscose process, 2:700, 701
water-soluble polymers, 1:165
- Environmental Protection Agency (EPA), 8:18
plastics coding system and terminology, 11:660
- Environmental protection, application of CD polymers in, 4:201
heavy metal ions, removal of, 4:201–203
organic contaminants, removal of, 4:203–206
- Environmental scanning electron microscopes (ESEM), 9:109
- Environmental stress cracks, 6:291–294, 332
polysulfones, 11:193–195
and yield, 15:495
- Environmental-stress crazing, 5:741
- Environmental stress-crack resistance (ESCR), 5:497, 502
LDPE, 5:532
LLDPE, 5:556
polysulfones, 11:193–195
- Environmentally degradable plastics, 2:72–96
blends and composites, 2:87–91
laboratory studies, 2:91–94
markets, 2:75, 76
petroleum-based, 2:76–80
renewable sources, 2:80–87
test methods, 2:74
- Enzymatic degradation, of PHAs, 10:102–104
- Enzymatic polymerization, 5:221–280
applications, 5:221
basic concept, 5:223–225
definition, 5:221
enzymes and enzymatic reactions, 5:222, 223
polyaromatics synthesis, 5:264–276
polycarbonates synthesis, 5:261–264
polyesters synthesis, 5:237–261
polysaccharides synthesis, 5:225–236
vinyl polymers synthesis, 5:276–279
- Enzymatic ring opening polymerization, 12:150, 151
- Enzyme-catalyzed polymerization, 7:203
- Enzyme immobilization
electropolymerization, 5:120–124
Enzyme-substrate relationship, for enzymatic reactions, 5:222, 223
- Enzymes, 8:457, 458
classification of, 5:221
coating of, 8:458
conjugation of, 8:459
mimic reduction, 8:449
reaction mechanism, 5:221, 222
- EP kinetics, 7:402
- EP rates, 7:403
- EPA. *See* Environmental Protection Agency
- EPDM (ethylene-propylene-diene terpolymer), 6:513
- EPDM polymers, 5:563
- EPDM rubbers, 2:729, 5:482, 7:328
- EPDM. *See* Ethylene-propylene-diene-modified rubber copolymers (EPDM); Ethylene-propylene-diene monomer (EPDM) elastomers
- Epichlorohydrin
epoxy resins from, 5:294, 299, 300
liquid epoxy resins from, 5:300–302
physical properties, 12:207
preparation, 5:302
for rubber compounding, 12:204, 214
solid epoxy resins from, 5:305–307
- Epichlorohydrin rubber, 1:806
- Epimerization
of polyketones, 10:652
- Epitaxy
polymer single crystals, 12:390, 391
- Epoxide equivalent mass, 5:301
- Epoxide equivalent weight, 5:301, 331, 332
- Epoxide polymerization, 11:315
catalysts for (table), 11:325
- Epoxides
copolymers of, 11:336
homopolymers of, 11:311
- Epoxidized soya oil/ESO, 6:576
- Epoxidized vegetable oils, 5:324–327
- Epoxies, 5:293
elastic constants, 1:90
fatigue chemistry effect, 5:734
fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
sound speeds, 1:85
thermosetting powder coatings, 3:237, 238, 241–243
- Epoxy acrylates, 5:329
- Epoxy adhesives, 1:417
adhering to aluminum, 1:377, 378
- Epoxy-based composite tougheners, hyperbranched polymers as, 6:794
- Epoxy-based floor toppings, 6:126
- Epoxy-based thermoplastics, 5:312, 313
- Epoxy composites, 5:399, 400, 11:694
- Epoxy cresol novolac resins, 5:314, 316
- Epoxy diluents
average U.S. price, 5:299
- Epoxy esters, 1:498, 499, 3:334, 335, 5:327–331
- Epoxy film adhesives, 1:417
- Epoxy flexibilizers, polysulfide, 11:177, 178
- Epoxy-modified PE, reaction extrusion, 11:648
- Epoxy molding compounds, 5:86
- Epoxy nanocomposites, 5:381
- Epoxy novolac resins, 5:314–317

- Epoxy phenol novolac resins, 5:314
 health and safety factors, 5:409, 410
- Epoxy-phenolic adhesives, 1:425
- Epoxy phosphate esters, 5:330, 331
- Epoxy-polyester hybrid powder coatings, 3:243, 244
- Epoxy-polyester powder coatings, 5:389
- Epoxy powder coatings, 5:388
- Epoxy resins, 5:293–351, 347–406, 9:678, 14:166, 167
 catalytic cure, 5:358–362
 characterization of uncured, 5:331–334
 classes of and manufacturing processes, 5:299, 300
 coatings applications, 5:385–398
 coreactive curing agents, 5:337–358
 cross linking of, 4:81–83
 curing, 5:334–337
 curing process, 5:368–376
 cycloaliphatic epoxy resins and epoxidized vegetable oils, 5:324–327
 economic aspects, 5:296–300
 epoxy/curing agent stoichiometric ratio, 5:366
 epoxy esters and derivatives, 5:327–331
 formulation development, 5:362–368
 formulation modifiers, 5:376–385
 halogenated epoxy resins, 5:312, 313
 health and safety factors, 5:408, 409
 industry overview, 5:296–298
 inversion, 7:473
 liquid epoxy resins, 5:300–305
 monofunctional glycidyl ethers and aliphatic glycidyl ethers, 5:323, 324
 multifunctional epoxy resins, 5:314–320
 polysulfide curing with, 11:171
 relaxation exponent, 6:369
 selection, 5:365, 366
 solid epoxy resins, 5:305–312
 specialty epoxy resins, 5:320–323
 as structural adhesives, 1:416–419
 structural applications, 5:398–409
 structure-property relationship, 5:363, 364
 structures of, 5:88
- Epoxy resins, cellular
 expandable formulations, 2:519
- Epoxy vinyl ester composites, 5:400
- Epoxy vinyl esters, 5:330
 average U.S. price, 5:299
- 3,4-Epoxy cyclohexanecarboxylate methyl ester, 5:326
- 3',4'-Epoxy cyclohexylmethyl-3,4-epoxy cyclohexanecarboxylate, 5:326
 viscosity, 5:324, 325
- 3,4-Epoxy cyclohexyloxirane, 5:326
- EPS. *See* Expandable polystyrene
 hyperbranching in, 6:793, 794
- Equal channel angular extrusion, 12:695–697
- Equation of state
 acoustic properties, 1:70
 molecular modeling, 8:619
- Equilibrium chain folding, 2:203
- Equilibrium char fraction, 6:45
- Equilibrium constants, 8:165
- Equilibrium modulus, of solid-like polymers, 15:155
- Equilibrium statistical thermodynamics, 13:76, 77
- Erosion-based controlled release technology, 3:750, 751
- Erosion of polymers (table), from surface discharge, 4:697
- Escherichia coli*, 10:106, 109
 expression plasmid for genetic polymer synthesis, 6:387–389
- ESI. *See* Ethylene-styrene interpolymers (ESI), 6:385
- ESPA (European Stabilizer Producers Association), 6:582
- ESPI, 9:106
 interferometric methods, 9:106
 Moir'e methods, 9:106
 optical and electronic equipment, 9:105
 structured light methods comprise, 9:106
- ESR. *See* Electron spin resonance (ESR)
- Essential oil, preparation of, cyclodextrin polymers in, 4:208–210
- Essential work of fracture (EWF), 6:315–318
- Esterification equivalent
 epoxy resins, 5:334
- Et-Nb copolymers. *See* Ethylene-norbornene (Et-Nb) copolymers
- Etchants. *See also* Reactive ion etching (RIE) techniques
- Etching. *See also* Acid etching; Chemical etching; Electrochemical etching
 acid, 1:376
 chemical, 1:377
 electrochemical, 7:762
- Ethane
 molecular volumes (table), 14:301
- Ethanol
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 physicochemical properties, 8:20
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Ethene, 10:650
- Ethene-vinyl acetate copolymers, 8:166
- Ether bond cleavage, in lignin, 7:529
- Ethyl acetate
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Ethyl acrylate
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
 as polyethylene comonomer, 5:517
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:632, –633
- Ethyl bromoacetate
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Ethyl ether
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- 2-Ethyl hexyl acrylate
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Ethyl iodoacetate
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Ethyl methacrylate
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674

- water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Ethyl peroxide
transfer coefficient to, 11:528
- Ethyl tribromoacetate
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Ethyl trichloroacetate
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- 3-Ethyl-3-hydroxymethyloxetane, 7:202
- 2-Ethyl-*p*-xylylene
threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
- Ethylbenzene, 8:391
- Ethylcellulose
applications, 2:665
economic aspects, 2:665
liquid crystals, 2:592
manufacture, 2:664, 665
properties, 2:663, 664
test methods, 2:665
- Ethylene. *See also* Polyethylene
anionic polymerization, 1:600
butadiene coproduction with, 2:297, 298
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
entropy, enthalpy, and ceiling temperature for polymerization, 15:420
heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
in LDPE chain termination, 5:525
metallocene-based copolymerization with α -olefins, 8:107–111
metallocene-based copolymerization with styrene, 8:127, 128
metallocene-based polymerization, 8:81–139, 135–140
monomer for rubber compounding, 12:204
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
transfer coefficient to, 11:526
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
Ziegler-Natta (co)polymerization catalysts, 15:508, 509
- Ethylene-acrylic
monomer for rubber compounding, 12:204
- Ethylene-acrylic elastomers, 5:419–427
acid condensate resistance, 5:424
adhesion, 5:426, 427
commercial forms, 5:420, 421
compressive stress relaxation of, 5:423, 424
curing of, 5:421
dynamic mechanical properties, 5:425
economic aspects of, 5:427
extrusion and calendaring, 5:426
flame resistance and smoke suppression, 5:425
fluid resistance, 5:422
heat resistance and aging properties, 5:421, 422
history, 5:419
low-temperature properties, 5:424, 425
mechanical properties, 5:422, 423
mixing of, 5:425, 426
molding of, 5:426
polymer composition, 5:420
polymer properties, 5:420–425
postcuring of, 5:426
processing of, 5:425–427
recent developments, 5:427
uses of, 5:427
- Ethylene acrylic elastomers, 5:419–427
- Ethylene and tetrafluoroethylene (ETFE) resins,
modified, 9:526–539
applications of, 9:538
bearing wear rate (table), 9:532
chemical resistance and hydrolytic stability of, 9:533
electrical properties of, 9:532, 533
fabrication of, 9:535, 536
forms of (table), 9:536
and glass-reinforced copolymer, 9:531, 532
health and safety, 9:538, 539
melting points of, 9:527
melt processing, 9:536, 537
physical and mechanical properties of, 9:530, 532
reactivity ratios of, 9:527
tefel, typical properties of (table), 9:530
thermodynamic properties of (table), 9:531
vacuum outgassing and permeability, 9:533, 534
- Ethylene carbonate
acrylic fibers solution spinning solvent, 1:241
- Ethylene copolymers, 5:429–441. *See also* Ethylene
applications, 5:439, 440
filler composites, 5:439
manufacture by solution polymerization, 5:431, 432
materials engineering aspects, 5:437–439
metallocene-catalyzed polymerizations, 5:429–431
terpolymerization, 5:431
- Ethylene cracker residue
feedstock for oil-furnace black process, 2:446
- Ethylene cyanohydrin process, commercial acrylonitrile
via, 1:267
- Ethylene dichloride
solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Ethylene glycol (EG), 4:214
- Ethylene glycol diacrylate (EGDA), 2:774
- Ethylene glycol dimethacrylate (EGDMA), 2:774
- Ethylene-isoprene alternating copolymer, 7:333, 334
- Ethylene-norbornene (Et-Nb) copolymers, 5:584–591
applications for, 5:590, 591
history of, 5:584
manufacturing of, 5:587
processing of, 5:587
properties of, 5:584–586
- Ethylene-octene rubber
for rubber compounding, 12:205
- Ethylene oxide (EO), 11:217, 220, 221
anionic polymerization, 1:622, 623
heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
polymerization, 5:454, 455
- Ethylene oxide polymers, 5:444–460
analytical and test methods, 5:456, 457
applications, 5:457–460
blends, 5:450, 451
economic aspects, 5:455
health and safety factors, 5:457
manufacture, 5:454, 455
specifications, standards, and quality control, 5:455, 456
- Ethylene oxide-isoprene (EO-I) diblock polymers, 7:322

- Ethylene oxide-isoprene-ethylene oxide (EO—I-EO) block copolymers, 7:322
sulfide block copolymers, 7:319, 320
- Ethylene polymers, 5:484–511, 515–541, 543–580. *See also* Polyethylene (PE)
HDPE, 5:484–511
structural differences among, 5:545, 546
- Ethylene production, 5:572
- Ethylene-propylene copolymer rubber (EPR), 11:354
- Ethylene-propylene-diene-modified rubber copolymers (EPDM), 5:557. *See also* EPDM
- Ethylene propylene diene monomer, 1:805, 4:73
- antioxidant applications, 1:713, 714
applications, 5:607–609
blends with polypropylene, 14:136, 156
compounding, 5:601, 602
cure system, 12:248, 249
elastomers, 5:593–597
from dicyclopentadiene and ethylidene norbornene, 4:233
gas-phase polymerization, 5:600
health and safety factors, 5:607
manufacture, 5:596–601
metallocene-based preparation, 8:126
physical properties, 12:207
processing, 5:602–606
slurry polymerization, 5:599, 600
solution polymerization, 5:597–599
vulcanizate properties, 5:607
Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:509
- Ethylene-propylene-diene terpolymer rubbers (EPDM), 7:328
- Ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:593–609, 14:136
applications, 5:607–609
commercial overview of, 8:139, 140
compounding, 5:601, 602
film properties, 5:806
health and safety factors, 5:607
manufacture, 5:596–601
NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
processing, 5:602–606
properties, 5:593–596
vulcanizate properties, 5:607
- Ethylene-propylene rubber, 11:354
in belting, 2:71
compounding, 12:210, 211
for rubber compounding, 12:205
for tire compounding, 12:254
- Ethylene-styrene interpolymers (ESI), 13:195
- Ethylene-styrene-propylene terpolymers, 5:431
- Ethylene-vinyl acetate copolymers
in controlled drug release system, 3:753
thermoforming, 14:126
- Ethylene-vinyl alcohol (EVOH) copolymers, 13:59, 62, 14:708
high barrier polymers, 2:35, 36
permeability humidity effect, 2:21
permeability temperature effect, 2:13
properties of barrier, 2:34
properties of barrier in blends with PE, 2:56, 57
- Ethylene, polymerization of, 12:565–567
- Ethylenediamine
solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Ethylenediaminetetraacetic acid (EDTA), 7:542
- 3,4-Ethylenedioxythiophene (EDOT), 5:275, 276
polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:750, 753
- Ethylensulfonic acid, 5:611–613
polymerization, 5:613, 614
properties, 5:613
- Ethyleneurea resins, 1:533, 534
- Ethylenimine (aziridiny), 1:511
- 2-Ethylhexyl acrylate
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- 2-Ethylhexyl methacrylate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
- Ethylidene norbornene
EPDM rubbers from, 4:233
- 5-Ethylidene-2-norbornene
ethylene-propylene elastomer monomer, 5:595
- Ethyllithium
anionic polymerization initiator, 1:605, 606
- Ethylsilicones, 12:467
- Ethyltriethoxysilane, 1:386
- Eucalyptus grandis*
cellulose for rayon manufacture from, 2:676
- Europe
plastics recycling, 11:659, 660
polyacrylamides in, 1:147, 148
- European Structural Integrity Society (ESIS), 6:317
- European Synchrotron Radiation Facility (ESRF)
- EVA. *See* Vinyl acetate (EVA, VA)
- Evaporation
films, 5:821
- Evaporative light scattering detector, 3:92
- Evidence, 6:174–177
- Evidence collection, 6:176, 177
- EVOH. *See* Ethylene-vinyl alcohol
- Evolved gas analysis (EGA), 2:743, 13:765
- Ewald summation, 8:589
- Exact graft copolymers, 6:505–507. *See also* Graft copolymers
- exafs. *See* Extended x-ray absorption spectroscopy (exafs)
- Excess heat, 5:192
- Exchange functional-correlation functional, 3:612
- Excited state quenchers, 14:479, 480
- Exciton coupling, CD and, 5:42–46
- Exciton diffusion length, 12:627
- Exfoliation, in inorganic-reinforced styrene polymers, 13:205, 206
- Exothermic polymerization reactions, 8:318
- Expandable formulations, 2:515–520
- Expandable polystyrene molding, 10:87
- Expanded-film membranes, 7:750, 751
- Expanded plastics, 2:511
- Expanded polystyrene, 2:552–554
manufacture of, 13:255
moderate barrier polymer, 2:49
- Expanded suspension polymerization, 13:603, 604
- Expanding heat release capacities, 6:78
- Expansion
in cellular materials, 2:512–514
- Explosives
cellulose nitrate applications, 2:609

- Extended dendrimer architecture, 6:384–386
- Extended Producer Responsibility, 11:675
- Extended x-ray absorption spectroscopy (exafs)
- Extenders
for tire compounding, 12:256
- Extensibility, maximum, 4:640
- Extension
of elastomers, 4:645, 646
fiber, 10:526
of networks cross-linked in the diluted state, 4:658, 659
simple, 4:656, 657
of swollen networks, 4:658
uniaxial, 4:639–641, 660, 661, 663
- Extension ratios, 4:666
- Extensional flow
in coating, 3:296
- Extensional modulus, 15:78–80
- Extensional rheometer, 12:10–13
- Extensional viscosity fixture (EVF), 12:12
- External antistatic agents, 3:552
- External coefficient of friction, 5:641
- External gas-assist injection molding, 7:8
- External lubricants, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756
- Extra tough polymer
thermoforming, 14:125
- Extracellular degradation, of PHAs, 10:103, 104
- Extraction fractionation, 6:234, 235
- Extraction, PHA and PHB, 10:107–109, 110
- Extractive drying, 8:389
- Extrudate swell, 5:670
- Extruded articles, important parameters for, 6:169, 170
- Extruded rigid foam, polystyrene, 13:254, 255
- Extruded rubber fiber, 5:771
- Extruder barrel, 5:621, 622
heating and cooling capability of, 5:623, 624
- Extruder drive, 5:629–631
- Extruder screw, 5:618–622
conveying along, 5:643
- Extruders, 10:71–77, 11:632–634
components of, 5:621–633
functional zones in, 5:640
melting in, 5:647–651
reactor, 11:632, 633
screws, 11:632
single screw, 3:495, 5:618, 619
twin screw, 3:473, 495, 5:618–620
types of, 5:618–620
vented, 5:668
- Extrusion, 3:495, 5:618–641. *See also* Coextrusion;
Film extrusion; Pultrusion
cast film, 5:570
chloroprene polymers, 3:67, 68
combination of materials in, 5:636–638
degassing in, 5:667–669
die forming in, 5:669–678
engineering thermoplastics, 5:212
ethylene-norbornene copolymers, 5:588
ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:604, 605
film forming processes, 10:77–82
films, 5:808–820
fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:171
LLDPE, 5:571
melt conveying in, 5:651–654
mixing in, 5:654–667
nylon, 10:288, 289
olefin fibers, 9:352–355
PCT, 4:217, 218
pearlescent pigments and, 3:472
PET and PEN films, 10:503, 504
polysulfones, 11:197
poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:712
propylene polymers, 11:404, 405
PVC, 14:757
PVDF, 15:69
solids conveying in, 5:641–647
solid-state, 12:685–698
styrene polymers, 13:247
tasks of, 5:640, 641
thermoplastic resin processing, 10:70, 71
Extrusion blow molding, 2:217, 218. *See also*
Coextrusion
coloring during, 3:496, 497
formulas in, 2:236, 237
for plastic bottle design, 2:273, 274
troubleshooting, 2:247–249
Extrusion blow-molding machines, 2:230–232
Extrusion coating, 3:281–283, 5:637, 688, 10:80, 81
LDPE, 5:541
low density copolymer resins for, 5:539
low density resin for, 5:537, 538
multilayer, 3:286
nonwoven fabrics, 9:232
Extrusion compounding lines, 5:638–640
Extrusion dies, 5:628, 629, 672
Extrusion-formed webs, 9:214
Extrusion-grade compound, fluorocarbon elastomer,
6:170
Extrusion lamination, 5:637, 638, 9:472
Extrusion lines, complete, 5:633–640
Extrusion-molded neck process, 2:233, 234
Extrusion operations, 11:630
Extrusion temperatures
LLDPE, 5:569
SAN resin, 1:297
Exxpro, 2:355, 356, 359
Eyring kinetic theory of fracture, 8:549
Eyring model
rate processes, 14:302
and yield, 15:462–464
f-block metallocenes, 8:100, 101
F-HEURs, nonlinear rheological behavior, 6:744, 745
FA-functionalized MPC-DMA diblock copolymers, 8:283
FA-MPC-DMA block copolymer-structure of, 8:283
FA-MPC30-DMA50 block copolymer, 8:283
FA-targeting agent, 8:284
Fabricating colloidosomes technique, 8:421
Fabrication
of polysulfones, 11:195–198
of styrene polymers, 13:246–249
of vinylidene fluoride polymers, 15:68–71
Fabrication techniques, thermoplastic, 11:197
Fabrics, 14:496
calendaring, 5:687, 688, 687
coating materials, 5:683

- coating of, 5:680
 construction of, 5:682
 finishing of, 5:682, 683
 processing of, 5:686, 687
- Fabry-Perot interferometry
 amorphous polymers, 1:549, 554
- Facilitated transport process, 7:777, 802, 803, 14:365, 366
- Failure
 of adhesive joints, 1:388–396
 as evidence, 6:176
 effects of physical aging on, 1:467
 from fatigue, 5:694, 695
 and impact resistance, 6:799, 800, 816
 model for, 5:705
 oxidative degradation effect, 4:279
 of plastics, 6:279
 probability of, 11:679, 680
- Failure modes, 6:299
- Falling-dart impact test, 6:809
- Falling-weight impact test, 2:749, 6:801, 806–809
- Fanning friction factor, 4:540
- Faraday rotators
 metal-filled nanocomposite application, 8:762
- Fast reaction kinetics, 4:55, 56
- Fastening, in ABS polymers, 1:333
- Fat-liquoring emulsions, 7:489
- Fatigue, 5:694–744
 damage initiation, 5:706–718
 effect of chemistry in homogeneous polymers, 5:732–736
 effect of diluents and plasticizers, 5:736–740
 effect of surface finish and modification, 5:740, 741
 effect of thermal history, 5:741, 742
 fractography, 5:730–732
 high cycle regime and polymer embrittlement, 5:701–703
 hysteretic heating and low cycle regime, 5:698–701
 Minor's law, 5:703, 704
 modeling studies, 5:703–706
 Paris Law, 5:720
 physical and morphological changes, 5:706–710
 polymer alloys, blends, and composites, 5:742–744
 in styrene polymers, 13:183, 184
 terminology, 5:695–698
 test methods, 5:695–698, 13:774
 and tire compounding, 12:258
 universal slopes equation, 5:704
- Fatigue behavior, 5:694–744
- Fatigue crack propagation, 5:719–732
 effects of physical aging on, 1:467
- Fatigue fracture, 6:603–605
 brittle, 6:291
 genuine ductile, 6:290
- Fatigue life, 5:701
- Fatigue loading conditions, ROMP-based reinforced polymer composite, 12:350
- Fatigue striations, 6:291
- Fatigue wear, 13:515, 516
- Fatty acid metal soaps, as release agents, 11:700, 702
- Fatty acids
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:427
- FDA colorants, 3:470
- FDA requirements
 for polysulfones, 11:199
- 6FDA-DAM/DABA
 CO₂/CH₄ transport properties, 8:5
 membranes, 8:6
- FDA. *See* Food and Drug Administration (FDA)
- FD&C food lake pigments, 3:487, 488
- Federal fire and flammability test standards, 6:86
- FeDRC complexes. *See* Iron dithiocarbamate (FeDRC) complexes
- Feed block coextrusion technique, 5:636
- Feed hopper
 of an extruder, 5:623
 design of, 5:642
- Feed housing, of an extruder, 5:622–624
- Feed preparation section, of cold SBR production, 13:272, 273, 275
- Feedblock systems, 3:377–379
 fixed feedblock geometry, 3:377, 378
 variable feedblock geometry, 3:377, 378
- Felting, 15:326
- Female forming, 14:112
- Fencing, 15:281
- FEP resin. *See* Perfluorinated ethylene-propylene (FEP) resin
- Fermentation
 in PHB manufacture, 10:110
- Fermi resonance, 14:592
- Ferroelectric monodomains, 5:754
 preparation of, 5:757
- Ferrocene-based polymers, 7:50–52
- Ferrocene dendrimers, 4:336
- 1,4-(1,1'-ferrocenediyl)
 1,3-butadiene, 8:191
- Ferrocenes, 7:55, 56, 8:81
- Ferrocenophanes, 7:56–59
- Ferrocenyl moiety, chemistry of, 7:51
- Ferroelectric crystals, 9:749
- Ferroelectric elastomers, elastic data retrieval, 5:756, 757
- Ferroelectric hysteresis, 5:748, 749, 751, 749
- Ferroelectric LC-elastomers (FLCE), 5:751, 752, 769
 elastomer properties, 5:755–757
 ferroelectric properties, 5:757–759
 free-standing films, 5:762
 one-pot hydrosilylation reaction, preparation through, 5:754, 755
 optical hysteresis, 5:757, 758
 piezoelectric properties, 5:761
 preparation of, 5:751, 752
 shape variation, 5:761
 sidegroup layers, 5:760, 761
 synthesis of, 5:751–754
- Ferroelectric liquid crystalline elastomers, 5:748–765
 AFM-imaging of thin films, 5:759–761
 characterization, 5:754, 755
 elastomer properties, 5:755–757
 ferroelectric properties, 5:757–759
 piezoelectric properties, 5:761–765
 properties, 5:755–764
 synthesis, 5:751–754
- Ferroelectric liquid crystals, 5:749–751
 bistable switching, 5:749, 750
 electric field, effect of, 5:762, 768

- Ferroelectric materials, 5:748, 749
- Ferroelectric polymers
 as dielectrically variable materials, 4:489
- Ferroelectric polysiloxanes, 5:751, 753
- Ferroelectricity, in semicrystalline polymers, 9:782
- Feynman-Kac formula, 13:79
- FFS packaging. *See* Form, fill, and seal (FFS) containers
- FG terminated polymer, 8:171
- Fiber architecture
 of composites, 11:688
- Fiber breakage, weak link principle of, 10:530
- Fiber composite materials, advanced, 11:688
- Fiber crimping
 acrylic fibers, 1:245
- Fiber diameter, effect on strength, 11:681
- Fiber extension, 10:526
- Fiber finishing, 10:254, 255
 silicone applications, 12:508–510
- Fiber flexibility, strength and, 11:682, 683
- Fiber friction, 10:523, 524
- Fiber geometry, PET, 10:517, 518
- Fiber length (*L*) fiber strength and, 11:685
- Fiber materials, properties of, 11:689
- Fiber-matrix adhesive bond, strength of, 11:687
- Fiber-matrix interface, 11:683
- Fiber processing, PTT in, 10:207
- Fiber-reinforced composites
 acoustic properties, 1:73
 surface treatment, 11:687, 688
- Fiber-reinforced foam, 3:499
- Fiber-reinforced panels, 14:782
- Fiber-reinforced plastic (FRP), 1:424, 8:504
- Fiber-reinforced polymers, 3:499
- Fiber spinning
 process control, 10:529–531
 Spandex, 5:771–780
 viscose rayon, 2:681–683
- Fiber spinning, of thermoplastics, 1:807, 808
- Fiber volume fraction, of composites, 11:688
- Fiberboard
 phenolic resin applications, 9:612
- Fibers, 5:680, 681. *See also* Industrial fibers;
 Microfibers; Polyamide fibers
 acrylic, 1:273
 additives to, 10:256, 257
 aramid, 10:229–232
 aromatic polyamide, 10:224–226
 bicomponent and biconstituent, 10:259, 260
 coloring and, 3:497, 498
 dye effect on properties, 10:258, 259
 as evidence, 6:175
 forensic analysis, 6:183–188
 grafting on, 1:286
 inextensible, 1:390, 391
 LCP, 7:575
 melt-spun, 7:766
 MPDI, 10:227, 228
 NEXAFS, 15:403
 ODA/PPTA, 10:228–232
 phenolic resin bonding applications, 9:612, 613
 polyketones, 10:667, 668
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:716
 PPTA, 10:228–232
 PPTA structure, 10:224, 225
 shape parameters of, 11:685
 solution-spun, 7:766
 staple, 10:253, 254
 statistical strength of, 11:684, 685
 tensile strength of, 11:684
- Fibers, elastomeric, 5:768–782
 applications, 5:780–782
 chemical composition, 5:769–771
 chemical properties, 5:779, 780
 economic aspects, 5:780
 manufacture, 5:772–779
 mechanical properties, 5:771, 772
 producers, 5:781
- Fibrillated acrylic fibers, 1:253
- Fibrillated crazes, 8:482, 484
- Fibrillation, 6:323
- Fibrils, in LCPs, 7:573, 574
- Fibrinogen
 biodegradable natural polymer, 2:106
- Fibrous layer, model construction of, 8:566
- Fick first law, 4:510, 9:377
- Fickian diffusion, in glassy polymers, 4:519
- Field assisted orientation, 12:303
- Field-emission scanning electron microscopy (FE-SEM), 5:228
- Field flow fractionation (FFF), 6:257–267
 for sample preparation for polymer characterization, 2:734, 735
- Field intensity programming, 6:259
- Filament-stretching rheometer (FSR), 12:11
- Filament winding
 composite materials, 3:517
 thermosetting resin processing, 10:90, 91
- Filament-winding machines. *See also* Pulforming
- Filaments
 alumina polycrystalline, 11:697
 HDPE use in, 5:510
- Filled composites, AFM imaging of, 1:772, 773
- Filled polyketone compounds, 10:663, 664
- Filled polymers, 5:788–793
 elastic constants, 1:90
 molecular modeling, 8:602, 603
 sound speed, 1:85
- Filled rubbers, 6:322
- Filled silicone networks, 12:486–489
- Filled vinyl floors, 6:107
- Filled vinyl tiles, 6:123, 124
- Filler materials, 5:88–90
- Fillers, 5:784–801
 butyl rubber, 2:364, 365
 economic aspects, 5:800
 for epoxy resins, 5:377, 378
 ethylene copolymers, 5:439
 films, 5:807
 flexible polyurethane, 2:548
 fluorocarbon elastomer, 6:167
 health and safety factors, 5:800, 801
 latexes, 7:462
 mixing in extruders, 10:71
 physical properties, 5:785–788
 for polychloroprene latex, 3:77

- for polyester films, 10:508, 509
- poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756
- for rubber, 12:217–230
- in SBR processing, 13:276, 277
- and scratch behavior, 12:332, 333
- silica-to-rubber coupling agents, 12:184–191
- spherical fillers from phenolic resins, 9:617, 618
- styrenic thermoplastic elastomers, 14:149
- thermosetting powder coatings, 3:240, 241
- for tire compounding, 12:255
- types, 5:793–800
- use with UV stabilizers, 14:452
- UV stabilizing effects, 14:481
- Fillers, in rubber compounding, 3:553, 554
 - active and inactive fillers, 3:553
- Film casting, PPTA, 10:223, 224
- Film defects, 3:358–364
 - crawling and cratering, 3:360–362
 - floating and flooding, 3:362
 - foaming, 3:363, 364
 - leveling problem, 3:358, 359
 - popping, 3:363
 - sagging, 3:359, 360
 - wrinkling, 3:362, 363
- Film die, 5:635
- Film extraction, 6:236
- Film extrusion
 - LLDPE, 5:569, 570
 - screw design for, 5:588
- Film-forming ability of release agents, 11:701
- Film-forming shell material, 8:385
- Film lines
 - using chill roll casting, 5:635, 636
 - using the roll stack process, 5:634, 635
- Film properties
 - latexes, 7:461
- Film thermal stability, 5:67
- Films, manufacture, 5:803–823
 - additives, 5:805–808
 - biaxial orientation, 5:816–820
 - calendering, 5:821, 822
 - casting, 5:813, 814
 - coagulation, 5:821
 - coating, 5:822
 - coextrusion, 5:811–813
 - embossing, 5:822–824
 - evaporation, 5:821
 - extrusion-based processes, 5:808–820
 - finishing operations, 5:822–824
 - metallization, 5:824
 - rheology, 5:808
 - rolling, 5:821
 - solvent-solution casting, 5:820
 - surface treatment, 5:824
 - tensilizing, 5:820
 - uniaxial orientation, 5:814–816
- Films, polyimides, 10:634, 635
- Films. *See also* Blown film; Coextruded films;
 - Copolymer films; Langmuir-Blodgett films;
 - Photographic films; Polyethylene film; Polyester films; Polystyrene film; Polyurethane film;
 - Poly(vinyl fluoride) film; Thin films
- aramid, 10:233
- aromatic polyamide, 10:224–226
- BCB derived, 5:79
- block copolymer, 2:197–200
- controlled drug release technology, 3:745–747
- in flexible packaging, 9:471, 472
- free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:742
- lamination of, 13:247
- LDPE, 5:535, 536
- for LLDPE, 5:577–579
- low density resin for, 5:536, 537
- nylon, 10:288
- polyamic acid, 5:71
- poly(3-hydroxyalkanoate), 10:100
- polystyrene supports, 11:34–36
- PPTA, 10:226, 232
- properties of polyimide, 5:76
- propylene polymers, 11:403
- recycling of plastics, 11:673
- as release agents, 11:706
- selected polymer properties (tables), 5:806
- stress buffer coat, 5:67, 84
- FilmTec, 5:841
- Filter media, comparison of, 5:626
- Filtration membranes, 5:826–851
 - high performance fiber applications, 6:722
 - types of, 7:775–783
 - viscose rayon, 2:680, 681
- Fine fibers, 6:718, 719
- Fingerprints
 - as evidence, 6:174, 175
- Finishing
 - fiber, 10:254, 255
 - nonwoven fabrics, 9:230–235
 - of painted surfaces, 1:528
 - of polysulfones, 11:198
- Finishing section, of cold SBR production, 13:272–275
- Finite elasticity theory, 15:111–121
- Finite element analysis, 5:651
- Finite size effect, 2:194
- Finitely extendable nonlinear elastic (FENE) model, of
 - bond stretching, 8:577, 600
- Fire and flammability test standards, development of, 6:86
- Fire behavior, flame resistance, 6:66
- Fire calorimetry, for HRP, 6:61
- Fire helmets
 - polyarylate applications, 10:353
- Fire products collector, 6:97
- Fire propagation apparatus, 6:94
- Fire retardant chemicals, 6:84
- Fire retardants, reactive or nonreactive. *See also* Flame; Flammability
- Fire safety codes, 6:85
 - associated strategies, 6:83
- Fire tests, 6:84
 - quality assurance, 6:84, 85
 - response characteristic, 6:84
 - standards, 6:85–87
 - vs. flammability tests, 6:83, 84
- Fire, impact management, 6:83
- First law energy balance, during burning, 6:40
- First law of thermodynamics, 13:76
- First level packaging, 5:62
- polymers in, 5:63–89

- First-order Markov theory, 8:109
- First-order phase transitions, 9:561
- First-order Thermal degradation, of main pyrolysis products, 6:43
- First-order thermodynamic transition, 14:24
- First-order transitions, 14:80–83, 251
- First stress invariant, 15:458
- Fisheries
 high performance fiber applications, 6:724
- Fixed-cell vertical casting machines, 2:500
- Fixed coins, 7:150
- Flakes, in composites, 11:688
- Flame extinction, 6:79
 as LOI test criterion, 6:80
 criteria, 6:66, 67
 in flammability tests, 6:79
- Flame heat flux, 6:37
- Flame resistance, 6:34, 35, 35
 defined, 6:79
 vs. fire behavior, 6:79
- Flame-resistant acrylic fibers, 1:251
- Flame-resistant wool, 15:340
- Flame-retardance composite, reaction extrusion, 11:647
- Flame retardancy, 6:1–26, 11:647
- Flame-retardant aliphatic polyketone compounds, 10:664, 666, 667
- Flame-retardant effect, 9:659
- Flame-retardant polyamide 6 composites, 11:647
- Flame retardants, 1:354, 355, 6:35. *See also* Fire;
 Flammability
 as additives, 6:39
 brominated, 6:6–11
 cellulose phosphate applications, 2:610
 char formers, 1:354
 from cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:235
 in fiber, 10:257
 halogenated, 6:5, 6
 health and safety factors, 6:22–26
 heat absorbers, 1:354
 inorganic, 6:1–5
 nitrogen-based, 6:21, 22
 nylon, 10:284
 phosphazenes, 11:109
 phosphorus based, 6:11–21
 in plastics compounding, 3:552
 for polystyrene foams, 13:258
 radical sources, 1:355
 rayon, 2:688
 sulfur-containing, 6:21
 synergists with antimony oxides, 1:355
 test methods, 13:760
- Flame-retarded PCT, 4:217
- Flame-spread index (FSI), 6:89
- Flame treatment, of surfaces, 1:376
- Flaming combustion dynamics, 6:76
- Flaming combustion efficiency
 vs. SEA, 6:81
 phases, 6:36–53
- Flaming combustion efficiency, 6:39
 dependence on SEA, 6:82
- Flammability, 6:34–97
 cellular polymers, 2:538, 558
 characterization methods, 2:755
 composite foams, 3:510
 olefin fibers, 9:351
 phenolic resins, 9:600
 polyamide plastics, 10:276
 polysulfones, 11:191–193
 self-extinguishing behavior, 6:80
 self-propagating flame, 6:80
 silicone foam rubbers, 12:502
 test methods, 13:770, 780, 781
 textile fibers compared, 1:231, 232
 wool, 15:341
- Flammability tests, 6:65–69, 83, 84
 flame resistance, 6:65–67
 for quality assurance, 6:85
 standards, 6:85–87
 vs. HRC, 6:79, 80
- Flammability, ABS polymers and, 1:321
- Flammable, defined, 6:84
- Flash, 2:231
- Flash devolatilization, 6:100–105
 bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:292
 equipment for, 6:105
 extruder and wiped-film devolatilization, 6:103–105
 staged flashes and induced foaming, 6:102, 103
- Flashover voltage, 4:685–688
 dependence of spacing and contamination, 4:688
 as function of air pressure and electrode spacing, 4:687
- Flashpoint. *See also* Ignition
- Flashspun fabrics, 9:197, 198
- Flat-bed xenon-arc, 15:260
- Flat film die, 5:676
- Flat film extrusion line, 5:634
- Flat-sheet membranes, 5:829, 830
- Flavin
 use with recognition-induced polymersomes (RIPs), 8:650, 651
- Flavonoid compounds, 5:271
- Flavor compounds
 permeation, 2:24, 25
 transport in various high and moderate barrier polymers, 2:38
- Flavor-loaded macrocapsules, 8:396
- Flax, 14:495
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:501
 textile-associated properties compared to polyester, 14:499
 uses, 14:508
 world production, 14:507
- FLCE. *See* Ferroelectric LC-elastomers
- Flex fatigue
 cellular polymers, 2:535
- Flexed-beam impact resistance, 6:817–823
- Flexibility
 fiber strength and, 11:682
- Flexibilizers, adhesive, 1:419
 for epoxy resins, 5:381–385
- Flexible-blade coater, 3:279
- Flexible cellular polymers, 2:534–536

- Flexible chain polymer crystals, melting entropy, 14:253, 254
- Flexible linkages, 7:570
- Flexible packaging, 9:469–478
forms of, 9:469, 470
introduction of, 9:469
lamination, 9:471
manufacturing techniques for, 9:471–473
methods of producing, 9:472
performance requirements, 9:469
polymer materials, 9:470
sealant layers, 9:474
uses and types, 9:469, 473–478
- Flexible poly(vinyl chloride) foam, 2:555
- Flexible polyurethane foam (FPF), 6:362, 11:241
processing, 1:809, 810, 10:92
- Flexible polyurethane, 2:546–549
- Flexible PVC
automotive fogging and, 10:59
effect of plasticizer choice on properties of, 10:65, 66
high temperature performance of, 10:57, 58
low temperature performance of, 10:58
permanence of, 10:59, 60
- Flexographic printing, release agents for, 11:707
- Flexural fatigue test specimen, 5:696
- Flexural modulus
of engineering thermoplastics, 5:209, 210
composite materials, 3:546
- Flexural strength
composite materials, 3:546
- Flight geometries, of extruders, 5:665
- Flip chip attachment, with planarized bumps, 3:680
- Float casting, 5:840
- Floater dryer, 3:291
- Floc, 10:223
- Flocculants
acrylamide polymers as, 1:119
chitosan as, 3:40
poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:458
- Flocculation, 1:448, 3:440
- Flocking, 10:254
- Floor-polish industry, 6:107
- Floor polish, 6:106–113
alkali-soluble resins, 6:108, 109
ASTM and CSMAA testing methods, 6:113
development of, 6:107
dried polish films, testing of, 6:112
homologous copolymer series, 6:108
ingredients, 6:107–110
leveling aids, 6:109
linoleum, 6:107
plasticizers (qv), 6:109, 110
polymer latex, 6:107, 108
sealers, 6:112
surfactants, 6:110
synthetic alkali-soluble resins, 6:108
testing methods, 6:112, 113
waxes, 6:109
zinc-carboxyl bonds, 6:110
- Floor wax, 6:106
- Flooring, 15:281
epoxy resin applications, 5:400, 401
melamine-formaldehyde resin applications, 7:735
- Flooring materials, 6:114–127
- Flop
of color, 3:473
two-tone, 3:473
- Flory diradical, 13:216
- Flory-Erman theory, 4:664, 665, 9:19
entanglements in, 4:667, 668
- Flory-Huggins interaction parameter, 1:366, 367, 5:177, 6:596, 8:622, 10:45
- Flory-Huggins mean-field lattice model, 8:562
- Flory-Huggins theory, 5:176, 8:535, 536
and phase transformation, 9:568–573
for polymer solutions, 5:179
shortcomings and extensions of, 538, 539
- Flory-Rehner expression, 4:667
- Flory-Schulz distribution function, 8:662, 10:658
- Flory-Stockmayer equation, 3:805
- Flory theory, 7:564
- Flory-Vrij theory, 2:205
- Flotation
for crystallinity determination, 4:159
- Flow channel, square, 5:669, 670
- Flow-induced structure
neutron scattering studies, 9:62–64
- Flow linear dichroism, for structure analysis, 5:54–56
- Flow rate
LDPE, 5:532
- Flow rate ratio, LDPE, 5:532
- Flow rate, in membranes, 5:842
- Flow turbulence, 7:30
- Fluctuation-dissipation relations, 13:78
- Fluff, 5:570
- Fluid-flow fractionation
for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:674
- Fluid state. *See also* Polymer fluids
polymer behavior in, 15:93
in viscoelasticity theory, 15:99–103
- Fluid, supercritical, 4:47, 48
- Fluidized-bed coating, 3:231, 250, 8:387
- Fluoranthene
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Fluorel, 6:161
- Fluorene
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Fluorenyl carbanions
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:608
- N*^o-9-Fluorenylmethyloxycarbonyl (Fmoc) group
amino acid protecting group, 11:66, 67, 71–73
cleavage, 11:85, 86
- Fluorescence imaging, 8:802
- Fluorescence-labeled polynorbornene, 8:173
- Fluorescence microscopy
fiber forensics applications, 6:186
forensics applications, 6:178
- Fluorescent molecules, 9:766
- Fluorescent pigments, 3:473, 474
- Fluorescent UV lamps, 15:262
- Fluorescent whitening agent
wool treatment with, 15:336–338
- Fluorescent yield, 15:378
- Fluorinated (meth)acrylic monomers, 6:132
- Fluorinated block thermoplastic elastomers, 6:144, 145

- Fluorinated compounds, as release agents, 6:413, 414, 11:700, 702
- Fluorinated copolymers, 6:128–159
properties of, 6:138–143
- Fluorinated cyclic monomers, 6:132
hexafluoropropylene Oxide, 6:136
ring-opening homopolymerization, 6:136, 137
- Fluorinated epoxy resins, 5:313
- Fluorinated ethylene-propylene copolymers (FEP), 11:449
- Fluorinated graft thermoplastic elastomers 6:145
- Fluorinated homopolymers, properties of, 6:137, 138
- Fluorinated monomers
controlled radical (Co)polymerization (CRP), 6:136, 137
copolymers of, 6:141, 142
- Fluorinated olefins, 6:129
applications, 6:147–150
of elastomers, 6:149
poly(chlorotrifluoroethylene (PCTFE), 6:133
of polymers, 6:149, 150
polyvinylidene difluoride (PVDF), 6:133
PTFE, 6:133
radical homopolymerization, 6:133–136
synthesis of, 6:129–132
VDF-VDF chaining, 6:134
- Fluorinated paints, 6:154, 155
lumiflon, 6:154
- Fluorinated PEDOT morphology, 13:422
- Fluorinated plastics, 6:128
- Fluorinated poly(phosphazene), 6:142
- Fluorinated polymers, 6:129
applications, 6:147–150
photocross-linkable formulations, 6:145
radiation chemistry, 11:470–474
- Fluorinated silicones, 6:142, 143
applications, 6:147
- Fluorinated surfactants, 14:774
- Fluorinated thermoplastic elastomers
applications, 6:150
properties of, 6:143–145
- Fluorination
in blow molding, 2:255
- Fluorine-19 (¹⁹F) NMR, 2:737
- 2-Fluoro-1,3-butadiene
chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
- Fluoroalkylated end-capped polycarbobetaines, 10:312
- Fluorobenzene, in CSM preparations, 5:476
- Fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:161–172
commercial, 6:163
compression-set values of, 6:166
formulation of, 6:169, 170
manufacture of, 6:165–168
polymerization recipe for, 6:166
processing of, 6:168–171
properties of, 6:162–165
specifications for, 6:171
test methods for, 6:172
uses for, 6:172
- Fluorocarbon fibers
properties, 9:346
- Fluorocarbon films, 10:6–16
continuous discharge (CD) processes, 10:6
Dacron vascular grafts, 10:6
teflon-like coatings, 10:6
morphology of, 10:13
linear rod-like aggregates, 10:16
- Fluorocarbon polymers, in surface treatment, 1:376, 377
- Fluorocarbons
physical properties, 12:207
- Fluoroelastomeric copolymers, 15:54
- Fluoroelastomers, 1:806. *See* Fluorocarbon elastomers
for rubber compounding, 12:205, 214
radiation chemistry, 11:472, 473
- Fluoroethene. *See also* Vinyl fluoride (VF)
- Fluorohectorite
layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
- Fluoromonomers, 6:128
applications, 6:150–158
composites and polymer blends, 6:146, 147
ethylenic fluorinated monomers, copolymers of, 6:139–141
fluorinated blocks, 6:156–158
in “energy” domain, 6:151–153
hexafluoroacetone, 6:156
in optics, 6:153, 154
processing of, 6:147
properties of, 6:137–147
telechelic diiododerivatives, 6:158
- Fluoropolymers, 11:456
radiation chemistry, 11:456
semicrystalline, 9:782–787
supercritical carbon dioxide synthesis of, 4:49, 50
- Fluorosilicones, 6:143
as release agents, 11:706
- Flushing process, 3:493
- Fluted mixing sections, 5:663, 664
- Fluxes, 14:292, 293
- FM global research, 6:94, 95, 95
for coating applications, 5:184
- Fmoc group. *See* N^α-9-Fluorenylmethyloxycarbonyl (Fmoc) group
- 4-(4-Fmoc-aminomethyl-3,5-diethoxy-phenoxy)butyric acid (BAL), 11:79
- Foam bonding
nonwoven fabrics, 9:227
- Foam breakers, 3:460
- Foam destruction, 1:673
- Foam extrusion, 10:76, 77
- Foam-molding process, 1:13, 14
- Foam products
latex applications, 7:462
- Foam, automotive, 1:802, 803
polyurethane foams, 1:802, 803
thermoplastic foam, 1:803
- Foamable PS and EPS beads, 13:255–257
- Foamed polymers, 2:511. *See also* Cellular materials
acoustic properties, 1:73
phenolic resin applications, 9:616
- Foamed sheet polystyrene, 13:258
- Foamed vinyl-coated fabrics, manufacture, 7:499
- Foaming (blowing) agents, 1:346, 347
- Foaming-in-place (FIP) beads
rigid foam from, 13:255–257
- Foaming volumes, of styrene copolymers, 13:256

- Foams, 3:499. *See also* Cellular materials
 amino resin, 1:543
 colloids, 3:437, 447
 polychloroprene latex applications, 3:79
 polystyrene, 13:252–258
 silicone application, 12:465
 wood-plastic composites, 15:303
- Fog
 as colloid, 3:437
- Folic acid, 8:283
- Food and beverage industry
 chitin and chitosan in, 3:40
- Food and Drug Administration (FDA), colorant
 regulation by, 3:469. *See also* FDA
- Food-grade xanthan gum products, 15:364, 365
- Food lake pigments, FD&C, 3:487, 488
- Food packaging, 9:473–476
 bakery products, 9:474
 candy and confectionery packaging, 9:474
 case-ready meat, 9:473, 474
 cheese, 9:474
 ethylene-norbornene copolymer, 5:590
 extrusion coating in, 3:281
 fresh red meat, 9:473
 fresh-cut produce packaging, 9:474
 processed meat, 9:473
 retortable pouches, 9:474
- Foods
 contact with LDPE, 5:534
 release materials for, 11:707
- Force-distance curves, 1:754
- Force fields
 models of, 8:577–582
- Forced frequency dynamic mechanical analyzers,
 4:611–613
- Forced-vibration nonresonance techniques
 for acoustic measurements, 1:101, 102
- Forensic analysis, 6:174–192
 analytical methods, 6:177–181
 applications with general polymers, 6:181–183
 evidence collection, 6:176, 177
 fiber applications, 6:183–188
 paint applications, 6:188–192
- Forest Products Laboratory (FPL) process, 1:377
- Forestry
 high performance fiber applications, 6:722, 723
- α -form s-PS, 13:665
- β -form s-PS, 13:665
- Form, fill, and seal (FFS) containers
 thermoforming, 14:105, 109, 114
- Formaldehyde, 1:2, 424, 425. *See also* Acetal resins
 acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
 in amino resins, 1:519, 520
 ceiling temperature, 4:255
 health and environmental issues in phenolic resins,
 9:600
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:578, 580, 581
 poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:129, 130
- Formaldehyde scavengers, 4:80
- Formalin, 1:520
- Formic acid, 1:523
- Forming
 for engineering thermoplastics, 5:212
- Formulations
 agricultural controlled release formulations,
 3:719–722
 die attach adhesives, 5:65
 epoxy resin modifiers, 5:376–385
 epoxy resins, 5:362–368
 expandable cellular materials, 2:515–520
 molecularly imprinted polymers, 8:685, 686
 polymers in controlled release technology, 3:743–745
 powder coatings, 3:239–241
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:643, 644
- Fortisan, 2:568, 583
 hydrazine swelling, 2:585
- FORTTRAN source code, for conformation geometry,
 3:698
- Forward recoil spectroscopy, 1:368, 369
- Forward-roll coaters, 3:275, 276
- Fossil-derived natural gas, 8:1
- Fouling. *See also* Organic fouling; Cake fouling
 in membranes, 5:844, 845
 in NF membranes, 5:833
 prevention, 5:848–850
- Foundry resins, 6:195–202
 cold-box process, 6:195, 196
 hot-box processes, 6:196
 inorganic binders, 6:195
 no-bake process, 6:195
 oven-bake process, 6:196
 phenolic resin applications, 9:609, 610
 phenolic-urethane cold-box process, 6:198
 sand casting, 6:195
 shell (crowning) process, 6:196
 warm-box processes, 6:196
- Fountain blade coater, 3:272
- Four-wave mixing, 9:748
 experimental schematic, 9:762
- Fourier transform infrared (FTIR) spectroscopy, 2:736,
 8:357, 10:734, 13:757, 14:564, 597
 applications to composition and structure
 determination, 13:757–760
 for crystallinity determination, 4:156–158
 forensics applications, 6:179, 186
 phenolic resins, 9:595
 second derivative spectra, 13:58, 59
 with SEC for molecular weight determination,
 13:763
 thermoset curing, 14:188–191
 use in forensic analysis, 6:181
- Fourier transform-NMR, 13:759
 for crystallinity determination, 4:161
- Fourier transform-Raman spectroscopy, 13:758
 hyperbranched polymers, 6:792
- Fourth level packaging, 5:63
- Fox equation, 13:766
- FP polycrystalline alumina yarn, 11:698
- FPA. *See* ANA/AAA/3-fluorophthalic acid (FPA)
- FPL process. *See* Forest Products Laboratory (FPL)
 process
- Fractal dimensionalities, measurement of, 6:214–217
 two-point density-density correlation functions,
 6:215
- Fractal geometry, 6:203, 204
 applications, 6:217–220
 polymers, applications to, 6:217–219

- Fractals, 6:203–219
diffusion-limited aggregation (DLA) model, 6:204
self-similar, 6:204–208, 212
- Fractional free volume, 2:8–11
- Fractional mass loss rate, 6:45
- Fractionation, 6:223–276, 509
batch, 6:229–239
continuous polymer fractionation, 6:267
crystallization analysis fractionation (Crystaf), 6:239–244, 248, 249
field flow fractionation, 6:257–267
mass spectrometry, 6:268
in polyacrylamide analysis, 1:143
polymer, 5:576
size exclusion chromatography, 6:250–257
temperature rising elution fractionation, 6:244–249
ultracentrifugation, 6:272
- Fractography, 5:730–732, 6:279–297. *See also* Fracture
fracture mode classification in, 6:284–302
fracture surface evaluation and, 6:296
influence of chemicals in, 6:291–294
optical microscopy and, 6:280, 281
sample preparation in, 6:284
scanning electron microscopy and, 6:281–284
- Fracture, 6:289–291, 299–322. *See also* Fractography;
Fracture mechanics
characterization and test methods for, 6:335
deformation and damage mechanisms and, 6:322–327
development of, 6:318–322
durability and, 6:327–330
energy-release rate in, 6:302–304
environmental effects and, 6:332–335
essential work of, 6:315–318
Eyring kinetic theory of, 8:549
fatigue, 6:289–291
and fatigue, 5:695
load, 6:284–289
multiaxial stress criteria and, 6:330–332
oxidative degradation effect, 4:279
test methods, 13:774
- Fracture mechanics
admitting confined plasticity and viscoelasticity, 6:309–313
for bonds between stiff elastic adherends, 1:394–396
of dissipative materials, 6:313–318
linear elastic, 6:299–309
of simple joints, 1:388
- Fracture mode, effect of loading rate on, 6:326
- Fracture propagation, 6:281
- Fracture stress, 6:325
- Fracture surface analysis, 6:279. *See also* Fractography
- Fracture surfaces, 5:702, 6:280, 296
- Fracture toughness, 6:301, 314–316, 800
composite materials, 3:546
from flexed-beam impact tests, 6:820–823
- Fractured knit line, 6:295
- Fragmentation
during high-temperature polyolefin processing, 13:7
- Fragmentation test, 11:687
- Free bubble forming, 14:112
- Free energy change, in ATRP, 1:723
- Free energy function, 15:112
- Free energy of mixing
composition dependence of, 8:532, 530
vs. composition curves, 8:533
- Free energy. *See* Gibbs free energy; Surface excess free energy
of products & reactants, 6:69
- Free enthalpy, 14:75–77
- Free-radical chain reaction, of polymer oxidation, 13:2–5
- Free-radical chain theory, 13:2
- Free radical copolymerization
of alkenes with unsaturated heterocyclic compounds, 13:677–679
reactivity, 3:778–780
termination, 3:780–786
- Free-radical initiators, 1:688, 419. *See* Initiators, free-radical
for styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:270
- Free radical mechanism for sulfur vulcanization, 4:69
- Free radical photopolymerization, 9:718–743
- Free radical polymerization initiator, 12:356
- Free radical polymerization, 5:192–194, 468, 6:789, 7:196–201, 7:627–630, 8:331, 11:501–558, 554–600, 14:419, 773. *See also* Heterophase polymerization; Radical polymerization
atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP), 7:197
chain transfer in, 13:221–223
chloroprene, 3:44
ethylene copolymers, 5:429
general chemistry of, 13:219
intercalation polymerization, 7:86–88
ionizing radiation source and photoinitiation, 6:860
iron-mediated ATRP, 7:199
living radical polymerization contrasted, 7:648
for macromonomers synthesis, 6:493, 494
moisture-sensitive ionic liquids, polymerization in, 7:197
nitroxide-mediated polymerization (NMP), 7:197
and polybutadiene macrostructure, 2:303
polybutadiene synthesis, 2:304, 305
radical addition-fragmentation and transfer (RAFT), 7:197
styrene polymers, 13:214–223
stringent reaction conditions, 7:196
thermal initiation, 6:835–838
- Free-radical precipitation polymerization
in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:50, 51
- Free-radical process, for polyethylene development, 5:485
- Free radical propagation, 1:734
- Free-radical scavengers, 13:215
- Free-radicals polymerization process, 13:613
- Free radicals. *See also* Radicals
in cold SBR production, 13:273
in emulsion polymerization, 13:270, 271
preventive antioxidants and, 13:11, 12
- Free resonance dynamic mechanical analyzers, 4:613–615
- Free-volume-dependent clocks, for solid-like polymers, 15:159
- Free-volume fluctuation model
amorphous polymers, 1:557
- Free-volume theories, 14:305–308

- Free volume theory, of plasticizer action, 10:44
- Free volume, 2:8–11
- Freely jointed polymer chains, 4:646–648
- Freestanding film preparation, un-cross-linked polymers, 5:759–761
- Freestanding films, 5:756
- Freeze spray atomization
controlled drug release technology, 3:746, 747
- French corona cell, 4:702
- Freon
swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
- Frequency factor
thermal free-radical initiation, 6:839
- Frequency, sound waves, 1:62
acoustic property variation with, 1:70
- Freshilizer oxygen absorber, 2:59
- Freshpax oxygen absorber, 2:59
- Fresnel reflector solar concentrator, 15:254, 255
- Fresnel reflectors, 3:269, 270
- Friction
atomic force microscopy and, 1:781
coefficients of, 11:701
internal and external coefficients of, 5:641
and scratch behavior, 12:330, 332
- Friction factor, 4:540
- Friction materials
phenolic resin applications, 9:609
- Friedel-Craft alkylation, 11:2
- Friedel-Crafts reaction, 11:185
- Friedel-Crafts reagents
in styrene polymerization, 13:226
- Fringed micellar model, 12:383
- Fringed-micelle nucleus, 4:173
- Fringed micelle structure, 5:550
- Frothing process, 2:524
- Frozen food packaging, 9:475, 476
- Frozen foods, 9:475
- FRP of styrene, 8:336
- FRP. *See* Fiber-reinforced plastic (FRP)
- β -D-Fructofuranose, 15:188
- Fructose, 15:188
- Fruit-hair fibers, 14:506
- Frustrated crystals, 12:391, 392
- FT-IR microspectroscopy, 6:184
- FTIR flow cell, 8:357
- FTIR-spectroscopy, 5:755
- FTIR. *See* Fourier transform infrared (FTIR)
- Fuel cell electrodes
carbon black applications, 2:460
- Fuel cell membranes
phosphazenes, 11:107, 108
- Fuel cell, membrane electrode assembly, 6:151
- Fuel cells, ionomers in, 7:233
- Fuel gases, heat of complete combustion, 6:62, 63
- Fuel oils
feedstocks for oil-furnace black process, 2:444, 446
- Fuel, active radicals, 6:37, 38
- Fuels
antioxidant applications, 1:714
permeation, 10:665
- Full adsorption-desorption/SEC coupling (FAD/SEC)
- Fullerene polymers, 6:338–357
C₆₀-based cross-linked polymers, 6:340
- C₆₀-based star-polymers, 6:344
- C₆₀-bound poly(vinylcarbazole) (PVK-C₆₀), 6:350
- cross-linked C₆₀-containing-polyurethanes, 6:340
- cross-linked copolymer exhibiting magnetic behaviour, 6:340
- cross-linked polymers, 6:339–341
- doubly C₆₀-end-capped aromatic poly(azomethyne) rotaxane, 6:343
- main-chain polymers, 6:345–347
- ruthenium catalyzed ROMP technique, 6:350
- ternary polymer-bound C₆₀ films, 6:349
- Fully fluorinated polymers, radiation chemistry, 11:470–472
- Fully notched creep tests, 6:329
- Fully oriented yarns, 10:251
- Fulvenes, 4:227
- Fuming nitric acid, LLDPE and, 5:548
- Functional group labeling
for surface analysis, 13:476
- Functional initiators, 8:171
for ATRP (table), 1:731, 732
- Functional methacrylates, RAFT polymerization, 11:724
- Functional microscale systems
by molecular self-assembly, 8:648–654
- Functional monomers
ATRP of, 1:730, 731
various classes of, 1:730
- Functional polyphosphazenes, 11:103, 104
- Functional polysilanes, 11:157
- Functionality, of a junction, 4:655
- Functionalization
polystyrene resins, 11:17–20
telechelic polymer trends, 13:693
- Functionalized initiators
anionic polymerization, 1:607, 608
- Functionalized polyacetylenes, syntheses of, 1:31
- Functionalized polyHIPEs, 10:609
- Functionalized polymers, sacrificial synthesis of, 8:177
- Fungi
biodegradation of plastics in landfills by, 4:241
- Fungine, 3:33
- Furan
polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:755
- Furan-based conjugated polymers, 3:701–711
applications of, 3:707–711
metal-mediated cross-coupling for, 3:705–707
oxidative coupling for, 3:704, 705
synthetic approaches to, 3:704–707
- Furan hot-box binders, 6:200
- Furan No-bake binders, 6:199, 200
- Furan resins, 6:199–202
based binders, 6:199
- Furan-SO₂ cold-box binders, 6:200
- Furnace black pigment, 3:346
- Furniture, 6:361–365, 15:281
calorimeter, 6:95, 96
construction, plastic use, 6:361, 362
plastics, applications of (table), 6:363
polystyrene components, decoration of, 6:364, 365
polyurethane foams, 6:362
reaction injection molding (rim), 6:362

- simulated wood parts, 6:362–364
 stearate release agents, 6:364
 Furniture industry, release agents in, 11:707
Fusarium solani (FsC), 5:260
 Fusion
 in PVC emulsion polymerization, 14:752, 753
 Fusion process, for solid epoxy resins, 5:305, 307, 308
 β -D-Galactofuranose, 15:188
 Galactopyranose, 15:188
 Galactose, 15:188
 Gallium arsenide electroabsorptive modulators, 5:112
 Galvanic corrosion, 3:666–669, 672
 Galvinoxyl, 11:579
 Gamma function, 11:687
 Gamma irradiation, of polystyrene, 13:244
 Gamma polymorph, of PVDF, 15:63
 γ rays, elastomer cross-linking and, 4:73
 Gamma relaxation, 15:98
 Gamma transition, 4:619
 Garbage Project, 4:240
 Garlands, 5:156
 Gas-antisolvent process (GAS), 13:372
 Gas-assist injection molding, 7:7, 8
 Gas chromatography (GC)
 phenolic resins, 9:596
 Gas-counter pressure injection molding, 7:8
 Gas diffusion, 4:511–515
 experimental determination, 4:511
 factors affecting, 4:512–515
 nonlinear behavior, 4:511, 512
 permeability, 4:511
 solubility, 4:511
 Gas emissivity, 6:40
 Gas inclusions, 6:295
 Gas-liquid critical point, 9:561
 Gas pack injection molding, 7:8
 Gas permeability
 in acrylic elastomers, 1:183
 PEN, 10:143
 Gas-phase assisted surface polymerization (GASP), 2:764
 Gas-phase deposition polymerization (GDP), 2:764
 Gas-phase manufacturing
 LLDPE, 5:564, 565
 Gas-phase polymerization, 5:468
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:600
 heterophase technique, 6:582
 polybutadiene processes, 2:319
 Gas-phase processes, for manufacturing HDPE, 5:505, 506
 Gas phase, 6:37–41
 kinetics, 6:37–39, 38
 Gas plasma, reaction with polymer surfaces, 13:530
 dry etching, 13:530
 plasma polymerization and deposition, 13:530
 surface and interfacial reactions, 13:530
 Gas separation, 5:835, 836, 7:775
 Gas separation membranes, 5:842, 843
 electrically active polymers for, 4:772, 773
 phosphazenes, 11:106
 selectivity, 5:843, 844
 Gas separation technology, 7:745
 applications for, 7:793–795
 high-pressure, 7:773
 using membranes, 7:760, 790–796
 Gas sorption coefficient, 7:794
 Gas-turbine engines, silicon carbide filaments in, 11:697
 Gases
 compression of, 4:646
 dissolution in microcellular plastics, 8:302–305
 dissolved in heterophase polymerization, 6:634
 predicting transport properties in barrier polymers, 2:26–32
 transport in amorphous rubbery polymers, 14:298, 299
 transport in semicrystalline and cross-linked rubbery polymers, 14:323–329
 Gastification, enthalpy, 6:70
 Gates, in injection molds, 10:83
 Gauche states, 4:657
 Gaussian and non-Gaussian elasticity, 9:14
 Gaussian chain, 9:16
 Gaussian conformation, in DE model, 15:127
 Gaussian distribution function, 4:647–649, 8:661, 662
 Gaussian theory, of elasticity, 4:654
 Gaussian-type orbitals, 3:598
 Gear predictor-corrector numerical integration methods, 8:587
 Gear pump, 3:497
 in an extruder, 5:632, 633
 Gearbox backlash, 5:631
 Gegenion, 2:395
 Gel coatings, 3:289
 Gel effect, 13:191
 and bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:289
 heterophase polymerization, 6:610
 Gel filtration, 3:103
 Gel-free polyisoprene, 7:303, 306
 with high cis-1,4 microstructure, 7:303
 Gel level, LDPE, 5:533
 Gel-permeation chromatography (GPC), 3:103, 7:287, 8:328, 14:563
 distinguishing block polymers, 7:318
 for molar mass determination, 2:739, 740
 for molecular weight determination, 13:763
 for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:671–674
 phenolic resins, 9:595, 596
 for sample preparation for polymer characterization, 2:735
 Gel point, 6:367–378
 chemical, 6:370, 371
 epoxy resins, 5:369
 physical, 6:372, 373
 range of power law, 6:373, 374
 rheological properties of critical gel, 6:368–370
 vicinity, 6:374, 375
 Gel polymers, acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:166, 167
 Gel-spun fibers
 high performance fibers, 6:710, 711
 Gel theory, of plasticizer action, 10:43, 44
 Gel-type polystyrenes, 11:20, 21
 Gel-type resins, 7:158, 11:17
 Gelatin
 biodegradable natural polymer, 2:106, 112

- in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:112
- Gelatinized materials, 13:52
- Gelation, 4:74–76, 6:367
 - delayed, 3:805
 - epoxy resins, 5:370, 371
 - measurement of instant of, 6:375–378
 - polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:122–126
 - in PVC emulsion polymerization, 14:752, 753
 - thermosets, 14:162, 163
- Gellan, 15:193
- Gels. *See also* Hydrogels
 - AFM imaging of, 1:778, 779
 - as colloids, 3:437, 458
 - formation of, 3:213–215
 - swollen, 1:156
 - thermochromic, 14:39
- Gemini surfactants, 1:667
- Gene expression, 10:674
- Gene therapy
 - controlled release technology, 3:756, 757
 - tissue engineering, 14:215
- General geometric mean rule, 3:783, 784
- General performance carbon fibers, 2:467
- General purpose acetal resins, 1:14
- General purpose plasticizers (GP), 10:46
 - uses of (table), 10:48
- General-purpose PS (GPPS), 13:186, 200, 201
 - manufacture of, 13:239
- General-purpose rubbers
 - defined, 12:204
 - need for cross-linking, 12:168
- Genetic engineering
 - silk, 12:548, 549
- Genetic method of polymer synthesis, 6:380–424
 - artificial proteins designed *de novo*, 6:380–424
 - collagen-like protein polymers, 6:403–407
 - commercial viability, 6:394–398
 - elastin-like protein polymers, 6:422–424
 - multisite incorporation of nonnatural amino acids, 6:398–403
 - nonnatural amino acid incorporation employing wild-type biosynthetic apparatus, 6:407–411
 - nonnatural amino acid incorporation via introduction of heterologous aaRS/tRNA pairs, 6:411–416
 - nonnatural amino acid incorporation via overexpression of mutant aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases, 6:420–422
 - nonnatural amino acid incorporation via overexpression of wild-type aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases, 6:418–420
 - protein biosynthesis, 6:416, 417
 - silk-like protein polymers, 6:381–383
 - synthetic strategies, 6:386–394, 423
- Genetic zwitterions, 15:531
- Genetics, 6:383–386, 8:573
- Genexol-PM, 8:290
- Gent model, of craze initiation, 15:483
- Geomembrane sheeting, 5:509
- Geometry, of PET fibers, 10:517, 518
- Geotextiles
 - spunbonded fabric applications, 9:206, 207
- Germanium polymers, 7:42–44
- Germany, rubber manufacturing in, 13:269
- Giant amphiphiles, 11:439
- Gibbs-Di Marzio equation, 14:91, 92
- Gibbs-DiMarzio theory, 1:452, 453
- Gibbs ensemble methods, 8:595, 596
 - phase transition modeling, 8:622, 623
- Gibbs free energy, 1:364
- Gibbs-Marangoni effect, 1:662, 669
- Gibbs statistical mechanics, 13:76, 77
- Gibbs-Thomson equation, 4:176
- Gillham-Enns diagram, 4:633, 634
- Ginny, 1:252
- Ginsburg-Landau equation, 10:678
- Ginzburg criterion, 9:570
- Ginzburg parameter, 2:193
- Glaser-Hay coupling, 1:34
- Glass, 5:681
 - atomic structure of, 11:689, 690
 - enthalpy recovery in, 1:458–461
 - filler material, 5:785
 - physical aging of, 1:452, 453
 - as reinforcing material, 11:688–691
 - release agent use with, 11:705
 - specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Glass and ceramic microspheres, 8:504
- Glass-clear resins, gas and water vapor barrier
 - properties of, 2:254
- Glass fiber
 - mechanical properties, 9:216
- Glass fiber reinforcement, 11:688–691
- Glass fiber-reinforced polysulfones, 11:195
 - physical and mechanical properties of, 11:192
- Glass fibers
 - filler material, 5:785
 - properties of, 9:346
- Glass fibers, nylon reinforcement with, 10:284, 285
- Glass-filled polyesters, properties of, 10:208
- Glass-forming polymer, 11:2
- Glass-ionomer cements, 7:209
- Glass microspheres, 8:503
- Glass-reinforced composites
 - phenolic resins, 9:613, 614
- Glass-reinforced flame-retarded PCT, 4:217
- Glass-reinforced styrene polymers, 13:204, 205
 - mechanical properties, 13:181
- Glass sealants, polysulfide, 11:176
- Glass transition/vitrification, 14:256, 257
 - enhanced surface mobility, 14:284
 - Johari-Goldstein β -relaxation, 14:281
 - β -relaxation, 14:280, 281
 - β -transition, 14:280, 281
 - vesicle preparation, 14:524
- Glass transition temperature (T_g)
 - and scratch behavior, 12:328
- Glass-transition temperature, 1:565, 567, 4:514, 515, 6:432, 13:800–803
 - acrylonitrile homopolymer, 1:283
 - aging and, 1:452, 453
 - amorphous piezoelectric polymers, 9:788, 790, 795
 - amorphous polymers, 1:582, 583
 - chlorinated polyethylene polymer, 5:470
 - CO₂ polymer plasticization and, 4:49
 - ethylene-norbornene copolymers, 5:585

- ethylene oxide polymers, 5:445
 as material characterizing parameter, 1:582, 583, 582, 583
 nonlinear viscoelastic polymer response below, 15:105, 106
 polyacrylamide, 1:119
 poly(ethylene terephthalate), 10:517
 polysulfones, 11:180, 186, 187
 poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:200, 201
 propylene polymers, 11:362
 PVDF, 15:63
 release agents, 11:704
 SAN copolymers, 1:289
 selected homopolymers, 6:656, 657
 shape-memory polymers, 12:412, 416
 styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:277, 278
 styrene derivatives, 13:195, 196
 thermoplastic elastomers, 14:141
 viscoelasticity and, 15:92–94, 94–97
 viscoelastic properties near, 15:93–97
 viscoelastic relaxation properties far below, 15:97, 98
 viscoelastic response far above, 15:98–103
- Glass transition, 14:83–85, **6:432–458**
 and acoustic properties, 1:70
 and sound absorption, 1:65
 and thermal stresses, 4:250
 and yield, 15:450, 451
 composite materials, 3:522–526
 definition, 6:432, 433
 detailed simulations of, 6:448, 449
 distortion under load, 6:435, 436
 double, in semicrystalline polymers, 12:400
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:621
 factors determining, 6:449–457
 key aspects of physics of, 6:440, 441
 measurement rate, role of, 6:437
 melt viscosity, 6:438
 molecular modeling, 8:616, 617
 other properties, 6:436, 437
 plasticized polymer properties, 6:439
 polymer blend properties, 6:438, 439
 polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:118, 119
 practical importance and measurement methods, 6:432–440
 quantitative structure-property relationships, 6:442–447
 semicrystalline polymer processing, 6:439
 semicrystalline polymer properties, 6:439, 440
 sound as probe of, 1:76–80
 tensile and shear elastic moduli, 6:434, 435
 theoretical considerations, 6:441, 442
 thermal conductivity, 6:437, 438
 thermal properties, 6:434
 thermoplastic elastomer properties, 6:440
 volumetric properties, 6:433, 434
- Glassy gels, 6:367
 Glassy materials, structural recovery or physical aging of, 15:159
 Glassy multicomponent systems
 thermodynamic properties, 14:90–92
 Glassy phase (state)
 polymer behavior in, 15:93
 Glassy polymers
 fatigue effects, 5:707
 fatigue life model, 5:704, 705
 fractography, 5:731
 history effects in, 14:350–361
 molecular modeling, 8:616, 617
 sorption models for, 14:334–342
 transport properties, 14:331–350
- Glc permeation chromatography
 fractionation, 6:250–257
 Gliadel implant, 3:755
 Glob-top coating, 5:67
 Global frequency factor, 6:44
 Global pyrolysis activation energy, 6:71
 Gloss, 9:402
 test methods, 13:778
 Glucans, 15:191
 β -D-Glucose residues
 in cellulose, 2:567, 575
 Glucose, from wood acid hydrolysis, 7:545
 Glucose- β -D-hydroquinone (arbutin), 5:266
 Glue, 1:427. *See also* Adhesives
 Glue resin mixes, 7:736
 Glulam beams
 characteristics and applications, 15:284
 Glutamic acid
 allyl protected, 11:74
tert-butyl protected, 11:71
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 cyclohexyl protected, 11:68
 (*N*-[1-(4,4-dimethyl-2,6-dioxocyclohexylidene)-3-methylbutyl]-amino-benzyl protected), 11:74
 fluorenylmethyl protected, 11:74
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
 Glutamine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 triphenylmethyl protected, 11:71
 9-xanthenyl protected, 11:68
 Glycerol, 6:787
 dielectric properties, 4:481, 482
 3-Glycidoxypropyltrimethoxysilane (GPS)
 coupling agent, 12:421
 γ -Glycidoxypropyltrimethoxysilane, 12:187
 Glycidyl-based resins, 5:300
 Glycidyl ester of versatic acid, 5:328
 Glycidyl esters, 5:328, 329
 Glycidyl ethers
 of hydrocarbon epoxy novolacs, 5:316, 317
 monofunctional and aliphatic, 5:323, 324
 of tetrakis(4-hydroxyphenyl)ethane, 5:317, 318
 Glycidyl methacrylate (GMA), 2:774, 775, 5:258, 329, 6:475
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 reaction extrusion, 11:646
 Glycidyl methacrylate-acrylic powder coatings, 5:390
 Glycine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
 Glycine-arginine-glycine-aspartic acid-serine (GRGDS), 8:186
 Glycogen, 6:461–466, 15:191
 biosynthesis, 6:462

- isolation, 6:463
metabolism in mammals, 6:465
occurrence, 6:461, 462
purification, 6:463
skeletal muscle, 6:466
structure and properties, 6:463–465
synthetase, 6:462
uses and functions, 6:465, 466
- Glycol-modified PCT (PCTG), 4:214
amorphous, 4:218, 219
processing and applications of, 4:220
- Glycol-modified PET (PETG), 4:215
amorphous, 4:218, 219
processing and applications of, 4:220
- Glycolide
ring opening polymerization, 12:137, 138
- Glycoluril resins, 1:524
- Glycopolymer brushes, 10:750–753
- Glycosaminoglycan hybrid polysaccharides, 5:236
- Glycosaminoglycans (GAGs), 5:232–235
- Glycosidase, 5:225
- Glyoxal, 1:415
poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:129, 130
- Glyoxal resins, 1:535, 536
- Glyoxylic acid, poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:129, 130
- GMA. *See* Glycidyl methacrylate (GMA)
- Gold nanoparticles, 8:789
- Gold pigments, 3:473
- Gordon-Taylor-Wood equation, 13:766
- Gore-Tex membrane, 7:750
- Gore-Tex, 6:725
- Gorham process, for parylenes synthesis, 2:763
- Gossypium arboreum*, 4:3
- Gossypium barbadense*, 4:3, 24
- Gossypium herbaceum*, 4:3
- Gossypium hirsutum*, 4:3
- Governmental requirements, for isocyanates. *See also* Regulation
- GPC. *See* Gel-permeation chromatography
- GPPS. *See* General-purpose PS (GPPS)
- GPx mimic microgel, 8:449
- Graded block copolymers
anionic polymerization, 1:641
- Graded-index polymer optical fibers, development of, 9:74–375
- Gradient copolymerization
living radical copolymerization, 3:790, 791
- Gradient copolymers
ATRP and, 1:732, 733
RAFT polymerization, 11:731
syntheses by RAFT polymerization (table), 11:732
- Gradient elution, 3:95, 96
- Gradient reversed-phase elution, 3:100
- Graetzel-type dye-sensitized solar cells, 12:649
- Graft chemistry, of ABS polymers, 1:322
- Graft copolymerization
metallocene-based, olefins with non-olefins, 8:131, 132
thermoplastic elastomers, 14:134
- Graft copolymers, 3:794–804, 6:467–518, 8:182
architecture of, 6:511, 512
ATRP for, 1:735, 736
chloroprene polymers, 3:49–50, 51
comb structure, 8:178, 179
compatibilization of polymer blends, 6:514, 515
exact, 6:505–507
grafting from methods, 6:468, 477–488
grafting onto methods, 6:468–470
industrial application potential of, 6:517, 518
lithographic applications, 6:515–517
macromonomer method, 6:468, 488–505
mechanical properties, 6:512–514
molecular weight, constitution, and composition, 6:510
nomenclature of, 6:468
overview, 6:467, 468
production/consumption, 6:518
purification and molecular characterization of, 6:507–509
random, 6:468
regular, 6:468, 505
ring opening polymerization, 12:137
simple, 6:468
solution properties, 6:510, 511
structural representation, 13:167–169
synthesis of, 6:468–470
use of, 6:468
with two trifunctional branch points, 6:468
- Graft polymerization, 1:166
chloroprene polymers, 3:49, 50
- Graft polymers, 7:640, 641
acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:167
nylon, 10:263
synthesis of, 3:207, :209
- Grafted chemical vapor deposition (gCVD), 2:768
- Grafted copolymers
NMR studies of segmental chain order, 9:260–263
- Grafting
of PS onto PB, 13:238
in ABS polymers, 1:324, 325
grafting from methods, 3:37, 795, 796
of graft copolymers synthesis, 6:468, 477–488
- Grafting onto methods, 3:37
of graft copolymers synthesis, 6:468–470
- “Grafting through” approaches, RAFT polymerization, 11:739
- Graham’s law of diffusion, 7:790
- Grain-type poromers, 7:498
finishing, 7:503
manufacture, 7:502
- Graphical computing, 8:572, 573
- Graphite
atomic structure, 2:431
specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Graphite-containing resins, as release agents, 11:705
- Graphite-epoxy, cross-ply
specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Graphite-epoxy, unidirectional
specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Graphite fiber
limiting oxygen value, 6:714
- Graphite fiber reinforcement, 11:691–693
- Graphitizable carbon fibers, 2:468
mesophase pitch-based, 2:477
- Graphitized carbon black, 2:433

- Graphitized submicrometer vapor-grown carbon fibers, 2:482, 483
- Gravity induced conveying, 5:641–643
- Gravity mixers, 3:555, 556
- Gravure coating, 3:268
cell patterns in, 3:281
- Gravure-print coating, 5:689, 689
- Grazing incidence X-ray diffraction (GIXRD), 10:407
- Greases
silicones, 12:464
- Green design, of plastics parts, 11:673, 674
- Green Dot system, 11:675
- Green pigments, 3:471
phthalocyanine, 3:482
- Green plastics, 2:72, 94, 95
- Green polymer chemistry (GPC), 5:260, 261
- Green tea, 5:272
- Greenwood-Williamson model, of scratch behavior, 12:322, 323
- Grela-type (R=NO₂) (118) catalysts, 8:157
- Griffith relationship, 2:713
- Grignard reagents, 7:36, 46
- GROMACS modeling package, 8:580
- GROMOS modeling package, 8:580
- Grooved feed extruders, 5:644–647
- Ground whitening
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Group additivity methods, in molecular modeling, 8:601
- Group IIIB metallocenes, 8:100, 101
- Group interaction modeling (GIM) approach, 6:444
- Group IVB metallocenes, 8:92, 93
- Group-transfer polymerization (GTP), 6:527–541, 7:630
bifunctional initiators, 6:532, 533
catalyst, 6:534–538
chemical structures, 5:535
conditions and typical procedure, 6:531, 532
glycidyl methacrylate (GMA), 6:528
initiator, 6:532–534
mechanism, 6:527
methacrylate monomers, 6:528
molecular weight, 6:539
N-heterocyclic carbenes (NHCs), 6:527
PMMA chain, tacticity of, 6:539
polymer architecture, 6:539, 540
prepared dispersing agents, 6:541
TASHF2, 6:534
tris(dimethylamino)sulfonium cation, 6:534
typical conventional systems (table), 6:529, 530
- Group VB metallocenes, 8:101, 102
- Group VIB metallocenes, 8:101, 102
- Growth stage, of emulsion polymerization, 13:271
- Grubbs catalyst, ruthenium-based, 4:56
- Grubbs-Hoveyda- (R=H) (116, 8:117, 157
- Grubbs-Hoveyda catalysts, 1:33
- Grubbs-type catalysts, 8:155, 156
- Grubbs/Johnson single-site catalyst, 5:564
- Gruneisen parameter, 1:70, 74, 92
- Guaiacyl lignins, 7:525, 534
- Guar galactomannan, 15:359, 360
- Guar gum
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Guaran, 15:192
- Guayule, 12:263
- Guayule latex, 12:270–276
applications, 12:280, 281
- Guayule rubber, 12:262–285
applications, 12:280–284
latex properties, 12:272–276
production, 12:270–272
- Guide to Macromolecular Terminology and Nomenclature*, 9:69
- Gum
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Gum Arabic, 15:192
- Gum ghatti, 15:192
- Gum stocks, 7:326
- Gum tragacanth, 15:192
- Gum viscosity, 6:169
- Gums, 1:429
- Guth-Gold model, 5:790
- Gynerium*
species with fiber potential, 14:497
- H-bonded supramolecular polymers, 13:448–458
self-regenerating gel, real-time imaging of, 13:451
- H-branched polystyrene, 13:189
- ¹H NMR spectroscopy, 7:533
- H₂
physical properties, 8:5
selective membranes, 8:14
- H. polymorpha*, 6:388
- HA synthase, 5:233
- HA. *See* Hyaluronic acid (HA), 6:388
- Haake-Rheocord extruder (PS), 3:394, 395
- Hackling, 14:500
- Half-life
free-radical initiators, 6:840
pesticides, 3:716, 717
thermal initiator, 11:505
- Half-step deformation
in DE model, 15:144–146
history, 15:124
- Half-step torque, 15:160
- Halobutyl rubber
compounding, 12:211
for tire compounding, 12:254
- Halogen-boron polymers, 7:44, 45
- Halogenated butyl rubber, 2:349, 357–360, 366
curing, 2:366
structure, 2:361
synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:390, 391
- Halogenated epoxy resins, 5:312, 313
- Halogenated polythionylphosphazenes, 7:48
- Halogenated resins, 3:337, 338
- Halogenation
of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:262
cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:228
- Halogermanes, 7:42, 43
- Halpin-Tsai equation, 11:683
- HALS. *See* Hindered amine light stabilizers (HALS)
- Hamaker constant, 6:643
- Hamilton-Goodman model, of scratch behavior, 12:323, 324
- Hand-casting knife, 7:748

- Handling
of acrylic and methacrylic acids, 1:159, 160
butadiene, 2:300
cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:231
- Hard clay
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Hard-core repulsion bond models, 8:577
- Hard-elastic fibers
olefin fibers, 9:361, 362
- “Hard phase in softer matrix” composite, wear, 13:521
- Hard-segment-determining blocks
in polyurethane shape-memory polymers, 12:416
shape-memory effect and, 12:413
- Hardening
melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:735–737
- Hardness, 6:544–558. *See also* Microhardness
of blends, 6:553, 554
creep behavior, 6:550–552
crystallinity in, role of, 6:547–549
definition, 6:544
depth sensing measurements, 6:557, 558
fillers, 5:786, 787
microindentation, 8:475
indentation and, 6:545–547
indentation anisotropy of oriented polymers, 6:554, 555
and mechanical properties, 6:552, 553
microhardness technique, 6:544, 547–550
nanoindentation testers, 6:545
numbers, 6:544
test, 6:544
test methods, 6:555–557
- Hardness testing, 13:775
- Harmonic generation, 9:129
measurement, 9:157, 158
- Harmonic mean method, 13:597
- Harmonic oscillator approximation, 3:622
- Hartmann function, 1:75
- Hartree-Fock theory, 3:596
- Harvesting
bast fibers, 14:500
guayule, 12:270
- HAS. *See* Hindered amine
- Havriliak-Negami model, 1:785, 85
- Haward-Thackray model, of yield, 15:467, 468
- Hazards in calendaring facilities, 2:388
- Hazards, acrylonitrile as, 1:264
- Haze, 9:397, 398
- HCl. *See* Hydrogen chloride
- HCN. *See* Hydrogen cyanide (HCN)
- HDA. *See* Hexamethylenediamine (HDA, HMDA)
- HDI. *See* 1,6-Hexamethylene diisocyanate;
Hexamethylene diisocyanate (HDI, HMDI)
- HDPE film blowing, 5:508–510
- HDPE. *See* High density polyethylene (HDPE)
- HDPE/VLDPE blend, 8:493
- HE (high efficiency) colloid resins, 1:540
- Headspace analysis, 13:760
- Healing, 1:367
- Health and safety factors. *See* Safety
- Heat aging
chloroprene polymers, 3:69–71
- Heat capacity
propylene polymers, 11:362
solids and liquids, 14:62–75
- Heat capacity spectroscopy
amorphous polymers, 1:588
- Heat deflection temperature, 6:435
- Heat-deflection temperatures, 5:210, 216
high, 4:217
- Heat distortion temperature (HDT), 6:435, 436
- Heat extraction load, 2:237–240
- Heat flux, 6:51
and burning, 6:60, 61
calibration of, 6:93
- Heat of combustion, thermodynamical calculations, 6:69
- Heat of polymerization
removal in heterophase polymerization, 6:595, 620
- Heat release capacity, 6:34, 35
by combustion per degree, 6:76
- Heat release rate
at firepoint, 6:57, 57
at flashpoint, 6:57, 57
for fire hazard quantification, 6:91, 92
in flaming combustion, 6:76
in steady flaming combustion, 6:61
- Heat resistance, of acrylic elastomers, 1:181
- Heat-resistant fibers, 6:717, 718
- Heat seal strength, of ethylene polymers, 5:552
- Heat setting
PET and PEN films, 10:504
- Heat-shrinkable materials, 12:416, 417
- Heat stabilizers, 1:356, 6:561–583
antimony mercaptide, 6:583
autoxidation, prevention of, 6:566, 567
development of, history of, 6:564–567
films, 5:807
hydrogen chloride, binding to, 6:564, 565
labile chlorine, replacement of, 6:565, 566
lead-based, 6:580–583
mixed metal, 6:574–579
organic, 6:579, 580
organotin-based, 6:568–574
polyunsaturated sequences, disruption of, 6:567
poly(vinyl chloride) and, 6:561–563
poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756, 757
use with UV stabilizers, 14:452
- Heat transfer
as a reactor operation, 5:190–194
in emulsion polymerization, 5:192
- Heat transfer fluid, 5:625
- Heat-treatment temperature, 11:692
- Heating (LCST), 12:756–763
temperature and molecular weight, influences of, 12:743
ternary interaction parameters, 12:753
- Heating bars, 4:476
- Heatsetting, after fiber drawing, 10:531, 532
- Heavy duty shipping sacks, 9:476
- Heavy-gauge thermoforming, 14:105, 106, 109–112
- Heavy metal ions, removal of, cyclodextrin polymers in, 4:201–203
- Hectrite, 5:795
- Heel, 10:199

- Heisenberg's uncertainty principle, 1:746
- Helical chirality, 3:23–25
- Helical crystals, 12:391, 392
- Helical peptides, CD of, 5:47
- Helical polymers, from disubstituted acetylenes
- Helical protein myoglobin, CD of, 5:48
- Helical supramolecular polymers, 13:448–450
- Helium
acrylonitrile permeability, 1:281
molecular volumes (table), 14:301
- Helix angle
of barrier flight, 5:663
for melt conveying, 5:651
of mixing and wiping flights, 5:665
of screw flight, 5:649, 651
- Helix inversion, 3:20, 21
- Helmholtz free energy, 4:650, 653, 13:76, 15:110, 111
- HEMA. *See* 2-Hydroxyethyl methacrylate (HEMA)
- Hemicellulose
biosynthesis, 2:569
in viscose manufacture, 2:677
- Hemodialysis
chitosan in, 3:41
- Hemp, 14:495
chemical composition, 14:498
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
mechanical properties, 14:499
processing, 14:502
textile-associated properties compared to polyester, 14:499
uses, 14:508
world production, 14:507
- Hencky strain, 12:4
- Henequen, 14:495
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
mechanical properties, 14:499
processing, 14:505
uses, 14:508
- Henis-Tripodi membrane, 7:759
- Henry's law coefficient, 7:791, 792
- Henry's law, 1:281
- Heparin, 15:194, 195
- Heparin/chitosan multilayer films, 13:562
- Hepatic glycogen, 6:466
- 1,6-Heptadiyne derivatives, 1:33
- 1,3,5,7,11, 13-Heptaethylcycloheptasiloxane
physical properties, 12:491
- 5-Heptafluoropropyl-1,3-bis[2-(2,3-epoxypropoxy)hexafluoro-2-propyl]benzene, 5:313
- Heptakis(2,6-di-*O*-methyl)- β -cyclodextrin (DIMEB)
- n*-Heptane
chain-transfer constant, 14:667
- Heptane
azeotrope with vinyl acetate, 14:654
transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Herman orientation function, 14:610
- Hertzian model, of scratch behavior, 12:321, 322
- Heteroaromatic ladder polymers
nonlinear optical properties, 9:156
- Heteroaromatics
electropolymerization, 5:124, 125
- Heterocyclic aromatics
oxidative polymerization, 9:448, 449
- Heterocyclic glycidyl amides, 5:321, 322
- Heterocyclic glycidyl imides, 5:321, 322
- Heterocyclic monomers
anionic polymerization, 1:599, 622–628
- Heterogeneity, 6:581, 582
- Heterogeneous binary blends
compliance of, 10:706, 707
ductile polymers, impact resistance, 10:715
shear yielding, 10:712, 713
yield and/or tensile strength, 10:707, 708
- Heterogeneous catalytic hydrogenation, 6:774, 775, 13:372
- Heterogeneous copolymerization
acrylonitrile, 1:240, 241
- Heterogeneous nucleation, 4:168
- Heterogeneous oxidation, 4:278
- Heterogeneous polymer blends, morphology of, 10:679
- Heterogeneous polymerization, 3:126
- Heterogeneous polymers
toughness enhancement in, 8:483–501
- Heterogeneous polypeptides, 8:417
- Heterogeneous ring opening polymerization, 12:149, 150
- Heterophase polymerization, 6:585–683. *See* Emulsion polymerization
average number of radicals per particle, 6:603–607
compartmentalized polymerization kinetics, 6:603–612
competitive growth of particles of different size, 6:610–612
continuous operation, 6:678, 679
controlled aggregation, 6:670–673
copolymerization, 6:653–659
dispersity influence, 6:607–610
dissolved gases, 6:634
economic importance, 6:584–588
emulsifiers, 6:599–603
hybrid polymer dispersions, 6:671
initiators, 6:620–625
in-line methods for analyzing, 6:679
kinetics, 6:599, 600, 607–616
multilayered particles, 6:665
necessary prerequisites in liquid dispersion media, 6:594
novel developments, 6:673–679
particle formation, 6:596–603
particle morphology, 6:659–670
particle size control, 6:625–631
particle swelling, 6:634–638
peculiarities of, 6:588–595
polymerization chemistry applied, 6:615
procedures, 6:618–620
process models, 6:675, 676
reaction calorimetry, 6:676–678
reactors, 6:614–618
recipes, 6:612–614
shrinkage of monomer-swollen particles, 6:640–642
stabilization and stabilizers, 6:624–629, 644–657
technique overview, 6:583
water solubility of monomers, 6:632, 635–637
- Heterophase polymerization. *See* Emulsion polymerization
- Heterosynergism, 13:43
- Heterotelechelic PB-*b*-PEO-*b*-PFPO terpolymer, 6:745

- Heterovalent ion exchange, 7:164, 167
- Hevea brasiliensis* tree, rubber from, 7:458, 12:262
 biosynthesis of rubber, 12:263–270
- Hexa(methoxymethyl)melamine (HMMM) resins, 1:538
- Hexachlorocyclopentadiene, 4:234, 235
- Hexachlorocyclotriphosphazene
 polymerization, 11:98, 99
- Hexadecamethylcyclooctasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Hexadecyltriethoxysilane, 12:189
- 1,4-Hexadiene
 ethylene-propylene elastomer monomer, 5:595
- Hexafluoroisopropylidene groups, 6:156
- Hexafluoropropylene (F2C CFCF3), 6:131, 132
- Hexafluoropropylene (HFP), 4:50, 6:161. *See also* HFP
- Hexafluoropropylene, 9:487–489
 copolymerization of, 9:489–491
 MFR of, 9:489, 490
 properties of HFP, 9:488, 489
 safety precautions for, 9:497
- Hexahydrophthalic anhydride
 curing agent, 5:354
- Hexamethylcyclotrisiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Hexamethyldisiloxane (HMDSO)-oxygen plasmas,
 10:16
- Hexamethyldisiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Hexamethylene bis-thiosulfate disodium salt
 dihydrate, 12:182
- Hexamethylene diisocyanate (HDI, HMDI). *See also*
 HDI
- Hexamethylene diisocyanate (HMDI), 4:210
- 1,6-Hexamethylene diisocyanate, 1:422
- Hexamethylenediamine (HDA, HMDA), 4:211
- Hexamethylenetetramine (hexa)
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:581
- 1-Hexene
 metallocene-based copolymerization with ethylene,
 8:107
 stereospecific polymerization (table), 13:110
- Hexene copolymer LLDPE, 5:554
- n*-Hexyl acrylate
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization,
 6:628
- HFF device, 8:424
- HFFS equipment, 9:472
- HFFS packaging. *See* Horizontal form/fill/seal (HFFS)
 packaging
- HFP copolymers, 4:50
- HFP. *See* Hexafluoropropylene (HFP)
- Hi-Res TGA, 13:821
- Hibiscus*
 species with fiber potential, 14:497
- Hierarchical structures, natural reinforcement by,
 11:679
- High activity vapors
 transport in semicrystalline rubbery polymers,
 14:329–331
- High barrier polymers
 chemical structures and properties, 2:33–44
- High-bulk acrylic fibers, 1:250
- High clarity shrink film, 9:476–478
- High color carbon blacks
 surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- High conversion polymerization, of styrene, 13:244
- High cycle fatigue regime, 5:701–703
- High density polyethylene (HDPE), 2:215, 4:54, 91, 92,
 5:484, 511, 557. *See also* Ethylene polymers
- blow molding, 10:85
- catalysts used for, 5:487–491
- chemical resistance, 5:502
- commercial applications of, 5:507–511, 557
- commercial grades, properties of, 5:494, 495
- crystallinity of, 5:469
- degradation, 5:502, 503
- degradation processes in landfills, 4:245
- demand for, 5:484, 486
- elastic constants, 1:90
- fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:727
- film properties, 5:806
- flash devolatilization application, 6:100
- fracture energy, 6:824
- fracturing process, 5:493
- gas diffusion in, 8:305
- health and safety of, 5:511
- history of, 5:485–487
- impact resistance improvement, 6:831
- intercrystallite links, role of, 5:501, 502
- low molecular weight, 5:500, 501
- manufacturing processes, 5:503–507
- market comparison for, 5:529
- mechanical properties, 5:499–502
- melting temperature, 10:69
- melt stabilization of, 13:21, 22
- mixed waste streams, 11:668
- moderate barrier polymer, 2:46
- permeability prediction, 2:32
- photo-oxidation of, 13:10
- polymerization mechanism and reactor control,
 5:491–493
- polymerization reactors, 2:284
- properties of barrier, 2:34, 35
- recycling, 11:657–675
- rheology and long-chain branching, 5:495–498
- rotomolding applications, 5:511
- short-chain branching, 5:493, 495
- solid-state extrusion, 12:685, 689, 693
- sound absorption, 1:88
- sound speeds, 1:85
- spherulites, 5:498
- structure of, 5:493–499
- synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:508,
 509
- synthesis of, 5:468
- temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:87
- tensile strength, 5:500, 501
- thermoforming, 14:121
- times to failure of, 6:328
- U.S. usage of, 5:485
- worldwide usage of, 5:485
- High density polyethylene, cellular
 commercial products and processes, 2:557, 558
 physical properties of commercial, 2:529
- High diene rubbers (HDR), 7:330, 331

- High efficiency (HE) colloid resins, 1:540
- High energy radiation
degradation caused by, 4:287–290
- High energy radiation cure
silicones, 12:483, 484
- High fiber volume fraction, strength of composites with, 11:684
- High field electron spin resonance spectroscopy, 5:7, 8
- High flux asymmetric cellulose acetate membranes, 5:827
- High frequency oscillator, 5:111
- High fructose corn syrup, 7:189
- High genus vesicles, 14:534, 535
- High heat-deflection temperatures, 4:217
- High internal phase emulsions, 10:595
- High impact polystyrene (HIPS), 6:518, 8:484, 13:196, 197, 201
anioxidant applications, 1:711
creation of, 13:185, 186
deformation of, 8:486
impact resistance improvement, 6:823–828
load-deflection behaviour, 6:819
manufacture of, 13:232, 238, 240, 248, 254
mechanical properties of, 13:181
moderate barrier polymer, 2:48, 49
oxidative degradation, 4:280, 281
photo-oxidation of, 13:9, 10
strain-energy release rates, 6:824
stress-strain properties of, 13:182, 183
styrene-butadiene block copolymers and, 13:283
tensile impact, 6:813–815
thermoforming, 14:125
thermoforming of, 13:247
- High impact polystyrene, cellular
physical properties of commercial, 2:529
- High-melt strength polypropylene, reaction extrusion (REX), 11:637
- High-mobility polymers, 9:754
- High modulus carbon fibers, 2:467, 468
- High molecular weight cyclic polymers, 7:678–680
- High molecular weight isobutylene-isoprene copolymer elastomers, 7:331
- High molecular weight PLA, 10:166, 167
- High molecular weight plastics, extrusion of, 5:645
- High molecular weight polymers, 11:682, 694, 695, 12:417
in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:58
- High molecular weight polynorbornene, 12:417
- High molecular weight polystannanes, 7:42
- High ortho novolak phenolic resins
manufacture, 9:589
synthesis, 9:583, 584
- High performance (HP) polymers, 5:200, 202, 203
- High performance adhesives, 1:426, 427
- High performance carbon fibers, 2:467, 468, 480
- High performance fibers, 6:702–731
carbon nanotubes, 6:714, 715
classification by application, 6:720–727
gel-spun fibers, 6:710, 711
limiting oxygen value (table), 6:713
modified carbon fibers, 6:712–714
rigid-rod polymers, 6:698–710
silicon carbide ceramic fibers, 6:714
structure-property relationships, 6:716–720
vitreous fibers, 6:715
- High performance liquid chromatography (HPLC), 3:88–101, 8:319
applications for, 3:99–101
for composition and structure determination, 13:759
forensics applications, 6:179
instrumentation for, 3:88–93
molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:689–693
for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:674
phenolic resins, 9:597
retention mechanism and modes of separation in, 3:93–97
stationary and mobile phases in, 3:90, 91
theory of, 3:97–99
- High-pressure membrane modules, 7:770
- High pressure polymerization, 5:468
- High resiliency (HR) slabstock foam. *See also* Slabstock foam
- High shear impellers, 5:191
- High shear mixing, of colorants, 3:492, 493
- High shrink fibers, 10:520
- High solids oxidizing alkyds, 1:488, 489
- High solids solvent-borne epoxy coatings, 5:386
- High speed burnishing, polishes for, 6:112
- High speed graphical computing, 8:572, 573
- High speed spinning, 10:528, 529
- High strength acrylic fibers, 1:226, 251
- High strength fibers, 5:681
high performance fibers, 6:717
olefin fibers, 9:361
- High tenacity staple fibers
viscose rayon, 2:685
- High tensile carbon fibers, 2:467, 468
- High-throughput emulsificator, 413
- High vinyl polybutadiene, 2:315, 316
- High volume instrument systems, 4:14, 15
- High wet modulus rayon, 2:676
- Higher α -olefins, stereospecific polymerization, 13:107–111
- Higher molar mass antioxidants, safer and more efficient stabilization via, 13:36, 37
- Highest occupied molecular orbital (HOMO), 12:627
- Highest thermal transition, of shape-memory polymers, 12:413
- Highly dispersible silicas
silica-to-rubber coupling agent, 12:185
- Highly oriented pyrolytic graphite (HOPG)
- Highly oriented yarns, 10:251
- Highly sensitive optical sensor, creation of, 5:159
- Highly structured, functional microscale systems
by molecular self-assembly, 8:648–654
- Hildebrand solubility parameter, 10:44
- Hildebrand's solubility parameter, 8:529
- Himicola insolens* (HiC), 5:260
- Hindered amine light stabilizers (HALS), 3:310, 485, 14:452, 465, 466, 474, 475
as antioxidants, 13:15, 17, 33, 34, 45
monomeric, 14:467
noninteractive, 14:477, 478
polymeric, 14:467, 475–477
triazine, 14:478

- Hindered amines
radical scavengers, 1:694, 695
- Hindered bisphenols
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Hindered phenols
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
as antioxidants, 13:13, 14, 20–26
radical scavengers, 1:690–693
- Hindered piperidines, 13:45
- Hindered thiobisphenols
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- HIPE. *See* High internal phase emulsions, 10:595
chain-growth polymerization, 10:600, 601
formation and stability, 10:596–598
porous structure, 10:595
stability, 10:597, 598
two-phase structure, 10:595
- HIPS resins, 13:196, 197
- HIPS, “salami” rubber particles, 10:712
- HIPS. *See* High Impact Polystyrene
- HiSil 233
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Histidine (benzyloxymethyl protected), 11:69
- Histidine (triphenylmethyl protected), 11:72
- Histidine
chemical structure, 15:186
composition in silk, 12:543
percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Histogram reweighting, 8:596
- HIV treatment, polylysine dendrimers for, 4:314, 315
- HMDA. *See* Hexamethylenediamine (HDA, HMDA)
- HMDI. *See* 1,6-Hexamethylene diisocyanate;
Hexamethylene diisocyanate (HDI, HMDI);
Hydrogenated MDI (HMDI)
- HMMM resins. *See* Hexa(methoxymethyl)melamine
(HMMM) resins
- HO-BVT triblock terpolymer thin film, 3D
reconstruction, 12:310, 311
- HOC. *See* Heat of Combustion
- Hofmann reaction, of poly(acrylamide), 1:130, 131
- Hohenberg-Kohn theorem, 3:612
- Hollow-carbon spheres, 8:507
- Hollow fiber artificial kidney dialyser, 7:802
- Hollow-fiber membrane modules, 7:768, 769
- Hollow fiber membranes, 5:829, 830
preparation of, 5:841
- Hollow-fiber membranes, 7:765–768
- Hollow-fiber modules, 7:793
- Hollow-fiber systems, 12:363
- Hollow fibers, 6:718, 10:522
- Hollow-fine-fiber membranes, 7:784
- Hollow glass fibers, 12:363
- Hollow microspheres, 8:505
composition and physical properties of (table), 8:506
economic aspects, 8:509
effect of (table), 8:508
manufacture, 8:505
uses, 8:507
- Holocellulose, 2:569
- Hologen atoms, molar inhibition efficiency, 6:39
- Hologram erasability, 9:757
- Holographic interferometry, 13:781
- Holographic time-of-flight (HTOF) measurements,
9:765
- Homo-polypeptide sequences, 11:434
- Homogeneous anionic polymerization, 7:307
- Homogeneous batch free-radical polymerization, basic
rate equation, 5:169
- Homogeneous catalysts, 8:151
- Homogeneous catalytic hydrogenation, 6:772–774
- Homogeneous copolymerization
acrylonitrile, 1:239, 240
- Homogeneous nucleation model, 5:167, 168
- Homogeneous nucleation, 4:168, 6:598
- Homogeneous phase, 6:583
- Homogeneous polymerization
in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:49, 50
- Homopolymer surface tension, 13:578–584
empirical prediction, 13:578–580
molecular weight dependence, 13:580, 581
theories of, 13:581–584
- Homopolymerization
of acrylonitrile, 1:274, 275
of derivatives, 5:614
- Homopolymers, 8:512
amorphous, 8:477–482
classification of types, 2:733
LDPE, 5:516
PVDF, 15:56, 61, 64–67
sample preparation for polymer characterization,
2:734
structural representation, 13:161, 162
- Homosynergism, 13:44
- Honeycombs
phenolic resin applications, 9:578, 617
- Hooke’s law, 13:772, 15:451
- Hookean material, 4:638. *See also* Neo-Hookean
material
- Hoop ratio, 2:253
- Hoop stress, 6:329
- HOPDMS/PDES healing agent
blend, 12:357
system, 12:355, 356
- HOPG. *See* Highly oriented pyrolytic graphite (HOPG)
- Horizontal form/fill/seal (HFFS) packaging, 9:472
- Horizontal form/fill/seal (HFFS), 9:472
- Horn, natural reinforcement of, 11:679
- Horse radish peroxidase
oxidative polymerization, 9:437
- Horse shoe die, 5:676
- Horse shoe manifold, 5:677
- Horseradish peroxidase (HRP), 5:264
- Hoses
PEN fibers, 10:153
- Hosiery, stretch, 10:259
- Host-guest chemistry, 4:450, 451
- Host-guest strategy, 4:454, 455
- Hostavin N-30, 14:471
- Hostavin PR-31, 14:472
- Hot-box binders, 6:198
- Hot flocking, 3:254
- Hot melt adhesives
for wood composites, 15:290
- Hot-melt adhesives, 1:404
- Hot-melt coatings, 3:284

- Hot-melt shell formulations, 8:388
- Hot plasmas, 10:2, 13:528
- Hot pressing, 1:524
- Hot rolling, 2:375. *See also* Calendering
- Hot runner tips, in injection molding
- Hot stamping foils, 11:706
- Hot tack, 9:470
- Household floor polishes, 6:110, 111
- Howard process, 7:539
- HP polymers. *See* High performance (HP) polymers
- HPIMM, 8:328, 339
- HPLC instrumentation, 3:88–93
- HPLC. *See* High performance liquid chromatography (HPLC)
- HQ. *See* Hydroquinone (HQ)
- HRP. *See* Heat Release rate
- for sustained burning, 6:67
- HRP. *See* Horseradish peroxidase (HRP)
- HRR. *See* Heat release rate
- of plastics, *vs.* char yield of polymers, 6:65, 65
- HUFT theory. *See* Homogeneous nucleation
- Humidity
- effects on permeation, 2:20, 21
- Hyaluronic acid (HA), 5:232, 233, 15:194
- Hyaluronidase (HAase), 5:232
- Hybrane™, 6:781
- Hybrid anion exchangers, 7:169
- Hybrid coating processes, 3:268
- Hybrid ion exchange resins, 7:169
- Hybrid ion exchangers (HIXs), 7:159
- Hybrid lipid polymeric nanoparticles, 8:432
- Hybrid nanospheres, 8:277
- Hybrid organic-inorganic polymers, AFM imaging of, 1:777, 778
- Hybrid particles, 5:184
- Hybrid polyHIPEs, calcination of, 10:611
- “Hybrid polymer composites”, wear, 13:522
- Hybrid solar cell, 12:649
- Hydantoin-based epoxy resins, 5:322
- Hydrated alumina
- filler material, 5:785
- Hydrated aluminum oxide
- filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
- filler properties, 5:380
- Hydrated Nafion, 14:367
- Hydration
- nitrile group, 1:262
- of polyacrylonitrile, 1:282
- Hydraulic ejector systems, 3:580
- Hydraulic screen changers, 5:627
- Hydrazine, phosgene reactions with, 9:626
- 2-Hydrazinonicotinoyl (HYNIC), 8:801
- Hydrazodicarbonamide, 2:264, 265
- Hydro-biodegradation, 4:291–293
- Hydrocarbon-bridged [2]ferrocenophanes, 7:58
- Hydrocarbon-bridged [2]ruthenocenophanes, 7:58
- Hydrocarbon epoxy novolacs, 5:316, 317
- Hydrocarbon PEDOT derivatives, 13:420
- Hydrocarbon removal, from methane, 5:836
- Hydrocarbon resins
- from dicyclopentadiene, 4:232
- synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:390, 419, 420
- Hydrocarbons
- oxidation of, 13:2
- as release agents, 11:705
- SIMS spectra, 13:483, 484
- Hydrocellulose, 2:575
- Hydrodimerization
- acrylonitrile polymers, 1:265
- Hydrodynamic volume, 2:735, 742, 15:175, 176
- and fractionation, 6:253
- Hydroentanglement, 9:226
- Hydroformylation
- acrylonitrile polymers, 1:265
- Hydrogel polyHIPEs, 10:606
- Hydrogel scaffold polymers, 14:223
- Hydrogels, 4:97, 6:734–768, 9:2. *See also* Gels
- cross-linking in, 4:97–99
- free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:743
- in vitro* cross-linking, 4:98
- in vivo* cross-linking, 4:98, 99
- thermochromic, 14:39, 41
- Hydrogen abstraction, 6:836
- during PS polymerization, 13:191, 237
- ionizing source and photoinitiation, 6:861
- thermal initiation, 6:835
- Hydrogen bonded amides, 4:447, 448
- Hydrogen bonded sheets, in nylons, 9:785
- Hydrogen bonding
- with dendritic interiors, 4:325–327, 328
- in dendritic periphery, 4:327–331, 351
- Lehn’s 3-point, in molecular self-assembly, 8:639, 640
- of poly(acrylamide), 1:120, 121
- Hydrogen chloride scavengers, as antioxidants, 13:15, 22, 24, 25
- Hydrogen chloride, 5:479
- Hydrogen cyanide
- commercial acrylonitrile from, 1:267
- phosgene reactions with, 9:625
- Hydrogen-donating antioxidants, 1:690
- Hydrogen fluoride, 14:768
- Hydrogen uranyl phosphate
- layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
- Hydrogenated block copolymers, 7:322–324
- Hydrogenated nitrile rubber (HNBR), 8:189
- Hydrogenated polymers, 6:768
- Hydrogenated polystyrene, 13:195
- Hydrogenation, 6:768–775
- of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:264
- cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:227
- metallocene-based, 8:135
- Hydrolases, 5:222
- Hydrolysis
- of acrylonitrile polymers, 1:265
- nitrile group, 1:262
- phosphite esters and, 13:26–28
- of poly(acrylamide), 1:127, 128
- polyamide, 10:280, 281
- Hydrolysis resistance
- melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:731–733
- Hydrolytic degradation, 3:266, 4:290, 291, 13:6–8
- of polyester fiber, 10:514
- Hydrolytic depolymerization technique, 4:442
- Hydrolytic stability
- of pct-based polymers, 4:218

- Hydrolytically degradable plastic, 2:73
- Hydrolyzable chloride
uncured epoxy resins, 5:332–334
- Hydroperoxide concentration, in polymer oxidation, 13:2, 3
- Hydroperoxide decomposer UV stabilizers, 14:479
- Hydroperoxide decomposition, 13:16
- Hydroperoxides
in cold SBR production, 13:273
free-radical initiators, 1:688
as photoinitiators, 13:9
role in oxidative degradation, 4:273, 274
- Hydrophilic corona, 8:272
- Hydrophilic-hydrophobic copolymers, 11:732
- Hydrophilic nanoparticles, 8:786
- Hydrophilic polyHIPEs, 10:600
scanning electron micrographs, 10:606
- Hydrophilic “brush” layer, 5:849
- Hydrophobe temperature, 1:527
- Hydrophobic alkali-soluble polymers, 1:165, 166
- Hydrophobic antifoams, 1:664–666
hydrophobic oil antifoams, 1:664
hydrophobic oil/particles antifoams, 1:664–666
organic-based antifoams, 1:665, 666
polyorganosiloxanes, 1:666
silicone-based antifoams, 1:666
- Hydrophobic effect, 8:274
- Hydrophobic ethoxylated urethane (HEUR) APs, 6:739
- Hydrophobic flavors, 8:395
- Hydrophobic forces, 8:640
- Hydrophobic oil antifoams, 1:664
- Hydrophobic oil/particles antifoams, 1:664–666
- Hydrophobic rubbery polymers, 8:21
- Hydrophobic silica
as release agent, 11:704
- Hydrophobic zeolites, 8:22
- Hydrophobically associating polymers, acrylamide copolymers as, 1:141
- Hydrophobically modified ethylhydroxyethylcellulose (HMEHEC), 2:660
- Hydrophobically modified (HM) water-soluble polymers, 6:735
- Hydrophobically modified acrylics, 1:216
- Hydrophobically modified polyampholytes, 10:304
- Hydroquinone, 1:159
acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Hydrosilylation, 12:469, 478, 479–482
- Hydrosilylation self-healing chemistry, 12:361–363
- Hydrostatic coextrusion, 12:686, 687
- Hydrostatic effects
and nonideal transport effects, 14:313–319
- Hydrostatic tensions, 6:321
- Hydrotalcite, 5:478, 6:565
in stabilizer formulation, 6:577
- Hydrous metal oxides
layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
- Hydroxy-crotonyl-aminomethyl resin (HYCRAM), 11:77
- Hydroxy propyl
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
N-hydroxy succinimide (NHS)-ester, 8:796
β-Hydroxyalkylamide, 5:389
2-Hydroxyalkylamides, 3:339
- Hydroxybenzophenone-based antioxidants, 13:38
- 2-Hydroxybenzophenone UV stabilizers, 14:456
- 2-Hydroxybenzophenone, as ultraviolet absorber, 13:17, 18, 30
- Hydroxybutyl methacrylate
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
- Hydroxybutyl-terminated oligomers, 7:687
- 2-Hydroxyethyl methacrylate (HEMA), 8:445, 353
- Hydroxyethyl methacrylate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
- Hydroxyethylcellulose
applications, 2:658
cationic, 2:659, 660
economic aspects, 2:657
enzymatic stability, 2:650
hydrophobic, 2:660
manufacture, 2:657
mixed ether derivatives, 2:658, 659
properties, 2:655–657
test methods, 2:657, 658
water-soluble polymer, 15:196
- Hydroxyethylethylcellulose, 2:663–665
applications, 2:665
- 1-(2-Hydroxyethylthio)-1,3-butadiene
chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
- Hydroxyhexyl methacrylate
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Hydroxyl-terminated hyperbranched polyurethanes (HBPU)s, 4:87, 88
- Hydroxyl/vinyl end groups, 9:6
- Hydroxylamines
as antioxidants, 13:13
peroxide decomposers, 1:700
poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:130
radical scavengers, 1:695, 696
- 9-(Hydroxymethyl)-2-fluoreneacetic acid (HMFA), 11:76
- 5-(4-Hydroxymethyl-3,5-dimethoxyphenoxy)valeric acid (HAL), 11:77
- Hydroxymethylation, 1:521
- 3-(4-Hydroxymethylphenoxy)propionic acid (PAB), 11:77
- 4-Hydroxymethylphenylacetic acid (PAM), 11:76
- Hydroxyoctyl methacrylate
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- 2-Hydroxyphenyl-s-triazines UV stabilizers, 14:456
- 2-Hydroxyphenylbenzotriazole UV stabilizers, 14:456
- Hydroxypropyl cellulose (HPC), 2:780
- Hydroxypropyl methacrylate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
- Hydroxypropylcellulose
applications, 2:667
economic aspects, 2:667
liquid crystals, 2:591
manufacture, 2:667
properties, 2:665, 666
test methods, 2:667
water-soluble polymer, 15:196

- Hydroxypropylmethylcellulose
water-soluble polymer, 15:196
- Hydroxytelechelic polybutadiene, 2:305
- 11-Hydroxyundecanoic acid, 5:238
- Hydrozirconation
metallocene-based, 8:133
- Hygroscopic materials, extrusion of, 5:667
- Hygroscopic plastics, 5:668
- Hypalon, 40, 5:482
- Hyper-cross-linked polymers
structural representation, 13:169
- Hyperbranched networks, in ATRP, 1:737
- Hyperbranched polydiynes, 1:53
- Hyperbranched polymers, 4:300, 6:781–800 8:340. *See also* Dendronized polymers
- AFM imaging of, 1:771, 772
- analytical and test methods for, 6:790, 791
- constituents in, 6:790
- monomers of, 6:778–782
- properties of, 6:782–785
- ring-opening procedures to, 6:786–788
- structural representation, 13:169
- synthesis of, 6:785–790
- as tougheners for epoxy-based composites, 6:794
- uses for, 6:791–795
- Hyperbranched polystyrene, 13:189
- Hyperbranched resins, 6:792, 793
- Hyperbranched structures, 7:663
- Hypercrosslinked polymers, 11:2
- Hyperelastic material, 15:110
- Hypersonic waves, 1:61
- Hysteresis absorption, 1:71, 72
and acoustic properties, 1:71, 72
- Hysteresis, in TMAFM, 1:754
- Hysteretic behavior, of piezoelectric materials, 9:782
- Hysteretic energy loss, 1:385
- Hysteretic heating
and low cycle fatigue, 5:698–701
- Hückel calculations, 7:65
- I-joists
wood composite, 15:298, 299
- i-PMMA and s-PMMA
binary blend, 13:658
with diblock- or triblockcopolymer, stereocomplexes
13:660
- i-PMMA, 13:656
- i-PMMA/PLLA blend, 13:657, 667
- i-PP, 13:661
- i-PP/s-PP, 13:662
- i-PS, 13:664–668
- i-PS/s-PS blends, 13:662, 663
- I. G. Farben, 10:238, 13:269
- IA. *See* Isophthalic acid (IA, IPA)
- ICA. *See* Isotropically conductive adhesives (ICA)
- ICAC. *See* International Cotton Advisory Committee (ICAC)
- ICAR. *See* Initiators for continuous activator regeneration (ICAR)
- Ice bags, 9:476
- Ice packaging, 9:476
- ICL. *See* Isophthaloyl chloride (ICL)
- Icon, 3:728
- iCVD. *See* Initiated chemical vapor deposition (iCVD)
- Identical layers, Mueller matrix expression, 12:675–677
- α -L-Idopyranosyl-uronic acid, 15:188
- IEC 243–1, 13:770
- IEC 250, 13:770
- IEC 93, 13:770
- Ignition properties
test methods, 13:770
- Ignition-resistant polystyrene, 13:188
- Ignition suppression agents, as polystyrene additives,
13:249
- Ignition temperatures
for styrene polymers, 13:254
- Ignition tests, 6:53, 56, 80, 86
at constant external heat flux, 6:60
chemical criteria, 6:56, 57
heat flux, sensitivity to, 6:72
higher heat flux requirement, 6:60, 61
resistance, 6:35
thermal criteria, 6:58, 59
thermal decomposition temperature, correlation
between, 6:71, 72
vs. decomposition temperature, 6:73, 73
Ignition, time to, *vs.* external heat flux, 6:60
- ILSS test. *See* Interlaminar shear strength (ILSS) test
- Image blur, in CA resists, 7:603, 604
- Imaging SIMS, 10:14
- Imaging, with AFM, 1:748–753
- Immersion technique
for acoustic measurements, 1:95–97
- Immiscible or partially miscible polymers
binary blends, 10:701, 702
heterogeneous blends, 10:701, 702
- Immiscible polymer blend, 10:674
- Immiscible polymers, compatibilization of, 10:680
- Immobilization, 8:159
- Impact jet, 8:330
microreactor setup, 8:324
online monitoring, 8:354–357
polymer synthesis, 8:324
split and recombine, 8:330
- Impact modifiers, 1:349, 6:665
nylon, 10:284
use with UV stabilizers, 14:452
- Impact polystyrene, 6:518
- Impact properties
LLDPE, 5:576
- Impact resistance, 6:803–836
flexed-beam impact, 6:817–823
flexed-plate impact, 6:815–817
improving, 6:823–832
product testing, 6:812, 813
tensile impact, 6:813–815
testing machines and techniques, 6:800–812, 13:773
- Impact-resistant polypropylene, 11:354
- Impact strength, of styrene polymers, 13:184–186
- Impacting testing, 2:749
- Impedance, 4:481
- Impellers, 5:191
- Impingement process, for carbon black, 2:450
- Implant materials
shape-memory polymers in, 12:409
stimuli-sensitive, 12:409
- Impregnation, 5:691

- Impression/duplicating materials, 4:384–388
 agar, 4:385
 alginates, 4:385
 mechanical properties, 4:388
 polyethers, 4:386, 387
 polysulfides, 4:386
 silicones, 4:387, 388
 synthetic elastomers, 4:385, 386
- Impurities
 imaging vibrational spectroscopy, 14:599–607
- IMR system
 processes, 8:383
 technology, 8:383
- In-chain functionality, 13:484–486
- In-line annular die, 5:673
- In-line filtration, 7:777
- In-line shaping, 5:639
- In-line tubing die, 5:629
- In-mold decorating, 7:9
- In-mold labeling, 2:255
- In-plane shear modulus
 composite materials, 3:546
- In situ* diffuse reflectance (DR) CD, 12:660
- In situ* generated particles, 9:33
- In situ* generated silica fillers, 9:33
- In situ* polymerization, 8:458
 of polymer blends, 4:54
- In situ* reaction, 8:151
- In situ* SFM measurements, 12:301
- In vitro* enzymatic reactions, 5:224
- In vitro* polymer synthesis, 5:221
- In vivo* enzymatic reactions, 5:224, 225
- Incipient burning, at firepoint, 6:57, 57
- Inclusion yielding, 8:485
- Inclusions, gas, 6:295
- Incompatible radiopacifiers, 11:618
- Incompressible materials, 15:112, 153
- Incorporation of colorants, 3:491, 492
- Indene carboxylic acid photoproducts, 5:81
- Indene-coumarone resins
 synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:419
- Indentation
 and scratch behavior, 12:326, 329
- Indentation anisotropy values, 6:554, 555
- Indentation testing, for polymers hardness, 6:544
- Independent alignment assumption (IA), in DE model, 15:127, 138
- Index of refraction, 3:472, 5:206, 9:751. *See also*
 Refractive index
- Indiana Stirring Oxidation Test (ISOT) JISK2514, 1:716
- Indirect-drive extruder, 5:630, 631
- Indium tin oxide (ITO), 7:510, 515
- Induced elastic stress, in shape-memory polymers, 12:417
- Induced shape-memory, 12:416
- Induction period
 oxidative degradation, 4:273
- Inductively coupled plasma atomic emission spectroscopy (ICP-AES), 8:443
- Industrial applications
 for polyamide plastics, 10:292
 for polyketones, 10:667
- Industrial cleaning, with lignosulfonates, 7:542
- Industrial coated fabrics, 5:692
- Industrial fibers, modulus tenacity map for, 10:234
- Industrial filament yarns, PET, 10:512
- Industrial hose, 5:482
- Industrial lignins, 7:538–545
- Industrial liners, LLDPE, 5:578
- Industrial maintenance coatings
 epoxy resins, 5:390–392
- Industrial packaging, 9:476
- Industrial plywood
 characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Industrial polishes, 6:111
- Industrial suspension polymerizations, monitoring and control, 13:625
- Inelastic scattering, 2:750
- Inextensible fibers, pullout of, 1:390, 391
- Infacial polymerization, 5:840, 841
- Infinite dilution, 8:557
- Infinite sheet, 6:303
- Infinite time modulus, of solid-like polymers, 15:155
- Infinitesimal strain tensor, 15:78
- Inflatable toys, fabrication of, 14:249
- Infrared absorption spectroscopy, 14:564, 565, 15:367
 imaging spectroscopy, 14:600
 normal vibrations, 14:568–574
 for structural characterization, 14:564, 565, 575, 594–599
- Infrared electrochromics
 electrically active polymers for, 4:768
- Infrared spectroscopy, 2:736
 for crystallinity determination, 4:157
- Ignition temperature, of polymers, 6:46, 47, 49
- Inherent hydrophobicity, 8:21
- Inherent viscosity, 10:214–216
- Inhibition
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:736
 radical polymerization, 11:577–583
- Inhibitors, of styrene polymerization, 13:221
- Inhomogeneities, 6:295
- Inhomogeneous media
 acoustic properties, 1:72, 73
- Iniferters, 6:858, 9:740, 11:528, 13:680, 681
- Initial modulus, of a fiber, 10:241
- Initiated chemical vapor deposition (iCVD), 2:765–768.
See also Chemical vapor
- Initiation
 anionic polymerization by electron transfer, 1:601–604
 anionic polymerization by nucleophilic addition, 1:604–608
 butyl rubber synthesis, 2:350
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:394–399, 402, 403
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:706–710
 crazing, 15:481–487
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:732–734
 heterophase polymerization, 6:599, 607, 608, 624–629
 latexes, 7:464, 465
 living anionic polymerization, 1:597
 in polymer oxidation, 13:4
 of propagation reactions, 13:2–4
 radical polymerization, 11:504–516
 styrene/diene anionic polymerization, 1:609–611

- uninhibited autoxidation, *1:687–689*
- vinyl acetate polymerization, *14:666*
- Initiator efficiency, *11:515, 516*
- Initiator fragment, in cold SBR production, *13:273*
- Initiators
 - latexes, *7:464, 465, 469, 470*
 - oxidative degradation, *4:271*
 - polyketone synthesis, *10:656–658*
 - for polystyrene manufacture, *13:190, 217, 218*
 - in PVC production, *14:732–735, 746*
 - for styrene-butadiene block copolymers, *13:281*
 - for telechelic polymers, *13:672–676*
 - Injection blow mold, *2:223*
- Initiators for continuous activator regeneration (ICAR), *1:728*
- Initiators, free radical, **6:838–869**
 - activation paramaters, *6:839*
 - tert*-alkyl hydroperoxides, *6:851–853*
 - tert*-alkyl peroxyesters, *6:846*
 - azo compounds, *6:855–857*
 - carbon-carbon, *6:857, 858*
 - diacyl peroxides, *6:844–846*
 - di(*tert*-alkyl) peroxides, *6:849*
 - dialkyl peroxydicarbonates, *6:849–851*
 - diperoxyketals, *6:848, 849*
 - economic aspects, *6:863–865*
 - half-life, *6:840*
 - inorganic peroxides, *6:854*
 - ketone peroxides, *6:853, 854*
 - for mediated radical reactions, *6:858–860*
 - monoperoxyarbonates, *6:846–848*
 - organic peroxides, *6:840–854*
 - peroxide safety, *6:854*
 - photoinitiators, *6:860–863*
 - radiation initiation, *6:860–863*
 - radical formation and use, *6:835–838*
 - structure-reactivity relationships, *6:838, 839*
- Initiators, in emulsion polymerization, *5:174*
- Injection blow molding, *2:216, 7:7*
 - coloring during, *3:497*
 - tooling for, *2:221–230*
 - troubleshooting, *2:226–230*
- Injection blow molding, for plastic bottle design, *2:274*
- Injection blow-molding machine, three-station, *2:218, 219*
- Injection compression, *7:7*
- Injection-molded HDPE, *5:507*
- Injection molding, **7:1–32**. *See also* Reaction injection molding
 - in ABS polymers, *1:329, 330*
 - components of, *7:10–32*
 - economic aspects, *7:2, 3*
 - coloring and, *3:495, 496*
 - composite materials, *3:518*
 - CRD-NRV mixer used in, *5:667*
 - of crystalline plastics, *4:217, 218*
 - of engineering thermoplastics, *5:211, 212*
 - of ethylene-norbornene copolymers, *5:588*
 - of fluorocarbon elastomers, *6:171*
 - of LDPE, *5:541*
 - of LLDPE, *5:570, 579*
 - material selection and handling for, *7:13–15*
 - microcellular plastics, *8:312–314*
 - of nylon, *10:286–288*
 - overview, *7:1, 2*
 - part design, *7:11–13*
 - phenolic resin applications, *9:616*
 - plastic processing, *7:19–30*
 - of polysulfones, *11:196, 197*
 - process and machine, *7:3–7*
 - process compared to other thermoplastic processes (table), *14:108*
 - propylene polymers, *11:400, 401*
 - PTT use in, *10:207, 208*
 - stability, *10:89*
 - of styrene polymers, *13:246*
 - testing and validation, *7:30–32*
 - thermoplastic resin processing, *10:81–85, 89, 90*
 - of thermoplastics, *1:806, 807*
 - tool design and construction, *7:15–19*
 - variations and extensions to, *7:7–10*
- Injection molding resins
 - comparison of, *5:579*
- Injection molding techniques, *1:11, 13*
- Injection-molding temperatures
 - for polyamide plastics, *10:287*
- Injection stretch blow molding
 - PEN bottles, *10:157–159*
- Injection systems, in size exclusion chromatography, *3:115, 116*
- Inks, *3:493*
 - cellulose acetate propionate application, *2:640, 641*
 - cellulose nitrate applications, *2:609*
 - as colloid, *3:437*
 - epoxy resins, *5:397, 398*
- Inner film structure, SFM-based tomographic reconstruction, *12:292*
- Inner fracture zone, *6:316*
- Inorganic cellulose esters, *2:600–613*
- Inorganic fillers, *8:10*
- Inorganic ion exchangers, *7:150*
- Inorganic materials, as release agents, *11:702*
- Inorganic peroxide free-radical initiators, *6:854, 855*
- Inorganic polymers, **7:33–65**
 - based on main group elements, *7:33–50*
 - based on transition elements, *7:50–65*
 - boron-containing polymers, *7:44–46*
 - coordination polymers, *7:59–63*
 - face-to-face metallocene polymers, *7:59*
 - ferrocene-based, *7:50–52*
 - polycarbophosphazenes, *7:46, 47*
 - polyferrocenylenes, *7:52, 53*
 - polyferrocenylsilanes, *7:53–57*
 - polygermanes and polystannanes, *7:42–44*
 - polyoxothiazenes, *7:49, 50*
 - polyphosphazenes, *7:33–39*
 - polysilanes, *7:39–42*
 - rigid-rod organometallic polymers, *7:63–65*
 - structural representation, *13:172, 173*
 - sulfur-nitrogen-phosphorus, *7:47–49*
- Inorganic-reinforced styrene polymers, *13:204–207*
- Inorganic rubber, *7:34*
- Inorganic water-soluble polymers, *15:197*
- Insect-resistant wool, *15:338–340*
- Insert injection molding, *7:9*
- Insertion polymerization, *2:730, 3:126*

- Insertion-type ring-enlarging polymerization, 7:679
- INSITE technology, 5:429
- Instantaneous copolymer heterogeneity, 5:179
- instantaneous termination, 5:170
- Instationary polymerization, 11:556–558
- chain length distribution, 11:568, 569
- Institute of Electrical and Electronics Engineers (IEEE), 4:675
- Intrinsically conducting polymers, 4:742
- Instron capillary rheometer, 7:290, 291
- Insulation
- composite foam application, 3:512
 - polysulfide, 11:176
 - wire and cable, 5:579, 580
- Insulators
- electrical conductivity of typical, 4:743
- Integrated circuits, environmental stresses on, 5:62
- Integrated pest management
- and controlled release formulation, 3:719
- Intelligent materials, 12:409
- Intelligent pumps, 3:89
- Interaction chromatography, 6:271–274
- Interaction parameters, in plasticization, 10:44, 45
- Intercalation, 7:71, 10:285
- driving forces, 7:73, 74
 - in inorganic-reinforced styrene polymers, 13:205
- Intercalation polymerization, 7:71–90
- direct intercalation of preformed macromolecules, 7:76–79
 - inorganic layered hosts, 7:73–75
 - monomer intercalation and simultaneous polymerization, 7:79–86
 - monomer intercalation and subsequent controlled *in situ* polymerization, 7:86–90
- Interdiffusion, 1:366–369
- effect on joint strength, 1:367–369
- Interdiffusion process, 3:398–409
- diffusion in coextrusion, 3:408, 409
 - measurements by rheology, 3:403–408
 - mutual diffusion, 3:400–402
 - self-diffusion, 3:398–400
 - techniques, use of, 3:402, 403
- Interdigital micromixer (IMM), 8:424
- Interdigital-type micromixer, 8:340
- Interdigitated or comb electrode, 13:854
- Interface shear strength, 11:686
- Interfaces
- adhesion and, 1:364, 365
 - molecular modeling, 8:606
- Interfacial adhesion, 11:687
- Interfacial bonding, perfect, 11:684
- Interfacial composite membranes, 7:760, 761
- Interfacial defects of coextrusion, 3:379
- encapsulation, 3:379–383
 - experimental studies, 3:390–397
 - interfacial instabilities, 3:383
 - theoretical studies, 3:383–390
- Interfacial energy
- colloids, 3:446–449
- Interfacial fracture energy, 1:362
- Interfacial free energy, 6:582
- Interfacial-Gel Polymerization Technique, 9:375
- Interfacial interaction, strength as a function of, 11:680, 681
- Interfacial polycondensation, 4:588, 7:94, 13:85
- cohesive films, 7:95
 - with stirring, 7:98
- Interfacial polymerization, 7:760, 93–107, 8:413, 420
- applications, 7:96
 - of aromatic polyamides, 10:219, 221
 - bisphenols, 7:102
 - completely random copolymers, 7:102
 - copolymerization, 7:102
 - film-formation rate, 7:95
 - health and safety factors, 7:106, 107
 - melt-condensation process, 7:93
 - microcapsule preparation for controlled release formulations, 3:724, 725
 - organic solvents, polycondensation without, 7:103
 - polyamide preparation, 7:96
 - polycarbonate, 10:369–371
 - polycondensation with stirring, 7:97
 - polyhexamethyleneisophthalamide, preparation of, 7:96
 - polymer formation, mechanism of, 7:95, 96
 - polymeric substrates, 7:105
 - unstirred polymerization system, 7:96
 - water-insoluble reactants, 7:102
 - with stirring, 7:97
 - with water-immiscible solvents, 7:97–99
- Interfacial properties. *See* Surface properties
- Interfacial reactions, 3:412–419
- Interfacial slippage, 3:409–412
- experimental observations, 3:409–411
 - suppression or elimination of, 3:412
 - theoretical interpretations, 3:411, 412
- Interfacial tension, 9:573, 13:575, 576
- colloids, 3:446, 447
- Interfacial term (adhesive wear), 13:511, 512
- Interfacially polymerized composite membranes, 5:827
- Interference colors, 3:473
- Interference contrast microscopy
- forensics applications, 6:178
- Interference optics
- for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:474, 475
- Interferometers
- for infrared spectroscopy, 14:565
- Interferometric dilatometers, 4:533
- Interlaminar shear strength (ILS), 4:134, 11:687
- composite materials, 3:546
- Intermediate-Scale Calorimeter (ICAL), 6:96, 97
- Intermediate wet modulus rayon, 2:676
- Intermeshing rotor system, 3:562
- Intermeshing twin screw extruders, 5:620
- Intermittent extrusion blow molding, 2:231
- Intermolecular forces
- release agents and, 11:703
- Internal absorption, 9:397
- Internal antistatic agents, 3:552
- Internal coefficient of friction, 5:641
- Internal cooling in blow molding, 2:255–56
- Internal fouling, 7:782
- Internal lubricants
- poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756

- Internal main chain mobility, 6:324–327
- Internal mixers, 3:557, 562
- Internal olefins, polyketone copolymerization with, 10:652
- Internal reflectance spectroscopy
use in forensic analysis, 6:181
- Internal release agents, 11:700
- Internal viscosity model, of yield, 15:462–465
- International Cotton Advisory Committee (ICAC), 4:14
- International Electrotechnical Commission (IEC), 4:675, 6:86
- International Organization for Standardization (ISO), 6:86
- International Telecommunications Union (ITU), 4:461
- International Union of Pure and Applied Chemistry (IUPAC), 9:69
nomenclature, 13:151
structural representation of polymers, 13:151–176
- Interpenetrating elastomeric networks, 7:131, 132
- Interpenetrating polymer networks (IPN), 2:133, 4:64, 96, 97, 7:110–144, 10:595
AFM imaging of, 1:774, 775
applications, 7:138–144
castor oil-based, 7:133–136
chloroprene copolymerization, 3:49
full IPN, 4:96
glass transition, 7:118, 119
isocyanates in, 7:257
latex, 7:131, 132
morphology, 7:115–126
natural rubber latex-based, 7:136, 137
nomenclature, 7:111
phase continuity in sequential, 7:121
physical properties, 7:115–126
polysaccharide-based, 7:137
semi-IPN, 4:96
sequential IPN (seq-IPN), 4:96
simultaneous IPNs (SIN), 4:96
sound and vibration damping behavior, 7:132, 133
synthesis and structure, 7:111–115
thermoplastic, 7:126–131
- Interphase, 1:405
adhesion and, 1:364, 365
- Interphase, role of, in coextrusion, 3:374, 420–428
- Interpolymer competition, among engineering thermoplastics, 5:212–218
- Interunitary linkages, in lignins, 7:529
- Intracellular degradation, of PHAs, 10:102, 103
- Intractable plastics, 5:620
- Intralamellar slip, correlated, 6:323
- Intramolecular structure, 2:201
- Intramolecular energy changes, elasticity and, 4:657
- Intramolecular repulsive interactions, 8:542–544
- Intrinsic adhesion
joint fracture energy and, 1:385–388
- Intrinsic breakdown, 4:680
- Intrinsic crazing, 15:479, 480
- Intrinsic electric strength (table), 4:689
- Intrinsic interaction energy, adhesives and, 1:362, 363
- Intrinsic isotherms, 1:454
- Intrinsic viscosity, 5:211, 10:513, 514
of polyacrylamide solutions, 1:122–124
- Intrinsic width, of an interface, 9:573
- Intrinsically conductive polymers (ICPs), 2:133, 134
- Inverse emulsion polymerization
of acrylamide, 1:136
acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:167
- Inverse heterophase polymerization, 6:588
- Inverse Langevin distribution, 4:648, 649
- Inversion point group operations, 12:374
- Inverted rule of mixtures, 11:683, 684
- Iodonium photoinitiators, 9:697–700
- Ion-dipole interactions, 8:542
- Ion exchange (IO) membranes, 5:834, 835
- Ion exchange
intercalation through, 7:75
- Ion-exchange controlled release technology, 3:752
- Ion exchange kinetics, 7:171, 172
affecting factors, 7:172
electroneutrality, 7:172
film diffusion-controlled situation, 7:171
interdiffusion, 7:171
intraparticle diffusion-controlled reaction, 7:172
intraparticle diffusion-controlled reaction, 7:172
stoichiometry, 7:171
- Ion exchange membranes
electrically active polymers for, 4:772, 773
in electro dialysis, 5:835, 835
- Ion exchange reactions, 7:162
- Ion exchange resins, 7:153, 154, 72, 8:192
accompanying chemical reactions, 7:180–182
acid cation exchange resin, 7:172
anion exchange process, 7:152
applications, 7:172–190
capacities, 7:162
catalysis, 7:189
cation exchange reaction, 7:151
cellulose ester (inorganic) applications, 2:610
chromatography, 7:177, 178
cross-linked resins, 7:154
demineralization, 7:175–177
Donnan coion exclusion effect, 7:186
Donnan Effect, 7:178–180
equilibria, 7:162–167
fixed-bed ion exchange process, 7:173
fixed ionic groups or functional group, 7:155–157
food processing, 7:189, 190
heavy metal separation, 7:182–184
ion-dipole interaction, 7:154
isotherm, 7:164
isothermal supersaturation (IXISS), 7:181
kinetics, 7:171, 172
Lewis acid-base interaction, 7:182
pharmaceutical industry, 7:188
phenolic, 9:579
redox reaction, 7:182
resinate, 7:188
target metal cations and anions, simultaneous removal of, 7:184–186
water softening, 7:172–175
- Ion-exchange technology, 7:150–191
anion exchange process, 7:152
equilibrium constant of reaction, 7:152
equilibrium constants, 7:153
exchanging counterions, 7:153
homovalent exchanges, 7:152

- polymer matrices, 7:154, 155
 pseudo-anion exchange, 7:152
 pseudo-cation exchange, 7:152
- Ion exchanger phase
 thermodynamic activity, 7:153
- Ion exchangers, 7:150, 160–162
 aromatic ions, 7:168
 Bronsted Lowry acid base, 7:168
 calcium-saturated ion exchange resins, 7:167
 Ca-Na selectivity coefficient, 7:166, 167
 charge density, 7:169
 Donnan effect/ion exclusion, 7:168, 169
 electrostatic ion exchange, 7:168
 functional groups, acid-base characteristics, 7:160
 hardness removal/softening process, 7:166
 hydrophobic ion exchange, 7:168
 Lewis acid base, 7:168
 mechanical, thermal, and chemical stability, 7:162
 regeneration, 7:167
 selective ion exchange, 7:168
 separation factor, 7:165
 steric effect/ion sieving, 7:169
 synthesis of, 7:156–158
 target ions, 7:167, 168
 waste regenerant solution, disposal of, 7:167
 water content and swelling, 7:160
- Ion flotation processes, cyclodextrin polymers in, 4:201, 202
- Ionic chain-reaction polymerizations, 2:724–728
 anionic polymerization, 2:726, 727
 cationic polymerization, 2:725, 726
 features of, 2:727, 728
- Ionic copolymerization, 3:800–804
- Ionic dyeability, 10:519
- Ionic initiation, for styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:270
- Ionic liquids (ILs), 7:194, 10:64
- Ionic liquids, polymerization in, 7:194–205
 heterogeneous ATRP, 7:199
 hydrophilicity/lipophilicity, 7:194
 iron-mediated ATRP, 7:199
 moisture-sensitive, 7:197
- Ionic polymer-metal composites (IPMCs), 7:234
- Ionic polymerization, 3:126, 7:201, 202, 8:338, 345
- Ionic-responsive dendronized polymers, 4:377–380
- Ionic telechelic APs, 6:746–755
 cationic poly(dimethyloamino ethyl methacrylate), 6:752, 753
 core-shell-type micelles, 6:749
 dynamic strain sweep experiments, 6:751
 finite-sized microgels (clusters), 6:749
 micellar-type aggregates, 6:748, 749
 monte carlo simulations, 6:746, 747
 neutral telechelic systems, 6:748
 oscillatory shear flow experiments, 6:751
 sol-gel transition, 6:746, 747
 telechelic polyelectrolyte (TP), 6:746, 747
 zero-shear viscosity (η_0), 6:751
- Ionic-type photosensitive polyimides, 5:74, 78
- Ionically conducting polymers, 4:742
- Ionomeric coatings, 7:238
- Ionomeric systems, self-healing, 12:366
- Ionomers, 4:742, 7:208–238
 applications of, 7:232–238
 blends, 7:230–232
 block, 7:225, 226
 glass transition temperatures, 7:216–218
 LDPE, 5:518
 multiplet/cluster concepts, 7:212–216
 overview, 7:208–212
 physical properties of, 7:218–228
 plasticization, 7:228–229
 polyethylene-based, 7:218–221
 polystyrene, 7:223–225, 13:186, 187
 polytetrafluoroethylene-based, 7:221–223
 spin probes in ion-containing polymers, 5:15–21
 star, 7:227, 228
 telechelic, 7:226, 227
- Ionophores, 14:554
- Ionox, 901, 14:480
- IPA. *See* Isophthalic acid (IA, IPA)
- IPDI. *See* Isophorone diisocyanate (IPDI)
- IPNs. *See* Interpenetrating polymer networks, 9:5
- Ipp, crystalline melting, 11:487, 488
- iPP. *See* Isotactic polypropylene (iPP)
- iPS. *See* Isotactic polystyrene (iPS)
- Iraq-Turkey pipeline
 drag reduction application, 4:536, 569
- IRCmax procedure, 3:606, 607
- Irgafos 168, 13:44
- Irganox 1010, 14:480
- Irganox 1076, 13:40, 43, 44, 189
- Iron blue pigments, 3:471
- Iron catalysts
 for LDPE, 5:530
- Iron compounds, 8:394
- Iron dithiocarbamate (FeDRC) complexes,
 photoactivation of, 13:35, 36
- Iron oxide
 filler material, 5:785
- Iron oxide nanoparticles, 8:788
- Iron oxide pigments, 3:471
- Iron(III) chloride
 inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
 retarder for radical polymerization, 11:580, 581
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Iron. *See also* Ferrocenes
 metal-catalyzed oxidation by, 1:689
- Irradiance distribution, 9:754
- Irradiated PEEK, thermal properties, 11:481
- Irradiated Ultem, ESR spectrum, 11:480
- Irradiation membranes, 7:749, 750
- Irradiation. *See also* Radiation-induced polymerization
 degradation caused by, 4:287–290
 of polystyrene, 13:244, 245
 of PVDF, 15:72, 73
- Irreversible hydrocolloids, 4:385
- Irwin model of plasticity, 6:309, 310
 (I—S—I—A—I), 7:320
- ISIS™ program, 13:153, 157
 structure retrieval, 13:158, 159
- ISIS™/Base, 13:158
- ISIS™/Draw, 13:158
- ISO 1133, 13:770
- ISO 11357 1–3, 13:770
- ISO 11443, 13:770
- ISO 11507, 13:770

- ISO 1183, 13:770
 ISO 1210, 13:770
 ISO 13648 1, 2, 13:770
 ISO 14040, 2:73
 ISO 14133, 13:771
 ISO 14782, 13:770
 ISO 14851, 13:770
 ISO 14852, 13:770
 ISO 14853, 13:770
 ISO 14855, 2:75, 13:770
 ISO 15985, 13:770
 ISO 1628 1–5, 13:770
 ISO 175, 13:770, 776
 ISO 178, 13:770
 ISO 179, 13:770
 ISO 180, 13:770
 ISO 2039–2, 13:770
 ISO 2578, 13:770, 775
 ISO 2782, 13:770
 ISO 306, 13:769, 770, 776
 ISO 4589, 13:770, 781
 ISO 4599, 13:770, 776
 ISO 4600, 13:770
 ISO 4607, 13:770, 777
 ISO 4665, 13:770
 ISO 4892, 13:770
 ISO 527 1–4, 13:770, 772
 ISO 572, 13:770
 ISO 604, 13:770
 ISO 62, 13:770
 ISO 6252, 13:770, 776
 ISO 6603–1, 13:770
 ISO 6603–2, 13:770
 ISO 6721 1–10, 13:770
 ISO 75, 13:769, 776
 ISO 8256, 13:770
 ISO 846, 13:770, 777
 ISO 871, 13:770, 780
 ISO 877, 13:770, 776
 ISO 899, 13:770
 ISO 9705, fire tests, full-scale room test for surface products, 6:95
 Iso-poly(methyl methacrylate)
 template for polymerization, 13:748
 Isobaric glass transitions, 6:449
 Isobornyl methacrylate
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 Isobutylene, 2:349
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:394, 416–418
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:127
 monomer for rubber compounding, 12:204
 polymerization in butyl rubber, 2:349–370
 polymerization mechanism, 2:350–352
 Isobutylene-isoprene-divinylbenzene terpolymers, 2:353
 Isochoric glass transitions, 6:449
 Isochronal data, 15:108, 110
 Isochronal values, for solid-like polymers, 15:147
 Isochrones, 15:93
 Isoclined atoms, in semicrystalline polymers, 12:374, 375
 Isocyanate, 11:205–216, 14:435
 in adhesives, 1:422, 423
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 aliphatic, 11:211–213
 blocked, 11:213, 14:439–442
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:132
 methylene bis (phenyl diisocyanate) (MDI), 11:209–211
 polymeric MDI (pMDI), 11:209–211
 polyurethane technology and, 11:206
 Isocyanate adhesives
 for wood composites, 15:289
 Isocyanate cross-linkers, 1:480
 Isocyanate-derived polymers, 7:253–267
 addition/condensation polymers, 7:265–267
 addition polymers, 7:262, 263
 condensation polymers, 7:254, 263–265
 copolymers, 7:260–262
 homopolymerization, 7:257–260
 monomers, 7:255–257
 reactions of, 11:215, 216
 toluene diisocyanate, 11:206–209
 toxicity, 11:258–260
 used in coatings, 14:435–437
 4-Isocyanatophenyl. *See* Bis(4-isocyanatophenyl) methane (MDI)
 γ -Isocyanatopropyltriethoxysilane, 12:188
 Isocyanurate curing agents, 5:358
 Isodecyl methacrylate
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 Isodesmic polymerization mechanism, 13:442–444
 Isodimorphism, 10:98
 Isolated stress concentration
 elastomer, damage created on the surface, 13:514
 Isolated Zwitterions
 intramolecular cation-anion reactions, 15:532
 polymerization of, 15:530, 531
 Quinuclidinium carboxylate, 15:531
 sulfonium naphthoxide with quinuclidine, 15:531
 Isoleucine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
 Isomerases, 5:222
 Isomeric monomers, 10:261, 262
 Isophorone diamine
 curing agent, 5:345
 Isophorone diisocyanate (IPDI), 1:422
 Isophthalate-modified PCT polymers, 4:217
 Isophthalic acid (IPA), 1:487, 4:214, 7:568, 569
 comonomer with diisocyanates, 7:254
 polyarylates from, 10:351
 Isophthaloyl chloride (ICL), 10:214
 Isoprene (2-methyl-1,3-butadiene), 7:270
 acetone-acetylene process, 7:282, 283
 acid dimerization, 7:278
 amine modification, anionic polymerization of, 7:312, 313
 atactic polymer, 7:284
 Bromination in different solvents, 7:276
 butadiene copolymers, 7:332, 333
 carbanions, 7:276
 cationic polymerization, 7:313, 314
 chemical properties, 7:273
 coordinated catalytic addition, 7:278–280

- copolymers, 7:330–334
 cycloaddition, 7:273
 cyclopolyisoprene polymer, 7:285
 Diels-Alder reaction, 7:273, 274
 electrophilic addition, 7:275, 276
 free-radical addition, 7:277
 free-radical polymerization, 7:313
 glass-transition temperature, 7:288, 289
 health and safety factors, 7:336
 hydrogen halide addition, 7:275
 initiation, 7:309, 310
 isobutylene copolymers, 7:330, 331
 isobutylene-formaldehyde condensation, 7:282
 isotactic polymers, 7:283
 manufacture, 7:280–283
 molecular-weight distribution, 7:287
 naphtha cracking, by-product of, 7:280
 natural hevea rubber, 7:285
 nucleophilic addition, 7:276
 organometallic catalysis, 7:279, 280
 physical properties, 7:271, 272
 polymer structure, 7:283–286
 polymers, 7:270–337
 propagation, 7:310
 properties, 7:283–292
 Propylene dimerization, 7:280, 281
 stereospecific polymerization, 7:303
 styrene copolymers, 7:331, 332
 syndiotactic polymer, 7:284
 tertiary amylenes, dehydrogenation of, 7:281, 282
 thermal dimerization, 7:278
 trans-1,4-polyisoprene, 7:284, 302
 vapor pressure, 7:272
- Isoprene polymers, 7:270–337**
 anionic copolymerization, 1:640
 anionic polymerization, 1:628–635
 in butyl rubber, 2:349, 350
 chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
 entropy, enthalpy, and ceiling temperature for polymerization, 15:420
 first polymerization, 6:584
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:125
 monomer for rubber compounding, 12:204
 polymerization, 2:350–352
 purification, 2:356, 357
 Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:518, 519
- Isopropenylphosphonic acid polymers, 9:667, 668
- Isopropyl alcohol
 swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
- 1-Isopropyl cyclopentene, 8:160
- N*-isopropylacrylamide (NIPAM), 8:286, 352
- Isopropylbiphenyl, 8:391
- Isopropylidene-bridged C₂-symmetric zirconocene, 13:116
- Isoregic linkages, 11:518
- trans*-isotactic (*trans*-meso, tm), 8:163
- Isotactic poly(1-butene), 2:332
 P-V-T data, 14:79
- Isotactic poly(methyl methacrylate) (iPMMA), 11:449
- Isotactic poly(methyl methacrylate)
 conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta solvent, 9:56
- Isotactic polybutadiene, 2:301
- Isotactic polyketones, 10:652
- Isotactic polypropylene (iPP)
 acoustic properties, 1:76
 craze initiation, 5:713, 716
 fractography, 5:732, 733
 longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:584
 metallocene-based stereoselective polymerization, 8:119–122
 moderate barrier polymer, 2:49
 polarized Raman spectra, 14:613
 semicrystalline, 12:372–374, 379, 389, 391, 398
 single crystals, 12:387
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:509–518
- Isotactic polypropylene (iPP), 8:521, 11:351, 449
 polymorphism, 11:356, 357
 properties, 11:361–368
 P-V-T data, 14:79
 tacticity microstructures, 11:352
- Isotactic polystyrene (iPS), 13:187
- Isotactic polythionylphosphazene, 7:49
- Isotactic PPO, 11:334, 335
- Isotactic PVME (i-PVME), 13:656
- Isotropic compression, 4:639
- Isotropic microporous membranes, 7:746
- Isotropic moldings, of polystyrene, 13:246
- Isotropically conductive adhesives (ICA), 3:648–654
 adhesive matrix, 3:648, 649
 conduction mechanisms of, 3:652–654
 conductive filler powders, 3:650, 651
 contact resistance of, 3:666–669
 corrosion inhibitors, 3:670
 electrical resistivity of, 3:674
 electrically conductive fillers, 3:649–652
 filled with Ag-coated Cu flakes, 3:672–676
 impurities, 3:669
 low cost, 3:671–676
 metal hydroxide or oxide formation, 3:667
 organic corrosion inhibitors and, 3:675, 676
 oxygen scavengers, 3:670
 PAE-2 based, strength of, 3:663, 664
 polymer matrices, 3:669, 670
 resistivity of, 3:652
 sacrificial anode, 3:670, 671
 schematic illustration of, 3:647
 surfactant-treated Ag nanoparticles and (table), 3:661
- Istle, 14:495
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:505
- Iterative process, 6:506
- Iterative tandem catalysis (ITC), 5:256
- ITO-coated glass, 7:515
- ITO. *See* Indium tin oxide (ITO)
- IUPAC nomenclature, 9:73–86
 formats for copolymers (table), 9:76
 of copolymers (table), 9:75
 source-based nomenclature (table), 9:73–77, 78–80
 structure-based nomenclature, 9:77–86
- IUPAC structural representation, 13:152–176
- IUPAC. 11:1. *See* International Union of Pure and Applied Chemistry (IUPAC)

- Iupilon, 10:354
 Izod impact strength, of PS-PB rubber, 13:236, 237
 Izod impact tester, 6:800–806, 13:773
 Izod test, 2:749, 5:210
 notched, 5:215
J-integral, 6:315, 316
 Jamming, 6:367
 Janus dendrimers, 4:304
 Janus particles, 8:409, 411
 Jarzynski's equality, 13:77
 Jet bending, 5:150
 Jet radius, 5:149
 JKR (Johnson, Kendall, Roberts) technique, 1:387
 Johnson-K-R (JKR) model, of scratch behavior, 12:322
 Joining, in ABS polymers, 1:333
 Joint fracture energy, intrinsic adhesion and, 1:385–388
 Joint strength, effect of interdiffusion on, 1:367–369
 Joints
 adhesive, 1:04, 00
 fracture mechanics of, 1:388
 strength of, 1:388–396
 Joo's model, 5:149
 Junction fluctuations, 4:664
 Junctions
 entanglements as, 4:667, 668
 functionality of, 4:655
 in phantom network, 4:660
 Jute, 14:495, 497
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 9:216, 14:500
 processing, 14:502
 textile-associated properties compared to polyester, 14:499
 uses, 14:508
 world production, 14:507
 K-BKZ model, 15:105–139. *See also*
 Bernstein-Kearsley-Zapas (BKZ) constitutive equation
 experimental predictions of, 15:121–127
 history of, 15:120
 for solid-like polymers, 15:147–153
 1K (one-part) adhesives, 1:403
 anaerobic, 1:419, 420
 epoxy film, 1:417
 paste, 1:417
 urethane, 1:423, 424
 K-resin block copolymers, 13:81–83
 K-resins, 13:284, 199–202
 K-TEMPO probes, 5:22–25
 2K (two-part) adhesives, 1:403
 epoxy, 1:417
 non-aerobic acrylic, 1:420
 urethane, 1:424, 425
 Kahlbaum polymerized methyl acrylate, 1:195
 Kambour model, of craze initiation, 15:486, 487
 Kaminsky activator, in single-site catalysis, 5:560–562
 Kanekaron, 1:251
 Kaolin clay, 5:794
 for rubber compounding, 12:221–223
 Kaolinite
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Kapitza resistance, 4:135, 136
 Kapok, 14:495
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:506
 uses, 14:508
 Kappa numbers, 7:532
 Kapton, 10:588
 Kapton polyimide, 11:480, 481
 Karakul wools, 15:338
 Karate Zeon, 3:728
 Kariet MC, 3:728
 Kaufmann extruder, 3:394, 395
 Kauzmann temperature, 1:452
 Kelburon, 7:139
 KELTROL-T, 15:361
 Kelvin equation, 3:447
 Kelvin-Voigt model
 generalized, 15:84–86
 of viscoelasticity, 15:82, 83
 Kenaf, 14:495, 497
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:502, 503
 uses, 14:508
 Kepler's conjecture, high solids polymer dispersions, 6:630
 Keratan sulfate (KS), 5:235
 Keratins
 in wool, 15:312, 314, 315
 Kerr effect, 5:93
 KetaSpire polyetheretherketone (Solvay), 10:563
 Ketimines, 3:340
 coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:342
 Ketoalcohol, photodegradable polystyrene and, 13:212
 Ketone groups, in photodegradable polystyrene, 13:211–213
 Ketone peroxide free-radical initiators, 6:852, 853
 Ketones, phosgene reactions with, 9:626
 Ketonex™, 10:659
 Ketoprofen-loaded nanoparticles, 8:428
 Kevlar-29, 6:382
 carbon fibers produced from, 2:480
 Kevlar, 6:702–705, 7:564, 10:222, 11:693, 694
 carbon fibers produced from, 2:480
 mechanical properties, 9:216
 mechanical properties compared to silk and other fibers, 12:547
 NEXAFS spectra, 15:403
 photodegradation, 4:283
 Kevlar fibers, 4:129
 Key and lock theory, enzymatic reactions, 5:222, 223
 Kharasch reaction, 7:650
 Kidney dialysis, 7:802
 Kimwipes, 2:771
 Kinetic chain length, 4:257, 5:170
 average time of growth, correlation with, 5:171
 zip length, 6:46
 Kinetic incompatibility, 1:240
 Kinetic modeling
 of flaming combustion, 6:37
 in mesophase, 6:42–51
 of polymer thermal degradation, 6:43

- Kinetic models, 8:549
- Kinetic theory of fracture, 6:330
- Kinetically controlled chain folding, 2:203
- Kinetics of radical polymerization, 7:349–419
- bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:288
 - carbocationic polymerization, 2:402–410
 - cationic photopolymerization, 9:706–714
 - composite material curing, 3:522–526
 - crystallization, 4:167–196
 - fast reaction, 4:56
 - free radical photopolymerization, 9:732–741
 - heterophase polymerization, 6:599, 600, 607–616
 - latex manufacture, 7:463–466
 - LDPE, 5:526
 - microemulsion polymerization, 8:368–374
 - in PVC production, 14:735, 736
 - radical polymerization, 11:553–560
 - thermoset curing, 14:181–186
- Kinin system, 2:153
- Kink bands, 12:87–89
- Kink pair, 15:466
- Kirkwood-Fröhlich factor, 4:484
- Kiss coaters, 3:274
- Klason lignin contents, 7:531, 532
- Knauss-Emri model, of solid-like polymers, 15:160
- Kneading blocks, 3:558
- Knife coating, 3:270–273
- Knife over roll coating, 5:689, 690
- Knit line, fractured, 6:295
- Knitted fabrics, 5:682
- Knoop test, 6:556
- Knot tenacity, of a fiber, 10:240, 241
- Knox out 2FM, 3:728
- Kodel II, 10:517
- Koelsch's radical, 11:579
- Kohlrash-Williams-Watts (KWW) function, 1:464, 555, 585
- and composite material relaxation, 3:533
 - and dielectric relaxation, 4:483
- Kohn-Sham theory, unrestricted, 3:612, 613
- KORRIGAN, 2:572, 573
- Kovacs-Aklonis-Hutchinson-Ramos (KAHR) model, 1:473
- of solid-like polymers, 15:159
- Kraft black liquors, compositions of, 7:543
- Kraft lignins, 7:536, 538, 542–544
- applications of, 7:544
 - properties of, 7:543
- Kramers-Kronig relations, 1:69
- Kraton IPN, 7:139
- Kraton rubber, 8:496, 13:283
- Kuhn-Grün theory, 4:655
- Kuhn-Roth procedure, 7:534
- Kynol, 9:618
- L-glutamic acid diethyl ester (GADE), 5:262
- Labeling, in-mold, 2:255
- Labels
- polyester film application, 10:509
 - pressure-sensitive adhesives in, 11:291
- Laccases enzymes, 4:32
- Laccase-mediator system (LMS), 5:277
- Lacquers
- cellulose acetate applications, 2:638, 640
- Lactide, 5:248
- ring opening polymerization, 12:137, 138
- Lactone stabilizers, 13:24, 26
- Lactones
- anionic polymerization, 1:624, 625
 - as antioxidants, 13:13
 - metallocene-based polymerization, 8:130, 131
 - monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
 - ring opening polymerization, 12:137, 138
 - telechelic polymers, 13:710–712
- Ladder polymers
- structural representation, 13:173
- Ladder polysilanes, 11:149
- Lake-Thomas analysis, of adhesion, 1:386
- Lame constants, 1:63, 15:80, 82
- Lamellar structure, of inorganic-reinforced styrene polymers, 13:205, 206
- Lamellar surfaces, 8:717, 718
- Laminaran, 15:191
- Laminate formulations, 3:726, 727
- Laminated glass
- vinyl acetal polymers, 14:645, 646
- Laminated strand lumber, 15:298
- characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Laminated veneer lumber, 15:298, 299
- characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Laminates
- imaging vibrational spectroscopy, 14:599–607
 - phenolic resin applications, 9:610, 611
- Laminating resins, 1:526, 527
- Lamination, 9:471
- extrusion, 5:637, 638
 - PVDF, 15:70
 - rigid polyurethane, 2:551
 - of styrene polymer films, 13:247
- Lamination coating, 5:688, 688
- Laminations, types, 9:472
- Lamp blacks
- surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Lampblack, 2:427
- Lampblack process, 2:450
- Land region, 5:669
- Landau-Ginzburg approach, 2:194
- Landau-Placzek ratio, 1:553
- Landfills
- biodegradable polymers and plastics in, 4:239–248
 - degradation processes in, 4:241–243
 - trash composition, 4:240, 241
- Landfills, polystyrene in, 13:209, 211
- Landscaping
- spunbonded fabric applications, 9:207
- Langevin distribution, inverse, 4:648, 649
- Langevin equations, 9:789, 13:78
- Langevin methods (molecular modeling), 8:599
- Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:424–435
- AFM imaging and, 1:761–763
 - applications, 7:433–435
 - film characterization, 7:432, 433
 - film-forming molecules and polymers, 7:426–428
 - monolayer formation, 7:428–430
 - vibrational spectroscopy, 14:615, 618
- Langmuir-Blodgett-Kuhn films, 7:425

- Langmuir-Blodgett trough, 7:425, 426
Langmuir film balance, 7:426
Langmuir isotherm, 1:281
Langmuir monolayers, 7:424
 formation, 7:428–430
Lanthanide-containing polymers, 7:60
Lanthanoecenes, 8:101
Lap shear, 1:389, 390
Laplace transforms, 15:89–91
Laplace-Young equation, 5:756
Large-angle beam steering, 5:109, 110
Large gas burner turbulent diffusion flame, 6:84
Large scale calorimeters, 6:95–97
Laser-assisted magnetron sputtering method, 13:417
Laser Doppler anemometry
 drag studies, 4:538
Laser fusion targets
 xylylene polymer applications, 15:442, 443
Laser light scattering (LLS), 7:437–455
 combining static and dynamic, 7:442–447
 dynamic, 7:439–442
 practice of, 7:447–452
 static, 7:438, 439
Laser photometer, 6:93, 94
Laser spot deflection, 1:751
Laser ultrasonics
 for acoustic measurements, 1:99
Latent heat of gasification, of polymers, 6:51–53
Latent Lewis acidity, 8:86
Lateral contraction ratios
 composite materials, 3:546
Lateral groups, LCP melting points and, 7:570, 571
Latex, 3:320, 321. *See also* Heterophase polymerization
 AFM imaging of, 1:777
 anionic and nonionic compared (table), 3:73
 applications, 7:462, 463
 chloroprene polymers, 3:71–75
 compounding of polychloroprene, 3:74, 75
 development of artificial, 6:585, 586
 heterophase polymerization product, 6:585
 manufacture, 7:463–473
 polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:131, 132
 properties, 7:459–462
 reactive group combinations for cross-linking, 6:660
 stabilization of polychloroprene, 3:72–75
Latex adhesives, 7:462
Latex application, on polypropylene multifilaments,
 13:37
Latex foam rubber, 2:512
 manufacture, 2:524
 physical properties of commercial, 2:528
Latex particles, 5:165, 165, 167, 177
 monomer concentrations, 5:172, 178, 178
 morphology, 5:183, 184
Latex technology, 7:457–473
 applications, 7:462, 463
 manufacture, 7:463–473
 properties, 7:459–462
Lattice hardening chemical reactions, 5:103, 104
Lattice model
 for coagulant diffusion, 8:557
Lauroyl peroxide
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
Lavender, 4:208, 209
Layer-by-layer (LbL) technique, 8:420
Layer-by-layer assembly, of nanocomposites, 8:735–745
Layered nanocomposites, 7:72, 73
Layered structure, of inorganic-reinforced styrene
 polymers, 13:205
LB film. *See* Langmuir-Blodgett (LB) film techniques
LbL-employing inorganic nanoparticles, 13:431
LC building blocks, 7:551, 552
 cholesterol, 7:552
 cholesteryl moieties, 7:552
 polypeptide, 7:552
 side-chain cholesteryl mesogens, 7:552, 553
LC-homopolysiloxane, 5:761
LC-MS. *See* Liquid chromatography-mass spectroscopy
 (LC-MS)
LCBCP, nanolithography, 7:558
LCD window, 9:766
LCE balloons, 5:756
LCE. *See* Liquid crystalline elastomers
LCST-poly(*N*-isopropylacrylamide) (PNIPAM), 14:391
LCSTs. *See* Lower critical solution temperatures
 (LCSTs)
LD blends. *See* Low density copolymer resins
LD signals, of polymer, 5:41
LD. *See* Linear dichroism (LD)
LDPE comonomers, 5:516–518
 reactivity ratios for, 5:523, 524
LDPE composition, 5:545, 546
LDPE copolymers, 5:516–518
LDPE homopolymer, 5:516
LDPE ionomers, 5:518
LDPE kinetics, 5:526
LDPE melt index, 5:531
LDPE monomer, 5:515
LDPE polymerization, peroxide initiators for, 5:522
LDPE production, rate-limiting factor in, 5:519
LDPE properties, effect of molecular weight on, 5:532
LDPE. *See* Low density polyethylene (LDPE)
Leachability, of stabilizers and antioxidants, 13:20
Leaching pads, 5:509
Lead-acid battery expanders, lignosulfonate, 7:542
Lead-based stabilizers, 6:563
Lead chromate pigments, 3:472
Lead compounds, 1:356
Lead molybdate pigments, 3:472
Lead oxide, 11:169
Lead stabilizers, 6:580–583
 application of, 6:581, 582
 commercial stabilizers, 6:581
 health and safety aspects, 6:582, 583
 pricing of, 6:582
 stabilization mechanism, 6:580, 581
 synthesis of, 6:581
Lead stain phenomenon, 6:58
Leaf fibers, 14:494
 processing, 14:504–506
Leap-frog numerical integration methods, 8:587
Leather, 7:478–492
 acidic chrome-tanned, split, and shaved stock, 7:489
 air-drying, 7:490
 Aldehyde tannage, 7:488
 by-products, 7:492

- chemical composition, 480
 coatings, 7:490, 491
 Collagen (qv), 7:480
 color, retanning, and fat-liquoring (CRF), 7:488, 489
 drying, 7:490. *See also* Drying
 dyeing, 7:489, 490
 dyestuffs, 7:489, 490
 economics and applications, 7:506
 elastic flow, 7:478
 fat-liquoring, 7:489
 finishing, 7:490–492
 glutaraldehyde, 7:488
 latex coatings, 7:491
 latex polymers, 7:491
 manufacture and processing, 7:483–492
 microstructure, 7:480–483
 mineral tannage, 7:488
 Nitrocellulose or vinyl chloride copolymer lacquers,
 7:491
 oil tannage, 7:488
 physical properties, 7:478
 physical properties, 7:505
 plastic flow, 7:478
 polyurethanes, 7:491
 posttreatment, 7:488, 489
 raw materials, 7:479, 480
 retanning materials, 7:489
 syntans, 7:488
 synthetic retanning agents, 7:489
 uniformity, 7:492
 vacuum drying, 7:490
 vegetable retanning agents, 7:489
 water vapour, transmission of, 7:478, 479
 water-vapor permeability, 7:504
- Leather goods-use of coated fabrics, 5:692
 Leather-polymer composites, 7:492
 Leather, manufacture and processing, 7:483–492
 chrome tanning, 7:484–486
 hair-save process, 7:484
 hides, 7:483
 salt-cured hides, 7:483
 soaking stage, 7:483
 tanned hides, 7:484, 485
 vegetable tanning, 7:486, 487
 vegetable-tanned leather, 7:486
- Leatherlike materials, 7:496–506
 carrier materials, 7:497
 carrier-free foam, 7:497
 coated fabrics, 7:497
 coated fabrics, properties of, 7:504
 direct-coating method, 7:499
 film synthetic leathers, 7:496
 finishing, 7:503
 knit fabrics, properties of, 7:504
 leather substitutes, 7:497
 manufacture, 7:498–502
 microfiber nonwovens, 7:497
 physical properties, 7:505
 polyisocyanate, 7:500
 poromerics technology, 7:498
 Poromerics, 7:497
 properties, 7:504–506
 raw materials, 7:497
- Urethane-coated fabrics, 7:497, 498
 vinyl-coated fabrics, 7:497
 wet method manufacture, 7:500
 woven fabric substrates, properties of, 7:504
 woven fabrics, 7:497
- Leatherlike suedes, 7:503
 Leathermaking, 7:480
 collagen, 7:482, 483
 elastin, 7:480
 fibrils, 7:483
 keratin, 7:480
 mammalian skins, 7:480
 myosin, 7:480
 pigskin, 7:480–482
- LED devices, from rigid-rod polymers, 12:96
 LEDs. *See* Light-emitting diodes (LEDs)
 LeRoy mixer, 5:663
 Leucine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Leuko-polymerosomes, 2:129
 biodegradable, 2:105
- Levelling acid dyes, 15:332
- Lewis acid catalysts, 5:87
- Lewis acids, 1:286–288, 2:725, 7:49
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:395–397
 carbon dioxide as, 4:48
 catalytic curing agents for epoxies, 5:360, 361
 Latent Lewis acidity, 8:86
- Lewis bases, 7:573
 catalytic curing agents for epoxies, 5:358–360
 effect on anionic polymerization, 1:613
- Lexan, 10:354
 stress-strain behavior, 6:814
- Life cycle assessment, 2:73
 and plastics recycling, 11:674, 675
- Lifshitz point, 2:208, 9:572
- Ligand-based catalysts, 5:564
- Ligases, 5:222
- Light duty vehicles, 1:788
- Light-emitting diodes (LEDs), 7:508–523, 8:356. *See also* LED
 device structure and operating principle, 7:509, 510
 efficiency of, 7:510–513
 electrically active polymers for, 4:766, 767
 materials in, 7:513–520
 polysilanes, 11:161
 polymers in, 7:508, 509
 technological exploitation of, 7:520–522
- Light-emitting electrochemical cells
 electrically active polymers for, 4:766, 767
- Light-emitting F8TBT transistors, 12:648
- Light-harvesting dendrimers, 4:308, 309
- Light-induced polymerization reactions, 9:695
- Light intensity
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:712
- Light reflectance fibers, 10:522, 523
- Light-responsive micelles, 8:284–286
- Light-responsive polymer micelles, 8:285
- Light scattering techniques, 14:563
 amorphous polymers, 1:548–556
 for molecular weight determination, 13:763

- Light scattering, 2:201. *See also* Laser light scattering
 for average molar mass determination, 2:741
 colloids, 3:442
 for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:474
 in polyacrylamide analysis, 1:142, 143
 for weight-average molecular weight determination,
 8:669
- Light stability, of colorants, 3:469
- Light stabilizers, 1:356–358, 13:1, 2
- Light transmission, through amorphous and crystalline
 polymers, 5:202
- Lightweight concrete, 13:257
- Lignified materials, lignin content of, 7:531, 532
- Lignified wood, 7:526
- Lignin, 7:525–545
 absorptivity values of, 7:533
 in adhesives, 1:429
 analytical methods for, 7:530–536
 carboxyl contents of, 7:535
 cellulose in, 2:566, 568
 characterization of, 7:532–534
 content determination, 7:531, 532
 conversion of cyclic to acyclic structures in, 7:529
 described, 7:525, 526
 detection of, 7:530
 for environmentally degradable plastics, 2:94
 functional group analysis for, 7:534–536
 hardwood, 7:526, 529
 hydroxyl content of, 7:535
 industrial, 7:538–545
 interunitary linkages in, 7:529
 laboratory-prepared, 7:545
 manufacturers of, 7:539
 normal softwood, 7:526, 529
 organosolv pulping, 7:544, 545
 properties of, 7:536–538
 structure and reactions of, 7:526–530
 sulfonate content of, 7:536
 as wood adhesive, 15:290–292
- Lignin technology, 7:541
- Lignosulfonates, 7:539–542
 properties of, 7:543
 toxicology of, 7:544
 uses for, 7:542
- Lignum*, 7:525
- Limestone, 5:793
- “Limited extensibility”, 9:9
- Limited Oxygen Index (LOI) test, 1:231, 2:755, 5:204
 vs. HRC, 6:80, 81
 selected fibers (table), 1:232
 test, 6:67, 68, 87, 90, 91, 92
- Line zone model, 6:310, 311
- Linear ABA-type triblock copolymers, 7:319
- Linear amorphous polymers, 13:830
- Linear block copolymers, 2:190
 as shape-memory polymers, 12:412
- Linear combination of atomic orbitals (LCAO) scheme,
 3:597–601
 contracted Gaussians, 3:598
 diffuse functions, 3:600
 double zeta, triple zeta, and quadruple zeta basis
 sets, 3:599
 Dunning basis sets, 3:600, 601
 effective core potentials, 3:600
 polarization functions, 3:599, 600
 Pople basis sets, 3:600
 primitive Gaussians, 3:598
 split-valence basis sets, 3:599
- Linear density (tex), of a fiber, 10:240
- Linear dichroism (LD), 5:39, 40
 absorption spectroscopy, 5:40, 41
 of cytoskeletal proteins, 5:57, 58
 to determine polymer bending, stiffening, and
 relaxation, 5:60
 of DNA, 5:54–56
 of DNA-bound ligands, 5:56, 57
 to follow kinetic processes, 5:58–60
 polymer, 5:47–49
 polymer films, molecules embedded in, 5:51–54
 reduced, 5:53, 55, 56
 spectral analysis, 5:51–54
 for structure analysis, 5:54–56
- Linear elastic fracture mechanics, 6:300–309
- Linear-flow reactor, 1:295
- Linear low density polyethylene (LLDPE), 5:515–517,
 543–580. *See also* LLDPE
 moderate barrier polymer, 2:46, 47
 permeability, 2:26
 recycling, 11:658–674
 analytical and test methods for, 5:574–577
 applications for, 5:577–580
 blow molding of, 5:579
 blown film mechanical properties for, 5:553
 catalysts for production of, 5:557–564
 chemical properties of, 5:548
 compositional uniformity of, 5:575, 576
 crystallinity of, 5:469
 degradation processes in landfills, 4:245
 described, 5:543
 economic aspects of, 5:571–574
 film applications for, 5:577–579
 health and safety for, 5:577
 history of, 5:543
 hyperbranching in, 6:795
 injection molding of, 5:579
 low pressure manufacturing processes for, 5:564–567
 market comparison for, 5:529
 mechanical properties of, 5:552–556, 576
 molecular orientation of, 5:556
 molecular structure and properties of, 5:544–552
 molecular weight of, 5:546–548
 physical properties of, 5:549–552
 processing of, 5:567–571
 rotational molding of, 5:571, 579
 shear thinning and strain hardening of, 5:526, 527
 shipment and specification for, 5:574
 structure and composition of, 5:575
 synthesis of, 5:468
 viscosity behavior of, 5:527
- Linear polyacrylamides, in solution, 1:122
- Linear polymers, 5:468
 anionic and cationic polymerization, 3:202, 203
 atom transfer radical polymerization, 3:195–197
 click reactions on, 3:194, 195
 melting transition, acoustic properties as probe of,
 1:81

- NMP methods, 3:198, 199
 polyaddition and polycondensation, 3:203, 204
 P-V-T data, 14:79
 RAFT, 3:199–201
 ROMP and ROP, 3:201, 202
 semicrystalline, 12:402
 viscosity and, 5:533
- Linear strain, 12:4
- Linear thermal expansivity, 14:5–7, 25
 polymer properties, 14:35, 36
- Linear units, in hyperbranched polymers, 6:790
- Linear variable differential transducers (LVDT), 4:526, 527, 14:25
- Linear viscoelasticity, 15:77–81, 92–104
 constitutive law for, 15:86–89
 theory of, 15:86–91
- Liners, 9:477
- Liners, trash, 9:477
- Linkages, in lignin molecules, 7:529. *See also*
 Cross-linking
- Linoleum, use in floor coatings, 6:124, 125
- Linseed oil epoxy
 viscosity, 5:325
- Lipase (triacylglycerol acylhydrolase), 5:237
- Lipase, 5:260
 ring opening polymerization by, 12:150, 151
- Lipase CA (CALB), 5:240, 241
- Lipase-polystyrene conjugates, 11:440
- Lipid domains, photopolymerization of, 14:551
- Lipid-free synthetase, 14:552, 553
- Lipid membrane disruption properties, 8:186
- Lipid monolayers, 4:452
- Lipid vesicles
 bilayers of, 14:545
 pharmaceutical applications, 14:542
- Lipids, 14:511
- Lipophilic ketoprofen, 8:428
- Liposome, 14:511
- Liposomes, 2:125
- Liquid membranes, 7:747
- Liquid aerosol, 3:437
- Liquid butyl rubber, 2:353
- Liquid chromatography-mass spectroscopy (LC-MS), 13:757
- Liquid contact media, antioxidants and stabilizers and, 13:20
- Liquid crystal formation, 11:698
- Liquid crystal polymer
 melting temperature, 10:69
- Liquid crystal polymers
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:731
- Liquid crystal-induced CD (LCICD), 12:672, 673
- Liquid crystalline block copolymers(LCBCP), 7:549–560
 ABA triblock copolymer, 7:550
 artificial muscles, 7:558
 bottom-up⁷ self-assembly, 7:558
 coil-coil AB type BCPs, 7:550
 ferroelectric LC mesogens, 7:558
 LC building blocks, 7:551, 552
 LC ordering, 7:550, 551
 liquid crystalline (LC) structures, 7:549
 Lyotropic LC phase, 7:550, 551
 mesogens, ordering of, 7:551
 mesomorphous morphology, 7:551
 photolithography, 7:549
 self-assembling “bottom-up” strategy, 7:558
 thermotropic LC phase, 7:551
 top-down⁷ lithography, 7:558
- Liquid crystalline elastomers (LCE), 5:749–751
 preparation options, 5:749, 750
- Liquid-crystalline elastomers
 introduction, 9:28, 29
 main-chain elastomers, 9:29
 rigid-rod networks, 9:29
 cholesteric phases, 9:29
 nematic phases, 9:29
 smectic liquid-crystalline phases, 9:29
 side-chain, 9:29, 30
- Liquid crystalline hydrogels
 thermochromic, 14:39, 40
- Liquid crystalline polymers, 7:564–575, 9:786
- Liquid crystalline polymers (LCPs), mesophase transitions, 14:285
 AFM imaging of, 1:770, 771
 applications of, 7:574, 575
 cellulose, 2:591, 592
 crystallization of, 7:572
 dielectric spectroscopy, 4:488
 high barrier polymers, 2:41
 high performance fibers, 6:698–701
 main-chain, 7:564–575
 modification of, 7:567
 morphology and microstructure of, 7:573, 574
 rheology and blends for, 7:574
 surface energy of main-chain, 7:573
 synthesis of, 7:565–571
 textures of, 7:567
 thermal characterization methods, 2:745, 746
 thermal stability and degradation of, 7:571, 572
 thermochromic, 14:39
 vibrational spectroscopy, 14:615, 616
- Liquid crystals, 9:761
 alignment, 9:761
- Liquid epoxy resins, 5:300–305
 average U.S. price, 5:299
- Liquid-expanded phase
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:429
- Liquid-injection molding
 phenolic resin applications, 9:616
- Liquid injection molding, 7:10
- Liquid-liquid dispersions, 13:610
- Liquid-liquid reactions, 8:319
- Liquid membranes, 7:765
- Liquid multicomponent systems
 thermodynamic properties, 14:85–90
- Liquid polysulfide polymers, properties of (table), 11:170
- Liquid polysulfides
 effect as flexibilizer, 5:383
- Liquid silicone rubber, 12:500
- Liquid-solid elution chromatography, 7:287
- Liquid surface tension, 1:372
- Liquid surfaces, 1:363, 364
- Liquids
 dispersion methods for, 3:493, 494

- heat capacity, 14:62–75
- mixing, 3:493
- Lithapones, 3:472
- Lithium (Li)-ion polymer batteries, 7:234, 235
- Lithium
 - in styrene polymerization, 13:225
- Lithium niobate, 5:93, 103, 113
- Litho-etch-litho-etch, 7:610
- Litho-freeze-litho-etch, 7:610
- Lithographic resists, 7:579–619
 - chemically amplified resists, 7:585–590
 - dissolution in aqueous base, 7:597–599
 - DNQ-novolac, 7:584
 - essential attributes of, 7:580, 581
 - film transparency and energy absorption, 7:594–597
 - image blur in CA resists, 7:603, 604
 - image collapse, 7:605–607
 - inorganic and composite resists, 7:613, 614
 - limits of extendibility for, 7:603–608
 - line-edge roughness, 7:604, 605
 - lithographic exposure technology, evolution of, 7:582–584
 - modern, 7:584–594
 - nanoimprint lithography, 7:614–616
 - negative acting, 7:579
 - negative-tone development processes, 7:608, 609
 - pattern doubling, 7:609–613
 - photoacid generators, 7:590–594
 - physics of image formation, 7:581, 582
 - plasma etch resistance, 7:597
 - positive acting, 7:579
 - postexposure bake temperature control, 7:600, 601
 - processing delay time effects, 7:601–603
 - radiation sensitivity, 7:607, 608
 - self-assembly, 7:616–619
 - substrate and interfacial effects, 7:599, 600
 - tool contamination due to film components, 7:599
- Lithography, 6:515–517, 7:579
 - tissue engineering application, 14:235
- Lithol red, manufacture of, 3:475
- Living anionic polymerization, 1:596, 597, 7:201
- Living carbocationic polymerization, 2:392, 413–416
- Living free radical photopolymerization, 9:740
- Living free-radical polymerization
 - nanocomposites from, 13:206
 - of styrene, 13:227–233
- Living polymerization of olefins, 12:579–581
- Living polymerization, 2:726, 7:625, 626. *See also*
 - Anionic polymerization
 - defined, 13:227
 - metallocene-based, 8:115
- Living polymers, 7:625–644
 - ABC triblock copolymers, 7:633
 - Anionic polymerization, 7:626, 627
 - applications, 7:631–645
 - atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP), 7:628
 - BAB-type block copolymers, 7:633
 - block copolymers synthesis, 7:631–636
 - block copolymers, applications in, 7:634
 - carbon nanostructures, functionalization of, 7:641–644
 - cationic polymerization, 7:627–630
 - complex polymer architectures, 7:638–640
 - end-functionalized polymers, synthesis of, 7:636–638
 - glass-sealed reactors, 7:626
 - inorganic nanoparticles, surface functionalization of, 7:641
 - macromonomers, homopolymerization of, 7:637
 - macromonomers, synthesis of, 7:637, 638
 - polymacromonomers, 7:637, 638
 - reversible addition fragmentation transfer polymerization (RAFT), 7:628
 - reversible chain transfer agent (CTA), 7:628, 629
 - surface modification, 7:640–642
- Living radical copolymerization, 3:786–800
- Living radical polymerization (LRP), 2:191, 192, 7:627, 648–668, 13:681–689
 - of acrylonitrile, 1:287
 - advanced architectures, 7:661–666
 - atom transfer radical polymerization, 7:653–656
 - combined mechanisms, 7:666, 667
 - in emulsions, 7:667, 668
 - nitroxide-mediated polymerization, 7:651–653
 - reversible addition-fragmentation chain transfer, 7:657, 658
 - scope and limitations, 7:658–661
- Living ring opening polymerization
 - catalyzed by organometallics, 12:139–150
- Living/controlled polymerization methods, 3:194, 195
- LLDPE blow molding, 5:571
- LLDPE blown film extrusion, 5:569, 570
- LLDPE capacity, global, 5:573
- LLDPE chain structure, 5:544
- LLDPE comonomer, 5:544
- LLDPE composition, 5:545, 546
- LLDPE extrusion temperatures, 5:569
- LLDPE extrusion, 5:571
- LLDPE film extrusion, 5:569, 570
- LLDPE films, 5:556
- LLDPE injection molding, 5:570
- LLDPE manufacturing, 5:564–567
- LLDPE processing, 5:567–571
- LLDPE production costs, 5:572
- LLDPE production, catalysts for, 5:557–564
- LLDPE resins, super-hexene, 5:556
- LLDPE rheology, 5:567–569
- LLDPE rotational molding, 5:571
- LLDPE. *See* Linear low density polyethylene (LLDPE)
- LLS. *See* Laser light scattering (LLS)
- Load cell, 6:93
- Load fracture, 6:284–289
- Loading
 - fillers, 5:787
- Loading modes, 6:306
- Loading rate
 - effect on fracture mode, 6:326
 - effect on thermoplastic polymers, 6:324
 - effect on toughness, 6:327
- Loading state, 6:306
- Local chain motions
 - molecular modeling, 8:614–616
- Local plastic deformation, 6:331, 8:477, 478
- Local segmental anisotropy, 9:263
- Local stresses, magnitude of, 6:306
- Locard's Exchange Principle, 6:174
- Lock and key selectivity
 - and molecular self-assembly, 8:639, 648
- Lodge-Meissner relationship, 15:137

- Loeb-Sourirajan asymmetric membranes, 7:746, 759, 784
- Loeb-Sourirajan membrane casting machine, 7:745, 752, 757, 759, 779
- Loeb-Sourirajan membranes, 5:829, 834
- Loeb-Sourirajan process, 5:834
- polymer membrane, precipitation of, 5:838, 839
- Loeb-Sourirajan reverse osmosis membranes, 7:759
- Loeb-Sourirajan ultrafiltration membrane, 7:757
- “Log CLD” approach, 7:363
- Log-normal distribution function, 8:662
- Logarithmic normal polymer distribution, 2:739
- London dispersion forces, 8:640
- London forces, release agents and, 11:703, 704
- Long-chain alkyl derivatives, as release agents, 11:700, 702
- Long-chain branching
- bushy, 5:519
 - of LDPE, 5:517, 524, 532, 533
 - metallocene-based polymerization, 8:115, 116
 - in styrene polymerization, 13:192, 193
- Long-chain fatty alcohols, acids, and esters, 1:667
- Long-fiber reinforced PPS composites, 10:137
- Long fibers, 11:683–685
- Long flow carbon blacks
- surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Long glass fiber reinforced thermoplastics (LFRT), 1:802
- Long oil alkyds, 1:480
- Long oil varnishes, 1:480
- Long-staple ring-spinning, 15:322
- Long-term thermal stabilizers, 13:28–30
- Longitudinal acoustic mode, vibrational spectroscopy, 13:758, 14:583–590
- Longitudinal sound speed, 1:63
- Longitudinal waves
- acoustic, 1:62
- Loop reactors, 5:189, 191
- Loop tenacity, of a fiber, 10:240, 241
- Lorenz-Lorentz theory, 9:391
- Loss factor
- dielectric property, 4:479
 - and sound absorption, 1:62, 68
- Loss index
- Cole-Cole circular plot of, 4:718
 - definition, 4:738
 - at different temperatures, 4:720
 - frequency-temperature contours of, 4:727
 - polar polymers and, 4:715, 716
 - of poly(vinyl acetate), 4:726
 - relative, 4:678
- Loss modulus, 3:306
- Loss tangent, 3:306, 15:99
- and sound absorption, 1:62
- Low activity vapors
- transport in amorphous rubbery polymers, 14:298–301
 - transport in semicrystalline and cross-linked rubbery polymers, 14:323–329
- Low-angle light scattering
- for molecular weight determination, 13:763
- Low color carbon blacks
- surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Low cycle fatigue regime, 5:698–701
- Low density copolymer resins, 5:538
- Low density polyethylene (LDPE), 2:215, 216, 4:47, 5:484, 486, 515–541. *See also* Ethylene polymers
- degradation processes in landfills, 4:245
 - analytical and test methods for, 5:531–533
 - antagonistic and synergistic effects on photostability of, 13:43, 44
 - density of, 5:532
 - described, 5:515
 - economic aspects of, 5:528–530
 - environmental impact of, 5:534, 535
 - extrusion coating from, 5:539
 - fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
 - film properties, 5:806
 - food contact with, 5:534
 - gas diffusion in, 8:305
 - gel level of, 5:533
 - health and safety factors for, 5:534, 535
 - high pressure synthesis, 4:47
 - impact resistance improvement, 6:831
 - lignin filler, 2:94
 - manufacturers of, 5:530
 - market comparison for, 5:529
 - melt stabilization of, 13:21, 22
 - mixed waste streams, 11:668
 - moderate barrier polymer, 2:46
 - monomer and comonomers for, 5:515, 516
 - permeability, 2:12, 26
 - permeability prediction, 2:32
 - photodegradation of, 13:35
 - photo-oxidation of, 13:10
 - polymerization mechanism for, 5:521–526
 - polymerization reactors for, 5:518–521
 - processing of, 5:527–529
 - properties of, 5:516–518
 - properties of barrier, 2:34
 - recycling, 11:658–674
 - sound speeds, 1:86
 - specifications and standards for, 5:530, 531
 - supply/demand for, 5:530
 - synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:508, 509
 - thermoforming, 14:126
 - uses for, 5:535–541
 - viscosity behavior of, 5:527
- Low-density polyethylene (LDPE), 4:91, 9:485
- solid-state extrusion, 12:693
- Low density polyethylene
- melting temperature, 10:69
- Low density polyethylene, cellular
- commercial products and processes, 2:557, 558
 - decompression expansion processes, 2:521
- Low density, high pressure polyethylene
- flash devolatilization application, 6:100
- Low fiber volume fraction, strength of composites with, 11:684
- Low frequency techniques
- for acoustic measurements, 1:100
- Low melt fibers, 10:521
- Low molecular weight liquid crystals (LMWLCs), liquid crystallinity of, 7:564
- Low-molecular-weight organogelators (LMWGs), 13:450, 451

- Low molecular weight polyacrylamides (LMPAM), commercial preparation of, 1:136
- Low orientation yarns, 10:250
- Low pill fibers, 10:518
- Low pressure catalytic process, 5:486
- Low pressure manufacturing processes, LLDPE, 5:564–567
- Low pressure polymerization, 5:468
- Low radical fluxes, 5:192–194
- Low shear mixing, of colorants, 3:492, 493
- Low solids solvent-borne epoxy coatings, 5:386
- Low speed spinning, 10:527, 529
- Low temperature relaxation transition, 14:283
- Low temperature resistance, of acrylic elastomers, 1:181, 182
- Low temperature solution polymerization
MPDI preparation via, 10:221
PPTA preparation via, 10:223
- Low thermal stability aromatic polymers, with high SEA, 6:83
- Low vinyl polybutadiene, 2:315
- Low-voltage scanning electron microscopes, 6:284
- Low wet modulus rayon, 2:676
- Lower critical solution (LCS), 8:535
- Lower critical solution temperature (LCST), 2:780, 4:363–370, 8:535, 9:564–566, 14:90. *See also* Dendronized
- Lower flammability limit (LFL), 6:40, 41
- Lowest unoccupied molecular orbital (LUMO), 12:627
- Lubricants, 1:358, 359
antioxidant applications, 1:714, 716
for easy-flow polystyrenes, 13:186
nylon, 10:283
poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756
and scratch behavior, 12:332, 333
silicone application, 12:465
test methods, 13:760
wool processing, 15:321
xylylene polymer applications, 15:444
- Lubricants, in plastics compounding, 3:551
- Lubrication efficiency, fluid/polymer adhesion, 13:518
- Lubrication theory, of plasticizer action, 10:43
- Lumber, 15:281
- Lumbert, 3:728
- Luminescence
characterization methods, 2:753, 754
- Luminous power efficiency, 7:513
- Lupron Depot, 3:754, 755
- Lustig-Shay-Caruthers model, of solid-like polymers, 15:152, 161–163
- Lutradur
physical properties, 9:181
- LVDT-based instruments, 13:823, 824
- Lyases, 5:222
- Lygerum*
species with fiber potential, 14:497
- Lyocell process, 2:692–694
applications, 2:686, 694–697
environmental issues, 2:701, 702
- Lyophilic colloids, 3:436, 440, 448, 449
- Lytropic liquid crystalline aramides, 7:65
- Lysine
chemical structure, 15:186
composition in silk, 12:543
percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Lysine (2-chlorobenzyloxycarbonyl protected), 11:69
- Lysine (4,4-dimethyl-2,6-dioxocyclohex-1-ylidene protected), 11:75
- Lysine (allyloxycarbonyl protected), 11:75
- Lysine (*tert*-butyloxycarbonyl protected), 11:73
- M3EH-PPV:CN-ether-PPV polymer blend devices, 12:647
- mABA. *See* *m*-Acetoxybenzoic acid (mABA)
- MABS. *See* Methacrylate acrylonitrile butadiene styrene (MABS)
- MAC. *See* Methacryloyloxyethyltrimethylammonium chloride (MAETAC)
- Mach Zehnder modulator, 5:108, 109
- Machine direction
of polyethylene films, 5:553
- Machine technology, 3:551, 555
internal mixers, 3:557, 562
mixing and metering units, 3:555, 557
other machines, 3:563
twin-screw extruders, 3:557, 560
- Macro-RAFT agent (table), 11:727, 735, 736
- Macrocapsules, 8:376, 395
- Macrocrazes, 8:488, 489
- Macrocycle, 7:674, 11:119
- Macrocylic aramid oligomers, 7:688, 689
- Macrocylic aramids (aryl aryl amides), 7:689
- Macrocylic arylates, 7:687, 688
- Macrocylic polymers, 7:674–690
critical monomer concentration (CMC), 7:676
cyclization techniques, 7:675–678
cyclization, probability of, 7:676
end-to-end cyclization reactions, 7:677
end-to-end cyclization, 7:677
Gaussian statistics, 7:676, 677
Intramolecular polycondensation, 7:677
Jacobsen-Stockmayer theory, 7:676
reversible transesterification, 7:675
ring-chain equilibration, 7:675
- Macrocylic polythioethers, 13:291–293
- Macrodefect-free (MDF) cement, 2:711, 713
- Macroheterobicyclic compounds, 7:305
- Macroinitiator, 2:192
- Macromers, 13:724, 725
- Macromolecular dyes, 4:579–604
addition polymerization routes, 4:581, 582
alternating-copolymerization, 4:582
applications, 4:604
biologically derived polymeric colorants, 4:584
chronological development of, 4:592–603
classifications of, 4:580
health, safety and environmental impact of, 4:591, 604
pendent coloring groups, 4:582–584
polymerizable dyes, 4:585–591. *See also* Polymerizable dyes
synthesis strategies, 4:580–585
totally chromophoric macromolecular dyes, 4:584, 585
- Macromolecular structure, of polymers, 10:239
- Macromonomer method, of graft copolymers synthesis, 6:468, 488–505

- Macromonomer RAFT agents, 11:710
- Macromonomers, 13:724–729
- Macrophase separation, 2:206
- Macroporous anion exchangers, 7:158, 159
- Macroporous-type polystyrenes, 11:21–24
- Macroscale batch reactions, 8:345
- Macroscale reactors, 8:320
- Macroscopic analysis, of fractures, 6:282
- MADIX (macromolecular design via interchange of xanthates), 7:650
- MAETAC (methacryloyloxyethyltrimethylammonium chloride), acrylamide copolymers with, 1:133, 134
- Magnafloc, 866A, 4:553
- drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Magnesia
- filler material, 5:785
- Magnesium
- SiC-fiber-reinforced, 11:697
- Magnesium carbonate
- filler material, 5:785
- Magnesium chloride Ziegler-Natta catalysts, 15:508–520
- active site models for polypropylene, 11:379–383
- electron donors, 11:383–388
- for polypropylene, 11:368, 371
- Magnetic fields
- electron spin resonance imaging with gradients, 5:13, 14
- Magnetic ion exchangers, 7:159
- Magnetic nanocrystals, 8:786
- Magnetic nanoparticles, 8:798
- Magnetic polymers, 7:692–703
- categories, 7:692
- cross-conjugated polyradical molecules, 7:692–694
- definition, 7:692
- diradicals to pendant-type polyradical molecules, extension of, 7:696, 697
- head-to-tail linkage, 7:697
- high-spin exchange interaction, 7:695
- m*-phenylene-connected, 7:697–699
- nanometer-sized magnetic dots, 7:699–701
- non-disjoint diradical organic molecules, 7:694–696
- non-Kekulé organic molecule, 7:694–696
- overview, 7:692–694
- pendant-type polyradicals, 7:697
- poly(1,2-phenylenevinylene)s, 7:697
- triarylmethine radical, 7:699
- two-dimensionally extended poly(aminium cationic radical)s, 7:699–701
- Magnetic resonance imaging, 5:12, 8:801, 9:238–241
- Magnetic spin interactions, in NMR, 9:238
- Magnetically stimulated controlled release technology, 3:753
- Magnetization relaxation, 9:242–244
- transverse, 9:263–268
- Magneto-optic devices
- metal-filled nanocomposite application, 8:762, 763
- Magnitude of local stresses, 6:306
- Main-chain aromatic polymers, 11:477
- Main-chain LCBCPs, 7:553
- Main-chain liquid crystalline polymers, 7:564–575. *See also* Liquid crystalline (LC) polymers
- synthesis of, 7:565–571
- Main chain mobility, internal, 6:324–327
- Main-chain polymers, 6:345–347
- Main-chain supramolecular polymers, 8:640–642
- Makrolon, 10:354
- MALDI-TOF mass measurements. *See* Matrix-assisted laser desorption/ionization (MALDI)
- applications of, 7:715–723
- broad MMD homopolymers, 7:716–718
- end groups, 7:718
- narrow MMD homopolymers, 7:715, 716
- of copolymers, 7:718, 719
- of poly(alkylthiophenes), 7:718
- of polystyrene, 7:704
- size exclusion chromatography, 7:716–718
- Male forming, 14:112
- Maleic anhydride
- copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- copolymerization with styrene, 13:193, 195, 235
- Maleic anhydride-grafted polymers, 10:678, 680
- Maleimide cure system, 5:478, 479
- Maltooligosaccharide-specific channel LamB, 14:553, 554
- Mammalian glycogen, biosynthesis of, 6:462
- Man-made vitreous fibers, 6:715
- Mandrel die, spiral, 5:675
- Manganese
- metal-catalyzed oxidation by, 1:689
- Manganese dioxide, 11:169
- Manila maguey, 14:495
- processing, 14:505
- Mannich base adduct
- coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:342
- Mannich reaction, of poly(acrylamide), 1:128, 129
- Manually-induced healing, 12:339
- Manufacturing techniques, 9:471
- MAO activator, 5:557
- MAO. *See* Methylaluminoxane (MAO)
- MAPTAC (methacrylamidopropylacrylamide), acrylamide copolymers with, 1:132
- Marangoni effect, 8:426
- Marble, 5:793
- Marble flour, dolomitic
- filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
- filler properties, 5:379
- Marching modulus, 12:238
- Marijuana, 14:502
- Marine coatings
- epoxy resins, 5:390–392
- Mark-Houwink constants, 7:55
- for poly(ethylene oxide), 5:448
- for PTT, 10:203
- Mark-Houwink equation, 2:650, 742, 3:103, 10:514, 202
- Mark-Houwink parameters, 14:771
- Mark-Houwink plots, 3:120
- Mark-Houwink-Sakurada equation
- hyperbranched polymers and, 6:782
- of polyacrylamide solutions, 1:122–124
- Market economics. *See* Economic aspects
- Markovian chain, 8:519
- Marring, 3:308
- MARS-III (Multifunction Axial Rheometer System)
- MAS, 2000 Organic Vapor Permeation Test System, 2:25

- Masking tape, 11:291
- Mass flux, 6:51
at ignition, 6:58
- Mass loss rate (MLR)
at firepoint, 6:57, 57
at flashpoint, 6:57, 57
- Mass polymerization, of ABS polymers, 1:325, 326
- Mass spectrometers, 3:92
- Mass spectrometry (MS), 2:738, 739, 7:703–723, 14:563. *See also* MALDI
choice of salts, 7:710, 711
detectors, 7:709
electrospraying sample preparation, 7:712
fractionation, 6:268
hand spotting, 7:711, 712
ion formation, 7:705–715
MALDI methods, 7:704, 705
MALDI process, 7:707
mass axis calibration, 7:713
matrices for MALDI process, 7:709, 710
for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:674
nebulizing sample preparation, 7:712
of synthetic polymers, 7:705
paste method, 7:713
sample preparation methods for solid matrices, 7:711–713
separation process, 7:707–709
signal axis quantification, 7:713–715
solvent-free grinding method, 7:712, 713
thermal degradation studies, 4:269, 270
- Mass-suspension or semisuspension polymerization, 13:605
- Master curves, 1:78, 15:93, 95
- Masterbatch color, 3:490
- Mater-Bi films, 13:66, 67
- Mater-Bi starch-based materials, 13:66, 4:292
- Material configuration, in K-BKZ model, 15:120
- Material defects, fracture and, 6:299
- Material functions, 15:78–81
defined, 15:78
- Material handling and drying, ABS and, 1:328, 329
- Material resistance, 6:303
- Material Safety Data Sheets (MSDS), 1:160, 5:577
- Material selection and handling, in injection molding materials, 12:309
SFM-based in-depth profiling, 12:308
SFM-based nanotomography approach, 12:308
SFM imaging, 12:306–311
- Materials. *See also* Polymer materials
mechanical performance of, 11:679
reinforcement of, 11:679–699, 700
- Matrimid/PSf dual-layer hollow fiber membranes, 8:30
- Matrimid/PSf dual-layer, 8:30
- Matrix-assisted laser desorption/ionization (MALDI), 7:703
ionization time of flight mass spectrometry, 2:738
as soft ionization methods, 7:704, 705
electrospraying sample preparation for, 7:712
mass spectrometry, 2:738, 14:563
matrices for, 7:709, 710
nebulizing sample preparation for, 7:712
polymer architecture elucidated by, 7:720–723
process, 7:707
to elucidate polymer chemistry, 7:720
- Matrix ELDOR (electron-electron nuclear double resonance), 5:10, 34
- Matrix ENDOR (electron nuclear double resonance), 5:9
- Matrix material, reinforcement of, 11:679
- Matrix polymerization, 13:744
- Matrix shear yield strength, 11:686
- Matsen-Schick molecular modeling method, 8:598
- Mauritius, 14:495
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
- Mauritius hemp
processing, 14:505
- Maxillofacial prosthetic materials, 4:396, 397
latexes, 4:396
polyurethanes, 4:397
silicones, 4:396, 397
vinyl plastisols, 4:396
- Maximum extensibility, 4:640
- Maximum fuel generation rate, 6:45
- Maxwell model
conjugate, 15:85
generalized, 15:84, 85
stress-strain plot for, 15:90
of viscoelasticity, 15:81, 82, 88
- Mayo dimer, 13:216
- Mayo-Lewis equation, 6:224
- Mayo mechanism, 13:215
- Mayo method, 11:589, 590
- Mayonnaise
as colloid, 3:437
- McBain spring balance
for permeation measurement, 2:26
- McConville single-site catalyst, 5:564
- MCL PHAs. *See* Medium-chain-length PHAs (MCL PHAs)
- MCSCF. *See* Multireference self-consistent field (MCSCF)
- MD. *See* Machine direction (MD); Molecular dynamics
- MDA. *See* Methylenedianiline (MDA)
- MDF cements. *See* Macrodefect-free (MDF) cement
- MDI. *See* Diphenylmethane diisocyanate
- MDMO-PPV:PCBM solar cells, 12:633
- MDs. *See* Metal ion deactivators (MDs)
- Meals ready to eat (MRE), 9:459
- Mean square radius, of polyacrylamides, 1:122
- Mean square step length, 3:688
- Measurement
properties, units, and standard methods of, 5:209
- Meat packaging, 9:473, 474
- Mechanical analysis, via atomic force microscopy, 1:753–757
- Mechanical bonding, 1:401
- Mechanical constitutive models, of solid-like polymers, 15:154
- Mechanical degradation
and drag reduction, 4:558–562
- Mechanical energy, adhesives and, 1:362
- Mechanical performance, of materials, 11:679
- Mechanical properties
cross-linking on, effect of, 4:99–102

- Mechanical properties. *See also* Micromechanical properties
- Barex resins (table), 1:285
 - block copolymers, 8:496
 - composite foams, 3:507–509
 - elastomeric fibers, 5:771
 - engineering thermoplastics, 5:209–211, 214–217
 - filled polymers, 5:790–793
 - hyperbranched polymers, 6:784, 785
 - Kapton, 10:588
 - LLDPE, 5:552–556, 576
 - molecular modeling, 8:620
 - nanocomposites, 8:741–745
 - natural rubber fibers, 5:771
 - PEN, 10:146, 147
 - PET and PEN films, 10:506
 - polyamide plastics, 10:277–280
 - polyarylates, 10:352
 - polyimides, 5:69
 - polyketones, 10:659–664
 - polysulfones, 11:190, 191
 - of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:205–205
 - silk, 12:548
 - and solid-state extrusion, 12:692–695
 - spandex fibers, 5:771
 - test methods, 13:770, 772–775
 - thermally bonded nonwovens, 8:566–568
 - and tire compounding, 12:257, 258
 - Ultem polyetherimide, 10:590
 - vegetable fibers, 14:500
 - vinyl acetal polymers, 14:640
 - vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:692–695
 - and vulcanization of rubber, 12:238, 239
 - wood-plastic composites, 15:303
 - xylylene polymers, 15:425, 426
- Mechanical relaxation tests, dynamic, 8:476
- Mechanical test methods
- compliance, 9:105
 - dynamic mechanical analysis (DMA), 9:105
 - dynamic thermal mechanical analysis (DTMA), 9:105
 - quantitative evaluation, 9:105
- Mechanical testing. *See* Test methods
- Mechanical tests
- composite materials, 3:542–548
- Mechanics, rational, 15:160
- Mechanophores, 4:503
- Media mills, 3:494
- Mediated radical reactions
- initiators for, 6:858–860
- Medical applications. *See* Biomedical applications
- PEN, 10:156
 - xylylene polymers, 15:442
- Medical device packaging, 9:476
- Medical devices
- silicone application, 12:465
- Medical packaging, 9:476
- ethylene-norbornene copolymer, 5:590
- Medical tapes, 11:291
- Medical test strips
- polyester film application, 10:510
- Medium-chain-length PHAs (MCL PHAs), 10:96, 109
- biosynthesis of, 10:105, 106
- Medium color carbon blacks
- surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Medium density fiberboard, 15:297, 298
- characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Medium density polyethylene
- moderate barrier polymer, 2:46
- Medium oil alkyds, 1:480
- Medium oil varnishes, 1:480
- Medium oriented yarns, 10:251
- Medium-speed spinning, 10:527
- Medium vinyl polybutadiene, 2:315, 316
- Mega-reactors, for LDPE, 5:519
- MEH-PPV. *See*
- Poly[2-(2-ethylhexyl)oxy-5-methoxy-*p*-phenylene vinylene] (MEH-PPV)
- MEHQ. *See* Methyl ether of hydroquinone (MEHQ); Monomethylhydroquinone (MEHQ)
- MEK. *See* Methyl ethyl ketone (MEK)
- MEKO. *See* Methyl ethyl ketone oxime (MEKO)
- Melamine
- in amino resins, 1:519
- Melamine dinnerware, 1:528
- Melamine-formaldehyde (MF) resins, 1:516, 531, 536, 539, 426
- manufacture of, 1:525
 - water-soluble, 1:543
- Melamine formaldehyde (MF) resins, 4:80
- Melamine-formaldehyde
- advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
- Melamine-formaldehyde adhesives
- for wood composites, 15:286, 287
- Melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:727–739
- analytical methods, 7:737–739
 - applications, 7:735
 - cocondensation resins, 7:733, 734
 - composition and basic reactions, 7:728–734
 - economic aspects, 7:739
 - hardening, 7:735–737
- Melamine-formaldehyde, 3:588, 589
- Melamine-glass cloth laminate, 4:693, 694
- Melamine molding compound, 1:517
- Melamine resins, 1:526. *See also* Amino resins; Plastics
- Melamine-urea
- in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Melamine-urea-formaldehyde (MUF) resins, 1:426
- Melamine-formaldehyde resins
- curing agents, 5:355, 356
- Meloxicam-loaded nanoparticles, 8:433
- Melt behavior, of polyester fibers, 10:513, 514
- Melt blowing
- propylene polymers, 11:402
- Melt conveying zone, 5:651
- Melt conveying, 5:651–654
- Melt-crystallized lamellae, 8:711–718
- dominant lamellae, 8:713–715
 - lamellar surfaces, 8:717, 718
 - lateral habits, 8:715–717
 - permanganic etching, 8:713
 - subsidiary lamellae, 8:713
- Melt-crystallized polypropylene spherulitic structure of, 6:321
- Melt-fed extruder, 5:618
- Melt film, thickness of, 5:648
- Melt flow behavior
- characterization methods, 2:754

- Melt flow index (MFI), 4:94, 5:211
- Melt-flow rate, LDPE, 5:531, 532
- Melt flow ratio, 5:469
- Melt fracture, 11:352
- Melt index, 5:495
- of CSM polymers, 5:471
 - of LDPE, 5:532
 - of LLDPE, 5:546
- Melt index range, of LLDPE, 5:578
- Melt index ratios, 5:573
- for LLPDE, 5:547
- Melt matrix, 5:647
- Melt mixing
- powder coatings, 3:249, 250
- Melt-phase condensation polymerizations, of
- bisphenols, 4:58, 59
- Melt-phase polymerization
- 2,6-NDC, 10:147–149
- Melt processable polyimides, 10:636, 637
- Melt processed polyferrocenylsilanes, 7:55
- Melt processibility
- modification with flexible segments and, 7:570
- Melt processing
- of polysulfones, 11:195–197
 - thermal degradation during, 13:5, 21–28
- Melt-processing stabilizers, 13:21–28
- Melt properties, of styrene polymers, 13:183, 184
- Melt removal, drag induced, 5:648
- Melt rheology, 7:321
- Melt rheology, of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:205. *See also* Rheology
- Melt spinning apparatus, 10:250
- Melt spinning, 3:498, 5:841, 7:765, 767
- acrylic fibers, 1:247
 - mesophase pitch-based carbon fibers, 2:472–479
 - olefin fibers, 9:351
 - of PET fibers, 10:524–531
 - of polyamide fiber, 10:247
 - propylene polymers, 11:401, 402
 - Spandex, 5:773, 774
 - of thermoplastics, 1:807, 808
- Melt swelling, 5:670
- Melt temperature, 5:651–654
- nonuniform, 5:657
 - of shape-memory polymers, 12:412
- Melt viscosity
- LLDPE, 5:567
 - of amorphous polymer, 6:438
- Meltblown fabrics, 9:196, 197
- Melting point
- of polyacrylonitrile, 1:278
 - propylene polymers, 11:361, 362
- Melting processes, PVDF, 15:68–71
- Melting transition
- sound as probe of, 1:81
- Melts
- block copolymer, 2:192–197
 - entangled, 15:106–110
- Membrane
- AFM imaging of, 1:773
 - bioreactors (MBRs), 5:832
 - casting bath parameters, 5:839
 - cellulose nitrate applications, 2:610
 - cleaning, for fouling prevention, 5:850
 - coating, for fouling prevention, 5:848, 849
 - defined, 5:826
 - electrically active polymers for, 4:772, 773
 - interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:141
 - in liquid filtration, 5:831
 - material choice, 5:844
 - microporous, 7:790
 - performance characteristics of, 7:784
 - permeation control, 5:830
 - phosphazenes, 11:106
 - preparation by phase inversion, 5:839, 840
 - preparation of, 7:747–773
 - types of, 7:745–747
 - xylylene polymer applications, 15:444
- Membrane casting machines, 7:766, 768
- Membrane contactors, 7:803, 804
- Membrane electrode assemblies (MEAs), 12:112
- Membrane fouling, 7:781, 782
- Membrane material, 7:793, 8:32
- Membrane module designs, characteristics of, 7:771
- Membrane modules, 7:768–770
- selection of, 7:770–774
- Membrane osmometry
- for average molar mass determination, 2:741
 - for number-average molecular weight determination, 8:668
- Membrane pervaporation, 8:20, 32
- Membrane phenomena, 5:826
- studies, 5:826, 827
- Membrane porosity, 7:749, 750
- Membrane preparation techniques, less widely used (table), 7:763
- Membrane processes, classification, 5:830–836
- Membrane processes, cyclodextrin polymers in, 4:201, 202
- Membranes for energy applications, 8:1–33
- Membrane selectivity, 7:791
- Membrane separation plants, 7:795
- Membrane separation technologies, 7:774
- Membrane separation, 7:775
- polysulfones in, 11:201
- Membrane technology, 7:743–805, 8:1, 8:3, 8:14
- applications of, 7:773–803
 - future of, 7:805
 - historical development of, 7:744, 745
 - for membrane and membrane module preparation, 7:747–774
 - membrane types in, 7:745–747
 - uses of, 7:743
- Membrane tortuosity, 7:749, 750
- Memory effect
- composite materials, 3:537, 538
- Memory experiment, 1:456, 457
- MEMS. *See* Micro-electro-mechanical-systems (MEMS)
- Meniscus coater, 3:275
- MEP. *See* Minimum energy path (MEP)
- Mercaptan regulators, use of, 2:716
- Mercaptans
- curing agents for epoxies, 5:356, 357
- Mercaptans, in cold SBR production, 13:273
- Mercaptoacetic acid methyl ester
- transfer coefficient to, 11:530

- Mercaptobenzothiazole
 accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
 4-(α -Mercaptobenzyl)phenylacetic acid, 11:79
 Mercaptopropionic acid, 8:785
 γ -Mercaptopropyltrimethoxysilane, 12:188
 Mercaptothiazolines (RMTZ), 13:32
 Mercerization
 in viscose process, 2:677, 678
 Merino wool
 amino acid composition (table), 15:313
 Merrifield method, 11:434
 Mesodyn, 8:599
 Mesogens, 6:36, 41, 42
 directional orientation, 5:754
 fuel generation kinetics, 6:41
 in cross-linked FLCE samples, 5:763
 network interactions, 5:769
 profiles, 6:41
 pyrolysis vs. char mass fraction, 6:44, 45
 temperature dynamics, 6:44
 Mesophase pitch
 graphite in composites from, 11:691
 Mesophase pitch-based carbon fibers, 2:469, 472–479
 tensile strength *versus* modulus for commercial, 2:467
 Mesophase spherule, 2:473
 Metakaolin, 5:794
 Metal alkyl cocatalysts, 5:488
 Metal alloys
 fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
 Metal-bearing microgel catalysts
 catalysis with, 8:446
 One-Pot Metal Encapsulation, 8:442–444
 synthesis of, 8:442
 Metal-bearing star polymer catalysts, 8:450
 Metal catalysts, 8:442
 Metal-catalyzed oxidation, 1:689
 Metal-catalyzed polymerization, 5:557, 558
 in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:56, 57
 Metal chalcogenides
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Metal cleaning
 for powder coating, 3:254
 Metal complexes, 8:442
 as photostabilizers, 13:31–33
 Metal container coatings
 epoxy resins, 5:392–395
 Metal-containing PIMs, 11:9
 Metal containing polymers, 8:192
 Metal-containing polymers, 8:39–70
 Metal deactivators, 1:700
 Metal fibers
 filler material, 5:785
 Metal-filled nanocomposites, 8:748–764
 Metal Halide Lamps, 15:263
 Metal halides
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Metal hydrogen phosphates
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Metal ion deactivators (MDs), as preventive
 antioxidants, 13:16–18
 Metal ions, 8:452
 Metal matrix composites, boron-fiber-reinforced, 11:697
 Metal-mediated cross-coupling, 3:705–707
 Metal membranes, 7:747, 762, 763
 Metal molding, 7:10
 Metal nanoparticle, 8:455
 bearing microgels, synthetic methodologies, 8:453
 Metal-organic-frameworks (MOFs), 11:1
 Metal oxide, 8:786
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 for rubber compounding, 12:224
 Metal oxy-halides
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Metal phosphates
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Metal powder
 filler material, 5:785
 Metal salts, 8:442
 Metal-working techniques, polysulfones and, 11:197
 Metallacyclobutane, 8:150
 intermediate, 8:164
 Metallacyclopentadiene moieties, 7:64
 Metallation
 metallocene-based of unsaturated hydrocarbons, 8:136
 Metallic pigments, 3:473
 Metallic soaps, as release agents, 11:701
 Metallization, 9:472
 azo pigment manufacture via, 3:475
 films, 5:824
 Metallized azo orange pigment, 3:476
 Metallized azo red pigment, 3:476
 Metallized azo yellow pigment, 3:476, 477
 Metallized films, 9:472
 Metallizing, for ABS polymers, 1:332
 Metallo-supramolecular polymers, 13:454–458
 ditopic bisterpyridines (btpy), 13:455
 Metallocene-based catalysts, 12:553–557
 Metallocene catalysts, 5:560, 561. *See also*
 Metallocenes; Single-site catalysts
 single-site, 5:591
 Metallocene catalysts, for HDPE production, 5:490, 491
 Metallocene-catalyzed LLDPE (mLLDPE), 5:544, 568, 569, 572, 579
 hexene copolymer of, 5:554
 single-site-catalyzed, 5:547
 Metallocene-catalyzed polyethylene (mPE), 5:568
 Metallocene-catalyzed polymerization
 ethylene copolymers, 5:429–431
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:600, 601
 Metallocene-catalyzed polymerization, stereoselectivity, 13:94
 Metallocene-catalyzed resins, 5:568, 569, 572, 576, 579
 Metallocene nucleus, organic chemistry of, 7:50, 51
 Metallocene polymerized polyethylene (mPE), 6:297
 Metallocene polymers
 face-to-face, 7:59
 Metallocene polypropylene, 5:563
 Metallocene VLDPE, 5:563
 Metallocenes, 8:81–140
 activation, 8:105–107
 additive effects on polymerization, 8:104, 105
 alkene and alkyne dimerization and trimerization, 8:136, 137
 alkylation, 8:138

- allyl coupling reactions, 8:138
- alternate modes of catalyst physisorption, 8:91, 92
- aluminoxane cocatalysts, 8:84–91
- assisted metallation of unsaturated hydrocarbons, 8:136
- bis(cyclopentadienyl) complexes, 8:92, 93
- bridged metallocenes, 8:93–96
- chain termination, 8:111–115
- chemical reactivity, 8:83, 84
- commercialization of, 5:561
- commercial overview, 8:138–140
- complexes with dianionic ligands, 8:99, 100
- complexes with open pentadienyl ligands, 8:99
- coupling of alkenes and alkynes, 8:133–135
- cycloolefin polymerization, 8:126, 127
- cyclopentadienylchromium compounds, 8:102, 103
- deactivation, 8:105–107
- diene polymerization, 8:125, 126
- graft and block copolymerization of olefins with non-olefins, 8:131, 132
- Group IIIB and f-block metallocenes, 8:100, 101
- Group IVB metallocenes, 8:92, 93
- Group VB and VIB metallocenes, 8:101, 102
- hydrogenations, 8:135
- hydrozirconation, 8:133
- isobutylene polymerization, 8:127
- isocyanate polymerization, 8:132
- lactone polymerization, 8:130, 131
- long-chain branching, 8:115, 116
- metathesis, 8:137
- methylene cycloalkanes polymerization, 8:127
- methyl methacrylate polymerization, 8:129, 130
- mixed, 8:128, 129
- mono(cyclopentadienyl) complexes, 8:96–98
- polar comonomers, 8:127–129
- polymerization using, 8:105–129
- polymerizing monomers other than alkanes, 8:129–132
- porous silica supports, 8:91
- preparation, 8:84
- propylene polymers, 11:388–395
- reactions not involving polymerization, 8:132–138
- reductions, 8:135
- side reactions, 8:116–118
- silane polymerization, 8:131
- stereoselective, 8:118–125
- structure and bonding, 8:82, 83
- styrene copolymerization with ethylene, 8:127, 128
- styrene polymerization, 8:129
- supports as part of ligand set, 8:92
- trends in polymerization, 8:103, 104
- Metallophthalocyanine electrochromic films, 4:794–797
- Metals
- versus* elastomers, 4:644, 645
- electrical conductivity of typical, 4:743
- oxide surface layer on, 1:377
- phosgene reactions with, 9:625
- Poisson's ratio, moduli, and density of, 4:643
- properties of nanosized, 8:752–755
- release agent use with, 11:705
- in surface treatment, 1:377, 378
- used in blow molds, 2:240, 241
- Metathesis catalysts, 8:151, 158, 173
- Metathesis polymerization, 8:149–194
- metallacyclobutane mechanism, 8:150, 151
- telechelic polymers, 13:714–717
- Metathesis reactions, 8:151
- Metathetical polymerization of amide, 8:191
- meta*-Xylene diamine
- curing agent, 5:346
- Methacrylamides, RAFT polymerization, 11:727
- Methacrylate
- free radical photopolymerization, 9:728, 729
- Methacrylate acrylonitrile butadiene styrene (MABS), 8:226
- Methacrylate-butadiene-styrene (MBS) copolymers, 1:349, 8:226
- Methacrylate esters, RAFT polymerization (table), 11:724
- Methacrylate monomers, 8:212–214
- common functional (table), 8:217
- handling, 8:214
- health and safety factors, 8:214
- manufacture of, 8:212
- physical properties of (table), 8:213
- properties of, 8:212
- thermodynamic properties of (table), 8:214
- Methacrylates (MMA), RAFT polymerization, 11:722–724
- Methacrylates
- cationic photopolymerization, 9:695
- Methacrylic acid polymers, 1:156–167
- block and graft, 1:167
- characteristics of, 1:163–167
- inverse emulsion polymerization and, 1:167
- monomers of, 1:156–160
- Methacrylic acid, 1:156–160
- chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
- handling and storage of, 1:159, 160
- heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
- history of, 1:158
- manufacture of, 1:159
- physical properties of (table), 1:157
- polymerization, 1:160–162
- template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
- Methacrylic ester polymers, 8:206–231
- analytical test methods and specifications, 8:228
- applications, 8:230, 231
- bulk polymerization, 8:216–219
- chain-transfer constants for (table), 8:220
- chemical-resistance properties, 8:211, 212
- electrical properties (table), 8:211, 212
- emulsion polymerization, 8:221–224
- emulsion polymers, 8:228
- glass-transition temperature (table), 8:207–208, 209
- graft polymerization, 8:225, 226
- health and safety factors, 8:228–230
- in fiber optics, 8:230
- in glazing, 8:230
- in medicine, 8:230
- ionic polymerization, 8:226, 227
- living polymerization, 8:227
- mechanical properties (table), 8:210, 211, 210
- methacrylate monomers, 8:212–214

- modulus-temperature curve of, 8:209
 molding powder, 8:219
 molecular weight, 8:209, 210
 nonaqueous dispersion polymerization, 8:225
 oil additives, 8:230, 231
 optical properties, 8:211
 overview, 8:206
 photoresists, 8:230
 physical properties of (table), 8:208
 plastic sheet, 8:228
 radical polymerization, 8:214–216
 relative outdoor stability of (table), 8:212
 sheet production, 8:218, 219
 solution polymerization, 8:219–221
 solution polymers of, 8:228
 suspension polymerization, 8:224, 225
 suspension polymers, 8:228
 synthetic marble, 8:219
 synthetic marble fixtures and bathtub, 8:231
- Methacrylic polymers, lipase-catalyzed acetylation of**
See also Methacrylic ester polymers
- Methacrylonitrile**
 contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
- 3-Methacryloxypropyltrimethoxysilane (MPMS)**
 coupling agent, 12:421, 422
- γ -Methacryloxypropyltrimethoxysilane, 12:188
- 2-Methacryloyloxyethyl phosphorylcholine (MPC)**, 9:638
 functional groups, 9:649, 650
 reversible addition-fragmentation chain transfer (RAFT), 9:646, 646
 2-(3,4-Epoxy cyclohexyl)-5,1-spiro-3,4-epoxycyclohexane-1,3-dioxane, 5:326
- Methane**
 molecular volumes (table), 14:301
 vapor deposition of carbon fibers from, 2:469, 482
- Methane enrichment**, 8:3
- Methanol**
 activation energies of clustering systems in, 14:321
 azeotrope with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Methanol, in polyketone synthesis**, 10:656
- Methanolysis**, 10:656
- Methionine (sulfoxide protected)**, 11:69
- Methionine**
 chemical structure, 6:411–413, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Methoxyl groups, in lignin**, 7:536
- 2-Methoxymethanol**
 solubility of cellulose acetates in, 2:623
- Methoxymethylurea**, 1:533
- p*-Methoxystyrene**
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
- Methyl-2-[2'-(trimethylammonium)ethyl phosphoryl]ethyl fumaramate (MTPFA)**, 9:640
- Methyl acetate**
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
- Methyl acrylate**
 acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:284
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 activation parameter for termination, 11:549
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
 contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 inhibition constants of selected inhibitors, 11:582
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
 as polyethylene comonomer, 5:517
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
- Methyl acrylate partitioning**, 5:177
- Methyl Cellosolve**
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Methyl ether of hydroquinone (MEHQ)**, 1:203
- Methyl ethyl ketone (MEK)**
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Methyl ethyl ketone oxime (MEKO)**, 14:440
- Methyl hexahydrophthalic anhydride**
 curing agent, 5:354
- Methyl himicanhydride**
 curing agent, 5:354
- Methyl hydroxyethyl cellulose**
 in controlled drug release system, 3:750
- Methyl isopropenyl ketone, in photodegradable polystyrene**, 13:212
- Methyl methacrylate (MMA)**, 1:159, 6:473, 8:333, 9:638.
See also Poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA)
 acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 activation parameter for termination, 11:549
 anionic polymerization, 1:620–622, 635–638
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 atom-transfer radical polymerization, 7:654, 656
 bulk polymerization in, 2:496–498
 casting of, 2:495, 496. *See also* Casting
 ceiling temperature, 4:255
 chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
 comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234, 239, 240
 contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
 density of monomer and corresponding polymer in heterogenous polymerization, 6:639
 entropy, enthalpy, and ceiling temperature for polymerization, 15:420
 equipment and procedure, 2:498–501
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 heterophase polymerization solubility effects, 6:631, 632
 heterophase polymerization swelling effects, 6:637
 heterophase polymerization with emulsifier, 6:602
 heterophase polymerization, 6:609
 in polymer-impregnated concrete, 2:711
 inhibition constants of selected inhibitors, 11:582

- metallocene-based polymerization, 8:130, 131
percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
polymerization, 4:53
RAFT polymerization, 7:658
standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
template polymerization monomer, 13:748
transfer coefficient to, 11:526
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Methyl phenyl sulfoxide, 13:304
- N*-methyl pyrrolidone (NMP), 5:838, 839
- Methyl rubber, 2:293
- Methyl tuads, 5:478
- Methyl vinyl ketone, in photodegradable polystyrene, 13:210–213
- Methyl *tert*-butyl ether (MTBE), 11:314
- 6-*O*-Methyl- β -cellobiosyl fluoride, 5:228
- 4-Methyl-1-pentene
Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:519
- N*-Methyl-2-pyrrolidinone (NMP), 11:181
- 3-Methyl-4-oxa-6-hexanolide (MOHEL), 5:255
- 4-Methyl-containing hindered phenols as antioxidants, 13:23, 25
- 2-Methyl-*p*-xylylene
threshold condensation temperature, 15:422
- Methylaluminoxane (MAO), 11:391, 392, 12:553, 13:637. *See also* MAO
cocatalyst, 5:490
ethylene polymerization and, 5:560–563
metallocene cocatalyst, 8:81, 85–91
polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:312
- Methylation
amino resins, 1:530
- 4-Methylbenzhydramine resin (MBHA), 11:78
- Methylbicyclo[2.2.1]heptene-2,3-dicarboxylic anhydride
benzylidimethylamine
curing agent, 5:367
- Methylcellulose, 1:428
applications, 2:664
economic aspects, 2:663
manufacture, 2:661–663
properties, 2:661
test methods, 2:663
thermal gelation, 2:650
water-soluble polymer, 15:196
- Methylchlorosilanes, 12:466–468
- 4-Methylcyclopentene, 8:163
- Methylene bis(phenyl diisocyanate) (MDI), 11:209–211
- Methylene bridge formation, 1:521
- Methylene butyrolactone polymers, 8:235–265
- Methylene chloride, 11:258
- Methylene di-*p*-phenylene isocyanate (MDI)
polymerization, 7:253–267
- Methylene dichloride
solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- Methylene group
relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- 2-Methylene-4-oxa-12-dodecanolide, 5:254
- 2,2'-Methylene-bis-(4-methyl-6-*t*-butylphenol)
oxidant used in rubber, 12:193
- Methylenebisacrylamide (MBAA), 8:441
- Methylenecycloalkanes
metallocene-based polymerization, 8:127
- 4,4-Methylenedianiline
curing agent, 5:367
- Methylethylamine
curing agent, 5:367
- 2-Methylimidazole, 5:360
- Methylnaphthalene
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
feedstock for mesophase-pitch bases carbon fibers, 2:474
- Methylol carbamates, 1:537
- Methylol compounds, 1:521
nitrile group reactions with, 1:262
- Methylation, 1:521
- Methylolurea monomers, 1:533
- Methylolurea resins, 1:533
- N*-methylpyrrolidone (NMP), 7:602
- p*-Methylstyrene (PMS)
polymerization in butyl rubber, 2:349
- α -Methylstyrene
ceiling temperature, 4:255
contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
copolymerization with styrene, 13:193
entropy, enthalpy, and ceiling temperature for polymerization, 15:420
standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
transfer coefficient to, 11:526
- α -Methylstyrene dimer, 13:222, 223
- Methylsulfonioarylene polymers, 13:304
- Methyltetrahydrophthalic anhydride
curing agent, 5:354
- Methyltriethoxysilane, 12:189
- Methyltrimethoxysilane, 12:189
- Metropolis criterion, in Monte Carlo, 8:595
- Metton resin, 8:188
- MF resins. *See also* Melamine-formaldehyde (MF) resins
- MFFT. *See* Minimum film-formation temperature (MFFT)
- Mg²⁺-sulfonated poly(phenylene oxide) membrane, 8:9
- Mica, 5:795
- Mica flour
filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
filler properties, 5:379
- Micas, oxide-coated, 3:473
- Micellanoic acid, 4:342
- Micellar benzyl ether dendrimer, 4:343
- Micellar laccase, 5:274
- Micellar nucleation theory, 6:597
- Micelle concentration, critical, 2:201
- Micelles, 8:272–295
dendrimers as, 4:341–347
dendrimers as inverted, 4:348–351
in emulsion polymerization, 1:239
in rubber production, 13:271
- Michael-type additions, to acrylonitrile polymers, 1:265
- Michaelis-Menten kinetics, 5:253
- Michealson Interferometer, FLCE measurement, 5:762

- Micro-electro-mechanical systems (MEMS), 5:93
- Micro-Fourier transform infrared spectroscopy
 fiber forensics applications, 6:186
 forensics applications, 6:179
 paint forensics applications, 6:189
- Micro-gravure technique, 3:280
- Micro-Raman spectroscopy
 fiber forensics applications, 6:186
 forensics applications, 6:179
 paint forensics applications, 6:189
- Micro reaction technology (MRT), 8:317
- Micro-Sect, 3:728
- Micro- and nanoparticles, 8:402–434
- Microballoons, 3:503, 8:505
- Microbial polyesters, 2:85
- Microbial polyhydroxyalkanoates
 environmentally degradable plastic, 2:85–87
- Microbond test, 11:687
- Microbubbles, 8:505
- Microcantilever techniques, 12:619
- Microcapsule formulations
 controlled release formulations, 3:727–730
- Microcapsule induced toughening, 12:347
 EPON 828 epoxy resin system, 12:347
- Microcapsules, 8:389, 391, 412, 413
- Microcellular foamed talc reinforced polypropylene,
 SEM of, 1:804
- Microcellular foams, 2:522
- Microcellular plastics, 8:300–315
 cell density and size, 8:307, 308
 cell growth, 8:307
 design, 8:301, 302
 dissolution of gases in polymers, 8:303–305
 equipment and die design, 8:308–312
 injection molding advantages, 8:312–314
 nucleation, 8:305–307
 performance and applications, 8:314, 315
- Microcellular polyurethane foams, 4:60
- Microchannel confined surface-initiated
 polymerization, 8:354
- Microcracks, 5:694, 698, 706
- Microcrystalline cellulose, 2:579, 588
- Microcrystalline wax, as release agent, 11:704
- Microdenier acrylic fibers, 1:252
- Microdenier fibers, 10:259
- Microdevices, 8:317–362
 for polymers and copolymers synthesis, 10:331
- Microdomains, dewetting and shear-induced
 deformation, 12:298–301
- Microdroplet test, 1:392
- Microelectronics adhesives, 1:427
- Microemulsion, 5:164
 polymerization, 5:164
- Microemulsion polymerization, 8:366–374
 acrylamide, 1:137, 138
 characteristic particle size, 6:593
 formation and microstructure of microemulsion,
 8:366–368
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:740, 741
 heterophase polymerization initiators, 6:620–625
 heterophase polymerization particle size control,
 6:626
 heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
 heterophase polymerization techniques with
 continuous fluid phases, 6:619
 heterophase technique, 6:582
 mechanism and kinetics, 8:368–374
 stabilizers, 6:593
- Microemulsions, 2:208, 3:449
- Microencapsulation, 8:376–398
 applications, 8:389, 390
 biomedical and biotechnology, 8:392
 consumer and industrial products, 8:397–399
 controlled release formulations, 3:724–726
 food ingredients, 8:393, 394
 pharmaceuticals, 8:391, 392
- Microencapsulation-based self-healing
 polymeric materials, characteristics required for
 designing (table), 12:342, 343
 system, 12:340
- Microencapsulation, of particles, 5:184, 185
- Microfibers, 10:522, 523
- Microfibrillated cellulose, 2:574
- Microfibrils, in LCPs, 7:573, 574
- Microfiltration, 5:831, 832, 7:744, 745, 777–779
- Microfiltration membranes, 5:831, 832, 7:775
- Microfluidic devices, 8:347
- Microfluidic emulsification, 8:404
- Microfluidic particle synthesis, advances in, 8:404
- Microfluidic production of micro- and nanoparticles,
 8:402–435
 “Microfluidic pinball” technique, 8:420
- Microfluidic reactors, 8:319
- Microfluidic systems, 8:403, 412
- Microfluidics, 8:403, 429, 12:619–621
- Microfoams, 3:460
- Microfriction
 and scratch behavior, 12:330
- Microgel-core star polymers, 8:459
- Microgel polystyrenes, 11:24, 25
- Microgels for catalysis, 8:439–464
- Microgranules, 8:376
- Microheat exchangers, 8:317
- Microindentation hardness, investigating
 micromechanical properties via, 8:475
- Microion exchangers, 7:159
- Micromachined bumps, assembly via, 3:681
- Micromechanical deformation mechanisms, 8:496
- Micromechanical properties, 8:469–501. *See also*
 Mechanical properties
 classification of, 8:476, 477
 enhancing heterogeneous polymer toughness and,
 8:483–500
 interference optics and, 8:474, 475
 microindentation hardness and, 8:475
 microscopic methods for investigating, 8:471
 microscopic techniques and, 8:471, 472
 plastic deformation processes and, 8:477–482
 scattering (diffraction) techniques and, 8:473, 474
 spectroscopic techniques (rheoptical methods) and,
 8:475
- Micromechanics, 8:469, 470
- Micrometer-sized particles, 8:403
- Micromixer-assisted ionic, 8:349
- Micromixers, 8:317, 326, 341, 342, 422
 characteristics of (table), 8:348

- Micromolding, 7:10
- Micronutrient complexing agents, lignosulfonate, 7:542
- Microparticles, 8:412, 413
- Microparticles—SEM images, 8:418
- Microphase separation transition, 2:206, 9:565
- Microporous membrane casting machine, 7:756
- Microporous membrane equipment, 7:754
- Microporous membranes, 7:790
- AFM imaging of, 1:773
 - isotropic, 7:746
- Microporous metal membranes, 7:763
- Microporous resins, 7:158
- Microporous symmetrical membranes, 7:749–752
- MicroRaman spectroscopy, 11:687
- Microreactor-based polymerization, 8:351
- Microreactors, 8:317, 322, 323
- setup for the synthesis of triblock copolymers, 8:353
- Microscale capillary chromatography, 3:89
- Microscale particles, 8:402, 403
- Microscale systems
- highly structured functional, by molecular self-assembly, 8:649–656
- Microscopic bubbles, 14:414
- Microscopy, 15:367. *See also* Atomic force microscopy
- fiber forensics applications, 6:186
 - forensics applications, 6:178
 - for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:471–473
 - optical, 6:280
 - scanning electron, 6:281–284
 - scanning tunneling, 4:451
 - use in forensic analysis, 6:180, 181
- Microspectrophotometry
- forensics applications, 6:179, 186
- Micospheres, 8:503–509
- hollow, 8:505
 - solid, 8:503
- Microstructure, 8:510–525
- carbon black, 2:431, 432
 - chloroprene polymers, 3:51–56
 - composite foams, 3:500–505
 - defined, 8:511
 - liquid crystalline polymers, 7:573, 574
 - microemulsion, 8:366–368
 - molecular structure/microstructure, 8:511–513
 - PET fiber, 10:514
 - polybutadiene, 2:301–303
 - poly(*p*-phenylenevinylene), 13:295
 - radiation, 8:511
 - repeat units, 8:510
- Microstructured, 8:320
- reactors, 8:320
- MicroSupreme, 1:252
- Microsuspension polymerization, 13:605, 606
- characteristic particle size, 6:593
 - heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
 - heterophase polymerization techniques with continuous fluid phases, 6:619
 - heterophase technique, 6:582
- Microsystems, 8:422
- Microtubular polymerization process, 8:359
- Microwave electrochromics
- electrically active polymers for, 4:768, 769
- Microwave free-radical initiation, 6:835
- Microwave heating, 4:458
- Microscopy-FITR, 13:758
- Migration modeling
- of polymer additives into packaged foods and beverages, 2:32, 33
- Migration, dye or pigment, 3:470
- Miktoarm star copolymer, 6:467
- Milk
- as colloid, 3:437, 442
- Milkweed floss, 14:495
- Milling
- poly(vinyl chloride), 14:748
- Milling acid dyes, 15:332
- Mills
- ball, 3:493
 - media, 3:494
 - three-roll, 3:493, 494
 - two-roll, 3:494
- Millwork, 15:281
- Mims ENDOR, 5:10
- Mineral-filled epoxy composites, 5:400
- Mineral fillers, 5:793–795
- for rubber compounding, 12:221–223
- Mineral oil plasticizers, 3:553
- Mineral oils, as release agents, 11:705
- Mineral processing
- acrylamide polymer applications in, 1:118, 119
 - polyacrylamides for, 1:139, 140
- Mineral wool
- filler material, 5:785
- Minerals
- butyl rubber filler, 2:365
 - in environmentally degradable plastics, 2:88
- Miniature electrical components
- xylylene polymer applications, 15:442
- Minicryostat, 4:143
- Miniemulsion polymerization
- characteristic particle size, 6:593
 - heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
 - heterophase polymerization techniques with continuous fluid phases, 6:619
 - heterophase technique, 6:582
- Minimum allowable WVTR, 10:20
- Minimum energy path (MEP), 3:607
- Minimum film-formation temperature (MFFT), 3:301, 302
- Minimum fracture energy (G_0), adhesion and, 1:385–388
- Mining
- acrylamide polymer applications in, 1:119
 - polyacrylamides for, 1:139
- Minisuspension polymerization
- heterophase polymerization techniques with continuous fluid phases, 6:619
- Minor's law, 5:703, 704
- MIPs. *See* Molecular imprinting polymers (MIPs)
- Miscibility, 8:526–545
- athermal mixing, 8:527, 528
 - biopolymer blends, 8:544
 - cohesive energy density, 8:529
 - conditions for, 8:532–534
 - determination of polymer, 8:539, 540

- Flory-Huggins theory, 8:535, 536, 538, 539
 glass transition, 8:539, 540
 Hildebrand's solubility parameter, 8:529
 intramolecular repulsive interactions, 8:542–544
 overview, 8:526, 527
 phase behavior and morphology, 8:541–544
 phase diagrams, 8:534–536
 phase equilibria, 8:531–536
 polymer blends, thermodynamics of, 8:536–538
 polymer solutions, thermodynamics of, 8:530, 531
 solutions of small molecules, thermodynamics of, 8:527–530
 solvent-coagulant, 8:559, 560
 specific interactions, 8:541, 542
- Miscible polymer blend, 10:674, 13:585–589
- Miscible s-PS/a-PS or s-PS/PPO, 13:665
- Mist control
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
- Misting
 as colloid, 3:437
- Mitsubishi ageless sachets, 9:457
- Mixed arm block copolymers, 2:190
- Mixed echo delay, in NMR, 9:269
- Mixed-matrix membrane (MMM), 8:9, 10
- Mixed metal oxide (MMO) pigments, 3:471
- Mixed metal salts (or soaps), 1:356
- Mixed metal stabilizers, 6:566, 574–579
 commercial stabilizers, 6:575, 576
 costabilizers for, 6:576, 577
 health and safety aspects, 6:578, 579
 pricing of, 6:578
 stabilization mechanism, 6:574, 575
 synthesis of, 6:575
- Mixed metallocenes, 8:128, 129
- Mixed microstructure polyisoprenes, 7:315
- Mixed solvent systems, 8:563–566
- Mixed waste streams, 11:670–673
- Mixers
 Banbury, 3:494
 continuous, 3:494, 495
 stirred-tank reactors for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:291, 292
 tubular reactors for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:289–291
- Mixing
 chloroprene polymers, 3:66
 of color concentrates and compounds, 3:492, 493
 dispersive, 5:661–667
 distributive, 5:654–661
 effect on heterophase polymerization kinetics, 6:617
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:604
 in extruders, 10:74
 in extrusion, 5:654–667
 filled polymers, 5:789, 790
 of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:171
 during molding, 3:496
- Mixing breaker plate, 5:625
- Mixing flights, multiple, 5:665
- Mixing sections, desirable characteristics for, 5:658
- Mixing, as a reactor operation, 5:190–194
- MJCLP, poly
 2,5-bis[(4-methoxyphenyl)oxycarbonyl]styrene (PMPCS), 14:389
- mLLDPE. *See* Metallocene-catalyzed LLDPE (mLLDPE)
- MM3 force field model, 8:578
- MMA. *See* Methyl methacrylate (MMA)
- MMD polystyrene, 7:704
- MMD. *See* Molecular mass distribution (MMD)
- MMO pigments. *See* Mixed metal oxide (MMO) pigments
- Mo-based catalysts, 8:154, 182
- Mo-containing active chain
 termination, 8:174
- Mobile counterions, 7:150
- Mobile phase, in HPLC chromatography, 3:90, 91
- Modacrylic fibers, 1:225, 226, 250, 251, 272
 analysis, 1:232, 233
 limiting oxygen index, 1:232
 physical properties of staple, 1:229
- Mode mismatch loss, 5:104
- Model networks
 silicones, 12:485, 486
- Modeling, 8:548–570. *See also* Bernstein-Shokooch stress-clock model; Burgers model; Constitutive models; Cossee-Arlman model; DE tube model of reptation; Doi-Edwards (DE) model; Dugdale model; Flory-Huggins mean-field lattice model; Group interaction modeling (GIM) approach; Irwin model of plasticity; K-BKZ model; Kelvin-Voigt model; Kinetic model; Knauss-Emri model; Kovacs-Aklonis-Hutchinson-Ramos models; Lattice-based mean field model; Lattice fluid model; Lattice model; Line zone model; Lustig-Shay-Caruthers model; Maxwell model; Mechanical constitutive models; Molecular modeling; Monte Carlo lattice models; Plasticity model; Reptation model; Rotational isomeric state model; Tool-Narayanaswamy-Moynihan (TNM) model; Viscoplasticity model; Zapas strain-clock model
- of the coating process, 3:288
 composite materials, 3:519–522
 of convection drying, 3:294, 295
 copolymerization, 3:761–777
 of piezoelectric polymers, 9:795–797
 of polymer processing and properties, 8:548–570
 structural recovery, 1:473–476
 transport in amorphous polymers, 14:371–375
- Moderate barrier polymers
 chemical structures and properties, 2:44–49
- Modern GTP systems (table), 6:536–538
- Modern Plastics World Encyclopedia*, 11:701
- Modes of separation, in HPLC chromatography, 3:93–97
- Modification reactions, 5:259, 260
- Modified alkyds, 1:491, 492, 481
- Modified nylon-6,6 fibers, 10:259–263
- Modified sulfur vulcanization system, 4:68–71
- Modifiers, 1:343, 345–350
 coupling agents, 1:347, 348
 foaming (blowing) agents, 1:346, 347
 impact, 1:349
 latex applications, 7:463
 nucleating/clarifying agents, 1:349, 350
 organic peroxides, 1:348, 349
 plasticizers, 1:345, 346

- Modulated differential scanning calorimetry (MDSC), 2:743
- Modulated discharges
HFPO as gas feed, 10:12
ribbon-like structured coatings, 10:15, 16
- Modulated PE-CVD processes, 10:11, 12
- Modulated temperature differential scanning calorimetry
thermoset curing, 14:186–188
- Modulated temperature DSC (MTDSC), 13:805–807
- Modules. *See* Membrane modules
- Modulus, 1:365, 2:747, 4:638, 639, 643
cellular polymers, 2:532
Poisson's ratio and, 4:642
of rubber-modified PS, 13:201
of TIPS, 13:202
- Modulus of elasticity, of superabsorbent polymers, 13:356, 357
- Moisture absorption, of polyamide plastics, 10:276
- Moisture curing, 1-component polyurethane systems, 11:255, 256
- Moisture proofing
cellophane, 2:50
- Moisture properties, of nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, 10:243
- Moisture resistance
cellular polymers, 2:539
- Molar heat release capacity, 6:77
- Molar mass
characterization methods, 2:739–742
- Molar mass distribution
characterization methods, 2:739–742
free-radical polymerization, 7:648
- Molar sound speed, 1:75
- Molar substitution
cellulose ethers, 2:648
- Molar volume, permeability and, 7:791–793
- Mold-release agents, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
as polystyrene additives, 13:249
- Molded articles, compounding of, 6:169
- Molded foam, 11:242–244
- Molded-in stress, 11:197
- Molded parts
fractured knit line of, 6:295
voids in, 6:295
- Molding compounds, 1:799, 800, 3:570, 571
amino resin, 1:527, 528
composition of, 5:87
phenolic resin applications, 9:606, 607
physical properties of (table), 1:799
semiconductor, 5:89
SMC, 1:800
- Molding operations, 11:701. *See also* Blow molding;
Extrusion; Injection molding; Reaction injection molding (RIM); Reinforced reaction injection molding (RRIM); Thermoforming
release agents in, 11:706
- Molding techniques, PVDF, 15:69
- Molding temperatures, SAN resin, 1:297
- Molding. *See also* Injection molding; Molds
chloroprene polymers, 3:68
coloring during, 3:495–497
of encapsulation resins, 5:87
fluorocarbon elastomers for, 6:170, 171
polyarylates, 10:353
PVC plastisols, 14:754
rigid polyurethane, 2:551
shrinkage stresses, 4:250
- Molds
amino resins in, 1:543
for thermoforming, 14:124
venting, 2:241, 242
- Molecular assemblies, 11:119
- Molecular assisted homolysis, 13:215
- Molecular biology
cellulose biosynthesis, 2:572, 573
- Molecular composites, rigid-rod polymers, 12:104–107
- Molecular defoamers, 1:667
- Molecular dynamics, 8:574, 575, 587–589
applications, 8:601–625
bond fluctuation and other lattice methods, 8:597
Brownian dynamics, 8:589
characterization methods, 2:752–754
parallel tempering, 8:596, 597
placing molecules in containers, 8:582–586
transport in amorphous polymers, 14:371–373
yield, 15:475
- Molecular electronics
electrically active polymers for, 4:769, 770
- Molecular genetics
cellulose biosynthesis, 2:572, 573
- Molecular imprinting polymers (MIPs), 4:209, 210, 14:394
- Molecular mass distribution (MMD), 7:703
- Molecular mechanics, 8:591, 592
yield, 15:475
- Molecular modeling, 8:572–626. *See also* Molecular dynamics; Monte Carlo simulations
applications, 8:601–625
bond fluctuation and other lattice methods, 8:597, 598
Brownian dynamics, 8:589
classical vs. quantum mechanics, 8:590, 591
construction methods, 8:582–587
continuum configuration bias, 8:594
Gibbs ensemble methods, 8:595, 596
group additivity methods, 8:601
histogram reweighting, 8:596
models and force fields, 8:577–582
moves for long-chain polymers, 8:594, 595
nonbond energy evaluation, 8:589, 590
objectives, 8:576, 577
parallel tempering, 8:596, 597
periodic boundary conditions, 8:586, 587
placing molecules in containers, 8:582–586
simulation methods, 8:587–601
transport in amorphous polymers, 14:371–375
- Molecular motors, 2:131
- Molecular nucleation, 4:177
- Molecular organization
characterization methods, 2:742–746
- Molecular orientation
LLDPE, 5:556
- Molecular probes
acoustic property applications, 1:76–85
- Molecular recognition in dendrimers, 4:321–355
- Molecular reinforcement, 11:698

- Molecular self-assembly, **8:639–657**
 highly structured, functional microscale systems, 8:648–654
 main-chain *versus* side-chain supramolecular polymers, 8:640–642
 plug and play polymers, 8:642–648
 surface modification, 8:654
- Molecular sieve membranes, **7:763**
- Molecular-sieving (NF) membranes, **5:833**
- Molecular size
 separation by, for sample preparation for polymer characterization, **2:736**
- Molecular size detectors, **3:104**
- Molecular structure
 characterization methods, **2:736–739**
- Molecular structure, of polymers, **10:238, 239**
- Molecular theory of piezoelectric effect, **9:790**
- Molecular weight cutoff (MWCO), in membranes, **5:843**
- Molecular weight cutoff, **7:779**
- Molecular weight determination, **8:659–675**
- Molecular weight distribution (MWD), **9:466**
- Molecular weight distribution
 anionic polymerization, **1:599**
 of aromatic polyamides, **10:216**
 cellulose ethers, **2:650**
 of CSM polymers, **5:472**
 determination, **8:670–673**
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, **5:604**
 flow rate ratio and, **5:532**
 gel-permeation chromatography and, **3:88**
 of LDPE, **5:516**
 of LLDPE, **5:546–548, 555, 556**
 in polyacrylamide analysis, **1:142, 143**
 polystyrenes, **13:186, 187**
 and scratch behavior, **12:332**
 SEC and, **3:103, 102–104**
 test methods, **13:763, 764**
 width, **8:661–663**
 Ziegler-Natta polymerization, **15:509, 516, 517, 519, 520**
- Molecular weight. *See also* High molecular weight polymers; Ultrahigh molecular weight polyethylene (UHMWPE)
 anionic polymerization, **1:599**
 of aromatic polyamides, **10:216**
 cast film properties and, **5:555**
 and drag reduction, **4:558**
 effect on autohesion, **1:382, 383**
 effect on biodegradation, **2:102**
 of ethylene-norbornene copolymer, **5:591**
 guayule rubber, **12:276–280**
 of lignin, **7:536**
 of LLDPE, **5:574**
 natural rubber, **12:276–280**
 polymer morphology and, **8:552**
 of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), **10:202, 203**
 of SAN copolymers, **1:290**
 and scratch behavior, **12:332**
 sensitive detectors, **3:116–120**
 test methods, **13:763, 764**
 viscosity contrasted, **15:102**
- Molecularly imprinted dendrimers, **4:328**
- Molecularly imprinted polymers, **8:684–702**
 applications, **8:689–701**
 covalent imprinting, **8:686**
 noncovalent imprinting, **8:687**
 organic materials, **8:685, 686**
 polymer networks, **8:687–689**
- Mollusca, chitin in, **3:33**
- Molten blends, rheological properties of, **10:715, 716**
 Palierne model, **10:716**
- Molten state polymer deformation, **8:548**
- Molybdate red and orange, **3:472**
- Molybdenum catalysts, **8:154**
 1,2-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, **2:311**
- Monazo yellow pigment lakes, **3:476, 477**
- Mono(cyclopentadienyl) complexes, **8:96–98**
- Monochlorobenzene
 swelling of parylenes in, **15:436**
- Monocyclopentadienyl complexes, **5:562**
- Monodisperse long *n*-alkanes, **8:722, 723**
- Monodisperse molecular weights, **8:554**
- Monoenergetic positron beams, **11:280**
- Monoenergetic slow positron beams, thin films and surface-near layers, **11:279–281**
- Monofilament nylon, **10:289**
- Monofunctional initiator, in polystyrene production, **13:218, 219**
- Monohydric alcohols, **9:681**
- Monolayers, AFM imaging of, **1:763**
- Monolithic supports, **8:185**
- Monoliths
 polystyrene supports, **11:33–36**
- Monomer-catalyst matching, **1:25**
- Monomer-Complex Dissociation (MCD) model, **3:768**
- Monomer droplets, **5:163, 165**
- Monomer-Monomer Complex Participation (MCP) model, **3:767, 768**
- Monomer-polymeric particles, **8:404, 405**
- Monomer ratio, in main loci of polymerization, **5:179**
- Monomeric acrolein
 chemical properties of, **1:108, 109**
 manufacturing of, **1:109**
 physical properties of (table), **1:108**
- Monomeric amino resins, **1:532**
- Monomeric hindered amine light stabilizers, **14:467**
- Monomers, **5:612–614, 9:316**. *See also* Residual monomers
 addition rates, **5:181**
 chemical structure of, **9:644**
 chemically removing residual, **13:243–245**
 in emulsion polymerization, **5:174, 611**
 oil-soluble, **4:53**
 partitioning behavior, **5:177**
 properties, **14:765**
 properties, **9:414**
 reactivity ratio, **5:179**
 regulatory, **14:765, 766**
- Monomethylhydroquinone (MEHQ), **1:159**
- Monooxazolidines, **1:424**
- Monoperoxy carbonate free-radical initiators, **6:446, 448**
- Moynes, **1:24–32**
 catalyst systems in, **1:24–27**
 living polymerization, **1:28–30**
 monomer-catalyst matching, **1:25**
 polymer reactions, **1:30–32**
 polymerization behaviors, **1:27, 28**

- substrate, cocatalyst, and solvent, 1:27
 substrate-catalyst matching, 1:26
- Monsanto Prism gas separation membranes, 7:761
- Monte Carlo calculations, 4:655
- Monte Carlo lattice models, 8:548, 550, 570
 applications, 8:601–625
 bond fluctuation and other lattice methods, 8:597
 continuum configuration bias, 8:594
 Gibbs ensemble methods, 8:595, 596
 histogram reweighting, 8:596
 moves for long-chain polymers, 8:594, 595
 OPLS force field, 8:577
 parallel tempering, 8:596, 597
 placing molecules in containers, 8:582–586
 transport in amorphous polymers, 14:372
- Monte Carlo simulations, 9:22
- Montmorillonite (MMT)/PBO nanocomposites, 5:795, 6:583, 12:108
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 melt-intercalated sodium, 8:772
 PS nanocomposite with, 13:206
 strong protein binding, 13:745
 structure of, 8:769
- Mooney correction, 12:10
- Mooney cure, 6:172
- Mooney-Rivlin equation, 4:662
- Mooney-Rivlin material, 15:114
 stress plot for, 15:115
- Mooney scorch, 6:169, 172
- Mooney viscosity, 6:169, 11:169
 of CSM polymers, 5:471, 472
 of styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:278
- Moore's law, of computer speed improvement, 8:574
- 4-Morpholinyl-2-benzothiazole disulfide, 12:170, 175
- Morphology, 8:704–730
 advanced materials, 8:727, 728
 AFM imaging of, 1:780
 atomic force microscopy and, 1:764, 765
 banded spherulites, 8:723–725
 biodegradation effect, 2:100, 101
 carbon black, 2:432–438
 computer-generated, 8:551
 crazing, 15:480, 481
 and crystallization, 8:725, 726
 degree of crystallinity, 8:704
 distribution and, 13:19
 effect on biodegradation, 2:100, 101
 heterophase polymers, 6:659–670
 lamellae, 8:705–718
 liquid crystalline polymers, 7:573, 574
 and mechanical properties, 8:726–730
 monodisperse long *n*-alkanes, 8:722, 723
 overview, 8:704, 705
 polyacrylonitrile, 1:277
 polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:115–118
 propylene polymers, 11:354–361
 spherulites, 8:718–726
 spherulitic growth, 8:720, 721
 of spinodal decomposition, 8:727
 and tensile deformation, 8:728–730
 as validation, 8:726
 scratches, 12:328
 visualization methods, 2:749–752
- Morton-Kaizerman-Altier equation, 6:635
- Mortreux-Mori-Bunz catalyst, 1:33
- Mossbauer time scale, 7:53
- Motionless mixers
 for block copolymerization, 2:288
- Motor-gearbox coupling, in an extruder, 5:630, 631
- Motors, extruder, 5:629–631
- Mountain peak, 1:554
- Moving belts, acrylamide polymerization on, 1:136, 137
- Moving web reactors
 for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:291
- Moynihan model, 1:473
- MPC derivatives, chemical structure of, 9:641
- MPD. *See* *m*-Phenylene diamine (MPD)
- MPDI fibers, 10:227, 228
- MPDI. *See* Poly(*m*-phenylene isophthalamide) (MPDI)
- mPE. *See* Metallocene-catalyzed polyethylene (mPE);
 Metallocene polymerized polyethylene (mPE)
- MQ silicone resins, 12:502–504
- mRNA, 15:184
- MSDS. *See* Material Safety Data Sheets (MSDS), 6:381
- MTBE. *See* Methyl *tert*-butyl ether (MTBE)
- Mucoadhesives
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:457
- Mucor rouxii*, 3:33
- MUF resins. *See* Melamine-urea-formaldehyde (MUF)
 resins
- Mullins-Sekerker instability, 4:183
- Multi-RAFT agent, 11:737
- Multi-walled carbon nanotubes (MWCNTs), 2:780
- Multiangle light scattering detector (MALDI)
 for molecular weight determination, 13:763
- Multiaxial stress criteria, 6:331, 332
- Multiblock copolymers, 2:190
 as shape-memory polymers, 12:412
 thermoplastic elastomers, 14:155, 156
- Multicavity molds, 7:16–18
- Multichannel chips, 8:414
- Multicore particles, 8:408
- Multidimensional separation, 3:96, 97
- Multifrequency electron spin resonance spectroscopy,
 5:7, 8
- Multifunctional epoxides, 5:293
- Multifunctional epoxies
 average U.S. price, 5:299
- Multifunctional epoxy resins, 5:314–320
- Multilamellar block copolymer vesicles, 14:546
- Multilamination micromixers, 8:327, 328, 335, 351
- Multilayer barrier structures, 2:49–54
- Multilayer coating methods, 3:285, 286
- Multilayer coating process, 3:269
- Multilayer composite membranes, 7:762
- Multilayer films, orientation of. *See also* Coextrusion
- Multilayer polymer coextrusion, principle and
 applications of, 3:374–397
 applications, 3:374–376
 die system, 3:376–379
- Multileaf spiral-wound module, 7:770
- Multimanifold coextrusion technique, 5:636
- Multimanifold dies, 3:376, 5:636, 637
- Multimanifold sheet die, 5:636
- Multimodal distribution, 9:7
- Multiple antigen peptide (MAP) system, 4:314

- Multiple bond functionalities, in lignin, 7:530
- Multiple echo technique
for acoustic measurements, 1:98, 99
- Multiple holograms, 9:766
- Multiple integral constitutive models, 15:121
- Multiple-pulse PLP (MP PLP), 7:373–375
propagation rate coefficients, 7:373–375
termination rate coefficients, 7:382–385
- Multiple screw flights, 5:649, 650
- Multiple shears, 12:36–38
- Multipolymers, acrylonitrile, 1:286
- Mutireference self-consistent field (MCSCF), 3:609
- Multiresponsive polymeric micelles, 8:287
- Multishot injection molding, 7:9
- Multisorb Freshpax, 9:457
- Multistage emulsion polymerization, applications,
5:182, 183
- Multistage systems, 8:13
- Multisteps convergent syntheses, 8:342
- Municipal solid waste
plastic recycling, 11:657–661
- Municipal solid waste landfills
RCRA requirements, 4:242, 243
- Mushrooms, chitin in, 3:33
- Mutations
editing sites, 6:418, 419
- Mutual diffusion coefficient, 4:515
- Mutual diffusion coefficients, 6:419, 420, 14:293–296
- MXD-6 resin
high barrier polymer, 2:39, 40
permeability humidity effects, 2:21
- Måile color reaction, 7:531
- Möller-Plesset perturbation theory, 3:605
- n-Butanol, physicochemical properties, 8:20
- N-heterocyclic carbene ligands (NHC), 8:155
- NaAMP (sodium
2-acrylamido-2-methylpropanesulfonate)
acrylamide copolymers with, 1:132
- Nadic methyl anhydride
curing agent, 5:354
- Nafion
transport properties, 14:367, 368
- Nafion N115 membrane, 7:232, 233
- Nano- and microparticles, 8:403
- Nanocolays, 5:794, 795
- Nanocolloids, 8:735
- Nanocomposite gels, 9:5
- Nanocomposite polyHIPEs, 10:609
- Nanocomposites, 1:746
barrier properties, 2:57, 58
nylon, 10:285
phenolic resins, 9:615
of PS and Montmorillonite clay, 13:206, 207
thermoset applications, 14:174–178
- Nanocomposites, layer-by-layer assembly, 8:735–745
mechanical properties and testing, 8:741–745
ultrastrong materials, 8:736–741
- Nanocomposites, metal-filled, 8:748–764
applications, 8:760–764
characterization, 8:758–760
nanosized metal properties, 8:752–755
preparation, 8:755–758
- Nanocomposites, polymer-clay, 8:767–783
barrier properties, 8:779, 780
characterization microstructure, 8:769–773
cone calorimetric data (table), 8:778
crystal organization, 8:777
elastic behavior, 8:780, 781
fire-retardant behavior, 8:777–779
kinetics of heat release rate, 8:779
mechanical behavior (table), 8:780, 781
montmorillonite, structure of, 8:769
nanofiller dimensions (table), 8:768
plasticity and rupture, 8:781, 782
polymer-layered silicate, 8:768–773
polymer-organoclay nanocomposites, 8:773–775
pristine MMT, 8:782
processing, role of, 8:782
stress-strain response in tension, 8:782
structure development in, 8:775, 776
thermal stability, 8:776, 777
volume-strain response in tension, 8:782
water-aided melt-dispersed organoclay, 8:772
- Nanocomposites, rigid-rod polymers, 12:107, 108
- Nanocrystals surface functionalization, 8:785–804
- Nanoelement concept, 4:317, 318
- Nanofiber, 5:145
- Nanofillers, 2D correlation spectroscopy (2DCOS),
14:404
- Nanofiltration, 5:832–834
mechanisms, 5:830
membranes, 5:832–834, 841
- Nanoimprint lithography (NIL), 6:516, 7:614–616
- Nanoindentation testers, 6:545
- Nanometer-sized magnetic dots, 7:699–701
- Nanomolding, 7:10
- Nanoparticles, 8:376, 403, 421, 735, 786
development of, 8:430
phase contrast image of, 434
synthesis of, 8:431
- Nanoporous polymer crystals, 3:170–173
- Nanoprecipitation, 8:422
- Nanoreactors, 2:202, 8:810–835
- Nanoscale oxides, 5:798
- Nanoscope systems
molecular modeling, 8:620
- Nanosized metals, 8:752–755
- Nanostructured materials, 8:272
- Nanostructures, 10:34
- Nanotechnology, 5:145
and colloids, 3:463
- Naphtha
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Naphthalate dicarboxylic acid (2,6-NDA)
feedstock for PEN, 10:139
- Naphthalene
component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
feedstock for mesophase-pitch bases carbon fibers,
2:474
- 2-Naphthol, 5:269
- Naphthol derivatives
oxidative polymerization, 9:444
- Naphthol red pigment, 3:477
- Naphthylamines
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Naphthylene group
relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in
linear macromolecules, 14:76

- Napping, 9:233, 234
- Narayanaswamy-Moynihan expression, 3:538
- Naringin (NG), 4:209, 210
- Narrow MMD homopolymers, 7:715, 716
- Nata di Coco, 2:570
- National Automotive Paint File, 6:189
- National Center of Manufacturing and Science (NCMS), 3:666
- National Electrical Manufacturers Association (NEMA), 4:675
- National Fire Protection Association (NEPA) Committee E05 on Fire Tests, 6:86
- National Highway Traffic Safety Administration (NHTSA), 1:787
- National Institute of Science and Technology (NIST), 8:406
- National Institute of Standards and Technology (NIST), 15:119
- National Plastics Recycling Company (NPRC), 13:210
- National Synchrotron Light Source, 15:378
- Natural fiber composites, 11:698
- Natural fibers and fillers, 1:814
- Natural gas
 - feedstock for thermal black process, 2:448, 449
- Natural iron oxides, as pigments, 3:470, 471
- Natural oil polyol, 11:226
- Natural organic matter (NOM), 5:833, 834
- Natural pearlescence, 3:472
- Natural polymers, 2:732, 9:102
- Natural polysaccharides, synthesis of
 - via polycondensation, 5:226–229
- Natural rubber fibers
 - applications, 5:780–782
 - chemical composition, 5:769–771
 - chemical properties, 5:779, 780
 - economic aspects, 5:780
 - manufacture, 5:772, 773
 - mechanical properties, 5:771
 - physical properties, 5:771
- Natural rubber latex-based interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:136
- Natural rubber, 11:302, 303
 - activation energy in clustering system with methanol, 14:321
 - in adhesives, 1:429
 - applications, 12:280–284
 - in belting, 2:70
 - biology and biosynthesis, 12:263–270
 - biosynthesis, 6:618, 621
 - blends with polypropylene, 14:137
 - compounding, 12:204–206
 - guayule rubber, 12:262–285
 - heterophase polymerization product, 6:587–588, 589
 - in interpenetrating network, 7:144
 - permeabilities, solubilities, and diffusivities of gas pairs in, 14:312
 - physical properties, 12:207
 - selected categories of visually inspected, 12:208
 - via ring-opening polyaddition, 5:229–235
- NBC. *See* Nickel dibutyl dithiocarbamate (NBC)
- NBE derivatives, 8:188
- NBE-endcapped polyphosphazene, 8:179
- NBL. *See* *n*-Butyllithium (NBL)
- NBR rubbers, 13:38
- NBR. *See* Nitrile rubber (NBR)
- NBR/PP copolymer. *See* Nitrile rubber/polypropylene (NBR/PP) copolymer
- NC-6004, 8:291
- NCA
 - polymerization, 11:47
 - ring opening polymerization, 11:47, 434
 - synthesis, 11:48, 49
 - polypeptide copolymers, 11:51
 - star polypeptides, 11:51
- NCMS. *See* National Center of Manufacturing and Science (NCMS)
- Near-critical fluid conditions, acrylamide polymerization under, 1:138
- Near edge x-ray absorption fine structure spectroscopy (NEXAFS), 15:368–376
 - applications, 15:382–395
 - fibers, 15:403
 - instrumentation and analysis tools, 15:376–382
 - microscopy, 15:376–382
 - multicomponent, multiphase polymers, 15:395–403
 - quantitative image analysis, 15:380–382
 - quantitative microanalysis, 15:380
- Nearly critical gels, 6:374, 375
- Neck pinch-off insert, 2:244
- Necking behavior, 10:528, 15:453
 - and cold drawing, 15:453–455
- Needle punched nonwovens, 5:682
- Needle-punching, 9:223–225
- Negative forming, 14:112
- Negative HRR, 6:65
- Negative tone aqueous developable materials, 5:80
- Negative tone materials, 5:78, 79
- Negative tone relief patterns, 5:80
- NEMA. *See* National Electrical Manufacturers Association (NEMA)
- Nenophase separation, in smectic elastomers, 5:761
- Neo-Hookean material, 15:114, 115
 - stress plot for, 15:115
- Neocarzinostatin (NCS), 11:435
- Neodymium catalysts
 - cis*-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:308–310
 - trans*-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:311
- Neopentylglycol diglycidyl ether, 5:324
- Neoprene (polychloroprene) rubber, 7:330
- Neoprene
 - discovery, 3:43
- Neoprene-phenolic contact adhesives, 9:605
- Neoprene rubber, in belting, 2:71
- Nephilia clavipes*
 - silk from, 12:542, 543, 547
- NERD force field, 8:577
- Netpoints, of shape-memory polymers, 12:412
- Nettle
 - dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
- Network-PIM, 11:12
- Network polymers, 4:503, 504
- Networked polysilanes, 11:149
- Networks, elastomeric
 - affine network model, 9:17

- “bimodal” elastomers, 9:7
chains in, 9:22
chain length distribution, effects of, 9:6, 7
chain length, effects of, 9:6
dangling chains, effects of, 9:8, 9
entanglements, effects of, 9:8
junction functionality, effects of, 9:7, 8
interpenetration of networks, 9:4
multimodal distribution, 9:7
non-gaussian behavior of, 9:18
phantom network model, 9:17, 18
physical aggregation, 9:3
polymerizations with multifunctional monomers, 9:3
preparation, 9:2
preparation under unusual conditions, 9:3, 4
random cross-linking, 9:2, 3
specific chemical end linking, 9:3
structure, 9:5, 6
trapped cyclics, effect of, 9:9
ultimate properties, effects on, 9:9–11
vinyl-terminated PDMS chains, 9:4
- Networks, formation of, 3:213–215
- Networks. *See also* Interpenetrating polymer networks (IPNs); Polymer networks; Real networks
affine, 4:655–659, 662
cross-linked, 4:658, 659
elastomeric, 4:644, 645
phantom, 4:660, 662, 665, 666
swollen, 4:658
tetrafunctional, 4:660
- Neutral screw, 5:624
- Neutron diffraction, 2:750
- Neutron scattering, 9:46–66
amorphous polymers, 1:547
conformation of polymer chain in melt, 9:55, 56
contrast matching, 9:49
contrast variation, 9:65, 66
experiments, 9:109
flow-induced structure in polymers, 9:62–64
for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:474
Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:432, 433
location of end groups in dendrimers, 9:56–58
polymers blends, 9:59–62
protein structure by contrast variation, 9:65, 66
radius of gyration of polymers in ultrathin films, 9:58, 59
structure from scattering curve, 9:53–55
techniques, 2:193
- New Tafel, 1:253
- Newcell, 2:692
- Newtonian fluids, 1:568, 12:5
- Newtonian plateaus, 15:106
- Newtonian polymers, 10:526
- Newtonian solutions, of polyacrylamides, 1:122–124
- Newtons per square meter, 4:638
- NEXAFS. *See* Near edge x-ray absorption fine structure spectroscopy (NEXAFS)
- Nextel, 11:698
- Ngai model, 1:475
- NHC ligand, 8:156, 158
- NHC/phosphane-substituted Ru-based catalysts, 8:156
- NHTSA. *See* National Highway Traffic Safety Administration (NHTSA)
- Ni-catalyzed Polycondensation, 10:419
- Nicalon, 6:714, 11:697
- Nickel-based complexes
photostabilization by, 13:31–33
- Nickel catalysts
coupling of aryl dihalides, in polysulfone polymerization, 11:185
for LDPE, 5:530
cis-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:307, 308
trans-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:311
polyketone, 10:650
- Nickel dialkyldithiophosphate (NiDRP), 13:28, 32
- Nickel dibutyl dithiocarbamate (NBC), 5:478
- Nickel dithiocarbamate (NiDRC) complexes,
photoactivation of, 13:35
- Nickel dithiophosphate, 13:32
- Nickel organic polymers, 7:64
- Nickel rutile yellow, 3:471
- Nickel(II)-based catalysts, 10:655
for polyketones, 10:651
- NiDRP. *See* Nickel dialkyldithiophosphate (NiDRP)
- NIMBY (not-in-my-backyard) syndrome, and plastics recycling, 11:665
- Niobium
metallocenes based on, 8:101, 102
- Niosomes, 14:511
- NIPAM, 8:441
- Nippon Zeon's Zeonex, 8:189
- NIR-emitting QDs, 8:803
- NIR radiation, 15:260
- NIST. *See* National Institute of Standards and Technology (NIST)
- Nitocellulose membranes, 5:826
- Nitrate-selective resins, 7:158
- Nitric acid
acrylic fibers solution spinning solvent, 1:241
Nitric acid, LLDPE and, 5:548
- Nitrile
physical properties, 12:207
- Nitrile butadiene rubber
antioxidant applications, 1:713
- Nitrile-butadiene rubber, in belting, 2:71
- Nitrile elastomers, 1:262
- Nitrile group, reactions, 1:262, 264, 265
- Nitrile-phenolic adhesives, 1:426
- Nitrile polymers
high barrier polymers, 2:36, 37
- Nitrile rubber (NBR), 1:274
blends with polypropylene, 14:137
compounding, 12:214–216
blends with PVC, 14:137
- Nitrile rubber/polypropylene (NBR/PP) copolymer, 1:370, 371
- Nitrile-substituted polyimide, 9:793, 794
- Nitrilo-phosphoranylidate, 11:98
- Nitro-displacement polymerization, 10:589
- 3-Nitro-4-aminomethylbenzoic acid (Nonb), 11:79
- 3-Nitro-4-hydroxymethylbenzoic acid (ONb), 11:77
- Nitroalkenes
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602

- Nitrobenzene
inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
4-Nitrobenzophenone oxime resin, 11:76
- Nitrocellulose, 2:601, 602, 673, 674, 3:339
applications, 2:608–613
- Nitrogen-15 (¹⁵N) NMR, 2:737
- Nitrogen
diffusivity in polymers, 8:304
molecular volumes (table), 14:301
- Nitrones, 13:24
- 4-Nitrophenol, reduction of, 8:457
- Nitroxide mediated living radical polymerization
telechelic polymers, 13:687, 688
- Nitroxide-mediated polymerization (NMP), 7:416
- Nitroxide-mediated polymerization, 7:651–653
development of, 7:649, 650
initiators for, 6:858–860
styrene, 13:228, 229, 229–231
- Nitroxide-mediated radical polymerization (NMRP), 7:628
- Nitroxide mediated radical polymerization (NMRP), 8:345
- Nitroxide spin probes
with ionomers, 5:15–21
line shape analysis, 5:4–8
- NK911, 8:290
nanocarrier, 8:290
- NLO properties. *See* Nonlinear optical properties
- NMP methods, 3:198, 199
- NMP solvent, 5:69
- ¹³C-NMR techniques, 8:163
- NMR. *See* Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR)
spectroscopy
integrals, 8:520
spectrometers, 8:520
microprocess, 8:360
- No-wax flooring, 6:107
- No-wax vinyl flooring, 6:115
- Nodax, 2:91
- Nomenclature, 13:151
elastomers, 12:206
IUPAC commission publications on polymer nomenclature (table), 9:578–619
polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:111
- Nomenclature of polymers, 9:69–98
abbreviations and acronyms for polymers (table), 9:96–98
basic definitions, 9:69–71
chemical abstracts nomenclature, 9:86–95
commission publications on (table), 9:70, 71
common names and CA equivalents, 9:91, 90
for irregular single-strand organic polymers (table), 9:87, 88
IUPAC nomenclature, 9:73–86
overview, 9:69
source-based nomenclature, 9:71, 72
structure-based nomenclature, 9:73
subcommittee projects on (table), 9:72
trade names and abbreviations, 9:95–98
- Nomex, 6:701, 8:558
limiting oxygen value, 6:713
mechanical properties, 9:216
photodegradation, 4:283
- Non-aerobic acrylic adhesives, 1:420
- Non-autonomic healing, 12:340, 367, 368
- Non-disjoint diradical organic molecules, 7:694–696
- Non-Fickian transport behavior, 14:361–365
- Non-Gaussian effects, 9:10
- Non-Gaussian theories, 4:651, 654
- Non-Kekulé organic molecule, 7:694–696
- Non-Newtonian fluid, 12:5, 6:407–411
- Non-Newtonian polymers, 5:567, 568
- Non-nitrosamine curatives, 12:168–177
- Non-PHA biomass, separation of PHA and PHB from, 10:108–109, 110
- Non-photosensitive stress buffer coatings, 5:75
- Non-spherical filler particles, 9:36
- Non-steady-state polymerization (NSSP), 7:371–416
emulsion polymerization (EP), 7:385
posteffect method, 7:385
- Nonaffine tube model, 9:21
- Nonaqueous oil-in-oil (O/O) HIPEs, 10:598
- Nonaromatic cyclic structures, conversion of aromatic rings to, 7:527
- Nonbond energy evaluation, 8:589, 590
- Noncentrosymmetric chromophore order, 5:95
- Noncharring polymers, 6:51
- Nonconducting polymers
electropolymerization, 5:119
- Noncontact atomic force microscopy, 1:752
- Noncoordinating anions, 5:562
- Noncovalent imprinting, 8:687
- Noncovalently connected micelles (NCCM), 8:276
- Noncrystalline fluoropolymers, applications, 6:153
- Nondegenerate coupled oscillator circular dichroism, 5:46, 47
schematic illustration of spectra, 5:47
- Nondestructive testing (NDT), 9:101–116
adhesive joints, 9:114
basic approaches, 9:112, 113
chemical and analytical test methods, 9:112
classes of (table), 9:102, 103–104
composites, 9:102
detection, sizing, and evaluation of indications, 9:112
determination of geometry/size and reverse engineering, 9:114
determination of structural integrity with, 9:113
electromagnetic test methods, 9:109, 110
literature on, 9:102
mechanical test methods, 9:104, 105
optical test methods, 9:105–107
penetrating radiation test methods, 9:107–109
polymer-matrix composites elements, 9:113
process monitoring and process control with, 9:114, 115
sonic and ultrasonic test methods, 9:110, 111
technical polymers, 9:101
thermal and infrared test methods, 9:111, 112
- Nondestructive testing, 13:781
- Nondipolar aprotic solvents, polysulfone polymerization in, 11:184
- Nonemulsification methods, 8:421, 422
- Nonequilibrium molecular dynamics, 8:621
- Nonequilibrium plasma technologies, 10:1
- Nonequilibrium plasmas, 10:1
- Nonequilibrium processes, 8:556

- Nonequilibrium statistical thermodynamics, 13:77–79
- Nonfluorinated monomers, copolymers of, 6:141, 142
- Nonfouling hydrophilic polymer brushes, 10:746–755
- Nongraphitizable carbon fibers, 2:468
- Noninteractive hindered amine light stabilizers, 14:477, 478
- Nonintermeshing twin screw extruders, 5:619
- Nonionic acrylamide polymers, 1:118
- Nonionic latexes
 anionic and nonionic compared (table), 3:73
- Nonionic poly(acrylamide), physical properties of, 1:119, 120
- Nonionic surfactants. *See* Surfactants
- Nonionic telechelic associative polymers, 6:739–746
 shear-thickening region, 6:740–741
 small-angle neutron scattering (SANS), 6:741, 742
 transient network theory, 7:742, 743
- Nonionic water-soluble polymers, 15:198–202
- Nonlinear light scattering, 9:133
- Nonlinear optical materials
 electrically active polymers for, 4:770, 771
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:434, 435
- Nonlinear optical properties, 9:123–166
 advantages of NLO polymers, 9:133, 134
 measurement techniques, 9:156–158
 structure-property relationships, 9:140–156
- Nonlinear relaxation modulus, in DE model, 15:136, 137
- Nonlinear viscoelastic behavior, 15:105–163
 solid-like polymers, 15:145–163
- Nonlinear wave propagation
 and acoustic properties, 1:73, 74
- Nonmetallocene systems, 5:563
- Nonnatural amino acids
 incorporation via introduction of heterologous aaRS/tRNA pairs, 6:411–416
 incorporation via overexpression of mutant aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases, 6:420–422
 incorporation via overexpression of wild-type aminoacyl-tRNA synthetases, 6:418–420
 multisite incorporation, 6:416, 417
- Nonnoble metal, 3:666–669
- Nonoxidizing alkyds, 1:480, 492, 493
- Nonperfectly alternating copolymers, 10:653
- Nonpolymerization methods, 8:412
- Nonporous dense membranes, 7:746, 747
- Nonporous membranes, 5:827
 preparation of, 5:836, 837
- Nonreactive compatibilization, 10:679–681
- Nonreturn valve, 5:666
- NonSolvent bath, polymer precipitation by immersion in, 7:756–760
- Nonstationary polymerization, 11:556–558
 chain length distribution, 11:568, 569
- Nonstereospecific Ti(III) site, 13:93
- Nonstoichiometric polycondensation, 10:417–419
- Nonwoven binders
 vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:680, 681
- Nonwoven cards, 9:218
- Nonwoven fabrics, 5:682, 9:177–211
 applications, 9:201–211
 bonding, 9:193–41, 96
 finishing, 9:230–235
 flashspun fabrics, 9:197, 198
 meltblown fabrics, 9:196, 197
 processes, 9:214, 215
 production, 9:235
 spun bonded, 9:177–211
 staple fibers, 9:213–236
 testing, 9:198–200
 web formation, 9:185–193, 216–218
 web consolidation, 9:223–230
 web layering, 9:218–223
- Nonwovens
 Bemliese, 2:690
 thermally bonded, 8:566–570
- p*-Nonylphenol
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- Norbornenes. *See also* Ethylene-norbornene (Et-Nb) copolymers
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:731
- Normal grade carbon blacks
 surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Normal mode relaxation processes, 2:754
- Normal stress fracture, 6:286
- Normal stress response, in DE model, 15:143–146
- Norrish photocleavage processes, 13:9, 212
- Norrish-Smith effect, 11:552
- Norrish-Trommsdorff effect, 11:552
- Norrish Type II, 9:721, 721
- Norsorex, 8:187
- Norsorex, shape-memory properties of, 12:417
- Noryl, 10:572, 582–584
- Nosé-Hoover thermostat, 8:599
- Notch-sensitive material, 10:279
- Notched Izod, 5:215
- NovaGel, 11:27–29
- Novamont's Mater-Bi starch-based technology, 13:62, 63
- Novasomes, 14:511
- Novolac resins, 1:425. *See also* Phenolic resins
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 applications, 9:603–619
 curing, 9:592–594
 curing agents, 5:337
 decomposition of cured, 9:594
 manufacture, 9:587
 synthesis, 9:581–583
- Novolac shell-molding binders, 6:197
- Novolacs, 6:197
 cross-linking of, 4:76
- Nozzle processes, 8:385
- Nucleants, nylon, 10:283
- Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR), 2:736–739, 8:357, 9:237–309, 285–290
 for crystallinity determination, 4:159–164
 contrast, 9:290–297
 elastomers, 9:299–309
 one-dimensional studies of molecular motions and dynamic order, 9:251–257
 relaxation time measurements, 2:752, 753
 viscoelastic polymers by two-dimensional NMR spectroscopy, 9:270–285
- Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) imaging, 9:114

- ²⁹Si Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) spectroscopy, 12:485
- Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) spectroscopy, 5:575, 7:532, 14:563, 15:367
- amorphous polymers, 1:586–588
- for composition and structure determination, 13:759, 760
- investigating micromechanical properties via, 8:476
- of poly(acrylamide), 1:127
- silane coupling agents, 12:425, 426, 429
- ¹³C Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) spectroscopy, 7:533
- for composition and structure determination, 13:759, 760
- for crystallinity determination, solid-state high resolution, 4:163, 164
- phenolic resins, 9:595
- ¹H Nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) spectroscopy, 7:533
- for crystallinity determination, 4:160, 161
- Nucleation, 5:169
- of cracks, 6:318, 319
- in CSTR, 5:189
- heterophase polymerization, 6:596–603
- kinetics, 4:168–174
- latex manufacture, 7:463–465
- microcellular plastics, 8:305, 306
- of secondary cracks, 6:319
- secondary nucleation theory, 4:185–188, 194
- and void growth in composite curing, 3:540, 541
- Nucleation mechanism, above the CMC, 5:168, 169
- Nucleation stage, of emulsion polymerization, 13:270, 271
- Nucleation track membranes, 7:749, 750
- Nucleation, elongation polymerization mechanism, 13:445–447
- Nucleic acids, phosphorus in. *See also* DNA; Polynucleotides
- Nucleophilic substitution polycondensation route, polysulfone synthesis via, 11:180–184
- Number-average molecular weight, 8:660
- determination, 8:661–668
- Number-average zip length, 4:428
- Number-CLD form, 7:362–364
- Numerical integration methods, 8:587
- Nutropin Depot, 3:754
- Nutshell
- filler material, 5:785
- N-Vinylamide polymers, 9:315–341
- NVP polymerization, RAFT polymerization, 11:731
- Nylon-1
- from anionic polymerization of monoisocyanates, 7:258
- Nylon 11
- melting temperature, 10:69
- thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- thermoplastic powder coatings, 3:234
- Nylon 12
- effect of additives on, 10:278
- melting temperature, 10:69
- thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Nylon, 5:203, 680. *See also* Polyamide plastics; Polyamides
- blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
- even-numbered, 9:794
- filler material, 5:785
- grafting of polymers on, 10:262, 263
- history of, 10:237, 238
- impact strength *vs.* notch tip radius, 6:818
- limiting oxygen value, 6:713
- mechanical properties, 9:216
- mechanical properties compared to silk and other fibers, 12:547
- microdenier, 10:260
- nomenclature of, 10:239
- pigmentation of, 3:497
- predrying in processing, 10:70
- properties, 9:346
- properties of (table), 10:273, 275
- thermoplastic powder coatings, 3:233–236
- UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- world production of, 10:264, 265
- Nylon 6, *See also* Modified nylon-6 fibers
- casting, 10:89
- fatigue absorbed water effect, 5:739
- Hamaker constant, 6:644
- high barrier polymer, 2:39
- manufacture of, 10:247, 248
- melting temperature, 10:69
- moderate barrier polymer, 2:45
- NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
- polymerization reactors, 2:284
- preparation of, 10:246, 247
- properties of, 10:239–244
- properties of barrier, 2:34
- structure of, 10:238, 239
- tensile properties of, 10:239–242
- thermal degradation, 4:260
- thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- thermoplastic powder coatings, 3:234
- Nylon 6,9
- thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Nylon 6,10
- thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Nylon 6,12
- melting temperature, 10:69
- thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Nylon-6,6-poly(oxyethylene), 4:54
- Nylon 6,6. *See also* Modified nylon-6,6 fibers
- creation of, 10:237, 238
- effect of additives on, 10:278
- effect of temperature on the shear modulus of, 10:279
- fatigue absorbed water effect, 5:738, 739
- fatigue chemistry effect, 5:734
- fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:726
- fatigue crack speed, 5:724
- fatigue damage, 5:707
- fatigue thermal history effect, 5:742
- high barrier polymer, 2:39
- irradiation degradation, 4:289
- manufacture of, 10:247, 248
- moderate barrier polymer, 2:45
- physical properties of staple, 1:229
- predrying in processing, 10:70
- preparation of, 10:246, 247
- properties of, 10:239–244
- strain-energy release rates, 6:824
- structure of, 10:238, 239

- tensile creep of, 10:280
 tensile properties of, 10:239–242
 thermal degradation, 4:260
 thermoplastic powder coatings, 3:234
 melting temperature, 10:69
 thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Nylon 6/IT, hydrophilic character of, 13:841, 842
 Nylon-clay nanocomposites, 5:795
 Nylon copolymers, 10:260–263
 Nylon fibers, 5:681, 768. *See also* Cotton fibers
 cross-section shapes of, 10:255, 256
 limiting oxygen index, 1:232
 properties of, 10:206
 world production of, 10:238
- Nylon film, 10:288
 Nylon, cellular
 physical properties of commercial, 2:529
 Nylon, supertough
 load-deflection behaviour, 6:819
- O-ring compounds, 6:168, 169
 O-ring specifications, 6:171
 O-rings, 6:168
 O/W HIPE, 10:598, 601
 OABA. *See* *o*-Aminobenzylamine (OABA)
- Obliquity angle, 8:111
 Occlusion polymerization, 3:126
 Occupational Safety and Health Administration (OSHA), 5:535
- Octadecamethyloctasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Octadecyl 3,5-di-*tert*-butyl-4-hydroxyhydrocinnamate
 antioxidant, 1:704
- Octamethylcyclotetrasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Octamethyltrisiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- 3-Octanoylthio-1-propyltriethoxysilane, 12:188
- 1-Octene
 metallocene-based copolymerization with ethylene, 8:107
- n*-Octyl acrylate
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Octylated diphenylamine
 oxidant used in rubber, 12:195
- p*-Octylphenol
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- Octyltriethoxysilane, 12:189
- oCVD. *See* Oxidative chemical vapor deposition (oCVD)
- ODA/PPTA fibers, 10:228–232
 ODA/PPTA. *See* Copoly(*p*-phenylene/3,4'-diphenyl ether terephthalamide) (ODA/PPTA)
- Odor
 antioxidants, 1:717
- OEG-based dendronized polymers, 4:363, 364. *See also* Dendronized polymers
- Off-spec material, 5:187
- Office of Saline Water (OSW), 7:745
- Office tape, 11:291
- Offset gravure coating, 3:277
- Ohm's law, 4:675
- Oil and chemical resistance (table), of acrylic elastomers, 1:181, 182
- Oil extenders, in SBR processing, 13:276
- Oil filters
 phenolic resin applications, 9:611
- Oil-furnace blacks, 2:427
 composition, 2:429
- Oil-furnace process, for carbon black, 2:427, 428, 444–448
- Oil gels, 14:155
- Oil recovery
 acrylamide polymer applications in, 1:119
 polyacrylamides for, 1:140, 141
- Oil-resistant specialty elastomers, comparative properties, 1:181
- Oil-tanned chamois leather, 7:488
- Oil-well cement retarders, lignosulfonate, 7:542
- Olefin fibers, 9:345–364
 applications, 9:363, 364
 economic aspects, 9:362, 363
 manufacture and processing, 9:351–362
 physical properties of staple, 1:229
 properties, 9:346–351
- Olefin polymers, chlorosulfonated, 5:467
- Olefinic polymerization, 1:341
- Olefins
 codimerization, 7:278, 279
 π -metal carbene complexes, 8:151
 Bi-, 8:191
 metathesis, 8:149, 150, 168, 185
 coloring, 3:497
 internal, 10:652
 metallocene-based graft and block copolymerization with non-olefins, 8:131, 132
 nitrile group reactions with, 1:262
 polyketone copolymerization with, 10:650–653
- α -Olefins, stereoselective isomerization polymerization, 13:112
- Oligo(ϵ -caprolactone)dimethacrylate, 12:418
- Oligo(ethylene glycol)s (OEGs), 4:363
- Oligo(*p*-phenylenevinylene) (OPVPF), 13:461, 462
- Oligomeric cyclic polycarbonates, 7:682
- Oligomeric cyclic polyesters, 7:683
- Oligomeric phosphoric/phosphonic anhydrides, 9:679
- Oligomeric polycarbonate cyclic, polymerization of, 7:682
- Oligomeric polyesters, 7:683, 684
- Oligomers
 self-assembly of, 1:763
 structural representation of polymers, 13:175, 176
 surface oligomer detection and imaging, 13:496–499
- Oligophenylene ethynylene-tricarboxamides (OPE-TAs)
 supramolecular polymerization, 13:449, 450
- Oliver and Pharr's (OP) approach, 6:557
- One-component polyurethane systems, 11:255, 256
- One-dimensional conductive fillers, 3:655, 656
- One-part curing systems, for polysulfides, 11:171
- One-pot hydrosilylation, application of, 5:763
- One-pot multicomponent cascade reaction, 8:459, 461
- One-pot synthesis, of elastomer, 5:754
- One-step polycondensation, sequential control, 10:413–417
 head-to-tail sequential polymers, 10:416

- head-to-head sequential polymers, 10:416
 sequential polymers from two nonsymmetric monomers, 10:416, 417
 tail-to-tail sequential polymers, 10:416
- One-way shape-memory effect, 12:410
- Online monitoring
 macromolecular characteristics, 8:358–360
 reaction kinetics, 8:357
- Onsager local field, 9:789, 790
- Onsager model, 9:751
- Onsager reciprocity, 13:78
- Onsager's principle, 13:78
- Onset of vitrification
 epoxy resins, 5:369
- Onset thermal degradation temperature, of PAI, 6:46
- Onset thermal temperature
 of PAI, 6:46
 of polymers, 6:46, 47, 49
- Opal
 as colloid, 3:437
- Open-cell polyHIPE, 10:603
- Open-celled cellular material, 2:512
- Open-mold processing, 10:90, 91
- Ophthalmic solutions
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:457
- OPLS force field, 8:577, 580
- Optical data storage, 9:765
- Optical devices
 phosphazenes, 11:109
 polysilanes, 11:160–162
- Optical fibers, 9:367–384
 absorption loss, 9:371, 372
 bandwidth and modal dispersion, 9:374
 concept and classification of, 9:368
 cross-sectional views of, 9:370
 cutback technique, 9:370
 fiber attenuation, 9:370
 "fiber-to-the-home" (FTTH) services, 9:367
 fluoro materials for, 9:378, 379
 gof backbone, 9:367
 graded-index (GI) fibers, 9:368
 information-carrying capacity of, 9:368
 introduction, 9:367
 low-loss step-index polymer, 9:374
 oblique rays, 9:369
 perfluorinated polymers, 9:380–384
 ray trajectories, 9:369
 scattering loss, 9:372–374
 single-mode fiber, 9:369
 step-index (SI) fibers, 9:368
 total dispersion, 9:382
 wentzel-kramers-brillouin method, 9:382
- Optical loss, 5:103–105
- Optical microscopy, 2:752, 6:280, 281
- Optical polarizability, 9:387–389
- Optical properties
 filled polymers, 5:792
 LLDPE, 5:577
 nylon fiber, 10:244
 polyarylates, 10:352, 353
 polydiacetylenes, 4:451–453
 polysilanes, 11:150–154
 polysulfones, 11:188–190
 test methods, 13:770, 778, 779
 xylylene polymers, 15:430–433
- Optical properties, 9:386–411
 ab initio and semiempirical approximations, 9:389, 390
 anisotropy, 9:387–389
 birefringence, 9:402–409
 definitions and computational prediction of, 9:387–390
 finite-field method, 9:390
 gloss, 9:402
 internal absorption, 9:397
 local field, 9:390, 391
 Lorenz-Lorentz theory, 9:391
 nonlinear, 9:409–411
 optical polarizability, 9:387–389
 optical storage media, 9:387
 overview, 9:386, 387
 reflectivity, 9:402
 refractive index, 9:391–397
 resonant case, 9:389
 resonant two-level atom systems, 9:389
 rotational isomeric state model, 9:403, 404
 sum over states, 9:390
 transmission and haze, 9:397, 398
 transparency and clarity, 9:399–401
 unsold approximation and charge models, 9:390
- Optical sensors
 metal-filled nanocomposite application, 8:761
- Optical storage media, 9:387
- Optical test methods
 (digital) holographic interferometry, 9:106
 digital photography/digitization, 9:106
- Optically different layers, mueller matrix expression, 12:677–681
- Optics
 free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:742
- OPTIM™, 15:325, 326
- Optimal addition profiles, 5:181
- organic composites, 5:184
- Orange pigments
 benzimidazolone, 3:478
 metallized, 3:475
- Order-disorder transition, 9:565
- Order parameter, 9:561, 562
- Ordered polymers
 amorphous polymers, 1:561–566
- Organ failure
 tissue engineering for, 14:214
- Organic-based antifoams, 1:665, 666
- Organic bromine compounds, as flame retardants, 13:258
- Organic cellulose esters, 2:617–641
- Organic electrooptic (OEO) materials, 5:94, 108
- Organic field effect transistors (OFETS)
 electrically active polymers for, 4:769, 770
- Organic fouling, 5:846, 7:158. *See also* Fouling, Cake fouling
- Organic glass, 2:495
- Organic heat stabilizers, 6:579, 580
- Organic-organic separations, 7:801
- Organic particles
 metal particles, 9:36

- nanotubes, 9:35, 36
simulations on fillers, 9:36
- Organic peroxide free-radical initiators, 6:840–854
- Organic peroxides, 1:348, 349
- Organic photoconductors
polysilanes, 11:161
- Organic pigments, 3:474–489
- Organic polymers, 5:62
- Organic semiconductor
charge mobilities, 12:643
charge transport, 12:642
- Organic solar cell, 12:627
accurate measurement and characterization, 12:635–638
advantages, 12:649, 650
air mass (AM)-solar spectra, 12:637
Anisotropic charge transport, 12:644
crossbar-type electrode geometry, 12:638
efficiency limiting factors, 12:650
encapsulation using plastic materials, 12:650
lamp's age, 12:638
lifetime, 12:650
MDMO-PPV:PCBM blend, 12:639, 640
nanomorphology, 12:639
P3HT:PCBM films, 12:641, 642
polychromatic efficiencies, 12:636, 637
polyfluorene copolymers, 12:642
polymer blend morphology, 12:644
RR-P3HT, 12:641
solar simulator calibration, 12:638
- Organic solvents
porogenic, 4:60
- Organic vapor/air separation membranes, 7:761
- Organically modified ceramic (ORMOCER)
multilayer barrier structure, 2:52
- Organo-nanoclays
filler material, 5:785
- Organoalkali compounds
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:605–607
- Organochrome catalysts, 5:559. *See also* Chromium catalysts
- Organocobalt polymers, 7:64
thermotropic liquid crystalline, 7:65
- Organolithium compounds, 7:308, 309
- Organolithium reagents, 7:36
- Organolithiums, 7:307
- Organometallic complexes
carbocationic polymerization initiation by, 2:398
- Organometallic polymers, rigid-rod, 7:63–65. *See also* Metal containing polymers
- Organometallic precursors, 8:786
- Organonickel polymers, 7:64
- Organophilic membrane materials, 8:21
- Organosilicon films, 10:16–24
C-free SiO₂-like coatings, 10:18
CH radicals in the plasma, 10:18
single barrier layer, water vapor transmission rate (WVTR), 10:20
- Organosilicone coating products, 12:506, 507
- Organosolv pulping lignins, 7:544, 545
- Organotin-based heat stabilizers, 6:568–574
alkyltin intermediates and, 6:568, 569
commercial stabilizers, 6:570–572
costabilizers for, 6:570
health and safety aspects, 6:573, 574
pricing of, 6:571–573
stabilizer synthesis, 6:570
- Organotin catalysts, 14:438
- Organotins, 1:356
- Organozirconium polymers, 7:64
- Orientation
of styrene polymers, 13:246–248
- Orientation hardening, 15:454
- Orientation-induced history effects, 14:358–361
- Oriental enhancement effect, 9:751
- Oriented film, 9:471. *See* Oriented PS film
- Oriented gas model, 9:751
- Oriented PS film, 13:258–260
- Oriented strandboard, 15:296, 297
characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Oriented, high clarity shrink film, 9:476
- Orlon, 1:225
chemical properties, 1:230, 231
- Ormosil, 3:337
- Ornstein-Zernike function, 1:561
- Orowan-Polanyi formula, 11:690
- Orthokinetic flocculation, 6:646–648
- OSHA. *See* Occupational Safety and Health Administration (OSHA)
- OSM-PCGA-PEG-PCGA-OSM block copolymers, 2:175
- OSM-PCLA-PEG-PCLA-OSM block copolymers, 2:175
biomedical applications of, 2:182, 183
chemical structure of, 2:174
- Osmosis, 5:826, 7:744, 745
- Osmotic delivery controlled release technology, 3:751, 752
- Osmotic pressure, 7:744
- Osmotic shock, 7:162
properties of, 7:158–160
resin matrix, 7:154
synthesis of, 7:156–158
- Ostwald ripening, 6:626–630
- OSW. *See* Office of Saline Water (OSW)
- Outdoor environment. *See also* Environmental issues; Weathering
AES and ASA materials for, 13:204
oxidative degradation in, 13:9–11
styrene polymer degradation in, 13:209–213
- Outer plastic zone, 6:316
- Oven-drying core oils, 6:200
- Over-curing, 5:370
- Overlap concentration, 15:178
- Ox-Tran, 2:24
- Oxanorbornene polymerization, 8:153
- 7-Oxanorbornenes, 8:191
- Oxazaborolidine-bearing microgels, 8:449
- Oxazolidines, 1:424
telechelic polymers, 13:713, 714
- Oxbar oxygen absorber, 2:59
- Oxborough-Bowden model, of craze initiation, 15:483, 484
- Oxbow effect, 2:383
- Oxetane polymers, 9:413–429
3-hydroxyoxetane derivatives (3), 9:417
acylium ion salts, 9:419
aluminum alkyl-based initiators, 9:419

- cationic initiators, 9:419
 cyclic oligomers, 9:421, 422
 DMOX polymerization, 9:420
 electrophilic reagents, 9:418
 fluorosulfonates and trifluoromethanesulfonates, 9:419
 health and safety factors, 9:428
 hydroxyterminated polymer, 9:427, 428
 kinetics of, 9:421
 lewis acids, 9:418
 mechanistic considerations, 9:419, 420
 microstructure, 9:422, 423
 oxetane copolymerizes, 9:424
 polymerization, 9:416, 417
 polyoxetane glycols, 9:423, 424
 preparation of, 9:416, 417
 properties of (table), 9:424–426
 ring and the structure, 9:413
 spectroscopy, 9:427
 titration, 9:427
 trialkyl oxonium ion salts, 9:418
 triethyl and trimethyl tetrafluoroborate, 9:418
 uses, 9:428, 429
Oxidation, 4:271
 cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:227, 228
 of hydrocarbons, 13:2
 polyamide plastic, 10:281
 of polymers, 13:2–11
 Oxidation reactions, during flaming combustion, 6:44
 Oxidative chemical vapor deposition (oCVD), 2:768–770. *See also* Chemical vapor
 Oxidative coupling, 3:704, 705
 of aromatic compounds, 11:186
 in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:59
 Oxidative curing, two-part, 11:169–171
 Oxidative degradation
 analytical methods, 4:285–287
 chemistry, 4:270–278
 mechanical effects, 4:278–281
 of polymers, 13:9–11
 spatially resolved degradation from 1-D and 2-D
 spectral-spatial ESRI, 5:27, 28
 Oxidative doping, 7:53
 Oxidative induction time (OIT), 1:715, 716
 Oxidative polymerization, 9:**432–449**
 2-, and/or 6-unsubstituted phenols, 9:437–444
 anilines, 9:444, 445
 aromatic hydrocarbons, 9:447, 448
 2,6-disubstituted phenols, 9:432–437
 heterocyclic aromatics, 9:448, 449
 intercalation polymerization, 7:86
 pyrroles, 9:448, 449
 thiophenes, 9:449
 thiophenols, 9:445–447
 Oxidative stability, 1:715
 Oxidatively degradable plastic, 2:74
 Oxide-coated micas, 3:473
 Oxide layer on metal surfaces, 1:377
 Oxidized polyacrylonitrile
 limiting oxygen value, 6:713
 Oxidizing alkyds, 1:481–489
 dibasic acid selection, 1:487, 488
 film formation, 1:481–485
 high solids, 1:488, 489
 monobasic acid selection, 1:485, 486
 polyol selection, 1:486, 487
 Oxidizing treatments, for carbon composites, 11:692
 Oxidoreductases, 5:222
 Oxiranes
 monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable
 initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
 telechelic polymers, 13:702–704
 Oxy-biodegradation, 4:293
N-Oxydiethylene benzothiazole-2-sulfenamide, 12:170
N-Oxydiethylenethiocarbamoyl-*N*'-oxydiethylenesulfenamide, 12:175
Oxygen, 15:249
 acrylic adhesives and, 1:419
 acrylonitrile and, 1:271
 acrylonitrile as barrier to, 1:281
 inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
 molecular volumes (table), 14:301
 permeabilities of various high and moderate barrier
 polyhmers, 2:35
 permeation, 2:24
 relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in
 linear macromolecules, 14:76
 retarder for radical polymerization, 11:581
 Oxygen absorbers, 2:58, 59
 Oxygen-barrier food packaging, 3:375
 Oxygen consumption calorimetry, 6:92
 Oxygen index, 1:231, 2:755
 Oxygen-plasma-treated PTFE, XPS composition of
 (table), 13:532
 Oxygen scavengers, 3:670, 9:**456–464**
 applications, 9:460
 bakery products, 9:460, 461
 in cold SBR production, 13:272
 components (table), 463
 future considerations, 9:462, 463
 designing, 9:458, 459
 history, 9:457
 introduction, 9:455
 iron-based systems, 9:458
 low-oxygen condition, 9:460
 meat packaging, 9:459, 460
 metmyoglobin, 9:459
 other products, 9:461
 oxygen absorbers, 9:461
 oxygen sachets, 9:458
 oxygen scavenging polymer materials, 9:458, 459
 polymers, 9:457
 regulations, 9:462, 463
 sponge cakes, 9:460
 types and mechanisms of action, 9:458, 459
 vacuum-controlled atmosphere packaging, 9:460
 Oxygen-scavenging systems
 for barrier polymers, 2:58–60
 Oxygen transmission rate (OTR), 9:473, 474
 Oxygen-vinyl acetate adduct
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 Oxygenated fuels, smoke-forming tendency, 6:83
 Ozonation, 7:534
 Ozone and UV light resistance, of acrylic elastomers,
 1:182

- p-n-type organic solar cells, 12:634
P(S-co-DVB) polyHIPEs, 10:603
P(VDF-TrFE). *See* Poly(vinylidene fluoride-trifluoroethylene and tetrafluoroethylene) (P[VDF-TrFE])
P2VP-PEO vesicles, 14:551
P3HT:PCBM cells, 12:645
PA 66 post-SSP kinetics, 12:711, 715, 717, 718
PA. *See* Phthalic acid (PA); Phthalic anhydride, 6:387, 388
PAA coronas, 8:287
PAA microgel-coated enzymes, 8:459
PAA-MLT, 11:439
PAA oligomer; 8:800
PAA-PEG-PAA, chemical structure of, 2:176
PAA/polycation blending approach, 8:29
PAA/PVA IPN membranes, 8:29
Pacific region
 plastics recycling, 11:659, 660
Packaged foods and beverages
 barrier polymers in, 2:1
 migration modeling of polymer additives, 2:32, 33
Packages, method, 9:472
Packaging flexible, 9:469–478
Packaging material, molecular weight, 9:466–478
 chain entanglement, 9:468
 effects of molecular weight, 9:467
 molecular weight distribution (MWD), 9:466, 467
 summation of forces, 9:468
Packaging materials, lowering styrene polymer residuals for, 13:242
Packaging tapes, 11:291
Packaging. *See also* Electronic packaging
 cellular polymers, 2:544
 LDPE, 5:539
 of membranes, 7:745
 PEN/PET blends and copolymers, 10:154–164
 pharmaceutical blister, 5:587–590
 plastic, 5:65
 polyester film application, 10:509
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
 spunbonded fabric applications, 9:209
Packed column supercritical fluid chromatography (pSFC), 13:760
PAE-PCL-PEG-PCL-PAE, 2:175, 176
 biomedical applications of, 2:183
 chemical structure of, 2:176
PAE-PEG-PAE, chemical structure of, 2:176
PAI. *See* Polyamideimide
Paint and Coating Testing Manual, 3:309
Paint Data Query, 6:190
Painted surfaces, refinishing, 1:528
Paints
 as colloid, 3:437
 electrocoat, 7:779, 780
 forensic analysis, 6:188–192
 silicone application, 12:465
 vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:678–680
Pair correlation functions
 amorphous polymers, 1:548
Palettes, 15:281
Palladium catalysts, 1:299
Palladium-diphosphine complexes, in polyketone synthesis, 10:655, 656
Palladium membranes, 7:762, 763
Palladium(II) complexes, 10:653–655
Palladium(II) systems, for polyketone catalysis, 10:650, 651, 653
Palladium(II)-phenanthroline complexes, 13:195
Pallet wrap stretch film, 5:578
Palm, 14:507
Palm fibers, 14:495
Palmyra palm, 14:495
PALS. *See* Positron annihilation lifetime spectroscopy
PAM-Nonionic
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
PAM-PMA. *See* Poly(acrylamide/maleic acid) copolymer (PAM-PMA)
PAMAM. *See* Poly(amido amine) (PAMAM)
 dendrimers, 11:51, 52
 based star polypeptides, 11:52
PAN-based carbon fibers, 2:469–472
 tensile strength *versus* modulus for commercial, 2:469
PAN. *See* Acrylonitrile polymers; Polyacrylonitrile (PAN)
Paneling, 15:281
Panlite, 10:354
Panox, 1:231
Paper
 acrylamide polymer applications in, 1:119
 amino resins in, 1:538–543
 aramid, 10:233
 MPDI fiber, 10:227, 228
 polyacrylamides for, 1:140
 two-component systems applied to, 1:539
 vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:680, 681
Paper coatings, 1:542
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:715, 716
Paper release coatings
 silicone applications, 12:507, 508
Paper, use of latex, 5:195
Papyrus, 14:496
Para-xylylene diradicals, 8:382
Paraffin waxes. *See also* Waxes
Paraformaldehyde, 1:520
Parallel strand lumber, 15:298–300
 characteristics and applications, 15:284
Parallel strip, 6:305
Parallel tempering, 8:596, 597
Paramagnetic ions, electron spin resonance, 5:1
Parameters, 12:711, 712
 end group diffusion, 12:708
 Fickian diffusion, 12:709
 Nanofillers, 12:710, 711
 rate-controlling parameters, 12:709–712
 rate-controlling steps, 12:705–709
 reaction temperature, 12:709
 transesterification, 12:706
Parametric sonar, 1:74
Parclean, 1:253
Parent lamellae, 12:390
Parinello-Rahman method, 8:619
Paris blue, 3:471
Paris Law, 5:720
Paris, 2:215, 5:507
 in blow molding, 10:85, 86
Parison-mold cavity, 2:222

- Parison molds, 2:225
 Parison swell, 5:571
 Partial discharges (PD), 13:530
 Partial molar free energy, 5:176, 177
 Partially fluorinated polymers, 9:379
 radiation chemistry, 11:473, 474
 Partially hydrolyzed polyacrylamides (PAMH)
 drag reducers, 4:552
 Partially oriented yarns, 10:251, 533, 534
 Particle form factor, 9:54
 Particle growth
 in polymerization, 5:169–174
 in polymerization, average time of growth, effect on,
 5:172
 Particle identification point (PIP), 13:603
 Particle morphology, 5:182, 183
 in emulsion copolymerization, 5:183
 Particle nucleation, 5:165, 166–169, 189
 Particle radiation, 9:107
 Particle-reinforced foam, 3:499
 Particle size
 competitive growth of different sized in heterophase
 polymerization, 6:610–612
 control in heterophase polymerization, 6:625–631
 heterophase polymerizations, 6:592–594
 Particle size distribution, 5:188, 8:424
 colloids, 3:442, 443
 fillers, 5:785, 786
 latexes, 7:461
 Particle size growth, of a colorant, 3:469
 Particle-stabilized surfactant-free Pickering HIPEs,
 10:597, 598
 Particle technology, PS/DVB, 3:112
 Particle tracking velocimetry (PTV), 12:41
 Particleboard, 15:297
 characteristics and applications, 15:284
 phenolic resin applications, 9:612
 Particleboard adhesives, 1:426
 Particulate-leaching technique
 for tissue scaffold fabrication, 14:226, 227
 Parting agents, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
 Partition coefficient, 2:4
 Parylene C, 15:410, 415
 crystallinity, 15:435
 engineering properties, 15:424
 swelling in selected solvents (table), 15:436
 Parylene D, 15:410, 415
 crystallinity, 15:435
 engineering properties, 15:424
 swelling in selected solvents (table), 15:436
 Parylene N, 15:409
 crystallinity, 15:435
 engineering properties, 15:424
 swelling in selected solvents (table), 15:436
 Parylenes, 2:763, 15:409. *See also* Vapor deposition
 polymerization (VDP)
 applications, 15:436–444
 PAS. *See* Positron annihilation spectroscopy,
 11:266–281
 Passive barrier, 2:58
 Passive thermography, 9:111
 Paste adhesives, 1:417
Pasteurella multocida HA synthase (pmHAS), 5:234
 Patch coating, 3:287, 288
 Pattern resolution, 5:72
 PB-Li. *See* Polybutadiene lithium (PB-Li)
 PB rubber. *See* Polybutadiene rubbers; PS-PB rubber
 PBA. *See* Poly(butyl acrylate-co-styrene) (PBA);
 Poly(*p*-benzamide) (PBA)
 PBI fuel cell membranes, 12:112–115
 PBI separatory membranes, 12:111, 112
 PBI. *See* Polybenzimidazole.
 PBO fibers. *See* Polybenzoxazole (PBO) fibers
 PBO-PEO diblock copolymer, 6:746
 PBO. *See* Poly(*p*-phenylene benzobisoxazole) (PBO)
 PBT fibers. *See* Polybenzothiazole fibers
 PBT. *See* Poly(butylene terephthalate) (PBT);
 Poly(*p*-phenylene benzobisthiazole) (PBT);
 Polyesters, Thermoplastic
 PBZO (poly(benzo1,2-*d*:4, 5'-*d*'
 bisoxazole-2,6-diyl)-1,4-phenylene), 11:97–111,
 149–163, 657–675
 PC-polyolefin polymers, 9:644
 PCDTco-ET, 4:86
 PCL. *See* Poly(caprolactone) (PCL)
 PCLA-based hydrogels, biomedical applications of,
 2:181
 PCLA-PEG-PCLA, 2:174–176
 PCMW
 spectra, 14:387
 synchronous spectrum, 14:387
 PCR. *See* Post consumer reclaim (PCR)
 PCT amorphous copolyesters, 4:220
 PCT-based polymers, crystalline, 4:216
 PCT melting point, 4:215
 PCT polymers, isophthalate-modified, 4:217
 PCT. *See* Polycyclohexylene terephthalate (PCT)
 PCTA compositions, 4:220
 PCTA. *See* Acid-modified PCT (PCTA)
 PCTFE. *See* Poly(chlorotrifluoroethylene) (PCTFE)
 properties of, 6:138
 PCTG. *See* Glycol-modified PCT (PCTG)
 Pd-catalyzed polycondensation, 10:419
 PD. *See* Peroxide decomposers; Position-sensitive
 detector (PD)
 PDADMAC (poly[diallyldimethylammonium chloride]),
 acrylamide copolymers with, 1:134, 135
 PDEAEMA-PMPC-PDEAEMA triblock copolymer,
 2:172
 PDES elastomer, 9:29
 PDI variations, 8:350
 PDMA165-*b*-PNIPAM202 block copolymer, 8:282
 PDMAEMA. *See* Poly(2-(dimethylamino) ethyl
 methacrylate) (PDMAEMA)
 PDMS film, 9:648
 PDMS membranes, 8:21
 PDMS networks, 9:8
 PDMS superhydrophobic surfaces, 13:414
 PDMS. *See* Poly(dimethyl siloxane) (PDMS)
 PDO monomer. *See* 1,3-Propanediol (PDO) monomer
 PE, thermokinetic properties, 6:72
 PE. *See* Polyethylene (PE)
 Pearl
 as colloid, 3:437
 Pearl polymerization, 13:603
 Pearl suspension processes, 13:603

- Pearlescent pigments, 3:472
- Pectate lyase, 4:32
- Pectins, 2:82, 15:192
- PECVD, 10:1. *See* Plasma enhanced chemical vapor deposition (PECVD)
- average electron energies, 10:4
- ultralow-*k*films, synthesis of, 10:22
- PEO-like films, 10:26
- silica films, 10:22
- X-ray photoelectron spectroscopy (XPS) spectrum, 10:7
- X-ray porosimetry (XRP), 10:22
- PEDOT. *See* Poly(3,4-ethylene dioxythiophene) (PEDOT)
- PEE-PEO
- PEO (Pluronic L31) surfactants, 14:540
- vesicles, 14:540
- PEEK, 10:563, 11:481. *See* Poly(etheretherketone) (PEEK)
- screw configurations for processing, 10:569
- PEEK matrix, 1:756
- Peel, 4:628
- Peel force
- of adhesives, 1:380, 381
- Peel test, 1:388, 389
- PEG-based conjugates, 11:421
- PEG-based protein-polymer conjugates, 11:435
- PEG-grafted resins, 11:25–29
- PEG hydrophilic shell, 8:432
- PEG-methacrylate, 11:40
- PEG-modified membrane, 8:18
- PEG moieties, 8:796, 797
- PEG-PAU multiblock copolymers, 2:177
- chemical structure of, 2:176
- PEG-poly(ethyl-2-cyanoacrylate), 2:172
- PEG-polyacrylamide, 11:38, 39
- PEG-PPF-PEG triblock copolymer, 2:172
- PEG-PTMC diblock copolymers, 2:171, 172
- PEG. *See* Poly(ethylene glycol) (PEG)
- PEG/PCL block copolymers, 2:166, 167
- PEGA (PEG-polyacrylamide), 11:38, 39
- (PEG-PCL-PAU)_n multiblock copolymers, 2:176
- PEGylated polylysine dendrimers, 4:314
- PEK poly(ether ketone)s, 5:219
- PEKEKK poly(ether ketone)s, 5:219
- Pelletizing, 9:479–487
- Pelletization process, for LDPE, 5:521, 522
- Pelletized material, bulk density of, 5:641, 642
- Pelletized urea, 1:519
- Pelletizers, 5:638, 9:479–486
- dicers, 9:480
- die design, 9:484
- die-face pelletizers, 9:481, 482
- energy requirements, 9:485, 486
- introduction, 9:479
- rotary-knife pelletizers, 9:484, 485
- safety, 9:486
- selection chart (table), 9:485, 486
- strand pelletizers, 9:480, 481
- underwater pelletizers, 9:482, 483
- water-ring pelletizers, 9:482
- Pellicles
- xylylene polymer applications, 15:444
- PEMA. *See* Poly(ethyl methacrylate) (PEMA)
- Pendant-type polyradicals, 7:697
- Pendulum-type impact instruments, 6:800–806
- Penetrant clustering, 14:319–323
- Penetrant-induced history effects, 14:351, 352
- Penicillium funiculosum*, 10:104
- Pennac-M, 3:728
- Pennkinetic system, 3:752
- Pentafluorophenyl methacrylate (PFPMA), 9:379
- n*-Pentane
- C–C bonds of, 3:691
- Z* for, 3:692, 693
- Pentane effect, 3:691
- Pentane, in foamable PS beads, 13:256, 257
- 2,4-Pentanedione
- swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
- Pentaphenylethane
- transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- PENTEX, 10:152
- PEO-based membranes, 8:16
- PEO-chain stabilizes, 8:184
- PEO-PGMA-PDEA triblock polymer, 8:279
- PEO-PPS
- block copolymers, 14:552
- vesicles, 14:552
- C₁₈H₃₇-PEO-C₂H₄-C₈F₁₇ as heterotelechelic AP, 6:745
- PEO-*b*-PTMSPMA block copolymer, 8:282
- PEO. *See* Poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO)
- Pepsin, 11:38
- Peptide-based hydrogels, biomedical applications of, 2:182
- Peptide-based supramolecular polymers, 13:451–454
- confocal laser scanning microscopy image (CLSM), 13:453
- Peptide conjugated polymer brush, 10:753, 754
- Peptide nucleic acid (PNA)
- Peptide-polymer conjugates, 11:433–435
- Peptide synthesis, solid-phase method, 11:61–90
- Peptides
- controlled release, 3:754
- solid-phase synthesis, 11:61–90
- Peptosomes, 14:511
- Percolation-to-cluster transition, 8:563
- Perfectly alternating copolymers, 10:650–653
- Perfluorinated emulsifying agents, 15:59
- Perfluorinated ethylene-propylene (FEP) resin, 9:487–498
- chemical properties of, 9:494, 495
- crystallinity of, 9:491
- dielectric strength of, 9:494
- economic aspects, 9:495–497
- electrical applications, 9:497, 498
- electrical properties, 9:492, 494
- ethylene-propylene copolymers, 9:487, 488
- fabrication, 9:495–497
- manufacturing, 9:488
- mechanical properties of, 9:492, 493–494
- monomers, 9:488, 489
- optical properties, 9:495
- permeation characteristics of, 9:495
- properties of teflon, 9:490
- and PTFE properties, 9:487
- radiation, effect of, 9:492

- safety precautions for, 9:497
 thermal degradation, 9:491, 492
 transitions and relaxations of, 9:491
 weather, effect of, 9:495
- Perfluorinated polyethers, applications, 6:147, 148
- Perfluorinated polymers, 9:487–498
 ethylene-propylene copolymers, 9:487–498
 polytetrafluoroethylene, 9:502–521
 tetrafluoroethylene-ethylene copolymers, 9:526–539
 tetrafluoroethylene-perfluorodioxole copolymers, 9:542–545
 tetrafluoroethylene-perfluorovinyl ether copolymers, 9:547–557
- Perfluorinated surfactants, applications, 6:148
- Perfluoro(methyl vinyl ether), 6:162
- Perfluoroalkoxy (PFA) fluorocarbon resins, 9:547–557
 mechanical properties (table), 9:550
 monomers of, 9:547, 548
 properties (table), 9:548
 teflon, properties of (table), 9:550
- Perfluoroelastomer parts, 6:172
- Perfluoroelastomers, 1:806
- Perfluorooctane sulfonyl fluoride (PFOS), 2:766
- Perfluorooctanoic acid (PFOA; C₇F₁₅CO₂H), applications, 6:148
- Perfluoropolyether (PFPE), 4:54
- Perfluoropropyl vinyl ether (PPVE), 4:50
 properties of (table), 9:548
- Performance
 requirements of flexible packaging, 9:469
- Performance based safety codes, 6:85
- Performance plasticizers (PP), 10:46
 subgroups of, 10:47
- Perikinetic flocculation, 6:646–648
- Perilendiimide, 13:444
- Periodic boundary conditions, in molecular modeling, 8:586, 587
- Periodic copolymers, ATRP and, 1:733, 734
- Perkin-Elmer TMA module, 13:822
 sample preparation and procedure, 13:824
- Permanent press fabric, 1:532
- Permanent radiopacity, 11:616
- Permanent set
 wool, 15:324
- Permanganate number test, 7:532
- Permanganic etching, 8:713
- Permatran-C instruments, 2:24
- Permatran-W instruments, 2:24
- Permeability, 14:307, 308. *See also* Barrier properties
 barrier polymers, 2:2, 8–21
 butyl rubber, 2:362
 cellular polymers, 2:540, 541
 characterization methods, 2:755
 colloids, 3:442
 filled polymers, 5:792, 793
 in gas separation membranes, 5:836
 measurement techniques, 2:21–26
 molar volume and, 7:792–794
 selectivity membranes, 5:836
 thermally bonded nonwovens, 8:568–570
- Permeation, 2:2–5
 chain orientation effects, 2:18, 19
 chemical structure effects, 2:14–16
 crystallinity effects, 2:16–18
 flavor and aroma compounds, 2:25, 26
 humidity effects, 2:20, 21
 migration modeling of polymer additives into packaged foods and beverages, 2:32, 33
 oxygen and carbon dioxide, 2:24
 penetrant concentration effects, 2:19, 20
 predicting transport properties of gases and condensable vapors, 2:26–32
 temperature effects, 2:11–14
 transport measurement techniques, 2:21–26
 water vapor, 2:24, 25
- Permethrin, 15:339
- Permissible exposure level (PEL), lead, 6:582
- Permittivity, 13:780
- Peroxidase enzymes, 4:32
- Peroxidase model catalyst, for oxidative polymerization, 9:438
- Peroxide cure-site monomers, 6:162
- Peroxide cures, 5:479
 for fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:168
 silicones, 12:478, 479
- Peroxide decomposers, 1:697, 698, 13:11, 12, 14, 15, 17, 26–28, 31–33
 long-term stability against, 13:28–30
- Peroxide initiators
 inorganic, 6:853, 854
 for LDPE polymerization, 5:522
 organic, 6:840–854
 for polystyrene manufacture, 13:190
 safety, 6:854
- Peroxide treatments, 8:511
- Peroxide vulcanization, 4:71, 72
- Peroxides
 in polystyrene production, 13:217
- Peroxidolysis, 13:18
- Peroxydienones (PxDs), 13:22
- Persistent radical effect, 7:652
- Personal care products
 poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:460
 silicone application, 12:465
- Pervaporation
 molecular modeling, 8:620
 phosphazenes, 11:106
 process, 7:774–776, 796–802
- Pervaporation-based hybrid systems, 8:20
- Pervaporation-distillation hybrid systems, 8:31
- Pervaporation membranes, 7:761, 797
 interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:141
- Perylene pigments, 3:485
- PES hollow fiber, 8:9
- PES. *See* Polyethersulfone (PES)
- Pesticide-containing films, 3:731
- Pesticide dispersants, lignosulfonate, 7:541
- Pesticides
 controlled release formulation, 3:714–733
 from cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:234, 235
- PET-activated carbon black (ACB) nanocomposites, SSP kinetics, 12:711
- PET cyclic oligomers, 7:685, 687
- PET films, 1:750
- PET-silica (*n*-SiO₂) nanocomposite SSP kinetics, 12:711

- PET SSP, 12:706
- PET stretch blow molding, 2:237
- PET. *See* Poly(ethylene terephthalate) (PET); Polyesters, thermoplastic
- PET/MA-PE blends, transesterification, 11:648
- PETG. *See* Glycol-modified PET (PETG)
- Petroleum
- silicone oil properties compared, 12:492
- PFOA homopolymer, 4:53
- PFOA stewardship program, 6:149
- PFOA. *See* Poly(1,1-dihydroperfluorooctyl acrylate) (PFOA)
- PFPE. *See* Perfluoropolyether (PFPE)
- pH
- dependence of acrylic and methacrylic acids on, 1:160
 - poly(acrylamide) hydrolysis and, 1:126, 127
- pH-induced gelation, 3:748
- pH-induced lysis, 14:551
- pH-responsive block copolymer hydrogels, 2:172–174
- pH responsive conjugate, 11:439
- pH-sensitive smart polymer, 12:604
- pH-thermoresponsive block copolymer hydrogels, 2:174–178
- biomedical applications of (table), 2:180, 182–184
- Ph₂C-bridged zirconocene, 13:94
- Phanerochaete chrysosporium*, 4:604
- Phantom chain growth method, 8:583
- Phantom modulus, 4:667
- Phantom network model, 4:660, 662, 665, 666, 9:17, 18
- Pharmaceutical blister packaging, 5:587–590
- Pharmaceuticals and cosmetics, application of CD polymers in, 4:206
- drugs, preparation of, 4:207, 208
 - essential oil, preparation of, 4:208–210
- PHAs. *See* Poly(hydroxybutyrate); Poly(3-hydroxyalkanoate)s (PHAs)
- Phase change materials (PCMs), 8:398
- Phase contrast microscopy
- forensics applications, 6:178
- Phase diagrams, 9:563–566
- of membranes, 7:757, 758
- Phase-distribution chromatography
- for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:674
- Phase imaging, 1:756
- Phase inversion casting, 5:838, 7:752
- emulsions, 6:626
 - in PS-PB copolymers, 13:236, 237, 239, 240
- Phase laser anemometry
- drag studies, 4:538
- Phase portrait, 13:587
- Phase-separated HOPDMS/PDES healing agent, 12:356, 357
- Phase-separated PDMS healing agents, 12:357
- Phase separation
- emulsions, 6:626
 - microcapsule preparation for controlled release formulations, 3:726
 - polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:122–126
- Phase-transfer agents
- applications, 7:105, 106
 - mechanism, 7:103–105
 - polymers, reactions on, 7:105
- Phase transformation, 9:560–574
- critical phenomena in polymer solutions and blends, 9:568–573
 - interfaces between coexisting phases, 9:573, 574
 - at surfaces, 9:566–568
 - thermodynamics, 9:560–563
 - vibrational spectroscopy, 14:591–594
- Phase transition, 14:251–285
- cooperative glass transition, 14:280
 - cooperatively rearranging regions (CRR), 14:278
 - enthalpy relaxation, 14:272
 - fractional free volume, 14:265
 - free-volume theory, 14:264
 - GM configurational entropy model, 14:268
 - GM entropy model, 14:271
 - Gotlib-Ptitzyn theory, 14:264
 - Kauzmann entropy paradox, 14:268
 - kinetic theories, 14:259–264
 - Kohlrausch-Williams-Watts (KWW) function, 14:277, 278
 - melting, 14:253–256
 - molecular modeling, 8:622–625
 - non-exponential relaxation, 14:273
- Phases, 9:560, 561
- PHB-based block copolymers, 2:167
- PHB film, 10:103
- PHB-PEG-PHB triblock copolymers, 2:167
- chemical structure of, 2:168
- PHB. *See* Poly(3-hydroxybutyrate) homopolymer (PHB); Poly(β -hydroxybutyrate) (PHB)
- Phenalkamines
- coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:346
 - curing agents, 5:337
- Phenathracene
- component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Phenol
- cocondensation with melamine-formaldehyde resins, 7:733
 - electropolymerization, 5:119
 - inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
- Phenol epoxy novolac, multifunctional
- average U.S. price, 5:299
- Phenol-formaldehyde adhesives
- for wood composites, 15:287, 288
- Phenol-formaldehyde novolac resins, 6:197
- Phenol-formaldehyde resins
- advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 - curing agents, 5:337, 355, 356
- Phenolic adhesives, 1:425, 426
- Phenolic antioxidants, 6:576, 577, in VDC polymer stabilization. *See also* Hindered phenols
- Phenolic binders, 6:197
- Phenolic compounds, oxidative polymerization of, 5:264–273
- Phenolic dispersions
- applications, 9:602–604
 - manufacture, 9:587
- Phenolic fibers, 9:618, 619
- Phenolic hydroxyl group, of lignin, 7:534
- Phenolic microballoons
- filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
 - filler properties, 5:379

- Phenolic-modified alkyds, 1:492
- Phenolic polymer
 elastic constants, 1:90
 sound absorption, 1:88
 sound speeds, 1:85
 temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
- Phenolic resin adhesives, 1:427
- Phenolic resin, 6:197–199
 acid-cured no-bake binder applications, 6:197
 as curative of epoxy resin, 4:83
 cross-linking of, 4:76–78
 isocyanate cold-box system, 6:199
- Phenolic resin-paper laminate, 4:685
 effect of moisture on, 4:693, 694
 short-time electric strength of, 4:686
- Phenolic resins, 1:526, 3:335, 9:578–619, 14:167, 168
 analysis and characterization, 9:594–598
 applications, 9:603–619
 cure, 9:592–594
 curing agents, 5:337
 economic aspects, 9:601, 602
 environmental issues, 9:601, 602
 health and safety factors, 9:598–602
 manufacture, 9:587–591
 monomers, 9:579–582
 polymerization, 9:581–587
 as release agents, 11:705
- Phenolic triazine, thermokinetic properties, 6:72
- Phenols
 health and environmental issues in phenolic resins, 9:600
 hindered, 13:,13, 14, 20–26
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:578–580
- Phenols, polymerization of, 5:264–270
- Phenoxy anions, lignin and, 7:537–539
- Phenoxy resins, 5:311
 average U.S. price, 5:299
 blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
 P-V-T data, 14:79
- 4-Phenoxyphenol
 oxidative polymerization, 9:438–443
- 5-Pheny-3,6-dihydro-1,3,4-oxadiazin-2-one, 2:267
- [6,6]-Phenyl C61-butyric acid (PCBA), 6:350
- 1-Phenyl ethanol, 11:314
- Phenyl ether
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- N*-Phenyl urethanes, 4:448
- N*-Phenyl-*N'*-(1,3-dimethylbutyl)-*p*-phenylenediamine
 antioxidant, 1:693
- Phenylalanine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 6:420–422, 15:313
- Phenylchlorosilanes, 12:467
- para*-Phenylene
 polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:747–749
- m*-Phenylene diamine (MPD), 10:213
- p*-Phenylene diamine (PPD), 10:213
- p*-Phenylene diisocyanate (PPDI)
- Phenylene group
 relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- Phenylene vinylene
 polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:756, 757
- m*-Phenylenediamine
 curing agent, 5:345
- para*-Phenylenediamines
 antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- N,N'*-*m*-Phenylenedimaleimide, 12:182
- 2-Phenylimidazole, 5:360
- 2-Phenylimidazoline, 5:358, 360
- Phenylindenylidene ligands, 8:156
- 4-Phenylphenol, 5:267
- p*-Phenylphenol
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- 5-Phenyltetrazole, 2:266, 267
- Pheromone-loaded microcapsules, 8:397
- Phillips catalyst, 5:487, 12:551
- Phillips Chromox catalyst. *See* Chromox catalysts
- Phillips Trioiefin process/Olefin conversion technology, 8:187
- Phormium, 14:495
 chemical composition, 14:498
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
 processing, 14:505
- Phosgene, 9:623–632
 analytical and test methods for, 9:628, 629
 health and safety factors for, 9:630, 631
 manufacture of, 9:626–628
 properties of, 9:623–626
 storage and handling of, 9:629
 structure of, 9:624
 uses for, 9:631, 632
- Phosgene reactions, 9:624–626
- Phosphate esters, 1:355
- Phosphazene-triazine cyclomatrix copolymers, 11:98, 111
- Phosphine-borane adducts, 7:46
- Phosphine oxide, 9:664
- Phosphite chain transfer agents, 1:164
- Phosphite esters, as preventive antioxidants, 13:11, 17, 26, 27, 41–43
- Phosphites
 antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Phosphites, in stabilizer formulation, 6:577
- Phosphocellulose paper, 2:613
- Phospholipid micelles, 8:786
- Phospholipid polymers, 9:635–655, 10:312
 2-bromoisobutyrate (OEGBR), 9:651
 biomedical characteristics of, 9:654, 655
 biomedical functionalities of, 9:653, 654
 cell membrane structure, 9:635, 636
 chemical structure of, 9:636
 ethyl 2-bromoisobutyrate (EBIB), 9:651
 introduction, 9:635
 methoxyoligo(ethylene glycol), 9:651
 monomers bearing, 9:638, 639
 natural-based polymerizable, 9:637, 638
 poly(MPC) brushes, 9:651, 652
 polymerization in, 9:651
- Phospholipids
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:427, 428
- Phosphonic anhydride, 9:670
- Phosphonitrile, 11:98

- Phosphoramines, 7:38
 Phosphorus-19 (³¹P) NMR, 2:737
 Phosphorus, 9:678
 Phosphorus acid groups, 9:676
 Phosphorus-bridged [1]ferrocenophanes, 7:57
 Phosphorus compounds, trivalent
 peroxide decomposers, 1:699, 700
 Phosphorus-containing isocyanate, 9:681
 Phosphorus-containing polymers and oligomers, 9:659–684
 cellulose, 9:682
 cellulosic resins, 9:682
 chemtura, 9:679
 dimethyl 2-(methacryloyloxy)ethylphosphonate, 9:676
 dopo ring system, 9:679
 epoxy resins, 9:678
 flame-retardant finishes on cellulosic fabrics, 9:683
 flame-retarding polyester fibers, 9:677
 flexible p-o-c linkages, 9:660
 inorganic phosphorus polymers, 9:661, 662
 introduction, 9:659, 660
 oligomeric aromatic phosphates, 9:672
 oligomeric phenyl dipropylene glycol phosphite, 9:665
 phenolic and amino resins, 9:682
 phosphinites and phosphonites, 9:665, 666
 phosphites, 9:665
 phosphonates, 9:666, 667
 phosphonic anhydride, 9:670
 phosphorus iminoimides, 9:662, 663
 phosphorus-modified plastics, resins, and textiles, 9:675, 676
 phosphorus-nitrogen polymers, 9:674
 phosphorylated proteins, 9:683, 684
 polyamides, 9:678
 polycondensation of phosphoryl dihalides with diols, 9:672
 polyester resins (thermoset), 9:677, 678
 polymeric forms of, 9:660, 661
 polymeric phosphine oxides, 9:663
 polymeric phosphorus oxynitrides, 9:622–663
 polyolefins, 9:675
 polyurethanes and isocyanurate-modified polyurethanes, 9:680, 681
 starches, 9:683
 thermoplastic polyesters, 9:676
 vinyl and acrylic polymers, 9:676
 vinylphosphonates, 9:667
 water-resistant phosphorylated starch, 9:683
 Phosphorus oxynitride, phospham, (PN₂H)_x, 9:662
 Phosphorus- μ -nitrido, 11:98
 Phosphorylase, 5:229
 Photo-cross-linked FLCEs, 5:751, 755
 Photo-oxidation, 4:281–284
 initiators for, 13:10
 of polymers, 13:9–11
 Photo-oxidative degradation, of ABS polymers, 1:320, 321
 Photoacid generators, 7:590
 ionic, 7:591–593
 nonionic, 7:593, 594
 Photoacoustic spectroscopy, 14:565
 Photoantioxidants, 13:1, 14, 15. *See also* Ultraviolet absorbers
 Photobleaching initiators, 9:726
 Photocarrier generation efficiency, 9:755
 Photochemical changes, 9:757
 Photochemical cross-linking reaction, 5:755
 Photochemical stability, 5:106, 107
 Photochromism, 9:757
 Photoconduction, 9:754, 755, 764, 765
 Photocuring
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:632
 photo-curing technology, 4:72, 73
 Photodegradable plastic, 2:74
 Photodegradable PS, 13:210–213
 Photodegradation, 4:281–284
 of ABS, 1:320, 321
 impurity chromophores, 4:283, 284
 intrinsic chromophores, 4:281–283
 process of UV, 14:453–455
 of styrene polymers, 13:210–213
 Photodestructable base (PDB), 7:603
 Photodiode array detectors, 3:92
 Photoelastic modulators, 14:623
 Photoemission electron microscope, 15:379
 Photogeneration sensitizers, 9:760
 Photographic films
 cellulose acetate applications, 2:637
 coating, 3:273
 Photoimageable polyimides, 10:631, 632
 negative photoresists, 10:632, 633
 positive photoresists, 10:633, 634
 Photoimaging
 free radical photopolymerization applications, 9:742
 Photoinduced charge separation, 12:647
 Photoinduced depolymerization, 4:437
 Photoinduced electron-transfer (PET) processes, for rigid-rod polymers, 12:94
 Photoinitiated cationic curing
 epoxy resins, 5:361, 362
 Photoinitiated chemical vapor deposition (piCVD), 2:767
 Photoinitiated radiation cure
 silicones, 12:484, 485
 Photoinitiation
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:399
 radical polymerization, 11:508–511
 Photoinitiators, 6:860–863
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:696–703
 complex photoinitiation systems, 9:738–741
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:719–728
 polyolefin photo-oxidation, 13:9, 10
 Photolithography
 polysilanes for, 11:159
 Photoluminescence (PL) spectra, 8:788
 Photolytic properties, of nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, 10:245
 Photometers, ultraviolet (uv) absorption, 3:92
 Photomultiplier tubes (PMT), 7:449
 Photon correlation spectroscopy (PCS)
 amorphous polymers, 1:586
 Photonic radiofrequency phase shifter, 5:111
 Photopolymerization, 3:126, 4:98, 99, 9:695
 cationic, 9:695–714
 free radical, 9:718–743
 Photopolymerization, cationic, 9:695–714
 kinetics, 9:706–714
 monomers, 9:703–706

- photoinitiation, 9:696–703
 propagation, 9:710–714
 termination, 9:710–714
- Photopolymerization, free radical, 9:718–743
 applications, 9:741–743
 complex photoinitiation systems, 9:738–741
 inhibition, 9:736
 initiation, 9:732–734
 kinetics, 9:732–736
 monomers, 9:728–732
 photoinitiators, 9:719–728
 propagation, 9:734, 735
 rate, 9:735, 736
 rate measurement, 9:736–738
 termination, 9:735
- Photopolymerizations, 9:695
- Photorefraction, 9:748–768
 advantages of polymeric photorefractive materials, 9:749
 agents, 9:760, 761
 charge transport, 9:755–757
 combinations with liquid crystals, 9:761
 composition of, 9:758, 759
 data storage, 9:765, 766
 effect, 9:748
 electro-optic and electric-field-induced birefringent materials, 9:759
 free charge lifetime, 9:755–757
 history of polymeric photorefractive materials, 9:749
 hologram erasability, 9:757
 imaging through scattering media, 9:766
 mobility, 9:755–757
 novelty filtering, 9:766
 optical correlation, 9:766
 orientational enhancement effect, 9:751–754
 phase shift of the index grating, 9:757
 photocarrier generation efficiency, 9:755
 photo-charge generation, 9:748
 photoconduction, 9:754, 755
 photoconductivity, 9:757, 758
 photogeneration sensitizers, 9:760
 photorefractive materials section, 9:748
 photorefractive process, 9:749–751
 plasticizers, 9:759, 760
 polarization anisotropy, 9:758
recombination, 9:754
 refractive index modulation, 9:751–754
 schematic of, 9:751
 scope of article, 748, 749
 space-charge field, 9:754
 test methods, 9:748
 transport agents, 9:748
 two beam coupling, 9:757
 waveguides, 9:767, 768
- Photoresists. *See* Lithographic resists
- Photosensitive materials, solvent-developed, 5:74–78
- Photosensitive precursor polymers, 5:76
- Photosensitizers
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:721–723
 in photodegradable polystyrene, 13:210
 with photoinitiators, 6:863
- Photostabilization, 13:30–34
- Photostimulated controlled release technology, 3:747
- Photovoltaic cells-the p-i-n junction, synthesis of, 12:647
- Photovoltaics
 electrically active polymers for, 4:769
- Phthalate ester
 citrate, 10:47
 extenders, 10:47
 as plasticizers, 6:124, 10:46, 47
 synthesis of, 10:47
- Phthalates, 11:306
- Phthalic acid (PA), 7:568
- Phthalic anhydride, 4:85
 curing agent, 5:354
- Phthalocyanine-based network-PIM, 11:13
- Phthalocyanine-based PIM, 11:12
- Phthalocyanine-based polymers, 7:61
- Phthalocyanine blue pigment, 3:483, 484
- Phthalocyanine green pigment, 3:484
- Phthalocyanine pigments, 3:482–484
- Phthaloyl chlorides, 10:214
- Physical adsorption, for polymer brushes synthesis, 10:735, 738
- Physical aging, 1:452–476, 568, 2:745
 composite materials, 3:534–538
 current research on, 1:476
 and degradation, 4:251
 effect of large stresses on, 1:467, 468
 effect on failure, 1:467
 enthalpy recovery and, 1:458–461
 epoxy resins, 5:372
 and fatigue, 5:706–709
 of glassy materials, 1:452, 15:159
 relaxation time scales and, 1:468–471
 of semicrystalline polymers, 1:473
 structural recovery modeling and, 1:473–476
 temperature dependence of relaxation time and, 1:471, 472
 viscoelastic property evolution and, 1:461–467
 volume recovery and, 1:453–458
- Physical blowing agents, 1:346, 3:501, 2:260–262
 gases, 2:262
 liquids, 2:260–262
 properties of (table), 2:261
- Physical defects, electric breakdown by, 4:680
- Physical dimension, of mesophase, 6:41
- Physical effects, of stabilizers and antioxidants, 13:19, 20
- Physical gel point, 6:372, 373
- Physical modification
 PET fiber, 10:518–523
- Physical netpoints, of shape-memory polymers, 12:412
- Physical Properties of Polymers Handbook*, 9:393
- Physical properties. *See also* Stress-strain properties;
 Thermal properties
 acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene, cellular, 2:529
 acrylonitrile monomer (table), 1:263, 264
 affected by crystal structures and morphologies of
 semicrystalline polymers, 12:401–404
 Barex resins (table), 1:285
 1,3-butadiene, 2:294, 295
 butyl rubber, 2:362–364
 cellular materials, 2:527, 528
 cellulose acetate, 2:527

- chitin and chitosan, 3:36–38
- composite foams, 3:505–510
- cyanoacrylate monomers, 10:426, 427
- cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:222, 223
- dicyclopentadiene, 4:222
- engineering thermoplastics, 5:204–208
- ethylene oxide polymers, 5:445–451
- fillers, 5:785–788
- high density polyethylene, cellular, 2:529
- high impact polystyrene, cellular, 2:529
- isocyanates in, 7:257
- kraft lignins, 7:542–544
- latex foam rubber, 2:528
- lignosulfonates, 7:540
- LLDPE, 5:549–552
- nylon, cellular, 2:529
- olefin fibers, 9:346
- organosolv pulping lignins, 7:544, 545
- polyamide plastics, 10:272, 274
- polyarylates, 10:353
- polycarbonate, cellular, 2:529
- polyester, cellular, 2:529
- polyethylene, cellular, 2:528
- polyketones, 10:650, 659–664
- polymer interpenetrating networks, 7:115–118
- polymer morphology and, 5:202
- poly(phenylene oxide)s, 10:572
- polyphosphazenes, 11:105
- polypropylene, cellular, 2:528, 529
- polystyrene, cellular, 2:527, 529
- polysulfides, 11:169
- polysulfones, 11:188–190
- polyurethane, cellular, 2:527
- poly(vinyl acetate), 14:658, 659
- propylene, 11:348
- propylene polymers, 11:364–368
- PVDF, 15:56, 57
- RTV silicone, 12:512
- SAN copolymers, 1:289, 290
- silicone fluids, 12:490
- silicone foam rubbers, 12:502
- silicone gums, 12:498
- silicone rubbers, 12:496, 497
- spandex fibers, 5:771
- styrene polymers, 13:180
- test methods, 13:770
- vegetable fibers, 14:498
- vinyl acetal polymers, 14:635–644
- vinyl acetate, 14:653
- vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:687–692
- vinyl chloride polymers, 14:726, 727
- wood composite panels, 15:298
- wool, 15:316–320
- Physical separation methods, in polyacrylamide analysis, 1:143
- Physical structure, of polyester fibers, 10:512–518
- Physical tests
- composite materials, 3:543, 544
 - Physically adsorbed block copolymers 13:540
- PI composite membranes, 8:30
- Pi-pi (π - π) stacking, 8:640
- PI. *See* Polyimides (PI), 8:29
- Piassava, 14:507
- PIB. *See* Polyisobutylene (PIB)
- annealing of, 11:487
- PIC. *See* Polymer-impregnated concrete (PIC)
- Piers catalysts, 8:157
- Piezocoefficient measurement, in FLCE, 5:761, 762
- Piezoelectric constants, 9:780, 781, 790
- Piezoelectric constitutive relationships, 9:779–781
- Piezoelectric effect, 4:737, 738, 5:769
- Piezoelectric effect, molecular theory of, 9:790
- Piezoelectric materials, electrical response of, 9:781
- Piezoelectric polymers, 9:776–797
- acoustic properties, 1:94
 - amorphous, 9:788–795
 - characteristics of, 9:777
 - characterization and modeling of, 9:795–797
 - future of, 9:797
 - semicrystalline, 9:778–787
 - state of the art in, 9:782–787
 - structural requirements for, 9:777
- Piezoelectric scanner, hysteresis, 12:312
- Piezoelectricity, of PHAs, 10:100
- Pigment agglomerates, 5:185
- Pigment Black 22, 3:471
- Pigment Black 28, 3:471
- Pigment blacks. *See* Color blacks
- Pigment Blue 15, 3:483
- Pigment Blue 15:1, 3:483
- Pigment Blue 15:2, 3:483
- Pigment Blue 15:3, 3:483
- Pigment Blue 15:4, 3:483
- Pigment Blue 27, 3:471
- Pigment Blue 28, 3:471
- Pigment Blue 29, 3:471
- Pigment Blue 36, 3:471
- Pigment Brown 24, 3:471
- Pigment dispersion, 3:468, 350–355
- degree of, evaluation of, 3:354, 355
 - in aqueous media, 3:353, 354
 - in organic media, 3:350–353
- Pigment Green 36, 3:483
- Pigment Green 50, 3:471
- Pigment Green 7, 3:483
- Pigment Orange 13, 3:478
- Pigment Orange 20, 3:472
- Pigment Orange 34, 3:478
- Pigment Orange 36, 3:479
- Pigment Orange 46, 3:476
- Pigment Red 104, 3:472
- Pigment Red 108, 3:472
- Pigment Red 122, 3:484, 485
- Pigment Red 144, 3:480
- Pigment Red 149, 3:486
- Pigment Red 170, 3:477
- Pigment Red 179, 3:486
- Pigment Red 202, 3:484, 486
- Pigment Red 254, 3:487
- Pigment Red 259, 3:471
- Pigment Red 38, 3:478
- Pigment Red 48:2, 3:476
- Pigment Red 5, 3:476
- Pigment Red 57:1, 3:476
- Pigment Red 60:1, 3:476
- Pigment Violet 19, 3:484, 485

- Pigment Violet 23, 3:486
 Pigment Violet 29, 3:486
 Pigment volume relationships, 3:355–358
 Pigment Yellow 109, 3:482
 Pigment Yellow 110, 3:481
 Pigment Yellow 119, 3:472
 Pigment Yellow 12, 3:477, 478
 Pigment Yellow 120, 3:479
 Pigment Yellow 13, 3:477, 478
 Pigment Yellow 138, 3:481
 Pigment Yellow 139, 3:481
 Pigment Yellow 14, 3:477, 478
 Pigment Yellow 150, 3:482
 Pigment Yellow 151, 3:478, 479
 Pigment Yellow 154, 3:478, 479
 Pigment Yellow 17, 3:477, 478
 Pigment Yellow 180, 3:478, 479
 Pigment Yellow 181, 3:478, 479
 Pigment Yellow 34, 3:472
 Pigment Yellow 35, 3:472
 Pigment Yellow 53, 3:472
 Pigment Yellow 83, 3:477, 478
 Pigment Yellow 93, 3:480
 Pigment Yellow 95, 3:480
 Pigmented acrylic fiber, 1:250
 Pigmented modacrylic fiber, 1:250
 Pigments
 azo, 3:474–476
 benzimidazolone, 3:478, 479
 as colorants, 3:490
 defined, 3:468
 diketopyrrolo pyrrole, 3:486, 487
 dioxazine violet, 3:486
 disazo, 3:477, 478
 disazo condensation, 3:479, 480
 FD&C food lake, 3:487, 488
 inorganic, 3:470–472
 metal-filled nanocomposite application, 8:761
 metallized azo, 3:476, 477
 organic, 3:474–489
 perylene, 3:485
 phthalocyanine, 3:482, 483
 quinacridone, 3:484–486
 special effect, 3:472–474
 ultraviolet-screening, 13:30, 31
 UV stabilizing effects, 14:481
 yellow, 3:480–482
 Pillararene, 11:1 34
 Pilling
 acrylic fibers, 1:248
 Pilot coater, 3:267
 Piloted ignition
 measured surface temperature, 6:59
 solid polymers, 6:58
 PIM-1, 11:6, 7
 permeability of, 11:11
 PIM. *See* Powder injection molding (PIM)
 PIMs. *See* Polymer inclusion membranes (PIMs);
 Polymers of intrinsic microporosity, 11:1
 Pin mixers, 5:659
 Pina, 14:495
 Pinch-offs, 2:244
 Pinch-relief designs, 2:244
 Pineapple, 14:495
 β -Pinene
 carbocationic polymerization monomer, 2:394
 Pipe
 drag reduction studies, 4:545, 546
 extrusion, 10:74–76
 fracture propagation in, 6:281
 LLDPE, 5:580
 nylon, 10:288
 Pipe and tubing, HDPE use in, 5:510
 Pipe dies, 5:629, 672–675
 Pipe extrusion lines, 5:633, 634
 Pipkin diagram, 12:24
 Piring migration model, 2:32
 Pissava, 14:495
 Pitch
 graphite in composites from, 11:691
 Pitch-based carbon fibers, 2:469, 474–479
 tensile strength *versus* modulus for commercial,
 2:467
 Pivalactone
 telechelic polymer, 13:710
 PK-E polyketone, 10:659, 660
 PK-EP-6 polyketone, 10:653, 654, 663. *See also*
 Aliphatic
 grades of (table), 10:660
 properties of (table), 10:661
 PLA-based hydrogels, biomedical applications of, 2:179
 PLA bottles, 10:172
 PLA infrared spectra, peak band assignments (table),
 10:167
 PLA microparticles, 8:414
 PLA-PEG-PLA block copolymer, 2:164
 ABA-type, 2:179
 chemical structure of, 2:164
 gel-sol transitions, 2:165
 PLA-PNIPAM block copolymer vesicles, 14:544
 PLA resins, 10:166
 PLA. *See* Poly(lactic acid), 10:165–174
 economic aspects, 10:172, 173
 environmental concerns, 10:173, 174
 foaming, 10:172
 microwavable packages, 10:172
 montmorillonite MMT, 10:172
 optical, physical, mechanical, and barrier properties,
 10:168
 processing, 10:171, 172
 properties, 10:167–170
 thermoforming of, 10:172
 Plain-strain, 13:774
 Plain-stress, 13:774
 Planar extension flow, 12:2, 3
 Planar substrates, adsorption on, 1:365, 366
 Plane-strain toughness values, 6:321
 Plane strain, 6:310
 Plane stress, 6:309, 317
 Planetary gear mixers, 5:664, 665
 Plant gums, 15:192
 Plant productivity, poly(acrylic acid) and, 1:165
 Plants, transgenic, 10:106, 107
 Plasma
 apparatus, 10:2
 chemistry, 10:3, 4

- medium, 10:2
 modification, 13:528–530
 processing, 10:1–34
 states, 10:2, 13:528
 treatment, 10:1, 13:529, 530
- Plasma-based reactive ion etching (RIE), 7:597
- Plasma-enhanced chemical vapor deposition (PECVD)
 for making multilayer barrier structures, 2:52
- Plasma enhanced chemical vapor deposition (PECVD),
 2:764, 765. *See also* Chemical vapor
- Plasma polymerization, 7:763, 11:514
 electrically active polymers, 4:759
 silicones, 12:477, 478
 xylylene polymers, 15:415
- Plasma processing, 10:1–34
 actinometric optical emission spectroscopy (AOES),
 10:7
 fluorocarbon coatings, 10:6
 intra ocular lenses (IOLs), 10:6
 ion bombardment, 10:5
 optical emission spectroscopy (OES), 10:7
 van der Waals bonding, 10:5
- Plasma-surface interaction, 10:4, 5
- Plasma-treated polymer surface, aging, effects of, 10:30
- Plasma-treated polymers, Lewis acid-base character,
 10:30
- Plasmenylcholine vesicles, 14:551
 bacteriochlorophyll-sensitized photooxidation, 14:552
- Plastic antibodies, 8:684
- Plastic deformation, in amorphous homopolymers,
 8:477–482
- Plastic dual in-line package, 5:63
- Plastic film recycling, 11:673
- Plastic films (table), voltage life of, 4:690
- Plastic leaded chip carrier (PLCC), 5:66
- Plastic melt
 rolling bank of, 5:669
 viscous heat generation in, 5:653
- Plastic packages, types of, 5:66
- Plastic pellets, environmental impact of, 5:535
- Plastic three-point bending, 6:315
- Plastic Waste Management Institute, 11:660
- Plastic zone
 contours of, 6:332
 shape of, 6:333
- Plastic-zone size, 6:313, 314
- Plasticating extruder, 5:618, 640
- Plasticity
 confined, 6:309–313
 fracture and, 6:313–315
 Irwin model of, 6:309, 310
 model of solid-like polymers, 15:163
- Plasticization
 and nonideal transport effects, 14:313–319
- Plasticized vinyl polymers, 9:667
- Plasticizers, 1:345, 346, 5:683, 9:31, 759, 760, 10:42–66,
 11:306. *See also* Poly(vinyl chloride) (PVC)
 in acrylic elastomers, 1:187
 action, theory and mechanism of, 10:43–45
 adhesive, 1:428
 applications of, 10:55–60
 biomedical applications, 10:60
 blends with PVC, 14:137
 butyl rubber, 2:365
 chloroprene polymers, 3:66
 composition, properties, and applications of (table),
 10:53
 distribution of, 10:65
 economic aspects, 10:64–66
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:602
 fatigue effects, 5:736–740
 fire resistance in, 10:51
 health aspects, 10:60, 61
 history of, 10:42, 43
 key performance grid (table), 10:46
 leaching and migration of, 10:61
 nylon, 10:284
 performance of, 10:51, 53–55
 as polystyrene additives, 13:249
 poly(vinyl chloride), 10:43
 properties of, 10:42
 in PVC plastisols, 14:749–752
 relative efficiency of, 10:58
 research trends on, 10:61–64
 rheological behavior of, 10:57
 for rubber compounds, 3:553, 12:235, 236
 for stabilizing function, 10:50, 51
 test methods, 13:760
 for tire compounding, 12:256
 trimellitates, 10:49
 types of, 10:45–51
 use with UV stabilizers, 14:452
 for vinyl acetal polymers, 14:642
 worldwide market of (table), 10:64
- Plastics, 1:515–544, 6:80, 81
 biodegradable polymers and plastics in landfill sites,
 4:239–248
 cellulose acetate applications, 2:637
 cellulose nitrate applications, 2:609
 coloring, 3:490–492
 drying, 5:668
 equilibrium and allowable moisture content for, 5:667
 extrusion of, 5:645
 failure of, 6:174, 279
 intractable, 5:620
 load fracture in, 6:285
 melamine, 1:517
 photo- and biodegradable, 5:535
 release agent use with, 11:705, 706
 semicrystalline, 5:671
- Plastics additives. *See also* Additives
- Plastics extruder, 5:618
- Plastics flammability, ranges, 6:80
- Plastics processing, 10:68–92
 blow molding, 10:85, 86
 calendering, 10:88
 casting, 10:89
 extrusion, 3:495, 10:71–77
 film forming processes in extrusion, 10:77–82
 injection molding, 10:82–85
 pultrusion, 10:91
 rotational molding, 10:86, 87
 thermoforming, 10:87, 88
 thermoplastic resin processing, 10:70
 thermoplastic resins, 10:68–70
 thermosetting resin processing, 10:89–92
 thermosetting resins, 10:89
- Plastics recycling. *See* Recycling, plastics

- Plastics Technology*, 5:214
- Plastisols
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:749, 750
- Plastomer blown film properties, 5:555
- Plastomers, 5:542
- Plate-and-frame electro dialysis stack, 7:789
- Plate-and-frame membrane modules, 7:769, 771
- Plate die, 5:677, 678
- Plate-out, 3:474
- Platelets
 in inorganic-reinforced styrene polymers, 13:205, 206
 in metallic pigments, 3:473
- Platinum
 polymers containing, 7:65
- Platinum-catalyzed hydrosilylation, 12:359, 360
- Platinum-polypyridyl systems, 7:63
- PLEDs. *See* Polymer LEDs (PLEDs)
- Plexiglas, 2:495
- PLGA-b-PEG block copolymer, 8:428
- PLGA-b-PEG nanoparticles, 8:430
- PLGA-based hydrogels, biomedical applications of, 2:179–181
- PLGA hydrophobic core, 8:432
- PLGA nanoparticles, 8:428–430
- PLGA particles, 8:414
- PLGA-PEG-PLGA triblock copolymers, 2:166
 chemical structure of, 2:166
 insulin from, release of, 2:179–181
- PLGA solution, 8:431
- PLLA with tactic PMMAs, 13:657
- Ploughing hardness, 12:325, 326
- Plug and play polymers, 8:642–648
- Plug assist forming, 14:111
- Plugs
 polystyrene supports, 11:36, 37
- Plumbing, polysulfones in, 11:201
- Plumping agent, 1:543
- Plunger injection of thermosets, 3:587, 588
- Plunger molding, 3:565–568. *See also* Compression and transfer molding
- Pluronic block copolymers, 2:167, 168
 biomedical applications of, 2:181, 182
 chemical structure of, 2:168
- Pluronic-type PEO-PPO-PEO triblock copolymers, 14:546
- PluronicF127 (PEO-PPO-PEO triblock copolymer), 11:433
- Plywood, 15:296
 amino resins in, 1:526
- PMAAz films, 14:394
- PMC elements, 9:105
- PMCP. *See* Atactic
trans-poly(methylene-1,3-cyclopentane) (PMCP)
- PMDA-ODA polyamic acid, 5:69, 71–73
- PMMA, 8:334
 arms, 8:446
 BMIM]PF₆ as efficient plasticizer, 7:200, 201
 chemical compositions, 6:69, 70
 pseudo-semi-interpenetrating polymer networks (pseudo-SIPN), 6:342
 thermokinetic properties, 6:72
- PMMA-based photorefractive polymers, 9:765
- PMMA cores, 8:487
- 18₁ s-PMMA helix, 13:659
- a-PMMA, 13:654, 655
- PMMA, racemization on radiolysis, 11:468, 469
- PMMA, tacticity and crystalline properties, 13:655, 656
- PMMA. *See* Poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA)
- PMMA. *See* Polymethyl methacrylate (PMMA)
- a-PMMA/PLLA, 13:657
- PMOX-PDMSPMOX
 triblock copolymer vesicles, 14:553
 vesicles, 14:554
- PMP. *See* Poly(4-methyl-1-pentene) (PMP)
- pMS. *See* *p*-Methylstyrene (pMS)
- PNA. *See* Peptide nucleic acid (PNA)
- PNIPAAm, 11:437
- PNIPAM
 based block copolymer, 14:392
 core micelles, 14:392
 during heating, LCST-type phase transition, 1:393
 hydrogel, 14:391
- PNIPAM-based block copolymers, 2:168, 169
 biomedical applications of, 2:182
 chemical structure of, 2:169
- PNIPAM-based network, 8:450
- PNIPAM core, 8:287
- PNIPAM-*b*-PAA diblock copolymer, 8:287
- PO. *See* propylene oxide, 11:310–341
 aluminum catalyst systems, polymerization with (table), 11:323, 324
 anionic mechanism, 11:315–319
 base-catalyzed polymerization, 11:318
 base-catalyzed PPO, 11:318
 cationic mechanism, 11:319, 320
 coordinate-type catalysts, 11:320, 321
 economic aspects, 11:336–338
 epoxides, 11:311
 epoxides, ring-opening polymerization reaction of, 11:310, 311
 head-to-tail isomer, 11:311
 health and safety factors, 11:338
 high molecular weight polymers, 11:310
 low molecular weight polyethers, 11:310
 manufacture, 11:313–315
 monofunctional polyethers, 11:319
 optically active, 11:315
 polymeric derivatives, 11:310
 polymerization mechanisms, 11:315–319
- Pockels effect, 5:93
- Pockels or Kerr effects, 9:749
- Point group operations
 semicrystalline polymers, 12:374
- Poisson's law, 4:540
- Poisson distribution function, 8:662
- Poisson distribution, 1:598
- Poisson polymer distribution, 2:739
- Poisson's ratio, 1:63, 4:640, 643, 6:,332, 15:78–80
 moduli and, 4:642
- Polanyi relation, 4:441
- "Polar" monomers (MMA, MA), RAFT polymerization, 11:741
- Polar monomers
 anionic polymerization, 1:620–628
- Polarity parameter, of plasticizer activity, 10:44, 45
- Polarity reversal process, 7:789

- Polarizability, of amorphous polymers, 9:790, 791
- Polarization
of piezoelectric polymers, 9:795
of polyacrylonitrile, 1:279–281
- Polarization anisotropy, 9:751, 758
- Polarization forces, release agents and, 11:703
- Polarization functions, 3:599, 600
- Polarization-insensitive modulators, 5:112
- Polarized FT-IR spectroscopy, 5:758, 759
- Polarizing light microscopes (PLM)
fiber forensics applications, 6:186
forensics applications, 6:178
paint forensics applications, 6:189
use in forensic analysis, 6:180
- Poling conditions, 9:790, 791
- Poling temperature, 5:96
- Polishing
nonwoven fabrics, 9:234
silicone application, 12:465
- Polivic S202, 14:731
- Polivic S404W, 14:731
- Pollution control, in coating drying, 3:293, 294
- Poloxamer 188 (PEO-PPO-PEO), 8:433
- Poly-1-hexene
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Poly-1-pentene
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Poly-1,3-butadiene
transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
- Poly-3-hexylthiophene (P3HT), 3:707
- Poly-3-octylfuran (P3OF), 3:707
- Poly OX WSR-301
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Poly OX WSR-303
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Poly(*N,N*-diethylacrylamide) (PDEA), 2:780
- Poly(α -deuterostyrene)
monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
- Poly(α -hydroxy acids)
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
- Poly(α -methylstyrene)
degradation of, 13:209
irradiation degradation, 4:289
monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
time-temperature shift factors for, 15:96
- Poly(α -methyl styrene) (P α MSTY), radiation chemistry, 11:477
- Poly(β -hydroxybutyrate) (PHB)
biodegradable, 2:103–107
longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:583, 584
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
- Poly(β -propiolactone)
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:624
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(δ -valerolactone)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(γ -butyrolactone)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(ϵ -caprolactone), 12:137
biodegradable, 2:107, 108
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:78
glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
hydro-biodegradation, 4:292
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
switching segment, 12:416
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:625
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly((diethylamino)ethyl acrylate) (PDEAEA), 2:774, 779
- Poly(1,1-dihydroperfluorooctyl acrylate) (PFOA), 4:49
- Poly(1,2-phenylenevinylene)s, 7:697
extension to 4-radical-substituted, 7:696
- Poly(1,3-phenylenedisulfide), 9:445
- Poly(1,4-oxyphenylenecarbonyl-1,4-phenylene), 10:587
- Poly(1,4-phenylene oxide)
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(1,4-phenylene-1,4-butadiynylene), 9:449
- Poly(1-butene)
dynamic mechanical spectra of, 2:337, 338
isotactic, 2:332
melt crystallization, 2:334
polymerization of, 2:340, 341
polymorphism of, 2:333, 334
polymorphs (table), 2:334
solution properties of, 2:333
- Poly(1-butene)
film properties, 5:806
synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:518, 519
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- trans*-Poly(1-butenylene)
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Poly(1-trimethylsilyl-1-propyne) (PTMSP), 5:836, 8:18
- Poly(2,4,6-trimethylstyrene), 13:701
- Poly(2,6-dichloro-1,4-phenylene oxide)
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(2,6-dimethoxy-1,4-phenylene oxide) (PPO), 4:59, 5:264, 9:432–435, 10:572–576
blends with PS, 10:582–584
clathrates of, 3:147, 148
diffusion in, 2:7–9
extensional modulus and loss factor at room temperature, 1:91
physical properties, 10:572
synthesis, 10:576–581
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(2,6-hydroxynaphthoic acid)
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(2-(dimethylamino) ethyl methacrylate) (PDMAEMA), 1:731, 2:172–174
- Poly(2-(dimethylamino)ethyl methacrylate), 15:207
- Poly(2-benzyl-6-methyl-1,4-phenylene oxide)
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(2-chloroethyl vinyl ether), 13:695
- Poly(2-hydroxybutyrate)
hydro-biodegradation, 4:292
- Poly(2-hydroxyethyl methacrylate) (PHEMA), 2:776–778, 6:475
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Poly(2-isopropyl-6-methyl-1,4-phenylene oxide)
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(2-methacryloyloxyethyl phosphoryl chloride)
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Poly(2-methyl-6-phenyl-1,4-phenylene oxide)
thermal properties, 10:573

- Poly(2-naphthyl-6-phenyl-1,4-phenylene)
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(2-vinyl pyridine)
template for polymerization, 13:748
- Poly(2-*m*-tolyl-6-phenyl-1,4-phenylene oxide)
thermal properties, 10:573
- Poly(3,3,3-trifluoropropylmethylsiloxane)
activation energy in clustering system with methanol, 14:321
activation energy in clustering system with water, 14:321
- Poly(3,4-ethylene dioxythiophene) (PEDOT), 5:129, 9:449
electrochromic polymers, 4:802–804
- Poly(3,4-ethylenedioxythiophene) (PEDOT), 2:768, 779, 780
- Poly(3,4-ethylenedioxythiophene):poly(styrenesulfonate) (PEDOT:PSS), 7:515
- Poly(3-(4-fluorophenyl)thiophene) (PFPT), 7:204
- Poly(3-alkylthiophene)s (P3AT), 3:704, 707
- Poly(3-hexylthiophene) (P3HT), 6:350
- Poly(3-hydrovalerate)
environmentally degradable plastic, 2:86
- Poly(3-hydroxyalkanoate)s (PHAs), 10:96–112. *See also* β -Hydroxyalkanoates
applications for, 10:100, 101
biodegradability of, 10:102
commercial production of, 10:109, 110
degradation of, 10:102–104
degradation processes in landfills, 4:240, 247, 248
effect of side-chain length on, 10:98
enzymatic degradation of, 10:102–104
future of, 10:110–112
medium-chain-length, 10:96
polymer blends incorporating, 10:98, 99
properties of, 10:96–99
separation from biomass, 10:107–109
short-chain-length, 10:95, 101
solvent extraction of, 10:107, 108
structures of, 10:97
synthesis of, 10:104–107
- Poly(3-hydroxybutyrate) (PHB), 10:96, 98, 100
in bacterial cells, 10:97, 98
environmentally degradable plastic, 2:86
manufacture of, 10:110, 111
properties of, 10:100
recovery of, 10:108
synthesis of, 10:104–106
thermal degradation, 4:261, 262
- Poly(3-hydroxybutyrate-co-hydrovalerate)
environmentally degradable plastic, 2:86, 87
- Poly(4-vinylpyridine) (PVPy), 8:276
- Poly(4,4'-isopropylidene diphenylene carbonate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:70
- Poly(4,6-di-*n*-butyl-1,3-phenylene), 9:447
- Poly(4-(*N,N*-dimethylamino)methylstyrene) (PDMAMS), 2:779
- Poly(4-hydroxybenzoic acid)
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(4-methyl-1-pentene) (PMP), 4:54
elastic constants, 1:90
film properties, 5:806
permeability crystallinity effect, 2:17
P-V-T data, 14:79
semicrystalline, 12:391
single crystals, 12:387
sound absorption, 1:88
sound speeds, 1:85
synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:519
temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Poly(4-methylcyclopentene), 8:163
- Poly(4-vinyl pyridine)
synthesis by atom-transfer radical polymerization, 7:653
template for polymerization, 13:748
- Poly(4-*tert*-butylstyrene-*b*-poly(sodium styrene-4-sulfonate) (PtBS-*b*-NaPSS), 13:541
- Poly(5,5-dimethyl-1,3-diox-2-one)
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:625
- Poly(5-alkylnorbornene), 8:164
- Poly(acrylamide/maleic acid) copolymer (PAM-PMA), 2:178
- Poly(acrylic acid)
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
in controlled drug release system, 3:752
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
template for polymerization, 13:748
water-soluble polymer, 15:199, 200, 203, 204
- Poly(acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene) (ABS), calendaring and, 2:375
- Poly(alkadienes), hydrogenation of 6:768–772
- Poly(alkyl methacrylates)
density fluctuations in amorphous, 1:559–566
sound speed, 1:82
stereochemistry of anionic polymerized, 1:635–638
- Poly(alkyl vinyl ethers)
telechelic polymers, 13:694
- Poly(alkylaminocarbophosphazene)s, 7:47
- Poly(alkylene glycols) (table), 9:95
- Poly(allylamine hydrochloride)
template for polymerization, 13:748
- Poly(amide-6-*b*-ethylene oxide) (Pebax), 8:17
- Poly(amide-enamines)
biodegradable, 2:106
- Poly(amideimide)/poly(ether imide), 8:27
- Poly(amido amine)-PEG-poly(amido amine) (PAAm-PEG-PAAm), 2:177
- Poly(amidoamine) (PAMAM) dendrimers, 8:6
- Poly(amino acids)
in controlled drug release system, 3:753
vibrational spectroscopy, 14:617–622
- Poly(aryl ether) dendrimers, 4:300, 302, 313. *See also* Dendrimers
- Poly(arylene sulfide)s, 10:115–137, 13:289–291
- Poly(arylene-ether-sulfone) (PAES), 12:114
- Poly(arylene-siloxane-ferrocene)s, 7:51
- Poly(arylenesulfonium salt)s, 13:301
- Poly(arylethersulfone)s, 11:179
commercial synthesis of, 11:180, 181
- Poly(aryloxyphosphazene)
biodegradable, 2:104
- Poly(benzo1,2-*d*:4, 5'-*d'* bisoxazole-2,6-diyl)-1,4-phenylene (PBZO). *See* PBZO
- Poly(benzobisazole)s (PBX), 12:52

- Poly(benzoxazole) (PBO), 12:97, 98
- Poly(benzo[1,2-*d*:4, 5-*d'*]bisimidazole-2,6-diyl-1,3-phenylene) (PBI), 12:54
- Poly(butadiene-*co*-acrylonitrile) SSP (BPA-PC SSP), 12:724, 725
- Poly(bromo styrene)
NEXAFS spectra, 15:368
- Poly(butadiene-*co*-acrylonitrile) (NBR), hydrogenation of, 6:770
- Poly(butene-1-sulfone)
irradiation degradation, 4:289
- Poly(butyl acrylate-*co*-styrene) (PBA), 8:486
- Poly(butyl methacrylate)
activation energy in clustering system with water, 14:321
- Poly(butyl methacrylate-*stat*-methyl methacrylate)
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Poly(butylene adipate)
glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(butylene naphthalate), 10:140
- Poly(butylene succinate) (PBS), 5:237, 242
- Poly(butylene terephthalate) (PBT), 4:84, 86, 215, 10:198, 12:723, 724
double glass transition, 12:400
impact resistance improvement, 6:831
NEXAFS spectra, 15:375
polymerization reactors, 2:284
properties, 10:204
thermal degradation, 4:260
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(butyleneadipate-*co*-succinate) (PH), cross-linking mechanism of, 4:84
- Poly(caprolactone)
biodegradable, 2:107, 108
toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:113
vibrational spectroscopy of blends, 14:598
- Poly(carbazole-*co*-acrylamide), 5:134–137
- Poly(carbodiimide)
synthesis from isocyanates, 7:254
- Poly(carborane siloxane)
acoustic properties, 1:66, 76
sound speeds, 1:86
- Poly(chlorotrifluoroethylene) (PCTFE), 4:54, 55
high barrier polymer, 2:43
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(cyclodiborazane)s, 7:45
- Poly(cyclohexane dimethylene terephthalate) (PCDT), 4:86
- Poly(cyclohexyl methacrylate)
density fluctuations, 1:559
- Poly(cycloolefin)s
commercial overview of metallocene-based copolymers, 8:140
synthesis by metallocene-based polymerization, 8:126, 127
- Poly(cyclosiloxanes)
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:627
- Poly(di-*n*-heptyl itaconate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(di-*n*-octyl itaconate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(di-*n*-propyl itaconate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(diallyl dimethyl ammonium chloride)
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Poly(dichlorophosphazene), 7:37, 38
copolymers, 11:101, 102
synthesis, 11:98–101
- Poly(dicyclopentadiene) (poly-DCPD), 12:341
- Poly(diethyl siloxane)
thermodynamic properties, 14:70
- Poly(dimethyl itaconate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(dimethyl siloxane) (PDMS), radiation chemistry, 11:470, 12:464
activation energy in clustering system with water, 14:321
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
irradiation degradation, 4:289
manufacture, 12:471–489
silica reinforced, 3:501–503
sound speeds, 1:86
thermodynamic properties, 14:70
vibrational spectroscopy, 14:616–622
- Poly(dimethyl siloxane) hydrogels
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Poly(dimethyl siloxane)(PDMS), 5:836
- Poly(dimethyl siloxane)-based products, 11:706
- Poly(dimethylaminoethyl methacrylate)
macromonomers, 6:495
- Poly(dimethylsiloxane)(PDMS), 6:517
- Poly(dimethylsiloxane), 9:2
- Poly(dimethylsilylene)
thermodynamic properties, 14:70
- Poly(disulfide)s, 13:298–300
- Poly(ester amide)s
biodegradable, 2:104
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:78
hydro-biodegradation, 4:292
hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:781
synthesis of, 7:565, 566
- Poly(ether imide) (PEI), 1:459, 10:588–591
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Poly(etheretherketone) (PEEK), 10:587
double glass transition, 12:400
impact resistance improvement, 6:831
melting temperature, 10:69
- Poly(ethyl acrylate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(ethyl methacrylate) (PEMA)
acoustic properties as probe of relaxation, 1:80
blends with poly(vinyl acetate), 14:671
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(ethyl vinyl ether-*g*-ethyl oxazoline) graft copolymers, 6:479
- Poly(ethylene adipate)
glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
- Poly(ethylene adipate), 4:84
- Poly(ethylene glycol) (PEG), 6:499, 10:520, 521
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
PEG-grafted resins, 11:25–29
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
template for polymerization, 13:748
for tissue engineering, 14:223
- Poly(ethylene glycol) (PEG), 3:18, 10:747, 748
- Poly(ethylene glycol) (PEG)-modified dendrimers, 4:314
- Poly(ethylene glycol) monododecyl ether, 5:265

- Poly(ethylene glycol)-polyester block copolymers, 2:163–167
- PEG/PCL block copolymers, 2:166, 167
- PEG/PLA block copolymers, 2:163–165
- PEG/PLGA block copolymers, 2:165, 166
- PHB-based block copolymers, 2:167
- Poly(ethylene glycol)-*b*-poly(*N*-isopropyl acrylamide) copolymers, 6:587
- Poly(ethylene imine) (PEI)
gene-delivery polymer, 4:282
template for polymerization, 13:748
water-soluble polymer, 15:212
- Poly(ethylene naphthalate) (PEN), 10:139–164
applications, 10:150–164
high barrier polymer, 2:40
manufacture, 10:147–150
properties, 10:140–147
properties compared to PET, 10:140–147
- Poly(ethylene naphthalate) fibers
applications, 10:150–154
- Poly(ethylene naphthalate) films, 10:501–511
coextrusion, 10:508
fillers, 10:508, 509
film process, 10:502–505
properties, 10:505–507
- Poly(ethylene oxalate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO), 1:167, 5:444
blends with polyphosphazenes, 11:102, 103
in block copolymers, 2:203
chemical properties, 5:451–453
crystallization kinetics, 4:183
drag reducer, 4:552
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
electropolymerization, 5:127
glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
intercalation with clay, 7:76–78
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
irradiation degradation, 4:289
longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:583, 586
modeling parameterizations, 8:580
NEXAFS spectra, 15:373, 374
physical properties, 5:445–451
Raman spectra, 14:580–582
semicrystalline, 12:376, 386, 389, 391
single crystals, 12:386, 387
solid polymer electrolytes, 11:105
sound absorption, 1:88
sound speeds, 1:85
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:622, 623
vibrational spectroscopy of blends with PMMA, 14:598, 599
water-soluble polymer, 15:200
- Poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO), 6:499
clathrates of, 3:148–152
with hydroquinone, 3:160, 161
with inorganic salts, 3:150
with LiCF₃gSO₃, 3:152
with mercuric chloride, 3:163
with 2-methyl resorcinol, 3:162, 163
with *p*-dihalogenobenzenes, 3:160
with *p*-nitrophenol, 3:149, 150
with resorcinol, 3:149
with sodium iodide, 3:150
with sodium perchlorate, 3:151, 152
with sodium thiocyanate, 3:150, 151
with thiourea, 3:161
- Poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO), polymer-inclusion complexes of
with cyclodextrins, 3:169
with urea, 3:167–169
- Poly(ethylene oxide) blocks, 7:320
- Poly(ethylene sebacate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(ethylene succinate)
crystallization kinetics, 4:170, 175
NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate) (PET), 4:59, 215, 84, 86, 5:237, 10:510, 198, 199
acid-modified, 4:220
antioxidant applications, 1:712
Barrier Enhanced Silica Coated PET (BESTPET), 2:53
blends and copolymers with PEN, 10:139–164
blow molding, 10:85
in the blow-molding industry, 2:253
blow molding of, 2:216, 217
by-product removal, 2:287, 288
CHDM-modified, 4:218–220
conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta solvent, 9:56
crystallized, 4:218
dielectric spectroscopy, 4:488
double glass transition, 12:400
extensional modulus and loss factor at room temperature, 1:91
film extrusion, 5:805
film stretching, 10:79
gas diffusion in, 8:305
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
Hamaker constant, 6:644
hydrolytic degradation of, 13:6–8
impact resistance improvement, 6:831
irradiation degradation, 4:289
melting temperature, 10:69
microspectroscopic studies of laminates, 14:608
modeling parameterizations, 8:581
moderate barrier polymers, 2:43, 44
multilayer barrier structures, 2:51, 52
NEXAFS of mechanically alloyed blends with Vectra A950, 15:395, 396
NEXAFS spectra, 15:372
patenting of, 10:510–512
permeabilities, solubilities, and diffusivities of gas pairs in, 14:312
permeability temperature effect, 2:13, 14
photodegradation, 4:282
polymerization reactors, 2:287
predrying in processing, 10:70
properties compared to PEN, 10:140–147
properties of, 10:204
P-V-T data, 14:79
recycling, 11:657–675
self-leveling, 2:255
surface oligomer detection and imaging, 13:496, 497
thermal degradation, 4:253, 260

- thermodynamic properties, 14:69
thermoforming, 14:120, 121, 123
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate) fibers, 10:516
melt spinning of, 10:524–531
properties of (table), 10:516
stress-strain behavior of, 10:531, 532
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate) film, breakdown voltage of, 4:698
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate) films, 10:501–511
coextrusion, 10:508
fillers, 10:508, 509
film process, 10:502–505
properties, 10:505–507
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate), MWD of, 8:513
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate), radiation chemistry, 11:482
- Poly(ethylene terephthalate), SSP (PET SSP), 12:720–723
recycling technique for food packaging applications, 12:722–3
- Poly(ethylene-2,6-naphthalene dicarboxylate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:70
- Poly(ethylene-co-propylene-co-diene) (EPDM) rubbers, 5:685
- Poly(ethylene-*alt*-propylene) (PEP)
NEXAFS of mechanically alloyed blends with PI and PMMA, 15:395–397
- Poly(ethylene-*alt*-propylene) (PEP), hydrogenation of, 6:769
- Poly(ethylene-*alt*-propylene)-*b*-poly(DL-lactide), 8:282
diblock copolymers, 8:282
- Poly(ethylene-co-methacrylic acid) (EMA)
electron spin resonance, 5:18–21
surface morphology, 13:499–501
- Poly(ethylene-co-propylene) (PE-*co*-PP), 6:500
- Poly(ethylene-co-propylene-co-DCPD), 5:595
- Poly(ethylene-co-propylene-co-ENB), 5:595
- Poly(ethylene-co-styrene), 5:429–431
applications, 5:439, 440
as blend component, 5:438
blend miscibility, 5:438, 439
properties, 5:432–437
- Poly(ethylene-*g*-styrene) copolymers, 6:478
- Poly(ethylenecycloalkanes)
metallocene-based polymerization, 8:127
- Poly(ferrocenylene persulfide)s, 7:59
- Poly(ferrocenylsilane-ferrocenylgermane) random copolymers, 7:57
- Poly(fluoroolefin)s, 6:133
- Poly(fumaric acid)
biodegradable, 2:105
- Poly(glutamic acid)
biodegradable, 2:105
- Poly(glycidyl methacrylate)-based polyHIPEs, 10:610
- Poly(glycol amine)
curing agent, 5:345
- Poly(glycolic acid)
biodegradable, 2:103, 104
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:77
for tissue engineering, 14:217–221, 224, 225
- Poly(HEMA) hydrogels. *See also* 2-Hydroxyethyl methacrylate (HEMA)
- Poly(hexamethylene adipamide)
elastic constants, 1:90
film properties, 5:806
sound speeds, 1:86
- Poly(hexamethylenedipate) (PHA), 4:84
- Poly(hexamethyleneterephthalate) (PHT), 4:84
- Poly(hydroxy amino ether) (PHAE), 5:312
high barrier polymers, 2:41–43
- Poly(hydroxybutyrate)
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
crystallization kinetics, 4:177
for tissue engineering, 14:221
- Poly(hydroxypropyl methacrylamide)
in controlled drug release system, 3:753
- Poly(hydroxystyrene) (PHOST), 7:587
- Poly(imidothioether)s, 13:289
- Poly(isobutyl acrylate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(isobutyl methacrylate)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(isobutyl vinyl ether), 13:695
- Poly(isobutylene-*co*-isoprene), 2:349, 355
- Poly(isobutylene-*co*-isoprene-*co*-divinylbenzene), 2:353
- Poly(isobutylene-*co*-piperylene), 2:352
- Poly(isobutylene-*g*-indene) copolymers, 6:480
- Poly(isobutylene-*g*-styrene) copolymers, 6:480
- Poly(isoprene)-poly(ethylene) blends
phase transformation, 9:562
- Poly(isoprene-*g*-styrene) copolymers, 6:514
- Poly(1,4-cyclohexylenedimethylene terephthalate) (PCT), 4:215, 10:517. *See also* PCT
CHDM-modified, 4:218–220
crystallization of, 4:216
extrusion applications for, 4:217, 218
preparation of, 4:216
- Poly(L-lactic acid) (PLLA) SSP, 12:725, 726
- Poly(L-lysine)-*graft*-poly(ethylene glycol) (PLL-*g*-PEG) copolymers, 8:796
- Poly(LA)-zwitterion ligand, 8:799
- Poly(lactic acid) (PLA), 5:237, 8:413, 10:165–174
biodegradable, 2:102
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
degradation processes in landfills, 4:248
environmentally degradable plastic, 2:84, 85
hydro-biodegradation, 4:292
for tissue engineering, 6:382, 14:217–221, 232, 237, 238
- Poly(lactic acid-*co*-glycolic acid), radiation chemistry, 11:465
- Poly(lactic-*co*-glycolic acid) (PLGA), 8:413
- Poly(lactic-*co*-glycolide)
biodegradable, 2:103
toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:112, 113
- Poly(lactide-*co*-glycolide)
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
for tissue engineering, 14:217–221, 232, 237, 238
- Poly(lysine)
biodegradable, 2:104
- Poly(metaxylylenediamine-adipic acid). *See* MXD-6 resin
- Poly(methacrylic acid). *See also* Methacrylic
sound speeds, 1:85
template for polymerization, 13:748
water-soluble polymer, 15:204, 205
- Poly(methyl 4-(meth-acryloyloxy)cinnamate) (PMMCi) polymers, 14:394

- Poly(methyl acrylate)
 monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
 permeabilities, solubilities, and diffusivities of gas pairs in, 14:312
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(methyl ether ketone)
 NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
- Poly(methyl methacrylate) (PMMA), 6:452, 8:318, 428, 480. *See also* Methacrylic ester polymers
 adhesion and, 1:368
 blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
 brittle fracture of, 6:320
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 craze initiation, 5:713, 715
 density fluctuations, 1:559
 density of heterogenous polymerized, 6:638
 dielectric properties, 4:480
 elastic constants, 1:90
 fatigue absorbed water effect, 5:739
 fatigue crack effect of cross-linking, 5:729, 730
 fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:725–730
 fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
 fatigue life model, 5:703–706
 fatigue plasticizer effect, 5:737
 fatigue thermal history effect, 5:741
 fiber reinforced composites, silane coupling agents for, 12:427, 428
 film properties, 5:806
 fracture energy, 6:824
 fracture surface, 5:702
 frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:91
 glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
 glass-transition temperature and, 15:94–97
 glass-transition temperature, 10:69
 hydrolytic degradation, 4:290, 291
 impact strength, 6:804, 805, 818
 in interpenetrating network, 7:143
 incipient crack characteristics, 5:712
 irradiation degradation, 4:289
 low frequency Raman bands, 14:590
 macromonomers, 6:493, 494
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:130, 131
 molecular mechanics, 8:591
 monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
 NEXAFS of mechanically alloyed blends with PI and PEP, 15:395–397
 oxidative degradation, 4:277
 permeation modeling, 2:30
 photodegradation, 4:281
 polymerization reactors, 2:284–286
 preparation of, 13:229
 PVDF blends with, 15:68
 Raman spectroscopy, 14:565, 566
 SIMS spectra, 13:479–487
 sound absorption, 1:88
 sound speeds, 1:85
 stereochemistry of anionic polymerized, 1:635–638
 strain rate sensitive modulus, 6:813
 strain-clock model and, 15:157, 158
 strain-energy release rates, 6:824
 synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:620–622
 synthesis by atom-transfer radical polymerization, 7:654, 656
 synthesis by heterophase polymerization with emulsifier, 6:602
 synthesis by heterophase polymerization, 6:609
 synthesis by RAFT polymerization, 7:658
 temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
 thermal degradation, 4:256–259, 264
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
 thermoforming, 14:104, 121, 125
 time to failure under uniaxial stress, 5:710
 transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
 UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
 vibrational spectroscopy of blends with PEO, 14:598
 WAXS spectrum, 1:563–565
- Poly(methyl methacrylate)
 pyrolysis of, 4:419, 420
- Poly(methyl methacrylate) sheet (table), 8:212
 properties of commercial (table), 8:229
- Poly(methyl methacrylate), 8:211
 outdoor stability of (table), 8:212
- Poly(methyl methacrylate), syndiotactic
 dielectric spectroscopy, 4:488
- Poly(methyl methacrylate)/poly(vinyl chloride)
 thermoforming, 14:125
- Poly(methyl methacrylate-*alt*-styrene), formation of, 1:734
- Poly(methyl vinyl ether), 13:695
 water-soluble polymer, 15:201, 202
- Poly(methylene oxide)
 frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:91
- Poly(methylene(silacyclohexanylene))s, 10:393
- Poly(methylphenyl siloxane)
 dependence of viscoelastic behavior on structure, 1:584
- Poly(monosulfide ketone)s, 13:295–297
- Poly(monosulfide)s, 13:286–300
 aliphatic, 13:287–289
 conjugated polymers, 13:294, 295
 macrocyclic polythioethers, 13:291–293
 poly(arylene sulfide)s, 13:289–291
 poly(disulfide)s, 13:298–300
 poly(monosulfide ketone)s, 13:295–297
 polythiophene, 13:293
 tetrathiafulvalene polymers, 13:293, 294
- Poly(MPC) brush layer, characterization of, 9:652, 653
- Poly(muconic acid) (PMA), 3:164–166
- Poly(N-vinyl carbazole)-*g*-PI graft copolymers, 6:470
- Poly(norbornene) side reactions, 8:175
- Poly(orthoesters)
 biodegradable, 2:109, 110
 toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:103, 113, 114
- Poly(oxy-1,4-phenylene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(oxy-1,4-phenylene-oxy-1,4-phenylene-carbonyl-1,4-phenylene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:70
- Poly(oxy-2,6-dimethyl-1,4-phenylene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(oxyethyleneoxyethylene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(oxyoctamethylene)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(oxypropylene diamine)
 curing agent, 5:345

- Poly(oxypropylene triamine)
curing agent, 5:345
- Poly(oxypropylene)
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(oxytetramethylene)
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(oxytrimethylene)
thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(*p*-phenylene), 9:2
- Poly(PEG-phosphazene)
biodegradable, 2:104
- Poly(perdeutero-styrene)
- Poly(phenyl-acetylene) (PPA), 7:203
- Poly(phenylacetylene)s, 3:23
- Poly(phenylene ether ether ketone) (PEEK), 5:218, 219,
13:305, 306. *See also* PEEK matrix
properties of, 5:220
- Poly(phenylene ether)s, 10:572
- Poly(phenylene oxide) (PPO)
double glass transition, 12:400
elastic constants, 1:89
fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
health and safety factors, 10:576
limiting oxygen value of fiber, 6:713
photo-oxidation of, 13:10
properties, 10:572–576
sound speeds, 1:86
synthesis, 10:576–581
temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
- Poly(phenylene oxide) copolymers, 10:581
- Poly(phenylene oxide) membranes, 8:9
- Poly(phenylene sulfide) (PPS)
blends and alloys with polysulfones, 11:198, 199
melting temperature, 10:69
synthesis by oxidative polymerization, 9:446
- Poly(phenylene sulfide) (PPS), 13:287
- Poly(phenylene sulfone)
double glass transition, 12:400
film properties, 5:806
- Poly(phenylene vinylene), 4:445
- Poly(phosphoester)s
biodegradable, 2:108
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
- Poly(phosphoric acid)
- Poly(pivalolactone)
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(propionyl-ethyleneimine-co-ethyleneimine)
(PPEI-EI), 6:348
- Poly(propylene fumarate)
biodegradable, 2:103
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
for tissue engineering, 14:221
- Poly(propylene glycol)
dependence of viscoelastic behavior on structure,
1:584
- Poly(propylene glycol) diglycidyl ether
effect as flexibilizer, 5:383
- Poly(propylene imine) dendrimer, 4:322, 350
- Poly(propylene oxide) (PPO), 6:499
anionic polymerization, 1:623, 624
modeling parameterizations, 8:580
Nuclear Magnetic Resonance Spectra, 11:333, 334
radiation chemistry, 11:463
vibrational spectroscopy of blends, 14:598
- Poly(propylene sulfide)
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:624
- Poly(*shape P*-phenylenevinylene), 10:175–194
- Poly(S-co-DVB) polyHIPE, 10:602
- Poly(S-co-VBC) polyHIPEs, 10:610
- Poly(silylene-2-butenylene)s, 10:389
- Poly(silylenealkenylenearylene)s, 10:392
- Poly(silylenealkynylene)s, 10:390, 391
- Poly(silylenealkynylenearylene)s, 10:392, 393
- Poly(silylenearylene)s, 10:391
- Poly(silyleneethylene)s, 10:388
- Poly(silylenemethylene)s, 10:386–388
- Poly(silylenetrimethylene)s, 10:388, 389
- Poly(silylenevinylene)s, 10:390
- Poly(sodium acrylate)
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Poly(sorbic acid) (PSA), 3:164–166
- Poly(styrene sulfonic acid) (PSSA)
in controlled drug release system, 3:752
water-soluble polymer, 15:205, 206
- Poly(styrene-co-butadiene), 5:684, 685
- Poly(styrene-co-diethyl vinylphosphonate), 9:668
- Poly(styrene-*block*-ethene-co-butene-*block*-styrene)
(SEB-S) triblock copolymer, 10:695
- Poly(styrene-*b*-1,4-isoprene) block copolymer
depolarized intensity correlation functions,
disordered state, 1:550, 551
- Poly(styrene-*b*-butadiene-*b*-styrene) (S-B-S) block
copolymer, 8:496, 498, 14:141
blends, 14:152–154
commercial production, 14:144, 145
substitute for vulcanized rubber, 14:148
- Poly(styrene-*b*-dimethyl siloxane) (PS-*b*-PDMS)
- Poly(styrene-*b*-elastomer-*b*-styrene) block copolymer,
14:134, 135
commercial production, 14:144–148
- Poly(styrene-*b*-ethylene-co-butylene-*b*-styrene)
(S-EB-S) block copolymer, 14:141
blends, 14:152–154
commercial production, 14:144
substitute for vulcanized rubber, 14:148
- Poly(styrene-*b*-ethylene-co-propylene-*b*-styrene)
(S-EP-S) block copolymer, 14:141
commercial production, 14:144
substitute for vulcanized rubber, 14:148–151
- Poly(styrene-*b*-isobutylene-*b*-styrene) (S-iB-S) block
copolymer, 14:141
commercial production, 14:147
- Poly(styrene-*b*-isoprene-*b*-styrene) (S-I-S) block
copolymer, 14:141
commercial production, 14:144
- Poly(styrene-co-acrylic acid)
synthesis by heterophase copolymerization, 6:653,
654
- Poly(styrene-co-acrylonitrile) (SAN), 13:206
chemical properties of, 13:194, 195
mechanical properties of, 13:181
- Poly(styrene-co-maleic anhydride)
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
- Poly(styrene-*r*-acrylonitrile) (SAN)
NEXAFS spectra, 15:368
- Poly(sulfonic acid)s, 13:304–313
- Poly(TDI urethane)
NEXAFS spectra, 15:371

- Poly(terephthalic-*co*-isophthalic acid)
biodegradable, 2:105
- Poly(tetrafluoroethylene) (PTFE), 8:319
- Poly(tetramethylene glycol)(PTMEG), 11:205, 225, 226
- Poly(TFE-*co*-C3H6) copolymers, 6:154
- Poly(THF)diols, polyurethane shape-memory polymers and, 12:417
- Poly(thio-1,4-phenylene)
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(thio-1,4-phenylene), 13:287
- Poly(thioacetals), 13:323–325
- Poly(thiocarbonate)s, 13:314–320
- Poly(thioester)s, 13:320–323
- Poly(thiourethane)s, 13:328–332
- Poly(trimethylene carbonate), 2:171
- Poly(trimethylene terephthalate) (PTT), 1:812, 10:198–209
crystallization kinetics of, 10:201, 202
crystal structure of, 10:203, 204
health and safety for, 10:208, 209
mechanical properties of, 10:204, 205
moderate barrier polymer, 2:44, 45
molecular weight of, 10:202, 203
polymerization, 10:199, 200
processing and applications of, 10:205–208
semicrystalline, 12:392, 396
side reactions and thermal degradation of, 10:200
thermal properties of, 10:201
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(trivinyltrimethylcyclotrisiloxane) (PV₃D₃), 2:778
- Poly(tyrosine ester), 5:266
- Poly(urethane urea)s, 7:253
- Poly(vinyl acetate) (PVAc), 5:260, 14:651, 652. *See also* Vinyl acetate
adhesives for wood composites, 15:290
aging of, 1:454–457
applications, 14:673–681
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
chain-transfer constant, 14:667
conversion to poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:702–708
density of heterogenous polymerized, 6:638
dielectric spectroscopy, 1:584, 585, 4:486, 487
emulsions, 1:415
film properties, 5:806
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
manufacture, 14:662–669
physical properties, 14:658, 659
synthesis by RAFT polymerization, 7:658
temperature dependence of terminal zone of response, 1:570
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
in vinyl acetal production, 14:633–638
- Poly(vinyl acetate) copolymers, 14:651, 670
- Poly(vinyl alcohol) (PVA)/polystyrene, 8:27
- Poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:686–717, 8:22. *See also* Vinyl alcohol polymers
acetalization, 14:699, 700
acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
applications, 14:712–717
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
chain-transfer constant, 14:667
in controlled drug release system, 3:749
copolymers, 14:708
economic aspects, 14:708, 709
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:77
esterification, 14:696–698
etherification, 14:698, 699
free volume, 2:10
health and safety factors, 14:711
hydro-biodegradation, 4:292
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
manufacture, 14:702–708
processing, 14:711
properties, 14:687–701
semicrystalline, 12:372, 383
specifications and standards, 14:709, 710
test methods, 14:710, 711
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
in vinyl acetal production, 14:686, 695, 698, 699, 633–638
water-soluble polymer, 15:200, 201
- Poly(vinyl alcohol), radiation chemistry, 11:463
- Poly(vinyl alkane sulfonate)s, 14:696
- Poly(vinyl butyral) (PVB), 14:699, 633–646
properties (table), 14:641
solvent compatibilities (table), 14:643
sound speeds, 1:85
- Poly(vinyl butyrate)
incipient crack characteristics, 5:712
- Poly(vinyl carbazole)
iodine doped, 4:742
- Poly(vinyl chloride) (PVC), 1:798, 2:728, 5:470, 8:398, 13:248, 14:725. *See also* Vinyl chloride polymers
antioxidant applications, 1:714
applications, 14:756–758
blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
blends with thermoplastic elastomers, 14:137, 157
bulk polymerization, 14:742, 743
calendering and, 2:375. *See also* Calendering calendering, 10:88
chain-transfer constant, 14:667
chlorinated, 14:754
conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta solvent, 9:56
cross-linking of, 4:95
degradation processes in landfills, 4:247
density of heterogenous polymerized, 6:638
dielectric properties, 4:480
economic aspects, 14:758–760
elastic constants, 1:90
emulsion polymerization, 14:743–754
environmental issues, 14:755
extruded microcellular plastic, 8:312–314
fatigue chemistry effect, 5:733
fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:724–727
fatigue crack speed, 5:723
fatigue plasticizer effect, 5:737
film extrusion, 5:805
film properties, 5:806
fracture behavior of, 6:323
gas diffusion in, 8:305
glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
health and safety factors, 14:760–762

- heat stabilizers for, 6:561–583, *See also* Heat stabilizers
- hydrogen chloride scavengers and, 13:24–26
- hydrolytic degradation, 4:290, 291
- impact resistance improvement, 6:829
- impact strength effect of temperature, 6:820
- impact strength *vs.* notch tip radius, 6:818
- in belting, 2:71
- in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- incipient crack characteristics, 5:712
- irradiation degradation, 4:289
- long-term stabilization of, 13:28–30
- moderate barrier polymer, 2:47, 48
- molecular modeling, 8:584
- morphology, 14:725, 726, 736–739
- NEXAFS spectra, 15:373, 374
- permeability temperature effect, 2:12
- permeation modeling, 2:30, 31
- photo-oxidation of, 13:10
- plasticizer effects on sound speed, 1:83
- polymerization reactors, 2:284, 285
- processing, 14:756–758
- properties of barrier, 2:34
- properties, 14:726, 727
- quality specifications and analysis, 14:755, 756
- recycling, 11:657–675
- sound speeds, 1:85
- storage and transportation, 14:756
- strain-energy release rates, 6:824
- suspension polymerization, 14:728–742
- synthesis by heterophase polymerization, 6:589, 591, 601, 621, 648
- thermal degradation, 4:262–264, 13:5, 6
- thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- thermoforming, 14:121
- thermoplastic powder coatings, 3:233, 234
- UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- versatility, 14:726
- vibrational spectroscopy of blends, 14:598
- K*-value (molecular mass), 14:739–741
- Poly(vinyl chloride) fibers
- limiting oxygen index, 1:232
- Poly(vinyl chloride) resin
- processing, 10:68, 69
- Poly(vinyl chloride), cellular, 2:511
- commercial products and processes, 2:554–557
- decompression expansion processes, 2:521, 522
- expandable formulations, 2:516
- leaching process, 2:525
- Poly(vinyl chloride), radiation chemistry, 11:463
- Poly(vinyl ether) (PVE), chemical structure, 2:170
- Poly(vinyl ether)-based block copolymers, 2:169, 170
- Poly(vinyl ether)s. *See also* Vinyl ethers
- synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:390, 420
- Poly(vinyl fluoride) (PVF), 14:765. *See also* PVF; Vinyl fluoride polymers
- film properties, 5:806
- thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Poly(vinyl formal) (PVF), 14:699, 633–646
- properties (table), 14:640
- solvent compatibilities (table), 14:643
- Poly(vinyl methyl ether) (PVME), 2:780
- vibrational spectroscopy of blends with PS, 14:598
- Poly(vinyl nitrate), 14:696
- Poly(vinyl phosphate)s, 14:697
- Poly(vinyl pyrrolidinone-*co*-acrylamide)
- template for polymerization, 13:748
- Poly(vinyl pyrrolidone) (PVP), 2:778
- Poly(vinyl pyrrolidone-*co*-ethylene dimethacrylate)
- heterophase polymerization porous hydrogel beads, 6:668
- Poly(vinyl sulfate), 14:696
- Poly(vinylamine)-eosin system, 4:590
- Poly(vinylcarbazole) (PVK), 7:516
- Poly(vinylferrocene), 7:50
- Poly(vinylidene chloride) (PVDC), 5:470, 9:791. *See also* Vinylidene chloride polymers
- film properties, 5:806
- high barrier copolymers, 2:38, 39
- properties of barrier, 2:34
- thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(vinylidene fluoride) (PVDF), 6:553, 8:29, 9:779, 783, 784, 12:114, 15:54–57. *See also* Vinylidene fluoride
- blends with polyphosphazenes, 11:102, 103
- demand for, 15:54, 55
- elastic constants, 1:90
- fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
- fatigue thermal history effect, 5:742
- glass transition temperature for solutions, 14:91
- homopolymers, design properties, 15:61
- manufacturers of, 15:55
- market, 15:54
- modeling parameterizations, 8:581
- physical properties of, 15:59, 60
- piezoelectric, 9:779
- polymorphs, 15:62, 63
- polymorphs of, 15:63
- rheological profiles for, 15:69
- semicrystalline, 12:383, 391, 392
- SIMS spectra, 13:490
- single crystals, 12:387, 388
- solid, 15:71
- sound speeds, 1:85
- thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- vibrational spectroscopy of blends, 14:598
- Poly(vinylidene fluoride) copolymers
- applications profile, 15:64–67
- properties of, 15:60
- Poly(vinylidene fluoride-trifluoroethylene and tetrafluoroethylene) copolymers, 9:784, 785
- Poly(vinylidene fluoride-*co*-chlorotrifluoroethylene), P(VDF-*co*-CTFE), 6:484
- Poly(vinylpyrrolidinone). *See also* *N*-Vinyl-2-pyrrolidinone
- blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
- template for polymerization, 13:748
- Poly(vinylsulfonic acid)
- water-soluble polymer, 15:205
- Poly(xylenol ether), modified
- impact resistance improvement, 6:823–828
- Poly(ϵ -caprolactone) (PCL) nanoparticles, 5:237, 8:425
- Poly(*m*-phenylene isophthalamide) (MPDI), 10:211, 218
- commercial processes for, 10:219–220, 221
- crystal lattice parameters of, 10:228
- dry spinning of, 10:222

- resin and fibril forms of, 10:232
 wet spinning of, 10:222, 223
- Poly(*N,N*-dimethyl acrylamide)
 transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
- Poly(*N*-alkyl substituted acrylamides), 12:605
- Poly(*n*-butyl acrylate)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Poly(*n*-butyl acrylate-*b*-styrene), 8:345
- Poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate)
 density fluctuations, 1:559
 thermodynamic properties, 14:67
 WAXS spectrum, 1:563, 566
- Poly(*n*-decyl methacrylate)
 WAXS spectrum, 1:563, 565
- Poly(*n*-hexyl methacrylate)
 density fluctuations, 1:559
 polarized Rayleigh-Brillouin spectrum, 1:554, 555
 WAXS spectrum, 1:563
- Poly(*N*-isopropylacrylamide) (IPA)
 in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Poly(*N*-isopropylacrylamide) (PNIPAAm), 2:780, 4:372, 10:754, 755
- Poly(*N*-isopropylacrylamide-*co-N,N*-dimethylacrylamide), 8:286
- Poly(*N*-isopropylacrylamide-*stat*-acrylic acid)
 in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Poly(*N*-vinyl caprolactam) (PVCL), 2:780
- Poly(*N*-vinyl-2-pyrrolidinone) (PVP), 9:326
 adsorption isotherms, 9:333, 334
 anionic surfactants, 9:335
 applications, 9:339, 340
 aqueous solutions of, 9:330
 carboxylic groups, 9:339
 complexation, 9:332, 333
 copolymerization, 9:336
 dyes, 9:334, 335
 glass-transition temperature (table), 9:328, 329
 iodine complexes, 9:334, 335
 kinematic viscosity of, 9:331
 kinematic viscosity (table), 9:332
 molecular weight and *K* value, 9:326
 osmometry molecular weights (table), 9:328
 phenolics, 9:335
 poly(vinylpyrrolidinone-*co*-vinyl acetate), 9:336, 337
 polymer/polymer complexes, 9:335
 properties of, 9:337
 relative viscosity (table), 9:327
 solubility, 9:329
 specifications of technical (table), 9:328
 specifications of (table), 9:328
 swelling behavior, 9:329
 swelling of cross-linked (table), 9:330
 temperature-dependence of (table), 9:330
 tertiary amine-containing copolymers, 9:337
 weight-average molecular weight (table), 9:327
- Poly(*N*-vinylalkylamides), 12:605
- Poly(*N*-vinylcarbazole) (PVK), 9:760
- Poly(*N*-vinylpyrrolidinone)
 water-soluble polymer, 15:201, 202
- Poly(*o*-chlorostyrene)/polystyrene blends
 dielectric spectroscopy, 4:488
- Poly(*o*-nitrobenzyl methacrylate) (PoNBMA), 2:781
- Poly(*p*-benzamide) (PBA), 10:218
 crystal lattice parameters of, 10:228
- Poly(*p*-chlorostyrene) (*p*-CS), 3:145
- Poly(*p*-dioxane-*co*-caprolactone)
 biodegradable, 2:103
- Poly(*p*-dioxane-*co*-glycolide)
 biodegradable, 2:103
- Poly(*p*-phenylene amineimine)
 synthesis of electrically active, 4:757
- Poly(*p*-phenylene benzobismidazole) (PBZI). *See* PBZI
- Poly(*p*-phenylene benzobisoxazole) (PBO), 10:212
 carbon fibers produced from, 2:479
- Poly(*p*-phenylene benzobisthiazole) (PBT), 10:212, 11:695
- Poly(*p*-phenylene terephthalamide) (PPTA), 7:66, 10:211, 218. *See also* Kevlar
 commercial process for, 10:219, 220
 crystal lattice parameters of, 10:228
 film casting of, 10:223, 224
 resin and fibril forms of, 10:232
 spinning of, 10:222
 theoretical modulus of, 11:693
- Poly(*p*-phenylene vinylene) (PPV)
 chemical structure, properties, and uses of
 conducting, 5:121
 electropolymerization, 5:129, 130
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:435
 synthesis of electrically active, 4:756, 757
- Poly(*p*-phenylene) (PPP), 13:305
- Poly(*p*-phenylene)
 hyperbranched polymer preparation, 6:777, 778
 synthesis of electrically active, 4:747–749
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(*p*-xylylene) (PPX), 15:409, 418, 419
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(*p*-phenylene vinylene) (PPV), 7:509
- Poly(*tert*-butoxycarbonyloxystyrene) (PTBOCST), 7:587
- Poly(L-alanine)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(L-arginine) hydrogen chloride
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-asparagine)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-aspartic acid), sodium salt
 thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(L-glutamic acid), sodium salt
 thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(L-histidine)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-histidine) hydrogen chloride
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-lactic acid)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Poly(L-leucine)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(L-lysine) hydrogen bromide
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-methionine)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-phenylalanine)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(L-proline)
 thermodynamic properties, 14:69

- Poly(L-serine)
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly(L-tryptophan)
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-tyrosine)
thermodynamic properties, 14:69
- Poly(L-valine)
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Poly-*n*-BCMUs, 4:447, 448
- Polyacetals
antioxidant applications, 1:712
fatigue damage, 5:707–710
fracture surface, 5:702
impact resistance improvement, 6:831
Wöhler plot, 5:698, 699
- Polyacetylene (PA), 3:701, 702
- Polyacetylene-based DC, 6:356
- Polyacetylene derivatives, 8:160
- Polyacetylenes
iodine doped, 4:742
nonlinear optical properties, 9:152, 153
structure of, 4:445
synthesis of electrically active, 4:744–747
thermochromic properties, 14:42
- Polyacrolein, as reactive polymer, 1:112
- Polyacrylamide (PAAM), 8:29
- Polyacrylamide brushes, 10:750
- Polyacrylamide/separan AP-30
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Polyacrylamide/separan AP-302
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Polyacrylamides, 1:118. *See also* Acrylamide polymers;
Polyacrylamides
analytical methods for, 1:142–144
applications of, 1:138–141
commercial preparation of, 1:135–138
consumption of, 1:148
degradation of, 1:126, 127
detecting, 1:144
drag reducers, 4:551
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
economic aspects of, 1:145–148
experimental, 1:145
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
physical properties of, 1:119–124
safety and health and, 1:145
solutions of, 1:122–125
specifications, shipping, and storage of, 1:144
structural modifications of, 1:126–131
suppliers of (table), 1:146, 147
supports, 11:38
synthesis by heterophase polymerization, 6:676
synthesis by microemulsion polymerization, 8:369
synthesis by RAFT polymerization, 7:658
water-soluble polymer, 15:198, 199
- Polyacrylate macromonomers, 6:497
- Polyacrylate superabsorbents
degradation processes in landfills, 4:247
- Polyacrylates. *See also* Acrylic ester polymers
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Polyacrylonitrile (PAN), 1:274, 8:28, 9:793. *See also*
Acrylonitrile polymers
amorphous, 1:278
blends with polyphosphazenes, 11:102, 103
in carbon composites, 11:691, 692
chemical reactions of, 1:281, 282
film properties, 5:806
free volume, 2:10
Hamaker constant, 6:644
high barrier polymer, 2:36, 37
hydrolytic degradation, 4:290, 291
monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
phases in (table), 1:277
synthesis, 1:234–241
synthesis by heterophase polymerization, 6:600, 601
synthesis by RAFT polymerization, 7:658
thermal degradation of, 1:282
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
- Polyacrylonitrile (PAN)-based carbon fibers, 2:469
- Polyaddition and polycondensation, 9:643
- Polyamic acid
formation of, 10:618–622
polyimide formation via, 10:622–625
- Polyamic acid solutions, 5:70
- Polyamic acids, 5:69–73
preparation of films, 5:71
product suppliers, 5:73
- Polyamic esters, photosensitive, 5:77
- Polyamide 6, SSP, 12:719
- Polyamide-6/montmorillonite nanocomposites, reaction
extrusion, 11:647
- Polyamide 66, SSP, 12:715–719
- Polyamide fibers, 10:237–266
applications for, 10:264–266
dyeability of, 10:257, 258
history of, 10:237, 238
manufacture of, 10:247, 248
preparation of, 10:246, 247
properties of, 10:239–244
spinning continuous-filament yarns from,
10:248–257
- Polyamide-modified alkyds, 1:492
- Polyamide plastics, 10:272–295
applications for, 10:290, 291
chemical properties of, 10:280–282
economic aspects of, 10:292–294
history of, 10:271, 272
manufacture of, 10:282–286
mechanical properties of, 10:277–280
physical properties of, 10:272–277
processing of, 10:286–290
recycling of, 10:290–292
specifications, standards, and quality control for,
10:294, 295
- Polyamide resin matrix, for fluorescent pigments,
3:473, 474
- Polyamide, amorphous
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Polyamide/elastomer block copolymers, 14:135
applications, 14:155
commercial production, 14:147
- Polyamideimide
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Polyamides, 1:797, 3:645, 10:211–235, 237–266. *See also*
Aromatic polyamides

- advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:338
- antioxidant applications, 1:710, 711
- aromatic, 10:211–235, 237
- biodegradable, 2:109
- coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:344–347
- curing agents, 5:337
- dielectric spectroscopy, 4:488
- film extrusion, 5:805
- high barrier polymers, 2:39, 40
- hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
- impact resistance improvement, 6:831
- interfacial polymerization, 5:841
- oxygen permeability and free volume, 2:12
- piezoelectricity in, 9:785, 786
- prices of, 10:294
- single crystals, 12:384
- synthesis from isocyanates, 7:253–267
- synthesis, 4:59
- thermal degradation, 4:260, 261
- thermoplastic powder coatings, 3:233–236
- worldwide consumption, 10:291
- Polyamides, plastics, 10:272–295**
- Polyamidoamine (PAMAM) dendrimers, 4:300–305, 309–311, 322. *See also* Dendrimers
- Polyaminoamides
- effect as flexibilizer, 5:383
- Polyampholytes, 10:297–312, 15:215–217
- adsorption, 10:305
- antipolyelectrolyte effect, 10:302
- application of, 10:309–312
- at interfaces, 10:305, 306
- blockpolyampholyte-cationic polyelectrolyte, 10:307
- complexes of, 10:306–308
- electrochemical properties, 10:299, 300
- hydrodynamic and conformational behaviour, 10:303–305
- in solutions, 10:300, 301
- interpolyelectrolyte complexes (IPC), 10:306
- isoelectric effectⁿ, 10:308
- polyelectrolyte interaction, 10:306
- polyampholyte effect, 10:302
- polyampholyte-metal complexes, 10:307
- polyampholyte-surfactant complexes, 10:307, 308
- polyelectrolyte effect, 10:302
- salting-inⁿ agents, 10:301
- solubility and phase behaviour, 10:300, 301
- surfactant complex particles– conformational transition, 10:308
- surfactant complex particles, conformational transition of, 10:308
- theory of, 10:298, 299
- water, desalination of, 10:309–311
- Polyanhydrides**
- biodegradable, 2:110
- scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
- Polyaniline (PANi), 2:133, 5:273, 274**
- Polyaniline, 8:23**
- chemical structure, properties, and uses of conducting, 5:121
- electrochromic polymers, 4:805–807
- electropolymerization, 5:130–132
- in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- synthesis by oxidative polymerization, 9:444, 445
- synthesis of electrically active, 4:757
- thermochromic properties, 14:42
- Polyaniline with urchin-like morphology surfaces, 13:419
- Polyaromatics synthesis, enzymatic polymerization, 5:264–276
- Polyarylate resins, 10:351
- Polyarylates, 10:351–354**
- applications, 10:353
- glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- processing, 10:353
- properties, 10:352, 353
- P-V-T data, 14:79
- UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- Polyarylsulfones, 11:180
- glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Polyazines**
- nonlinear optical properties, 9:153, 154
- Polyaziridines, 3:340
- Polyazomethines**
- chemical structure, properties, and uses of conducting, 5:122
- Polyazulene**
- chemical structure, properties, and uses of conducting, 5:122
- Polybase ionenes**
- template for polymerization, 13:748
- Polybenzimidazole (PBI)**
- decomposition temperatures, 6:75
- pyrolysis, 6:42, 43
- Polybenzimidazole fibers, 6:708, 709
- properties, 9:346
- Polybenzobisoxazoles (PBOs), 11:696
- Polybenzothiazole fibers, 11:688
- Polybenzoxazole (PBO) fibers, 11:688
- carbon fibers produced from, 2:480
- Polybenzyl ether phenolic cold-box binders, 6:198
- Polybenzyl ether phenolic resins, 6:198, 199
- Polybetaines, 10:298, 15:217–219
- Polybisthiolation, of diethynyl disulfide, 1:45
- Polyborazines, 7:44
- Polybutadiene (PB), 11:474, 475. *See also* Butadiene**
- compounding, 12:209, 210
- conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta solvent, 9:56
- density fluctuations, 1:559
- emulsion polymerization processes, 2:318, 319
- gas-phase polymerization processes, 2:319
- low vinyl, 2:315
- macrostructure, 2:303, 304
- medium and high vinyl, 2:315, 316
- microstructure, 2:301–303
- monomers, 13:276
- monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
- physical properties, 12:207
- solid-state ¹³C NMR, 11:474
- solution polymerization processes, 2:317, 318
- synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:629–635, 2:312–316
- synthesis by cationic polymerization, 2:316, 317
- synthesis by free-radical polymerization, 2:304, 305
- synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:305–312
- trans*-1,4-Polybutadiene, 2:302
- phase transformations, 14:593

- Raman spectra, *14:572, 578, 579*
 rotatory vibrational modes, *14:572*
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, *2:310, 311*
- 1,2-Polybutadiene
 in Aroclor, depolarized Rayleigh spectrum, *1:550*
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, *2:311, 312*
- 1,4-Polybutadiene
 modeling parameterizations, *8:581*
- Polybutadiene equilibria, *8:170*
- Polybutadiene lithium (PB-Li), in styrene
 polymerization, *13:231*
- Polybutadiene rubbers
 styrene copolymers with, *13:235–238*
 as styrene reinforcing agents, *13:241*
- Polybutadiene vesicles, *14:544*
- Polybutadiene, hydrogenation of, *6:768, 769*
- Polybutadiene, isotactic, *2:301*
- Polybutadiene, syndiotactic, *2:301*
- Polybutadiene-*g*-polystyrene (PBd-*g*-PS) graft copolymers, *6:471*
- Polybutenes, *2:350*. *See also* Butene polymers
 structure, *2:361*
 synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, *2:391, 418, 419*
- Polybutylated bisphenol A
 oxidant used in rubber, *12:192*
- Polybutylene (PB), *2:332–349*
 analytical and test methods for, *2:344*
 blown-film process for, *2:343*
 commercial resins properties, *2:337–340*
 economic aspects of, *2:343, 344*
 effect of injection molding, *2:343*
 extrusion die and auxiliary equipment for, *2:342*
 health and safety factors, *2:345*
 mechanical properties of, *2:336, 337*
 melt crystallization, *2:334*
 polymerization, *2:340–342*
 polymorphism, *2:333, 334*
 processing of, *2:342, 343*
 properties of, *2:333–337*
 solution properties, *2:333*
 specifications and standards for, *2:344*
 stress-strain behavior of, *2:336*
 transformation in solid state, *2:335, 336*
 usage of, *2:345*
- Polybutylene copolymer
 burst hoop stress *vs.* time for, *2:340*
- Polybutylene film (table), properties, *2:341*
- Polybutylene resin
 chemical properties of, *2:339, 340*
 film-grade, *2:339*
 properties of pipe-grade (table), *2:339*
 temperature effect on, *2:339*
- Polybutylene terephthalate (PBT), *1:798*
- Polycaproamide
 incipient crack characteristics, *5:712*
- Polycaprolactam
 elastic constants, *1:90*
 film properties, *5:806*
 sound speeds, *1:86*
- Polycarbazoles
 chemical structure, properties, and uses of
 conducting, *5:122*
- Polycarbodiimides, *3:340*
- Polycarbonate (PC), *1:798*
- Polycarbonate polyols, *11:224, 225*
- Polycarbonate shift factor, plot of, *15:98*
- Polycarbonate, cellular
 physical properties of commercial, *2:529*
- Polycarbonates (PCs), *10:354–382*. *See also*
 Bisphenol-A polycarbonate; Tetramethyl
 bisphenol-A polycarbonate
 antioxidant applications, *1:712*
 biodegradable, *2:108, 109*
 blends, *10:381, 382*
 β relaxation, acoustic properties as probe, *1:80*
 copolymers, *10:378–381*
 dielectric properties, *4:480*
 dielectric spectroscopy, *4:488*
 elastic constants, *1:90*
 fatigue crack propagation, *5:722*
 fatigue damage, *5:706–710*
 fatigue in rubber-toughened, *5:742*
 film properties, *5:806*
 flame behavior, *10:362, 365, 366*
 fracture energy effect of test speed, *6:821, 822*
 free-volume hole distribution, *14:370*
 frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, *1:91*
 glass-transition temperature, *10:69*
 health and safety factors, *10:376, 377*
 history of, *10:355, 356*
 hydrolytic behavior, *10:362, 365, 366*
 hydrolytic degradation, *4:291, 13:6–8*
 impact resistance improvement, *6:829–831*
 interfacial polymerization, *10:369–371*
 limiting oxygen value, *6:713*
 load-deflection behaviour, *6:819*
 low frequency Raman bands, *14:590*
 mechanical properties, *10:367, 368*
 melt behavior, *10:362*
 molecular modeling, *8:584*
 molecular weights of, *10:358, 359*
 NEXAFS of multilayers, *15:399*
 non-strain rate sensitive modulus, *6:813*
 optical properties, *10:366, 367*
 oxygen permeability and free volume, *2:12*
 P-V-T data, *14:79*
 photodegradation, *4:281*
 polymerization reactors, *2:284*
 preparation, *10:368–375*
 processing, *10:375, 376*
 production of, *10:376*
 solubility and solvent resistance, *10:356–358*
 sound speeds, *1:83, 85*
 spectroscopy and analysis, *10:359*
 strain-energy release rates, *6:824*
 stress-strain curve for, *10:367*
 stress-strain curves under tension and compression,
15:456
 structure and crystallinity, *10:359, 361, 362*
 synthesis by anionic polymerization, *1:625, 626*
 temperature dependence of sound speed, *1:88*
 thermal behavior, *10:362, 365, 366*
 thermoforming, *14:121, 124*
 trade names, *10:354*
 transesterification or melt process, *10:371–374*

- uses of, 10:377, 378
 UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
 Polycarbonates synthesis, enzymatic polymerization, 5:261–264
 Polycarbonates, radiation chemistry, 11:481, 482
 Polycarbophosphazenes, 7:46
 Polycarbosilanes, 10:386–395
 carbosilane dendrimers, 10:394, 395
 poly(methylene(silacylohexanylene)s), 10:393
 poly(silylenealkenylenearylene)s, 10:392
 poly(silylenealkynylene)s, 10:391, 392
 poly(silylenealkynylenearylene)s, 10:392, 393
 poly(silylenearylene)s, 10:391
 poly(silylene-2-butenylene)s, 10:389
 poly(silyleneethylene)s, 10:388
 poly(silylenemethylene)s, 10:386–388
 poly(silylenetrimethylene)s, 10:388, 389
 poly(silylenevinylene)s, 10:390
 Polycarbosilans, 8:167
 Polycarboxylic polyesters
 curing agents, 5:337
 Polychloro chloromethyl sulfonamido diphenyl ether, 15:340
 Polychloroprene, 3:43, 5:685, 686, 12:211. *See also*
 Chloroprene polymers
 commercial polymers, 3:59–61
 compounding and processing, 3:63
 glass-transition temperature, 1:80
 global grades, 3:59
 microstructure, 3:51–56
 permeabilities, solubilities, and diffusivities of gas pairs in, 14:312
 properties, 3:68–71
 vulcanization, 3:61–63
 Polychloroprene latex adhesives, 1:415, 416, 3:78
 Polychloroprene latex, 3:75–77
 applications, 3:77–79
 compounding, 3:74, 75
 Polychloroprene, radiation chemistry, 11:475
 Polychlorotetrafluoroethylene
 semicrystalline, 12:391
 Polychlorotrifluoroethylene (PCTFE), radiation chemistry, 11:474
 Polycondensates, 6:155, 156
 Polycondensation, 5:238, 239, 10:398–423
 AB monomers, condensative chain polymerization, 10:403
 aminyl anion monomer, 10:403
 Amphiphilic P3HT-*b*-poly(3-(2-(2-(2-ethoxyethoxy)ethoxy)ethoxy)), 10:407
 in hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:785, 786
 polyamide, 10:280, 281
 reaction extrusion (REX), 11:634
 silicones, 12:472–474
 techniques, for macromonomers synthesis, 6:498
 without stirring, 7:94, 95
 Polycrystalline aggregates, 12:392–396
 Polycyanoacrylates, 10:426–433
 analytical and test methods for, 10:432
 economic aspects of, 10:431
 health and safety factors for, 10:432
 monomers of, 10:426–429
 polymer properties of, 10:430, 431
 specifications and standards for, 10:431
 uses for, 10:432, 433
 Polycyclohexylene terephthalate (PCT), 10:517. *See also* Cyclohexanedimethanol; PCT
 Polycyclohexylethylene (PCHE), 6:771, 772
 Polycyclopentane
 cis/trans configuration, 8:162
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:126, 127
 thermodynamic properties, 14:65
 Polydiacetylene/silica composite, 4:453
 Polydiacetylenes, 4:445–453. *See also* Diacetylene polymers; Triacetylene polymers
 nonlinear optical properties, 9:151, 152
 preparation of, 4:446–451
 properties of, 4:451–453
 thermochromic properties, 14:42
 Polydicyclopentadiene (PDCPD), 4:234, 8:188
 synthesis of, 8:189
 Polydienes
 stereochemistry of anionic polymerized, 1:628–635
 Polydienes, radiation chemistry, 11:474, 475
 Polydimethylsiloxane (PDMS), plasma treatment of, 10:33
 Polydispersity, 8:662, 663
 and critical point, 9:564, 565
 of lignin, 7:536
 and thermodynamic properties, 9:560
 Polydispersity index (PDI), 1:28, 29, 2:767, 5:469, 6:470, 9:467
 free-radical polymerization, 7:648
 Polydivinylbenzene
 telechelic polymer, 13:695–697
 PolyDVB polyHIPE, scanning electron microscopy micrograph, 10:606
 Polyelectrolyte, 8:27, 379
 molecular modeling, 8:602, 620
 Raman spectroscopy, 14:581–583
 relaxation exponent, 6:369
 water-soluble polymers, 15:202–210
 Polyelectrolyte gels, 2:134
 Polyelectrolyte membranes, 8:29
 Polyelectrolytes, adsorption of, 1:441–443, 10:435–491, 14:545, 546
 charge density, 1:442
 salt concentration, 1:442, 443
 surface charge, 1:441, 442
 weak, 1:442
 Polyelectrolytes, chemical structure of, 2:173
 Polyester, 1:493, 797, 798, 5:681
 amorphous, 4:218–220
 antioxidant applications, 1:712
 biodegradable, 2:102
 blends with polyphosphazenes, 11:102, 103
 cyclohexanedimethanol, 4:214–220
 depolymerization of, 7:685
 dielectric properties, 4:480
 dielectric spectroscopy, 4:486, 488
 filler material, 5:785
 film extrusion, 5:805
 film properties, 5:806
 glass-filled, 10:209
 high barrier polymers, 2:40

- hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
 impact resistance improvement, 6:829
 in interpenetrating network, 7:144
 inversion, 7:473
 longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:583, 584
 mechanical properties, 9:216
 microdenier, 10:260
 moderate barrier polymers, 2:43–45
 oxygen permeability and free volume, 2:12
 pigmentation of, 3:497
 predrying in processing, 10:70
 single crystals, 12:384
 in surface treatment, 1:374–376
 synthesis of, 7:565, 566
 textile-associated properties of bast fibers compared to, 14:500
 thermal degradation, 4:260
 thermosetting powder coatings, 3:237, 238, 243–247
 world production of, 10:264
- Polyester adducts, aliphatic
 effect as flexibilizer, 5:383
- Polyester dendrimers, 4:300, 302, 314, 315. *See also*
 Dendrimers
- Polyester dicarboxylic acids
 comonomer with diisocyanates, 7:254
- Polyester fibers, 5:768, 10:510–534
 chemical and physical structure of, 10:512–518
 defined, 10:511
 drawing of spun filaments, 10:531–534
 future of, 10:533, 534
 historical development of, 10:510–512
 limiting oxygen index, 1:232
 melt spinning of, 10:524–531
 microdenier, 10:260
 physical properties of staple, 1:229
 properties, 9:346
 world production of, 10:510
- Polyester films, 10:501–511
 coating, 10:507, 508
 coextrusion, 10:508
 film process, 10:502–505
 film properties, 10:505–507
- Polyester-hydroxyalkylamide cured powder coatings,
 3:246
- Polyester polyols, 11:222–224
- Polyester resin matrix, for fluorescent pigments, 3:474
- Polyester resins, 3:330, 331
 in coatings, 14:168, 169
 cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:232, 233
 cross linking of, 4:83–86
 saturated polyesters, 4:84, 85
 unsaturated polyesters, 4:85, 86
- Polyester-triglycidylisocyanurate cured powder
 coatings, 3:244, 245, 5:389
- Polyester, cellular
 physical properties of commercial, 2:529
- Polyester/elastomer block copolymers, 14:135
 applications, 14:155
 commercial production, 14:147
- Polyesters, fibers, 10:512–536
- Polyesters synthesis, enzymatic polymerization,
 5:237–261
- Polyesters, thermoplastic. *See also* Poly(butylene
 terephthalate); Poly(ethylene terephthalate)
- Polyether blends, 10:582–584
- Polyether impression material reaction, 4:386
- Polyether polyols, 11:217–222. *See also* Polythioethers
- Polyetheramines
 coreactive curing agents for epoxies, 5:342
- Polyetheretherketones, 10:563–570
 chemical resistance, 10:567
 electrical properties, 10:566
 fiber reinforcement, 10:565
 health and safety factors, 10:570
 high melting point, 10:568
 mechanical properties, 10:564–566
 polymer composition, 10:563, 564
 processing, 10:567–569
 radiation resistance, 10:566, 567
 specifications, 10:569, 570
 thermal and flammability properties (table), 10:566
 thermal properties, 10:566
- Polyetherification, 10:585, 586
- Polyetherimide (PEI), 12:111
- Polyetherimide/polysiloxane block copolymers, 14:135
 applications, 14:155
 commercial production, 14:147
- Polyetherketones, 5:218–220, 10:569
 melting temperature, 10:69
- Polyethers, 4:386, 387
 aromatic, 10:571–591
 film properties, 5:806
 hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:781, 782
 radiation chemistry, 11:462, 463
- Polyethersulfones (PES), 10:584–587, 11:179
 annealing of, 11:197
 blends and alloys of, 11:198, 199
 chemical structure of, 11:180
 electrical properties of, 11:193
 fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
 flame resistance of, 11:191
 glass-transition temperature, 10:69
 hyperbranched polymer preparation from, 6:782
 impact resistance improvement, 6:829
 physical and mechanical properties of, 11:192
 polymerization, 11:183, 184, 184–186
 properties of, 11:186–188
 resistance to chemical environments, 11:194
 room-temperature mechanical properties of, 11:190
 sound speed, 1:82
 uses of, 11:200
- Polyethylene (PE) waxes, 6:106
- Polyethylene (PE), 1:793, 5:484. *See also* High density
 polyethylene (HDPE); Ethylene polymers; High
 density polyethylene; Linear low density
 polyethylene; Low density polyethylene;
 Metallocenes; Ultrahigh molecular weight
 polyethylene
 AFM imaging of, 1:765, 766
 amorphous vibrational spectroscopy bands, 14:570
 annual growth rates for, 5:572
 antioxidant applications, 1:703, 704
 barrier properties in blends with EVOH, 2:56, 57
 blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
 blends with styrenic thermoplastic elastomers,
 14:152–154
 in block copolymers, 2:203
 blown film, 10:78

- blown film mechanical properties for, 5:553
C—C bonds of, 3:693
commercial overview of metallocene-based, 8:138, 139
conformation of polymer chain in melt and in the solvent, 9:56
cross-linking of, 4:64, 90–93
cross-linking through grafting/copolymerization of silane, 4:92, 93
crystalline field splitting, 14:572
crystallites, 2:204
crystallization kinetics, 4:169–183, 195
degradation processes in landfills, 4:240, 244, 246
dielectric properties, 4:479
dielectric spectroscopy, 4:488
extensional modulus and loss factor at room temperature, 1:91
extensional sound speed vs. density, 1:83
extrusion coating, 10:80
fatigue life model, 5:704, 705
fatigue thermal history effect, 5:742
film extrusion, 5:805
in flexible packaging, 9:469, 470
frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:92
Hamaker constant, 6:644
heterogeneous oxidation, 4:278
high volume commodity polymer, 5:429
hydro-biodegradation of blends with starch, 4:292, 293
incipient crack characteristics, 5:712
infrared and Raman spectra, 14:569
irradiation degradation, 4:288–290
longitudinal acoustic mode of single crystals, 14:588, 589
microspectroscopic studies of laminates, 14:608
moderate barrier polymer, 2:46, 47
molecular mechanics, 8:592, 593
molecular modeling, 8:586, 590, 599
monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
multilayer barrier structures, 2:51, 52
NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
normal vibrations, 14:569
permeabilities, solubilities, and diffusivities of gas pairs in, 14:312
permeability chain orientation effect, 2:18
permeability crystallinity effect, 2:16–18
permeability prediction, 2:32
permeation modeling, 2:29–31
peroxide cross-linking, 4:90, 91
polarized infrared spectra, 14:612
polymerization reactors, 2:284, 286, 290
properties, 5:468–474
properties of barrier, 2:34
pyrolysis of, 4:419, 420
radiation cross-linking, 4:91, 92
recycled, 6:294
relaxation response of, 15:105
semicrystalline, 12:372, 376, 382–384, 389–400, 402
single crystals, 4:179, 12:387
single-site-catalyzed, 5:545, 546
strain-energy release rates, 6:824
stress-strain curves of, 6:324
in surface treatment, 1:374–376
synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:600
synthesis by metallocene-based polymerization, 8:81–140
synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:508, 509
thermal degradation, 4:252, 13:6
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
Polyethylene, 9:675, 11:456, radiation chemistry, 11:456–460
Polyethylene bags, 9:477
Polyethylene-based ionomers, 7:218–221
Polyethylene fiber reinforcement, 11:694, 695
Polyethylene fibers, 9:345, 11:694, 695. *See also* Olefin fibers
gel-spun, 11:695
limiting oxygen value, 6:713
Polyethylene-g-polystyrene, 8:167
Polyethylene-polyisoprene-polyethylene block copolymers, 7:323
Polyethylene randomly modified with propylene, 11:354
Polyethylene resins
classifications of, 5:469
processing, 10:68
Polyethylene sheets, stress-strain curves for, 8:568
Polyethylene terephthalate (PET), 1:797, 798
Polyethylene terephthalate (PET), heat release capacity, 6:79
Polyethylene waxes
as release agents, 11:702
Polyethylene, cellular
commercial products and processes, 2:557, 558
decompression expansion processes, 2:520, 521
expandable formulations, 2:516
leaching process, 2:525
physical properties of commercial, 2:528
Polyethylenedioxythiophene
chemical structure, properties, and uses of
conducting, 5:121
Polyethyleneimine (PEI), 8:789
Polyethylenesulfonate, concentration in water, 5:614
Polyfelt
physical properties, 9:181
Polyferrocenylenes, 7:52
Polyferrocenylgermanes, 7:57
Polyferrocenylphosphines, 7:57
Polyferrocenylsilanes, 7:53–57
melt processed, 7:56
ring-opening polymerization, 7:55–57
thermal stability of, 7:54
thermal transition and gpc molecular weight data for, 7:54
water-soluble, 7:55
Polyfunctional acrylate monomers, 1:489
Polyfunctional monomers, step-growth polymerization reactions, 13:86
Polyfurans
chemical structure, properties, and uses of
conducting, 5:122
synthesis of electrically active, 4:755
Polygermanes, 7:42–44
ultraviolet-visible absorption data for, 7:43

- Polyglycine II
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Polyglycolide
scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Polyglycols, 8:389
- Polyhedral oligomeric polysilsesquioxanes, 12:430
- Polyhedral oligomeric silsesquioxane nanocomposites, 14:176, 177
- Polyhedral oligomeric silsesquioxanes (POSS), 12:430
- Polyhedral oligomeric silsesquioxanes molecules, 9:34
- Polyheterocycles
synthesis of electrically active, 4:749–757
- Polyhexadiyne-1,6-diol-*bis*-*p*-toluene sulfonate (PTS), 4:447
crystal structure of, 4:448
- PolyHIPEs, 10:595–611
applications, 10:609, 610
based systems, 10:608, 609
beads, 10:603, 604
liquid absorption, 10:605, 606
mechanical properties, 10:606, 607
morphology, 10:603, 604
preparation and functionalization, 10:599, 600
Silsesquioxane (SSQ) networks, 10:608
step-growth polymerization, 10:601, 602
SU500, 10:610
sulfonation of, 10:610
supercritical carbon dioxide (scCO₂), 10:599
surface area, 10:604, 605
surface functionalization, 10:602
tetraethoxyorthosilane (TEOS), 10:609
void and interconnecting hole size, 10:603
with biodegradable moieties, 10:608
- Polyhydrosiloxane, 5:751
- Polyhydrosiloxanes, in FLCE preparation, 5:751, 754
- Polyhydroxy ester ether (PHEE), 5:312
- Polyhydroxyalkanoate (PHA) synthase, 5:238
- Polyhydroxybutyrate, radiation chemistry, 11:464, 465
- Polyimide films, physical properties of, 5:76, 778, 06
- Polyimide films, plasma etching of, 10:31
- Polyimides (PIs), 8:22
- Polyimides, 5:203, 10:618–638
blends with polyphosphazenes, 11:102, 103
direct formed, 10:637
double glass transition, 12:400
electrical properties, 10:631
electronic interactions, 10:629, 630
environmental resistance, 10:630, 631
fibers, 10:635, 636
films, 10:634, 635
foams, 10:636
formation of, 10:618
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
by imide containing monomers, 10:626–629
by imide ring formation, 10:618–626
limiting oxygen value, 6:713
matrix composites and adhesives, 10:637, 638
mechanical properties, 10:631
melt processable, 10:636, 637
membranes from, 10:635
NEXAFS of thin films, 15:383, 384
nitrile-substituted, 9:793, 794
nonlinear optical properties, 9:154
pressure dependence of dynamics, 1:589, 590
photoimageable, 10:631–634
structural features, 10:630
structure-property relationships, 10:629–631
thermal stability, 10:630
tubes, 10:635
via polymer conversion, 10:629
in wires, 10:635
solvent-soluble, 5:73, 74
structure-property relationships in, 5:68, 69
synthesis from isocyanates, 7:254
thermal and mechanical properties of, 5:69
- Polyimides, cellular, 2:511
expandable formulations, 2:519
- Polyimides, radiation chemistry, 11:480, 481
- Polyiminoalanes, 7:302
- Polyindole
chemical structure, properties, and uses of
conducting, 5:122
- Polyion complex (PIC) micelles, 7:237
- Polyisobutene
monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
- Polyisobutylene (PIB) chains, 1:368
aging of, 1:466
shear rate dependence of, 15:107
- Polyisobutylene (PIB), 11:176
conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta
solvent, 9:56
dependence of viscoelastic behavior on structure,
1:583, 584
dissolved in benzene, has both LCST and UCST,
9:564
irradiation degradation, 4:289
metallocene-based polymerization, 8:127
modeling parameterizations, 8:580
NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
photon correlation spectroscopy, 1:586
sub-Rouse modes, 1:577
synthesis, 2:349, 350
synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:391,
416, 417
telechelic polymer, 13:697–701
temperature dependence of viscoelastic behavior,
1:572, 573
thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Polyisobutylene, 11:305, 306
- Polyisobutylene, high molecular weight, 2:355
volume-temperature cooling curve, 1:567
- Polyisobutylene, radiation chemistry, 11:461, 462
- Polyisocyanates
metallocene-based polymerization, 8:132
polysulfide curing with, 11:171, 172
- Polyisocyanides, 3:12, 23
- Polyisocyanurates, cellular
expandable formulations, 2:519
- Polyisolutylene
drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Polyisopenyllithium, 7:309
- Polyisoprene (PIP), radiation chemistry, 11:475
- Polyisoprene
ABA block copolymers, 7:316, 317
Alfin catalysts, 7:306

- Alkali metal catalysts, 7:303–305
 anionic polymerization, 7:306–13
 binary lanthanide catalyst system, 7:303
 block copolymers, 7:316–324
 carbene additions, 7:298, 299
 chemical modification of, 7:292–300
 compounding, 7:325–330
 cyclization, 7:299, 300
 density-gradient ultracentrifugation, 7:318
 economic aspects, 7:334, 335
 epoxidation, 7:297
 halogenation, 7:293, 294
 homogeneous anionic polymerizations, 7:307
 homopolymers, star-branched polymers, 7:320
 hydrogenation, 7:297, 298
 hydrohalogenation, 7:292, 293
 macroheterobicyclic compounds, 7:305
 microstructure, 7:314, 315
 model polymers, 7:315
 molecular weights, 7:286, 287, 310, 311
 molecular-weight distribution, 7:310, 311
N,N,N',N'-tetramethylethylenediamine (TMEDA), 7:312
 Ozonolysis, 7:296, 297
 polymer structure, 7:314–324
 polymerization with Lithium, 7:306
 polymerization, 7:300–314
 Sodium naphthalene solutions, 7:307
 stereoregularity, 7:314
 triblock copolymers, 7:317
 uses, 7:337
- Polyisoprene
 monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
 NEXAFS of mechanically alloyed blends with PEP and PMMA, 15:395–397
 physical properties, 12:207
 synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:629–635
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:518, 519
- Polyisoprene rubbers, glass-transition temperature (*T_g*), 7:288
- Polyketone catalysis, 10:653, 668
 Polyketone stereoisomers, 10:652
 Polyketone terpolymer
 fractography, 5:730
- Polyketones, 10:649–669
 aliphatic, 10:662–664
 catalysis reaction mechanism for, 10:655–658
 future of, 10:668, 669
 manufacturing of, 10:658, 659
 nature of the catalyst in catalysis of, 10:658
 physical properties and monomer manufacture of, 10:650
 properties of, 10:659–664
 uses for, 10:664–668
- Poly lactides, 12:137
 moderate barrier polymer, 2:45
 scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
- Poly lactones
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:130, 131
 synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:624, 625
- Poly leucine
 biodegradable, 2:104
- POLYLINK, 13:157, 161
 Polylysine dendrimers, 4:300, 302, 313, 314. *See also* Dendrimers
- Poly macromonomers, conformational properties, 7:638
- Polymer
 properties of, 14:768–770
- Polymer-additive systems, radiopacities of (table), 11:620
- Polymer-air interphase, 13:575
 polymer-air interphase, 13:575
- Polymer alloys
 alloy rayons, 2:688, 689
 fatigue, 5:742–744
 mixed waste streams, 11:670, 671
 NEXAFS of mechanically alloyed blends, 15:395–397
 polysulfones, 11:198, 199
 PVDF, 15:59, 60
- Polymer applications, release from, 11:705
- Polymer backbone. *See* Backbone
- Polymer-based photovoltaics, 12:647
- Polymer bending, LD to determine, 5:60
- Polymer blending, 2:733, 6:514, 515, 8:492–494, 10:674–722
 acrylonitrile-butadiene-styrene (ABS) polymer, 10:720
 AFM imaging of, 1:773–777
 amorphous glassy polymers, 10:709, 710
 amorphous PMMA, 10:698
 barrier polymers, 2:54, 55
 block copolymers, 2:208–210
 block copolymer with one homopolymer, 2:207, 208
 block copolymer with two homopolymers, 2:208
 co-continuous morphology, 10:686
 containing block copolymers, 2:206–210
 compatibilization, 10:679–682
 2D correlation spectroscopy (2DCOS), 14:401–403
 differential scanning calorimetry (DSC), 10:698
 droplet-within-droplet morphologies, 10:686
 electrically active polymers, 4:759, 760
 ELE/TTRA synchrotron, SAXS/WAXS measurements, 10:698
 environmentally degradable plastics, 2:87–91
 equilibrium phase behaviour, 10:674–679
 equivalent box model (EBM), 10:702–704, 705
 fatigue, 5:742–744
 gases and vapors, permeability of, 10:717, 718
 Ginsburg-Landau equation, 10:678
 heterogenous, preparation of, 10:701, 702
 HIPS, 10:718, 719
 imaging vibrational spectroscopy, 14:599–607
 impact resistance improvement, 6:832
 liquid crystalline polymer, 7:574
 liquid-liquid phase behaviour, 10:678
 mechanochemistry, 10:682
 melt mixing, 10:682, 683–687
 miscible polymer pair, blend permeability, 10:717
 mixed waste streams, 11:670, 671
 molten state, phase structure development, 10:683–687
 neutron scattering, 9:59–62
 NEXAFS of thin films, 15:383–394
 nonsolvent inducing precipitation, 13:427
 nylon, 10:285

- Ostwald ripening mechanism, 10:674
- PC/ABS blends, 10:721
- PHA-incorporating, 10:98, 99
- phase transformation in, 9:560, 568–573
- physical properties, 10:701, 702
- plastic lumber, 10:722
- polyphosphazenes, 11:102
- polysulfones, 11:198, 199
- radiation, effects of, 11:483
- sample preparation for polymer characterization, 2:733
- scratch behavior, 12:333
- segment-segment interaction parameters (table), 8:545
- in situ* synthesis of, 4:54, 55
- thermochromic, 14:39
- thermodynamics of, 8:536–538
- vibrational spectroscopy, 14:598, 599
- vinyl acetate polymers, 14:671
- Polymer brushes, 10:732–755
- applications of, 10:746–755
- characterization of, 10:734, 735
- classification of, 10:735
- definition and general features of, 10:732–734
- homopolymer, 10:735
- mixed homopolymer, 10:735
- random copolymer, 10:735
- synthesis of, 10:735–746
- Polymer burning, phenomenology, 6:42
- Polymer-chain conformation, 8:512, 523
- Polymer chain segment, 8:523
- Polymer chain, stereoerrors, 13:92
- Polymer chains, 15:101
- with bond-angle restrictions, 4:648–650
- with bond-angle restrictions and hindered rotations, 4:650
- coarse-grained models of, 15:128
- dynamics in entangled solution, 15:103, 104
- end-to-end dimensions of, 4:646–651
- equation of state for single, 4:650, 651
- freely jointed, 4:646–648
- single, 12:415
- Polymer characterization. *See* Characterization of polymers
- Polymer chromatography, theory of, 3:97–99. *See also* Chromatography
- Polymer circular dichroism, 5:47–49
- Polymer clathrates, 3:129–131, 135, 136
- of amylose, 3:155–158
- formation of, 3:135, 136
- of poly(2,6-dimethyl-1,4-phenylene ether) (PPO), 3:147, 148
- of poly(ethylene oxide) (PEO), 3:148–152
- of polynorbornene, 3:155
- of polyoxacyclobutane (POCB), 3:153
- of styrene-*p*-methyl styrene co-syndiotactic copolymers, 3:146
- of syndiotactic poly(methyl methacrylate), 3:153–155
- of syndiotactic poly(*m*-methylstyrene) (s-PMMS), 3:146, 147
- of syndiotactic poly(*p*-chlorostyrene), 3:145
- of syndiotactic poly-*p*-fluoro-styrene, 3:146
- of syndiotactic poly(*p*-methylstyrene) (s-PPMS), 3:141–145
- of syndiotactic poly-*p* – *n*-butyl-styrene, 3:145
- of syndiotactic polystyrene (s-PS), 3:136–141
- Polymer coagulation, 8:556–561. *See also* Coagulant; Coagulation
- effect of additives in, 8:560, 561
- skin and finger formation in, 8:558, 559
- solvent-coagulant miscibility in, 8:558, 559
- Polymer colloids. *See* Colloids
- Polymer composites, wear, 13:520–522
- Polymer cores, of dendronized polymers. *See also* Backbone
- Polymer crystal, melting enthalpy, 14:254
- Polymer decomposition, by main chain scission, 6:70, 71
- Polymer degradation. *See* Degradation
- Polymer density
- at room temperature, 6:53–55
- temperature dependence, 6:51, 56
- Polymer-dispersed liquid crystal (PDLC)
- photorefractives, 9:761
- Polymer-dispersed liquid crystal composites (PDLCCs), 9:766
- Polymer dispersions, 6:585, 587. *See also* Colloids; Heterophase polymerization
- attractive forces, 6:641–644
- charge stabilization, 6:645, 646
- depletion interactions, 6:649, 650
- economic importance, 6:584–588
- electrostatic/steric stabilization, 6:650–652
- high solids, 6:630, 631
- hybrid, 6:671
- in inorganic-reinforced styrene polymers, 13:205, 206
- optimum stabilization, 6:652
- perikinetic and orthokinetic flocculation, 6:646, 648
- of pigment, 3:468
- repulsive forces, 6:644, 645
- in size exclusion chromatography, 3:104
- stabilization by tethered polymers, 6:648, 649
- Polymer electrolyte membrane (PEM), 7:212
- Polymer electrolyte membrane fuel cells (PEMFCs), 12:108
- Polymer-embedded nanostructures, 8:749
- Polymer embrittlement, 5:701–703
- Polymer films, 9:471. *See* Films
- casting of, 5:839
- crosslinking of, 5:186
- Polymer films, water diffusion, 14:400, 401
- diffusion experiment on ATR-FTIR with ATR (ZnSe)
- Polymer flammability regulations, 6:34
- Polymer flow. *See also* Flow rate
- Polymer fractionation, 5:576. *See also* Fractionation
- Polymer-fullerene bulk heterojunction solar cells, 12:641
- Polymer-fullerene composite solar cells, nanomorphology, 12:642
- Polymer glasses, properties of, 14:256–259
- Polymer Handbook*, 1:160
- Polymer heat capacity
- at room temperature, 6:53, 54, 55
- temperature dependence, 6:51, 56
- Polymer heat release capacities, values, calculated vs. measured, 6:78
- Polymer-impregnated concrete (PIC), 2:710
- benefits of, 2:712
- monomers used in, 2:711

- properties, 2:711, 712
radiation-induced polymerization, 2:711
steps in manufacture of, 2:711
thermocatalytic polymerization, 2:711
- Polymer inclusion membranes (PIMs), 4:201, 202
- Polymer intercalates, 3:129–131, 159–166
of PEO, 3:160–163
of PSA and PMA, 3:164–166
of s-PS, 3:159, 160
- Polymer lamellae, 8:705–718
chainfolded lamellae from solution, 8:706–711
inference of chainfolding, 8:705
melt-crystallized lamellae, 8:711–718
- Polymer-layered silicate nanocomposites, 8:768–773
- Polymer-layered silicate, 8:768–773
- Polymer LEDs (PLEDs), 7:508. *See also* Light-emitting diodes (LEDs)
- Polymer ligands (SL3-SL6), 8:450
- Polymer linear dichroism, 5:47–49
- Polymer-matrix composites (PMC), 9:101
fiber optics, 9:113
NDT of polymers, 9:113
piezoelectric fibers, 9:113
PMC, 9:113
- Polymer matrix shrinkage, 3:654
- Polymer melts
constitutive description of behavior, 15:111–145
entangled, 15:106–110. *See also* Melt
- Polymer melts, viscosity, 5:152
- Polymer membranes, 5:826
applications, 5:826
phase separation, 5:839
- Polymer microgel
for catalysis, 8:439–464
catalyst interchange, 8:444
design of, 8:440
general aspects of, 8:440–442
- Polymer microspheres
controlled drug release technology, 3:745–747
- Polymer microstructure, 8:525
- Polymer molecules, 8:511, 513
amorphous and semicrystalline polymers, chain conformations, 8:523, 524
average structures of, 8:513
chirality, 8:514, 515
molecular weight and end groups, 8:522, 523
repeat unit structures, 8:514
sequence distributions, 8:516, 517
topology, 8:513, 514
measurements, 8:522, 523
- Polymer nanocomposite, electrospinning, 13:424
- Polymer networks
biodegradable, 12:418
interpenetrating, 7:110–144
molecularly imprinted polymers, 8:687–689
shape-memory polymers as, 12:410–413
unoriented, 8:549
- Polymer networks, GTP, 6:540
- Polymer-organoclay nanocomposites, 8:773–775
emulsion polymerization, 8:774, 775
in situ polymerization, 8:773, 774
intercalation in solution, 8:773
melt intercalation, 8:775
- Polymer-peptide hybrids, 11:434
- Polymer-polymer incompatibility, 8:380
- Polymer-polymer phase separation, 8:392
- Polymer polyols, 11:221
- Polymer portland cement concrete (PPCC), 2:710
production of, 2:712
properties of, 2:712
- Polymer precipitation, 7:752. *See also* Precipitation polymerization
by cooling, 7:753, 754
by immersion in nonsolvent bath, 7:756–760
by solvent evaporation, 7:754, 755
by water vapor imbibition, 7:755, 756
- Polymer processing/properties modeling, 8:548–570.
See also Polymer properties
polymer coagulation and, 8:556–561
polymer drawing and, 8:548–550
polymer quenching and, 8:561, 562
thermally bonded nonwovens and, 8:566–570
- Polymer prodrugs, 3:752, 753
- Polymer properties, 4:114–129
elastic properties, 4:118, 119
fatigue, 4:123
low temperature ductility, 4:119–121
mechanical and dielectric loss, 4:116–118
radiation damage, 4:128, 129
specific heat, 4:123–125
strain-rate dependence, 4:121, 122
stress concentration factor and fracture energy, 4:122, 123
thermal conductivity, 4:127, 128
thermal diffusivity, 4:128
thermal expansion and Grüneisen parameter, 4:125–127
ultimate stress and strain, 4:119
- Polymer-protein conjugates, applications, 11:435–441
biomaterials and tissue engineering, 11:436, 437
drug delivery systems, 11:435
- Polymer quench, 8:561, 562
- Polymer reactive extrusion, selected US Patents (table), 11:640–644
- Polymer reference interaction site model (PRISM), 9:572
- Polymer-related reactions, 2DCOS analysis, 14:404–406
- Polymer repeated unit, topology of, 6:68
- Polymer-SCF mixtures, thermodynamic behavior, 13:373
enthalpic effect, 13:373
lower critical solution temperature (LCST), 13:374
U-LCST behavior, 13:374
U-LCST curve, 13:374, 375
upper critical solution temperature (UCST), 13:374
- Polymer-SCF mixtures, thermodynamic modelling, 13:375–377
Flory-Huggins interaction parameter, 13:376
perturbed-chain SAFT (PC-SAFT) model, 13:376, 377
perturbed hard-sphere chain theory (PHSC), 13:376
Sanchez-Lacombe EOS/Panayiotou-Vera EOS, 13:376
Simha-Somcynsky EOS, 13:376
statistical associated fluid theory (SAFT) model, 13:376
equation of state (EOS) models, 13:375
- Polymer scission. *See* Chain scission
- Polymer shell-liquid core microparticles, 8:417
- Polymer single crystals, 12:383–392

- Polymer solar cells, using organometallic polyynes in construction, 12:645
- Polymer solubility, 12:733
- Polymer solution film, water vapor exposure, 5:839
- Polymer solutions. *See also* Solution polymerization; Solutions
- extensional thickening of, 3:296
 - optical heterogeneity, 7:287
 - phase transformation in, 9:568–573
- Polymer-solvent phase equilibria, 8:562
- Polymer spherulites, 8:718–726
- banded spherulites, 8:723–725
 - deformation of, 8:729
 - growth of, 8:720, 721
 - immature, 8:729
 - lamellar texture of, 8:720
 - monodisperse long *n*-alkanes, 8:722, 723
- Polymer stabilization. *See* Stabilization
- Polymer stereochemistry, 2:729, 730
- Polymer stretch ratios, 2:254
- Polymer structure. *See also* Morphology
- effect of solvent-coagulant miscibility on, 8:560
 - effect on biodegradation, 2:100–102
 - essential elements of, 6:320–323
- Polymer structures, 8:274
- Polymer-supported cyclization, 7:678
- Polymer-supported reagents, 11:17–42
- alternative cross-linkers for polystyrene-based resins, 11:29–32
 - alternative formats for polystyrene supports, 11:33–37
 - nonpolystyrene matrices, 11:37–42
 - PEG-grafted resins, 11:25–29
 - styrene-DVD-based resins, 11:17–25
- Polymer surface, glass transition, 14:284
- surface-tension-induced stress, 14:284
- Polymer surfaces
- chemical modification, 13:549–554
 - chemical redox reactions, 13:554, 555
 - electrochemical redox reactions, 13:555–557
 - FEP copolymer film, photolysis by VUV radiation, 13:558
 - highly porous poly(styrene/divinylbenzene), monolithic samples of, 13:557, 558
 - layer-by-layer coating, 13:561–563
 - ozone treatment, 13:550–554
 - photochemical reactions, 13:558–561
 - PTFE films, sulfonation of, 13:557
 - sulfonated poly(ether ether ketone) (SPEEK) membranes, 13:558
 - surface physical structures, 13:563
 - surface-modified PET substrates, 13:562
- Polymer surfaces, heterogeneous. *See also* Surface
- Polymer suspension, 6:583
- Polymer synthesis, 8:149
- Polymer systems, 12:409, 410
- Polymer thermal conductivity
- at room temperature, 6:53–55
 - temperature dependence, 6:51, 56
- Polymer thin layers, glass transition, 14:284
- Polymer viscoelasticity. *See* Viscoelastic behavior
- Polymer-water interactions, 8:21
- Polymer *in situ* gels, 3:747
- Polymer/fullerene BHJ solar cells, 12:646
- Polymer/fullerene blend BHJ solar cells, 12:648
- Polymercaptans
- in adhesives, 1:417
 - advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 - curing agents, 5:337
 - curing agents for epoxies, 5:356, 357
- Polymeric brush, methods to obtain, 1:735
- Polymeric composites, 4:129–137
- bending strength, 4:134
 - elastic moduli, ultimate stress, and strain, 4:129–134
 - fatigue, 4:134, 135
 - interlaminar shear strength, 4:134
 - rate dependence of ultimate tensile strain, 4:134
 - thermal conductivity, 4:135–137
 - thermal contraction, 4:135
- Polymeric dense membranes, 8:19
- Polymeric diisocyanate (PMDI)
- polymerization, 7:255
- Polymeric drag reduction, 4:550–555
- Polymeric drugs, 10:762–782
- Polymeric electrooptic materials. *See also* Electrooptic; Polymeric organic electrooptic materials
- Polymeric foams. *See* Cellular materials; Foamed polymers
- Polymeric gas separation membranes, 5:827, 828, 836, 850
- Polymeric interphase. *See* Interphase
- Polymeric ion exchange resin, 7:168
- Polymeric materials, 6:87, 11:446
- Polymeric materials, thermal properties, 14:1–36
- experimental techniques, 14:7, 8
 - unidirectional heat flow patterns, 14:9, 10
 - specimen-plate contact, 14:11
 - modified hot-plate design, 14:13, 14
 - specimen-primary heater-specimen sandwich, 14:13
 - biguarded hot-plate method, 14:14
 - guarded heat-flow-meter method, 14:14, 15
 - radial-heat-flow Method, 14:15, 16
 - line-source (or hot-wire) method, 14:16, 17
 - transient-heat-flow methods, 14:16–18
 - plane-source method, 14:17, 18
 - experimental considerations, 14:9–12
 - guarded hot-plate method, 14:12–14
 - flat-plate methods, 14:12–15
- Polymeric materials, weathering of, 15:243–277
- accelerated weathering exposures, 15:253
 - acceleration factor*, 15:272, 273
 - atmospheric pollutants, 15:250
 - black-box exposures, 15:253
 - black-box under-glass exposures, 15:253, 254
 - broadband control[®], 15:258
 - carbon arcs, 15:264
 - correlation, 15:271, 272
 - destructive effect of, 15:243
 - durations of exposure, 15:274, 275
 - dynamic exposures, 15:252, 253
 - evaluations of weathering, 15:275
 - factors and effect on polymeric materials, 15:243, 244
 - fluorescent ultraviolet devices, 15:261, 262
 - introduction, 15:243
 - irradiance, 15:267

- laboratory-accelerated versus natural weathering, 15:265
- laboratory-accelerated weathering devices, 15:256
- moisture, 15:269
- open-flame carbon arc device, 15:264, 265
- outdoor weathering tests, 15:250
- service life predictions, 15:275, 276
- sources, 15:266, 267
- static exposures, 15:251
- temperature, 15:268, 269
- timing of exposures, 15:255
- uv portion of, 15:245
- weathering reference material (WRM), 15:255
- xenon arc devices, 15:257, 258
- Polymeric membranes, morphology, 5:827
- Polymeric membranes, 8:2, 27, 31
- Polymeric micelles, 8:272–295
 - applications, 8:287–291
 - characterization, 8:294
 - classification of, 8:279, 280
 - diblock copolymer core-shell morphology, 8:279
 - factors mediating the morphology, 8:280, 281
 - functionalization of, 8:278, 279
 - hydrophilic/hydrophobic ratio, 8:282
 - nanoreactors, 8:291–294
 - poly(4-vinylpyridine) (PVPy), 8:276
 - problems and challenge, 8:294
 - stabilization of, 8:276–278
 - summary and prospective, 8:294, 295
 - thermodynamic stability of, 8:277
- Polymeric microcapsules, 8:404, 417
- Polymeric organic electrooptic materials. *See also* Polymeric electrooptic materials
- Polymeric phosphines, 9:663
- Polymeric phosphonates, condensation polymerization routes, 9:668–670. *See also* Phosphonate
- Polymeric phthalocyanine azo dyes, 4:590
- Polymeric stabilizers, 5:175
- Polymeric vat dyes, 4:589, 590
- Polymeric vesicles, 8:273
- Polymerizable dyes, 4:585–591
 - acrylated azo dyes, 4:586, 587
 - anthraquinone derivative-vinyl monomer condensation products, 4:586
 - anthraquinone-glycidyl methacrylate systems, 4:585, 586
 - azo dye-glycidyl methacrylate systems, 4:587, 588
 - coordination macromolecular dyes, 4:590, 591
 - interfacial polycondensation, 4:588
 - novel polyviologens, 4:588, 589
 - polymeric phthalocyanines, 4:590
 - polymeric vat dyes, 4:589, 590
 - poly(vinylamine)-eosin system, 4:590
 - reactive vinyl sulfonyl dyes, 4:586
 - vinylanthraquinone chromophores, 4:587
 - vinyl basic dyes, 4:587
- Polymerizable ionic liquids, Single-ion conductive membrane material, 7:204
- Polymerizable photoinitiators, 9:726, 727
- Polymerization, 10:404, 11:730
 - of ABS polymers, 1:321–328
 - of acrolein, 1:110, 111
 - of acrylic elastomers, 1:177–179
 - block copolymers, synthesis and morphology of, 10:405–407
 - of butene polymers, 2:340–342
 - controlled molecular weight, 10:403–405
 - emulsion, 14:774
 - of formaldehyde, 1:4
 - graft, 14:775
 - hyperbranched polymer (HPB), controlled degree of branch, 10:407–413
 - molecular weight and equilibrium, 10:400
 - molecular weight and reactivity, 10:399, 400
 - molecular weight control, 10:400, 401
 - molecular weight distribution, 10:401, 402
 - P3HT, phase-separated domains of, 10:407
 - and polymer characterization, 2:732
 - radiation-induced, 14:775
 - of trioxane, 1:4, 5
- Polymerization inhibitors, 1:159
- Polymerization of, 10:403
- Polymerization processes, 14:414
- Polymerization reactions, 8:317, 404
- Polymerization reactions, classification of, 3:124–127
 - by mechanism of polymerization, 3:125, 126
 - by medium of reaction, 3:126
 - by method of initiation, 3:126
 - by nature of propagating species, 3:126
 - by nature of reactants, 3:127
 - by stoichiometry, 3:125
 - by structure of product, 3:127
- Polymerization section of cold SBR production, 13:272–275
- Polymerization variables, effect of, 14:776
- Polymerization, ethylenesulfonic acid, 5:613, 614
- Polymerization, interfacial, 8:380–382
- Polymerization, ionic liquids, 7:196
- Polymerization, stereoselectivity, 13:89, 90
- Polymerized vesicles, mono-methacryloyl lipids, 14:544
- Polymermolecules, 8:511
- Polymers, 6:34, 8:331, 340, 511, 13:561
 - chemical structures of, 8:7
 - functional end groups, 8:170
 - physicochemical properties of, 8:29
 - synthesized via ROMP, 8:186, 187
 - average heat release capacity, 6:77
 - burning process, 6:36–53
 - char mass fraction vs. hydrogen mole fraction, 6:49
 - char yield, 6:51–53
 - continuum level treatment, 6:53
 - decomposition, 6:71
 - dissociation enthalpy, 6:50
 - enthalpy of gasification, 6:51–53
 - fire & flammability tests, 6:87
 - fire behavior, 6:53, 56
 - flaming combustion efficiency, 6:62, 63
 - fractal models, 6:218
 - heat transport, 6:69
 - hexafluoroacetone, 6:156
 - HOC, 6:62, 63
 - HRP, 6:61
 - HRR histories, 6:63, 65
 - HRR vs. HRC, 6:77
 - HRR, 6:64, 65
 - ignition temperature, 6:59

- incident heat flux, 6:84
individual molar decomposition functions, 6:74
latent heat of gastification, 6:51–53
molar HRC, 6:77
net heats of combustion, 6:70
parameters, 5:184
properties, 5:614, 615
SEA, 6:81, 82
smoke production tendency, 6:83
surface absorptivity, 6:54, 56
temperature dynamics, 6:44
thermal decomposition temperature, 6:72
thermal degradation of, 6:37, 70
thermal properties, 6:54, 69
thermal stability, 6:73
volatile fuel generation, 6:46
weight loss, 6:73
- Polymers of intrinsic microporosity, 11:1–14
adsorption, 11:11, 12
gas separation membranes, 11:9–11
heterogeneous catalysis, 11:12, 13
hydrogen storage, 11:13, 14
processability, 11:8
properties, 11:4–9
structural and chemical diversity, 11:9
synthesis, 11:4
thermal and chemical stability, 11:8, 9
“ultraparpermeable” glassy polymers, 11:10
- Polymers under largescale deformations, fracture (qv)
behaviour, 13:843
- Polymers, defined, 9:101
- Polymers, hydrohalogenation, Markovnikov’s rule,
7:292
- Polymers, plasma etching of, 10:30–34
highest occupied molecular orbital (HOMO), 10:32
HOMO-LUMO gap, 10:31
lowest unoccupied molecular orbital (LUMO), 10:32
- Polymers, plasma treatment of, 10:27–30
chemical functionalization, 10:27, 28
cross-linking via activated species of inert gases,
10:27
metal-polymer adhesion, 10:27, 28
modified wettability, 10:30
nitrogen-containing moieties, grafting of, 10:29
plasma-treated PI, 10:28
surface cleaning, 10:27
etching, 10:27
- Polymers, solubility of, 12:732–763
co-non-solvency, 12:753
co-solvency, 12:753
experimental methods, 12:742, 743
Flory-Huggins interaction parameter, 12:749–751
Flory-Huggins Theory, 12:746–749
flow influences, 12:744, 745
hypothetically molecularly disperse mixture, 12:741
liquid/liquid equilibria, 12:743–745
liquid/solid equilibria, 12:745, 746
molar quantities, 12:734
molecularly disperse mixture, 12:735
phenomenological thermodynamics, 12:734–742
pressure influences, 12:744
segment molar quantities, 12:734
solubility parameter theory, 12:748, 749
solvents/non-solvents (table), 12:736–740
- Polymers, stereoregularity of
brittle fracture, cause of, 13:843, 844
controlling mechanism, 13:89, 90
ceiling temperature, 11:488
DSC applications, 13:799, 800
irradiation temperature, influence of, 11:485–488
lubrication effects, 13:517–520
oxygen effects, 11:483–485
secondary transitions, 11:486
s-PMMA, 11:486
tacticity and properties, 13:653
TGA/DTGA applications, 13:816–821
- Polymersomes, 2:125–129, 8:419, 12:618, 14:511
dimension of, 2:125
fluorescently labeled vesicles, 14:548
interdigitation, 2:127
programmable disassembly of, 2:127, 128
- Polymetallaynes, 7:63
physical properties of, 7:64
rhodium-containing, 7:64
- Polymetallorotaxanes, 11:138
thermodynamic properties, 14:68
- Polymethacrylates, radiation chemistry, 11:465–470
- Polymethacrylates. *See also* Methacrylic ester polymers
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Polymethacrylonitrile
monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
- Polymethyl methacrylate (PMMA), 1:798
- Polymethylene
Fermi resonance interactions, 14:593, 594
flexible, 7:570
modeling parameterizations, 8:580
- Polymorphism
polypropylene, 11:354–357
- Polymorphonuclear (PMN) cells, 2:149
- Polynorborene, 3:155
for rubber compounding, 12:205
shape-memory properties of, 12:417
tacticity, 8:163
- Polynorborene-block-polyethylene-synthesis, 8:179
- Polynorborene-*b*-polyvinylalcohol, 8:179
- Polynorborene-*g*-polyphosphazene, 8:182
- Polynosic rayons, 2:685, 686
- Polynucleotides. *See also* DNA; Nucleic acids; RNA
water-soluble polymers, 15:181–185
- Polyolefin block copolymers, 14:135
applications, 14:155
commercial production, 14:147
- Polyolefin dust, 5:534
- Polyolefin fibers. *See* Olefin fibers
- Polyolefin modifications, comonomers and initiators
(table), 11:638
- Polyolefins, 1:793–797, 11:306, 15:249
- Polyolefins, cellular, 2:511
commercial products and processes, 2:557, 558
decompression expansion processes, 2:520, 521
- Polyolefins, reaction extrusion (REX), 11:636–639
- Polyolefins. *See also* Polyethylene (PE); Polypropylene (PP)
antioxidant applications, 1:703, 704, 710
blends with thermoplastic elastomers, 14:137
degradation processes in landfills, 4:240, 244–246
environmentally degradable plastics, 2:76, 77
film properties, 5:806

- hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
 metallocene-based graft and block copolymerization
 with non-olefins, 8:131, 132
 mixed waste streams, 11:668
 moderate barrier polymers, 2:46, 47
 oxidative degradation, 4:279, 280
 photodegradation, 4:284
 photo-oxidation photoinitiators, 13:9, 10
 in surface treatment, 1:374–376
 thermal degradation of, 13:6–9
 thermoforming, 14:130
 vulnerability to oxidation, 4:251
- Polyols, 11:216, 217, 321–335
 acrylic, 11:225
 catalyst, removal of, 11:330
 hydroxyl number determination, 11:329
 KOH-catalyzed bulk polymerization, 11:321
 manufacture of, 11:321–328
 natural oil, 11:226
 process, 11:328–330
 properties, 11:330–336
 polycarbonate, 11:224, 225
 polyesters, 11:222–224
 polyether, 11:217–222
 in stabilizer formulation, 6:577
 stabilization, 11:330
 unsaturation value determination, 11:329, 330
- Polyorganosiloxanes, 1:666
- Polyoxacyclobutane (POCB), 3:153
- Polyoxazoline polymer brushes, 10:748
- Polyoxides
 single crystals, 12:384
- Polyoxothiazenes, 7:49, 50
- Polyoxyethylene, 2:200, 201
 dielectric properties, 4:480
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Polyoxymethylene (POM), 1:1. *See also* Acetal resins
 dielectric properties, 4:480
 elastic constants, 1:90
 film properties, 5:806
 hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
 impact strength *vs.* notch tip radius, 6:818
 longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:583, 585
 radiation chemistry, 11:462
 semicrystalline, 12:391
 single crystals, 12:387
 sound speeds, 1:86
 thermal degradation, 4:256
 thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- Polyoxyphenylenes, 10:572
- Polypentadecanolactone
 thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Polypeptide-based block copolymers, 2:170, 171
- Polypeptide synthesis, ring opening polymerization,
 11:47–59
- Polypeptide synthesis, solid-phase method, 11:61–90
 procedures, 11:80–89
- Polypeptides
 naturally occurring biodegradable, 2:112
 vibrational spectroscopy, 14:618, 619
 water-soluble polymers, 15:185–188
- Polyphenol, 5:264
 cellular expandable formulations, 2:519
 polymerization of, 5:270–273
- Polyphenylene ether. *See* Polyether
- Polyphenylene vinylene (PPV), 8:167
- Polyphenylquinoxaline
 elastic constants, 1:90
 sound absorption, 1:89
 temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
- Polyphenylsulfone (PPSF). *See also* Polysulfone (PSF)
 annealing of, 11:197
 blends and alloys of, 11:198, 199
 chemical structure of, 11:180
 electrical properties of, 11:193
 flame resistance of, 11:191
 physical and mechanical properties of, 11:192
 polymerization, 11:183–185
 properties of, 11:187, 188
 resistance to chemical environments, 11:194
 room-temperature mechanical properties of, 11:190
 uses of, 11:200
- Polyphenylvinylene (PPV), 9:760
- Polyphosphate ester
 biodegradable, 2:104
- Polyphosphates, 5:263
- Polyphosphazenes, 7:33–39, 11:97–111
 applications, 7:38, 39, 11:105–109
 biodegradable, 2:104, 109
 blends, 11:102
 condensation polymerization, 7:36–38, 11:100, 101
 copolymers, 11:101, 102
 cross-linked, 11:102–104
 cyclopolyphosphazenes, 11:110
 functional, 11:103, 104
 homopolymers, 11:101
 hybrid, 11:109, 110
 properties, 7:35, 11:104, 105
 ring-opening polymerization, 7:34, 36, 11:98, 99
 scaffold for tissue engineering, 14:218
 synthesis, 11:98–101
 for tissue engineering, 14:221
 toxicity and biocompatibility, 2:113
- Poly(pivalolactone-polyisoprene-poly(pivalolactone) block
 copolymers, 7:322
- Polyplatinynes, 7:65
- Polypropylene (PP)
 cross-linking of, 4:93–95
 radiation route, 4:94
 silane cross-linking route, 4:94
 crystallization of, 2:337
- Polypropylene (PP). *See also* Atactic polypropylene;
 Isotactic polypropylene (iPP); Metallocenes;
 Propylene polymers; Syndiotactic polypropylene
 (sPP)
 AFM imaging of, 1:766–768
 antioxidant applications, 1:703, 704
 antioxidants and, 13:1
 blends with poly(ethylene oxide), 5:450
 blends with styrenic thermoplastic elastomers,
 14:152–154
 blends with thermoplastic elastomers, 14:137, 142,
 156
 commercial overview of metallocene-based, 8:139
 degradation processes in landfills, 4:244, 245
 dielectric properties, 4:479
 elastic constants, 1:89
 fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:726

- film extrusion, 5:805
 film properties, 5:806
 film stretching, 10:79
 frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:92
 Hamaker constant, 6:644
 heterogeneous oxidation, 4:278
 impact resistance improvement, 6:831
 incipient crack characteristics, 5:712
 in interpenetrating network, 7:143
 inversion, 7:473
 irradiation degradation, 4:289
 lignin filler, 2:94
 long-term stabilization of, 13:28
 melt-crystallized, 6:321
 melting temperature, 10:69
 melt stabilization of, 13:21, 22
 moderate barrier polymer, 2:46, 47
 monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
 multilayer barrier structures, 2:51, 52
 NEXAFS spectra, 15:371
 in nitrile rubber copolymer, 1:370, 371
 normal vibrations, 14:569
 oxidative degradation, 4:272, 273, 285
 PHAs contrasted (table), 10:99
 phase morphology of, 6:297
 phosphite esters and, 13:27
 photodegradation, 4:284
 photo-oxidation of, 13:10
 properties of barrier, 2:34
 properties of filled homopolymer, 11:369
 properties of impact copolymers, 11:367
 properties of random copolymers, 11:366
 recycling, 11:657–675
 sound speeds, 1:86
 synthesis by metallocene-based polymerization, 8:81–139, 135–140
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:509–518
 temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
 thermal degradation of, 13:6
 thermodynamic properties, 14:65
 thermoforming, 14:121, 124
 UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- Polypropylene**, 5:681
Polypropylene copolymer
 burst hoop stress *vs.* time for, 2:340
Polypropylene fibers, 9:345
 bicomponent, 9:360, 361
 mechanical properties, 9:216
Polypropylene film membrane, 7:751
Polypropylene randomly modified with ethylene, 11:354
Polypropylene resin
 processing, 10:68
Polypropylene, cellular
 commercial products and processes, 2:558
 decompression expansion processes, 2:520
 physical properties of commercial, 2:528, 529
Polypropylene-*g*-polystyrene copolymers synthesis, 6:480, 481
Polypropyleneimine (PPI) dendrimers, 4:300, 302, 311–313. *See also* Dendrimers
Polypropylenes, 8:512
- Polypseudorotaxanes**, 11:120–128
 containing polysebacate backbones and CEs, 11:132
 with polyamines, 11:121, 122
Polypyridyl complexes
 oxidative electropolymerization, 4:793, 794
 reductive electropolymerization, 4:792, 793
Polypyrroles
 chemical structure, properties, and uses of conducting, 5:121
 electropolymerization, 5:125, 126
 synthesis in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:59
 synthesis of electrically active, 4:751, 752
Polyquinolines
 nonlinear optical properties, 9:154
Polyrotaxanes, 11:119–142
 β -CD molecules, 11:130
 γ -CDs, 11:130
 π -conjugated polymers, 11:123–126
 cationic polymers, 11:122
 CD molecular tubes, 11:129
 cyclodextrins, 11:122
 cyclophane/cyclobisparquat, 11:134
 like assembly, 11:133
 metal coordination chemistry, 11:134–138
 polyesters, 11:122, 123
 polyolefins, 11:126, 127
 polypseudorotaxanes with polyesters, 11:122
 preparation by Photoirradiation, 11:129
Polyrotor-axis systems
 CD-based polypseudorotaxanes (table), 11:139
 CD-based polyrotaxanes and polypseudorotaxanes (table), 11:141
 CE- and CP-based polypseudorotaxanes (table), 11:140
 CE-based polyrotaxanes (table), 11:142
Polysaccharide-based interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:137
Polysaccharide vesicles, 14:546
Polysaccharides synthesis, enzymatic polymerization, 5:225–236
 general aspects, 5:225
 natural polysaccharides, 5:226–235
 unnatural polysaccharides, 5:235–237
Polysaccharides. *See also* Cellulose; Chitin; Chitosan
 drag reducers, 4:552
 naturally occurring biodegradable, 2:110–112
 synthesis of, 3:33
 water-soluble polymers, 15:188–197
Polysilanes, 7:39–42, 11:149–163
 carrier mobility and organic photoconductors, 11:161
 conductivity, 11:162, 163
 electroluminescence, 11:161
 functional, 11:157
 hybrid-block copolymer, 11:158, 159
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:131
 photoluminescence, 11:154
 photoreactions, 11:159–161
 synthesis, 11:154–157
 UV absorption and chromotropism, 11:150–154
Polysiloxane-based photorefractive polymers, 9:765
Polysiloxanes, 7:679, 680
 in interpenetrating network, 7:143

- structural representation, 13:173, 175
 synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:626–628
- Polysiloxanes, radiation chemistry, 11:470
- Polysilylenes, 11:149
- Polysoaps, 15:221, 222
- Polyspiroketal, 10:652
- Polystannanes, 7:42–44
- ultraviolet-visible absorption data for, 7:43
- Polystyrene (PS). *See also* Atactic polystyrene (aPS);
 General-purpose PS (GPPS); High impact
 polystyrene (HIPS); Styrene polymers;
 Syndiotactic Polystyrene (sPP); Transparent
 impact polystyrene (TIIPS)
- AFM imaging of, 1:766–768
- aging of, 1:466
- antistatic, 13:188
- blends with DMPPO, 10:582–584
- blends with styrenic thermoplastic elastomers,
 14:152–154
- blends with thermoplastic elastomers, 14:137
- branched, 13:188–193
- chain-transfer constant, 14:667
- commercial manufacture of, 13:179, 180
- commercial overview of metallocene-based, 8:140
- crystallization of, 13:187
- degradation processes in landfills, 4:246
- density of heterogenous polymerized, 6:639
- dependence of viscoelastic behavior on structure,
 1:583, 584
- dielectric properties, 4:479
- elastic constants, 1:89
- extruded rigid foam, 13:254, 255
- fatigue chemistry effect, 5:735, 736
- fatigue crack effect of molecular weight,
 5:726–729
- fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
- fatigue crack speed, 5:724
- fatigue surface finish effect, 5:740
- fatigue thermal history effect, 5:741
- film extrusion, 5:805
- film properties, 5:806
- flash devolatilization application, 6:100
- foamed sheet, 13:258
- fractography, 5:731
- frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:92
- gas diffusion in, 8:305
- general-purpose, 13:186
- glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- global consumption of, 13:250, 251
- Hamaker constant, 6:644
- heterophase polymerization product, 6:585
- high volume commodity polymer, 5:429
- history of, 13:179, 180
- hydrogenated, 13:195
- hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
- ignition-resistant, 13:188
- in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- irradiation degradation, 4:289
- isotactic, 13:187, 188
- limiting oxygen value, 6:713
- manufacture, economic aspects of, 13:249
- mechanical tests on, 13:254
- melt stabilization of, 13:22
- metallocene-based polymerization, 8:129
- miscibility with poly(α -methyl styrene)
- moderate barrier polymer, 2:48, 49
- molecular modeling, 8:584
- monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
- Montmorillonite clay nanocomposite with, 13:206,
 207
- NEXAFS of thin films, 15:384, 389–395
- NEXAFS spectra, 15:368, 373
- NMR spectroscopy, 1:586–588
- oriented film, 13:258, 259
- oxygen permeability and free volume, 2:12
- PEG-grafted resins, 11:25–29
- permeation modeling, 2:30
- photodegradation, 4:283
- photon correlation spectroscopy, 1:586
- photo-oxidation of, 13:10
- physical effect of dispersion, 6:589, 592
- polymerization reactors, 2:284
- properties of, 13:180
- properties of barrier, 2:34
- P-V-T data, 14:79
- Raman spectroscopy, 14:565, 566
- as a raw material for rigid thermoplastic foams,
 13:257
- retardation spectra of narrow molecular weight
 distribution, 1:574, 576, 580
- sound speeds, 1:85
- specialty, 13:186–207
- stability diagram for bulk polymerization, 2:290
- stabilized, 13:188
- stereochemistry of anionic polymerized, 1:638
- strain-energy release rates, 6:824
- strain rate sensitive modulus, 6:813
- sub-Rouse modes, 1:577, 578
- synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:609–620
- synthesis by heterophase polymerization, 6:592, 593,
 597, 601
- synthesis by heterophase polymerization with
 emulsifier, 6:599, 600
- synthesis by nitroxide-mediated polymerization,
 7:651–653
- synthesis by RAFT polymerization, 7:658
- tactic, 13:187
- telechelic polymer, 13:701
- temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
- temperature dependence of viscoelastic behavior,
 1:570, 573
- thermodynamic properties, 14:66
- thermoforming, 14:121, 122
- time to failure under uniaxial stress, 5:710
- transfer-to-polymer constant, 11:541
- tungsten particle reinforced, 3:500
- UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- vibrational spectroscopy of blends with PVME,
 14:598, 599
- volume-temperature cooling curves for different rates
 of cooling, 1:567, 568
- Polystyrene (PSt)-core PNIPAM, 8:453
- Polystyrene
 radiation-induced cross-linking, 11:476
- radiation chemistry, 11:475–477
- Polystyrene beads, 13:253
- Polystyrene-block-polybutadiene-block-polystyrene
 (SBS) triblock copolymer, 12:293

- Polystyrene foams, 13:252–257
 characteristic properties of (table), 13:255
 flame retardants and, 13:257
- Polystyrene ionomers, 7:223–225, 13:186, 187
- Polystyrene macro-RAFT agent, 11:731, 735
- Polystyrene nanoparticles, 11:25
- Polystyrene-poly(acrylic acid)-polystyrene (PS-PAA-PS), 2:173
- Polystyrene-poly(bromo styrene) blends
 NEXAFS of thin films, 15:389–391
- Polystyrene-poly(methyl methacrylate) blends
 NEXAFS of thin films, 15:391, 392
- Polystyrene-poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate) blends
 NEXAFS of thin films, 15:393
- Polystyrene-polyisoprene block copolymers,
 Star-branched polymers, 7:320
- Polystyrene resins
 alternative cross-linkers for polymer-supported reagents, 11:29–32
 alternative formats for polystyrene supports, 11:33–37
 polymer-supported reagents, 11:17–25
 processing, 10:68
- Polystyrene sheet, 13:258–260
- Polystyrene, cellular, 2:511
 commercial products and processes, 2:552–554
 decompression expansion processes, 2:520
 expandable formulations, 2:515, 516
 physical properties of commercial, 2:527, 529
- Polystyrene-*block*-poly(2-vinylpyridine) (PS-*b*-PVP) copolymers, 13:541
- Polystyrene-*block*-polybutadiene-*block*-polystyrene triblock copolymer (SBS), 12:295
- Polystyrene-*b*-poly(methyl methacrylate)
- Polystyrene-*g*-poly(ethylene oxide) (PS-*g*-PEO) graft copolymers, 6:470
- Polystyrene/divinylbenzene (PS/DVB), cross-linked, 3:103. *See also* PS/DVB
- Polystyrene/polyisoprene blend
 intensity correlation functions, 1:552
- Polystyrenes, 9:663
- Polystyryl carbanions, 13:224
- Polysulfates, 13:313, 314
- Polysulfide-based sealants, 11:174, 175
- Polysulfides (PSs), 11:167–178
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 chemical properties of, 11:169–173
 curing agents, 5:337, 356, 357, 11:169–171
 economic aspects of, 11:176
 health and safety of, 11:175, 176
 history of, 11:167, 168
 manufacture and processing of, 11:173–175
 physical properties of, 11:169
 for rubber compounding, 12:205, 216
 specifications and testing for, 11:175
 uses for, 11:176–178
- Polysulfides, 4:386
- Polysulfobetaines, 10:312
- Polysulfonates, 13:312, 313
- Polysulfone (PSF), 8:23, 11:179–202. *See also* Polyphenylsulfone (PPSF)
 amorphous noncrystallizable nature of, 11:188–190
 annealing of, 11:197
 blends and alloys of, 11:198, 199
 chemical structure of, 11:180
 commercially available, 11:189
 commercial suppliers of, 11:201, 202
 elastic constants, 1:89
 electrical properties of, 11:193
 fabrication of, 11:195–198
 fatigue crack propagation, 5:721
 flammability of, 11:191–193
 free volume, 2:10, 11
 frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:92
 glass-transition temperature, 10:69
 health and safety of, 11:199
 hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
 impact resistance improvement, 6:829
 irradiation degradation, 4:290
 limiting oxygen value, 6:713
 mechanical properties of, 11:190, 191
 nomenclature of, 11:180
 photo-oxidation of, 13:10
 physical, chemical, and optical properties of, 11:188–190
 physical and mechanical properties of, 11:192
 polymerization, 11:180–186
 polymerization reactors, 2:284
 post-fabrication operations for, 11:197, 198
 properties of, 11:179, 186–195
 P-V-T data, 14:79
 radiation resistance of, 11:195
 resistance to chemical environments and solubility, 11:193–195
 room-temperature mechanical properties of, 11:190
 sound speeds, 1:82, 85
 stress-cracking and, 11:193, 194
 synthesis routes, 11:180–186
 temperature dependence of sound speed, 1:88
 tensile stress-strain curves for, 11:191
 time-temperature conditions for annealing, 11:197
 types of, 11:179
 uses of, 11:200–202
- Polysulfone resins, 11:201, 202
- Polysulfonium salts, 13:302
- Polysulfoxides, 13:325–328
- Polysulfoximines, 13:341
- Polyterpene resins
 synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:419
- Polytetrafluoroethylene (PTFE), 1:376, 5:203, 9:502–521. *See also* Perfluorinated polymers; PTFE
 impregnated nickel plating; Teflon
 absorption properties of, 9:511, 512
 acoustic properties, 1:76, 77
 applications of, 9:518 (table), 518, 519
 as teflon, 9:502
 classification of, 9:520
 depolymerization of, 9:503
 dielectric properties, 4:479
 dielectric relaxations, 9:509
 discovery of, 9:502
 economic aspects, 9:519
 elastic constants, 1:89
 electrical properties of, 9:513, 514
 fabrication of, 9:514–517

- filled compounds, properties of (table), 9:511
- film properties, 5:806
- fracture energy, 6:824
- frequency derivatives of Young's modulus, 1:91
- granular PTFE, 9:502
- group vibration frequencies (table), 14:72
- health and safety, 9:520, 521
- hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
- interactions of, 9:511, 512
- irradiation degradation, 4:289
- limiting oxygen value, 6:713
- longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:582, 583
- manufacturers of, 9:504–507
- mechanical properties of, 9:508–510
- melting temperature, 10:69
- micropowders (waxes), 9:519
- modeling parameterizations, 8:581
- monomer yield in pyrolysis, 4:259
- NEXAFS spectra, 15:373, 374
- P-V-T data, 14:79
- permeability to vapors (table), 9:513
- permeation of, 9:511, 512
- properties of, 9:503
- radiation, effects of, 9:510, 511
- semicrystalline, 12:372, 400
- SIMS spectra, 13:490
- single crystals, 12:387
- solid-state extrusion, 12:685, 688
- sound speeds, 1:85
- standard specific gravity (SSG), 9:507
- surface arc resistance of, 9:514
- thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- transitions in (table), 9:502
- uses of, 9:503, 504
- vacuum thermal degradation of, 9:510
- Polytetrafluoroethylene films, breakdown voltage of, 4:699
- Polytetrafluoroethylene ionomers, 7:221–223
- Polytetrafluoroethylene resins, applications of, 9:514, 518
- Polytetrafluoroethylene, cellular
- production by sintering, 2:525
- Polytetrahydrofuran (PTHF), 11:225, 226
- Polythiazylphosphazenes, 7:49
- Polythienylenevinylene
- chemical structure, properties, and uses of
- conducting, 5:122
- Polythioester synthesis, by lipase-catalyzed
- polycondensation, 5:261, 262
- Polythionylphosphazenes, 7:48, 49
- Polythiophene, 3:702
- Polythiophene-metal complex hybrid polymers, 7:62
- Polythiophenes, 13:293
- chemical structure, properties, and uses of
- conducting, 5:121
- electrochromic polymers, 4:801–805
- electropolymerization, 5:125, 126
- nonlinear optical properties, 9:155
- synthesis of electrically active, 4:752–755
- thermochromic properties, 14:42
- Polythiophosphazenes, 7:48
- Polytriacylenes, 4:445, 454–456. *See also* Diacetylene polymers; Triacetylene polymers
- preparation of, 4:454, 455
- properties of, 4:454–456
- Polytridecanolactone
- thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- Polytrifluoroethylene
- thermodynamic properties, 14:65
- Polyundecanoamide
- film properties, 5:806
- Polyundecanolactone
- thermodynamic properties, 14:67
- 3-n polyunsaturated fatty acids (PUFAs), 8:395
- Polyureas
- NEXAFS of engineered, 15:397–399, 400
- NEXAFS spectra, 15:368
- piezoelectricity in, 9:786, 787
- Polyurethane adhesives, 1:423
- Polyurethane catalysis, 11:244–246
- Polyurethane-CD polypseudorotaxanes, 11:128
- Polyurethane dispersion resins (PUDs)
- Polyurethane dispersions (PUD), 3:302
- combined aqueous, 3:325
- Polyurethane fibers, 5:768
- Polyurethane film, in transfer coatings, 11:706, 707
- Polyurethane foams
- microcellular, 4:60
- processing, 10:92
- Polyurethane foams, 1:802, 803
- Polyurethane resin, cross-linking of, 4:86–88
- Polyurethane rotaxanes, 11:132
- Polyurethane rubber, in belting, 2:71
- Polyurethane, cellular, 2:511
- commercial products and processes, 2:546–552
- decompression expansion processes, 2:523
- expandable formulations, 2:517–519
- flexible, 2:546–549
- frothing processes, 2:524
- physical properties of commercial, 2:527
- rigid, 2:549–552
- Polyurethane, polybutadiene-based
- sound absorption, 1:88
- sound speeds, 1:85
- Polyurethane, polyether-based
- sound speeds, 1:85
- Polyurethane/elastomer block copolymers, 14:135
- applications, 14:155
- commercial production, 14:147
- Polyurethanes (PU), 11:204–260, 14:169. *See also* Isocyanates, 9:794, 795
- Polyurethanes, automotive, 1:800, 801
- acoustic properties, 1:66, 76, 78
- adhesive and sealant applications, 11:252, 253
- antioxidant applications, 1:712
- application methods and formulations, 11:253–257
- biodegradable, 2:106
- blends with polyphosphazenes, 11:102
- chemistry, 11:204, 205
- coatings applications, 11:252
- current trends in, 11:205
- extensional modulus and loss factor at room temperature, 1:91
- flexible foams, 11:241–252
- for tissue engineering, 14:222

- growth of, *11:204, 205*
health and safety factors, *11:257–260*
hydro-biodegradation, *4:292*
in automotive components, *1:800*
in interpenetrating network, *7:143*
inversion, *7:473*
isocyanates and, *11:205–216*
linear systems and, *11:230–241*
market size, *11:204*
NEXAFS of engineered, *15:397–399*
NEXAFS spectra, *15:368*
photodegradation, *4:282*
polyols in, *11:216–226*
processing of, *1:809, 810*
properties of (table), *1:801*
reaction injection molding, *1:800*
recycling of, *11:257*
RRIM and SRIM, *1:800*
SIMS spectra, *13:490*
sound speed, *1:85*
soy oil derived, *2:89*
structure/property relationships, *11:217–230*
synthesis from isocyanates, *7:253–267*
thermal degradation, *4:260*
thermoplastic polyurethane elastomers, *1:801*
thermosetting powder coatings, *3:237, 246, 247*
toxicity, *11:260*
UV wavelength sensitivity, *14:454*
vibrational spectroscopy, *14:595, 596*
with poly(ϵ -caprolactone) switching segment, *12:416*
with poly(tetrahydrofuran) switching segment, *12:416, 417*
- Polyurethanes, polyethers used in the preparation (table), *11:326, 327*
- Polyvalent ligands, polymeric drugs
- Polyvinyl alcohol (PVOH)–mositure effects, *13:839, 840*
- Polyvinyl chloride (PVC), *5:683*
automobiles, applications in, *5:692*
casting, *5:688*
flexible covering, application in, *5:692*
leather goods, applications in, *5:692*
- Polyvinylamine
water-soluble polymer, *15:212, 213*
- Polyvinylcarbazole (PVK), *9:760*
- Polyvinylenes
nonlinear optical properties, *9:154*
- Polyvinylidenes
NEXAFS spectra, *15:373, 374*
- Polyvinylidene fluoride, semicrystalline, *5:748, 749*
- Polyvinylpyridines
water-soluble polymers, *15:210, 211*
- Polyzwitterions
water-soluble polymer, *15:213–220*
- Poly[1-methoxy-4-(2-ethylhexyloxy)-*p*-phenylenevinylene]
electropolymerization, *5:129, 130*
- Poly[2-(2-ethylhexyloxy)-5-methoxy-*p*-phenylene vinylene] (MEH-PPV)
- Poly[2-(4-*t*-butyl)phenyl-6-phenyl-1,4-phenyleneoxide]
thermal properties, *10:573*
- Poly[methoxyoligo(oxyethylene) methacrylate]
in interpenetrating network, *7:143*
- Pom-pom branched polystyrene, *13:188, 189*
- Poole-Frankel model, *9:755*
- Popcorn polymerization, *9:322*
chloroprene polymers, *3:50*
- Pople basis sets, *3:600*
- Pore structure
cellulose, *2:587, 588*
- Pore transport, in porous membranes, *5:830*
- Porins, OmpF channels, *14:553*
- Porogenic organic solvents, *4:60*
- Porogens, *6:667, 668*
- Poromeric, *7:498*
abrasion resistance, *7:504*
Clarino, *7:498*
DMF-soluble thermoplastic polyurethane, *7:502*
DuPont's Corfam, *7:498*
finishing, *7:503*
islands-in-the-sea fibers, *7:502*
islands-in-the-sea structure, *7:500*
manufacture, *7:500*
nonwoven fabrics, *7:500*
Polyurethane, *7:502*
scratch resistance, *7:504*
Sofrina, *7:498*
Ultasuede, *7:498*
with microporous sponge, *7:502*
- Porosity
colloids, *3:441, 442*
membrane, *7:749, 750*
- Porous polyHIPE membranes, *10:603*
- Porous polymer synthesis, in supercritical carbon dioxide, *4:59, 60*
- Porous scaffold polymers, *14:217–222*
- Porphyrin dendrimer, *4:332*
- Portable particle sizer, *7:454*
- Position-sensitive detector (PSD), *7:451, 452*
- Positive forming, *14:112*
- Positive half RF cycle, *10:3*
- Positive tone aqueous developable materials, *5:80*
- Positron annihilation lifetime spectroscopy (PALS), *2:752*
amorphous polymers, *1:588*
for thermal analysis, *13:769*
for transport property studies, *14:368–371*
- Positron annihilation lifetime spectroscopy, *11:267*
- multichannel analyzer (MCA), *11:270*
photomultiplier tubes (PM), *11:269*
structural properties, *11:275, 276*
time-to-amplitude converter (TAC), *11:270*
- Positron annihilation spectroscopy, *11:266–281*
age-momentum correlation (AMOC), *11:273*
angular correlation of annihilation radiation, (ACAR), *11:272, 273*
annihilating electron-positron, *11:272*
as a chemical probe for polymers, *11:278, 279*
free volume and polymer dynamics, *11:276–278*
fundamentals, *11:267–269*
- Positrons, annihilation of, *11:266*
- Post consumer reclaim, *5:641*
- Post-consumer waste, *11:660*
- Post-die processing of engineering thermoplastics, *5:212*
- Post-draw heatsetting, *10:532*
- Post-fabrication operations, for polysulfones, *11:197, 198*
- Post-industrial waste, *11:660*

- Post-polymerization reactor branching, 13:192
- Post-processing assembly of ethylene-norbornene copolymers, 5:588
- Post reactor process, for LDPE, 5:520, 521
- Post-spinning processes, 10:223
- Post-SSP, 12:705–712
- by-product diffusion rate-controlling parameters, 12:712
 - catalysts' performance, 12:709
- Post-treated polymers, 9:92, 93
- Post-yield behavior of solid-like polymers, 15:146
- Postcuring
- of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:171
- Postexposure bake (PEB) process, 7:600, 601
- Postive piezoresponse, in FLCs, 5:761
- Postmetallocene-based catalysts, 12:557–559
- cationic late transition metal catalysts, 12:557, 558
 - group 4 postmetallocene catalysts, 12:558, 559
 - neutral late transitionmetal catalysts, 12:557
- Postpolymerization reactions, macromonomers synthesis by, 6:501–503
- Pot-type transfer molding, 3:566, 567. *See also* Compression and transfer molding
- Potable water delivery, polysulfones in, 11:199
- Potassium peroxydisulfate (KPS), 8:441
- Potassium peroxydisulfate (KPS), 9:639
- Potassium titanate
- filler material, 5:785
- Potato chip packaging, 9:475, 476
- Potato chips, 9:475, 476
- Potential energy surface, 3:614
- Potentials of mean force, 8:605
- Potting
- epoxy resin applications, 5:405–407
- Pour-in-place
- rigid polyurethane, 2:551
- Pour test methods
- Powder coating. *See* Coating methods
- Powder coatings, 3:230
- epoxy resins, 5:387–390
 - nylon, 10:290
- Powder injection molding, 7:10
- Powders
- high shear mixing of, 3:492
 - low shear mixing of, 3:492, 493
 - solid-state extrusion, 12:691
- Power compensation DSC, 13:792
- Power conversion efficiencies (PCEs), 12:626, 627
- Power density, 6:40
- Power law LOI, 6:80
- Power loss, 4:678
- Power spectrum, 4:545
- Power transmission belts, 2:68–70
- flat belting, 2:68, 69
 - synchronous belts, 2:69
 - V-belts, 2:69, 70
 - V-ribbed belts, 2:69
- Power ultrasound, 14:414
- Poybutadiene (PB)-rich layer, 12:293
- Poynting effect, 15:114–116
- PP. *See* Polypropylene (PP)
- PPCC. *See* Polymer portland cement concrete (PPCC)
- PPD. *See* *p*-Phenylene diamine (PPD)
- PPDI. *See* *p*-Phenylene diisocyanate (PPDI)
- a-PP/i-PP blend, 13:662
- PPO. *See* Poly(propylene oxide) (PPO)
- (PPO/HIPS), 10:720
- Poly(vinylchloride) (PVC), 10:721
 - polyamides (PA), 10:721
 - polyaniline doped with camphor sulfonic acid (PANI-HCSA)
- PPP. *See* Poly(*p*-phenylene) (PPP)
- PPPs. *See* Poly(*p*-phenylene)s (PPPs)
- PPS composites, 10:136, 137
- Stampable sheet, 10:137
- PPS compression molding, 10:131, 132
- PPS injection-molding
- flexural modulus, 10:129
 - resins, 10:127
- PPS resins
- coatings, 10:136
- PPS-type resins, 10:115
- PPS. *See* Poly(phenylene sulfide) (PPS)
- PPS. *See* Poly(phenylene sulfide), 10:115
- acute toxicity tests, 10:133
 - chemical resistance, 10:118
 - copolymers, 10:134
 - crystallinity, 10:123–125
 - curing changes, 10:116–118
 - economic aspects, 10:132
 - flame-resistance, 10:118, 119
 - free sintering, 10:132
 - general characteristics, 10:118
 - health and safety factors, 10:132–134
 - injection molding, 10:127–131
 - Macallum process, 10:134
 - manufacture and processing, 10:125–132
 - Modified polymers, 10:134, 135
 - Ocher, 10:137
 - Phillips process, 10:134
 - polymer production, 10:125–127
 - properties, 10:116–125
 - pyrolysis, 10:133
 - thermal stability, 10:120
 - uses, 10:136, 137
- PPSF. *See* Polyphenylsulfone (PPSF)
- PPSU, 11:180
- PPTA fibers, 10:228–232
- PPTA films, 10:233
- PPTA. *See* Poly(*p*-phenylene terephthalamide) (PPTA)
- PPV. *See* Poly(*p*-phenylene vinylene) (PPV)
- PPVE copolymers, 4:50
- PPVE. *See* Perfluoropropyl vinyl ether (PPVE)
- PPX. *See* Poly(*p*-xylylene) (PPX)
- Practical adhesion, 1:405
- Prandtl-van Karman law, 4:540
- Pre-crazes, 8:479
- Precipitated calcium carbonate, 5:796
- for rubber compounding, 12:224
- Precipitation fractionation, 6:230–234
- Precipitation polymerization, 3:126, 5:163, 164, 13:604.
- See also* Emulsion polymerization
 - heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
 - heterophase polymerization techniques with continuous fluid phases, 6:619
 - heterophase technique, 6:582
 - in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:50, 51
- Precipitation, affinity. *See also* Polymer precipitation

- Precision multilayer curtain coating, 3:285
Precision nanocavity
 catalysis, 8:461
 molecular imprinting, 8:461
 single-chain folding, 463, 464
Precompounded color, 3:496
Precursor polymers, photosensitive, 5:76
Predicted heat release capacity, of PET, 6:79
Prediction of Polymer Properties, 9:393
Preexpanded beads, 2:516
Prefinished hardwood flooring, 6:125–127
Prefinished parquet flooring, 6:126
Prefoamed beads, 2:516
Preformed titanium tetrachloride-triisobutylaluminum catalyst, 7:301
Preforming, of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:171
Preimidized polyimides, 5:73
Premetered coating processes, 3:268
Preparative-temperature rising elution fractionation (P-TREF), 2:734–736
Prepreg, 3:519
Preshear, 12:34
Pressing
 wool, 15:323, 325
Pressure
 solid-state extrusion, 12:689, 690
 and thermodynamic properties, 14:77–80
Pressure gradient, shear rates and, 5:655
Pressure-sensitive adhesives (PSAs), 11:288–307
 additives to, 11:290, 291
 glass transition temperature of, 11:292
 manufacturing methods, 11:307
 peel adhesion test for, 11:299, 300
 and peel debonding, 11:297, 298
 physical properties, 11:292–299
 and probe debonding, 11:293–297
 release surfaces, 11:290
 rheological tests, 11:300, 301
 shear holding power, 11:300
 specialty materials in, 11:305, 306
 structure, 11:298, 299
 tackifiers and/or plasticizers in, 11:306
 tack test for, 11:300
 tape construction, 11:289–291
 tape types, 11:291, 292
 test methods for, 11:299–301
 types, 11:301–305
Pressure-sensitive adhesives, 1:379, 409–412. *See also*
 Pressure-sensitive adhesives
 silicone applications, 12:465, 504, 506
Pressure-sensitive tapes, 1:404. *See also*
 Pressure-sensitive adhesives
Pressure-volume-temperature (PVT) properties, 13:771
Pretreatment, for fouling prevention, 5:849, 850
Preventive antioxidants, 13:16–18
Prewetting transition, 9:568
Prilled urea, 1:519
Prima, 2:687
PrimaCel, 2:570
Primary amine initiated NCA polymerizations, 11:52
Primary nucleation, 4:185
Primary radical termination, 11:552, 553
Primary radicals, 7:349
Primary recycling technologies, 11:664
Primary relaxations/molecular relaxations, 14:252
Primary volatiles, through thermal degradation, 6:37
Primer coatings, 3:269
Primid, 5:389
Primitive path fluctuations, 15:101
Primitive path, in DE model, 15:131, 132
Principal stresses, 15:458
 difference, 15:112, 113
Print bonding
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:227
Printed wiring boards
 epoxy resin applications, 5:401, 402
Printing
 vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:681
 wool, 15:334–336
Printing inks/toners
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:646
PRISM, 8:602, 623
Pristine P3HT film, 10:407
Probability distributions, for conformation geometry, 3:692–695, 697, 698
Process control
 thermoforming, 14:120
Process models
 composite materials, 3:519–522
 heterophase polymerization, 6:675, 676
Process optimization, for fouling prevention, 5:849, 850
Process zone, 6:301, 316
Processability
 filled polymers, 5:788, 789
Processing aids
 hyperbranched polymers as, 6:794, 795
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756
 rubber compounding, 12:235, 236
 in SBR processing, 13:276, 277
 for tire compounding, 12:256
Processing aids, 1:344, 345, 358–360
 fatty alcohols, 1:358
 fatty amides, 1:358
 fluoropolymers, 1:359
 lubricants, 1:358, 359
 metal stearates, 1:358
 polyethylene and paraffin waxes, 1:358
 slip/antiblock agents, 1:359, 360
Processing aids, in plastics compounding, 3:551
Processing safety, effect of cure system on, 6:169
Processing stability, of ABS polymers, 1:319
Processing stabilizers, 13:26–28
Processing. *See also* Polymer processing/properties
 modeling
 bast fibers, 14:498–504
 chloroprene polymers, 3:63
 composite foams, 3:500–505
 guayule, 12:270–272
 leaf fibers, 14:504–506
 olefin fibers, 9:351–362
 polyamide plastics, 10:286–290
 polyarylates, 10:353
 polysulfides, 11:174, 175
 poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:205–208
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756–758
 preventing residue buildup in, 11:701

- propylene polymers, *11:400–405*
 and scratch behavior, *12:333*
 seed- and fruit-hair fibers, *14:506*
 silk, *12:545–548*
 test methods for assessing, *13:771, 772*
 thermosets, *14:204–210*
 vinyl alcohol polymers, *14:711*
 wool, *15:320–323*
- Produce packaging, *9:474*
- Producer-dyed fiber
 acrylic, *1:249*
- Product stability, polyketone, *10:663*
- Production control programs, *6:85*
- Production-size calendars, *5:687*
- Profile dies, *5:628, 677, 678*
- Profile extrusion lines, *5:640*
- Profile extrusion, *10:76*
- Profiles, nylon, *10:289*
- Programming
 of shape-memory polymers, *12:410–412*
- Projection photolithography, *7:581*
- Proline
 chemical structure, *15:186*
 composition in silk, *12:543*
 percentage composition in merino wool, *15:313*
- Propagation
 butyl rubber synthesis, *2:351*
 carbocationic polymerization, *2:403–406*
 cationic photopolymerization, *9:710–714*
 chain scission with depropagation (thermal degradation), *4:254–258*
 copolymerization, *3:761, 762*
 crazing, *15:487–493*
 free radical photopolymerization, *9:734, 735*
 heterophase polymerization, *6:597, 599, 657*
 latexes, *7:465, 466*
 LDPE, *5:522–524*
 living anionic polymerization, *1:597*
 oxidative degradation, *4:274*
 in polymer oxidation, *13:4*
 in polystyrene production, *13:218*
 radical polymerization, *11:516–521*
 random scission without depropagation (thermal degradation), *4:258–262*
 reaction types, *6:835*
 styrene/diene anionic polymerization, *1:611–617*
 uninhibited autoxidation, *1:687, 688–689*
 vinyl acetate polymerization, *14:666–668*
- Propagation rate constants (*k_p*), for VDC polymer thermal degradation
- Propagation reactions, *13:3, 4*
- Propane
 commercial acrylonitrile from, *1:267*
 propylene manufactured from, *11:349*
- 1,3-Propanediol (PDO) monomer preparation of, *10:199*
- 2-Propanol
 azeotrope with vinyl acetate, *14:654*
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, *5:447*
 transfer coefficient to, *11:530*
- Propene, *10:650*
- Propenoic acid, *1:156*
- Propenyl ethers
 cationic photopolymerization, *9:705, 706*
- Property extenders, *1:350–358*
 aluminum trihydrate, *1:355, 356*
 antimicrobials/biocides, *1:350, 351*
 antimony, *1:355*
 antioxidants, *1:351–353*
 antistats, *1:353, 354*
 brominated hydrocarbons, *1:355*
 chlorinated hydrocarbons, *1:355*
 flame retardants, *1:354, 355*
 heat stabilizers, *1:356*
 lead compounds, *1:356*
 light stabilizers, *1:356–358*
 mixed metal salts (or soaps), *1:356*
 organotins, *1:356*
 phosphate esters, *1:355*
- β -Propiolactone
 anionic polymerization, *1:624*
- Propionaldehyde
 chain-transfer constant, *14:667*
- Proprietary blend formulations, of polysulfones, *11:199*
- Propyl acrylate
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, *6:628*
- Propyl methacrylate
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, *6:628*
- Propylene
 atactic, *12:569*
 ceiling temperature, *4:255*
 elastomeric, *12:574–576*
 entropy, enthalpy, and ceiling temperature for polymerization, *15:420*
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, *5:593–609*
 fluorocarbon copolymer of, *6:162*
 heat and entropy of polymerization, *14:97*
 isotactic, *12:569–573*
 manufacture, *11:348–350*
 maximum impurities for polymerization, *11:349*
 metallocene-based polymerization, *8:81–139, 135–140*
 monomer for rubber compounding, *12:204*
 polymerization of, *12:567–576*
 stereospecific polymerization, metallocene catalysts, *13:95*
 syndiotactic, *12:573, 574*
 terpolymerization with ethylene-styrene, *5:431*
 transportation, storage, and handling, *11:350*
 Ziegler-Natta polymerization, *15:509–518*
- Propylene ammoxidation process, commercial acrylonitrile via, *1:266*
- Propylene by Ziegler-Natta Catalysts
 isospecific polymerization, *13:92, 93*
- Propylene oxide (PO), *11:217, 219, 310–342*
 anionic polymerization, *1:623, 624*
- Propylene oxide (PO), manufacture
 chlorohydrin process, *11:313, 314*
 peroxidation processes, *11:314, 315*
- Propylene polymers, *11:347–405, 401–409*
 catalysts, *11:368–373*
 chemical properties, *11:362–364*
 economic aspects, *11:405–409*
 electron donors, *11:383–388*
 manufacture, *11:395–400*

- metallocenes, 11:388–395
microtacticity considerations, 11:387
molecular structure, 11:350–354
morphology, 11:354–361
physical properties, 11:364–368
polymerization mechanisms, 11:374–379
processing, 11:400–405
stereo- and regioselectivity of monomer insertion, 11:377–379
thermodynamic properties, 11:361, 362
Ziegler-Natta active site models, 11:379–383
- Propylene sulfide
anionic polymerization, 1:624, 625
- Propylene urea resins, 1:534
- Propyltriethoxysilane, 12:189
- Proteases, 5:262
- Protective clothing
high performance fiber applications, 6:724
spunbonded fabric applications, 9:209
- Protein-based adhesives, 1:427, 428
- Protein biosynthesis, 15:187, 188
and template polymerization, 6:381–383, 13:744, 744
- Protein circular dichroism, 5:47–49
- Protein expression, 8:418
- Protein-like polymers, 2:129–131
- Protein-polymer biocomposites, 11:440
- Protein-polymer conjugates, 11:418–441
enzyme-substrate interactions, 11:425
protein structure and function, 11:422, 423
protein structure, 11:423
design of, 11:425
Gibbs free energy ($\Delta G_{\text{imeration}}$), net change, 11:420
protein properties, 11:424, 425
protein, activities of, 11:425
- Protein-polymer covalent conjugates, 11:418
- Protein-polymer hydrogels/"bioscaffolds", 11:432, 433
- Proteins, 11:62
controlled release, 3:754
DNA and, 6:403–407
filler material, 5:785
structure by contrast variation neutron scattering, 9:65, 66
water-soluble polymers, 15:185–188
- Proteomes, 3:99
- Proteomics, 8:573
- Proton (^1H) NMR, 2:737
relaxation time measurements, 2:753
- Proton-exchange membranes
transport properties, 14:367, 368
- Proton sponge effect, 4:311
- Proton-transfer polymerization (PTP), in
hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:789, 790
- Protonolysis, 10:656, 658
- Prussian blue, 3:471
- PS-based polyHIPEs, 10:599, 600, 606, 607
- PS domains, 9:35
- PS-PAA block copolymers, intermediate shapes, 14:520
- PS-PAA-PnBMA. *See* PS-PAA-poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate) (PS-PAA-PnBMA)
- PS-PAA-poly(*n*-butyl methacrylate) (PS-PAA-PnBMA), 2:173
- PS-PAA-PS. *See* Polystyrene-poly(acrylic acid)-polystyrene (PS-PAA-PS)
- PS-PAA vesicles, 14:529
- PS-PB rubber, 13:235–238. *See also* Rubber-modified PS
ternary phase diagram for, 13:236
- PS-PVP0.23 block copolymer, monolayer of- SFM images, 12:303
- a-PS, 13:664–668
- PS-*b*-PDMS. *See* Poly(styrene-*b*-dimethyl siloxane) (PS-*b*-PDMS)
- PS-*g*-poly(methyl methacrylate) (PS-*g*-PMMA) copolymers, 6:470
- PS-*g*-polyisoprene (PS-*g*-PI) graft copolymers, 6:470
- PS. *See* Polystyrene (PS)
- PS/DVB gels, cross-linked, 3:107
- PS/DVB particle technology, 3:112
- PS/EPR blends, 10:696
- PS/ethene-*co*-propene rubber blends (PS/EPR), 10:695, 696
- PSAs. *See* Pressure-sensitive adhesives (PSAs)
- Pseudo-high dilution, 7:689
- Pseudo-interpenetrating polymer networks (IPNs), 8:9
- Pseudomonas fluorescens*, 5:237
- Pseudomonas lemoignei*, 10:103, 104
- Pseudomonas mendocina* (PmC), 5:260
- Pseudomonas oleovorans*, 10:105
- Pseudomonas putida*, 10:109
- Pseudoplastic, 3:445
- Pseudoplastic with yield stress, 3:445
- Pseudostationary polymerization, 11:558–560
chain length distribution, 11:569–573
- PSF. *See* Polysulfone (PSF)
- PSf/poly (ethylene glycol), 8:24
- PSf/zeolite 3A MMM, 8:15
- a-PS/a-PS blend, 13:663, 664
- a-PS/PVME, 13:656
- a-PS/s-PS blend, 13:663
- PSs. *See* Polysulfides (PSs)
- PSSA. *See* Poly(styrene sulfonic acid)
- PSU, 11:180. *See also* Polysulfone (PSF)
- PTFE impregnated nickel plating, 5:646
- PTFE tubes, 8:352
- PTFE, ^{19}F NMR spectra, 11:471
- PTFE, properties of, 6:137
- PTFE. *See* Polytetrafluoroethylene (PTFE)
- PTMSP membranes, 8:21
- PTS. *See* Polyhexadiyne-1,6-diol-bis-*p*-toluene sulfonate (PTS)
- PTT. *See* Poly(trimethylene terephthalate) (PTT)
- PU. *See* Polyurethanes (PU)
- Public fire safety, regulatory compliance, 6:84, 85
- PUD. *See* Polyurethane dispersions (PUD)
- Puddle coater, 3:272
- PUDs. *See* Polyurethane dispersion resins (PUDs)
- Pulforming. *See also* Pultrusion
- Pullout, of inextensible fibers, 1:390, 391
- Pullulan, 2:92, 15:193
biodegradable, 2:105
- Pulp, 10:223
 κ numbers for, 7:532
- Pulping, 2:573, 574
in viscose production, 2:676
- Pulsar mixer, 5:661, 662
- Pulsed electron spin resonance spectroscopy, 5:21–27

- Pulsed ENDOR (electron nuclear double resonance), 5:10
- Pulsed-laser polymerization (PLP), 4:50, 5:172, 7:372–387, 11:583–585
 fundamental concepts, 7:372
- Pulsing nozzles, 15:254
- Pultrusion. *See also* Composites; Extrusion; Fabrication; Pulforming
 composite materials, 3:517
 of polyamide plastics, 10:285
 thermosets, 14:208
 thermosetting resin processing, 10:91
- Pumping/injection systems, in size exclusion chromatography, 3:115, 116
- Pure MDI. *See also* MDI; PMDI
- Pure water permeability, in membranes, 5:842, 843
- Purecal U
 effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
 effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Purification
 peptides from solid-phase synthesis, 11:86
- Purification techniques, 8:1
- Push forming, 14:112
- PVA hydrolysis, 8:26, 27
- PVA-sodium alginate/PSf, 8:27
- PVAc, RAFT polymerization, 11:729
- PVC calendering formulation, 5:683
- PVC films, 9:471
- PVC foam, 13:257
- PVC plastisol formulation, 5:683, 684
- PVC swimming-pool liner, 2:376
- PVC. *See* Flexible PVC; Poly(vinyl chloride) (PVC); Vinyl chloride polymers
- PVC. *See* Polyvinyl chloride (PVC)
- PVDC. *See* Poly(vinylidene chloride) (PVDC)
- PVDCN copolymers, 9:791
- PVDCs. *See* Vinylidene chloride (VDC) polymers
- PVDF alloys, 15:60
- PVDF, properties of, 6:137, 138
- PVDF. *See* Poly(vinylidene fluoride) (PVDF)
- PVF films, 14:765
- PVF. *See* Poly(vinyl fluoride) (PVF); Vinyl fluoride polymers (PVF)
- PVK-C₆₀ star polymer, 6:344, 345
- PVK. *See* Poly(vinylcarbazole) (PVK)
- PVME. *See* Poly(vinyl methyl ether) (PVME)
- PVOH. *See* Poly(vinyl alcohol)
- PX. *See* p-Xylylene
- PxDs. *See* Peroxydienones (PxDs)
- Pycnometry
 for crystallinity determination, 4:159
- Pyramid indenters, 6:556, 557
- Pyramidal indenters, 6:544
- Pyrene
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
- Pyridine
 swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Pyrolytic deposition, graphite in composites from, 11:692, 693
- Pyrolysis
 monomer yields in, 4:259
 for polymer characterization, 2:737, 738
- Pyrolysis black, 2:451
- Pyrolysis-combustion flow calorimetry (PCFC), 6:70, 91
- Pyrolysis gas chromatography (Py-GC)
 forensics applications, 6:179
 paint forensics applications, 6:189
- Pyrolysis-gas chromatography, 4:268, 13:757
 for composition and structure determination, 13:759, 760
- Pyrolysis gas chromatography-mass spectroscopy, 4:268
- Pyrolysis gas chromatography/mass spectrometry (Py-GC/MS)
 forensics applications, 6:179
- Pyrolysis-IR, 13:758
- Pyrolysis mass spectroscopy, 4:268
- Pyrolysis modes, qualitative agreement, 6:71
- Pyrolysis zone. *See* Mesophase
- Pyrroles
 oxidative polymerization, 9:448, 449
 polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:751, 752
- QCI. *See* Quadratic configuration interaction (QCI)
- QCM sensors. *See* Quartz crystal microbalance (QCM) sensors
- Quadratic configuration interaction (QCI), 3:604
- Quadrupole mass spectrometers, 3:92
- Quadrupole moment, of carbon dioxide, 4:48
- Quality control
 from color labs, 3:490–492
 of polyamide plastics, 10:294, 295
- Quantitative flammability, parameters, 6:91
- Quantitative image analysis
 x-ray microscopy (NEXAFS), 15:380–382
- Quantitative microanalysis
 x-ray microscopy (NEXAFS), 15:380
- Quantum and classical reaction dynamics, 3:614–616
- Quantum dots, 8:786
- Quantum mechanical calculations, 8:579, 580
- Quantum mechanics, 8:572, 574
 classical mechanics contrasted, 8:590, 591
 release agents and, 11:704
- Quartz
 D_k and D_f at 1 MHz, 5:403
- Quartz crystal microbalance (QCM), 1:447, 12:619
- Quartz fibers, 11:698
- QUASH, 2:540
- Quasi-elastic neutron scattering
 amorphous polymers, 1:547, 588
- Quasi-single-strand polymer, 13:172, 173
- Quasi-static fracture conditions
 ROMP-based self-healing system, fatigue of, 12:347
 tapered double-cantilever beam (TDCB) geometry, 12:344
 healing efficiency, 12:344
 mechanical characterization, 12:344, 345
- Quasi *in situ* SFM (QIS-SFM), 12:292
- Quasicrystallinity, acrylonitrile polymer, 1:280, 281
- Quaternary ammonium monomers, in acrylamide copolymers, 1:131
- Quaternary recycling technologies, 11:664
- Quench, 8:561–566
 olefin fibers, 9:355, 356
- Quench depth, effect of, 8:563
- “Quenched” charged-balanced polyampholytes, 10:304

- Quenched instationary polymerization systems, 11:587, 588
- Quenched" polyampholytes, 10:298
viscosity of, 10:302
- Quinacridone pigments, 3:484, 485
- Quinolines
antidegradant for rubber, 12:234
- Quinonemethide
antioxidants and, 13:22–25
lignin and, 7:537, 538
- Quinones, hindered phenols and, 13:23–25
- Quinonoids, antioxidants and, 13:23, 24, 25, 40
- Quinophthalone pigment, 3:480
- R curve, 6:301
- "R", functional RAFT agent, 11:732, 733
- "R-connected" bis-RAFT agent, B-A-B triblock synthesis, 11:738
- Radel R polyphenylsulfone, 11:199
- Radial distribution function, 4:647, 648
- Radial styrene-diene block copolymers, 7:321
- Radiant flooring panel test, the, 6:89, 90
- Radiation
effect on biodegradation, 2:102
- Radiation chemistry of polymers, 11:446–489
- ¹³C NMR spectroscopy, 11:458
- ceiling temperature, 11:451
- chain scission, effects of, 11:454
- color centers, 11:453
- compton scattering, 11:447
- cross-linking and chain scission, 11:450
- energy transfer and dissipation, 11:448
- G-value, 11:448, 449
- hydrogen-hopping reaction, 11:452
- inelastic collisions, 11:447
- linear energy transfer (LET), 11:448
- molecular weight of polymers on exposure to radiation, 11:453–455
- pair production, 11:447
- photoelectron effect, 11:447
- Poly(*tert*-butyl crotonate) (PtBC), 11:470
- Poly(*tert*-butyl methacrylate) (PtBMA), 11:470
- Polytetrafluoroethylene (PTFE), 11:452
- radical-radical recombination reactions, 11:457
- unsaturated groups, formation of, 11:452, 453
- Radiation coating dryers, 3:293
- Radiation cross-linking, 4:72, 73
- Radiation-curable coatings
epoxy resins, 5:390
- Radiation-curable systems, 7:491
- Radiation damage
electron microscopic tests and, 8:473
- Radiation-induced chain cross-linking, 11:454
- Radiation-induced polymerization, 11:513, 14:775
silicones, 12:477
- Radiation-induced reactions, 11:449, 450
electron spin resonance (ESR) spectroscopy, 11:449
- Radiation resistance, of acrylic elastomers, 1:183
- Radiation resistance, of polysulfones, 11:195
- Radiation source, the SPD of, 15:266
- Radical anions
anionic polymerization initiators, 1:603, 604
- Radical catalysts, 6:835
- Radical chain depolymerization, 4:427, 428
- Radical chain-reaction polymerization, 2:720–724
characteristics of, 2:722–724
initiation, 2:720
kinetic chain length, 2:722
propagation, 2:720, 721
termination, 2:721
- Radical combination, in polystyrene production, 13:221
- Radical concentrations, in gas phase kinetics, 6:38, 39
- Radical-derived RAFT agent, 11:756
- Radical homopolymerization, of acrolein polymers, 1:110
- Radical-induced ester exchange, 11:721
- Radical polymerization (RP)
copolymerization, 7:390
cross-propagation assumption, 7:391
kinetics of, 7:349
fundamental reactions, 7:349, 350
heterotermination rate coefficients, 7:354
long-chain approximation (LCA), 7:353
population balance equations, 7:352, 353
reaction scheme, 7:351, 352
steady-state polymerization (SSP), 7:355
- Radical polymerization, 5:163, 11:501–559, 555–600.
See also Free radical polymerization
chain length distribution, 11:560–573
chain transfer, 11:521–542
experimental methods, 11:583–600
inhibition and retardation, 11:577–583
initiation, 11:504–516
kinetics, 11:553–560
macromers, 13:728
propagation, 11:516–521
telechelic polymers, 13:672
termination, 11:542–553
thermodynamics, 11:573–577
- Radical polymerization, reaction extrusion (REX), 11:634
- Radical polymers, oxygen effects, 11:485
- Radical ring-opening polymerization, 11:502, 503
- Radical scavenger UV stabilizers, 14:479, 481, 482
- Radical scavengers, 1:689–697
- Radical template copolymerization, 13:751, 752
- Radical template polymerization, 13:745, 751, 752
- Radical trap studies, 6:839
- Radicals. *See* Free radicals
electron spin resonance, 5:1
- Radio frequency electrochromics
electrically active polymers for, 4:768, 769
- Radiopaque
materials, 11:624
mixtures, 11:616
monomers, 11:617
polymers, 11:615–628
- Radiopaque polymers, 11:615–628
classification of, 11:616, 617
homogeneous systems, 11:621
physical heterogeneous dispersion, 11:617, 618
- Radiopaque compounds (or radiopacifying agents), 11:615
salt complexes, 11:616
synthesis and properties, 11:617–620
- Radius of gyration, 2:742
polyacrylamides, 1:122

- Raffia, 14:495
- RAFT agent 2-ethoxycarbonyl-2-propyl dithiobenzoate, 11:722
- RAFT agent concentration, 11:735
- RAFT agent synthesis, 11:718–722
- RAFT agent-to-initiator ratios, 11:743
- RAFT agents, 11:712
- MMA polymerization, marked retardation of, 11:723
 - O-Alkyl xanthates, 11:713
 - “R”, choice of, 11:716–718
 - selection, guidelines for (table), 11:714
 - Styrene, 11:727, 728
 - “Z”, choice of, 11:713–716
 - Z=aryl, 11:713
- RAFT click methodology, 3:199–201
- RAFT copolymerization, 11:732
- RAFT emulsion polymerization, 11:742
- RAFT end group, 11:734
- RAFT polymerization, 9:648, 11:709–757
- block copolymers by end-group transformation (table), 11:737
 - conditions, 11:740–757
 - features, 11:711, 712
 - heterogeneous media, 11:741–743
 - initiator selection, 11:743–757
 - patents pertaining (table), 11:744–756
 - pressure, 11:741
 - solvent selection, 11:741
 - temperatures, 11:741
- RAFT reagent, 8:798
- RAFT-synthesized thiols, 11:733
- RAFT. *See* Reversible addition-fragmentation chain transfer.
- Ralstonia eutropha*, 2:95, 10:102, 104, 105, 108–112
- Ram-accumulator blow molding, 2:232
- Ram extrusion, 5:620, 621
- Raman effect, 14:565, 566
- Raman microscopes, 14:565
- Raman scattering spectroscopy, 14:564–568, 15:367
- for composition and structure determination, 13:758
 - imaging spectroscopy, 14:600
 - normal vibrations, 14:568–574
 - for structural characterization, 14:574–599
- Raman scattering tensor, 14:567
- Raman spectra, 8:358
- Raman spectroscopy, 2:736, 8:358
- for crystallinity determination, 4:156
 - forensics applications, 6:179, 186
 - thermoset curing, 14:188–191
- Ramie, 2:568, 570, 14:495
- chemical composition, 14:498
 - dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 - mechanical properties, 14:499
 - processing, 14:503
 - textile-associated properties compared to polyester, 14:499
 - uses, 14:508
 - world production, 14:507
- Random branched polystyrene, 13:189
- Random conjugation, 11:431–433
- Random copolymerization
- anionic, 1:643, 644
 - bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:287, 288
 - liquid crystals, 7:567
- Random copolymers
- nylon, 10:260–262
 - polyphosphazenes, 11:101, 102
- Random copolymers, ATRP and, 1:732, 733
- Random copolymers, GTP, 6:539
- Random scission initiation, of styrene polymers, 13:208
- Random scission without depropagation, 4:258–262
- Randomizer, in cold SBR production, 13:275
- Randomly cross-linked polymer networks
- GTP, 6:540
 - rate of entry per particle, 5:170
- Rao’s constant, 1:75, 82
- Rapid expansion of supercritical solutions (RESS), 13:372
- Rapid prototyping
- tissue engineering application, 14:235
- Rare-earth-based catalysts, 7:333
- Rare earth metals
- ring opening polymerization by, 12:143–146
- Rate-controlling membrane, 7:804
- Rate determining step
- of autoxidation, 13:3, 4
- Rate of heat release test for aircraft cabin materials, 6:89, 90
- Rate of peel, of adhesives, 1:380
- Rate transport control, in membranes, 5:841
- Rational catalyst selection, in ATRP, 1:724–726
- Rational mechanics (thermodynamics), 15:160
- RATTLE algorithm, 8:588
- Rauwendaal mixing technology, 5:665
- Raw pigments, as colorants, 3:490
- Rayleigh-Brillouin spectrum, 1:553–555
- Rayleigh factor, 3:117
- Rayleigh instability, 5:153
- Rayleigh-Plateau instability, 408
- Rayleigh ratio, 7:439
- Rayleigh scattering, 14:566, 567
- Rayon, 5:681
- alloy, 2:688, 689
 - aqueous dispersion polymerization, 1:237
 - bulky, 2:686–688
 - cellulose II structure, 2:583
 - commercial aspects, 2:703–705
 - cuprammonium, 2:689–691
 - limiting oxygen index, 1:232
 - manufacture from regenerated cellulose, 2:673–706
 - mechanical properties, 9:216
 - polynosic, 2:685, 686
 - properties, 9:346
 - properties of selected, 2:696
- Rayon-based carbon fibers, 2:469, 482
- Rayon-based fibers, in carbon composites, 11:691
- Reactant stoichiometry, 5:69
- Reactant, transition-metal-containing, 7:64
- Reaction diffusion, 9:711
- Reaction injection molding (RIM)
- polyurethanes, 1:800
 - thermosets, 1:808
- Reaction injection molding, 7:10, 253, 10:91
- of nylons, 10:289, 290
- Reaction kinetics. *See* Kinetics
- Reaction rates, 8:165
- Reaction spinning
- Spandex, 5:773–775

- Reactions, 10:8
- Reactive antioxidants, 13:37–40
- Reactive coatings, 5:684
- Reactive compatibilization, 10:681, 682
- Reactive dyes, 15:332, 333
- Reactive extrusion of polymers, 10:72, 73, 11:630–650
- Reactive flame retardants, 9:681
- Reactive healing agent, compartmentalization, 12:339
- Reactive injection molding
thermosets, 14:208
- Reactive intermediates, 6:43, 44
- Reactive ion etching (RIE) technique, 5:104, 107, 631
- Reactive molar dynamics, of thermal degradation, 6:69
- Reactive PVDF-BQ surface, 13:554
- Reactive surface treatment, 7:763
- Reactive thermoset processing, 14:204
- Reactivity ratios, 1:160, 5:181
LDPE, 5:523
in living radical copolymerization, 3:788–790
measurement in copolymerization, 3:777, 778
- Reactivity, of nylon, 10:244
- Reactor Granule Technology
Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:517, 518
- Reactors
heterophase polymerization, 6:614–618
for LDPE, 5:518–521
- Real networks, statistical theory of, 4:663–665
- Rebridging Configurational-Bias Monte Carlo, 8:595
- Receptor site mimics
molecularly imprinted polymer applications,
8:699–702
- Reciprocating-piston pumps, 3:89, 90
- Reciprocating screw extrusion blow-molding machine,
2:232
- Reciprocating screw injection molding, 13:246
- Reciprocating-screw plastifier, 2:231
- Recirculated coil CSTR, 13:190
- Reclaimed rubber, 12:229
- Recognition-induced polymersomes (RIPs), 8:648–650
- Recording media, PPTA film in, 10:232
- Recoverable compliance, 15:84
in DE model, 15:130
- Recoverable heat. *See* Latent heat
- Recovery
of a fiber, 10:242
PET and PEN films, 10:504, 505
of shape-memory polymers, 12:410–412
- Recyclable adhesives, 11:304, 305
- Recycle blacks, 2:451
- Recycled content, 11:660
- Recycled PE, 6:294
- Recycled plastics, 1:815
- Recycling, 4:239
automobile tires, 13:278, 279
carpet components, 10:264
rubber, 12:229
- Recycling of plastics, 4:442
- Recycling, of polyurethanes, 11:257
- Recycling, plastics, 11:657–675
biodegradable plastics, 11:673, 674
challenges, 11:661, 662
eco-design of parts, 11:675
economic aspects, 11:675
Extended Producer Responsibility, 11:675
mixed waste streams, 11:670–673
in municipal solid waste, 11:658–661
phenolic resins, 9:600
plastic films, 11:673
plastics coding system and terminology, 11:660
polyamide plastics, 10:292
polyethylene, 5:534, 535
polystyrenes, 13:209, 210
restabilization of plastics for, 11:667
single waste streams, 11:667–669
technologies, 11:664–667
total by resin types (table), 11:659
- Red iron oxide pigment, 3:471
- Red pigments, 3:471
disazo, 3:477, 478
metallized, 3:476
naphthol, 3:477
- Redox copolymerization, 15:537
- Redox-initiated polymerization, 11:512, 513
- Redox initiators, 5:613, 614
- Redox-responsive micelles, 8:284
- Reduced curves, 15:93
- Reducing agents, in cold SBR production, 13:272
- Reduction
metallocene-based, 8:135
- Redux adhesives, 1:425
- Reemay
physical properties, 9:181
- Reference frames, 14:292, 293
- Reflectance
test methods, 13:778
- Reflectivity, 9:402
- Refractive index
test methods, 13:778
- Refractive index correlation, 9:394
- Refractive index detector, 3:92
- Refractive index, 9:391–397
and orientation fluctuations in semicrystalline
polymers, 9:395, 396
correlation for, 9:394
dispersion curve and, 9:392
fluctuations in glassy polymers, 9:394, 395
for polymers (table), 9:393
increments, 9:393, 394
internal absorption and, 9:397
intrinsic, 9:392
ISO definition, 9:391
particulate scattering from isolated irregularities,
9:396, 397
scattering coefficient, 9:396
- Refractometry, 6:436
- Refractory ceramic fibers, 6:716
- Refrigeration
cellular polymers, 2:542–544
- Regenerated cellulose
Hamaker constant, 6:644
- Regenerated cellulose fibers. *See* Cellulose fibers,
regenerated
- Regenerated fibers, 2:672, 673
- Regioselective oxidative coupling polycondensation,
10:419–423
CuCl-tetraethylenediamine (TMEDA) complex,
10:423
Poly(1,4-phenylene ether), Synthesis of, 10:422, 423

- Poly(3-alkylthiophene), synthesis, 10:419
- Poly(naphthyl ether), Synthesis of, 10:421, 422
- polyphenylene, synthesis of, 10:419
- Regrind, 5:570
- Regular color carbon blacks
surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Regular color, long flow carbon blacks
surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Regular graft copolymers, 6:468, 505. *See also* Graft copolymers
- Regular, single-strand organic polymers
structural representation, 13:159–163
- Regulation. *See also* Code of Federal Regulations (CFR)
of amino resins, 1:543
of antioxidants, 13:18
of release agents, 11:708
of rubber, 13:269
- Regulators/modifiers, 2:716
- Reinforced materials, mechanical effectiveness of, 11:680, 681
- Reinforced polyketone compounds, 10:663, 664
- Reinforced polymer composites, 12:358, 359
ROMP-based self-healing system, 12:359
- Reinforced polymer composites, application in, 12:348–350
- Reinforced reaction injection molding (RRIM), 1:800
- Reinforcement, 3:513, 514, 11:679–699, 700. *See also* Composites
future prospects in, 11:698, 699
of nylon, 10:284, 285
principles of, 11:683–687
silane coupling agents, 12:426–429
strength of, 11:679–683
types of, 11:688–698
- Reinforcing agents, in acrylic elastomers, 1:186, 187
- Reinforcing fibers, 11:688
- Reinforcing material type, strength as a function of, 11:681, 682
- Reinforcing materials, types of, 11:689–698
- Reinforcing phase, in composites, 11:688, 689
- Rejection, in membranes, 5:843
- Rejuvenation, 1:467, 468
- Relative autohesion, 1:382
- Relative deformation tensor, 15:120, 121
- Relative dielectric constant, 4:678
- Relative loss index, 4:678
- Relatively flame resistant polymers, 6:65, 66
- Relatively flammable polymers, 6:65
- Relaxation, 1:70, 5:671, 15:97, 98. *See also* Enthalpy recovery; Stress relaxation; Volume recovery
relative time scales for, 1:468–471
- Relaxation function, in DE model, 15:139
- Relaxation modulus, 15:89–92, 95
reduced, 15:141
- Relaxation response
in DE model, 15:135
of polyethylene, 15:105
- Relaxation spectrum, 15:103
- Relaxation time spectrum, 6:369
- Relaxation time, 15:82, 93, 94, 96
temperature dependence of, 1:471, 472
- Relaxation, LD to determine, 5:60
- Release agents, 11:700–708
classification of, 11:702, 703
defined, 11:700
economic aspects of, 11:707, 708
features of, 11:702, 703
government regulation of, 11:708
health and safety factors for, 11:708
industrial applications for, 11:705–707
mechanism of, 11:700–705
nomenclature of, 11:700
product types and requirements for, 11:700, 701
silicone application, 12:465, 507, 508
suppliers of, 11:700
- Release substrates, surface tensions of, 11:704
- Release treatments, semipermanent, 11:700
- Replica polymerization, 13:744
- Reprocessing
plastics, 11:660
thermoplastic elastomers, 14:157, 158
- Reptation, 8:594, 15:132
DE tube model of, 15:127–133
- Reptation fluid, 15:137
- Reptation motion, 4:517
- Reptation theory, 15:100–103, 127. *See also* Doi-Edwards (DE) model; K-BKZ model
- Reptation time, 15:133
- Repulsive forces
Born forces, 6:645
polymer dispersions, 6:644, 645
- Research Report D20–1034, 6:800
- Reservoir-based controlled release formulations
with membrane, 3:723–727
without membrane, 3:730–733
- Residence type distribution (RTD), 5:187–189
- Residual dipolar couplings, 9:255–263
- Residual monomers
chemically removing, 13:243–245
in polystyrene, 13:241, 243
- Residual stress
thermosets, 14:199–202
- Residual van Vleck moments, 9:252, 253
- Resilience
olefin fibers, 9:348, 349
- Resilient floor
coverings, 6:114
Sealers, 6:112
- Resilin, 9:31
- Resin bonding
nonwoven fabrics, 9:226–228
- Resin density, blown film properties and, 5:553
- Resin-fiber bond strength test, 1:392
- Resin formation, chemistry of, 1:521–524
- Resin formulations, 8:507
- Resin pellets, in LLDPE extrusion, 5:569
- Resin recovery process, for ABS polymers, 1:325
- Resin transfer molding, 10:91, 92
composite materials, 3:516
thermosets, 14:207, 208
- Resinification, 1:521
- Resins
ABS, 13:202
acrylate, 6:792
autoclave, 5:519, 520
blow molding and, 2:216, 217, 5:579
chlorosulfonated polyethylene, 5:470
cross-linked, 6:322

- dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:629–634
 encapsulation, 5:66, 85–89
 epoxy, 11:171
 flow model for composite materials, 3:538, 539
 high shear mixing of, 3:492
 HIPS, 13:196, 197
 hyperbranched, 6:792, 793
 injection molding, 5:579
 laminating, 1:526, 527
 LLDPE, 5:547
 low density, 5:536–541
 low shear mixing of, 3:492, 493
 metallocene-catalyzed, 5:568, 569, 572, 576, 579
 in mold compound formulations, 5:87
 phenolic, 11:172
 as release agents, 11:705
 rotational molding, 5:579
 silicones, 12:464
 single-site-catalyzed, 5:544, 551
 in solid-phase peptide synthesis, 11:84, 85
 solid thermoset, 6:793
 TIPS, 13:198
 ULDPE, 5:578
 VLDPE, 5:551, 563
- Resins and cross-linkers, 3:320–345
 2-hydroxyalkylamides, 3:339
 acetoacetoxy-functional acrylic solution resins, 3:339, 340
 acrylated oligomers, 3:339
 acrylic resins, 3:328–330
 alkyd resins, 3:332, 333
 amino resins, 3:321, 322
 binders based on isocyanates, 3:322–326
 epoxy esters, 3:334, 335
 epoxy resins, 3:326–328
 halogenated resins, 3:337, 338
 ketimines, 3:340
 latexes, 3:320, 321
 nitrocellulose, 3:339
 phenolic resins, 3:335
 polyaziridines, 3:340
 polycarbodiimides, 3:340
 polyester resins, 3:330, 331
 silicon derivatives, 3:335–337
 solvents, 3:340, 341
 unsaturated polyester resins, 3:338, 339
 uralkyds, 3:333, 334
- Resins, ion exchange behaviour, 7:155
- Resist printing
 wool, 15:335
- Resistance (*R*) curve, 6:301
- Resistance, of polymers, 4:704–714
 circuits for measuring, 4:713
 effect of moisture on, 4:709–712
 geometry and homogeneity, effect of, 4:704–706
 measurement techniques for, 4:712–714
 temperature, effect of, 4:708
 thermal aging effect on, 4:708, 709
 time, effect of, 4:706–708
 voltage and, 4:708
- Resists
 epoxy resins, 5:398
- Resol, 4:76
- Resole No-bake binders, 6:197, 198
- Resole phenolic resins, 1:425
 advantages, disadvantages, and applications as
 epoxy curing agent, 5:339
 applications, 9:603–619
 curing, 9:592–594
 curing agents, 5:337
 decomposition of cured, 9:594
 manufacture, 9:589
 synthesis, 9:584–587
- Resolution
 defined, 1:746
- Resolution analysis, 12:297
- Resonance techniques
 for acoustic measurements, 1:100, 101
- Resorcinol
 phenolic resin monomer, 9:579
- Resorcinol-formaldehyde adhesives
 for wood composites, 15:288, 289
- Respiratory syncytial virus (RSV) inhibitors, 13:311, 313
- Response regimes, viscoelastic, 15:92–104
- Restabilization
 of plastics for recycling, 11:667
- Restorative materials, dental, 4:398–406
 CAD/CAM for, 4:406
 compomers, 4:404, 405
 dental cements, 4:401
 dental composite restoratives, 4:398, 399
 filling materials, 4:398
 glass polyalkenoate cements, 4:402, 403
 methacrylate-based, 4:399
 monomers or matrix phase, 4:399, 400
 physical properties of (table), 4:401, 401
 polyelectrolyte-based cements, 4:402
 polymerization, 4:399
 reinforcement phases, 4:400, 401
 shrinkage concerns, 4:405, 406
 VLC glass-ionomers, 4:403, 404
- Retardation
 radical polymerization, 11:577–583
- Retardation time, 15:83
- Retarders
 for vulcanization, 12:245, 246
- Retention
 in HPLC chromatography, 3:93–97
- Retortable pouches, 9:474
- Retrogradation, 15:190
- Retting, 2:573, 14:494, 500
- Returnable/refillable beer bottles
 PEN application, 10:155
- Reverse gelation, 6:367
- Reverse osmosis membranes, 7:745, 759, 775
 performance of, 7:784, 785
- Reverse osmosis, 7:784–788
- Reverse-roll coating, 3:276, 277
- Reverse roll coating, 5:689, 690
- Reverse suspension polymerizations, 13:605
- Reversed-phase gradient elution, 3:95
- Reversible addition-fragmentation chain transfer (RAFT) polymerization, 4:372, 7:416, 650, 657, 658,

- 8:273, 320, 9:646–648, 11:538–541, 599, 600,
709–757
 azoinitiators, 11:506, 507
 in styrene polymerization, 13:233
 telechelic polymers, 13:688, 689
 Reversible-deactivation radical polymerization (RDRP),
 7:416–418
 CLDT rate coefficients, 7:417, 418
 persistent radical effect, 7:416
 RAFT-CLD-T, 7:418
 Reversible helix inversion, 3:20
 Reversible hydrocolloids, 4:385
 Reversion-resistance curatives, 12:177–184
 Reverse osmosis (RO), 5:834
 rheological behavior, 5:194
REX. See Reaction extrusion, 11:630–650
 applications, chemical reactions used (table), 11:636,
 637
 biodegradable materials, preparation of, 11:639
 chemical reactions, 11:634, 635
 comonomers, grafting of, 11:637–639
 esterification/transesterification, 11:645, 646
 hydrosilylation reactions, 11:639
 industrial applications, 11:630
 modeling and simulation, 11:649
 patents, 11:639
 prepolymers or oligomers, bulk polymerization,
 11:631
 process monitoring and control, 11:649, 650
 UV preirradiated PP, 11:637
 Reynolds number, 4:539, 8:326, 405
 correlation, 8:406
 Reynolds stresses
 and turbulent drag reduction, 4:539
 RF glow discharges, 10:2, 3
 Rhencure, 12:175, 176
 Rhenolic resins, polysulfide curing with, 11:172
 Rheological classifications, 3:445
 Rheological measurements, 12:1–42
 body force, 12:3
 capillary rheometer, 12:8–10
 creep test, 12:17–19
 cyclic frequency sweep test, 12:30
 dynamic amplitude sweep test, 12:27–29
 dynamic time sweep test, 12:24–26
 extensional rheometer, 12:10–13
 frequency sweep test, 12:26, 27
 Hencky strain, 12:4
 linear strain, 12:4
 oscillatory shear, 12:19–23
 oscillatory shear test, 12:24
 rheo-optics, 12:41, 42
 rotational rheometer, 12:6–8
 series shear test, 12:24–30
 shear strain, 12:5
 shear viscosity of material, 12:5
 simple extensional flow, 12:2, 3
 simple shear flow, 12:1, 2
 step strain rate test, 12:16, 17
 step strain test, 12:14–16
 strain rate frequency superposition test, 12:29, 30
 superimposed shear, 12:38–40
 surface force, 12:3
 test method of shear flow, 12:13–23
 transient shear, 12:30–38
 Rheological properties
 colloids, 3:444–446
 critical gel, 6:368–370
 engineering thermoplastics, 5:209, 211
 films, 5:808
 hyperbranched polymers, 6:784, 785
 LLDPE, 5:574
 molecular modeling, 8:621
 PVDF, 15:69
 test methods, 13:770, 771–772
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:641
 Rheological tests, for PSAs. *See also* Viscometric
 Rheology, 7:289–292, 12:1. *See also* Rheological
 measurements
 complex fluids/soft matter in, study of, 12:1
 Monsanto processability tester (MPT), 7:290
 non-Newtonian behaviour, 7:290
 Rheology. *See also* Melt rheology
 characterization methods, 2:754
 in the coating process, 3:295–297
 and drag reduction, 4:537
 filled polymers, 5:788, 789
 guayule latex, 12:274–276
 latexes, 7:460, 461
 liquid crystalline polymer, 7:574
 of LLDPE, 5:567–569
 of polyacrylamide solutions, 1:122–125
 water-soluble polymers, 15:177, 178
 Rheomalaxia, 3:445
 Rheometers
 for styrene polymers, 13:251
 Rheometrics-Meissner extensional (RME) rheometer,
 12:10, 11
 Rheometry
 for molecular weight distribution determination,
 8:674
 thermoset curing, 14:191–199
 Rheo-optical methods, for investigating
 micromechanical properties, 8:475
 Rheopeptic, 3:445
 Rheovibron, 9:796
 Rheovibron viscoelasticity, 9:13
 Rho-C rubber
 for underwater acoustics, 1:92
 Rhodium (Rh)-based catalysts
 insoluble, 4:56
 Rhodium catalysts
trans-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta
 polymerization, 2:311
 Rhodium-containing polymetalloynes, 7:64
 Rhodopsin
 lipid bilayers, with ROS enzymes, 14:553
 vesicles, 14:553
Rhodospirillum rubrum, 10:102, 105
 Ribbing, 3:275
 Ribbon fibers
 mesophase pitch-based carbon fibers, 2:477, 478
 Ribonucleic acid. *See* Polynucleotides; RNA
 Ricinoleic acid, polycondensation of, 5:238
 Ridge crystals, 6:381
 RIE. *See* Reactive ion etching (RIE) techniques

- Riemann-Stieltjes integrals, in viscoelastic theory, 15:89
- Rigid amorphous fractions, 12:400
- Rigid cellular polymers, 2:530–533
- Rigid-chain polymers, 7:571
liquid crystalline properties from, 7:564
- Rigid foam, from FIP beads, 13:255–257
- Rigid foams, 11:248–252
- Rigid gels, 3:104
- Rigid linear engineering thermoplastics, 11:240, 241
- Rigid packaging
PEN/PET blends and copolymers, 10:154–164
- Rigid plane, tensile detachment from, 1:393
- Rigid poly(vinyl chloride)
limiting oxygen value, 6:713
- Rigid poly(vinyl chloride) foam, 2:556
- Rigid polymers, toughening of, 10:711
- Rigid polyurethane foam
processing, 10:92
- Rigid polyurethane, 2:550–552
- Rigid-rod fiber-packed capillary columns, 12:110
- Rigid-rod metallocene polymers, 7:59
- Rigid-rod organometallic polymers, 7:63–65
- Rigid rod polymer fiber reinforcement, 11:695, 696
- Rigid rod polymers
nonlinear optical properties, 9:155
- Rigid-rod polymers, 12:50–118
as catalyst supports, 12:110
compressive properties, 12:85–91
computer simulation, 12:101–104
dielectric applications, 12:115–117
fiber spinning process, 12:64–69
in fuel cell membranes, 12:112–115
future of, 12:117, 118
high performance fibers, 6:698–711
history of development of, 12:50–52
molecular composites, 12:104–107
morphological structures, 12:69–80
nanocomposites, 12:107, 108
for nanophase materials, 12:110, 111
optical properties, 12:93–98
in PBI separatory membrane, 12:111, 112
PBO aging behavior, 12:98–101
solution properties, 12:58–64
for structure materials, 12:109, 110
synthesis of, 12:52–58
tensile properties, 12:80–85
thermal properties, 12:91–93
- Rigid thermoplastic foams, polystyrene as a raw material for, 13:257
- Rigidifying
of parts in thermoforming, 14:119
- Rigidity, 4:641
- Rimplast, 7:139
- Ring-closing metathesis (RCM), 8:151
- Ring coupling, in lignin, 7:529
- Ring-growing macrocyclization, 7:678
- Ring microresonator structures, 5:108
- Ring-opening metathesis (ROM), 8:151
- Ring-opening metathesis copolymerization, 6:350
- Ring-opening metathesis polymerization (ROMP), 2:192, 7:630, 631, 8:151
metallocene-based, 8:
silicones, 12:474, 475
in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:56
- Ring opening metathesis polymerization (ROMP)-self-healing, 12:137–152, 341
- Ring-opening methathesis polymerization
telechelic polymers, 13:715–717
- Ring-opening polymerization (ROP), 2:728, 3:202, 5:245–259, 7:202
all organic, 12:152
chemoenzymatic polymerization, 5:257, 258
chemoselective polymerization, 5:254, 255
enantioselective polymerization, 5:255–257
end-functionalized polymers synthesis, 5:250–252
enzymatic, 12:150, 151
heterogeneous, 12:149, 150
hyperbranched polymers, 6:786–788, 794
living catalyzed by organometallics, 12:139–150
and monomer reactivity, 5:252–254
monomers and, 5:245–249
of other cyclic monomers, 5:258, 259
polyferrocenylsilanes, 7:56, 57
polyphosphazenes, 7:35, 36, 38, 11:98, 99
polysilanes, 7:39, 11:156
reaction solvents, 5:249, 250
regioselective polymerization, 5:255
telechelic polymers, 13:702–714
- Ring-opening polymerizations, Zwitterionic mechanisms, 15:526
- Ring-opening template polymerization, 13:745
- Ring opening, phosgene and, 9:626
- Ritter reaction, 1:262
- RMD simulations, 6:69
- RMD. *See* Reactive molar dynamics
- RMMC method (Monte Carlo), 8:593
- RMTZ. *See* Mercaptothiazolines (RMTZ)
- RNA, 15:184
role in protein biosynthesis, 6:383–386
role in protein synthesis, 6:381
structure, 15:183
- RO membranes, 5:834
- Robertson model, of yield, 15:465, 466
- Robust composite materials, 11:440, 441
- Rockwell hardness test, 6:555
- Rockwell scale, 5:210, 211
- Rockwell test, 13:775
- Rod-blade coater, 3:272
- Rod coating, wire-wound, 3:274
- Rod-coil block copolymers, 2:197
- Rod-like polymers, 7:63–65. *See also* Rigid-rod polymers
- Rodents bite, 8:398
- Rods, nylon, 10:289
- Roe chlorine number, 7:532
- ROHACELL, 2:519
- Roll applicator blade coater, 3:272
- Roll coating, 3:274–277
- Roll-separating forces, 2:383–385
- Roll stack process, 5:634, 635
- Roll-straightening, 2:382, 383
- Roller process blacks, 2:450
- Rolling
films, 5:821
- Rolling bank, of plastic melt, 5:669
- ROM polymerizations, 8:159

- ROM polymers, 8:162
- ROMP, 8:153
 advanced materials, 8:180, 181
 cycloolefins, 8:191
 dicyclopentadiene, 8:191
 dispersion, 8:183, 184
 emulsion, 8:183, 184
endo- and *exo*-DCPD with first generation Grubbs' catalyst, 12:343, 344
 EPON[®] 828/DETA mixture, 12:344
 polymer synthesized, 8:186
 suspension, 8:183, 184
- ROMP-based self-healing systems
 improvements to, 12:350–355
- ROMP click methodology, 3:201, 202
- Ronca-Allegra theory, 9:19
- Roofing, 15:281
 spunbonded fabric applications, 9:206
- Room temperature ionic liquid (RTIL), 7:194, 195
 polymerization, benefits of, 7:205
- Room-temperature size exclusion chromatography, 6:250
- Room temperature vulcanizable (RTV) silicones, 12:510–512
- Room/Corner test, 6:95
- Root-canal sealants, 4:397
- ROP. *See* Ring-opening polymerization (ROP)
- Ropes, 14:496
 PEN fibers, 10:153
- Ropes, PPTA fiber, 10:228–231
- Roselle, 14:495
 processing, 14:502, 503
- Rotary injection molding, 3:588
- Rotary-knife pelletizers, 9:484, 485
- Rotary screen changer, 5:628
- Rotary-screen coating
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:231–233
- Rotary screen printing, 5:690, 691
- Rotation point group operations, 12:374
- Rotational isomeric state (RIS) model, 14:771
- Rotational isomeric state (RIS), 7:315
- Rotational isomeric state model, 3:688, 689, 8:576, 9:403, 404
 for conformation geometry, 3:694–696
 isolated chains and chain collapse, 8:605, 606
 questions addressed by, 3:698–701
- Rotational molding, 12:156–167
 coloring during, 3:497
 of LLDPE, 5:571, 579, 580
 process compared to other thermoplastic processes (table), 14:108
 resin comparison, 5:579
 thermoplastic resin processing, 10:86, 87
- Rotational molding, 1:14
- Rotational rheometer, 12:6–8
- Rotational sintering, of thermoplastics, 1:807
- Rotaxanes, 11:119
 α -cyclodextrin (α -CD) molecules, 11:119
- Rotomolding
 nylons, 10:290
- Rotomolding applications, of HDPE, 5:511
- Rotor-polyaxis systems
 CB-based Polyrotaxanes and Polypseudorotaxanes (table), 11:137, 138
 CD-based polypseudorotaxanes of, 11:139, 140
 CD-based polyrotaxanes (table), 11:135, 136
- Roughness, AFM imaging of, 1:779, 780
- Rouse approximation, in DE model, 15:127–130, 132
- Rouse model, 8:598
- Rouse-Zimm modes, 1:553, 555
- Rousse spectrum, 6:375
- Row nucleated structure, 5:550
- RRIM. *See* Reinforced reaction injection molding (RRIM)
- rRNA, 15:184
- RSV. *See* Respiratory syncytial virus (RSV)
- RTD. *See* Residence type distribution
- RTILs
 [BMIM]PF₆ as medium, 7:197
 Trommsdorff effect, 7:197
- Ru-based catalyst systems, 8:152
- Ru-based catalysts, 8:158, 164, 175
- Ru-PEG-Star (SC2), 8:448
- Rubber chemicals, 12:168–200
 non-nitrosamine curatives, 12:168–177
 nonstaining and persistent antidegradants, 12:191–200
 reversion-resistance curatives, 12:177–184
 silica-to-rubber coupling agents, 12:184–191
- Rubber chemistry, of ABS polymers, 1:321, 322
- Rubber compounding, 12:168, 203, **203–259**
 antidegradants, 12:230–235
 elastomers used, 12:204–217
 fillers, 12:217–230
 processing agents, 12:235, 236
 testing, 12:258, 259
 tires, 12:250–258
 vulcanization, 12:236–250
- Rubber formulation (table), in phr, 1:806
- Rubber-grade blacks, 2:434
 applications, 2:453–455
 composition, 2:429
 properties of typical, 2:442
 surface activity, 2:438, 439
- Rubber-like elasticity, 4:638–668, 9:1
- Rubber-like materials, 9:1, 2
- Rubber-modified plastics, photo-oxidation of, 13:9, 10
- Rubber-modified PS, manufacture of, 13:240, 241. *See also* PS-PB rubber
- Rubber modified styrene blends, melt stabilization of, 13:22
- Rubber-modified styrene copolymers, 13:204
- Rubber particles, 12:263–265
 measuring sizes of, 13:251, 252
 strengthening polystyrene with, 13:184, 185, 196, 197, 235–238, 240, 241
 structure and composition, 12:272–274
- Rubber products, polysulfide, 11:178
- Rubber reinforcement, with PPTA fibers, 10:231
- Rubber substrate process, for ABS polymers, 1:324
- Rubber tile, use in floor coatings, 6:125
- Rubber-toughened polymers, 10:711
- Rubber transferases, 12:264–267
- Rubber, guayule, 12:262–285

- Rubber. *See also* Nitrile rubber (NBR); Nitrile rubber/polypropylene (NBR/PP) copolymer in adhesives, 1:429
 antioxidant applications, 1:713, 714
 autohesion of, 1:368
 bonding to brass, 1:371, 372
 EPDM, 5:482
 filled, 6:322
 history of, 6:583, 584
 hydrolytic degradation, 4:290
 inorganic, 7:34
 mechanical testing of, 4:638–642
 moduli of, 4:642
 nitrile, 1:274
 nonideal transport effects, 14:313–323
 photodegradation, 4:284
 PS-PB, 13:235–238
 release agent use with, 11:705, 706
 silicones, 12:464
 strain for, 15:117, 118
 stress for, 15:114, 115
 stress-temperature curves for, 4:652
 styrene-butadiene, 13:268–284, 179
 styrene copolymers with, 13:235–238
 toughening, 8:484, 485
 transport properties of amorphous, 14:298–313
- Rubbermaker's sulfur, 12:239
- "Rubbers," 9:2
- Rubbery plateau, 14:139
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:622
- Rubotherm magnetic suspension balance
 for permeation measurement, 2:26
- Ruland method, 4:151
- Rule of cumulative damage, 6:329
- Rule of mixtures, 11:683
- Runners, in injection molds, 10:83, 84
- Running in condensed mode, 5:565
- Ruptured crazing, 6:288
- Ruthenium (Ru)-based Grubbs catalyst, 4:56
- Ruthenium-based catalysts, 8:151
- Ruthenium-bearing amphiphilic copolymer
 (Ru-PEGMA/BTAMA/SDP terpolymer), 8:463
 single-chain folding, 8:463
- Ruthenium-bearing star polymers, 8:446
- Ruthenium catalyzed ROMP technique, 6:350
- Ruthenium coordination polymers, 7:61
- Ruthenium-polypyridyl systems, 7:62
- Ruthenocenophanes, 7:58
- Rutile titanium dioxide pigment, 3:470
- Rylex NBC, 14:479
- Ryton, 13:287
- Ryton PPS compounds, 10:132
- S-2 glass
 D_k and D_f at 1 MHz, 5:403
- S-B-S copolymer. *See*
 Poly(styrene-*b*-butadiene-*b*-styrene) (S-B-S) block copolymer
- S-EB-S copolymers. *See*
 Poly(styrene-*b*-ethylene-*co*-butylene-*b*-styrene) (S-EB-S) block copolymer
- S-EP-S copolymers. *See*
 Poly(styrene-*b*-ethylene-*co*-propylene-*b*-styrene) (S-EP-S) block copolymer
- S-glass (high tensile strength glass), properties of, 11:689, 690
- S-I-S block copolymers. *See*
 Poly(styrene-*b*-isoprene-*b*-styrene) (S-I-S) block copolymer
- S-iB-S block copolymers. *See*
 Poly(styrene-*b*-isobutylene-*b*-styrene) (S-iB-S) block copolymer
- s-PMMA, 13:656
- s-PMMA/PLLA, 13:657
- S-polystyrene. *See* Syndiotactic polystyrene (sPS)
- s-PP, 13:661
- s-PS, 13:664–668
 melt-crystallization, 13:664–667
- Saccharomyces cerevisiae*, 6:387
- Sacrificial anode, 3:670, 671
- Safety, 6:388
 acrylic and methacrylic acids, 1:160
 acrylonitrile, 1:270–274
 aluminoxane cocatalysts, 8:84–91
 antioxidants, 1:717
 aromatic polyamides, 10:233–235
 butadiene monomer, 2:299, 300
 butyl rubber, 2:368
 cellular materials, 2:558, 559
 chitin and chitosan, 3:39
 chloroprene polymers, 3:79, 80
 chlorosulfonated polymers, 5:481
 controlled release technology, 3:743–745
 cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:231, 232
 epoxy resins, 5:408, 409
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:457
 ethylene-propylene-diene monomer (EPDM) rubbers, 5:607
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:607
 fillers, 5:800, 801
 flame retardants, 6:22–26
 fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:172
 LDPE, 5:534–539
 LLDPE, 5:577
 methylaluminoxane, 8:85
 peroxide use, 6:854
 phenolic resins, 9:598–600
 phosgene, 9:630, 631
 polyacrylamides, 1:145
 polyarylate applications, 10:353
 polycyanoacrylates, 10:432
 poly(phenylene oxide)s, 10:572
 polysulfides, 11:175, 176
 polysulfones, 11:199
 poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:208, 209
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:762
 release agents, 11:708
 silicones, 12:516–520
 styrene polymers, 13:252
 thermoplastic elastomers, 14:157, 158
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:644
 vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:711
 vinyl chloride monomer, 14:760
 vinylidene fluoride monomer, 15:58
 vinylidene fluoride polymers, 15:70, 71
 xylene polymers, 15:444, 445
- Saffil alumina-silica fibers, 11:698

- SAFT test (shear-adhesion-failure temperature), 11:300
- Sag, 5:571
- Sailcloth
 PEN fibers, 10:153
- SALS. *See* Small-angle light scattering (SALS)
- Salt attrition process, 3:482, 483
- Salt flux, in reverse osmosis, 7:785, 786
- Salt solutions, of poly(acrylamide), 1:119, 120
- Salty snack packaging, 9:475
- Salty snacks, 9:475
- SAM. *See* Self-assembled monolayers (SAM)
- Sample introduction instrumentation, HPLC, 3:90
- Sample preparation
 for polymer characterization, 2:734–736
- Sampling, for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:472
- SAMS. *See* Styrene-*co*- α -methylstyrene (SAMS)
- SAN copolymers, 1:283, 8:480, 13:233, 234. *See also*
 Grafted copolymers; Styrene-acrylonitrile (SAN)
 batch-mode recipe for, 1:294
 chemical properties and analytical methods for, 1:290
 continuous mass polymerization, 1:294–297
 economic aspects of, 1:298, 299
 emulsion polymerization, 1:292–294
 health and toxicology of, 1:297
 manufacture of, 1:291–297
 modified, 1:301
 physical properties of, 1:289, 290
 processing, 1:297
 producers of, 1:298
 semibatch-mode recipe for, 1:293
 suspension polymerization, 1:294
 test methods for, 1:289, 290
 uses for, 1:299–301
- SAN resins, molding and extrusion temperatures for, 1:297
- SAN. *See* Acrylonitrile; Poly(styrene-*co*-acrylonitrile) (SAN); Styrene-acrylonitrile (SAN); Styrene and acrylonitrile copolymer (SAN)
- Sand
 filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
 filler properties, 5:379
- Sandostatin LAR, 3:754
- Sanduvor 3055, 14:483, 484
- Sanduvor 3058, 14:469
- Sanduvor PR-25, 14:458
- Sanduvor PR-31, 14:488
- Sanduvor VSU, 14:458
- SANS. *See* Small-angle neutron scattering
- Sansaviera
 processing, 14:506
- Sansevieria, 14:495
 dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
 mechanical properties, 14:499
- Sanso-cut oxygen absorber, 2:59
- Santoprene, 7:139
- Saponite, 5:795
- Sartomer SR534, 12:182, 183
- Saturated elastomers, 1:805, 806
- Saturated polyesters, 4:84, 85
- Saturation bonding
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:227
- SAW atomization
 schematic representation of, 8:426
- SAXS. *See* Small-angle x-ray scattering (SAXS)
- Saxton mixer, 5:659, 661
- SBC formulations, commercial photosensitive, 5:82, 83
- Stress buffer coatings (SBCs), 5:82, 83
- SBDs. *See* Substrate-binding domains (SBDs)
- sBL. *See* *sec*-Butyllithium (sBL)
- SBR. *See* Styrene-butadiene rubber (SBR)
- Scaffolds, for tissue engineering, 14:215–217
 hydrogel scaffold polymers, 14:223
 novel architectures, 14:227, 228
 polymer processing and 3-D scaffolds, 14:224–240
 porous scaffold polymers, 14:217–222
- Scaling, in membranes, 5:847
- Scanning atomic force microscopy, 2:752
- Scanning calorimetry, 7:322
- Scanning electron microscope, 8:471
 low-voltage, 6:284
 structure and mode of action of, 6:283
- Scanning electron microscopy (SEM), 2:751, 6:281–284
 for composition and structure determination, 13:760, 761
 forensics applications, 6:178
 for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:471, 473
 use in forensic analysis, 6:180, 181
- Scanning force microscopy (SFM), 12:291–311, 15:367
 Thin films, self-assembled microdomains, 12:298
- Scanning near-field optical microscopy (SNOM), 9:106
- Scanning probe microscope, 1:747
- Scanning thermal microscopy, 1:758, 759
- Scanning transmission electron microscopy (STEM), 7:215, 216
 forensics applications, 6:178
- Scanning transmission x-ray microscope, 15:376, 377
- Scanning tunneling microscope, 1:746
 polydiacetylene nanowires and, 4:451
- Scattering losses, 5:103
- Scattering techniques
 amorphous polymers, 1:547–556
- Scattering techniques, for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:473, 474
- Scavengers. *See* Free-radical scavengers; Hydrogen chloride scavengers; Oxygen scavengers
- ScCO₂
 homogeneous free-radical polymerization, 13:378
- scCO₂-in-water (C/W) HIPEs, 10:599
- SCF theory. *See* Self-consistent field (SCF) theory
- SCFs. *See* Supercritical fluids
- Schallamach wave, 13:515
- Schapery model, 15:153–157
- Schapery stress relaxation formulation, of solid-like polymers, 15:159
- Scheutjens-Fleer theory, 1:437, 438
- Schiff-Base ligands, 7:60
- Schizophyllan, 15:194
- Schlack, 10:238
- Scholl reaction, 11:186
- Schrock single-site catalyst, 5:564
- Schrock tungsten-carbyne complex, 1:33
- Schrock-type tungsten-based catalysts, 8:154
- Schrock's group, 8:153
- Schrock's Mo-based catalysts, 8:154
- Schrödinger equation, 3:593–595, 605
 one-dimensional, 3:624

- Schulz-Flory polymer distribution, 2:739, 740
Schulze-Hardy rule, 3:454
Scientific and Technical Information Network (STN), 13:158
Scientific injection molding (SIM), 7:10, 11
Scintillation, on plastic surface, 4:695
SCION, 13:162
 β -Scission, 6:835
Scission, of styrene polymers, 13:208
SCL PHAs. *See* Short-chain-length PHAs (SCL PHAs)
Scleroglucan, 15:194
Scleroscope, 6:555
Scorching, 4:66
Scott-Gilead process, 4:293
Scouring
 wool, 15:320, 321
Scrapless thermoforming process (Dow), 14:114
Scratch behavior of polymers, 12:319–335
 contact theories, 12:321–323
 effect of material properties, 12:332, 333
 effect of sliding conditions, 12:327–329
 mechanisms, 12:328, 329
 test methods, 12:324–327
Scratch hardness tests, 6:555
Scratch hardness, 12:325–327
Scratch tester, 12:324
Scratch testing, 12:324–327
Scratch velocity, 12:331
Scratch visibility, 12:327
Screen changers, 5:627, 628
Screen filters, in microfiltration membranes, 5:832
Screen membranes, 7:779
Screen pack, of an extruder, 5:625–628
Screen-printing process, 3:678
Screw channel, 5:669
 flow along, 5:652
 nonuniform mixing in, 5:657
 temperature distribution in, 5:651, 652
Screw closures, 3:589
Screw design, 5:588. *See also* Neutral screw; Single screw extruders; Twin screw extruders
 for extruders, 3:495
 features of, 5:646
Screw flight, helix angle of, 5:649, 653
Screw friction, reducing, 5:646
Screw geometry, for melt conveying, 5:651
Screw heating and cooling, in an extruder, 5:624
Screw heating, 5:646
Screw plunger, 3:585, 586
Screw preplasticator injection molding, 13:246
Screw speeds, extruder, 5:630
SCS fiber, 11:697
Scutching, 14:500
SDPs. *See* Supramolecular dendronized polymers (SDPs)
Seal terrazzo floors, sealers, 6:112
Sealant industry, market economics of, 1:402, 403
Sealants, 4:406–410
 amalgam restorative, 4:408, 409
 bonding agent chemistry, 4:409, 410
 composite restoration, 4:409
 dental restorative, 4:408
 pit and fissure, 4:407, 408
 polysulfide, 11:168, 174–177
 preventive, 4:406
 protein-based fibrin, 1:428
 restorative, 4:406
 root-canal, 4:397
 self-etching adhesives, 4:410
 silicone application, 12:465
Seamless flooring/monolithic flooring, 6:126, 127
 polyurethane coatings, 6:126
Searle geometry, 12:7
SEBS, 14:400
 application of, 14:388–406
 Finkelmann-Ringsdorf theory, 14:388
 generalised, 14:383–386
 Hilbert-Noda transformation matrix, 14:383
 liquid crystalline polymers (LCPs), 14:388
 mesogen-jacketed LCP (MJLCP), 14:389
 Perturbation correlation moving window (PCMW), 14:386, 387
 side-chain LCPs, 14:388
 small-angle X-ray scattering (tr-SAXS), 14:398
 synthetic functional polymers, 14:388–394
 time-resolved wide-angle X-ray diffraction (tr-WAXD), 14:398
SEBS-*g*-MA compatibilizer, 8:492
SEC. *See* Size exclusion chromatography (SEC)
Second law of thermodynamics, 13:76
Second level packaging, 5:62, 63
Second-Order Markov theory, 8:109
Second-order phase transitions, 9:561
Second-order transitions/continuous phase transitions, 14:251, 252
Secondary antioxidants, 13:16
Secondary aromatic dithioesters, 11:722
Secondary aryl amines, 7:326
Secondary crack nucleation, 6:319
Secondary gas (principally hydrogen), 6:42
Secondary ion mass spectrometry (SIMS)
 forensics applications, 6:179
 polymer spectra, 13:483–490
 SIMS polymer spectra, 13:483–490
 SIMS quantitative aspects, 13:492
 spectral features and information, 13:481–483
Secondary nucleation theory, 4:185–188, 194
Secondary recycling technologies, 11:664, 665
Secondary transitions
 and acoustic properties, 1:70
 sound as probe of, 1:80
Sectorization
 semicrystalline polymers, 12:385, 386
sec-Butyllithium (sBL), 13:198
 anionic polymerization initiator, 1:605, 610
sec-Butyllithium-initiated homopolymerization, 7:332
Sedimentation
 colloids, 3:443, 444
Seed-hair fibers, 14:506
Seed mucilages, 15:192
Seed particles
 heterophase polymerization, 6:618
 restricting heterophase polymerization to, 6:625
Seeded emulsion polymerization applications, 5:182, 183
Seeded suspension polymerization, 13:606

- Seesorb 712, 14:480
- Segmental orientation
vibrational spectroscopy, 14:607–612
- Segmented polyurethane, 1:423
in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Selar
permeability humidity effect, 2:21
- Selectivity
in gas separation membranes, 5:836
in membranes, 5:843, 844
- Selectivity, of pervaporation membranes, 7:797, 798
- Selenium
dependence of viscoelastic behavior on structure, 1:584
relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in linear macromolecules, 14:76
- Self-Adapting Fixed-End-Point Configurational-Bias Monte Carlo, 8:595
- Self-affine fractals, 6:213, 214
Brownian process, 6:213, 214
- Self-assembled monolayers (SAM), 3:663–666, 8:656
- Self-assembly, 13:459
amphiphilic systems, 13:458
concentration-dependent UV-vismeasurements in MCH, 13:446
crown ethers, 13:462, 463
cyclodextrins, 13:463–465
formation of, 13:441, 442
formed by π - π stacking, 13:458–462
molecular recognition, 13:462–465
noncovalent forces, reversibility, 13:440, 441
noncovalent Interactions (table), 13:441
of oligo(*p*-phenylene vinylenes), 13:447
stilbene-bridged bis(β -CD) dimer, 13:464
supramolecular polymerization of *N*-unsubstituted PBIs, 13:446
- Self assembly, 6:367, 7:616–619
- Self-bonding, 1:367
- Self-condensing vinyl polymerization (SCVP), in hyperbranched polymer synthesis, 6:788, 789
- Self-consistent field (SCF) theory, 2:193, 194
- Self-consistent mean field theory, 2:194
- Self-diffusion coefficient, 1:368
- Self diffusion coefficients, 14:295, 296
- Self-diffusion coefficients, 4:515
- Self-etching adhesives, 4:410
- Self-healing coatings, application to, 12:357, 358
- Self-healing epoxy vinyl ester, 12:356
- Self-healing ionomers, 12:366, 367
- Self-healing PDMS sample, representative load-displacement data, 12:360, 361
- Self-healing performance, evaluation of, 12:356, 357
- Self-healing polymers, 12:338–368
crack repair, 12:339
microcapsules, 12:339
microencapsulation, 12:339
- Self-healing smart materials, ionomers in, 7:236
- Self-healing supramolecular polymers, 13:450, 451
- Self-healing surface, 5:849
- Self-immolative dendrimers, 4:308
- Self-initiated polymerization, 11:511, 512
- Self-leveling
in PET, 2:254
- Self-metered coating processes, 3:268
- Self-nucleation, 4:168
- Self-reinforcing composites, 11:698
- Self-repairing materials, 12:409
- Self-stripping polishes, 6:106, 107, 111
- Semi-buffable polishes, 6:111, 112
- Semiconductor devices, 5:62
stress buffer coatings for, 5:66, 67
- Semiconductor molding compounds, properties of, 5:89
- Semiconductor quantum dots, 8:786, 796
- Semiconductors
electrical conductivity of typical, 4:743
xylylene polymer applications, 15:440, 441
- Semicontinuous activated sludge (SCAS) test, 13:61, 62
- Semicrystalline block copolymers, 2:205
- Semicrystalline fluoropolymers, piezoelectricity of, 9:782–787
- Semicrystalline matrix, toughened polymers with, 8:490–492
- Semicrystalline PLAs, 10:167, 168
- Semicrystalline plastics, 5:671
- Semicrystalline polyketones, 10:660
- Semicrystalline polymer, 8:524
isochronal (constant frequency) experiments, 13:837
modulated differential scanning calorimetry (MDSC), 13:805–807
equilibrium melting, 13:805
melting, 13:804–808
- Semicrystalline polymers, 2:733, 12:371–403
chain molecule conformations, 12:372–376
and crystallinity concept, 12:396–401
crystal unit cells, 12:376–383
dendrites, 12:392–394
double glass transition, 12:400
fatigue thermal history effect, 5:741, 742
ferroelectricity in, 9:782
films, 5:805
fractionation by crystallizability, 6:237–239
fractionation by molecular weight, 6:229–237
fractography, 5:731
fracture behavior of, 6:334, 335
impact resistance improvement, 6:831, 832
nonlinear viscoelastic response of, 15:146
phase transformation, 9:560
physical aging in, 1:473
physical properties affected by crystal structures and morphologies, 12:401–404
piezoelectric, 9:778–787
polycrystalline aggregates, 12:392–396
polymer single crystals, 12:383–392
solid-state extrusion, 12:693, 694
spherulites, 12:394–396
thermal characterization methods, 2:745, 746
viscoelastic response of, 15:104
yield, 15:476–479
yielding in, 8:495, 496
- Semicrystalline polymers, glass transition, 14:259
- Semicrystalline polymers, toughness of, 10:713
- Semicrystalline rubbers
transport properties, 14:324–331
- Semicrystalline thermoplastics, 6:320, 10:69
- Semiempirical quantum calculation, rigid-rod polymers and, 12:102

- Sensors
 dendrimers, 4:335, 336
 electrically active polymers for, 4:771
 molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:693–696
- Sentmanat extensional rheometer (SER), 12:12
- Separan AP273
 drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Separation
 multidimensional, 3:96, 97
 pervaporation, 7:796, 797
 of synthetic polymers, 3:99–101
- Separation mechanism, in size exclusion chromatography, 3:105–109
- Separation modes, in HPLC chromatography, 3:93–97
- Sequence distributions, 8:516, 517
- Sequential IPN (seq-IPN), 4:96, 97
- Sequential living cationic polymerization, 2:192
- Sequestering agents, in emulsion polymerization, 5:175
- Sergeants and soldiers effect, 3:13, 14
- Serial microtube reactors, 8:345
- Serine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Serine (benzyl protected), 11:69
- Serine (*tert*-butyl protected), 11:73
- Serratia marcescens*, 5:232
- Serum, 6:583
- Serum albumin. *See* Albumin
- Setting
 wool, 15:323–326
- Setting, of adhesives, 1:365
- Severe plastic deformation methods, 12:685
- SFM
 based nanotomography, 12:296
 images, film thickness dependent microdomain dimensions, 12:298
 imaging conditions, 12:293
 imaging modes, 12:291
 measurements, 12:301
 nanomechanical mapping measurements, 12:294
 phase diagrams, 12:295–297
 phase measurements, PS-PEP components, 12:309
 single-molecule force spectroscopy (SMFS), 12:292
 structural defects, 12:301
 techniques, 12:291
- SHAKE algorithm, 8:588, 613
- Shake-up satellites, 13:476
- Shape-memory
 molecular mechanism of, 12:410–412
 thermally induced, 12:416
- Shape-memory alloys, shape-memory polymers *versus*, 12:409
- Shape-memory networks, 12:416
 cross-linked, 12:412
- Shape-memory polymers, 12:409–420
 biodegradable polymer networks, 12:418
 cyclic thermomechanical characterization of, 12:413–416
 defined, 12:409, 410
 examples of, 12:416–418
 performance of, 12:410, 411
- Shaping, in-line, 5:639
- Shear
 in piezoelectric materials, 9:781
 simple, 4:641, 642
- Shear damping function, in DE model, 15:141
- Shear deformation, 8:490
- Shear failure, 6:287
- Shear flow
 molecular modeling of confined, 8:621
- Shear fracture, 6:287
- Shear modulus, 4:639, 641, 642. *See also* Affine shear modulus
 of nylon-6,6, 10:279
- Shear rate, 3:295, 296, 15:107
 down-channel, 5:655
- Shear reversal test, 12:38
- Shear sound speed, 1:63
- Shear stability
 and drag reduction, 4:558–562
- Shear strain, 15:78
 total, 5:654
- Shear stress profile, 11:686
- Shear stress response in DE model, 15:143–146
- Shear stress, 15:78
- Shear thinning effect, 5:567, 568, 651, 10:528, 15:106
 with LDPE and LLDPE, 5:527
- Shear thinning effect. *See* Rheological measurements
- Shear waves
 acoustic, 1:62
- Shear yielding, 6:331
- Shearing
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:234
- Sheep
 wool from, 15:306
- Sheet and profile extrusion, low density resin for, 5:536
- Sheet coaters, 3:265
- Sheet die, 5:676
- Sheet extrusion line, 5:634
- Sheet lines, using the roll stack process, 5:634, 635
- Sheet molding compounds (SMC), 1:800, 10:89, 90
 composite materials, 3:516
 processing of, 1:809
 schematic of, 1:809
- Sheet stretching
 in thermoforming, 14:118, 119
- Sheet structure
 consolidation into, 8:566
- Sheet, manufacture of)
 acrylic syrup in, use of, 2:501
 cell casting operations, 2:498–500
 continuous casting, 2:500, 501
 equipment and procedure, 2:498–501
 health and safety factors, 2:506, 507
 of methyl methacrylate, 2:495, 496
 poly(methyl methacrylate) sheet, properties of, 2:502, 503
 resin systems used for, 2:495
 rotational casting of acrylic resins, 2:496
 specifications and standards, 2:506
 theory, 2:496–498
- Sheeting, 5:509
- Sheets
 extrusion, 10:79, 80

- infinite, 6:303
 LDPE, 5:535, 536
 Shell cross-linked micelles, 8:272
 Shell cross-linked microgels, 8:441
 Shell cross-linked Polymer Networks, GTP, 6:540
 Shell higher olefin process (SHOP), 8:149
 Shell material(table), 8:376, 377
 Shift factor (*aT*) 15:93, 94, 96, 97. *See also*
 Polycarbonate shift factor; Time-temperature shift factors
 Shipment
 of LLDPE, 5:574
 of polyacrylamides, 1:144
 of vinylidene fluoride, 15:57, 58
 Shipping sacks, heavy duty, 9:476
 Shish crystals, 12:388
 Shish-kebab polymers, 7:60
 Shish-kebab structures, 12:391
 Sholl reaction, 9:447
 Shore scale, 5:210, 211
 Short-chain branching, 6:328
 of LDPE, 5:524
 Short-chain-length PHAs (SCL PHAs), 10:96, 101
 biosynthesis of, 10:104, 105
 Short fibers, 11:685–687
 Short multifunctional polymer chains, 7:639, 640
 Short oil alkyds, 1:480, 481
 Short oil varnishes, 1:480
 Short spacer, 5:760
 Short-time electric strength
 effect of thickness on, 4:686
 of phenolic resin-paper laminate, 4:686
 Shrink film, 9:476
 Shrink film packaging, 9:476
 Shrink film, high clarity, 9:476–478
 Shrink-resist treatments
 wool, 15:327–329
 Shrink-resistance, 15:326, 327
 Shrink void, 5:672
 Shrinkage
 composite materials, 3:526–532
 polyester films, 10:510
 wool, 15:326–329
 Shrinkage stresses
 from molding, 4:250
 Shrinkage, in blow molding, 2:241
 Shrinkproofed fabrics, 15:327
 Shuttle blow-molding machines, 2:231
 Si-O-Si bond angles, 4:657
 Side-chain functionality, 13:486–488
 Side-chain LCBCPs (SCLCBCPs), 7:553
 application of, 7:556
 azobenzene mesogens, rearrangement of, 7:556
 BCP microphase separation, 7:556
 “cylinders in LC matrix” structure, 7:554, 555
 hierarchical structures, 7:553
 hydrophobic LC blocks, 7:555
 intermaterials dividing surface (IMDS), 7:553
 “lamellae in lamellae” structure, 7:554
 polymethacrylate-bearing side-chain azobenzene, 7:556
 supramolecular type, 7:553
 synthesis of, 7:553, 554
 with narrow-distributed Polydispersity index (PDI), 7:553
 Side-chain length, in poly(3-hydroxyalkanoate)s, 10:98
 Side-chain polymers, 6:347–352
 Side-chain polyrotaxanes, 11:138–142
 Side-chain substitution reactions, in lignin, 7:530
 Side-chain supramolecular polymers, 8:640–642
 Sideria, 5:775, 778
 Sigma blade mixer, 3:493
 Silacarboycles, 10:386
 Silane
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:131
 Silane coupling agents, 1:371, 12:419–430
 ABS, 12:429
 3-AFMS-treated fibers with PMMA, 12:427
 3-aminopropyltriethoxysilane (APS), 12:421
 analysis of, 12:424–426
 analysis, 12:424–426
 APS, 12:429
 chemical composition and reactions, 12:420–422
 chemical composition and reactions, 12:420–422
 glass-fiber-reinforced PMMA, fracture surface, 12:428
 3-methacryloxypropyltrimethoxysilane (MPMS), 12:423
 reinforcement mechanisms, 12:426–429
 reinforcement, mechanisms of, 12:426–429
 representative (table), 12:421
 silicon-29 NMR spectra, 12:426
 surface reactions and interactions, 12:422–424
 surface reactions/interactions, 12:422–424
 Silane-grafted/copolymerized polyethylene, 4:92, 93
 Silane rubber chemicals, 12:186–189
 Silanes, 12:464
 applications in advanced materials, 12:429, 430
 Silanol condensation-based self-healing system, 12:356
 Silanols
 condensation to siloxanes, 12:482, 483
 Sila[1]ferrocenophanes, 7:57, 58
 Silcates
 for rubber compounding, 12:224
 Silene EF
 effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
 effect on SBR properties, 12:228
 Silica, 5:793
 filled silicone networks, 12:487
 filler material, 5:785
 for rubber compounding, 12:221, 222, 224, 225
 Silica-based glass fibers, 11:689, 690
 Silica flour
 filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
 filler properties, 5:379
 Silica nanocomposites, 14:176
 Silica particles, 9:35
 Silica-rich polyisoprene, 7:337
 Silica supports
 metallocenes, 8:91, 92
 Silica-to-rubber coupling agents, 12:184–191
 Silicalite-1/PDMS, 8:22
 Silicates, 6:583
 filled silicone networks, 12:486
 filler material, 5:785
 layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
 Silicates, phosgene reactions with, 9:625

- Silicon, 12:464
- Silicon-29 (²⁹Si) NMR, 2:737
- Silicon-based building blocks, 12:430
- Silicon-bridged [1]ferrocenophanes, 7:57
- Silicon carbide (SiC) fiber, applications of, 11:697
- Silicon carbide (SiC) filaments, 11:697
- Silicon carbide
filler material, 5:785
- Silicon carbide ceramic fibers, 6:714
- Silicon carbide fiber reinforcement, 11:697
- Silicon-Containing Pre ceramic Polymers, 12:432–457
- Silicon dioxide thin films, densification mechanism, 10:19
- Silicon photonics, 5:108
- Silicon polymers, 7:39–42
- Silicone-based antifoams, 1:666
- Silicone elastomers, 12:495
- Silicone fluids, 12:489–495
- Silicone foam rubber, 12:501, 502
- Silicone gums, 12:498
- Silicone heat-cured rubber, 12:495–500
- Silicone liquid-injection-molding rubber, 12:500, 501
- Silicone networks
characterization, 12:485
filled silicone networks, 12:486–489
formation, 12:478
- Silicone oils, 12:489–495
- Silicone pressure-sensitive adhesives, 1:412, 11:305
- Silicone products, release agents for, 11:706
- Silicone release coatings, 11:707, 708
- Silicone resins, 12:502–506
- Silicone resins, cellular
expandable formulations, 2:519
- Silicone rubber
filled silicone networks, 12:486–489
heat-cured, 12:495–500
network formation, 12:478
for rubber compounding, 12:205, 216
- Silicone rubber film, 12:498
- Silicone rubber membrane, 7:799
- Silicone wafer, 8:345
- Silicones, 12:464–519
analysis and testing, 12:512–516
economic aspects, 12:520
filled silicone networks, 12:486–489
health and safety factors, 12:516–520
inversion, 7:473
monomer synthesis, 12:469–471
physical properties, 12:207
polymerization, 12:471–489
properties and uses, 12:489–512
SIMS spectra, 13:490
structural representation, 13:173, 175
- Silk, 12:542–549
applications, 12:549
genetic engineering, 12:548, 549
processing, 12:545–548
properties, 12:547, 548
semicrystalline, 6:382, 12:392
structure, 12:543–545
vibrational spectroscopy of crystallization on highly oriented substrate, 14:622, 623
- Silk-like protein polymers, 6:389
- Silk-like proteins, 6:386–394, 423
- Silk thread, 6:387
- Silkworm cocoon silk, 12:543, 545
- Silly Putty, 4:627
- Silon, 7:139
- Siloxane chains, 5:751, 753
- Siloxane layers, 5:753
- Siloxanes, 11:691
anionic polymerization, 1:626–628
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
structural representation, 13:173, 175
telechelic polymers, 13:712, 713
- Silsesquioxanes, 12:421, 422
- Silver
facilitated transport carrier for olefins, 14:366
- Silylene, 12:466
- Simha equation, 3:446
- Simple extension, 4:656, 657, 15:80, 113
- Simple harmonic springs bond models, 8:577
- Simple shear, 15:80
- Simulations, of glass transition, 6:448, 449
- Simultaneous interpenetrating network, 7:112, 113
- Simultaneous reverse and normal initiation ATRP, 1:727
- Sinapyl alcohol, in lignin, 7:525
- Sinarundinaria*
species with fiber potential, 14:497
- Single-chip plastic package, 5:66
- Single crystal structure, 5:549
- Single-edge notch tension, 6:308
- Single-edge notch three-point bending, 6:308
- Single-emulsion precipitation, 8:419
- Single feeding, and split feeding, 3:556, 557
- Single-fiber composite test, 11:687
- Single-fiber pull-out test, 11:687
- Single flighted screw, 5:649
- Single lamellar crystals, 8:704, 705
- Single-layer imaging process, for photosensitive polyimides, 5:76
- Single-molecule force spectroscopy (SMFS), 12:292
- Single pulse-pulsed laser polymerization, 11:549, 550, 583, 592–594
- Single-pulse *PLP*(SP PLP), 7:375–382
- Single-screw extruders, 10:71, 72
- Single screw extruders, 3:495, 5:618, 619
contiguous solids melting in, 5:647
dispersed solids melting in, 5:647
dispersive mixers for, 5:662
mixing in, 5:654
versus twin screw extruders, 5:647
- Single-screw system, for compounding, 3:563
- Single-site catalysis, 5:560–562
- Single-site catalysts (SSCs), 12:551–586
active species and function of cocatalyst, 12:559–561
controlled olefin polymerization, 12:579–583
ethylene, polymerization of, 12:565–567
evolution and classification of, 12:553–559
first generations of, 12:552
functional polymers, 12:576–579
general structure of, 12:552
generation of, 12:559–564
heterogenization of, 12:583–586

- inorganic supports for, 12:584, 585
mechanisms of stereocontrol, 12:563, 564
metallocene-based catalysts, 12:553–557
organic supports for, 12:585, 586
polymerization mechanism, 12:561–563
postmetallocene-based catalysts, 12:557–559
propylene, polymerization of, 12:567–576
Single-site catalysts, 13:1.1. *See also* Metallocene catalysts; SSC
commercialization of, 5:563
Single-site catalyzed LLDPE, composition of, 5:545, 546
Single-site-catalyzed mLLDPE, 5:547
Single-site-catalyzed resins, 5:544, 551
Single-site metallocene catalysts, 5:591
Single-step crystallization fractionation (CRYSTAF)
for molecular weight determination, 13:763, 764
Single-step stress relaxation experiments, DE model
and, 15:140, 141
Single-step stress relaxation responses, 15:121, 122
Single traversal abrasive wear test, wear rate, 13:509
Single-wall carbon nanotubes, 11:698, 699
Single wall carbon nanotubes, 8:735
ultrastrong materials, 8:737–739
Single-walled carbon nanotubes (SWNTs), 12:52, 107,
108, 118
Single waste streams, 11:667–669
Singular-type microreactor, 8:319, 320
Singular value decomposition, 15:380
Sintering
for cellular material production, 2:525
Siroflash, 15:335
Sirolan CFTM, 15:321
Sirolan-LTDTM, 15:321
Sisal, 14:495
chemical composition, 14:498
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
mechanical properties, 14:499
processing, 14:506
uses, 14:508
world production, 14:507
Site-specific conjugation, 11:428–431
cofactor reconstitution method, 11:429, 430
direct functionalization or “grafting to” approach,
11:428, 429
His-tag approach, 11:430
indirect functionalization or “Grafting from
approach, 11:429
nonribosomal peptide synthesis (NRPS), 11:431
protein engineering, 11:430, 431
Size-based separation, in nanofiltration membranes,
5:833
Size effect, 11:679
Size exclusion chromatograms, 3:100
Size exclusion chromatography (SEC), 6:510,
7:716–718, 8:354
with FTIR for composition and structure
determination, 13:757
for molar mass determination, 2:739, 740
for molecular weight determination, 13:763
for sample preparation for polymer characterization,
2:735
Size exclusion chromatography, 3:102–123
column technology in, 3:111–113
data treatment in, 3:120–123
eluent selection in, 3:113, 114
equilibrium theories for, 3:106
for molecular weight distribution determination,
8:671–674
fractionation, 6:249–257
history of, 3:103
instrumentation in, 3:114–120
principles of, 3:104–111
thermodynamic theories for, 3:105, 106
Size exclusion mechanism, 3:105
Sizing, 11:690
Skarkskin, 11:352, 353
Skin-adhesion inhibitors, 1:422
Skin and finger formation, in polymer coagulation,
8:558, 559
Skin-core structure, fiber, 10:528
Skin packaging
thermoforming, 10:87, 88
Slab stock foams, 11:241, 242
Slabstock foam, flexible. *See also* High resiliency (HR)
slabstock foam 2
Slate powder
filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
filler properties, 5:379
Slide coating, multilayer, 3:285
Slide plate screen changer, 5:627, 628
Slide-ring CRD-NRV mixer, 5:666
Slide ring gels, 9:4, 5
Sliding contact model, of scratch behavior, 12:323, 324
Sliding contacts, frictional energy dissipation modes,
13:504
Slip agents, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
films, 5:808
Slip-coating-sintering process, 7:763, 764
Slip-link model, 9:21
Slip/antiblock agents, 1:359, 360
Slit-films
olefin fibers, 9:359, 360
Slitting
PET and PEN films, 10:504, 505
propylene polymers, 11:403
Slot coating, 3:269
multilayer, 3:286
Slotted flight mixers, 5:659
Slow crack growth, 6:327–330
Slurry plastomers, 5:547
Slurry polymerization
of acrylonitrile, 1:275, 276
ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:599, 600
of LLDPE, 5:565, 566
Slurry technology, for manufacturing HDPE, 5:504, 505
Slush molding, of thermoplastics, 1:807
SMA. *See* Styrene maleic anhydride (SMA)
Small-angle light scattering (SALS)
for composition and structure determination, 13:760
Small-angle neutron scattering (SANS) technique,
7:216
for composition and structure determination, 13:760
spin probe in ion-containing polymers, 5:15
Small angle neutron scattering (SANS), 12:12
Small-angle scattering (SAS) methods, 5:228
Small-angle x-ray scattering (SAXS), 2:193, 749
for crystallinity determination, 4:150, 152, 153
spin probe in ion-containing polymers, 5:15

- Small chemicals, 3:553
- Small outline J-lead, 5:66
- Small outline package, 5:66
- Smart colloids, 3:463
- Smart cotton-based wound dressings, 4:32, 33
- Smart material, 9:776
 - high performance fibers, 6:719
 - interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:140, 141
 - Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:424
- Smart materials, microgels, 8:96–114
 - applications, 8:110–114
 - characterization, 8:101–103
 - colloid stability, 8:107
 - comonomer effects, 8:108, 109
 - novel morphologies, 8:99, 100
 - osmotic deswelling, 8:108
 - preparation, 8:97–101
 - preparation of core-shell, 8:100, 101
 - rheological properties, 8:107, 108
 - swelling behavior, 8:106, 107
 - thermal properties, 8:103–106
- Smart polymer, 12:603–622
 - in bioanalytical systems and microfluidics, 12:619–621
 - in bioseparation, 12:609, 610
 - biotechnological and biomedical applications, 12:603–621
 - chemical valves, 12:613–616
 - liposomes and polysomes with triggered release of content, 12:616–619
 - pH-sensitive, 12:604
 - reversibly cross-linked polymer networks, 12:606
 - smart pills with enteric coating, 12:607, 608
 - smart surfaces—cell detachment, 12:610–613
 - systems with smart polymers, 12:606, 607
 - thermosensitive, 12:605, 606
- Smart windows, 4:790
- SMC. *See* Sheet molding compounds (SMC)
- Smectic A* phase, 5:754, 759, 760, 763
- Smectic C* phase, 5:755, 759, 760
 - FLCE film, thickness change, 5:763, 768, 768
 - polar FLCE sample, elongation of, 5:763
- Smectite clays
 - layered host structures exhibiting intercalation, 7:74
- Smith-Ewart nucleation model, 5:166, 167, 170
- Smith & Ewart neglected radical exit, 5:173
- Smog, 3:462
- Smoke, 6:39
 - as colloid, 3:437
- Smoke density
 - composite foams, 3:510
- Smoke-developed index (SDI), 6:89
- Smoke extinction area (SEA), 6:81, 82
 - halogen containing polymers, association with, 6:83
 - variations across polymers, 6:82
- Smoke-forming tendency, 6:83
- Smoke point, 6:83
- Smoke production, chemical structure, effect on, 6:83
- Smoking-cessation programs, Nicorette, 7:189
- Smooth bore extruder, 5:645
- Snack packaging, 9:475
- Snthetic fillers
 - for rubber compounding, 12:223, 224
- SO₂. *See* Sulfur dioxide
- Soap, 1:667
 - in cold SBR production, 13:273
- Soap suds
 - as colloid, 3:437
- Society for the Plastics Industry, 5:535
- Soda cellulose IV, 2:585
- Soda-lime glass, 8:503
- Sodium acrylate
 - copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 - template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- Sodium alginate
 - in interpenetrating network, 7:143
- Sodium alginate membranes, 8:28
 - cross-linking of, 8:28
- Sodium bicarbonate, 2:263, 8:394
- Sodium bisulfite, poly(acrylamide) reaction with, 1:129
- Sodium borohydride, 2:267
- Sodium carboxymethylcellulose. *See* Carboxymethylcellulose
- Sodium caseinate, 2:492
- Sodium dodecyl sulfate (SDS), 8:441, 5:175
- Sodium ethylenesulfonate, 5:611
 - commercial use, 5:615, 616
 - copolymerization yield, 5:614
 - copolymerization, 5:614
 - polymerization, 5:612
 - preparation, 5:612
 - reactivity factors, 5:614
- Sodium lauryl sulfate
 - solubility of vinyl acetate in, 14:654
- Sodium methallyl sulfonate (SMAS)
 - comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234
- Sodium naphthalene solutions, 7:307, 308
- Sodium perborate monohydrate curing of polysulfides, 11:169–171
- Sodium silicate
 - drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Sodium thiocyanate (NaSCN)
 - acrylic fibers solution spinning solvent, 1:241, 246
- Sodium vinyl sulfonate
 - template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- Sodium *p*-(sulfophenyl) methallyl ether (SPME)
 - comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234
- Sodium *p*-(vinylbenzene)sulfonate (SSS)
 - comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234
- Soft-baking, 5:71
- Soft clay
 - effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
 - effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Soft glass, 6:367
- Soft lithography techniques, 5:108
- “Soft phase in hard matrix” composite, wear, 13:520
- Softeners
 - for tire compounding, 12:256
- Softening regime
 - and yield, 15:452
- Software
 - calibration, 3:122
 - chromatographic packages, 3:93
 - coating model, 3:288
- Soil conditioning, acrylamide polymer applications in, 1:119
- Soil-release polymers, 11:705

- Sol, 3:437, 458
- Sol-gel coatings, 3:337
- Sol-gel process, 7:763–765
- Solar cells, 12:**626–650**
- bilayer heterojunction devices, 12:631–633
 - bulk heterojunction devices, 12:663, 664
 - characteristic parameters, 12:628, 629
 - device architectures, 12:629–634
 - indium tin oxide (ITO) films, 12:629
 - molecular materials, 12:634, 635
 - operation principles, 12:627–649
 - PEDOT:PSS layer, 12:630
 - single layer devices, 12:631
 - vacuum deposition technique, 12:635
- Solar light, standard reporting conditions (SRC) (table), 12:637
- Solar radiation, 15:243, 244
- spectral effects of, 15:245
- Solar radiation. *See also* Sunlight; Ultraviolet (uv) light/radiation
- Solder materials and, 3:647
- Solid (homogeneous) vinyl tiles, 6:122, 123
- Solid aerosol, 3:437
- Solid emulsions, 3:437
- Solid epoxy resins, 5:305–312
- average U.S. price, 5:299
- Solid foams, 3:437
- Solid-gel transition temperature, 10:45
- Solid-glass microspheres, 8:503
- composition and physical properties, 8:504
 - manufacture, 8:503, 504
 - uses, 8:504, 505
- Solid-glass, 8:504
- Solid-like polymers, nonlinear viscoelastic response of, 15:145–163
- Solid-liquid separations, acrylamide polymers for, 1:118, 119
- Solid microspheres, 8:505
- Solid mixers, in plastics technology, 3:555, 556
- Solid-phase peptide synthesis, 11:61–90
- procedures, 11:80–89
- Solid-plastic microspheres, 8:504
- Solid polymer electrolytes
- phosphazenes, 11:105
- Solid-state CD spectroscopy, 12:656, 670
- Solid-state chiral chemistry, 12:656
- Solid-state circular dichroism spectroscopy, 12:**655–681**
- optically different layers, Mueller matrix expression, 12:677–681
 - solid sample with a layer structure, 12:673–681
- Solid-state coextrusion, 12:685, 686
- Solid-state drawing, 11:694
- Solid-state extrusion, 12:**685–698**
- applications, 12:697, 698
 - based on simple shear, 12:695–697
 - with changes in billet shape, 12:685–695
- Solid-state nuclear magnetic resonance
- for crystallinity determination, 4:159–164
- Solid-state polymerization (SSP), 12:**700–727**, 13:745
- apparatus and assemblies, 12:712–714
 - Buhler process, 12:714
 - continuous processes under inert gas flow, 12:713
 - PET precrystallization, 12:701
 - of polyamide plastics, 10:282
 - UOP-Sinco process, 12:714
- Solid-state shear pulverization, 11:665
- Solid-state time-domain ESR, 5:8
- Solid state, polymer deformation models for, 8:548–556
- Solid supports, 11:17
- Solid surface tension, 1:372
- Solid surfaces, adhesion and, 1:363
- Solid suspensions, 3:437
- Solid thermoset resins, hyperbranching in, 6:793
- Solid waste, in landfills, 13:210
- Solidification, of coatings, 3:289–297
- Solids
- dispersion methods and equipment for, 3:494
 - heat capacity, 14:62–75
 - strong, 11:682, 683
- Solids conveying, by extruders, 5:641–647
- Solids melting
- contiguous, 5:647
 - dispersed, 5:647–651
- Solubility of polymers, 2:4, 12:**732–764**
- of aromatic polyamides, 10:216
 - barrier polymers, 2:8–21
 - characterization methods, 2:756
 - of a colorant, 3:469
 - ethylene oxide polymers, 5:445–450
 - and fractional free volume, 2:11
 - gases in polymers, 8:303–305
 - monomers for heterophase polymerization, 6:632, 633, 635–637
 - of polyacrylonitrile, 1:281
 - polysulfone resistance to, 11:193–195
 - separation by, for sample preparation for polymer characterization, 2:734, 735
- Solubility coefficient, 14:309
- Solubility in water, of polyacrylamides, 1:119–122
- Solubilized and/or dispersed gels, 8:439
- Solution (wet) spinning, 5:841
- Solution adhesives, 1:414–416
- Solution-cast composite membranes, 7:761, 762
- Solution-cast ternary i-PMMA/s-PMMA/PEO blends, 13:660
- Solution diffusion
- in membranes with nonporous selective layer, 5:830
- Solution-diffusion, 5:834
- Solution-diffusion mechanism, 8:2, 14:297, 298
- Solution dyeing
- olefin fibers, 9:351
- Solution fractionation, 6:235, 236
- Solution-phase process for LLDPE, 5:565
- Solution polymerization reactors, 2:283–292
- Solution polymerization. *See also* Bulk polymerization; Solution polymers; Solutions
- of acrylamide, 1:135, 136
 - acrylonitrile, 1:237, 238
 - of acrylonitrile, 1:275
 - of aromatic polyamides, 10:217–219
 - ethylene copolymers, 5:431, 432
 - ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:597–599
 - polybutadiene processes, 2:317, 318
 - vinyl acetate polymers, 14:666
- Solution polymers. *See also* Solution polymerization
- Solution precipitation, 7:752

- Solution processes, for manufacturing HDPE, 5:503, 504
- Solution properties
- hyperbranched polymers, 6:782, 783
 - lignin, 7:536, 537
 - polymer characterization methods, 2:740–742
- Solution properties, of cross-linked polymer, 4:103, 104
- Solution SBR process, 13:270, 273–276
- Solution spinning, 7:766–768
- acrylic fibers, 1:241–248
 - PAN-based carbon fibers, 2:469
 - polyamide fibers, 10:247
- Solutions
- concentrated, 15:103, 104
 - dyes and, 3:468
 - entangled polymer, 15:106–111
 - osmotic pressure of, 7:744
 - polyacrylamides, 1:122–124
- Solvation
- role of water in, 15:176, 177
- Solvent-annealed films with enhanced chain mobility, neck defects, 12:301, 302
- Solvent-based solution adhesives, 1:414, 415
- Solvent bonding, of polysulfones, 11:198
- Solvent-borne urethanes, 11:255
- Solvent-coagulant miscibility, 8:559, 560
- Solvent delivery instrumentation, HPLC, 3:89, 90
- Solvent-developed photosensitive materials, 5:74–78
- Solvent diffusion. emulsification and, 8:414
- Solvent dyes, 3:488, 489
- Solvent effects
- in copolymerization, 3:764–770
- Solvent evaporation, 8:384, 392
- controlled drug release technology, 3:746
- Solvent evaporation, polymer precipitation by, 7:754, 755
- Solvent extraction
- butadiene, 2:298
- Solvent extraction technique, 8:427
- Solvent extraction, of PHAs, 10:107, 108
- Solvent free attrition process, 3:483
- Solvent-free coatings
- epoxy resins, 5:386–390
- Solvent-impregnated resins (SIRs), 7:159
- Solvent-induced gelation, 3:747
- Solvent-induced self-healing systems, 12:355
- Solvent recovery
- bulk and solution polymerization reactors, 2:292
- Solvent-soluble polyimides, 5:73, 74
- Solvent-solution casting
- films, 5:820
- Solvent-switch method, 8:274
- Solvent systems, mixed, 8:563–566
- Solvent vapor removal, from air, 5:836
- Solvent-weld adhesives, 1:414
- Solvents
- anionic polymerization of polydienes, 1:630–633
 - anionic polymerization of styrenes and dienes, 1:600, 601, 613–617
 - for aromatic polyamide synthesis, 10:213
 - carbocationic polymerization, 2:399–401
 - for cellulose, 2:589–591
 - for cellulose direct dissolution, 2:692, 697–699
 - coating, 3:289
 - in CSM preparations, 5:475, 476
 - effect on polyamide plastics, 10:282
 - ethylene copolymerization, 5:432
 - for lyocell process, 2:692–694
- Solvolytic, of nylon, 10:244
- Sonic and ultrasonic test methods
- acoustic emission (AE) analysis, 9:110
 - acoustic microscopy, 9:111
 - air-coupled ultrasonics, 9:111
 - piezoceramic lead zirconate titanate (PZT) sensors, 9:110
 - PMC structure, 9:110
 - PZT fibers, 9:110
 - quantitative ae analysis, 9:110
 - ultrasonic computer tomography, 9:111
 - ultrasonic c-scan, 9:110, 111
 - ultrasonic waves, 9:110
- Sonic waves, 1:61
- Sonication-induced polymerization, 11:514
- Sonogashira coupling, 1:35
- Soot, 6:39
- concentration (luminosity), 6:37
 - formation, chemical pathways, 6:39
- Sorghum*
- species with fiber potential, 14:497
- Sorption coefficient, 7:791, 792
- Sound absorption, 1:61, 65–69
- hysteresis absorption, 1:71, 72
 - measurements, 1:88, 89
- Sound power transmission coefficient, 1:72
- Sound speed, 1:62, 82–84
- measurements, 1:84–88
- Source-based nomenclature
- CA index name, 9:91–93
 - for common polymers (table), 9:81, 82
 - IUPAC name, 9:73–77
 - principle of, 9:71, 72
- Source-based polymer representation, 13:152–176
- Soy-based polyurethane foam, 1:813, 814
- Soy oil
- feedstock for environmentally degradable plastics, 2:89–91
- Soybean peroxidase (SBP), 5:264, 275
- SoyOyl, 2:91
- SP-PLP-EPR method, 7:378, 379, Smoluchowski description, 7:379
- SP1049C, 8:290, 291
- Space-charge field, 9:751
- Space filling and seals
- cellular polymers, 2:546
- Spallation, 9:52
- Spandex fibers
- applications, 5:780–782
 - chemical composition of, 5:769–771
 - chemical properties, 5:779, 780
 - economic aspects, 5:780
 - manufacture, 5:772–779
 - mechanical properties, 5:771
 - physical properties, 5:771
- Spandex fibers, 11:231–233
- Spark erosion techniques, 3:582
- Spatial correlation, 9:767

- Spatial light modulation, 5:110, 9:748
- Special chain transfer, 11:531, 532
- Special-grade carbon blacks, 2:456–460
- Special purpose rubbers
 compounding, 12:211–214
 defined, 12:204
- Specialty epoxy resins, 5:320–323
- Specialty photoinitiators
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:723, 724
- Specialty plasticizers (SP), 10:46
- Specialty polystyrenes, 13:186–207
- Specific adsorption, 8:684
- Specific heat
 cellular polymers, 2:538
- Specific heat capacity, 14:4, 5, 22
 temperature dependence, 14:34
 polymer properties, 14:33, 34
- Specific interactions, in plasticization, 10:45
- Specifications
 chitin and chitosan, 3:39
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:455, 456
 polyacrylamides, 1:144
 polyamide plastic, 10:294, 295
 polycyanoacrylate, 10:431
 polysulfide, 11:175
 raw wool, 15:306–308
 styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:278
 vinyl acetate polymers, 14:671–673
- Spectral profiles, 5:32
- Spectral properties
 xylylene polymers, 15:430–433
- Spectrometry, electron spin resonance. *See also* Mass spectrometry
- Spectrophotometers
 in color quality control, 3:491
 infrared and ultraviolet, 3:104
- Spectrophotometry
 paint forensics applications, 6:189
- Spectroscopic low energy electron microscope (SPLEEM), 15:379
- Spectroscopic techniques for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:475
 use in forensic analysis, 6:181
- Speed reducer, in an extruder, 5:631
- Spherical fillers
 phenolic resin applications, 9:617, 618
- Spherical inclusion, detachment from, 1:393, 394
- Spherical micelles, 8:279
- Spherulites, 4:169, 170, 5:498
 polypropylene, 11:358, 359
 semicrystalline polymers, 12:394–396
- Spherulitic structure, 5:549
 of polypropylene, 6:321
- Spider orb web, 12:542, 543, 545
- Spider silk glands
 function and location (table), 12:543
- Spider silk, 12:542
- Spider coating
 of irregular surfaces, 3:287
- Spin-coating technique, 2:197
- Spin coherences, in NMR, 9:244–248
- Spin contamination, 3:602
- Spin-draw spinning process, 10:249
- Spin-echoes, in NMR, 9:246–248
- Spin orbit coupling (SOC), 7:512
- Spin probes, 4:366
- Spinel black, 3:471
- Spinnerette orifice shapes, 10:255
- Spinnerettes (spinnerets), 3:497, 498, 10:248
 bicomponent, 10:260
- Spinning machines, development of, 10:248, 249
- Spinning methods/processes, 3:498, 10:249–256
- Spinning speeds, 10:527
- Spinning. *See also* Dry spinning; Fiber spinning; Post-spinning processes; Wet spinning
 new developments in, 10:250–252
 of PPTA, 10:222
 scales of, 10:530
- Spinodal curves, of phase transformation, 9:563
- Spinodal decomposition, 9:563, 564
- Spinodal dewetting, 9:568
- Spinodal ordering, 9:565
- Spinuvs A36, 14:467
- Spiral mandrel die, 5:675, 676
- Spiral-wound membrane modules, 7:768, 769, 773
- Spiral-wound modules, 7:793
- Splaying, 1:319
- Split-valence basis sets, 3:599
- Splitting, 5:146, 147
- Sponge processing
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:605, 606
- Spontaneous initiation, polystyrene production by, 13:215, 217
- Spontaneous polymerization, temperature dependence, 5:755, 757
- Sports and leisure
 high performance fiber applications, 6:724
- sPP. *See* Syndiotactic polypropylene (sPP)
- Spray
 rigid polyurethane, 2:551
- Spray bonding
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:227
- Spray-buffing polishes, 6:112
- Spray chilling, 8:386
- Spray coaters, 3:265
- Spray coatings
 of irregular surfaces, 3:286
- Spray-dried flavor-filled capsules, 8:395
- Spray-dried phenolic resins
 manufacture, 9:591
- Spray-dry encapsulation processes, 8:385, 392
 flow diagram, 8:386
- Spray-dry encapsulation, 8:386
- Spray drying
 controlled drug release technology, 3:746
- Spreading coefficient, 11:703
- Spruce lignin, 7:527
- Sprues, in injection molds, 10:83, 84
- SPS. *See* Sulfonated polystyrene (SPS)
- sPS. *See* Syndiotactic polystyrene (sPS)
- Spun bonded fabrics, 9:185–193
 propylene polymers, 11:402, 403
- Spun-bonded nonwovens, 5:682
- Spun filaments, drawing of, 10:531–534
- Spunbonded polyester, 9:206
- Spunbonded polypropylene, 9:206

- Spunbonded products
 physical properties (table), 9:181
- Square flow channel, 5:670, 671
- Square quad flat package, 5:66
- Square-well potential bond models, 8:577
- Squared dipole moment (ae 2), from conformation geometry, 3:696
- Squared end-to-end vectors, 9:15
- SRIM. *See* Structural reaction injection molding (SRIM)
- SSCs. *See* Single-site catalysts (SSCs)
- SSP polymers, 12:701
- SSZ-13 zeolite, 8:10
- Stabaxol, 7:254
- Stability
 characterization methods, 2:755
 latexes, 7:459, 460
 olefin fibers, 9:349, 350
- Stabilization, 13:1–46, 44. *See also* Photostabilization
- antioxidants in, 13:11–18
- history of technology, 13:1, 2
- safer and more efficient, 13:36–42
- thermal, 13:21–30
- time-controlled, 13:34–36
- Stabilized polystyrene, 13:188
- Stabilizers, 13:1, 2. *See also* Heat stabilizers; UV stabilizers
- amino resin, 1:530
- compatibility with polymers, 13:19, 20
- diffusion, volatility, and leachability of, 13:20
- films, 5:808
- heterophase polymerization, 6:624–629, 644–656
- latexes, 7:459, 460
- long-term thermal, 13:28–30
- melt-processing, 13:21–28
- nylon, 10:283
- performance of, 13:18–20
- for polychloroprene latex, 3:76
- processing, 13:26–28
- test methods, 13:760
- vinyl acetate polymerization, 14:669, 670
- Stabilizers, in plastics compounding, 3:551
- Stable atmospheric pressure nonequilibrium plasmas, 13:530
- Stable jet, 5:149
- Stable microemulsions, 8:184
- Stand-up pouches, 9:472
- Standard of Indiana catalyst system, 5:558
- Standardized tests, for adhesives, 1:407
- Standardizing test, 15:273
- Standards
 polyamide plastic, 10:294, 295
- polycyanoacrylate, 10:431
- Stannoxane, 7:679
- Stannoxane functionality, 7:680
- Staple, 10:223
- Staple fiber processes, 10:533
- Staple fibers, 10:253, 254
- PET, 10:511
- physical properties of selected, 1:229
- Staple form glass fibers, 11:689
- Staple properties, of nylon, 10:245, 246
- Staple tow, 5:681, 682
- Star-block polymers, 13:169
- Star-branched butyl rubber, 2:353, 354
- structure, 2:361, 362
- Star-branched polymers
 anionic polymerization, 1:599
- Star branched polystyrene, 13:188
- Star conducting polymers, 4:805
- Star copolymer, and ATRP, 1:736, 737
- Star copolymers, RAFT polymerization, 11:737, 738
- Star ionomers, 7:227, 228
- Star polymer catalysts (SC1, SC2) and ligands, 8:445
- Star polymer ligands, 8:444, 445
- Star polymers, 4:300, 7:639, 640
- structural representation, 13:170, 171
- synthesis of, 3:206–208
- Star polymers, GTP, 6:539, 540
- Starblock copolymers, 8:498, 499, 13:282, 283
- Starch, 13:51–69, 15:190, 191
- based bioplastics, 13:65, 66
- based materials, 13:59
- biodegradable natural polymer, 2:110, 111
- cellulose derivative systems, 13:65
- derivatives/polycaprolactone (PCL) blends, reactive extrusion, 11:645
- EAA complex, 13:57
- environmentally degradable plastic, 2:82, 83, 91, 92
- EVOH films, water permeability of, 13:59
- EVOH systems, 13:61
- filled materials, 13:52
- filled plastics, 13:51, 52
- filled polyethylenes, 13:52
- filler material, 5:785
- grafted polyesters, 13:64
- hydro-biodegradation, 4:292
- PCL nanocomposites, reaction extrusion, 11:647
- reaction extrusion, 11:645
- vinyl alcohol copolymer systems, 13:58
- water system, 13:54
- Starch-based foams, 2:91
- Starch derivatives, 15:190, 191
- in controlled drug release system, 3:753
- Starch gelatinization, 13:53
- differential scanning calorimetry (DSC), 13:53
- Starch granules, 13:53
- Starch-iodine complex, 3:157
- Starch-poly(ϵ -caprolactone) blends
 environmentally degradable plastics, 2:88
- Starch-poly(vinyl alcohol) blends
 environmentally degradable plastics, 2:87, 88
- Starch-polyethylene blends
 environmentally degradable plastics, 2:87
- Starches, adhesive, 1:428, 429
- Starve feeding, 5:643, 644
- Starved conditions in monomer addition, 5:181
- Static charge, 4:738
- Static heat extraction, 13:760
- Static light scattering, 2:201
- Static plane-strain toughness values, 6:321
- Static structure function, 1:556
- Stationary phase, in HPLC chromatography, 3:90, 91
- Stationary polymerization, 11:553–555
- chain length distribution, 11:561–568
- Statistical amphiphilic polymers, 15:222–229

- Statistical copolymerization
 living radical copolymerization, 3:790, 791
- Statistical strength of fibers, 11:684, 685
- Statistical theory of real networks, 4:663–665
- Statistical thermodynamics, 13:75–80
 dilute solution, 13:79
 equilibrium problems, 13:76, 77
 nonequilibrium problems, 13:77–79
 phase transformation, 9:560
 semidilute systems, 13:79, 80
- Statistical weight matrix (U), conformational partition
 function and, 3:691, 692
- Steady-state behavior, 15:106
- Steady-state compliance, in DE model, 15:129, 130
- Steady-state creep compliance, 1:466
- Steady-state polymerization (SSP), 7:355
 conversion, 7:367–371
 gel effect, 7:369
 glass effect, 7:369
 Mayo equation, 7:358
 method of moments, 7:370
 molecular weight distribution, 7:361–365
 number-average degree, 7:358–361
 polydispersity index (or dispersity), 7:365–367
 rate of, 7:355–357
 Trommsdorff effect/Trommsdorff-Norrish effect,
 7:369
- Steady-state rate, 5:173
- “Stealth” liposomes, 14:548
- Steam explosion
 for lignocellulose breakdown, 2:574
 for viscose manufacture, 2:697
- Steam-heated drum dryers, 5:477
- Stearic acid
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:426
 for rubber compounding, 12:236
- n*-stearyl methacrylate polymerization, 9:639
- Steel
 fatigue crack propagation, 5:722
 specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
- Steel fibers
 mechanical properties compared to silk and other
 fibers, 12:547
- Steel, bonding and, 1:378
- Steeping
 in viscose process, 2:677
- Stefan-Boltzmann constant, 6:40
- Steiner Tunnel Test, 6:88
- Stem cells
 for tissue engineering, 14:215
- Stem fibers, 14:494
- Stencil printing process, 3:678
- Step-growth polymerization
 telechelic polymers, 13:720–724
- Step-growth polymerizations
 in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:58–60
- Step-growth template polymerization, 13:752, 753
- Step-reaction polymerization, 2:717, 718, 3:125,
 13:82–88
 binaphthyl-bridged salen ligand, 13:108
 bridged fluorenyl-amide titanium complex, 13:106
 C1-symmetric Ti complex, 13:103
 C2-symmetric Zr bis(benzamidinate) complex, 13:102
 C3-symmetric Zr tris(benzamidinate) complex,
 13:102
 Half-metallocene complexes, 13:98
 isoselective propylene polymerization, 13:94
 isotactic propylene polymerization, 13:94
 Ni diimine catalyst, 13:106, 107
 nonmetallocene transition metal complexes, 13:99
 propylene polymerization, 13:92–107
 Ti complexes with phenoxyimine ligands, 13:102
 trans-cis selectivity, 13:88
 Ziegler-type V catalyst (V(acac)₃/AlEt₂Cl), 13:104
- Step strain rate test, 12:16, 17
- Step-strains, in viscoelastic theory, 15:88
- Stephan single-site catalyst, 5:563, 564
- Stereo binocular microscopy
 forensics applications, 6:178
- Stereoblock polypropylene, synthesis of, 13:104–107
- Stereochemical composition, chain conformations and,
 3:700
- Stereochemistry, 8:162
 anionic polymerization, 1:628–638
 structural representation, 13:171
- Stereoisomers, polyketone, 10:652
- Stereology, 6:296
- Stereomicroscopes
 use in forensic analysis, 6:180
- Stereoregular PMMA, 13:655
- Stereoregular polymers, 3:127, 13:88–117
 catalyzed polymerization, 13:91, 92
 stereochemistry, 13:91
- Stereoselective polymerization mechanism, 13:92,
 126–144
- Stereoselective polymerization. *See also*
 Enantioselective polymerization
 metallocenes, 8:118–125
- Stereospecific polymerization, 3:126, 13:91
- Stereospecific polymerization catalysts
 propylene or α -olefins, block copolymerization, 13:111
- Steric effects
 colloids, 3:454–456
- Steric stabilization
 latexes, 7:459, 460
 polymer dispersions, 6:625, 653, 654–655
- Steric stabilization, of colloidal dispersion, 4:51–53
- Sterilization, of biomedical materials, 2:147–149
- Sternstein-Ongchin model, of craze initiation, 15:482,
 483
- Stick-slip behavior of crack propagation, 6:319
- Stick-slip phenomenon, 13:512, 513
- Sticky sphere approximation, 2:201
- Stiction, 1:430
- Stieltjes convolution operation, 15:160
- Stiff elastic adherends, fracture mechanics for bonds
 between, 1:394–396
- Stiff-flow polystyrenes, 13:186
- Stiffening, LD to determine, 5:60
- Stilan 100, 10:587
- Stimulated jet path, 5:149
- Stimuli-responsive amphiphilic polymers, 15:220–222
- Stimuli-responsive amphoteric gels, 10:309
- Stimuli-responsive block copolymer hydrogels,
 2:162–178
 pH-responsive block copolymer hydrogels, 2:172–174

- pH-thermoresponsive block copolymer hydrogels, 2:174–178
- thermoresponsive block copolymer hydrogels, 2:162–172
- Stimuli-responsive conjugates, 11:437–439
- Stimuli-responsive hydrogels, 6:735
- Stimuli-responsive materials, 12:409
- Stimuli-responsive microgels, 8:454
- Stimuli-responsive polymeric micelles
- pH-responsive micelles, 8:283, 284
- Stimuli-responsive polymers (SRP)/smart polymers, 11:437
- Stimuli-sensitive materials, 12:409
- Stimulus-responsive polymer, 3:19–21
- Stirred autoclave reactor, for LDPE, 5:519
- Stirred-tank reactor, 1:294
- for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:287, 288, 291, 292
- Stirred tank reactors, 5:188
- Stirrers, 5:642
- Stirring, in heat transfer, 5:192
- Stitchbonding, 9:225
- Stoichiometry, reactant, 5:69
- Stokes-Einstein equation, 2:201
- Stokes Injectoset, 3:585, 586
- Stokes Raman scattering, 14:567
- Storage
- of acrylic and methacrylic acids, 1:159, 160
- of acrylonitrile, 1:270
- butadiene, 2:300
- cyclopentadiene and dicyclopentadiene, 4:231
- of polyacrylamides, 1:144
- poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756
- of vinylidene fluoride, 15:57, 58
- Storage and handling, of phosgene, 9:629
- Storage bags, 9:477
- Storage modulus, 3:306
- Storage polysaccharides, 15:190, 191
- Storm sewer augmentation
- drag reduction application, 4:571
- Strain, 2:747, 5:696
- around crack tips, 6:309–311
- deformation and, 4:638, 639
- in fiber drawing and spinning, 10:528, 531
- for a natural rubber material, 15:118
- in piezoelectric materials, 9:781, 795
- viscoelasticity and, 15:78–80, 89–91
- Strain-dependent functions in DE model, 15:142
- Strain-energy-density function, 6:304
- Strain energy function derivatives, 15:116
- Strain energy function, Valanis-Landel, 15:116–120
- Strain-energy function, 4:661, 662
- Strain fixity rate (R_f), of shape-memory polymers, 12:414, 415
- Strain hardening
- and yield, 15:454
- Strain hardening effect, with LDPE and LLDPE, 5:527, 528
- Strain histories, two-step, 15:122
- Strain-induced crystallization, 9:9
- Strain-induced dilation, 15:461, 462
- Strain rate frequency superposition (SRFS), 12:24
- Strain rate frequency superposition test, 12:29, 30
- Strain rate, effect on stress-time behavior, 15:111
- Strain recovery rate, 12:416
- of shape-memory polymers, 12:414
- total, 12:414, 415
- Strain shift factor, of solid-like polymers, 15:155
- Strain-strain tests, 2:747, 748
- Strain tensor, 15:78
- Strained internal olefins, 10:652
- Strata-blend mixer, 5:661, 662
- Stratified agitated tower CPFR, 13:190
- StratoSphere Plugs, 11:36
- Straw-reinforced bricks, 11:679
- Streamlined die, 5:677, 678
- Strength
- fiber flexibility and, 11:682
- fillers, 5:786, 787
- as a function of dimension, 11:679, 680
- as a function of interfacial area and interaction, 11:680, 681
- as a function of reinforcing material type, 11:681, 682
- Strength tests, of composites, 11:687
- Stress, 2:747. *See also* Fracture stress
- around crack tips, 6:305–311
- deformation and, 4:638
- in fiber drawing and spinning, 10:528, 531
- in fibers, 11:686, 687
- for a natural rubber material, 15:114, 115
- nonuniform, 5:672
- physical aging effects of large, 1:467, 468
- in piezoelectric materials, 9:777, 779–781
- size effect and, 11:679
- units of, 4:638
- viscoelasticity and, 15:78–80, 89–91
- Stress-bias criterion, 6:331, 332
- Stress buffer coat films, physical properties of, 5:84
- Stress buffer coatings, 5:65, 66–82
- materials for, 5:68
- non-photosensitive, 5:75
- Stress concentration effects, 11:686
- Stress-cracking, 11:193
- Stress cracking, 6:287
- corrosive, 6:291–294
- environmental, 6:291–294, 332, 333
- Stress criteria, multiaxial, 6:331, 332
- Stress-deformation response, 15:114
- Stress-elongation curves, 8:477
- Stress equation, in DE model, 15:134
- Stress exponent, 5:469
- Stress field, 11:683
- Stress fracture, normal, 6:286
- Stress-free state, of shape-memory polymers, 12:415
- Stress history
- and fatigue, 5:705
- Stress-intensity factor and fracture energy, device for measurement of, 4:140
- Stress-intensity factor, 6:305–307
- relation to energy-release rate, 6:307–309
- Stress plot, for Neo-Hookean and Mooney-Rivlin materials, 15:115
- Stress ratio, 5:696
- Stress relaxation, 12:13–16, 15:82. *See also* Relaxation modulus; Viscoelasticity
- amorphous polymers, 1:569

- in DE model, 15:135
- olefin fibers, 9:348, 349
- of solid-like polymers, 15:155
- test methods, 13:774, 775
- time scales for, 1:468
- Stress relaxation experiments
 - single-step, 15:140, 141
 - two-step, 15:142–144
- Stress relaxation isotherms, for amorphous polyisobutylene, 15:94
- Stress-relaxation measurements, for styrene polymers, 13:183
- Stress relaxation modulus, 1:464, 569
- Stress relaxation response, of entangled polymer melts, 15:107–109
- Stress relaxation tests, 2:749
- Stress relaxometer, automatic, 4:641
- Stress-relief additives, 5:88
- Stress response
 - to an arbitrary flow history, 15:140
 - in DE model, 15:136
- Stress-reversing flows, 15:124
- Stress shift factor, of solid-like polymers, 15:158
- Stress-strain behavior
 - composite foams, 3:507–509
- Stress-strain curves, 4:640, 645, 8:551, 13:773
 - compressive loading, 15:455, 456
 - in fiber drawing, 10:531
 - of polyethylene, 6:324
 - for polyethylene sheets, 8:569
 - semicrystalline polymers, 15:477
 - uniaxial tensile loading, 15:452
- Stress-strain isotherms, 9:4, 21, 29
- Stress-strain measurements
 - degree of cross-linking and, 4:666, 667
 - in uniaxial extension, 4:660, 661
- Stress-strain plot, in viscoelastic theory, 15:90
- Stress-strain properties, of styrene polymers, 13:180–183
- Stress-stretch response, 15:114
- Stress-temperature curves, for sulfur-vulcanized rubber, 4:652
- Stress tensor, 15:78
 - for piezoelectric materials, 9:780, 781
- Stress-to-strain ratio. *See* Young's modulus
- Stress transfer efficiency, 11:681
- Stress transfer, 6:324–327, 11:685
- Stretch blow molding, 2:218
- Stretch blow molding, for plastic bottle design, 2:274
- Stretch film, 9:477–479
- Stretch hooder, 9:478
- Stretch hooder film, 9:478
- Stretch hosiery, 10:259
- Stretched exponential function, 1:464
- Stretching, in membranes, 5:837
- Stretching. *See also* Extension
 - thermodynamics of, 4:651–653
- Stripe LCP texture, 7:567
- Stroft substances, 1:378, 379
- Strong acid cation exchanger resins, 7:169
 - water softening, 7:172
- Strong acid cation exchangers, 7:169
- Strong base anion exchange resins, 7:169
- Strong segregation limit, 2:194
- Strong solids, 11:681, 682
- Structural adhesives, 1:416–427, 6:414–416
- Structural analysis
 - composite materials, 3:541, 542
 - vibrational spectroscopy application, 14:574–599
- Structural applications
 - epoxy resins, 5:398–409
- Structural beams, 15:281
- Structural components
 - cellular polymers, 2:545
- Structural composite lumbers, 15:298, 299
- Structural development, 10:699
 - Polycarbonates (PC), 10:721
 - Polypropylene (PP), 10:720, 721
 - preparation and phase structure development, 10:682–700
 - recyclates of, 10:721, 722
 - semicrystalline polymers, 10:710–712
 - small-angle neutron scattering (SANS), 10:696, 697
 - small-angle X-ray scattering (SAXS), 10:696, 697
 - solution blending, 10:682
 - structure determination, 10:696
 - toughness of, 10:709–715
 - ultrasmall-angle neutron scattering spectrometer (USANS), 10:697
 - wide angle X-ray scattering (WAXS), 10:696
- Structural foam
 - injection molding, 10:84, 85
- Structural foam molding, 7:8, 9
- Structural foams, 2:533
- Structural properties, effect on conformational properties, 3:700
- Structural reaction injection molding (SRIM), 1:800, 10:91
- Structural recovery, 1:452
 - of glassy materials, 15:159
 - modeling, 1:473–476
- Structural reinforced injection molding
 - composite materials, 3:516
- Structural relaxation
 - composite materials, 3:534–538
- Structural repeating unit, 13:152–154
- Structural representation of polymers, 13:151–176
 - complex polymers, 13:163–171
 - double-strand (ladder) polymers, 13:173
 - inorganic and quasi-inorganic polymers, 13:172, 173
 - oligomers and telomers, 13:175, 176
 - organizations and databases, 13:157
 - regular, single-strand organic polymers, 13:159–163
 - retrieval of polymer structures, 13:158, 159
 - siloxanes and silicones, 13:173–175
 - stereochemistry of polymers, 13:171
 - storage of polymer structures, 13:157, 158
- Structural-rheological simplicity, 1:463–465
- Structural unit-size analysis
 - vibrational spectroscopy, 14:583–590
- Structure
 - epoxy resins, 5:334
- Structure-based nomenclature
 - CA index name, 9:77–86
 - for common polymers (table), 9:81, 82
 - inorganic and coordination polymers (table), 9:82

- IUPAC name, 9:77–86
 principle of, 9:73
 regular double-strand organic polymers (table), 9:85
- Structure-based polymer representation, 13:152–176
- Structure-opening chemicals, 10:519
- Structure-property relationships
 cellulose, 2:575–588
 cured epoxy resins, 5:363–365
 high performance fibers, 6:716–720
 and nonlinear optical properties, 9:140–156
 polypropylene, 11:359, 360
 of polysulfones, 11:186–188
 thermoplastic elastomers, 14:137–142
- Structure-reactivity relationships
 free-radical initiators, 6:838, 839
- Structure test methods, 13:757–763
- Stubs, 4:468, 469
- Styrenated alkyd vehicles, 1:491, 492
- para*-Styrenated diphenylamine
 oxidant used in rubber, 12:195
- Styrenated phenol
 oxidant used in rubber, 12:192
- Styrene
 acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 anionic copolymerization, 1:640
 anionic polymerization, 1:605–620
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 atactic PP-block-syndiotactic PS, 13:117
 ceiling temperature, 4:255
 chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
 comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:240
 contribution of disproportionation to termination, 11:544
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 CpTi(III) species, 13:113
 density of monomer and corresponding polymer in heterogenous polymerization, 6:639
 entropy, enthalpy, and ceiling temperature for polymerization, 15:420
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 heterophase polymerization initiators and stabilizers, 6:600–624
 heterophase polymerization onto PMMA particles, 6:663, 664
 heterophase polymerization solubility effects, 6:635, 636, 638
 heterophase polymerization with emulsifier, 6:600, 601
 heterophase polymerization, 6:601, 602, 604, 605
 inhibition constants of selected inhibitors, 11:582
 isoprene-styrene (SIS), porous blends of, 13:392
 isospecific living polymerization, 13:115, 116
 isospecific polymerization, 13:115, 116
 isotactic polymerization, 13:112
 metallocene-based copolymerization with ethylene, 8:127, 128
 metallocene-based polymerization, 8:129
 methylene-bridged C₂-symmetric zirconocene (72)/MAO, 13:116
 monomer for rubber compounding, 12:204
 monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
 nitroxide-mediated polymerization, 7:651–653
 percentage of termination by combination in telechelic polymers, 13:674
 polymerization of, 13:112–117
 polymerization, 13:269–276
 racemic allyl *ansa*-lanthanidocene complexes, 13:116
 RAFT polymerization, 7:658
 self-initiated polymerization, 11:511, 512
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
 stereospecific polymerization, 13:116
 stereochemistry of anionic polymerized, 1:638
 syndiospecific polymerization, 13:112–115
 syndiotactic polymerization, 13:115
 terpolymerization with ethylene-propylene, 5:431
 thermal polymerization, 6:612
 Thiobisphenoxy titanium complexes, 13:114
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
 with ethylene, copolymerization of, 13:116
- Styrene-acrylic acid
 heterophase copolymerization, 6:653, 654
- Styrene-acrylonitrile (SAN) copolymers, 1:262
 adhesion and, 1:368
 antioxidant applications, 1:711
 UV wavelength sensitivity, 14:454
- Styrene-acrylonitrile
 glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Styrene-acrylonitrile copolymers, 1:288–290
- Styrene and acrylonitrile copolymer (SAN), 1:312
 analytical investigations of, 1:327
 composition and molecular weight, 1:315–317
 crylonitrile copolymer content of, 1:316, 317
 effect of grafted, 1:317
 grafted, 1:324, 325
 ungrafted, 1:322
- Styrene-based copolymers, 5:203
- Styrene-based W/O HIPES, 10:600
- Styrene-butadiene block copolymers, 13:279–283, 198
- Styrene-butadiene copolymers, 13:194, 195, **268–284**
- Styrene-butadiene rubber (SBR), 1:382, 383, 13:268–284, 805, 7:327, 328. *See also* Cold-emulsion SBR
 in belting, 2:70
 block copolymers of, 13:277–283, 198
 cold emulsion process for, 13:270–273
 compounding, 12:208, 209
 economic aspects and use of, 13:283, 284
 history of, 13:269
 monomers in, 13:269
 physical properties, 12:207
 polymerization, 13:270–276
 processing of, 13:276–278
 solution process for, 13:270, 273–276
 specifications, testing, and environmental aspects of, 13:278
 for tire compounding, 12:253, 254
- Styrene-butyl acrylate
 heterophase polymerization solubility effects, 6:634

- Styrene-chloroprene copolymers
monomer reactivity ratios for different
polymerization mechanisms, 3:801
- Styrene copolymers, 13:193–195
rubber-modified, 13:204
- Styrene derivatives, polymers of, 13:195, 196
- Styrene-DVB copolymer, 7:157
- Styrene-isoprene-2-vinylpyridine block copolymers,
7:320
- Styrene-isoprene-ethylene sulfide block copolymers,
7:319
- Styrene-isoprene-styrene(S-I—S) block copolymers,
7:318, 319
- Styrene-maleic anhydride (SMA) copolymers, 13:235
- Styrene maleic anhydride (SMA), 1:799
- Styrene-maleic anhydride
glass-transition temperature, 10:69
- Styrene-methyl methacrylate copolymers
monomer reactivity ratios for different
polymerization mechanisms, 3:801
- Styrene monomer, 13:269
chemically removing, 13:243–245
- Styrene plastics, additives used in, 13:248
- Styrene polymerization
commercial, 13:238–249
living free-radical, 13:227–233
- Styrene polymers, 13:179–260. *See also* Polystyrene
additives to, 13:248–250
blow molding of, 13:248
chemical characterization of, 13:250–252, 254
commercial polymerization, 13:238–249
copolymerization, 13:233–238
degradation of, 13:208–213
devolatilization of, 13:241–243
economic aspects of, 13:249–251
extrusion of, 13:247
fabrication of, 13:246–248
health and safety factors for, 13:252–254
ignition temperatures and burning rates of, 13:254
injection molding of, 13:246
inorganic-reinforced, 13:204–207
material types of, 13:186–207
mechanical properties of (table), 13:181
orientation of, 13:245–248
polymerization, 13:214–238
process *versus* mechanism for, 13:238
properties of, 13:180–186
thermoforming of, 13:247, 248
uses for, 13:252–260
- p*-Styrene sulfonic acid
template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- Styrene-vinyl acetate copolymers
monomer reactivity ratios for different
polymerization mechanisms, 3:801
- Styrene-*co*- α -methylstyrene (SAMS), 13:225, 226
- Styrene-*p*-methyl styrene co-syndiotactic copolymers,
3:146
- Styrenic block copolymers, 2:201
- Styrenic resins, 7:158
- Styrenics
antioxidant applications, 1:711
- Styroflex, 8:496
- Styrofoam, 13:252. *See also* Polystyrene foams
- Styrolux, 13:198, 199, 284
- Styropor, 13:252
- Styryl amylose amide (VAA), 6:503
- Sub-yield behavior, of amorphous materials, 15:146
- Submicrometer vapor-grown carbon fibers, 2:483
- Subsidiary lamellae, 8:713
- Substituted acetylenes. *See also* Disubstituted phenols;
Polyacetylenes
- Substrate-binding domains (SBDs)
- Substrate-catalyst matching, 1:26
- Substrates
for adhesives, 1:400
with complex surface topography, 1:366
- Sueded leather-like materials, 7:503
- Sueding
nonwoven fabrics, 9:233
- Sugars, in adhesives, 1:429
- Suint, 15:308
- Sulfate lignins, 7:543
- Sulfides
chain transfer agents, 11:531
- Sulfite liquors, 7:540
- Sulfite pulping, lignin and, 7:538
- Sulfolane, 11:181
- Sulfomethylation, of poly(acrylamide), 1:129
- Sulfonated kraft lignins, 7:544
toxicology of, 7:544
- Sulfonated polystyrene (SPS), 5:274
- Sulfonated polystyrene
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Sulfone moiety, of polysulfones, 11:189
- Sulfone-terminated copolymer, 11:438
- Sulfonium photoinitiators, 9:697–700
- Sulfonium polymers, 13:300–304
- Sulfonyl hydrazides, 2:263, 264
- Sulfopolymers. *See also* Sulfur-containing polymers
- Sulfur
accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
relationship between liquid C_p and temperature in
linear macromolecules, 14:76
standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy,
11:574
as styrene polymerization inhibitor, 13:221
- Sulfur-bridged [1]ferrocenophanes, 7:57, 58
- Sulfur compounds, divalent
peroxide decomposers, 1:698, 699
- Sulfur-containing compounds
as antioxidants, 13:27, 28
as long-term stabilizers, 13:28
- Sulfur-containing polymers, 13:286–341
poly(monosulfide)s, 13:286–300
polysulfates, 13:313, 314
poly(sulfonic acid)s and derivatives, 13:304–313
polysulfoxides, 13:325–328
polysulfoximines, 13:341
poly(thioacetal)s, 13:323–325
poly(thiocarbonate)s, 13:314–320
poly(thioester)s, 13:320–323
poly(thiourethane)s, 13:328–337
polyurethanes with sulfur linkages, 13:337–341
sulfonium polymers, 13:300–304
use of, 13:286

- Sulfur-containing polymers. *See also* Poly(arylene sulfide)s; Polysulfides (PSs)
- Sulfur dioxide (SO₂), in chlorosulfonated polyolefin preparation, 5:475
- Sulfur dioxide absorbers, 5:479
- Sulfur fiber
mechanical properties, 9:216
- Sulfur-nitrogen-phosphorus polymers, 7:47–49
- Sulfur vulcanization, 4:67–69, 12:236
- Sulfuryl chloride, in chlorosulfonated polyolefin preparation, 5:475
- Sun of bond vectors, for conformation geometry, 3:694–697
- Sumithion MC, 3:728
- Sun blinds, 14:57
- Sun protecting glazing
thermochromic polymer applications, 14:57, 58
- Sunlight. *See also* Solar radiation
polystyrene degradation by, 13:210
- Sunn, 14:495
dimensions of ultimate fibers and strands, 14:498
uses, 14:508
- Sunn hemp
processing, 14:503
- Super Camelon, 1:248
- Super focus interdigital micromixer (SFIMM), 8:337
- Super glue, 1:421
- Super-hexene LLDPE resins, 5:556
- Superabsorbent polymers, 1:166, 13:352–365
absorbency under load, 13:362, 363
in adult incontinence products, 13:364
in agriculture and horticulture, 13:364
analytical and test methods, 13:361–363
bulk density and flowability of, 13:362
in construction materials, 13:364, 365
in disposable infant diapers, 13:363, 364
drying, 13:359, 360
economic aspects, 13:360, 361
elastic shear modulus, measurement of, 13:361
in feminine hygiene products, 13:364
in food packaging, 13:365
gel bed permeability, 13:363
gel size reduction, 13:359
grinding and sieving, 13:360
manufacture of, monomer used in, 13:353, 354
modulus of elasticity, 13:356, 357
monomers, physical properties of, 13:353
NEXAFS, 15:385, 386
particle size distribution of, 13:362
polymerization, 13:358, 359
processing of, 13:359, 360
properties of, 13:354–358
in sensor systems, 13:365
rayon, 2:688
surface cross-linking, 13:360
swelling capacity, measurement of, 13:361
swelling characteristic of, 13:354–356
swelling kinetics, 13:357, 358, 362
uses of, 13:352, 363–365
- Superabsorbents, acrylamide copolymers as, 1:141
- Supercalenders, 2:378
- Supercapacitors
electrically active polymers for, 4:773
- Supercritical carbon dioxide (scCO₂), 5:244
cationic polymerizations in, 4:54–56
as heterophase polymerization porogen, 6:668
polymerization in, 4:47–60
porous polymer synthesis in, 4:59, 60
in situ polymer blend synthesis in, 4:54
as solvent, 4:47–49
step-growth polymerizations in, 4:58–60
thermal ring-opening polymerization in, 4:57
transition-metal-catalyzed polymerizations in, 4:56, 57
- Supercritical fluid chromatography
for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:674
- Supercritical fluid, 4:47, 13:369–397
- 30/70 SIS/THFMA copolymer, 13:392
acoustic methods, 13:385
atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP), 13:380
bimodal MWDs, 13:381
calorimetry, 13:385, 386
catalytic polymerizations, 13:380, 381
“CO₂-philic” part, 13:378
“CO₂-phobic” part, 13:378
critical opalescence, 13:369
cyclotetrasiloxane monomers, ring-opening polymerization, 13:388
dispersion polymerization, 13:378
fiber-optic based reactor, 13:383
Fourier transform infrared spectroscopy (FTIR), 13:382
generally regarded-as-safe (GRAS) status, 13:390
heterogeneous polymerizations, 13:378–380
homogeneous polymerizations, 13:377, 378
inverse emulsion, 13:379
low density polyethylene, 13:377
monitoring polymerizations, 13:382–386
near IR (NIR) spectrometry, 13:382
nuclear magnetic resonance (NMR) spectroscopy, 13:384
particle formation techniques, 13:392–395
particles from gas-saturated solutions (PGSS), 13:395
piston effect, 13:370
Poly(caprolactone) (PCL), 13:392
poly(dimethylsiloxane) (PDMS) macromonomer, 13:379
polymer extrusion, 13:395, 396
polymer foaming, 13:390
polymer fractionation, 13:387, 388
polymer impregnation, 13:389, 390
polymer processing, 13:386, 387
polymerizations, 13:377–382
precipitation polymerization, 13:378
primary driving force 13:371
PS-clay nanocomposites, 13:392
Raman spectroscopic peaks, 13:383
Raman spectroscopy, 13:383
rapid expansion of supercritical solutions (RESS), 13:393
residual low molecular weight impurities, 13:388, 389
rhodium-based catalysts, 13:380
solution enhanced dispersion by supercritical fluids (SEDS), 13:394
spectroscopic methods, 13:382–385

- supercritical antisolvent processes, 13:394
- supercritical fractionation, 13:387, 388
- tetrahydrofurfuryl methacrylate (THFMA) copolymers, 13:392
- UV-vis spectroscopy, 13:383, 384
- Supercritical fluid conditions, acrylamide polymerization under, 1:138
- Supercritical fluid dispersions, 13:372, 373
- Supercritical fluid phase diagram, 4:48
- Supercritical fluid reactions, 13:372
- Supercritical fluids, physical state of, 13:369–372
 - acoustic compression waves, 13:370
 - critical point, 13:369, 370
- Supercritical fluids, polymer solutions, 13:373
- Supercritical or near-critical water, 13:372
- Superengineering plastics, 10:398
- Superfloc A110, partially hydrolyzed polyacrylamide drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Superhydrophilic polymer brushes, 10:754, 755
- Superhydrophobic
 - conducting polymer, 13:420
 - ethyleneglycol dimethacrylate-based polymer, 13:418
 - fluorinated polymeric surfaces, 13:413
 - PMMA polymer, 13:429
 - polydivinylbenzene nanotubes, 13:417
 - polymer surfaces, 13:563
- Superhydrophobic nonwoven fabrics, creation of, 5:159
- Superhydrophobic polymers, 13:404–432
 - anodic aluminum oxide (AAO) template, 13:407, 408
 - anodization parameters, 13:407
 - double polymer structuration, 13:431
 - electrochemical polymerization, 13:419–422
 - electrospinning, 13:422
 - hydrophobic wax crystals, 13:404
 - laser technique, 13:416, 417
 - oxygen-etching plasma, 13:412, 413
 - plasma etching, 13:412, 413
 - plasma treatment, 13:412
 - polymer nucleation, 13:427–429
 - polymer replication, 13:411, 412
 - PTFE surfaces, 13:416
 - soft-lithography, 13:410, 411
 - structured hard masters replication, 13:411, 412
 - microfabrication, 13:410, 411
 - plasma deposition, 13:413–415
 - sputtering, 13:415, 416
 - structuration by crystallization, 13:427
- Superhydrophobic properties
 - surfaces with, 13:404
 - with conducting polymers, 13:422
- Superhydrophobic surfaces, 13:404
 - Polyaniline, 13:419
 - “tilted-drop” method, 13:406
- Superhydrophobicity, 13:406
 - controlling via selective solvent, 13:429–431
- Superimposed shear, 12:38–40
- Supermilling acid dyes, 15:332
- Supermolecular organization, 2:751
- Supermolecular organization, of polymers, 10:239
- Superpermselective membrane, ionomers in, 7:232, 233
- Supertough behavior, of PPSF, 11:191
- Suppliers, of polyacrylamides, 1:146, 147
- Supported liquid membrane, 7:746
- Supramolecular chemistry, 11:119, 13:440
- Supramolecular dendronized polymers (SDPs), 4:361, 362, 374–377
- Supramolecular polymerization mechanisms, 13:442–444
- Supramolecular polymers, 8:640, 13:440–465
 - main-chain *versus* side-chain, 8:640–642
 - plug and pluy polymers, 8:642–648
- Supramolecular self-assembly, 13:440
- Surface absorptivity, polymers, 6:54, 56
- Surface acoustic wave (SAW) atomization, 8:425
- Surface acoustic waves
 - for acoustic measurements, 1:99
- Surface-active block copolymer, 13:594, 595
- Surface activity
 - carbon black, 2:438, 439
- Surface analysis, 13:469–501
 - organic molecules on surfaces, 13:490–492
 - secondary ion mass spectrometry (SIMS), 13:476–480
 - SIMS quantitative aspects, 13:492
 - SIMS spectral features and information, 13:481–483
 - surface morphology of EMA copolymers, 13:499–501
 - surface oligomer detection and imaging, 13:496–499
 - XPS spectral features and information, 13:474–476
 - x-ray photoelectron spectroscopy (XPS), 13:469–474
- Surface arcs, 4:695, 696
- Surface area
 - carbon black, 2:434, 435
 - colloids, 3:441, 442
 - fillers, 5:787
- Surface area-to-volume ratio, 11:682
- Surface characteristics
 - AFM imaging of, 1:779–782
- Surface characterization
 - vibrational spectroscopy, 14:612–623
- Surface chemical micropatterning, 13:560
- Surface-coating methods
 - discrete, 3:286, 287
- Surface coatings, use of latex, 5:195
- Surface-directed spinodal decomposition, 9:568
- Surface discharge (table), erosion of polymers from, 4:697
- Surface energy, 11:682
 - of aliphatic fluorocarbons and hydrocarbons, 11:704
 - of main-chain liquid crystalline polymers, 7:573
 - xylylene polymers, 15:433, 434
- Surface excess, 1:435
- Surface finish
 - fatigue effects, 5:740, 741
- Surface finishes
 - functional groups for (table), 3:665
- Surface force, 12:3
- Surface forces, coating and, 3:297
- Surface fouling, 7:782
- Surface friction, of fibers, 10:523
- Surface-functionalization strategies (table), 8:789–791
- Surface gloss values, of ABS polymers, 1:318
- Surface graft polymerization, for membrane modification, 5:848
- Surface grafting, 1:376, 13:539
 - grafting from* approach, 13:542–549
- Surface immobilization, for fouling prevention, 5:848
- Surface-initiated
 - free-radical graft polymerizations (table), 13:545, 546
 - graft polymerization, 13:540

- living graft polymerization, 13:544–549
- living graft polymerizations (SILGP), modification of polymers (table), 13:552, 553
- “polymerization”, 13:540
- radical graft polymerization, 13:543, 544
- Surface-initiated living polymerizations, 7:642
- Surface-initiated NCA polymerizations, 11:52
- Surface-initiated polymerization (SIP), 7:642
- anionic polymerization, 10:739, 740
- atom transfer radical polymerization, 10:745
- cationic polymerization, 10:740, 741
- controlled/living radical polymerization, 10:743–746
- conventional free radical polymerization, 10:742
- nitroxide-mediated polymerization, 10:743
- for polymer brushes synthesis, 10:739
- RAFT polymerization, 10:744
- ring-opening metathesis polymerization (ROMP) method, 10:741, 742
- ring-opening polymerization (ROP), 10:741
- Surface-initiated, atom transfer radical polymerization (ATRP), 9:650
- Surface interaction and etching, 13:531–536
- adipose-derived human mesenchymal stem cells, 13:531
- ammonia and nitrogen plasmas, 13:532, 533
- carboxyl-terminated PEG, 13:541
- fluorine-containing functional groups, 13:533
- grafting to approach, 13:541, 542
- halofluoropolymer plasma, 13:534
- halogen plasmas, in surface modification, 13:533
- inert gas plasmas, 13:531
- NH₃ plasma-modified ETFE film, 13:533
- oxygen or oxygen-containing plasmas, 13:531, 532
- PEG, argon plasma-induced grafting of, 13:539
- PEO-grafted PU beads, 13:541
- PET films, hydrophilicity of, 13:533
- plasma polymerization and deposition, 13:536–539
- plasma-induced immobilization of PEG on PVDF membranes, 13:542
- plasma-modified polymer surfaces, chemistry of, 13:534, 535
- porous PTFE films, 13:542
- PS-PDMS block copolymers, 13:541
- trichosan-modified PE surface, 13:532
- Surface ligand star polymers, 8:445
- Surface lubricants, 11:700. *See also* Release agents
- Surface mechanical damage and wear, 13:502–524
- Surface modification of polymers, 13:528–566
- AFM imaging of, 1:781, 782
- carbon black, 2:451–453
- cotton fibers, 2:610
- fatigue effects, 5:740, 741
- films, 5:824
- hyperbranched polymers in, 6:795
- in molecular self-assembly, 8:654
- Surface mounting technology, 5:66
- Surface oxidized carbon blacks
- surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Surface properties, 13:575–597
- Surface resistivity, 4:705
- definition, 4:738, 739
- of laminate, 4:710
- moisture, effect of, 4:709
- temperature, effect of, 4:708
- Surface segregation effects, 13:584–595
- surface segregation effects, 13:584–595
- Surface segregation, 13:584, 585
- Surface-sensitive modification, 13:529
- Surface tension, 1:363, 364. *See also* Homopolymer surface tension
- adhesion and, 1:363, 364
- colloids, 3:446, 447
- release agents and, 11:704
- Surface tension measurement, 13:595–597
- surface tension measurement, 13:595–597
- Surface tension, measurement of, 13:595–597
- Surface topography, complex, 1:366
- Surface treatment
- adhesion and, 1:374–378
- cleaning as, 1:405
- oxidative, 11:692
- in rubber compounding, 12:226–229
- Surface treatment unit, 5:635
- Surface treatments, 3:269
- Surface, 14:260
- Simha-Boyer proposition, 14:264
- T_g, free-volume theories, 14:264–268
- thermal expansion discontinuities, 14:262
- time-temperature superposition (TTS) approach, 14:267
- Vogel-Fulcher-like relation, 14:271
- Volkenstein-Ptitzyn theory, 14:263, 264
- Williams-Landel-Ferry (WLF) equation, 14:265, 266
- Surfaces. *See also* Release surfaces; Sport surfaces
- adhesion and, 1:363, 364
- evaluation of fracture in, 6:296
- phase transformation at, 9:566–568
- Surfactant antifoams, 1:666, 667
- Surfactant-mediated intercalation, 7:75
- Surfactants, 8:366–368
- for carbon dioxide, 4:51, 52
- in colloid formation, 3:448
- in latex manufacture, 7:467–469
- silicone application, 12:465
- turbulent drag reduction by, 4:537, 566–568
- Surfactants, in polyurethane foaming, 11:246–248
- Surfactant concentration, 5:166
- Surfactants, in emulsion polymerization, 5:174, 175
- Surgical sutures
- biodegradable polymers for, 2:115
- Surlyn ionomer, 7:236, 237
- Survival, probability of, 11:680
- Suspended microreactors, 13:601
- Suspension polymerization, 5:164, 13:601. *See*
- Heterophase polymerization
- characteristic particle size, 6:593, 594
- fouling, 13:602
- heterophase polymerization prerequisites, 6:594
- heterophase polymerization techniques with
- continuous fluid phases, 6:619
- heterophase recipes, 6:616
- heterophase technique, 6:586, 589
- of SAN copolymers, 1:294
- of vinylidene fluoride, 15:59
- poly(vinyl chloride), 14:728–742
- system, 13:601
- vinyl acetate polymers, 14:665

- Suspension polymerization processes, *13:600–625*
 aqueous phase, influence of monomer solubility, *13:613, 614*
 Azobisisobutyronitrile (AIBN), *13:608, 609*
 benzoyl peroxide (BPO), *13:608, 609*
 commercial reactor volumes, *13:624*
 copolymerization, *13:614, 615*
 fluorescence spectroscopy, *13:620*
 glass and gel effects, *13:612, 613*
 industrial "intelligent systems", *13:620*
 initiators, *13:608–610*
 monitoring, *13:619–621*
 Near infrared spectroscopy (NIRS), *13:621, 622*
 organic phase, influence of solvents, *13:614*
 particle breakage and coalescence, *13:610–612*
 Poly(vinyl alcohol) (PVA) as stabilizer, *13:607*
 Poly(vinylpyrrolidone) as stabilizer, *13:607*
 products synthesized, *13:618*
 Raman spectroscopy, *13:622–624*
 reactivity ratios, *13:616–618*
- Suspension polymerization, of acrylic elastomers, *1:179*
- Suspension stabilizer, *13:606–608*
- Swedging, *14:103*
- Swelling
 hydrazine in Fortisan, *2:585*
 particles in heterophase polymerization, *6:634–638*
 solid-state extrudates, *12:691*
- Swelling and gel collapse, *9:25–27*
- Swelling equilibrium, *4:664–666*
 degree of cross-linking and, *4:666, 667*
- Swelling ratio, superabsorbent polymers, *13:354–356*
- Switching-segment-determining blocks
 polyurethanes with poly(ϵ -caprolactone), *12:416*
 polyurethanes with poly(tetrahydrofuran), *12:416, 417*
 shape-memory effect and, *12:413*
- SWNTs. *See* Single-walled carbon nanotubes (SWNTs)
- Swollen gels, *1:156*
- Symmetric porous membranes, *5:827, 828. See also*
 Asymmetric porous membranes
- Symmetrical bifunctional olefins, *8:175*
- Symmetrical membranes, *7:746*
 preparation and uses of, *7:748–752*
- Synchronous belts, *2:69*
- Syndioregic linkages, *11:518*
- trans*-syndiotactic (*trans*-racemic, tr), *8:163*
- Syndiotactic PMMA, *11:450*
- Syndiotactic poly(methyl methacrylate) (s-PMMA), *3:153–155*
 conformation of polymer chain in melt and in theta solvent, *9:56*
 dielectric spectroscopy, *4:488*
- Syndiotactic poly(*m*-methylstyrene) (s-PMMS)
 clathrates, *3:146, 147*
- Syndiotactic poly(*p*-methylstyrene) (s-PPMS), *3:141–145*
 β class clathrates of, *3:143, 144*
 α class clathrates of, *3:141–143*
 clathrates containing α and β cavities, *3:144*
 γ class clathrates of, *3:144, 145*
- Syndiotactic poly-*p*-*n*-butyl-styrene, *3:145*
- Syndiotactic poly-*p*-fluoro-styrene, *3:146*
- Syndiotactic polybutadiene, *2:301*
- Syndiotactic polyketones, *10:652*
- Syndiotactic polymers, tacticity and properties, *13:653*
- Syndiotactic polypropylene, *11:351*
 metallocene-based stereoselective polymerization, *8:122*
 polymorphism, *11:356, 357*
 properties, *11:361–368*
 Raman spectra, *14:575–579*
 semicrystalline, *12:377, 379, 391*
 single crystals, *12:387, 388*
- Syndiotactic polystyrene (s-PS), *3:136–141, 13:631–646*
 co-crystalline forms of, *3:137*
 δ clathrates of, *3:137–140*
 ϵ clathrates of, *3:140, 141*
- Syndiotactic polystyrene (sPS), *13:187, 188, 631–646*
 commercial processes for production of, *13:643, 644*
 crystallinity, *13:631*
 economic aspects, *13:646*
 low frequency Raman bands, *14:591*
 mechanical properties, *13:634–636*
 physical properties, *13:631–634*
 polymerization, *13:637–644*
 processing, *13:644–646*
 solubility and solvent resistance, *13:635, 637*
 trans-trans-gauche-gauche (TTGG) conformation, *13:631*
 trans-trans (TT) conformation, *13:631*
- Syndiotacticity index
 polypropylene, *14:575, 576, 578*
- Syndiotacticity, of nonionic poly(acrylamide), *1:119*
- Synergism, among antioxidants, *13:42–45*
- Synergistic mixtures
 of antioxidants, *1:703*
- Syntactic cellular materials, *2:525*
- Syntactic foam, *3:499, 503–505, 8:507*
- Syntactic foams, polystyrene, *13:254*
- Synthetic aluminosilicates/zeolites, *7:153*
- Synthetic antibodies, *8:684, 699–701*
- Synthetic elastomers, *4:385, 386*
- Synthetic fillers, *5:796–798*
- Synthetic ion exchangers, *7:150*
- Synthetic iron oxides, as pigments, *3:471*
- Synthetic membranes, *5:826*
- Synthetic metals, *4:742*
- Synthetic polyampholytes, *10:304*
- Synthetic polyisoprene, *7:323, 324*
 natural rubber blends, *7:325*
- Synthetic polymers, *2:732, 4:300–304, 9:102. See also*
 Dendrimers
- Synthetic polymers, enzymatic hydrolysis, *13:562*
- Synthetic polymers, separation of, *3:99–101, 6:380, 381*
- Synthetic polypeptides, *11:434*
- Synthetic rubber
 compounding, *12:204*
 heterophase polymerization product, *6:585*
 synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, *6:382, 15:518, 519*
- Synthetic techniques, *9:6*
- Synthetic *cis*-1,4-polyisoprene, *7:285*
- Systematic error (bias), *6:85*
- T-die, *5:676*
- T-junction micromixer ID, *8:346, 349*
- T-shape inlet manifold, *8:337*

- T-shape micromixer, 8:332, 336
 T silicone resins, 9:795, 12:505, 506
 T2-weighted MRI study, 8:802
 TA. *See* Thermal analysis
 Tablets
 polystyrene supports, 11:36, 37
 Tack, 1:378–385
 autohesive, 1:378
 rate and temperature effects on, 1:380, 381
 Tackifiers, 1:379, 380, 11:306
 choice of, 1:411
 reactive, 1:413
 terpene-phenolic, 1:415
 Tactic isomerism, 13:650
 Tactic PMMA
 PLLA blends, 13:657
 stereocomplex capacity, 13:660
 stereocomplexes, 13:658
 Tactic poly(methyl methacrylate), 13:654
 Tactic polymers characterization
 atomic-force microscopy (AFM), 13:654
 differential scanning calorimetry (DSC), 13:653, 654
 experimental techniques and apparatus, 13:653, 654
 Fourier-transform infrared spectroscopy (FT-IR), 13:654
 polarized-light optical microscopy (POM), 13:654
 scanning electron microscopy (SEM), 13:654
 transmission electron microscopy (TEM), 13:654
 wide-angle x-ray diffraction, 13:654
 Tactic polypropylenes, 13:661–664
 melt-state binary blends, 13:662
 Tactic polystyrene, 13:187, 664–668
 Tacticity, 13:650–668
 metallocene-based stereoselective polymerization
 mixed tacticity polyolefins, 8:122–125
 of nonionic poly(acrylamide), 1:119
 and template polymerization, 13:745
 Taffy process, for solid epoxy resins, 5:305, 306, 311
 Tailored molecular weight
 ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:604
 Take-up
 olefin fibers, 9:355, 356
 Talc
 as release agent, 11:703
 butyl rubber filler, 2:365
 for rubber compounding, 12:224
 thermosetting powder coating filler, 3:241
 Tandem or multijunction solar cell, 12:648, 649
 Tandem polymerization, of styrene, 13:229
 Tandem technique, 8:166
 Tangential rotor system, 3:561
 Tannin
 as wood adhesive, 15:290, 292
 Tannin-based adhesives, 1:429
 Tantalum
 metallocenes based on, 8:101, 102
 Tantalum (Ta)-based catalysts. *See also* Ta
 Tantalum-based catalysts, 8:152
 Tape products, 1:410
 Tapered block copolymers
 synthesis by anionic polymerization, 1:641–643
 Tapered-cantilever beam test, 6:312
 Tapered chain, 8:498, 499
 Tapered module design, 7:788
 TAPPI (Technical Association of the Pulp and Paper Industry), 7:532
 TAPPI monograph, 1:542
 Tapping mode atomic force microscopy, 1:752
 Tar acids
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
 Tar bases
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
 Tarpaulins-use of coated fabrics, 5:692
 Taste
 antioxidants, 1:717
 Taylor cone, 5:146
 TBBPA. *See* Tetrabromobisphenol-A (TBBPA)
 TBC. *See* 4-*tert*-Butylcatechol (TBC)
 TCL. *See* Terephthaloyl chloride (TCL)
 TCNE. *See* Tetracyanoethylene (TCNE)
 TD silicone resins, 12:504, 505
 TD tearing. *See* Transverse direction (TD) tearing
 TDCB self-healing epoxy samples– Fatigue testing data, 12:348
 TDI. *See* Toluene diisocyanate (TDI)
 Tear damage in PDMS, autonomic healing, 12:360
 Tear fracture, 6:286, 287
 Tear properties, LLDPE, 5:576
 Tear strength
 cellular polymers, 2:535
 Tebbe reagent, 8:151
 Technical Association of the Pulp and Paper Industry (TAPPI), 7:532
 Technological compatibilizer, 1:370, 371
 Technora, 6:702–705, 11:693
 Tecnoflon, 6:161
 Teflon, 5:203
 stress-strain behavior, 6:814
 Teflon AF copolymers, 9:543
 applications and economic aspects, 9:545
 fabrication of, 9:545
 health and safety, 9:545
 properties of (table), 9:544
 refractive index (table), 9:544
 thermal stability of (table), 9:544
 Teflon-like films, deposition of, 10:14, 15
 Teflon PFA
 applications and economic aspects, 9:556, 557
 aqueous dispersion of, 9:556
 chemical properties of, 9:550, 551
 electrical properties of (table), 9:552
 fabrication of, 9:553–556
 health and safety, 9:557
 mechanical properties of, 9:550
 optical properties of (table), 9:553
 physical properties, 9:550
 pigmentation, 9:556
 powder coating, 9:556
 properties of (table), 9:550
 radiation effects, 9:553
 thermal stability, 9:551, 552
 Tefzel
 applications of, 9:538
 health and safety, 9:538, 539
 resistance to chemicals (table), 9:534, 535
 Teijin fibers, 11:693

- Telcar, 7:139
- Telechelic AP, 6:743
- F-HEUR polymers, 6:743
 - fluorocarbon end-capped PEO, 6:743
- Telechelic ionomers
- pulsed electron spin resonance spectroscopy, 5:21–27
- Telechelic ionomers, 7:226, 227
- Telechelic polymers, 13:671–729
- anionic polymerization, 13:689–694
 - cationic polymerization, 13:694–701
 - chain scission, 13:717–719
 - controlled radical polymerization, 13:681–689
 - free radical copolymerization of alkenes with unsaturated heterocyclic compounds, 13:677–679
 - macromonomers, 13:724–729
 - metathesis polymerization, 13:714–717
 - radical polymerization, 13:672
 - recent trends in functionalization, 13:693
 - ring-opening polymerization, 13:702–714
 - step-growth polymerization, 13:720–724
 - transfer techniques, 13:679–681
- Telechelics synthesis, 8:176
- Telogen, 13:175
- Telomerization, 13:175, 176
- VDF, 15:60
- Telomerization, chain transfer and, 2:716
- Telomers (table), 9:93
- structural representation of polymers, 13:175, 176
- TEM. *See* Transmission electron microscopy (TEM)
- Temperature
- acrylamide polymerization and, 1:124–126
 - aging and, 1:452, 453
 - amorphous polymers, 1:566–568, 570–572
 - antioxidants and stabilizers and, 13:20
 - carbocationic polymerization, 2:401
 - cationic photopolymerization, 9:712–714
 - conformational partition function and, 3:689, 690
 - conformation-dependent properties and, 3:699
 - in CPFR and CSTR, 13:239, 240
 - of deformation, 8:481, 482
 - dependence of sound speed, 1:88
 - in devolatilizers, 13:241, 242
 - effect on polymer oxidation, 13:5–9
 - effect on thermoplastic polymers, 6:323, 324
 - effects on permeation, 2:11–14
 - in electron beam polystyrene irradiation, 13:244, 245
 - enthalpy recovery and, 1:458–461
 - fictive, 1:474
 - FIP beads and blowing agents and, 13:256
 - nylon mechanical properties and, 10:279
 - in polystyrene injection molding, 13:246
 - polystyrene melt properties and, 13:183, 184
 - in polystyrene production, 13:217, 221
 - polystyrene tensile strength and, 13:180–183
 - in polystyrene thermoforming, 13:247, 248
 - relaxation time and, 1:471, 472
 - SBR uses and, 13:277, 278
 - and scratch velocity, 12:331
 - and thermodynamic properties, 14:77–80
 - VDF polymer degradation and, 15:70
- Temperature at peak mass loss rate
- of PAI, 6:46, 46
 - of polymers, 6:46, 47, 49
- Temperature gradient field flow fractionation (ThFFF), 2:735
- Temperature-induced gelation, 3:747
- Temperature-rising elution fractionation (TREF)
- for molecular weight determination, 13:763, 764
- Temperature rising elution fractionation (TREF) plot, 5:545, 546, 6:244–249
- for sample preparation for polymer characterization, 2:734–736
- Template-assisted polymerization
- electrically active polymers, 4:759
- Template effect
- in template polymerization, 13:745
- Template ionic polymerization, 13:745
- Template leaching, 7:752
- Template molecule, in molecular imprinting, 8:684
- Template polyaddition, 13:745
- Template polycondensation, 13:745
- Template polymerization, 13:744–753
- applications, 13:753
 - step-growth, 13:752, 753
- Template radical copolymerization, 13:751, 752
- Template radical polymerization, 13:745, 746–751
- TEMPO. *See* 2,2,6,6-Tetramethylpiperdinyloxy (TEMPO)
- Temporary shape, of shape-memory polymers, 12:410–412
- Tenacity (N/tex), of a fiber, 10:240, 241
- Tencel, 2:686
- Tensile detachment, from a rigid plane, 1:393
- Tensile dilatometry
- fatigue studies, 5:712
- Tensile fatigue striations, 6:291
- Tensile fatigue test specimen, 5:696
- Tensile force, 4:654, 655
- Tensile impact instruments, 6:809, 810
- Tensile impact resistance, 6:813–815
- Tensile impact toughness, 6:815
- Tensile modulus, 4:659, 5:210. *See also* Young's modulus
- of a fiber, 10:241
- Tensile properties
- nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, 10:239–243
 - PTT fiber, 10:208
 - wool, 15:318–320
- Tensile strength
- of carbon fibers, 11:692, 693
 - cellular polymers, 2:535
 - composite materials, 3:546
 - of engineering thermoplastics, 5:216
 - and fatigue, 5:704
 - of a fiber, 10:241, 242, 11:684
 - of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:162, 165
 - olefin fibers, 9:346–348
 - of polystyrene, 13:183
- Tensile strength of autohesion, 1:367
- Tensile stress profile, 11:685
- Tensile stress, in shape-memory polymers, 12:415
- Tensile stress-strain curves, 12:413, 414
- for polysulfones, 11:191
- Tensile tester, for shape-memory polymers, 12:413
- Tensilizing
- films, 5:820

- Tension
 double-edge notched, 6:317
 hydrostatic, 6:321
- Tension geometry, 6:308
- Tentacle polymer, 11:26
- TentaGel, 11:26–28
- TEOS. *See* Tetraethyl orthosilicate (TEOS)
- Terephthalic acid (TPA), 4:214, 10:198–200
 polyarylates from, 10:351
- Terephthaloyl chloride (TCL), 10:214
- Terminal diynes, polycoupling of, 1:35
- Terminal region
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:623, 624
- Terminal units (*T*) in hyperbranched polymers, 6:790
- Termination, 6:836
 butyl rubber synthesis, 2:351
 carbocationic polymerization, 2:406–408
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:710–714
 of cold SBR production, 13:272
 copolymerization, 3:762–764, 780–786
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:735
 heterophase polymerization, 6:595, 599, 607–610
 LDPE, 5:525, 526
 living anionic polymerization, 1:596
 metallocenes, 8:111–115
 oxidative degradation, 4:274
 of polyketone synthesis, 10:656–658
 in polymer oxidation, 13:4, 5
 of polystyrene production, 13:219, 221
 radical polymerization, 11:542–553
 styrene/diene anionic polymerization, 1:617–619
 uninhibited autoxidation, 1:687, 689
 vinyl acetate polymerization, 14:667
- Termination reaction, 8:172
- Terminology of Fire Standards, 6:84
- Ternary copolymerization
 termination, 3:785, 786
- Ternary emulsion copolymerization, 5:180
- Ternary triblock copolymers. *See also* ABC triblock copolymers
- Terpene-phenolic tackifiers, 1:415
- ortho*-Terphenyl (OTP)
 density fluctuations, 1:557, 574–75
- Terpolymerization
 ethylene copolymers, 5:431
- Terram
 physical properties, 9:181
- Terrazzo coat floors, sealers, 6:112
- Tertiary amine catalysts, toxicity of, 11:260
- Tertiary recycling technologies, 11:664, 665
- Tervoort model, of yield, 15:470, 471
- Tesla micromixer, 8:432
- Test methods, 13:756–782
 four wave mixing, 9:761–763
 two-beam coupling, 9:763
- Testing, 13:756–782. *See also* Analytical methods
 acoustic properties, 1:95–102
 acrylonitrile, 1:269, 270
 adhesives, 1:406–408
 antioxidants, 1:714–716
 antioxidants for rubber compounding, 12:233
 for aromatic polyamides, 10:217, 232
 carboxymethylcellulose, 2:654, 655
 cellular materials, 2:512, 527, 528
 composite materials, 3:542–548
 composition and structure, 13:757–763
 electrical properties, 13:779, 780
 environmental effects, 13:775–778
 environmentally degradable plastics, 2:74
 ethylcellulose, 2:665
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:456, 457
 fatigue, 5:695–698
 flammability properties, 13:780, 781
 fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:172
 fracture, 6:335
 hydroxyethylcellulose, 2:658
 hydroxypropylcellulose, 2:666
 hyperbranched polymers, 6:790, 791
 impact resistance, 6:800–812
 LLDPE, 5:574–577
 mechanical properties, 13:772–775
 methylcellulose, 2:663
 miscellaneous other methods, 13:782
 molecular weight, 13:763, 764
 nanocomposites, 8:741–745
 nondestructive testing, 13:781
 nonwoven fabrics, spun bonded, 9:198–200
 optical properties, 13:778, 779
 oxidative degradation, 4:285–287
 permeation measurement, 2:21–26
 phenolic resins, 9:594–598
 phosgene, 9:628, 629
 polycyanoacrylates, 10:432
 polysulfides, 11:175
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:755, 756
 powder coatings, 3:256
 processing properties, 13:771, 772
 in rubber compounding, 12:258, 259
 for SAN copolymers, 1:289, 290
 scratch behavior of polymers, 12:324–327
 silane coupling agents, 12:424–426
 silicones, 12:512–516
 styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:278
 summary of techniques (table), 13:770
 thermal degradation, 4:264–270
 thermal properties, 13:764–770
 uncured epoxy resins, 5:331–334
 UV exposure, 14:457
 vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:710, 711
- TETA. *See* Triethylenetriamine (TETA)
- Tethered polymers, 6:648, 649
- Tetrabenzylthiuram disulfide, 12:173, 176
- Tetrabromobisphenol-A (TBBPA), 1:321
- Tetrachlorophthalic anhydride
 curing agent, 5:354
- Tetracyanoethylene (TCNE), 7:53
- Tetradecamethylhexasiloxane
 physical properties, 12:491
- Tetraethoxysilane, 9:32
- Tetraethyl orthosilicate (TEOS), 1:778
- Tetraethylorthosilicate, 9:32
- Tetraethylthiuram
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Tetrafluoroethylene (F2C CF2), synthesis of, 6:129–131
- Tetrafluoroethylene (TFE), 4:50, 9:487, 488–489
 ceiling temperature, 4:255

- copolymerization of, 9:489–491
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 manufacture of, 9:502, 503
 MFR of, 9:489, 490
 properties of, 9:503
 safety precautions for, 9:497
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
 uses of, 9:503, 504
- Tetrafluoroethylene copolymer, 6:162
- Tetrafluoroethylene-ethylene copolymers, 9:526–539
 activation energy of, 9:529
 bearing wear rate (table), 9:532
 crystalline density of, 9:528
 manufacturing of, 9:527, 528
 modified ETFE resins, thermodynamic properties of (table), 9:531
 molecular weight, 9:529
 monomers of, 9:526, 527
 physical and mechanical properties, 9:529, 531
 tefzel, typical properties of (table), 9:530
- Tetrafluoroethylene-perfluorodioxole copolymers, 9:542–545
 copolymerization of, 9:543
 monomer of, 9:542
 properties, 9:543
- Tetrafluoroethylene-perfluorovinyl ether copolymers, 9:547–557
- Tetrafluoroethylene polymers. *See* Perfluorinated polymers
- Tetrafunctional junction, 9:20
- Tetrafunctional network, 4:660
- Tetrafunctional phantom network model, 9:26
- Tetraglycidyl isocyanurate (TGIC), 5:320, 322
- Tetraglycidyl methylenedianiline, 5:319, 320
- Tetrahydrofuran (THF), 3:93, 94, 11:195. *See also* Poly(THF)diols
 in cold SBR production, 13:275
- Tetrahydrofuran (THF)-polymer solution, 8:423
- Tetrahydrofuran
 telechelic polymer, 13:703–708
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Tetrahydrophthalic anhydride
 curing agent, 5:354
- N,N,N',N'*-Tetraisobutylthiuram disulfide, 12:173, 176
- N,N,N',N'*-Tetraisobutylthiuram monosulfide, 12:173
- Tetrakis methylene (3,5-di-*t*-butyl-4-hydroxyhydro) oxidant used in rubber, 12:194
- Tetrakis(2,4-di-*tert*-butylphenyl)4,4'-biphenylenediphosphonite
 antioxidant, 1:699
- Tetramer, 6:50
- Tetramethoxymethyl glycouril, 3:246
- Tetramethoxysilane (TMOS), 4:60
- Tetramethyl bisphenol-A polycarbonate
 density fluctuations, 1:558
 permeability temperature effect, 2:14
 sub-Rouse modes, 1:577
 WAXS spectra of various, 1:562
- Tetramethyl-*m*-xylylene diisocyanate (TMXDI), 14:436
- 2,2,6,6-Tetramethyl-4-oxo-piperidine *N*-oxyl (*N*-OxyTAM), 14:467
- 3,3',5,5'-Tetramethyldiphenoquinone (DPQ), 9:432–435
- N,N,N',N'*-Tetramethylethylenediamine (TMEDA), 6:478
- Tetramethylethylenediamine (TMEDA), 7:52
- Tetramethylolglycoluril, 1:536
- 2,2,6,6-Tetramethylpiperdinyloxy (TEMPO), 11:578, 579
 inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
 in styrene polymerization, 13:230
- 2,2,6,6-Tetramethylpiperidine
 antioxidant, 1:695
- Tetramethylthiuram disulfide (TMTD), 5:478, 12:173, 175
 accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
- Tetramethylthiuram monosulfide, 12:173
- Tetraphenylcyclobutane blocking groups, 11:130
- Tetraphenyltin, 13:641
- Tetrathiafulvalene (TTF) polymers, 13:293, 294
- Textile-associated properties
 vegetable fibers, 14:500
- Textile carding, 9:217, 218
- Textile coatings
 silicone application, 12:465, 508–510
- Textile fibers
 dye affinity of (table), 10:257, 258
 PTT use in, 10:207
- Textile filament yarns, PET, 10:512, 513
- Textile finishes
 amino resin, 1:531–538
 steps in, 1:537
- Textile sizing
 poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:712–714
- Textiles
 MPDI, 10:227, 228
 release agent use with, 11:705, 706
 vinyl acetate polymer applications, 14:680, 681
- Texturing, 10:252
 olefin fibers, 9:358, 359
 for yarn, 10:252, 253
- TFC RO membranes, 5:840
 preparation of, 5:840, 841
- TFC. *See* Thin-film composite.
- TFE copolymers, 4:50
- TFE. *See* Tetrafluoroethylene (TFE)
- TG investigations. *See* Thermogravimetric analysis
- TGA, 8:785
- TGA instrument, 13:808–810
 calibration of mass, 13:813, 814
 “fusible link” method, 13:816
 temperature calibration, 13:814–816
- TGA. *See* Thermogravimetry analysis (TGA)
- TGA/DTGA, compositional analysis, 13:817–820
- Theophylline
 molecularly imprinted polymer-based assay, 8:701
- Theoretical modulus
 of carbon fibers, 11:692, 693
 of poly(paraphenylene terephthalate), 11:693
- Thermal aging
 electric breakdown, effect on, 4:692, 693
 resistance, effect on, 4:708, 709
- Thermal analysis (TA), 13:789–861
 calibration and standards, 13:794, 795
 concurrent analysis, 13:789
 coupled technique, 13:790

- DSC/DTA, operating parameters, 13:795–799
 principal thermoanalytical methods (table), 13:790
- Thermal analysis
 for crystallinity determination, 4:153–156
- Thermal analysis microscopy, 1:758, 759
- Thermal and infrared test methods
 heat waves, 9:112
 passive thermography, 9:111
- Thermal black process, 2:448, 449
- Thermal blacks
 composition, 2:429
 surface area, DBP number, and applications, 2:458
- Thermal bonding, 1:1, 4
 nonwoven fabrics, 9:228–230
- Thermal breakdown, 4:680
- Thermal conductivity, 14:2, 8, 9
 direct-heating techniques, 14:8, 9
 independent determinations, 14:8
 molecular orientation, 14:32
 molecular-weight distribution, 14:32
 polystyrene fractions, 14:31
 rectilinear heat flow, 14:2
 polymer properties, 14:26–33
- Thermal conductivity, of amorphous polymer, 6:437, 438
- Thermal decomposition, higher heat flux requirement, 6:60, 61
- Thermal degradation
 in mesophase, 6:42
 Reactive molecular dynamics (RMD) simulations, 6:69
- Thermal degradation, 13:5–9
 analytical methods, 4:264–270
 chain scission with depropagation, 4:254–258
 of colorant, 3:470
 mechanistic studies, 4:251–264
 of polyacrylonitrile, 1:282
 of polyamide plastics, 10:281
 of poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:200, 201
 random scission without depropagation, 4:258–262
 of styrene polymers, 13:208–210
 thermal reactions without chain scission, 4:262–264
- Thermal depolymerization, activation energies of, 4:436, 437
- Thermal diffusivity, 14:2–4, 18, 19
 differential scanning calorimeter, 14:22
 experimental considerations, 14:19, 20
 monotonic heating-regime method, 14:20, 21
 polymer properties, 14:26–33
 pulse method, 14:20
 specific heat capacity, 14:22
 temperature-wave/periodic-heat-flow methods, 14:20
 temperature-wave method, 14:21, 22
 and thermal conductivity measurements (table), 14:19
 transient-heat-flow methods, 14:19
- Thermal diffusivity, at room temperature, 6:53–55
- Thermal dilatometry, 13:765
- Thermal drift, 1:748
- Thermal expansion
 propylene polymers, 11:362
- Thermal expansion coefficient
 and thermal stresses of molding, 4:250
- Thermal free-radical initiation, 6:835
 activation parameters, 6:839
- Thermal history
 fatigue effects, 5:741, 742
- Thermal imaging, 13:781
- Thermal impedance tomography, 9:114
- Thermal inertia, 6:51, 60
- Thermal initiation
 radical polymerization, 11:505–508
- Thermal insulation
 cellular polymers, 2:542, 543
- Thermal mechanical analysis (TMA), 1:759
- Thermal microscopy, 13:765
 forensics applications, 6:186
- Thermal oxidative stability, in ABS polymers, 1:319, 320
- Thermal properties
 aromatic polyamides, 10:217
 1,3-butadiene, 2:294, 295
 cellular polymers, 2:536–540
 engineering thermoplastics, 5:208–210, 214–217
 filled polymers, 5:791, 792
 hyperbranched polymers, 6:783, 784
 lignin, 7:536, 537
 naphthalate-containing polymers, 10:141–143
 nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, 10:243
 olefin fibers, 9:349, 350
 PET and PEN films, 10:505
 polyamide plastics, 10:274–276
 polyarylates, 10:352
 polyimides, 5:69
 poly(phenylene oxide)s, 10:573
 polysulfones, 11:188, 191
 poly(trimethylene terephthalate), 10:201
 silk, 12:548
 test methods, 13:764–770
 vinyl acetal polymers, 14:641, 642, 644
 wool, 15:317, 318
 xylylene polymers, 15:428
- Thermal-resistant elastomers, 6:161
- Thermal response parameter, 6:59
- Thermal ring-opening polymerization, in supercritical carbon dioxide, 4:57
- Thermal runaway, 5:194
- Thermal shrinkage
 composite materials, 3:526–530
 and solid-state extrusion, 12:693, 694
- Thermal stability
 of a colorant, 3:470
 of fluorocarbon elastomers, 6:162, 163
 of liquid crystalline polymers, 7:571, 572
 of polyferrocenylsilanes, 7:54
- Thermal stability, of cross-linked polymer, 4:102, 103
- Thermal stabilization
 long-term, 13:28–30
 of polymers, 13:21–30
- Thermal stresses
 from molding, 4:250
- Thermal transition, in polyurethane shape-memory polymers, 12:417
- Thermal treatment, of polypropylene multifilaments, 13:37
- Thermal volatilization analysis, 4:267
- Thermally activated extension, 6:319
- Thermally bonded nonwovens, 8:566–570
- Thermally generated defects, 12:302

- Thermally induced shape-memory effect, *12:409*
- Thermally induced shape-memory, *12:416*
- Thermally stable carbonaceous char, *6:42*
- Thermally stimulated conductivity, *13:765, 779*
- Thermally stimulated depolarization, *13:765*
- Thermally stimulated polarization, *13:765*
- Thermo-responsive micelles, *8:286*
- Thermo-responsive monomer, *8:286*
- Thermo-rheological simplicity, *15:93–103*
- Thermochemical calculations, through PMMA, *6:69*
- Thermochemical properties, of nylon-6 and nylon-6,6, *10:244, 245*
- Thermochemistry, in gas phase combustion, *6:39*
- Thermochromatography, *13:760*
- Thermochromic gel networks, *14:40–42, 44–46*
- Thermochromic polymers, *14:38–58*
 applications, *14:56–58*
 based on Bragg reflection, *14:39–42*
 based on light absorption, *14:42–46*
 transparency/scattering switching, *14:46–56*
- Thermochromic switching, *14:43, 46–56*
- Thermochromism, *9:757*
- Thermodynamic data, *14:61*
- Thermodynamic model universal, *3:97, 98*
- Thermodynamic or mechanistic theory, of plasticizer action, *10:44*
- Thermodynamic properties
 propylene polymers, *11:361, 362*
- Thermodynamic properties of polymers, *14:61–98*
 crystalline multicomponent systems, *14:92–94*
 enthalpy, entropy, and free enthalpy, *14:75–77*
 first-order transitions, *14:80–83*
 glass transitions, *14:83–85*
 glassy multicomponent systems, *14:90–92*
 heat capacities of solids and liquids, *14:62–75*
 liquid multicomponent systems, *14:85–90*
 pressure, volume, and temperature, *14:77–80*
- Thermodynamic treatment, in polymer chromatography, *3:97–99*
- Thermodynamic work of adhesion (W_a), *1:373, 374*
- Thermodynamics, *8:159, 13:75*
 of adhesion, *1:372–374*
 phase transformation, *9:560–563*
 of polymer reactions, *14:94–98*
 radical polymerization, *11:573–577*
 rational, *15:160*
 of rubber-like elasticity, *4:651–653*
 statistical thermodynamics, *13:76–80*
- Thermodynamics of interphase, *13:575–578*
 thermodynamics of interphase, *13:575–578*
- Thermoelectric inversion, *4:652*
- Thermoelectrometry, *13:765*
- Thermoform/fill/seal packaging, *9:472*
- Thermoforming, *5:510, 10:87, 88, 14:103–131*
 forming process, *14:112–115*
 heating, *14:115–118*
 heavy-gauge, *14:105, 106, 109–112*
 material characteristics, *14:121–124*
 mold materials, *14:124*
 new technologies, *14:128–131*
 part design, *14:124, 128*
 of polysulfones, *11:197*
 process and product control, *14:120*
 process compared to other thermoplastic processes (table), *14:108*
 propylene polymers, *11:404, 405*
 rigidifying the part, *14:119*
 sheet stretching, *14:118, 119*
 of styrene polymers, *13:247, 248*
 thin-gauge, *14:105–109*
 trimming, *14:120*
- Thermoforming, for ABS polymers, *1:332*
- Thermogravimetric analysis (TGA), *2:743, 4:102, 264–267, 13:808*
 described, *13:764*
 mass and temperature calibrations and standards, *13:813–816*
 phenolic resins, *9:597*
 silane coupling agents, *12:425*
 thermoset curing, *14:197–199*
- Thermogravimetric analysis, in thermal degradation kinetics, *6:46*
- Thermogravimetry (TG), *13:789, 808*
 major affecting factors (table), *13:810–813*
- Thermogravimetry, *13:764, 765*
- Thermogravimetry analysis (TGA) curves, of polysulfones, *11:189*
- Thermogravimetry analysis (TGA), *7:50*
 PVDF homopolymer, *15:70*
- Thermoluminescence, *13:765*
- Thermolytic cleavage. *See* Enthalpy of gasification components
- Thermomagnetometry, *13:765*
- Thermomechanical analysis, *6:434, 13:765, 789, 822, 14:25, 26*
 composite materials, *3:527–530*
 instrumentation, *13:822*
 probe configuration, *13:825, 826*
 probe geometry or operation modes, *13:825*
 sample preparation and procedure, *13:824, 825*
- Thermomechanical investigations, cyclic, *12:413–416*
- Thermomechanical properties
 composite materials, *3:532–534*
- Thermomechanometry, *13:765*
- Thermophotometry, *13:765*
- Thermoplastic block copolymers, *13:281, 282*
- Thermoplastic coating powders, *3:233–236*
- Thermoplastic elastomeric olefin (TEO), *1:805*
- Thermoplastic elastomers (TPEs), *1:805, 2:190, 6:321, 322, 440, 14:133–158*
 butyl rubbers, *2:354*
 for rubber compounding, *12:205*
 thermoforming, *14:127*
- Thermoplastic fabrication techniques, polysulfones and, *11:197*
- Thermoplastic foam, *1:803*
- Thermoplastic foams, rigid, *13:257*
- Thermoplastic matrix composites, *3:514*
- Thermoplastic pigments, *3:473, 474*
- Thermoplastic polyesters
 AFM imaging of, *1:768, 769*
 producers and trademarks of, *5:207*
- Thermoplastic polymer interpenetrating networks, *7:126–131*
- Thermoplastic polymer powder, extrusion of, *11:705*

- Thermoplastic polymers
 annealing of, 6:454
 postcuring of, 6:454
- Thermoplastic polyurethane (TPU), 11:231, 233–240
- Thermoplastic polyurethane elastomers, 1:801
- Thermoplastic polyurethane, 5:684
 processing of, 1:809
- Thermoplastic resins, 10:68–70
 historical development of, 5:204
 prices of, 5:214, 215
 processing methods, 10:70–88
- Thermoplastic starch, 2:82, 83, 13:52, 55
 PVOH system, 13:65
- Thermoplastic structural foams, 2:521
- Thermoplastic VDF-based polymers, 15:54
- Thermoplastically processable starch (TPS), 13:55, 56
- Thermoplasticity
 ethylene oxide polymers, 5:450
- Thermoplastics, 2:732
 AFM imaging of, 1:764–770
 amorphous, 6:320, 321
 as shape-memory polymers, 12:413
 cross-linking through polyaddition, 4:89–95
 deformation and damage mechanisms of, 6:323–327
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:616–624
 engineering, 5:200–220
 epoxy-based, 5:311, 312
 four processes compared (table), 14:108
 miscibility chart for recycling commonly used (table), 11:661
 polyethylene, 4:90–93
 polypropylene, 4:93–95
 polyvinyl chloride, 4:95
 production volumes and prices for, 5:215
 semicrystalline, 6:320
 thermal degradation of, 13:6
 thermoforming, 14:103–130
 wood composites bonded with, 15:300–303
- Thermoplastics, automotive, 1:793–799
 ABS polymers, 1:798, 799
 blow molding of, 1:807
 copolymers and blends, 1:798, 799
 extrusion of, 1:807
 fiber spinning, 1:807, 808
 injection molding of, 1:806, 807
 melt spinning, 1:807, 808
 MuCell processing parameters for (table), 1:808
 polyamides, 1:797
 polybutylene terephthalate, 1:798
 polycarbonate, 1:798
 polyesters, 1:797, 798
 polyethylene, 1:793
 polyethylene terephthalate, 1:797, 798
 polymethyl methacrylate, 1:798
 polyolefins, 1:793–797
 polyvinyl chloride, 1:798
 processing of, 1:806–808
 slush molding or rotational sintering, 1:807
 styrene maleic anhydride, 1:799
 transforming, 1:807
- Thermorefraction, 9:757
- Thermoregulated Phase-Transfer Catalysis, 8:448, 449
- Thermoresponsive block copolymer hydrogels, 2:162–172, 6:759–761
 biomedical applications of (table), 2:179–182
 lower critical solution temperature (LCST), 6:760
 PEG-poly(ethyl-2-cyanoacrylate), 2:172
 PEG-PPF-PEG triblock copolymer, 2:172
 PEG-PTMC diblock copolymers, 2:171, 172
 phase diagram of, 2:162
 pluronic block copolymers, 2:167, 168
 PNIPAM-based block copolymers, 2:168, 169
 poly(ethylene glycol)-polyester block copolymers, 2:163–167
 poly(trimethylene carbonate), 2:171
 poly(vinyl ether)-based block copolymers, 2:169, 170
 polypeptide-based block copolymers, 2:170, 171
 reversible sol-gel transition, 6:760
- Thermoresponsive helix inversion, 3:20
- Thermoreversible main-chain C₆₀-polymer, 6:346
- Thermorheologically simple material, 1:78
- Thermosensitive smart polymer, 12:605, 606
- Thermoset cure, DEA application to, 13:851–855
 electrode polarization, 13:853
 ionic conduction, 13:852, 853
 static dipoles, 13:852
- Thermoset elastomers, 6:433
- Thermoset glass transitions, dielectric analysis, 13:855, 856
- Thermoset polyester blowing agents, 2:267, 268
- Thermoset wood adhesives, 15:283–290
- Thermoset/clay nanocomposites, 14:174–176
- Thermosets, 2:733, 6:432, 8:505, 14:160–210
 AFM imaging of, 1:764
 characterization methods, 2:754–756
 cure and properties, 14:178–199
 cure monitoring, 14:202–204
 dynamic mechanical analysis, 4:629–634
 dynamic mechanical analysis for cured, 4:616–624
 hyperbranched polymers in, 6:791, 792
 nanocomposites, 14:174–178
 processes, 14:204–210
 residual stress, 14:199–202
 wood bonded with, 15:282, 283
 wood composites bonded with, 15:294–300
- Thermosets curing by DEA, examples and applications, 13:857–861
- Thermosets, automotive, 1:799–801
 molding compounds, 1:799, 800
 polyurethanes, 1:800, 801
 processing of, 1:808, 809
 resin transfer molding for, 1:808
- Thermosetting coating powders, 3:236–248
- Thermosetting injection, 3:585
- Thermosetting matrix composites, 3:514
- Thermosetting resin systems, 14:165–174
- Thermosetting resins
 amino resins, 4:78–80
 cross-linking through polycondensation, 4:73–88
 epoxy resins, 4:81–83
 gelation, 4:74–76
 phenolic resins, 4:76–78
 polyester resin, 4:83–86
 polyurethane resin, 4:86–88
- Thermosetting resins, 10:89
 processing methods, 10:89–92

- Thermosonimetry, 13:765
- Thermostat polyurethane, 5:684
- Thermotropic LCs, 7:574
- Thermotropic liquid crystalline organocobalt polymers, 7:65
- Thermotropic liquid crystalline polymers, 11:696
- Thermotropic liquid-crystalline (rigid-rod) polymers (TLCP), 12:107
- Thermotropic polymer blends, 14:47, 48
- Thermotropic polymer gels, 14:48–56
- Thermoviscoelastic constitutive model, 1:475
- Theta (Θ) conditions, of nonionic poly(acrylamide), 1:119
- Thiazole accelerators, 4:70
- Thick-gauge thermoforming, 14:105, 109–112
- Thickeners
for polychloroprene latex, 3:77
- Thickness-gauging unit, 5:635
- Thickness of samples, for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:472
- Thiiranes
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
- Thin film composite (TFC) membranes, 5:829
- Thin-film composite asymmetric membrane, 7:746
- Thin films
extrusion, 10:77, 78
NEXAFS, 15:383–395
radius of gyration of polymers by neutron scattering, 9:58, 59
- Thin-gauge thermoforming, 14:105–109
- Thin layer chromatography (TLC)
fiber forensics applications, 6:186
forensics applications, 6:179
molecularly imprinted polymer applications, 8:689
- Thin-layer chromatography
for molecular weight distribution determination, 8:673
- Thin layer yielding mechanism, 8:500
- Thin SBS films, tapping mode SFM phase images, 12:294
- Thin-supported films, microphase-separated structure, 13:293
- Thin-wall molding, 7:9
- Thiocarbonylthio groups, RAFT-synthesized polymers, 11:733
- Thiocarbonylthio RAFT agents, 11:712
- 3-Thiocyanatopropyltriethoxysilane, 12:188
- Thioglycolic acid, 8:785
- Thioglycolic acid-based dithioesters, 11:721
- Thioglycolic acid-step-growth polymerization, 13:83
- Thiokol
physical properties, 12:207
- Thiokol A, 11:168
- Thiokol FA, 11:169
- Thiol-ene systems
free radical photopolymerization, 9:730, 731
- Thiols
chain transfer agents, 11:529–531
- Thiophene
oxidative polymerization, 9:449
polymerization to produce electrically active polymers, 4:750–754
- Thiophenium salt derivatives, 13:301
- Thiophenols
oxidative polymerization, 9:445–447
- Thiophosphoryl disulfide (DRDS), 13:32, 33
- Thiotin stabilizers, 13:28–30
- Third law of thermodynamics, 13:76
- Third level packaging, 5:63
- Third-order nonlinear optical susceptibilities (table), of substituted polyacetylenes
- Thiuram accelerators, 4:70
- Thiuram M, 5:478
- Thixotropic, 3:445
- Thixotropic agents
for epoxy resins, 5:377
- Thixotropic loop, 12:32–34
- Thomas Register of American Manufacturers, 11:701
- Thompson-Gibbs equation, 2:205, 6:549
- Thornton's rule, 6:91, 92
- Threadlocking adhesives, 1:420
- Three-arm star polymer, 8:173
- Three-dimensional (3-D) optical circuitry, 5:105
- Three-dimensional cross-linked polymer, 7:150
- Three-point bending, 6:314, 315, 325
- Three-roll mills, 3:493, 494
- Three-stage mechanism of toughening, 8:484, 485
- Threonine
chemical structure, 15:186
composition in silk, 12:543
percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Threonine (benzyl protected), 11:69
- Threonine (*tert*-butyl protected), 11:773
- Threshold bond strength, 1:388
- Throttle ratio, 5:656
- Thrust bearing assembly, in an extruder, 5:632
- Thunderon, 1:257
- Tian-Calvet-type calorimeter, 13:794
- Tilted smectic liquid crystals, 5:749
- Time-aging time superposition, 1:463, 465
- Time and strain-dependent strain energy function derivatives, 15:150, 151
- Time-controlled stabilization, 13:34–36
- Time-dependent free energy function, for solid-like polymers, 15:162
- Time-dependent lysozyme DUVRR spectra, 14:395
- Time-dependent material, cracks in, 6:303
- Time-dependent T2-weighted MRI, 8:803
- Time division multiplexing (TDM)
- Time integration, of specific heat release rate, 6:91
- Time of flight mass spectrometry. *See* TOF
- Time-of-flight mobility measurements, 9:764
- Time-resolved AFM images, quantitative analysis of, 12:305
- Time-resolved SFM probing, 12:302
- Time-strain separability, in DE model, 15:145
- Time-strain separable response, 15:140
- Time-temperature shift factors, poly(α -methyl styrene), 15:96
- Time-temperature superposition (TTS) principle, 12:14, 15
- Time-temperature superposition, 1:463, 2:252, 15:93–104
- Time-temperature-transformation cure diagram
thermosets, 14:164

- Time to failure, of HDPE, 6:328
Time to fracture, under constant uniaxial load, 6:330
Timmerman patent, for PVDF, 15:72
Tin alkoxides
 ring opening polymerization by, 12:141–143
Tin octoate
 ring opening polymerization by, 12:141, 142
Tin polymers, 7:42–44
Tinuvin 1130, 14:484
Tinuvin 120, 14:480
Tinuvin 123, 14:473
Tinuvin 152, 14:473
Tinuvin 292, 14:467
Tinuvin 328, 14:482
Tinuvin 384, 14:483
Tinuvin 400, 14:483, 487
Tinuvin 622, 14:467
Tinuvin 665, 14:468
Tinuvin 770, 13:39, 40, 43, 14:468
Tinuvin 900, 14:483, 489, 490
“Tiny-mass” reactor, 8:405
TIPS resins, 13:198
TIPS. *See* Transparent impact polystyrene (TIPS)
“Tipstreaming”, 8:414
Tire cord, melamine resins in, 1:538
Tire elastomers, 12:253, 254
Tire reinforcement
 PEN fibers, 10:151–153
Tire yarns
 viscose rayon, 2:684, 685
Tires
 nylon reinforcing fibers in, 10:265
 rubber compounding, 12:250–258
Tissue
 acoustic properties, 1:84
Tissue engineering, 2:156, 14:214–240
 hydrogel scaffold polymers, 14:223
 polymer processing and 3-D scaffolds, 14:224–240
 porous scaffold polymers, 14:217–222
Tissue plasminogen activator (TPA)
 controlled release, 3:742
Tissue Scaffolds, 5:156–158
Titana cyclobutanes, 8:151
Titanate pigments, 3:472
Titanium
 specific modulus, strength, and CTE, 3:515
Titanium alkoxides
 ring opening polymerization by, 12:146, 147
Titanium-based catalysts, 8:152
Titanium-based metathesis, 8:172
Titanium bisphosphorimine systems, 5:564
Titanium catalysts
 cis-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:306
 1,2-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:311
Titanium chloride based Ziegler catalysts, 5:489, 490
Titanium chloride Ziegler-Natta catalysts, 15:504–519
 active site models for polypropylene, 11:379–383
 electron donors, 11:383–388
 for polypropylene, 11:368, 370, 371
Titanium dioxide (TiO₂), 15:248
Titanium dioxide
 as filler, 5:797
 filler material, 5:785
 for rubber compounding, 12:224
 in thermosetting powder coatings, 3:240
 UV stabilizing effects, 14:481
Titanium dioxide pigment, 3:470
Titanium parts, SiC-fiber-reinforced, 11:697
Titanium polymer complex, 8:173
Titanium sapphire crystals, 5:94
Titanium tetrachloride
 Ziegler-Natta catalyst, 15:505, 506
Titanium trichloride
 Ziegler-Natta catalyst, 15:505–519
Titanocenes, 8:96–98
Titration
 in polyacrylamide analysis, 1:143, 144
TLC. *See* Thin layer chromatography (TLC)
TMA. *See also* Thermal mechanical analysis (TMA); Trimellitic anhydride (TMA)
TMA. *See* Thermomechanical analysis.
TMEDA. *See* Tetramethylethylenediamine (TMEDA)
TMP. *See* Trimethylolpropane (TMP)
TMPPAH, 7:199
TMTD. *See* Tetramethylthiuram disulfide (TMTD)
TNM model. *See* Tool-Narayanaswamy-Moynihan (TNM) model
 α -Tocopherol
 as antioxidant, 13:39–42
ToF-SIMS
 surface analysis applications, 13:480–492
Toluene
 chain-transfer constant, 14:667
 component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
Toluene diisocyanate (TDI), 1:422, 11:206–209. *See also* TDI
 polymerization, 7:253–267
Toluenesulfonamide, 1:520
p-Toluenesulfonyl semicarbazide, 2:266
Toms effect, 4:536
Toner material, transfer of, 11:706
Toning blue, 3:471
Tool materials, blow-mold, 2:257
Tool-Narayanaswamy-Moynihan (TNM) model, 1:470
 composite materials application, 3:536
 solid-like polymers, 15:159, 163
Tooling
 epoxy resin applications, 5:408
 injection blow-mold, 2:221–230
Tooth brush filaments, nylon-6 in, 10:271, 272
Topas COC resins, 5:586
Topochemically controlled polymerization, 4:450
 of diacetylenes, 4:447
Topological effect, 6:446
Torlon[®] PI, 8:23
Torque, half-step, 15:161
Torsion angle for conformation geometry, 3:689, 695, 696
Torsion potential energy function, 3:690, 691
 maxima and minima in, 3:691
Torsional braid analysis, 13:765
Torsional braid analyzer, 4:611
Torsional experiments, with solid-like polymers, 15:147–152

- Torsional failure, *1:394*
- Tortuosity
diffusivity and, *8:570*
membranes, *7:749, 750*
- Total enthalpy method, for crystallinity determination, *4:154*
- Total radical concentrations, in gas phase kinetics, *6:38*
- Total shear strain, *5:654*
- Total solar UV radiation (TUV), *15:244*
- Total strain recovery rate
shape-memory polymers, *12:415*
- Toughened polymers
with amorphous matrix, *8:486–490*
with semicrystalline matrix, *8:490–492*
- Tougheners
adhesive, *1:419*
for epoxy resins, *5:383–385*
hyperbranched polymers as, *6:794*
- Toughening, rubber, *8:484, 485*
- Toughness, *6:321*
computed, *6:313–316*
effect of loading rate on, *6:327*
of a fiber, *10:241*
in heterogeneous polymers, *8:483–500*
resistance curve and, *6:301*
of TIPS, *13:198, 199, 202*
- Toughness parameters, *6:313*
- Toxicity
acrylonitrile, *1:270*
amino resins, *1:543*
antioxidants, *13:18*
biodegradable polymers for medical applications, *2:112–114*
butadiene, *2:299, 300*
cellular materials, *2:559*
composite foams, *3:510*
metallocenes, *8:84*
poly(vinyl chloride), *14:762*
PVDF, *15:70*
styrene polymers, *13:251*
vinyl chloride monomer, *14:760*
- Toxicology
of lignosulfonates and sulfonated kraft lignins, *7:544*
of SAN copolymers, *1:297*
- Toy industry
economic aspects, *14:249*
safety, *14:250*
- Toyobo, *6:707*
- Toys, *14:245–250*
blow molding, *14:248*
blow-molded vehicle wheels, *14:248*
commodity resins, *14:246*
continuous rotary machines, *14:248*
injection molding, *14:247, 248*
poly(vinyl chloride), plasticized grades of, *14:246*
polyurethane foams, *14:246*
processing techniques (table), *14:247*
processing techniques, *14:247–250*
rotational molding, *14:248*
thermoforming, *14:247–249*
unplasticized PVC, *14:246*
- TP hydrogels, rheological properties, *6:749*
- TPA. *See* Terephthalic acid (TPA)
- TPEs. *See* Thermoplastic elastomers (TPEs)
- TPU elastomers. *See* Thermoplastic polyurethane
- TPU, reaction extrusion, *11:646, 647*
- Trace evidence, *6:176*
- Track-etched membranes, *5:837, 838*
- Tracking resistance, *13:780*
of polymers (table), *4:697*
- Tracking tests, for electric breakdown, *4:703, 704*
- Trade names
of engineering thermoplastics (table), *5:205, 206*
of polysulfones, *11:202*
- Trademarks
of ABS materials (table), *5:207*
of thermoplastic polyesters (table), *5:207*
- Trans Alaskan Pipeline
drag reduction application, *4:536, 568*
- Trans-polybutadiene, *9:2*
- Trans-1,4-polyisoprene, *7:302, 330, 334, 337*
- Trans-planar conformation, of isotactic polythionylphosphazene, *7:49*
- Trans/cis isomer ratio
PCT gas barrier properties and, *4:216*
PCT melting point and, *4:215*
- Transamidation, *1:164*
of poly(acrylamide), *1:130*
- Transcription
collagen, *6:381*
- Transdermal patch, *7:805*
- Transesterification, *12:138*
- Transesterification polycondensation, *5:238, 239*
- Transfer (plunger) molding, *3:565*. *See also*
Compression and transfer molding
- Transfer-bar coating
nonwoven fabrics, *9:231*
- Transfer coating, *5:690, 691*
- Transfer coatings, *11:706*
- Transfer coefficient, *11:523*
- Transfer hydrogenation, *8:447*
- Transfer molding
epoxy resin applications, *5:401–407*
thermosetting resin processing, *10:89, 90*
- Transfer presses, *3:578*
- Transfer printing
wool, *15:335*
- Transfer ratio, *4:428*
- Transfer tapes, *1:411*
- Transferases, *5:222*
- Transgenic cotton, *6:387, 388*
- Transgenic plants, *6:388*
- Transgenic plants, poly(3-hydroxyalkanoate) synthesis
in, *6:387, 388, 10:106, 107*
- Transient response, of entangled polymer melts, *15:106–111*
- Transition elements, inorganic polymers based on, *7:50–65*
- Transition-metal catalysts
in ATRP, *13:228*
for polyketones, *10:651*
- Transition-metal-catalyzed chain-growth
in supercritical carbon dioxide, *4:56, 57*
- Transition-metal catalyzed polymerization, *7:203*
- Transition-metal-containing reactant, *7:64*
- Transition metal coordination complexes
electrochromic polymers, *4:791–797*

- Transition-metal-mediated NCA polymerization, 11:52–55
- Transition metals, living polymerization and. *See also* Group 3–10 transition metals
- Transition-state analogue substrate (TSAS) concept, 5:223
- Transition state theory (TST), 3:616–620, 4:521
- Arrhenius expression, 3:619
- Bell tunneling correction, 3:621
- Eckart function, 3:621, 622
- extensions to, 3:620–624
- harmonic oscillator approximation, 3:622
- low frequency torsional modes treatment, 3:622–624
- potential energy surface and, 3:616
- reaction rates via, 3:617–619
- tunneling corrections, 3:620–622
- variational, 3:617
- Wigner tunneling expression, 3:621
- Transition temperature
- of shape-memory polymers, 12:410, 412–414, 416
- Transitions and relaxations, 1:70, 71, 14:251–286
- sound as probe of, 1:76–81
- Translation
- collagen, 6:381
- Transmission, 9:397, 398
- of light through sheet, 9:399
- transmittances, 9:398
- Transmission electron microscopy (TEM), 2:193, 750, 7:215, 8:444, 14:563
- for composition and structure determination, 13:760
- forensics applications, 6:178
- Transmission experimental geometry, 9:753
- Transmission x-ray microscope, 15:376, 377
- Transparency, 9:399–401
- test methods, 13:778
- TIPS and GPPS, 13:199–202
- Transparency/scattering switching, in thermochromic polymers, 14:46–56
- Transparent impact polystyrene (TIPS), 13:270, 196–202
- styrene-butadiene block copolymers and, 13:283, 284
- Transport properties, 14:291–375
- acrylonitrile, 1:270
- amorphous rubbery polymers, 14:298–313
- diffusion coefficients in multicomponent systems, 14:296, 297
- facilitated transport, 14:365, 366
- gases and condensable vapors in barrier polymers, 2:26–32
- glassy polymers, 14:331–342
- history effects in glassy polymers, 14:350–361
- molecular modeling of transport in amorphous polymers, 14:371–375
- mutual diffusion coefficients, 14:293–296
- non-Fickian behavior, 14:361–365
- nonideal effects in rubbery polymers, 14:313–323
- positron annihilation lifetime spectroscopy, 14:368–371
- proton exchange membranes, 14:367, 368
- reference frames and fluxes, 14:292, 293
- semicrystalline and cross-linked rubbery polymers, 14:323–329
- solution-diffusion mechanism, 14:297, 298
- Transportation
- high performance fiber applications, 6:720
- Transverse direction (TD) tearing, of ethylene polymers, 5:553
- Transverse strength test, 11:687
- Trapped entanglement factor, 4:667, 668
- Trapping process of cyclic, 9:22
- Trash bags, 9:477, 478
- Treeing tests, for electric breakdown, 4:702, 703
- TREF. *See* Temperature-rising elution fractionation (TREF)
- Trelstar Depot, 3:754, 755
- Tresca yield criterion, 15:458, 460
- Trevira
- physical properties, 9:181
- TrFE. *See* Trifluoroethylene (TrFE)
- Triacetylene
- preparation of monomers, 4:453
- Triacetylene polymers, 4:445–456
- Triacylglycerols
- feedstock for environmentally degradable plastics, 2:89, 90
- Triad-like bis-(perylene)-oligothiophenes, synthesis of, 12:646
- Triads, 8:517
- Trialkylamine acylimide moiety, 1:502
- Trialkylamine acylimides, 1:512
- Triarylmethine radical, 7:699
- Triazine-hindered amine light stabilizers, 14:478
- Triazine phenolic resins, 9:591
- Triazone, 1:534
- Tribasic lead sulfate, 6:582
- Triblock copolymer, 1:167, 2:135, 6:760
- Triblock SBS copolymers, 13:281
- Triboelectric series (table), 4:737
- Triboelectrification, 4:738
- Trichloroacetaldehyde (chloral), 3:12, 13
- Trichloroethane, in CSM preparations, 5:475, 476
- 2,2,2-Trichloroethanol, 5:258
- Trichloroethylene
- solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
- swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
- Trichlorotoluene
- transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- 6-Triethoxysilylhexyl 2-bromoisobutylate (BHE), 9:650
- Triethylamine, 1:531
- transfer coefficient to, 11:530
- Triethyleneglycol methyl ether (SL9) (65), 8:445
- Triethylenetetramine
- curing agent, 5:345, 367
- shrinkage when used as curing agent, 3:531
- Triethylenetriamine (TETA), 1:418
- 2,3,3-Trifluoro-1-vinyl cyclobutane
- chloroprene reactivity ratios, 3:47
- 2,2,2-Trifluoroethyl methacrylate (TFEMA), 13:310
- Trifluoroethylene (TrFE), 9:782
- Trifunctional acrylate coagent, 12:182
- Triglycidyl *p*-aminophenol, 5:319, 320
- Triglycidylisocyanurate (TGIC) cured powder coatings, 3:244, 245
- Triisobutylaluminum-titanium tetrachloride (*i*-C₄H₉)₃Al—TiCl₄, 7:333
- Trilene polyethylene products, 5:563

- Trimellitate esters, synthesis, 10:49
- Trimellitic anhydride (TMA)
comonomer with diisocyanates, 7:254
- Trimellitic anhydride (TMA), 10:49
- Trimer contamination, in polystyrene production, 13:217
- 2,2,4-Trimethyl-1,2-dihydroquinoline, polymerized oxidant used in rubber, 12:196
- 1,3,5-Trimethyl-2,4,6-tris(3,5-di-*tert*-butyl-4-hydroxybenzyl)benzene
oxidant used in rubber, 12:194
- 1,3,5-Trimethyl-benzene (TMB), 3:175
- Trimethylaluminum, water-treated, 5:560
- Trimethylene carbonate (TMC), 5:262
- Trimethylene glycol, 10:199
- Trimethylol propane trimethacrylate (TMPPTMA), 2:711
- Trimethylolmelamine, 1:536
- Trimethylolpropane (TMP), 1:487, 489
- 2,4,6-Trimethylphenol
polymerization, 10:579
- Trimethylphenyl diaminophenylindane (DAPI)
monomers, 5:74
- Trimming
thermoforming, 14:120
- 1,3,5-Trinitrobenzene
inhibition constants with selected monomers, 11:582
- Trioctyl-phosphine (TOP), 8:786
- Trioctyl-phosphine oxide (TOPO), 8:786
- Trioxane, 1:2, 520. *See also* Acetal resins
ceiling temperature, 4:255
heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
- 1,3,5-Triphenylverdazyl, 11:579, 580
- Triplet states
electron spin resonance, 5:1
- Triptycene-based network PIM, 11:4–6, 14
- Tris-nonylphenylphosphite
antioxidant, 1:699
- 2,4,6-Tris(*N*-1,4-dimethyl-pentyl-*p*-phenylenediamino)-1,3,5-triazine (TAPDT)
oxidant used in rubber, 12:198
- Tris(2,4-di-*tert*-butylphenyl)phosphite
antioxidant, 1:699, 704
- Tris-(benzyltriazolylmethyl)amine (TBTA), 3:191
- N,N',N''*-Tris(2-methoxyethyl)benzene-1,3,5-tricarboxamide (BTA), 13:448, 449
- Trisphenol epoxy novolacs, 5:318
- 3-[Tris(trimethylsilyloxy)silyl]propyl methacrylate
activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
- [3]Trithiaferrocenophanes, 7:58
- Tritiated water separation
phosphazenes for, 11:107
- Tritolylamine (TTA), 9:760
- Triynes, 1:48–54
click polymerizations, 1:49–52
coupling polymerizations, 1:48, 49
polycoupling of, 1:49
polymer reactions, 1:52–54
- tRNA, 15:184
- Trommsdorff effect, 6:381, 609, 8:317, 318, 11:552, 13:191
- Troubleshooting
extrusion blow molding, 2:247–249
injection blow molding, 2:226–230
“Trousler-leg” method, 9:13
- Trouton viscosity, 15:107
- Trubyte, 7:139
- True block copolymers, 7:307
- True stress, 15:452
- True transfer molding, 3:566, 567. *See also* Compression and transfer molding
- Truly vascular systems, 12:363, 364
- Truncation, 3:605
- Tryptophan
chemical structure, 15:186
composition in silk, 12:543
percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Tryptophan (cyclohexyloxy-carbonyl protected), 11:70
- Tryptophan (formyl protected), 11:70
- Tryptophan (*tert*-butyloxy-carbonyl protected), 11:73
- Tryptophan dendrimer, 4:334
- TSA-Star and DMAP-Star, 8:459
- Tsai-Hill equation, 7:573
- TTF polymers. *See* Tetrathiafulvalene (TTF) polymers
- Tube fluctuations, 15:101
- Tube-in-tube microreactor, 8:320
- Tubing
extrusion, 10:74–76
LLDPE, 5:580
nylon, 10:288
- Tubing dies, 5:672–675
- Tubing extrusion lines, 5:633
- Tubular membrane modules, 7:770, 772
- Tubular reactors
for bulk and solution polymerization, 2:289–291
for emulsion polymerization, 5:189
for heterophase polymerization, 6:617
for LDPE, 5:519, 520
- Tufel, 2:686
- TUFTS process, 5:158
- Tung oil, 4:499
- Tungsten and molybdenum imido complexes, 8:152
- Tungsten-based catalysts, 8:153, 189
- Tunicates
cellulose from, 2:570
- Turbidimetric methods
fractionation, 6:272
- Turbostratic graphite, 11:691
- Turbulence, 8:321
- Turbulence mixers, 3:555
- Turbulent drag reduction, 4:535, 536, 539–555
by surfactants, 4:537, 566–568
- Turnbull-Fisher equation, 4:173
- Turpentine oil
resinification by sulfuric acid, 2:391
- Twaron, 10:220, 232, 11:693
- Twente mixing ring, 5:659, 660
- Twin-screw extruder, 11:632
- Twin-screw extruders, 3:495, 557, 5605:618–620, 644, 666, 10:74
pearlescent pigments and, 3:472
versus single screw extruders, 5:648
- Twining
polymer single crystals, 12:390, 391

- Twist extrusion, 12:697
- Two-beam coupling, 9:751
- Two-blade coaters, 3:272
- Two-component polyurethane systems, 11:256, 257
- Two-dimensional correlation spectroscopy, 14:381–407
- Two-dimensional Fourier spectroscopy, 9:248–251
- Two-dimensional NMR (2D NMR) spectroscopy, 14:381
- Two-dimensional thermal field-flow fractionation (2D-ThFFF), 2:735
- Two-dimensionally extended poly(aminium cationic radical)s, 7:699–701
- Two peak distributions, 5:180
- Two-phase nonaqueous systems, polycondensation in, 7:103
- aromatic polyesters, 7:103
- Two-phase polymer systems, 5:184
- Two-phase systems, aqueous polymer, 11:169–171
- Two-photon absorption (TPA), 9:766
- Two-roll mills, 3:494
- Two-stage extruder screw, 5:668
- Two-step strain histories, 15:123
- Two-step stress relaxation experiments
- DE model and, 15:141–143, 146
- Two-tone flop effect, 3:473
- Tylose, 4:551
- Typar
- physical properties, 9:181
- Type-2 numbering-up reactor, 8:334
- Type I strong base anion exchange resins, 7:158
- Type II strong base anion exchange resins, 7:158
- Tyrosinase model catalyst, for oxidative polymerization, 9:438–444
- Tyrosine (2,6-dichlorobenzyl protected), 11:70
- Tyrosine (*tert*-butyl protected), 11:73
- Tyrosine, 5:264
- chemical structure, 15:186
- composition in silk, 12:543
- percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
- Tyrosine ethyl ester, 5:266
- Tyvek, 8:566
- physical properties, 9:181
- U-Polymer, 10:351
- U.S. Army for military rations, 9:456
- U.S. Food and Drug Administration, 9:456
- U.S. Food and Drug Administration. *See* FDA; Food and Drug Administration (FDA); Regulation
- U.S. Government, release agent regulation by, 11:708
- U.S. standard atmosphere⁹, 15:244
- UCARE Polymers, 2:659
- UF resins. *See* Urea-formaldehyde (UF) resins
- Ugelsatd plot, 6:606
- UL (Underwriters' Laboratory) index, 10:663
- UL 94 20-mm vertical burning test, 6:87
- UL 94 flame testing, 13:781
- ULDPE resins, 5:578
- Ullman-coupling reactions, 3:192
- Ullman synthesis, 11:184
- Ultem film, ESR spectrum, 11:480
- Ultem polyetherimide, 10:590
- Ultimate fibers, 2:569
- Ultimate shear strength, 15:473
- Ultra IP, 5:427
- Ultra low density polyethylene (ULDPE), 5:578
- Ultra LT, 5:427
- Ultracentrifugation
- for average molar mass determination, 2:741
- cross-fractionation chromatography, 6:274, 275
- fractionation, 6:270–274
- Ultracentrifuge
- for weight-average molecular weight determination, 8:669, 670
- Ultrafiltration, 5:832, 7:745, 779–784
- Ultrafiltration flux, 7:782, 783
- Ultrafiltration membranes, 5:832, 7:757, 775
- Ultrahigh modulus carbon fibers, 2:464
- Ultrahigh molecular weight polyethylene (UHMWPE), 5:620, 11:680. *See also* Ethylene polymers; High density polyethylene (HDPE)
- draw ratios for, 11:694, 695
- fatigue crack effect of molecular weight, 5:726
- fatigue crack propagation, 5:721
- solid-state extrusion, 12:694
- Ultrahigh molecular weight polyethylene fibers, 11:680, 695
- Ultrahigh molecular weight polypropylene (UHMPP)
- solid-state extrusion, 12:694
- Ultralow-*k*films, synthesis by PE-CVD, 10:22
- Ultramarine pigments, 3:471
- Ultranox U626, 13:41, 42
- Ultrasonic attenuation
- amorphous polymers, 1:586
- Ultrasonic nondestructive testing, 13:781
- Ultrasonic waves, 1:61, 9:110
- Ultrasonically stimulated controlled release technology, 3:753
- Ultrasound-induced radical polymerization, 8:476, 14:414–431
- Arrhenius plot for, 14:421, 422
- batch reactor of, 14:421
- blake threshold and vapor pressure, 14:423
- bulk polymerization, 14:420–422
- cavitation bubble dynamics, 14:415, 416, 418
- cavitation bubble, 14:424
- CO₂-expanded system, 14:425
- collapse, 14:415
- effect of ultrasound intensity on limiting number-average, 14:429
- emulsion polymerization, 14:425, 426
- frequency of, 14:419
- fundamentals, 14:415
- introduction, 14:414
- liquids, 14:415, 416
- molecular weight distributions of, 14:427
- ntensity, 14:419
- parameters influencing cavitation, 14:415, 416
- precipitation polymerization, 14:422, 423
- reaction mechanism of, 14:419
- reaction temperature, 14:418
- results of, 14:424
- schematic representation of bubble growth, 14:415
- static pressure, 14:418
- synthesis of, 14:426
- types of, 14:415
- use of, 14:414
- viscosity, 14:418, 419
- Ultrastrong materials, 8:736–741

- Ultraviolet (uv) absorption photometers, 3:92
- Ultraviolet (uv) light/radiation. *See also* Solar radiation
effect on oxidation, 13:9–11
photo-oxidation and, 13:35
polysulfone resistance to, 11:195
- Ultraviolet absorbers (UVAs)
copolymerization during polymer manufacture, 13:38
as preventive antioxidants, 13:11, 15–17, 30, 31
- Ultraviolet aging, of polyamide plastics, 10:281
- Ultraviolet degradation
olefin fibers, 9:350
- Ultraviolet embrittlement times, 13:40
- Ultraviolet free-radical initiation, 6:835, 861
- Ultraviolet ray screeners
for polychloroprene latex, 3:77
- Ultraviolet-screening pigments, 13:30, 31
- Ultraviolet stabilizers, as polystyrene additives, 13:249
- Ultraviolet-visible absorption data, for polygermanes
and polystannanes, 7:43
- Uncollapsed polyethylene lamellae, 8:708, 709
- Under cure, 4:66
- Underwater acoustics, 1:92, 93
- Underwater pelletizers, 5:639, 9:483
- Underwriter's Laboratories (UL), 4:675, 10:663, 13:780
- Uniaxial compression modulus
composite materials, 3:545
- Uniaxial deformation, of solid-like polymers, 15:152,
153
- Uniaxial extension flow, 12:2, 3
- Uniaxial extension, 4:639–641
stress-strain measurements in, 4:660, 661, 663
- Uniaxial orientation
films, 5:814–816
- Uniaxial tensile loading
stress-strain curves, 15:451, 452
- Uniaxial tensile modulus
composite materials, 3:545
- Unidirectional carbon fiber prepreg with a PPS matrix,
10:137
- Unimolecular photoinitiators
free radical photopolymerization, 9:720, 721
- Uninhibited autoxidation, 1:687–689
- Union Carbide mixer (UC mixer), 5:663
- UNIPOL™ gas-phase process, 5:563, 565
- Unique systems, 8:440
- Unit Heaviside function, 15:88
- United States. *See also* Regulation
acrylonitrile production of, 1:261, 262
adhesives industry in, 1:402
plastics recycling, 11:658, 659
polyacrylamides in, 1:147, 148
polystyrene recycling in, 13:210
rubber manufacturing in, 13:269
- Units of measurement, 5:209
- Universal (bulk property) detectors, 3:92
- Universal alkoxyamine initiator, 13:232
- Universal chiroptical spectrophotometer (UCS)
solid-state dedicated, 12:659
optical diagram, 12:660
solid-state CD and CB measurements, 12:662–666
- Universal force field (UFF) model, 8:578
- Universal slopes equation, in fatigue, 5:704
- Unoriented polymer networks, 8:549
- Unsaturated cure sites, of acrylic elastomers, 1:174
- Unsaturated ester oligomers, 6:414–416
- Unsaturated polyester resins, 3:338, 339
- Unsaturated polyester, 4:85, 86
free radical photopolymerization, 9:729, 730
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Unsaturated resins, 6:200–202
- Unstable crack propagation, 6:319
- Unsteady burning, 6:65–68
- Unsymmetrical azonitrile, 1:823, 825
- Unzipping, 4:254
styrene polymers, 13:208, 209
- Up-jump volume recovery, 1:453
- Uphostry-use of coated fabrics, 5:692
- Upper critical solution temperature (UCST), 8:534,
9:564–566, 14:90
- Upstack operation, 5:634
- Upward precipitation fractionation, 6:234, 235
- Uralkyds, 1:497, 3:333, 334
- Urea
in amino resins, 1:518, 519
cocondensation with melamine-formaldehyde resins,
7:733
- Urea-formaldehyde (UF) resins, 1:480, 516, 517, 526,
541
butylated, 1:530
frothing processes, 2:524
manufacture of, 1:525
reaction rate constants for (table), 1:522
in textile finishes, 1:531
- Urea-formaldehyde (UF) resins, 4:78–80
- Urea-formaldehyde
advantages, disadvantages, and applications as
epoxy curing agent, 5:339
- Urea-formaldehyde adhesives, 1:426
for wood composites, 15:283–286
- Urea-formaldehyde microcapsules, 12:360
- Urea-formaldehyde resins
curing agents, 5:355, 356
- Urea resins, cationic, 1:541
- γ -Ureidopropyltrimethoxysilane, 12:188
- Urena, 14:495
mechanical properties, 14:499
processing, 14:504, 505
- Urethane adhesives, 1:422–425
- Urethane-coated fabrics
finishing, 7:503
manufacture, 7:499
- Urethane coatings, 14:433–450
2K urea coatings, 14:439, 440
2K waterborne coatings, 14:445, 446
carbamate-functional reactants, 14:449
hydroxy-terminated polyurethanes, 14:449
introduction, 14:433–435
markets, 14:450
moisture-curable, 14:442, 443
thermoplastic polyurethane dispersions, 14:443, 444
two package, 14:437, 438
uralkyds, 14:448, 449
waterborne polyurethanes, 14:443
waterborne urethane UV cure coatings, 14:446–448
- Urethane derivatives, 1:497
- Urethane dimethacrylate monomers mixture, 4:391

- Urethane polyester powder coatings, 3:246, 247
 Urethane polymers. *See* Polyurethanes
 Urethanes
 N-phenyl, 4:448
 physical properties, 12:207
 for rubber compounding, 12:217
 Uretidiones, 11:215, 216
 Uron resins, 1:535
 Urushi, 5:271
 Urushiol analogues, 5:271
 Ushercell, 2:611
 UV absorption characteristics
 PEN, 10:144
 UV Check AM 340, 14:481
 "UV concentrator," 15:255
 UV exposure testing, 13:777, 778
 UV-induced cationic photopolymerization, 9:695, 696
 UV-initiated polymerization, 8:343, 402
 UV irradiance, 15:277
 UV light absorbers, 14:457–478
 UV light radiation, 8:277
 UV radiation, 14:453, 15:259
 polysilane absorption, 11:150–154
 wavelength sensitivity of selected polymers (table), 14:454
 UV spectroscopy, 2:738
 UV stabilizers, 14:452–491. *See also* Hindered amine light stabilizers
 carbon blacks, 2:459
 coating stabilization, 14:482–491
 excited state quenchers, 14:479
 films, 5:807
 hydroperoxide decomposers, 14:479
 photodegradation, 14:453–455
 poly(vinyl chloride), 14:756
 radical scavengers, 14:479, 481, 482
 stabilization mechanisms and strategies, 14:455–457
 test methods for exposure, 14:457
 UVAs. *See* Ultraviolet absorbers (UVAs)
 Uvasil 299, 14:473
 Uvasorb HA88, 14:472
 UVINOL 3035, 14:458
 V-belts, 2:69, 70
 V-ribbed belts, 2:69
 VA. *See* Vinyl acetate (EVA, VA)
 VAc with xanthate RAFT agents, polymerization of, 11:730
 Vac-cobalt-mediated living radical polymerization, 11:730
 Vacuum-assisted resin-transfer molding
 thermosets, 14:207, 208
 Vacuum bag
 thermosets, 14:206, 207
 Vacuum deposition coating, of irregular surfaces, 3:287
 Vacuum draw box, 14:112
 Vacuum forming, 10:87, 14:103
 styrene polymers, 13:247
 Vacuum insulation panels
 cellular polymers, 2:542
 Vacuum ultra-violet (VUV), 13:529
 Vacuum ultraviolet radiation (VUV), 14:773
 Vacuum venting process, for encapsulation by transfer molding, 3:580, 581
 Valanis-Landel (VL) form, of strain energy function, 15:116–119
 Valence bands, 13:476
 Valine
 chemical structure, 15:186
 composition in silk, 12:543
 percentage composition in merino wool, 15:313
Valonia ventricosa
 cellulose from, 2:570
 VALOX 315, 7:685
 Vamac
 van der Waals forces/interactions, 1:362, 4:644, 652, 11:691
 Vamac[®] ethylene acrylic elastomer, 5:420, 421
 Van der Schaaf-type initiator, 8:154
 Van Krevelen's method, of thermal decomposition, 6:68, 73, 74
 Van Mises yield criterion, 6:331, 332, 15:458–461
 van Vleck moments, 9:252, 253
 van't Hoff equation, 7:744
 Van't Hoff reaction isobar, 4:431
 Vanadium catalysts
 metallocenes, 8:82
 1,2-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:311
 for Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 15:508, 509
 Vanax, 5:479
 Vandadium catalysts
 trans-1,4-polybutadiene synthesis by Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:310
 Vanzo equation, 5:176
 Vapor deposition polymerization (VDP), 2:763, 764. *See also* Chemical vapor deposition
 polyimides, 15:415
 xylylene polymers, 15:409
 Vapor-grown carbon fibers, 2:469, 482, 483
 Vapor-liquid interfacial polycondensation, 7:100–102
 phase-transfer agents, 7:101, 102
 Vapor-phase assisted surface polymerization (VASP), 2:764
 Vapor phase osmometry
 for average molar mass determination, 2:741
 Vapor phase polymerization, of aromatic polyamides, 10:219
 Vapor phase, stripping residual styrene from, 13:243
 Vapor-polymer equilibrium partitioning, in styrene polymerization, 13:242
 Vapor-pressure osmometry
 for number-average molecular weight determination, 8:666–668
 Variable angle polarized absorption spectroscopy (VAPAS), 5:98
 Variable angle spectroscopic ellipsometry (VASE), 5:98
 Variable depth mixers, 5:660, 661
 Variational transition-state theory, 3:617
 Varnishes, 1:480
 Vascular grafts
 biodegradable polymers for, 2:116
Vaucheria
 cellulose from, 2:572
 VDC monomer. *See also* Vinylidene chloride (VDC)
 VDC polymers. *See* Vinylidene chloride (VDC) polymers, 9:791

- VDC resins. *See* Vinylidene chloride
- VDC. *See* Vinylidene chloride (VDC)
- VDCN/VAc copolymer, 9:793
- VDF. *See* Vinylidene fluoride (VDF)
- VDP polyimides, 15:415
- VDP. *See* Vapor deposition polymerization (VDP)
- Vector rubber, 13:283
- Vectra, 7:565, 571–573
high barrier polymer, 2:41
- Vetra A950
NEXAFS of mechanically alloyed blends with PET, 15:395–397
- Vectran, 6:710, 7:567
- Vegetable fibers, 14:594–510
applications, 14:508–510
bast fiber processing, 14:498–504
commercial (table), 14:495
economic aspects, 14:507, 508
leaf fiber processing, 14:504–506
physical properties, 14:498
seed- and fruit-hair fibers, 14:506
- Vegetable oils
in interpenetrating network, 7:144
- Vegetable tanning, 7:486, 487
Calgon pickle, 7:487
Liritan process, 7:487
- Vegetable tannins, 7:486
- Vehicle recycling, 11:671
- Velcro, 1:366
- Velocity profiles, down-channel, 5:655
- Venetian blinds, 14:57
- Vent flow, 5:669
- Vented extruders, 5:668, 669
- Venting, in blow molding, 2:241–247
- Verel, 1:251
limiting oxygen index, 1:232
- Verlet numerical integration methods, 8:587
- Vermiculite
filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
filler properties, 5:379
- Versamide 140
curing agent, 5:367
- Versipol™ catalyst technology, 5:564
- 20-mm Vertical Burning Test, 6:87
- Vertical form/fill/seal (VFFS) packaging, 9:472
- Vertical form/fill/seal (VFFS), 9:472
- Vertical-type UCS (v-UCS), 12:660, 661
- Very large-scale integration (VLSI) semiconductor chips, 5:108
- Very low density polyethylenes (VLDPE), 5:543, 578.
See also VLDPE
- Very small outline package (VSOP), 5:66
- Vesicle formation
liquid crystalline packing, 14:523
secondary valence interactions, 14:522, 523
strong segregation limit, 14:521, 522
- Vesicle polymerization, 5:186
- Vesicle-tubule transition, 14:533, 534
- Vesicles, 14:511–556
amphiphiles, polymerization of, 14:543, 544
bilayer formation, conditions for, 14:518, 519
bilayer properties, 14:535–542
biocompatibility, 14:547–550
biomedical applications, 14:546, 547
blood plasma stability, 14:548
closure to, 14:513–516
cross-linking, 14:544
direct hydration, 14:523
electroformation, 14:523
encapsulation methods, 14:550
exchange kinetics and freezing, 14:517
- Vesicles shapes, 14:525–530
and shape transitions, 14:530–535
area difference, 14:527, 528
bilayer asymmetry, 14:528
budding transition, 14:532, 533
chemically asymmetric bilayers, 14:530
curvature energy, 14:525–530
equilibrium curvature, 14:529, 530
membrane area, 14:526
membrane elasticity, 14:526, 527
membrane energy, 14:525, 526
osmotic pressure, 14:526
pearling transition, 14:532
spontaneous curvature, 14:528, 529
- Vestenamer, 8:187, 188
- VF. *See* Vinyl fluoride
- VFFS equipment, 9:472
- VFFS machinery, 9:475
- VFFS packaging. *See* Vertical form/fill/seal (VFFS) packaging
- Vibration analysis, 9:767
- Vibration damping behavior
interpenetrating polymer networks, 7:132, 133
- Vibration damping, 1:93
- Vibration fracture, genuine, 6:290, 291
- Vibration-induced creep fracture, 6:289–291
- Vibrational spectroscopy, 14:563–627. *See also* Raman spectroscopy; Infrared spectroscopy
advantages and applications, 14:563, 564
anisotropy assessment: segmental orientation, 14:607–612
chain configuration, 14:575, 576
chain conformation-disordered, 14:579–583
chain conformation-ordered, 14:576–579
for crystallinity determination, 4:156–158
double modulation spectroscopy, 14:623–627
heterogeneous polymer characterization, 14:594–599
imaging spectroscopy of impurities, blends, composites, and laminates, 14:599–607
infrared, 14:564, 565
longitudinal acoustic mode, 14:583–590
low frequency observations of amorphous polymers, 14:590, 591
normal coordinate analysis, 14:573, 574
normal vibrations, 14:568–574
phase transformations, 14:591–594
Raman scattering, 14:565–568
semicrystalline polymers, 12:382
silk crystallization on highly oriented substrate, 14:622, 623
structural characterization, 14:574–599
structural unit-size analysis, 14:583–590
surface characterization, 14:612–623
use in forensic analysis, 6:181
Vicker's hardness test, 13:775

- Vickers indenter, 6:556
Victrex PEEK (Victrex), 10:563
Viebeck and Schwappach procedure, 7:536
Viloft, 2:687
Vilsmeier aldehyde synthesis, 9:626
Vincel, 2:685
Vine-twinning polymerization, 5:229
Vinyl 2-ethylhexanoate
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
Vinyl acetal polymers, 14:633–646
 applications, 14:645–647
 economic aspects, 14:644, 645
 health and safety factors, 14:644
 manufacture, 14:636, 637
 properties, 14:637–644
 synthesis and structure, 14:634–636
Vinyl acetate copolymers, 14:670, 671
Vinyl acetate polymers, 14:651–681
 applications, 14:673–681
 blends, 14:671
 economic aspects, 14:671
 manufacture, 14:662–669
 specifications and standards, 14:671–673
Vinyl acetate, 5:515, 516, 14:651, 652
 acrylonitrile copolymers with, 1:279
 activation parameter for propagation step, 11:520
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 azeotropes (table), 14:654
 comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234, 239, 240
 density of monomer and corresponding polymer in heterogenous polymerization, 6:639
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 inhibition constants of selected inhibitors, 11:582
 physical properties, 14:653
 as polyethylene comonomer, 5:517, 518
 polymerization, 14:662–669
 RAFT polymerization, 7:658
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:629
Vinyl acetate-ethylene copolymers
 for rubber compounding, 12:217
Vinyl alcohol copolymers, 14:708
Vinyl alcohol polymers, 14:686–717
 applications, 14:712–717
 chemical properties, 14:695–701
 copolymers, 14:708
 economic aspects, 14:708, 709
 health and safety factors, 14:711
 manufacture, 14:702–708
 mechanical properties, 14:692–695
 physical properties, 14:687–692
 processing, 14:711
 specifications and standards, 14:709, 710
 test methods, 14:710, 711
Vinyl benzoate
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
Vinyl chloride
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
 comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 density of monomer and corresponding polymer in heterogenous polymerization, 6:639
 heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
 heterophase polymerization, 6:601, 613, 614, 617
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
 transfer coefficient to, 11:526
 water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628, 629
Vinyl chloride monomer
 health and safety factors, 14:760
 production, 14:728
 properties, 14:726, 727
 removal in emulsion polymerization, 14:747, 748
Vinyl chloride polymers, 14:724–762
 applications, 14:756–758
 bulk polymerization, 14:742, 743
 chemical properties, 14:726, 727
 chlorinated, 14:754
 economic aspects, 14:758–760
 emulsion polymerization, 14:743–754
 environmental issues, 14:755
 health and safety factors, 14:760–762
 K-value (molecular mass), 14:739–741
 physical properties, 14:726, 727
 processing, 14:756–758
 quality specifications and analysis, 14:755, 756
 storage and transportation, 14:756
 suspension polymerization, 14:728–742
Vinyl chloride-vinylidene chloride copolymers, 2:728
Vinyl-coated fabrics
 manufacture, 7:498, 499
 properties, 7:504
Vinyl cyclohexene monoxide, 5:326
Vinyl ester network, 5:329, 330
Vinyl ethers
 cationic photopolymerization, 9:705, 706
Vinyl floors, 6:107
Vinyl fluoride (FCH₂), 6:131
Vinyl fluoride polymers (PVF), 14:765–783
 bulk polymerization, 14:774
 chemical alteration of, 14:773
 copolymers of, 14:772, 779
 economic aspects, 14:781
 emulsion polymerization, 14:774
 fabrication and processing, 14:780, 781
 fiber-reinforced panels, 14:782, 783
 graft polymerization, 14:775
 health and environment, 14:781, 782
 homopolymers, 14:765
 introduction, 14:765
 multilayer films of, 14:782, 783
 physical properties of, 14:766
 polymerization, continuous, 14:775, 776
 preparation, 14:766, 767
 reactivity ratio, 14:780
 solubility of in water, 14:767
 solubility of organic solvents, 14:766
 suspension polymerization, 14:774
 terpolymers of, 14:772

- thermal conductivity and viscosity of, 14:767
thermodynamic properties of, 14:766
uses, 14:782
- Vinyl formate
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- Vinyl functional sulfonic acids, 13:217
- Vinyl ketones
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
- Vinyl laurate
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- Vinyl Malachite Green, 4:587
- Vinyl monomers. *See also* Dienes
anionic polymerization, 1:599–620
anionic polymerization polar, 1:620–628
- Vinyl neodecanoate
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Vinyl neononate
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Vinyl pivalate
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Vinyl polymerization, 1:341
- Vinyl polymerization, self-condensing, 6:788, 789
- Vinyl polymers
film properties, 5:806
- Vinyl polymers synthesis, enzymatic polymerization, 5:276–279
- Vinyl polymers, depolymerization of, 4:428, 433
- Vinyl polymers, depolymerization, 6:46
- Vinyl polymers, tacticity, 13:650–668
spatial three-dimensional view, 13:652, 653
- Vinyl polymers, tacticity configuration, 13:651
- Vinyl-sheet flooring, 6:114–118
aromatic plasticizers, 6:117
backing material, 6:115, 116
blowing agents, 6:117
chemical embossing, 6:118
flow diagram for production, 6:115
foam layer, 6:117
foamed PVC, chemical embossing of, 6:118
glass-fiber mat backing, 6:116
no-wax top finishes, 6:118
plasticized pvc, 6:115
plasticizer, 6:117
solution polyurethanes, 6:118–120
stabilizers, 6:117
wet glass mat, 6:116
- Vinyl stearate
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- Vinyl sulfonic acid
template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- Vinyl sulfonyl dyes, 4:586
- Vinyl-terminated PDMS, 9:32, 33
- Vinyl tiles, 6:122–124
composition (table), 6:124
formulation range (table), 6:124
- Vinyl toluene
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Vinyl-unsaturated Urethane cold-box binders, 6:201, 202
- Vinyl Versatate VV10
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- Vinyl Versatate VV9
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
- 1-(4-vinyl)benzyloxy-4(phosphorylcholine), 9:642
- 5-Vinyl-2-norbornene
ethylene-propylene elastomer monomer, 5:595
- N*-Vinyl-2-pyrrolidinone, 9:317, 318
cationic polymerization, 9:322
cross-linked PVP, 9:325
homopolymerization of, 9:319
manufacture, 9:317
microstructure, 9:322
organic peroxides and azo initiation, 9:321, 322
polymeric compositions (table), 9:325
proliferous polymerization, 9:322–324
properties of (table), 9:318
PVP hydrogels, 9:324
toxicity data (table), 318, 319
- N*-Vinylamide-based polymers, 9:315
- Vinylanthraquinone chromophores, 4:587
- Vinylcaprolactam, 9:316
- N*-Vinylcarbazole
cationic photopolymerization, 9:705, 706
- Vinylcarbazole polymers. *See* Poly(vinylcarbazone) (PVK)
- Vinylchlorosilane, 12:467
- Vinylcyclohexane, isospecific polymerization, 13:109
- Vinylethers reaction, 8:175
- Vinylidene chloride
aqueous solubility, 7:467
comonomer with acrylonitrile, 1:234
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
heat and entropy of polymerization, 14:97
standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
transfer coefficient to, 11:526
- Vinylidene chloride polymers (PVDC), 15:1–46, 54
- Vinylidene chloride (VDC). *See also* VDC
acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
water solubility for heterophase polymerization, 6:628
- Vinylidene cyanide
copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
monomer reactivity, carbanion stability, and suitable initiators for anionic polymerization, 1:602
- Vinylidene fluoride polymers (PVDF), 15:54–73, 77
economic aspects of, 15:71
fabrication and processing of, 15:68–72
health and safety factors for, 15:71
properties of, 15:60–68
uses of, 15:72, 73
- Vinylidene fluoride (VDF), 6:161, 9:784, 785
health and safety factors for, 15:58
manufacturers of, 15:55

- monomer, 15:57, 58
 physical properties of, 15:58
 polymerization, 15:58–60
 preparation of, 15:57
 properties of, 15:57
- Vinylidene fluoride (VF₂, F₂C CH₂), synthesis of, 6:131
- Vinylidene chloride-vinyl chloride copolymers
 permeability chain orientation effect, 2:18
 permeability temperature effect, 2:13
- N-Vinylimidazole
 template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- α -Vinyl naphthalene
 standard polymerization enthalpy and entropy, 11:574
- Vinyl loop, 11:669
- Vinylphosphonic acid, 9:667
- 4-Vinylpyridine
 acrylonitrile copolymers of, 1:285
 atom-transfer radical polymerization, 7:653
- N-Vinylpyridine
 template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- Vinylpyridines
 stereochemistry of anionic polymerized, 1:639
- N-Vinylpyrrolidinone
 copolymerization parameters with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 template polymerization monomer, 13:748
- Vinylsulfonic acid. *See* Ethylenesulfonic acid
- Vinyltoluene
 aqueous solubility, 7:467
- Vinyltriethoxysilane, 1:386, 12:187
- Vinyltriethoxysilane coupling agent, 1:371
- Vinyltrimethoxysilane (VS)
 coupling agent, 12:421
- Vinyltrimethoxysilane, 12:187
- Vinyon N, 1:225
- Violet pigments, 3:484–486
- Viologens
 electrochromism, 4:797, 798
- Virosomes, 14:511
- Virtual heat release rate, convective environment,
 dependence on, 6:58
 viscosity, 5:194
- Viscoelastic behavior, 6:309–313, 15:77–163. *See also*
 Creep
 amorphous polymers, 1:568–570, 583, 584
 amorphous polymers with narrow molecular weight
 distribution, 1:574–581
 and cratch hardness, 12:326
 evolution of, 1:461–467
 history of investigations of, 15:77
 linear, 15:78–81
 mechanical analogues of, 15:81–86
 molecular modeling, 8:613, 614
 poly(ethylene-co-styrene) blends, 5:434–436
 response regimes, 15:92–105
 semicrystalline polymers, 15:104
 and sound absorption, 1:65
 test methods, 13:773, 774
- Viscoelastic creep crack growth, 6:311
- Viscoelastic diffusion, 4:515
- Viscoelastic effects, in fracture, 6:311–313
- Viscoelastic material functions, 15:80, 81
 interrelationships among, 15:86
- Viscoelastic relaxation processes, 13:837, 838
- Viscoelastic solids, 1:568
- Viscoelasticity, 15:77–163
 two-dimensional NMR spectroscopy, 9:270–268
- Viscometric detectors, 3:118
- Viscometric methods, for polyacrylamide analysis,
 1:142
- Viscometry. *See* Rheological
- Viscoplasticity model, of solid-like polymers, 15:163
- Viscose process, 2:676–689
 environmental issues, 2:700, 701
- Viscose rayon, 2:672. *See also* Rayons
 history, 2:673–675
- Viscosity. *See also* Extensional viscosity; Melt viscosity;
 Mooney viscosity; Viscous
 in colorant dispersion, 3:494
 of CSM polymers, 5:472
 intrinsic, 5:211, 10:513, 514
 latexes, 7:460, 461
 of liquids with dispersed phases, 3:304
 molecular modeling, 8:621
 molecular weight *versus*, 15:102
 of polyacrylamide solutions, 1:122–124
 of polyester fiber, 10:513, 514
 of solutions, 3:303, 304
 of styrene-butadiene rubber, 13:278
 uncured epoxy resins, 5:332
 water-soluble polymers, 15:177, 178
- Viscosity-average molecular weight, 8:660
 determination, 8:668, 669
- Viscosity, of mesophase, 6:41, 41
- Viscous bank process, 2:375–378
- Viscous diffusion, 4:510, 511
- Viscous drag, 5:651
- Viscous encapsulation, 3:379
- Viscous instabilities in coextrusion, 3:384–388
- Visible electrochromics
 electrically active polymers for, 4:768
- Visible light photoinitiators
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:724–726
- Visible radiation, 15:245
- Vistalon, 7:139
- Vistanex, 2:355
- Vitalon oxygen absorber, 2:58
- Vitamin B₁₂
 Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:428
- Vitamin C, 5:228
- Vitamin E
 as antioxidant, 13:39–42
- Viton, 6:161
- Viton Extreme, 6:164
- Vitreous fibers, 6:715, 716
- Vitreous silica dilatometer, 14:25
- Vitrification, 6:433
 epoxy resins, 5:370
 thermosets, 14:163, 164
- VK (*vereinfacht kontinuierlich*) process, 10:247
- VL function derivative, 15:119, 152
- VL function. *See* Valanis-Landel (VL) form of strain
 energy function
- VLDPE resins, 5:551, 578

- VLDPE. *See* Very low density polyethylenes (VLDPE)
- VLSI chips. *See* Very large-scale integration (VLSI) semiconductor chips
- VOC emission permits, 5:79
- VOC emissions, 7:491
- Vogel-Fulcher equation and, 15:95–97
- Vogel-Fulcher equation, 15:95–97
- Vogel-Fulcher-Tammann-Hesse equation, 1:571
- Vogel-Tammann-Hesse-Fulcher (VTHF) expression, 1:471
- Void growth
composite materials, 3:539–541
- Voids, 6:295, 296
formation of, 6:332
- Volatile organic compound (VOC) emissions, 3:299, 300
environmental regulations and, 3:302
- Volatile organic compounds (VOC), 7:491, 13:371
avoiding emissions of, 4:47
- Volatility
antioxidants, 1:716
- Volatility, of stabilizers and antioxidants, 13:20
- Voltage breakdown (table), 4:688
definition, 4:679
due to imperfections, 4:689, 690
in gas, 4:680
“weak-link” aspects of, 4:698, 699
- Voltage-distribution controls, in dielectric heating, 4:467–469
- Voltage life (table), of plastic films, 4:690
- Volume
and thermodynamic properties, 14:77–80
- Volume-dependent clocks, for solid-like polymers, 15:160
- Volume dilatometry, 4:527–530
- Volume recovery, 1:453–456. *See also* Relaxation
- Volume relaxation, 1:453
- Volume resistivity, 4:705
of contaminated plastics (table), 4:712
definition, 4:738
effect of geometry and homogeneity, 4:705
of paper-phenolic resin laminate, 4:708
vs. time of electrification, 4:707
- Volume strain, 6:332
- Volume thermal expansivity, 14:6
- Volumetric methods
for crystallinity determination, 4:158, 159
- Vosko-Wilk-Nusair (VWN), 3:613
- VTHF expression. *See* Vogel-Tammann-Hesse-Fulcher (VTHF) expression
- Vulcanometer curves of natural rubber, 4:67
- Vulcanizates, 13:37
- Vulcanization, 4:63–66, 12:236–250. *See also*
Elastomers/rubber cross-linking
butyl rubber, 2:366
of chlorosulfonated polyethylene, 5:477
ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:594, 602
thermoplastic elastomers, 14:148
zinc oxide in, 3:470
- Vulcanization accelerators, 3:553
- Vulcanization, in acrylic elastomers, 1:183–186
- Vulcanized elastomers
elongation retention of, 6:162
tension testing of, 4:640
- Vulcanized rubber
stress-temperature curves for, 4:652
- Vulcanized silicone rubber, 12:498, 499
- Vulcanizing agents, 12:239–241
in SBR processing, 13:277
- Vultac, 12:175, 176
- W-initiated polymerizations, 8:174
- W/O HIPE, 10:597
- Wafer and fabrication packaging facilities, 5:82
- Wafer bonding, 1:430
- Wafer fabrication spin coating, 5:67
- Waferboard
phenolic resin applications, 9:612
- Wagener’s group, 8:165
- Wall coverings-use of coated fabrics, 5:692
- Wall thickness gauge, ultrasonic, 5:634
- “Wal-Mart effect,” 1:344
- Wang resins, 11:67
- Warm-melt adhesives, 1:413
- Warp sizing
poly(vinyl alcohol), 14:712–714
- Warping, 5:672
- Wash waxes, 6:106
- Washing
viscose rayon, 2:683, 684
- Washing, azo pigment manufacture via, 3:474
- Waste disposal, of phosgene, 9:631
- Wastewater treatment
acrylamide polymers in, 1:119
chitosan in, 3:40
- Wastewater treatment, in nanofiltration membranes, 5:833
- Water absorption, of a polymer, 5:208
- Water-based polymers, 3:108
- Water-based self-polishing waxes, 6:106
- Water-based solution adhesives, 1:414, 415
- Water cooling, of extruders, 5:622, 624
- Water dispersions, polysulfide, 11:178
- Water flux, in reverse osmosis, 7:785, 786
- Water-immiscible solvents, polymerization with, 7:97–99
kinetics, 7:97–99
mechanism of, 7:97
variables, 7:97
- Water-immiscible solvents, polymerization with, 7:97–99
- Water-insensitive polymers, 7:95, 96
- Water-miscible solvents, polymerization, 7:99, 100
- Water repellants
silicone application, 12:465
- Water retting, 14:499
- Water ring pelletizers, 5:639
- Water-ring pelletizers, 9:482
- Water-selective PVA membrane, 7:799
- Water softening, fixed-bed ion exchange process, 7:173
- Water-soluble β -CD-polypseudorotaxanes, 11:125
- Water-soluble
“annealed” polyampholytes, 10:304
polyampholytes, 10:309
- Water-soluble homopolymers, of acrylic and methacrylic acids, 1:164
- Water-soluble melamine-formaldehyde resins, 1:543
- Water-soluble peroxides, 1:210

- Water-soluble photoinitiators
 free radical photopolymerization, 9:726
- Water-soluble polymeric materials, in cement, 2:710.
See also Cement additives
- Water-soluble polymers, 2:201, 7:55, 15:173–229
 acrylic and methacrylic acid, 1:163–165
 amine-containing styrenic, 15:211–213
 environmental issues of, 1:165
 inorganic, 15:197
 naturally occurring, 15:182–188
 nonionic, 15:198–202
 polyacrylamides as, 1:118
 polyelectrolytes, 15:202–210
 polysaccharides, 15:188–197
 polyvinylpyridines, 15:210, 211
 statistical amphiphilic, 15:222–229
 stimuli-responsive amphiphilic, 15:220–222
- Water sorption
 wool, 15:316, 317
- Water-swellaible polymers, polyacrylamides as, 1:118
- Water-swelling polyampholytes, 10:309
- Water treatment
 lignosulfonate, 7:542
- Water treeing, 4:681, 690
- Water vapor
 permeation, 2:25
- Water vapor imbibition, polymer precipitation by, 7:755
- Water vapor transmission rate (WVTR), 9:473
- Water vapor transmission rate, 2:2, 4
 various high and moderate barrier polymers, 2:36
- Water-white resins
 synthesis by carbocationic polymerization, 2:419
- Water, sorption by nylon, 13:840
- Water. *See also* Aqueous; Hydration; Hydrogels; Potable water delivery; Wastewater treatment
 activation energies of clustering systems in, 14:321
 azeotrope with vinyl acetate, 14:654
 effect on fatigue resistance, 5:738, 739
 effect on polymer oxidation, 13:5–9
 electropolymerization in, 5:132, 133
 phosgene reactions with, 9:625
 physicochemical properties, 8:2
 in polysulfone polymerization, 11:181, 182
 polysulfone properties and, 11:189
 SAN copolymers and, 1:290
 solubility of cellulose acetates in, 2:623
 solubility of monomers common to latex production (table), 7:467
 solubility of monomers for heterophase polymerization, 6:630–633, 637
 solubility of polyacrylamides in, 1:119–122
 solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 solubility of vinyl acetate in, 14:654
 soluble core materials, 8:384
 swelling of parylenes in deionized, 15:436
 transfer coefficient to, 11:530
 tritiated water separation, phosphazenes for, 11:107
- Waterborne alkyds, 1:489–491
 ammonia and, 1:491
 carboxylic acid group, 1:490
 hydrolytic stability, 1:490
- Waterborne coatings, development of, 5:186
- Waterborne epoxy coatings, 5:387–390
- Waterborne polymeric coating, mechanisms, 5:186
- Waterborne polyurethane dispersions (PUDs), 11:253–255
- Waterproofing coating, for paper, 1:542
- Wavelength
 sound waves, 1:62
- Wavelength division multiplexing (WDM), 5:102
- Waxes, as release agents, 11:700–702. *See also* Paraffin waxes
- WAXS. *See* Wide-angle X-ray scattering (WAXS)
- Weak acid cation exchange resins, 7:157, 162
 Bronsted Lowry acid base, 7:168
 water softening, 7:173
- Weak base anion exchange resins, 7:169
- Weak boundary layers, 1:364, 365
- Weak link scission, of styrene polymers, 13:208
- Weak segregation limit, 2:194, 8:497
- Weakest link theory, 9:10
- Wear, 13:502
 and scratch behavior, 12:319, 320
- Weatherable epoxy resins, 5:321, 322
- Weatherfastness, of colorants, 3:469
- Weathering tests, 13:776, 777
- Weathering. *See also* Outdoor environment
- Web coaters, 3:265
- Web coating, 3:269
- Web consolidation, nonwovens, 9:223–230
- Web drafting, nonwovens, 9:220
- Web-fed process, 2:378, 379
- Web formation
 nonwoven fabrics, spun bonded, 9:185–193
 nonwoven fabrics, staple fiber, 9:216–218
- Web layering, nonwovens, 9:218–223
- Web spreading, nonwovens, 9:220
- Weft inserted substrates, 5:682
- Weibull distribution, 11:680, 684, 685
- Weibull parameters, 11:685
- Weight-average molecular weight (M_w) of polyacrylamides, 1:122
- Weight-average molecular weight, 8:660
 determination, 8:669, 670
- Weight per epoxide, 5:301, 331
- Weissenberg–Robinowitsch–Mooney method (WRM), 12:9
- Weld-line failure, 6:294
- Wesslau distribution, 10:658
- Weston 618, 14:479, 480
- Weston 619, 14:480
- Wet-bonding processes, 9:215
- Wet-end additives, 1:538
- Wet-laid processes, 9:214
- Wet-laid web formation, 9:222, 223
- Wet-on-wet coatings
 cellulose acetate applications, 2:639
- Wet spinning, 3:498, 7:766–768
 acrylic fibers, 1:243–246
 MPDI, 10:221
 ODA/PPTA, 10:222, 223
 PAN-based carbon fibers, 2:470
 Spandex, 5:772, 773, 775, 776
- Wet-strength additives, 1:538

- Wet-treeing test, for cable, 4:702, 703
- Wettability, 13:405
- Cassie-Baxter equation, 13:406
 - Cassie-Baxter state, 13:406
 - Young's equation, 13:405
- Wetting
- fillers, 5:787
 - of fluorocarbons and hydrocarbons, 11:705
- Wetting process, 1:365–367
- Wetting transition, 9:568
- Whipping, 5:146
- amplitude, 5:150
 - envelope, 5:146, 149
 - jet, 5:149
- Whipping instability, 5:149
- of fluids, 5:150
- Whisker crystals, 12:388
- Whisker materials, properties of, 11:689
- Whiskers
- carbon, 11:692
 - in composites, 11:688
 - filler material, 5:785
- White pigments, 3:470–472
- Whitening
- wool, 15:337, 338
- Whiting, 5:793
- Wide-angle x-ray diffraction (WAXD)
- for crystallinity determination, 4:148–153, 159
- Wide-angle X-ray scattering (WAXS)
- for composition and structure determination, 13:758, 760, 761
- Wide-angle x-ray scattering (WAXS), 2:750, 5:228
- Widom's test particle insertion method, 8:624
- Wigner-Seitz cell, 7:530
- Wigner tunneling expression, 3:621
- Wilhelmy plate technique, 13:596
- Williams-Landel-Ferry (WLF) equation, 1:471, 2:748, 3:303, 12:15, 15:96, 97, 106
- Winding
- PET and PEN films, 10:504, 505
- Windows
- thermochromic polymer applications, 14:56–58
- Windshield wiper isomerization, 8:106
- Wine bottles
- thermochromic polymer labels, 14:57
- Winstein spectrum of structures, 1:596
- Winter-Chambon gel equation, 6:370
- Wiped-film devolatilization, 6:103–105
- Wire and cable
- LDPE, 5:536–538
 - low density resin for, 5:539, 540
- Wire and cable coatings
- HDPE use in, 5:510
 - polyimides in, 10:635
- Wire-bar coating
- nonwoven fabrics, 9:231
- Wire coating, 10:81
- Wire coating, nylon, 10:289
- Wire insulation, LLDPE, 5:579, 580
- Wire mesh screens, micron rating *versus* mesh value for, 5:626
- Wire-wound rod coating, 3:274
- Wittig-type reaction, 8:172
- WLF equation, 1:79. *See* Williams-Landel-Ferry (WLF) equation
- Wolff rearrangement, 5:81
- Wolframa-carbeno-mediated methathesis mechanism, 6:345
- Wollastonite
- thermosetting powder coating filler, 3:241
- Wood
- cellulose from, 2:566, 573
 - lignified, 7:526
 - natural reinforcement of, 11:679
- Wood adhesives, 15:283–290
- Wood bonding
- phenolic resin applications, 9:611, 612
- Wood composites, 15:281–303
- Wood composites, reaction extrusion, 11:647
- thermoset wood adhesives, 15:283–290
 - wood bonded with thermosets, 15:282, 283
 - wood composites bonded with thermoplastics, 15:300–303
 - wood composites bonded with thermosets, 15:294–300
- Wood elements, 15:282, 283
- Wood flour
- filler material, 5:785
- Wood gluing, by dielectric heating, 4:477, 478
- Wood I-joist
- characteristics and applications, 15:284
- Wood impregnation
- melamine-formaldehyde resin applications, 7:735
- Wood-plastic composites, 15:300–303
- Wood pulping, commercial chemical, 7:526
- Wood pulps, κ numbers for, 7:532, 533
- Wool, 15:306–341
- bleaching and fluorescent whitening, 15:337, 338
 - chemical structure, 15:312–316
 - dyeing, 15:330–334
 - easy-care wovens, 15:329
 - fiber characteristics, 15:308–312
 - filler material, 5:785
 - flame-resist treatment, 15:340
 - insect-resist treatment, 15:338–340
 - limiting oxygen index, 1:232
 - mechanical properties, 9:216
 - physical properties, 15:316–320
 - physical properties of staple, 1:229
 - printing, 15:334–336
 - processing, 15:320–323
 - protein structure, 15:314, 315
 - raw wool specification, 15:306–308
 - setting, 15:323–326
 - shrinkage, 15:326–329
 - yellowing, 15:336, 337
- Wool dyes, 15:332, 333
- Wool lipids, 15:315
- Wool textiles
- shrinkage, 15:326–329
- Woolen cards, 9:217
- Woolen system, 15:322, 323
- Woolen yarns, 15:323
- Work of adhesion, 11:702, 703
- Work of cohesion, 11:703
- Work of detachment, 1:362

- Work-to-break, of a fiber, 10:241
- World cotton production (table), 4:34, 35
- World War II
- engineering thermoplastics after, 5:203
 - polyester fibers after, 10:510
 - polysulfides after, 11:168
 - rubber manufacture during, 13:269
- World Wide Web (WWW), engineering thermoplastics
- data sheets on (table), 5:214
- Worsted system, 15:322, 323
- Wound dressings
- chitin and chitosan in, 3:41
 - poly(ethylene oxide) applications, 5:457
- Woven fabrics, 5:682
- Woven or knit fabrics, manufacture, 7:503
- Wurster coating chamber, 8:387
- schematic diagram of, 8:387
- Wurtz coupling techniques, 7:42, 43
- Wöhler plot, 5:698, 699, 703
- X-ray diffraction, 2:749, 750
- for crystallinity determination, 4:148–153
 - paint forensics applications, 6:189
- X-ray microscopy, 15:367–402. *See also* Near edge
- x-ray absorption fine structure spectroscopy (NEXAFS)
 - applications, 15:382–395
 - fibers, 15:403
 - instrumentation and analysis tools, 15:376–382
 - multicomponent, multiphase polymers, 15:395–403
 - NEXAFS, 15:368–376
 - quantitative image analysis, 15:380–382
 - quantitative microanalysis, 15:380
- X-ray nondestructive testing, 13:781
- X-ray photoelectron spectroscopy (XPS), 9:640, 10:734, 14:612, 772
- spectral features and information, 13:474–476
 - for surface analysis, 13:469–474
- X-ray scanning, energy dispersive, 6:296
- X-ray scattering
- for investigating micromechanical properties, 8:474
- X-ray scattering techniques, 9:15, 14:563. *See also*
- Synchrotron belts
 - amorphous polymers, 1:547, 548
 - cellulose, 2:587
 - for composition and structure determination, 13:760
 - Langmuir-Blodgett films, 7:432, 433
- X7G, 7:564, 561
- Xanthan, 15:193, 348–365
- Xanthan gum (XG)
- drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Xanthan gum
- drag-reducing additive, 4:553
- Xanthan gum hydrogels, 15:353
- Xanthan gum, 15:348–365
- acids, solubility, 15:357
 - AFM images, 15:354
 - and galactomannans, interaction between, 15:359
 - and proteins, 15:360
 - and starch, 15:360
 - bases, solubility, 15:358
 - carrier fluids, 15:364
 - cationic dyes, 15:359
 - compatibility, 15:357–359
 - differentiated scanning calorimetry (DSC), 15:360
 - differentiation, 15:361
 - double or multistranded assembly, 15:350
 - enzymes, 15:359
 - food and industrial applications (table), 15:361
 - food applications, 15:361, 362
 - hydroxyethylcellulose (HEC), 15:355, 356
 - industrial applications, 15:363
 - latex emulsions, 15:359
 - manufacture, 15:348, 349
 - O*-acetyl content, 15:352
 - oilfield application, 15:363, 364
 - oxidizing agents, 15:358
 - personal care products, 15:362, 363
 - preservatives, 15:359
 - properties, 15:352–359
 - pseudoplastic rheology, 15:353
 - pseudoplasticity, 15:352, 353
 - pyruvate content, 15:351
 - reducing agents, 15:358
 - retrogradation, 15:360
 - rheology, 15:355–357
 - salts, solubility, 15:358
 - solution viscosity, 15:353–355
 - starch-based desserts, 15:362
 - structure, 15:349–351
 - structure—property relationships (table), 15:353
 - surfactants, 15:359
 - thickeners, 15:359
 - viscoelastic response, 15:356
 - Viscosity and shear rate curves, 15:355
- Xanthan gum/locust bean gum solutions, 15:360
- Xanthan polyelectrolyte complexes, 15:353
- Xanthates, 4:70
- Xanthation
- in viscose process, 2:679, 680
- Xanthene dyes, 3:489
- Xanthogen disulfide
- polychloroprene latex modifier, 3:61
- Xanthomonas campestris* culture, 15:348
- Xenon arc devices, 15:260
- Xenon arc systems, 15:258
- Xenotest, 4:287
- Xerographic discharge methods, 9:761
- XLD. *See* Cross-link density (XLD)
- Xydar, 7:571, 572
- high barrier polymer, 2:41
- Xylan, 5:229
- Xylene
- component in coal-tar fractions, 2:472
 - solubility of poly(ethylene oxide) in, 5:447
 - swelling of parylenes in, 15:436
- p*-Xylylene, 15:409–411
- o*-Xylylene, 15:415
- Xylylene polymers, 15:409–445
- applications, 15:436–444
 - dimer, 15:415–418
 - health and safety factors, 15:444, 445
 - manufacture, 15:416, 417
 - thermodynamic considerations, 15:418–421
- Yarn, 5:681, 682
- bicomponent, 10:260
 - continuous-filament, 10:247–257

- Spandex, 5:782
types of, 10:251
- Yarn texturing processes, 10:252, 253
- Yellow iron oxide pigment, 3:471
- Yellow pigments, 3:481, 482
benzimidazolone, 3:478
disazo, 3:477
metallized, 3:475–477
- Yellowing, 6:388
wool, 15:336, 337
- Yield and crazing in polymers, 15:449–495
- Yield criteria, 15:456–458
- Yield point
of a fiber, 10:241
- Yield strain, 15:452
- Yield stress, 15:452
- Yielding, 1:379, 15:450–461
in amorphous ductile polymers, 8:480–482
in block copolymers, 8:495–500
calorimetry and dilatometry, 15:473–475
computer modeling, 15:475, 476
dislocation plasticity, 15:471, 472
initiation of, 6:331
models based on activated processes, 15:462–471
semicrystalline polymers, 8:494, 495, 15:476–479
theories of, 15:461, 462
ultimate shear strength, 15:473
- YM-1 mixer, 8:424
- Young-Laplace equation, 3:447
- Young's modulus, 1:63, 390, 4:639, 640, 5:210, 6:304, 11:682, 683, 688, 690, 698. *See also* Tensile modulus
of a fiber, 10:241
and yield, 15:451
- Ytterbium bis(phthalocyanine)
electrochromic polymer, 4:797
- Z-average molecular weight, 8:660
- "Z-connected" RAFT agents, 11:738
- Zapas strain-clock model, of solid-like polymers, 15:157–159
- Zein, 2:93
- Zenite
high barrier polymer, 2:41
- Zeolax
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
- Zeolites, 6:583
- Zero-curvature tunneling, 3:620
- Zero deformation, in DE model, 15:143, 144
- Zero-one systems, 5:173
- Zero-order Markovian distributions, 8:519, 520
- Zero-shear-rate viscosity
in DE model, 15:129
of polyacrylamide solutions, 1:124
- Zeta potential
colloids, 3:451
- Zeugmatography, 5:11
- Ziegler catalysts, for HDPE production, 5:489, 490
- Ziegler-Natta catalysis, 12:551. *See also* Single-site catalysts (SSCs); Ziegler-Natta catalysts
active site models for polypropylene, 11:379–383
discovery of, 11:347
tactic polystyrenes and, 13:187
- Ziegler-Natta catalysts, 3:4, 126, 8:521, 15:504–520.
See also Polypropylene; Propylene polymers
described, 5:558, 559
early catalysts, 15:505
for ethylene (co)polymerization, 15:508, 509
LLPDE synthesized with, 5:545
polymer chain growth, 15:506, 507
polymer particle growth, 15:507, 508
for polypropylene synthesis, 15:509–518
second-generation catalysts, 15:505, 506
- Ziegler-Natta polymerization, 2:305–312, 8:165
ethylene copolymers, 5:429
ethylene-propylene elastomers, 5:598
and polybutadiene macrostructure, 2:303, 304
polybutadiene synthesis, 2:305–312
of styrene, 13:214, 226, 227
- Ziegler-Natta-polymerized polybutadiene, 13:237
- Ziegler-Natta product, 8:150
- Ziegler-Natta-type catalysts, 14:778
- Ziegler-type catalyst, 7:271
- Zigzag microchannels, 8:351
- Zimm plot, 9:46
structure from scattering curve, 9:53–55
- Zinc alkoxides
ring opening polymerization by, 12:147
- Zinc cadmium sulfide pigments, 3:472
- Zinc chloride
acrylic fibers solution spinning solvent, 1:241
- Zinc dibenzylthiocarbamate, 12:173
- Zinc dimethylthiocarbamate
accelerated vulcanization, 12:243
- Zinc iron brown, 3:471
- Zinc oxide
effect on natural rubber properties, 12:227
effect on SBR properties, 12:228
as filler, 5:796
filler material, 5:785
for rubber compounding, 12:224
- Zinc oxide pigment, 3:470
- Zinc oxide, effects of, on rubber vulcanization, 4:70, 71
- Zinc sulfide pigments, 3:470
- Zinostatin Stimalmer/SMANCS(poly(styrene-co-maleic acid)-neocarzinostatin), 11:435
- Zircon flour
filler influence on epoxy resin properties, 5:382
filler properties, 5:379
- Zirconia
filler material, 5:785
- Zirconium
organic polymers, 7:64
- Zirconium alkoxides
ring opening polymerization by, 12:149
- Zirconocenes, 8:81–139, 135–140
- Zisman plot, 1:373, 374
- Zn-rich QD surfaces, 8:798
- Zoladex, 3:754, 755
- Zone plate-based microscopes, 15:377, 378
- Zooglea ramigera, 10:102
of styrene, 13:223–226
- Zorro mixing section, 5:664
- Zwanzig's nonlinear Langevin equation, 13:78
- Zwitterion, 2:391

- Zwitterion intermediates, via no catalyst
copolymerization, 15:531–542
- Zwitterionic alternating copolymerization, 15:540
- Zwitterionic copolymerizations, 15:531
- Zwitterionic ionic liquids, 7:204
- Zwitterionic polymer brushes, 10:749, 750
- Zwitterionic polymerization, 15:**524–542**
- 4-(dimethylamino)pyridine (DMAP), 15:529
- Amino acid *N*-carboxyanhydride (NCA), 15:526
- Cation-Anion reactions, propagation by, 15:530–542
- cyclic poly-LA, 15:529
- DBU (1,8-diazabicyclo[5.4.0]undec-7-ene), 15:527
- lactone monomer, 15:526
- meso LA, 15:530
- monomer activation, 15:529, 530
- N*-alkylglycine *N*-carboxyanhydride (*N*-RNCA),
15:527
- N*-Heterocyclic carbenes (NHCs), 15:527
- propagation via one site, 15:524, 525
- propagation via the anionic site, 15:525–528
- Racemic LA, 15:530
- Sarcosine NCA with pyridine, 15:526